

A REPRESENTATION OF UNCIVILIZED ISLANDERS AND INDIANS.

R

AUTHOR OF

11

. .

UNCIVILIZED RACES OF MEN

ALL COUNTRIES OF THE WORLD;

AND CUSTOMS, THEY PHYSICAL, SOCIAL, MENTAL, MORAL AND RELIGIOUS CHARACTERISTICS.

J. G. WOOD, M.A., F.J.S.

BY ANGAS, E ... Erc., Erc., Erc.,

ANULAS THE STATE OF THE STATE AND ASSESSED TO STATE OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PRO

IN IN VOLUMES.

Vol. II.

HARTFORD:

J. B. BURR AND COMPANY, PUBLISHERS



A REFERENTAL SON OF UNCIVILIZED ISLANDERS AND INDIANS.

R.

AUTHOR OF WITHO

J. B.

UNCIVILIZED RACES OF MEN

ALL COUNTRIES OF THE WORLD;

BEING

COMPREHENSIVE ACCOUNT OF THEIR MANNERS AND CUSTOMS, AND OF THEIR PHYSICAL, SOCIAL, MENTAL, MORAL AND RELIGIOUS CHARACTERISTICS.

REV. J. G. WOOD, M.A., F.L.S.

AUTHOR OF "ILLUSTRATED NATURAL HISTORY OF ANIMALS," "ECCOOTES OF ANIMAL LIFE," "HOMES WITHOUT HANDS," "BIBLE ANIMALS," "COMMON OBJECTS OF THE COUNTRY AND SEASHORE," ETC.

WITH NEW DESIGNS.

BY ANGAS, DANBY, WOLF, ZWECKER, ETC., ETC.

VOL. II.

J. B. BURR AND COMPANY, PUBLISHERS.
1870.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1870, by

J. B. BURR & COMPANY,

In the Clerk's Office of the United States, for the District of Connecticut.

THE LIBRARY
University of Saskaton wan
REGINA CAMPUS

In this that inhabetween groups of Lake-dwe Siam is a My bes

constant Collection

PREFACE.

In this volume will be found a selection of the most interesting uncivilized tribes that inhabit, or once inhabited, America and the vast number of islands which lie between that country and the eastern coast of Asia, including among them the great groups of Australia and New Zealand. A short notice is given of the long-perished Lake-dwellers of Switzerland, and the partial civilization of India, China, Japan and Siam is also represented.

cticut.

My best thanks are due to the Geographical and Anthropological Societies, for the constant access permitted to their libraries, and to the Curator of the "Christy Collection," for the assistance which he rendered in the illustration of the work.

CONTENTS

VOLUME II.

Chap.	Page.	Chap.	
117	AUSTRALIA.	TONGA.	Pag
LXIX.	APPEARANCE AND CHARACTER	XCIX. GOVERNMENT-GRADAT	¥.
	OF NATIVES	BANK GRADAT	ONS OF
LXX.	DRESS - FOOD 709	C. WAR AND CEREMONIES	97
LXXI.	WEAPONS 710	CI STOTE TO CEREMONIES	98
LAXII.	WEAPONS — Concluded	CI. SICKNESS — BURIAL — G.	
LXXIII,	WAR - AMUSEMENTS 744	SAMOA, OR NAVIGATOR'S IS	T.AND
LAXIV.	DOMESTIC LIEB	CTT 4	HAND.
LXXV.	FROM CHILDHOOD TO MANHOOD 781	CII. APPEARANCE - CHARAC	TER -
LXXVI.	MEDICINE - SURGERY - DISPO-	Dress	100
	SAL OF DEAD	CITI. WAR	101
LXXVII.	DWELLINGS - CANOES 784	CIV. AMUSEMENTS - MARRI	AGE -
		ARCHITECTURE	1028
12-12-1 Fact	NEW ZEALAND.	HERVEY AND KINGSMILL IS	
LXXVIII.	GENERAL REMARKS 792	CT .	LAMDS.
LIXXIX.	DRESS	CV. APPEARANCE—WEAPONS	-Gov-
LAAA.	DRESS - Concluded oor	ERNMENT	1032
LAAAI.	DOMESTIC LIEB		
MAAAII,	FOOD AND COOKERY OOG	MARQUESAS ISLANDS.	
LAAAIII.	WAR	CVI. DRESS - AMUSEMENTS -	Win
LAXXIV.	CANORS	-Burial	1014
LIAAAV.	RELIGION		
LAAAVI.	THE TAPU oco	NIUE, OR SAVAGE ISLAN	
LXXXVII.	FUNERAL CEREMONIES—ARCHI-	CVII. ORIGIN - COSTUME - LA	Wa
	TECTURE 869	BURIAL	1000
,	NEW CALEDONIA.		1002
LXXXVIII	APPEARANCE — DRESS — WAR-	SOCIETY ISLANDS.	
MARKVIII,	APPEARANCE — Dress — WAR-	CVIII. APPEARANCE - DRESS - S	OCTAT.
	FARE 883	CUSTOMS	1000
ANDAMAN	AND NICOBAR ISLANDS.	OIA. RELIGION.	1004
LXXXIX.	ORIGIN OF NATIVES — APPEAR-	MAR - FUNER	AT.S.
	ANCE — CHARACTER — EDUCA-	LEGENDS	1079
	TION 888	SANDWICH ISLANDS.	
		COL C	
	NEW GUINEA.	CXI. CLIMATE - DRESS - ORNAL	MENTS
XC. F	APUANS AND OUTANATAS 898	-WOMEN	1081
XCL T	HE ALFOERS OR HARAFORAS. 905	CXII. WAR-SPORT-RELIGION	1088
	ILIPPINE ISLANDS.	CAROLINE ARCHIPELAGO	
XCII. T	HE AJITAS OR AHITAS 919	CXIII. Dress,-Architecture,-	
220221 2	MIS ASTIAS OR AHITAS 919	MENTS W.	AMUSE-
	FIJI.	MENTS-WAR	1100
XCIII. A	PPEARANCE - DRESS 922	BORNEO.	
XCIV. M	ANUFACTURES 000	CXIV Tur Dutes A	
XCV. G	OVERNMENT - SOUTAL LIES 004	CXIV. THE DYAKS, APPEARANCE	AND
XCVI, W	AR - AMUSEMENTS 040	DRESS	1110
XCVIL R	ELIGION — FUNERAL RITES 960	CXV. WAR	1119
		CXVI. WAR - Concluded	1128
SOLOMON ISI	ANDS AND NEW HEBRIDES.	CXVII. SOCIAL LIFE	1137
XCVIII. C	HARACTER-DRESS-CUSTOMS, 968	CXVIII. ARCHITECTURE, MANUFACTU CXIX. RELIGION—OMENS—FUNDAMENTAL	RES,1149

CX

CXX CXX

CXXI CXXI

CXXV

CXXVI

CXXVIII CXXIX CXXX CXXXI

CXXXII CXXXIII

CXXXIV. NORT

CXXXVI. CXXXVII. CXXXVIII. CXXXIX.

CXL

CONTENTS.

	TIERRA DEL FUEGO.	CXLL HUNTING - RELIGION - BURI-
	CXX. APPEARANCE — ARCHITECTURE	AL,1338
	- MANUFACTURES1161	VANCOUVER'S ISLAND.
	PATAGONIANS.	CXLII THE ASSESSMENT.
	CXXI. APPEARANCE - WEAPONS -	CXLII, THE ARTS, AND NEIGHBORING TRIBES1334
	HORSEMANSHIP /	
	CXXII. DOMESTIC LIFE1183	ARCHITECTURE - RELIGION
	ARAUCANIANS.	DISPOSAL OF DEAD1369
_	CXXIII. DRESS - ETIQUETTE - GOVERN-	ALASKA.
Page.	MENT	CXLV. MALEMUTES - INGELETES - Co-
O	CXXIV. DOMESTIC LIFE	YUKONS1374
GRADATIONS OF		
MONIES 984	THE GRAN CHACO.	CXLVI THE TOTAL
AL-GAMES 997	CXXVI. APPEARANCE - WEAPONS -	CXLVI. THE TCHURTCHI—JAKUTS—TUN-
	CHARACTER1211	CXLVII, THE SAMOIEDES — OSTIAKS1377
OR'S ISLAND.	THE MUNDURUCÚS.	OBILARS1381
CHARACTER -	CXXVII. MANUFACTURES - SOCIAL CUS-	INDIA.
	TOMS1215	CXLVIII. THE SOWRAHS AND KHONDS1385
MARRIAGE —	THE TRIBES OF CULLANA	CALLIAL, WEAPONS
1028	UAAVIII. WEAPONS	CL. SACRIFICIAL RELIGION
	CAALA, WEAPONS - Concluded	TO ANIMALS1416
ILL ISLANDS.	VAAA, WAR - SUPERSTITION 1000	
EAPONS-GOV-	CAAL ARCHITECTURE - SOCIAL CUR-	TARTARY.
	CXXXII. DRESS—AMUSEMENTS1245	CLII. THE MANTCHU TARTARS1422
ANDS.	CXXXIII. RELIGION—BURIAL1263	CHINA.
MENTS — WAR1044	MEXICO.	CLIV. WARFARE
The second secon	CXXXIV. HISTORY—RELIGION—ART1271	CLV. SOCIAL CHARACTERISTICS1441
ISLANDS.	NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS.	
ME - LAWS -	CXXXV. GOVERNMENT Comme	JAPAN.
		CLVI Dress - ART - AMUSEMENTS. 1449
NDS.		CLVII. MISCELLANEOUS CUSTOMS1458
RESS — SOCIAL		SIAM.
1057	CXXXIX. Social Life	CLVIII. GOVERNMENT - DRESS - RELI-
1064	ESQUIMAUX.	GION1467
-FUNERALS-	CXL APPEARANCE - DRESS - MAN-	ANCIENT EUROPE.
1072	NERS1333	CLIX THE STATE OF
NDS.		CLIX. THE SWISS LAKE-DWELLERS 1473
-ORNAMENTS		
ELIGION1088	Marine and Congress of the Con	
ELAGO.		
CTURE,—AMUSE-		
TOTAL, TAMUSE-		

CHAPTER LXIX.

AUSTRALIA.

THE NATIVE AUSTRALIANS - THE GENERAL CONFORMATION OF THE HEAD AND FEATURES - THEIR AVERAGE STATURE AND FORM - THE WOMEN AND THEIR APPEARANCE - CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES - THEIR THIEVISH PROPENSITIES - THEIR CUNNING, AND POWER OF DISSIMULATION -A PAIR OF CLEVER THIEVES - THE "GOOD NATIVE" - A CLEVER OLD WOMAN - INCENTIVES TO ROBBERY - HIDEOUS ASPECT OF THE OLD WOMEN - A REPULSIVE SUBJECT FOR AN ARTIST-YOUNGER WOMEN OF SAME TRIBE - THEIR STRANGE DRESS -- THE CIRCULAR MAT CLOAK AND ITS USES - THE NATIVE BASKET - TREACHEROUS CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES - MR. BAINES'S NARRATIVE - THE OUTRIGGER CANOE OF NORTH AUSTRALIA, AND ITS PROBABLE ORIGIN - PIPE, AND MODE OF SMOKING -THE MAMMALS OF AUSTRALIA, AND THEIR MARSUPIAL CHARACTER-CONFUSION OF NOMENCLATURE - EFFECT OF THE ANIMALS ON THE HUMAN INHABITANTS OF THE COUNTRY - PRIMARY USE OF WEAPONS.

FOLLOWING up the principle of taking the at once to the human inhabitants of Ausleast civilized races in succession, we naturally pass to the great continent of Austra-

lia and its adjacent islands.

This wonderful country holds a sort of isolated position on the earth, owing to the curious contrast which reigns between it and all the lands with which we are familiar. It is situated, as my readers will see by reference to a map, just below the equator, and extends some forty degrees southward, thus having at its northern extremity a heat which is tropical, and at its southern point a climate as cold as our own. But there is perhaps no country where the temperature is so variable as Australia, and there is one instance recorded where the thermometer registered a change of fifty degrees in twenty-five minutes. This sudden change is owing to the winds, which if they blow from the sea are cool, but if they blow toward the coast, after passing over the heated sand-wastes of the interior, raise the temperature in the extraordinary manner which has been mentioned. Still, the climate, changeable though it be, is a pleasant one; and the colonists who visit England nearly and the colonists who visit Engand heart, always grumble at the damp climate of the mother country, and long to be back again in Australia. Both the animal and vegetable products of this country are strangely unlike those of other lands, but, as we shall have occasion to describe them in the course

tralia.

IT is exceedingly difficult, not to say impossible, to treat of the aborigines of Australia with much accuracy of system. Differing as do the tribes with which we are acquainted in many minor particulars, they all agree in general characteristics; and, whether a native be taken from the north or south of the vast Australian continent, there is a similitude of habits and a cast of features which point him out at once as an Australian.

The plan that will be adopted will therefore be to give a general sketch of the natives, together with an account of those habits in which they agree, and then to glance over as much of Australia as travellers have laid open to us, and to mention briefly the most interesting of the manners and customs which exist in the several tribes.

In color the Australians are quite black, as dark indeed as the negro, but with nothing of the negro character in the face. The forehead does not recede like that of the negro; and though the nose is wide, the mouth large, and the lips thick, there is none of that projection of jaw which renders the pure negro face so repulsive. The eye is small, dark, and, being deeply sunken, it gives to the brows a heavy, overhanging sort of look. The hair is by no means close and of the following pages, they will not be woolly, like that of the negro, but is plentimentioned at present; and we will proceed ful, rather long, and disposed to curl, mostly

undulating, a form of ringle and harsh, bu The beard and full, and ornaments, s into curious s are a hairy ra a large collect Australians, in remarkable fo and some of th bearded that s among the m cheeks nearly elder men are velopment of whole of the l coating of pil The illustration give a good ide tralian. It is graphic portrai have disfigure European dress combed her hai tures is well pr

In stature the that of the av feet eight inche below and abo The bodily forn good, and their several well-kne which have be count of their gr been accepted curious people, that the native by a very large very long and at he is to the Eur key is to the bal

Such drawing from exceptiona the real contou Indeed, Mr. Pic greater part of the pological knowledge terms of the bea seen among the form, though so on the average b and I did not fin limb which has to the Australia pear, I would re finest model of 1 ever met with, combining perfect strength; while h pared with an ant

Those of my see the native A to England as general must have

undulating, and sometimes even taking the for which some of the men were remarkable, form of ringlets. In texture it is very coarse and harsh, but cannot be described as wool.

The beard and moustache are very thick and full, and the men take a pride in these ornaments, sometimes twisting the beard into curious shapes. Indeed, as a rule they are a hairy race. There is now before me a large collection of photographs of native Australians, in many of which the men are remarkable for the thickness of the beard, and some of them have their faces so heavily bearded that scarcely the nose is perceptible among the mass of hair that covers the among the mass of hair that covers the cheeks nearly up to the eyes. Several of the elder men are very remarkable for the development of the hair, which covers the whole of the breast and arms with a thick coating of pile, and looks as if they were clothed with a tightly-fitting fur garment. The illustration No. 1, on the 698th page, will give a good idea of the features of the Australian. It is exactly conied from phototralian. It is exactly copied from photographic portraits; and although the subjects have disfigured themselves by putting on European dress, and the woman has actually combed her hair, the general cast of the features is well preserved.

In stature the Australian is about equal to that of the average Englishman—say five feet eight inches, although individuals much below and above this height may be seen. below and above this height The bodily form of the Australian savages is and their limbs well made. There are good, and their limbs well made. There are several well-known drawings of Australians, which have been widely circulated on account of their grotesqueness, and which have been accepted as the ordinary form of this curious people, and they have given the idea that the native Australian is distinguished by a very large head, a very small body, and very long and attenuated limbs; in fact, that he is to the European what the spider-mon-

key is to the baboon.

Such drawings are, however, only taken from exceptional cases, and give no idea of the real contour of the native Australian. Indeed, Mr. Pickering, who traversed the greater part of the world in search of anthropreservation the work in search of all the pological knowledge, writes in very strong terms of the beautiful forms which can be seen among these natives. "The general form, though sometimes defective, seemed form, though sometimes defective, seemed on the average better than that of the negro, and I did not find the undue slenderness of limb which has been commonly attributed to the Australians. Strange as it may appear, I would refer to an Australian as the finest model of human proportions I have ever met with, in muscular development combining perfect symmetry, activity, and strength; while his head might have com-

pared with an antique bust of a philosopher."

Those of my readers who happened to see the native Australians that came over

while all were possessed of great elegance of limb.

The disadvantageous effect of European clothing on the dark races was well shown in these men, who seemed to undergo a positive transformation when they laid aside their ordinary clothes for a costume which their ordinary clothes for a costume which represented, as far as possible, the light and airy apparel of the native Australian. Dressed in gray, or clad in the cricketer's costume, there was nothing remarkable about them, and in fact they seemed to be very ordinary persons indeed. But with their clothes they threw of their commonplace look, and, attired only in tight "fleshings," dyed as nearly as possible the color of their black skins, with a piece of fur wrapped round their loins and a sort of fur cap on round their loins and a sort of fur cap on their heads, they walked with a proud, elastic step that contrasted strangely with their former gait.

It may perhaps be said that this change of demeanor was only the natural result of removing the heavy clothing and giving freedom to the limbs. This was not the case, for several professional English athletes contended with the Australians, and, when they came to run or leap, wore the usual light attire of the professional acrobat. In them, however, no such improvement took place, and, if anything, they looked better in their

ordinary dress.

The women are, as a rule, much inferior to the men in appearance. Even when young, although they possess symmetrical forms, their general appearance is not nearly so pleasing as that of the young African girl, and, when the woman becomes old, she is, if possible, even more hideous and hag-like than the African. This deterioration may partly be due to the exceedingly hard life led by the women, or "gins"—in which word, by the way, the g is pronounced hard as in "giddy." That they have to do all the hard work, and to carry all the heavy weights, including the children, while their husbands at orders or if or the words have been as it or clean or if or the words. sit or sleep, or, if on the march, burden themselves with nothing more weighty than their weapons, is to be expected, as it is the universal practice among natives. But it is not so much the hard work as the privation which tells upon the woman, who is treated with the same contemptuous neglect with which a savage treats his dog, and, while her hus-band, father, or brother, is feasting on the game which she has cooked, thinks herself fortunate if they now and then toss a nearly cleaned bone or a piece of scorched meat to

Like most savages, the Australian natives are adroit and daring thieves, displaying an amount of acuteness in carrying out their designs which would do honor to the most see the native Australians that came over to England as cricketers and athletes in general must have noticed the graceful forms | Life and Scenes," Mr. G. F. Angas has re-

ATURES - THEIR RACTER OF THE ISSIMULATION --INCENTIVES TO OR AN ARTIST-MAT CLOAK AND -MR. BAINES'S ORIGIN - PIPE, L CHARACTER-INHABITANTS OF

not to say imgines of Aussystem. Difwhich we are rticulars, they teristics; and, the north or

tants of Aus-

ntinent, there ast of features an Australian. ed will theretch of the naunt of those and then to ralia as travd to mention the manners

several tribes.

quite black, ut with nothhe face. The that of the is wide, the there is none renders the The eye is ly sunken, it hanging sort ans close and

but is plenticurl, mostly lated several anecdotes respecting this pro- | they fell in with a number of natives who

"Leaving Rivoli Bay, we fell in with two very droll natives, the only ones who had made bold to approach our camp; both were in a state of nudity. One of these f 'lows was a perfect supplejack; he danced and capered about as though he were filled with quicksilver. We mounted them on horses, quicksliver. We mounted them on horses, from which they were continually tumbling off, and they travelled with us all day.

"When we encamped at an old resting-

place, near Lake Howden, they, by signs, requested permission to remain by our fires, which we allowed them to do, and gave them for supper the head and refuse of a sheep that was just killed and hung up to a tree near the tents. They showed great surprise on seeing our various utensils and articles of cookery. So modest and well-behaved did these artful gentlemen appear, that they would not touch the slightest article of food without first asking permission by signs; and they so far gained our confidence that one of them was adorned with a tin plate, suspended round his neck by a string, on which was inscribed 'Good Native.'

"In the dead of the night we were all aroused by the unusual barking of the dogs. At first it was supposed that the wild dogs were 'rushing' the sheep; but as the tumult increased, the Sergeant-Major unwrapped his opossum rug, and looked around for his hat, to go and ascertain the cause of the disturbance. To his surprise, he found that his hat had vanished. The hat of his companion, who lay next him near the fire, was also nowhere to be found; and, casting his eyes to the spot where the sheep hung suspended from the tree, he saw in a moment that our fond hopes for to-morrow's repast were blighted, for the sheep too had disappeared. The whole camp was roused, when it was ascertained that forks, spoons, and the con-tents of the Governor's canteen, pannikins and other articles, were likewise missing, and that our two remarkably docile natives had

left us under cover of the night.
"A council of war was held. Black Jimmy protested that it was useless to follow their tracks until the morning, and that from the nature of the country they had doubtless taken to the swamps, walking in the water, so that pursuit was in vain. We had been so that pursuit was in vain. We had been completely duped by these artful and clever fellows, who probably had a large party of their colleagues lying in ambush amid the surrounding swamps, ready to assist in carrying away the stolen property. Retaliation was useless; and we contented ourselves by giving utterance to our imprecations and commenting on the audacity and cunning of

the rogues until daybreak."

Another instance of theft - in this case single-handed - occurred not long before the robbery which has just been recorded. While the exploring party was on the march, which would only be made more repulsive

were cooking their food.

"At our approach, they flew down the descent, and hid among the bulrushes; but one old woman, unable to escape as speedily as the rest, finding flight useless, began to chatter very loud and fast, pointing to her blind eye, and her lean and withered arms, as objects of commiseration. Damper was given to her and she continued in terror to chew it very fast without swallowing any, until she was almost choked; when suddenly she got hold of Gisborne's handkerchief and made off with it. With a vigorous leap she plunged into the mud and reeds beneath, effecting her escape by crawling into the swamp and joining her wild companions, to whom she doubtless recounted her adventures that night over a dish of fried tadpoles."

The dish of fried tadpoles, to which allusion has been made, is quite a luxury among this wretched tribe, and, when the exploring party pushed on to the spot where the people had been cooking, it was found that they had been engaged in roasting a

dish of water-beetles over a fire.

It is impossible to withhold admiration for the skill displayed by these sable thieves in stealing the property which they coveted, and, in excuse for them, it must be remembered that the articles which were stolen were to the blacks of inestimable value. Food and ornaments are coveted by the black man as much as wealth and titles by the white man, and both these articles were ready to hand. The temptation to which these poor people was exposed seems very trifling to us, but we must measure it, not from our own point of view, but from theirs.

The strange visitors who so suddenly appeared among them possessed abundance of the very things which were dearest to them There was a whole sheep, which would enable them to enjoy the greatest luxury of which they could form any notion, i. e. eating meat to repletion; and there was store of glittering objects which could be worn as ornaments, and would dignify them forever in the eyes of their fellows. The happy possessor of a spoon, a fork, or a tin plate, which would be hung round the neck and kept highly polished, would be exalted above his companions like a newly ennobled man among ourselves, and it should not be exnever again be looked for, would be allowed to pass. The temptation to them was much as would be a title and a fortune among our selves, and there are many civilized men who have done worse than the savage Aus-

tralian when tempted by such a bait. Reference has been made to the haggard appearance of the old woman who so ingeniously stole the handkerchief, the love of finery overcoming the dread of the white man in spite of her age and hideous aspect,

r of natives who

lew down the dealtrushes; but one pe as speedily as seedily as amper was given terror to chew it go any, until she suddenly she got hief and made off ap she plunged ath, effecting her the swamp and as, to whom she adventures that tadpoles."

les, to which alquite a luxury, , and, when the o the spot where ng, it was found d in roasting a fire.

L

d admiration for sable thieves in h they coveted, nust be rememich were stolen stimable value. eted by the black nd titles by the e articles were ation to which sed seems very measure it, not but from theirs. so suddenly ap-d abundance of dearest to them. hich would eneatest luxury of otion, i. e. eating

re was store of uld be worn as fy them forever s. The happy, or a tin plate. If the neck and he exalted above ennobled manuald not be exity, which could ould be allowed whem was much me among our-civilized men he savage Ausna bait.

to the haggard an who so inchief, the love ad of the white hideous aspect, more repulsive





(1.) AUSTRALIAN MAN AND WOMAN.

(See page 695.)



(2.) WOMEN AND OLD MAN OF THE LOWER MURRAY AND THE LAKES. (See page 600.)

by any attempt possible to imainto which an after she has pa As we have se is singularly hid ble when comp Australia.

Australia.

The old Australia.

The old Australia and processes the mous mouth, and African, but she ness peculiarly like a piece of tightly over a skempt hair adds features which or repulsive. The flat, pendent, and movement; her each rib stands drawn deeply i limbs shrivel up the elbows and in a gnarled brains.

in a gnarled bran Each succeedin look of these po feebleness of inc less and less useful neglected, ill-tre pushed aside by and stronger that their turn the ethey carelessly irolder and feebler. Mr. Angas has

which represents
Port Fairy tribe
rude huts or mian
trees, and very m
ing party by their
neglected state.
in particular, whe
the characteristic
described; and
filthy, and repullooked more like
forms that Callot
than a veritable I
so very disgusting
one of the party
had taken an eme
Not wishing to
portrait of this w

ntroduced on page emales of the sam The remarkable or two other tribes he neighborhood, a tied on their be by both sexes. The wisted into ropes ened together verargets of the pressibles by which the ogether are obtain of the bulrush. The

by any attempt at ornament. It is scarcely possible to imagine the depths of ugliness

mous mouth, and the sausage-like rips of the African, but she exhibits a type of hideousness peculiarly her own. Her face looks like a piece of black parchment strained tightly over a skull, and the mop-like, unkempt hair adds a grotesque element to the features which only makes them still more resulting. The breasts reach to the week. repulsive. The breasts reach to the waist, flat, pendent, and swinging about at every movement; her body is so shrunken that each rib stands out boldly, the skin being drawn deeply in between them, and the limbs shrivel up until they look like sticks, the elbows and knees projecting like knots in a gnarled branch.

Each succeeding year adds to the hideous look of these poor creatures, because the feebleness of increasing years renders them less and less useful; and accordingly they are less and less userul; and accordingly they are neglected, ill-treated, and contemptuously pushed aside by those who are younger and stronger than themselves, suffering in their turn the evils which in their youth they carelessly inflicted on those who were older and feebler.

Mr. Angas has among his sketches one which represents a very old woman of the Port Fairy tribe. They had built their rude huts or miam-miams under some gumtrees, and very much disgusted the exploring party by their hideous appearance and neglected state. There was one old woman in particular, who exemplified strongly all the characteristics which have just been described; and so surpassingly hideous, filthy, and repulsive was she, that she looked more like one of the demoniacal forms that Callot was so fond of painting han a veritable human creature. Indeed, so very disgusting was her appearance, that one of the party was made as ill as if he had taken an emetic.

Not wishing to shock my readers by the portrait of this wretched creature, I have ntroduced on page preceding, two younger emales of the same tribe.

The remarkable point about this and one r two other tribes of the same locality and he neighborhood, is the circular mat which s tied on their backs, and which is worn by both sexes. The mat is made of reeds wisted into ropes, coiled round, and fasened together very much as the archer's argets of the present day are made. The bres by which the reed ropes are bound

mat is paingkoont. One of the women appears in her ordinary home dress, t. c. wearing the paingkoont and her baby, over whose little body she has thrown a piece of kangaroo skin. The mat makes a very good by any consistence of the prime of her life. Whose little body she has the prime of her life. Whose little body she has the prime of her life. As we have seen, the old woman of Africa is singularly hideous, but she is quite passable when compared with her aged sister of Australia.

Australia. Woman certainly does alarmed pops down and hides itself like a rabbit disappearing into its burrow. The old woman, whose portrait is withheld, was clothed in the paingkoont, and wore no other raiment, so that the full hideousness

of her form was exposed to view.

The woman standing opposite is just starting upon a journey. She is better clad than her companion, having beside the paing-koont a rude sort of petiticat. On her back she has slung the net in which she places the roots which she is supposed to discout of the ground and threat through places the roots which she is supposed to dig out of the ground, and, thrust through the end which ties it, she carries the dig-ging-stick, or katta, which serves her for a spade. She has in her hand the invariable accompaniment of a journey,—namely, the fire-stick, smouldering amid dry grass be-tween two pieces of bark, and always ready to be forced into a flame by whitling it to be forced into a flame by whirling it round her head.

Behind them is seated an old man, also wearing the mat-cloak, and having by his side one of the beautifully constructed native baskets. These baskets are made, like the mat, of green rushes or reeds, and are plaited by the women. One of these baskets is illustrated in an engraving on the 722d page. The reader will doubtless ob-serve that the mode of plaining it is almost identical with that which is employed by the natives of Southern Africa, the rushes being twisted and coiled upon each other being twisted and coned upon each other and bound firmly together at short intervals by strong fibrous threads. They are rather variable in shape; some, which are intended to stand alone, being flat-bottomed, and others, which are always suspended by a

string, ending in a point.

In common with other savage races, the Australians are apt to behave treacherously to the white man when they find themselves able to do so with impunity. This behavior is not always the result of ferocity or cruelty, though an Australian can on occasion be as fierce and cruel as can of occasion be as herce and cruel as any savage. Oftentimes it is the result of fear, the black people standing in awe of the white stranger and his deadly weapons, and availing themselves of their native cunning to deprive him of his unfair advantage.

tages as soon as possible.

Ignorant of the object of travel, and having from infancy seen accustomed to consider certain districts as the property of certain tribes, and any man who intruded into the district of another as an enemy, it is but ogether are obtained from the chewed roots of the bulrush. The native name for this the first time, a man of different color from

to do with the treachery.
Add to their ideas of the inimical character of the strangers the cupidity that must be excited by the sight of the valuable property brought into their country by those whom they consider as enemies delivered into their hand, and there is no reason for wonder that they should take both the lives and the property of the strangers, and thus secure the valued trophies of war at the same time that they rid their country of strange and powerful enemies, and attain at one stroke an amount of wealth which they could not hope to gain through the labors of a life.

This phase of their character is well shown by Mr. T. Baines, in a letter which he has kindly allowed me to transfer to these pages. He was one of an exploring expedition, which had also undertaken to convey a number of sheep and horses. "While making the inner passage along the coast, we fell in with several canoes, some of very rude con-struction, being in fact mere logs capable of carrying a couple of men, who, perhaps in terror of the telescopes pointed at them, did

of the second se logs, pointed at the ends, and acting as out-riggers, neatly enough attached by pegs driven into them through a framing of bamboo. Others again were strictly double canoes, two of the narrow vessels being connected by a bamboo platform so as to lie parallel to each other at some little distance

"They were manned by crews of from six to twelve, or even more in number, all tolerably fine fellows, perfectly naked, with shock heads of woolly hair and scanty beards. They were ornamented with scars and raised cicatrices tastefully cut on their shoulder and elsewhere. They were armed with long spears, some of them tipped with wood, others with bone, and having from one to four points. They also had bows and are come as well as their contents reddles the rows, as well as their curious paddles, the looms of which were barbed and pointed, so as to be useful as spears. When these weapons were thrown at a fish, the owner always always into the weapons were through a busy of the second se plunged into the water after his weapon, so as to secure the fish the moment that it was

"Their arrival caused various emotions among our party. One gentleman ruined his revolver by hurriedly trying to load it, while a little girl, so far from being afraid of them, traded with them for almost every-thing they had in their canoes. Just as they thing they had in their canoes. Just as they dropped astern after reaching us, the cap- an hour through the telescope, and refrained

themselves travelling through the country, such strangers must necessarily be enemies, in a tub on the main-hatch, and, naturally enough jumped out of their bath, and ran at aborigines the weapons which they possess. Again, a feeling of acquisitiveness has much who were stretching themselves to look over our low bulwarks at the little naked white

girls.
"We bought spears, bows, arrows, tortoise-shell, &c., for hats, handkerchiefs, and other things; and they were greatly interested in the white baby, which, at their express request, was held up for them to look at."

Up to this point we find the natives mild

and conciliatory, but we proceed with the letter, and find an unexpected change in their

demeanor.

"We had here an instance of the capriciousness of the natives. We met about a dozen on shore, and endeavored by all friendly signs, to induce them to come to terms with us. We showed them that we had no guns, but our attempts were useless. They fell into regular battle array, with their long spears ready shipped on the throwing sticks, six standing in front, and the rest acting as supports helind. As it was musafe acting as supports behind. As it was unsafe to parley longer, we mounted our horses, and again tried to make them understand that we wished to be on friendly terms. It was all useless, and the only thing that we could do was to ride straight at them. They ran like antelopes, and gained the thick bush where we could not follow them. B wanted to shoot one of them, but I would not allow it.

"The prospect of killing and eating our horses seemed to be their great temptation. They made constant war upon our stud for a fortnight or three weeks, in my camp at Depôt Creek, and I had to patrol the country with B—daily, to keep them from ringing the horses round with fire.

"The character of the Australian canoes are represented as the content of the country and the country and the country are content."

men is variously spoken of, some reporting them as good-natured and peaceable, while others say that they are treacherous and savage. Both speak the truth from their savage, and the speak the savage. own experience. A fellow artist, who generally landed from a man-of-war's boat, with the ship in the offing, found them peaceable enough, but poor Mr. Strange, the natural-

ist, was murdered on one of the islands.
"While we were on board our vessels, they were quite friendly; and even during my boat's voyage of 750 miles, while we had a dashing breeze and the boat well under command, we found the groups we met with civil enough. But when we were helplessly becalmed at the entrance of the Gulf of Carpentaria, and supposed by the natives to be the unarmed survivors of some vessel wrecked in Torres Straits, we were deliberately and treacherously attacked.

from giving th to suspect that than as friend they had us in throw spears through the sh at us, to teach ! with supposed lagain. The wo by one of his r lested again.

"These peopl have the cunnir men, but in rea Life is not held their thirst for b cruelty."

These Austra attached, indica indeed do the b be fully describe tobacco pipes in tralia are curiou hollow tube as th at the ends ar the bottom into stem of a pipe, a top through whi Their use of the When a party de man lights the pi orifice, and cont interior of the hamoke. The bow aperture stopped vin readiness. The been imbibing th pipe to his neighbothe hole, fills his then passes the p this way, the tobac as possible, and the of enjoyment is go amount of materia stem is generally ca terns which are fou lian weapons and in

BEFORE proceedi acter and habits of glance at the cou and the peculiarities toward forming that It is a very stra to us as England Australian. Its veg luctions are most trange that when brought back accour vere not believed; a pecimens of the flor ecused of manufacti ose of deception. In the first place, v he mammalia are a ates. The solitary id, naturally n, and ran aft ight, to hide lack fellows to look over naked white arrows, tor-

eing bathed

erchiefs, and reatly interch, at their or them to

natives mild ed with the ange in their

the caprimet about a ored by all to come to em that we ere useless. , with their e throwing nd the rest was unsafe our horses, understand terms. It ing that we em. They thick bush i. B-I would not

eating our temptation. ur stud for ny camp at the counthem from

lian canoereporting able, while erous and from their , who gen-boat, with peaceable he naturalslands.

ur vessels, en during while we boat well groups we n we were nce of the ed by the ors of some s, we were acked.

for nearly

from giving them the slightest ground even to suspect that we looked on them otherwise than as friends. As soon as they thought they had us in their power, they began to throw spears at us, so I put a rifle-bullet through the shoulder of the man who threw at us, to teach him the danger of interfering with supposed helpless boats, but did not fire again. The wounded man was led on shore by one of his mates, and we were not molested again.

"These people are very capricious. They have the cunning and the strong passions of men, but in reason they are only children. Life is not held sacred by them, and, when their thirst for blood is raised, they revel in

These Australian canoes, with outriggers attached, indicate a Polynesian origin, as indeed do the bows and arrows, which will the fully described on a future page. The tobacco pipes in use in that part of Australia are curious. One form consists of a hollow tube as thick as a man's arm, stopped to the ands and having one hollow tube. at the ends and having one hole near the bottom into which is introduced the stem of a pipe, and another hole near the top through which the smoke is imbibed. Their use of the pipe is rather singular. When a party desires to smoke, the chief man lights the pipe, places his mouth to the orifice, and continually inhales until the interior of the hollow stem is filled with smoke. The bowl is then removed, and the aperture stopped with a plug which is kept in readiness. The first smoker closes with his thumb the hole through which he has been imbibing the smoke, and passes the pipe to his neighbor, who applies his lips to the hole, fills his lungs with smoke, and then passes the pipe to the next man. In this way, the tobacco is made to last as long as possible, and the greatest possible amount of enjoyment is got out of the least possible amount of material. The exterior of the stem is generally carved into the simple patterns which are found on nearly all Australian weapons and implements.

BEFORE proceeding further with the character and habits of the natives, we will cast a glance at the country which they inhabit, and the peculiarities which have contributed toward forming that character.

It is a very strange country, as strange to us as England would be to a savage Australian. Its vegetable and animal productions are most remarkable, and are so trange that when the earlier voyagers rought back accounts of their travels they were not believed; and when they exhibited pecimens of the flora and fauna, they were ecused of manufacturing them for the pur-ose of deception.

In the first place, with a single exception, he mammalia are all marsupials, or eden-

enous, or a mere variety of the dog modified by long residence in the country, is rather doubtful, though the best zoologists incline to the latter opinion, and say that the marsupial type alone is indigenous to this strange country. Of course the reader is supposed to know that the young of a marsupial animal is born at a very early age, and attains its full development in age, and assume its full development in a supplementary pouch attached to the mother, into which pouch the teats open.

The animal which is most characteristic of this single in the language. Of this single is the language.

of Australia is the kangaroo. Of this sinof Australia is the kangaroo. Of this singular type some forty species are known, varying in size from that of a tall man to that of a mouse. Some of them are known as kangaroos, and others as kangaroo-rats, but the type is the same in all. As their form implies, they are made for leaping over the ground, their enormously long legs and massive development of the hind quarters giving them the requisite power while their giving them the requisite power, while their long tails serve to balance them as they pass

through the air.

Nearly all the so-called "rats" of Australia belong to the kangaroo tribe, though some are members of other marsupial families. Here I may mention that the nomenclature of the colonists has caused great perplexity and labor to incipient zoologists. They are told in some books that the dingo is the only Australian animal that is not a marsupial or an edentate, and yet they read in books of travel of the bear, the monkey, the badger, the wolf, the cat, the squirrel, the mole, and so forth. The fact is, that, with the natural looseness of diction common to colonists all over the world, the immigrants have transferred to their new country the nomenclature of the old. To the great trouble of index-searchers, there is scarcely a part of the world inhabited by our colonists where London, Oxford, Boston, and fifty other places are not multiplied. The first large river they meet they are sure to call the Thames, and it is therefore to be expected that natural history should suffer in the same way as geography.

Thus, should, in the course of this account of Australia, the reader come across a passage quoted from some traveller in which the monkey or bear is mentioned, he must remember that the so-called "monkey" and "bear" are identical, and that the animal in question is neither the one nor the other, but a marsupial, known to the natives by the name of koala, and, as if to add to the confusion of names, some travellers call it the sloth.

The so-called "badger" is the wombat, probably called a badger because it lives in proparty cancer a parger because it. The holes which it burrows in the ground. The Australian "wolf" is another marsupiation. ates. The solitary exception is the dingo, belonging to the Dasyures, and the "cat"

belongs to the same group. The "squirrels" are all marsupials, and by rights are called phalangists, and it is to this group that the koala really belongs. As to the "hedgehog," it is the spiny ant-eater or echidna, and the "mole" is the celebrated duck-bill or ornithorhynchus.

With few exceptions these animals are not easily captured, many of them being nocturnal, and hiding in burrows or hollow trees until the shades of night conceal their movements; while others are so shy, active, and watchful, that all the craft of the hunter must be tried before they can be captured. Much the same may be said of the birds, the chief of which, the emu, is nearly as large as an ostrich, and is much valued by the natives as food. It is evident, therefore, that the existence of these peculiar animals must exercise a strong influence on the character of the natives, and must make them more active, wary, and quicksighted than the creatures on which they live.

Possessing, as he does, the most minute acquaintance with every vegetable which can afford him food, and even knowing where to obtain a plentiful supply of food and water in a land where an European could not find a particle of anything eatable, nor discover a drop of moisture in the dry and parched expanse, the Australian native places his chief reliance on animal food, and supports himself almost entirely on the creatures which kills. His appetite is very indiscriminate; and although he prefers the flesh of the kangaroo and the pigeon, he will devour any beast, bird, reptile, or fish, and will also eat a considerable number of insects. Consequently the life of the Australian savage is essentially one of warfare, not against his fellow-man, but against the lower animals, and, as the reader will see in the course of the following pages, the primary object of his weapons is the hunt, and war only secondary use to which they are directed.

MODE OF DE
OF THE SCA
BONE — NECI
THE TURTLE
FOR MANTILI
VEGETABLE
USES — THE '
BOPE MAKING
HARD WORK
HOME — COOK
— INSECT FO

THEM — THE
IT — CAPTURIN
TAMING THE 1
DRIED FLESH
EATING SNAKE
AND ITS CAPTURE

VE will now proers and customs
eparating them in
lating distinction
s briefly as is cohost interesting coloning those case
ustom seems to
ribe or district.
We have in the i
N, a good examp
Vestern Australia.
lade by Mr. T. E
an is given, in or

ontour of the fac ay see, has nothin bout it; the boldly

eard, and the longp-knot being the he man carries in r the day, namely, the kangaroo-rats, lows no care, thou efer larger game. Round his neck his supports an

nis supports an o on his breast. Se ment, which is ca e most minute egetable which knowing where food and water could not find e, nor discover a and parched explaces his chief supports himcreatures which indiscriminate; lesh of the kanill devour any nd will also eat nsects. Consealian savage is not against his lower animals, n the course of mary object of nd war only

are directed.

CHAPTER LXX.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

SANNERS AND CUSTOMS OF THE NATIVES—DRESS AND ORNAMENTS OF NORTHERN AUSTRALIA-MODE OF DRESSING THE HAIR—THE "DIBBI-DIBBI"—TATTOOING AND CHOATRIZING—PATTERN OF THE SCARS—SIGNIFICATION OF THE VARIOUS PATTERNS—POMP AND VANITY—THE NOSE-BONE - NECKLACES - THE GIRDLE AND TASSEL - TATTOOS AND SCARS AMONG THE WOMEN -THE TURTLE SCAR—HIGH SHOULDERS OF THE AUSTRALIANS—INDIFFERENCE TO DRESS—THEIR FUR MANTLES, AND THEIR USES - THE SEA-GRASS MANTLE - FOOD OF THE AUSTRALIANS -VEGETABLE FOOD -- MODE OF PROCURING ROOTS -- THE BIXU -- THE NARDOO PLANT AND ITS USES-THE "BURKE AND WILLS" EXPEDITION-THE BULRUSH ROOT, ITS USE FOR FOOD AND ROPE MAKING — SUBTERRANEAN WATER STORES — MOLLUSCS, AND MODE OF COLLECTING THEM — HARD WORK FOR THE WOMEN - DIVING FROM THE RAFT - RELAXATION WHEN THEY RETURN HOME - COOKING THE MOLLUSCS AND CRUSTACEA - FISH CATCHING WITH: LINE, NET, AND SPEAR -- INSECT FOOD -- THE BEE CATCHERS -- TREE AND EARTH GRUBS, AND MODE OF CATCHING THEM - THE PILEYAH - THE DUGONG - ITS LOCALITIES, AND MODES OF TAKING AND COOKING IT-CAPTURING AND COOKING THE GREEN TURTLE-CURIOUS USE OF THE SUCKING FISH-TAMING THE TURTLE - THE HAWKSBILL TURTLE, AND MODE OF CATCHING IT - TURTLE OIL AND DRIED FLESH — SALE OF TORTOISE-SHELL — TWO FORMS OF AUSTRALIAN OVENS — COOKING AND EATING SNAKES - CATCHING THE SNAKE ALIVE - THE CLOAK AND THE SHIELD - THE DUGONG, AND ITS CAPTURE - SMALL TENACITY OF LIFE - A SAVORY FEAST.

VE will now proceed to the various maners and customs of the Australians, not eparating them into the arbitrary and fluctuating distinctions of tribes, but describing shell of the pearl-oyster. The ordinary host interesting of their habits, and mendous interesting of their habits, and mendous interesting of the pearl-oyster. The ordinary depart very much from the original outline. oning those cases where any particular ustom seems to be confined to any one ibe or district.

We have in the illustration No. 1, on page 17, a good example of a native of North restern Australia. The sketch was kindly ade by Mr. T. Baines. A profile of the an is given, in order to show the peculiar ontour of the face, which, as the reader ay see, has nothing of the negro character bout it; the boldly prominent nose, the full ard, and the long hair fastened up in a p-knot being the distinguishing features. he man carries in his belt his provisions r the day, namely, a snake and one of the tle kangaroo-rats, and having these he lows no care, though of course he would efer larger game. Round his neck may be seen a string.

depart very much from the original outline of the shell. There is, however, one kind of dibbi-dibbi which is valued exceedingly, and which is shaped like a crescent. specimen in my possession is almost as large as a cheese plate, and must have been large as a cheese plate, and must have cut from an enormous shell, economy, whether of material or time, not being understood by these savages. Owing to the derstood by these savages. Owing to the shape of the shell, it is slightly convex, and was worn with the concave side next the body.

Not being satisfied with the natural smooth polish of the nacre, the native has ornamented the dibbi-dibbi with a simple but tolerably effective pattern. Along the margin of the scooped edge he has bored two parallel rows of small and shallow holes about half an inch apart, and on either side his supports an ornament which hangs the outer line he has drawn a series of scalon his breast. Several forms of this orloped patterns made in a similar fashion; ment, which is called in the duplicative and, simple as this pattern is, its effect is

really remarkable. The man has evidently begun a more elaborate pattern on the broad surface of the shell, but his mind seems to have misgiven him, and he has abandoned it. The cord by which it is suspended round the neck is nearly an inch wide, and is made of string and a sort of rattan plaited to-

On the shoulder of the man may be seen a number of raised marks. These are the scars of wounds with which the Australians are in the habit of adorning their bodies, and which they sometimes wear in great profusion. The marks are made by cutting deeply into the skin, and filling the wounds with clay and other substances, so that when the wound heals an elevated scar is made. These scars are made in patterns which partly differ according to the taste of the individual, and partly signifying the district to which the tattooed person belongs. For example, the scars as shown in the illustration are the mark of a Northern Australian; and, although he may have plenty other scars on his body and limbs, these will always appear on his shoulder as the distinguishing mark of his tribe.

In my photographs, which represent natives from various parts of the continent, these scars are very prominent, and there is not an individual who does not possess them. Some have them running longitudinally down the upper arm, while others have them alternately longitudinal and trans-verse. They occasionally appear on the breast, and an old man, remarkable for the quantity of hair which covered his breast and arms, has disposed them in a fan shape, spreading from the centre of the body to He has evidently spent a vast the arms. amount of time on this adornment, and suffered considerable pain, as scars, although not so large as in many other instances, are exceedingly numerous; the man has adorned his arms and shoulders with little scars of the same character arranged in regular

lines.

In some parts of Australia the scars assume a much more formidable appearance, being long and heavy ridges. One chief, who was very proud of his adornments,—as well he might be, seeing that their possession must nearly have cost him his life, was entirely covered from his neck to his knees with scars at least an inch broad, set closely together, and covering the whole of the body. The front of the chest and stomach was adorned with two rows of these scars, each scar being curved, and reaching from the side to the centre of the body, where they met. The man was so inordinately proud of this ornament that nothing could induce him to wear clothing of any kind, and he stalked about in his grandeur, wearing nothing but his weapons. The tern.

photograph of this man has a very singular aspect, the light falling on the polished has three cuts on the shoulder, showing his

ridge of the scars having an effect as if he were clad in a suit of some strange armor.

By way of adding to the beauty of their countenances, they are in the habit of per-forating the septum of the nose, and of thrusting through it a piece of bone or stick, the former being preferred on account of its whiteness. It is almost impossible to dewhiteness. It is almost impossible to describe the exceedingly grotesque appearance presented by an Australian dandy, who has his body covered with scars, and his face crossed by a wide piece of bone some six inches in length, making his naturally broad inches in length, making his naturally broad to the control of the nose wider, and seeming as it were to cut his face in half. The hole through which this ornament is thrust is made when a child is a

As to other ornaments, they consist of the usual necklaces, bracelets, and anklets which are common to savage tribes in all parts of the world. Some of these necklaces which are in my collection are really pretty, and some skill is shown in their manufacture. One is made of pieces of yellow reed as thick as quills and almost an inch in length, strung alternately with scarlet reeds; another is made entirely of the same reeds, while a third is, in my opinion, the handsomest, though not the most striking of them. At first sight it appears to be made entirely of the reeds already mentioned, but on a closer examination it is seen to be composed entirely of the antenne of lobsters, cut into short lengths and strung together. To the necklaces is attached a small mother-ofpearl dibbi-dibbi four inches long and one inch wide, and the pieces of lobster antenna are so disposed that the thinner parts of the antennæ, taken from the extremities, come next to the dibbi-dibbi and hang on the breast, while the larger and thicker parts taken from the base of the antennæ, come on the neck. The native basket in which these necklaces were kept is more than half filled with bright colored seeds of various hues, that are evidently intended for the manufacture of necklaces.

Girdles of finely twisted human hair are often worn by the men, and the native who is represented in the engraving No. 1, on page 707, is wearing one of these girdles Sometimes, as in the present instance, small tassel made of the hair of a phalar gist or "flying-squirrel," as it is wrongly termed, is hung to the front of the girdle by no means as a covering, but as an orns

ment.

The scars are so highly valued that the women wear them nearly as profusely as the men. In my photographs, there are portraits of many women of all ages, not one design the state of the st whom is without scars. They do not wer them so large as the men, but seem to be more careful in the regularity of the pa

northern ex isontal and the body fro The second, has several r breast to the central line a similar rows The third wo so, has been y of the scars, parallel rows then radiate f breast upward

Mr. M'Gilli S. Rattlesnake lows concern their uses: -are distinguis oval scar, only construction. has some conn the right show peated on the of page 722.) cicatrices were connect any pa vidual tribe. like uniformit Katchialaigas, addition to the three long tran which the other

"In the rema marking was su consider it as be vidual caprice t Many had a sine each breast, and them a clumsy shoulder mark

Well-shaped have one defect and square should from feminine be conspicuous in t thirteen or four The men also e

form. The reader will manner in which savage is sometin hair-dressing var often with the tim lute a reign amor and being quite as selves. Sometime into long and na savage should not hair for this fashi a wig in imitation head is shaved, ex hair, and sometime fashion of rubbing into their heads un the compound, and hair into little str ffect as if he nge armor. auty of their habit of pernose, and of one or stick, eccount of its sible to dee appearance ndy, who has and his face ne some six turally broad ere to cut his h which this n a child is a

consist of the nklets which all parts of klaces which y pretty, and manufacture. reed as thick ength, strung; another is eeds, while a handsomest, of them. At le entirely of it on a closer omposed enters, cut into gether. ll mother-ofong and one ster antenna r parts of the mities, come hang on the hicker parts, tennæ, come

ded for the nan hair are native who ng No. 1, on hese girdles instance, a of a phalanis wrongly as an orna

ket in which

ore than half

s of various

red that the fusely as the ere are por s, not one d do not wear seem to be of the par

en, the first showing he

northern extraction, and a row of small horizontal and parallel scars along the front of the body from the breast-bone downward. The second, in addition to the shoulder cuts, has several rows of scars extending from the breast to the collar-bones, together with a central line as already described, and some similar rows of cuts on the ribs and sides. The third woman, a mere girl of fourteen or so, has been very careful in the arrangement of the scars, which descend in regular and parallel rows from the breast downward, and then radiate fan-wise in six rows from the breast upward to the collar bones.

Mr. M'Gillivray, who accompanied H. M. S. Rattlesnake in her voyage, writes as follows concerning the scar ornaments and their uses: — "The Torres Straits islanders are distinguished by a large complicated oval scar, only slightly raised, and of neat construction. This, which I have been told has some connection with a turtle, occupies the right shoulder, and is occasionally repeated on the left. (See engraving at foot of page 722.) At Cape York, however, the cicatrices were so varied that I could not connect any particular style with an individual tribe. At the same time, something like uniformity was noticed among the Katchialaigas, nearly all of whom had, in addition to the horned breast mark, two or three long transverse scars on the chest, which the other tribes did not possess

"In the remaining people the variety of marking was such that it appeared fair to consider it as being regulated more by individual caprice than by any fixed custom. Many had a simple two-horned mark on each breast, and we sometimes saw upon them a clumsy imitation of the elaborate shoulder mark of the islanders."

Well-shaped as are these women, they have one defect in form, namely, the high and square shoulder, which detracts so much from feminine beauty, and which is equally conspicuous in the child of six, the girl of thirteen or fourteen, and the old woman. The men also exhibit the same defective

The reader will have noticed the elaborate manner in which the hair of the Australian savage is sometimes dressed. The style of hair-dressing varies with the locality, and often with the time, fashion having as absolute a reign among the native Australians, and being quite as capricious, as among our-selves. Sometimes the hair is twisted up into long and narrow ringlets, and, if the savage should not happen to have enough hair for this fashion, he straightway makes a wig in imitation of it. Now and then the head is shaved, except a transverse crest of hair, and sometimes the natives will take a

The men of this part of Australia never wear any dress, and the women are often equally indifferent to costume. At Cape York, however, they mostly wear an apology for a petticoat, consisting of a tuft of long grass or split pandanus leaves suspended to the front of the girdle. On great occasions, and especially in their dances, they wear over this a second petticoat mostly made of some leaf, and having the ends woven into a sort of waistband. The York, however, they mostly wear an apolmaterial of the petticoat is generally pan-danus leaf, but, whatever may be the material, the mode of platting it and the general form are the same among all the tribes of Torres Straits. From this useful leaf, the women also make the rude sails for their cances, which serve the double purpose of sails and coverings under which the natives can sleep in wat weather. can sleep in wet weather.

The women have rather a curious mode of wearing one of their ornaments. This is a very long belt, composed of many strands of plaited or twisted fibre, and passed round the body in such a manner that it crosses on the breast like the now abolished cross-belts of the soldier. It is drawn rather tight, and may perhaps be of some service in supporting the bosom. In neither case does clothing seem to be worn as a mode of concealing any part of the body, but merely as a defence against the weather or as an ornament. Even when dress is worn it is of a very slight character, with one or two exceptions. These exceptions are the fur cloaks, with which the women sometimes clothe themselves, and a remarkable garment which presently will be described.

The fur cloaks are made almost universally from the skin of the opossum, and, as the animal is a small one, a considerable number are sewed together to make a single robe. The mode of manufacture is exactly similar to that which was described when treating of the kaross of the Kaffir tribes, the skins being cut to the proper shape, laid side by side, and sewed laboriously together with threads formed of the sinews of the kangaroo's tail, or often with those which are drawn out of the tails of the very creatures which furnish the skin.

Sometimes a piece of kangaroo skin is used for the same purpose, but in neither case does it fulfil the office of a dress according to our ideas. The cloak is a very small one in proportion to the size of the women, and it is worn by being thrown over the back and tied across the chest by a couple of thongs, so as to leave the whole front of the body uncovered. If the garment in question be the skin of the kangaroo, it is slung over one shoulder, and allowed to fall much as it likes, hair, and sometimes the natives will take a fashion of rubbing red ochre and turtle-fat into their heads until they are saturated with the compound, and will then twist up the compound, and will then twist up the lair into little stronge. to the manner in which it hangs upon his

body, sometimes draping it about his shoul- | found, and Mr. M'Gillivray states that on the ders, sometimes letting it fall to his waist and gathering it about his loins, and sometimes, especially if walking, holding two cor-ners together with his left hand in front of his breast, while his right hand grasps his bundle of weapons.

Mr. Angas mentions one instance of a singularly perfect dress in use among the Australians — the only dress in fact that is really deserving of the name. It is a large clock made from the zostera or sea grass, a plant that is remarkable for being the only true flowering plant that grows in the sea. It has very long grass-like blades, and is found in vast beds, that look in a clear sea like luxuriant hay-fields just before mowing

The fibre of the zostera is long, and won-derfully tough, and indeed the fibre is so good, and the plant so abundant, that the uses to which it is now put, such as packing and stuffing, are far below its capabilities, and it ought to be brought into use for purposes for which a long and strong fibre are needed. Some time ago, when the supply of rags for paper seemed to be failing, there was an at-tempt made to substitute the zostera for rags; and, although it was not a perfectly successful experiment, it had at all events the elements of success in it.

With this long grass the Australian native occasionally makes a large cloak, which will cover the whole body. It is made by laying the fibres side by side, and lashing them together at regular intervals, much as the well-known New Zealand mantle is made from the phormium. Anxious to avoid trouble. the native only fastens together a sufficient quantity to make a covering for his body as low as the knees, the loose ends of the zostera being left as a kind of long fringe that edges the mantle all round, and really has a very graceful effect.

The illustration No. 2, on the next page, shows one of those curious mantles, which was sketched while on the body of the wearer. As the manufacture of such a mantle involves much trouble, and the Australian native has the full savage hatred of labor, very few of these cloaks are to be seen. Indeed, nothing but a rather long inclement season will induce a native to take the trouble of making a garment which he will only use for a comparatively short period, and which is rather troublesome to carry about when not wanted.

WE now come to the food of the natives. As has already been stated, they eat almost anything, but there are certain kinds of food which they prefer, and which will be specially mentioned.

As to vegetable food, there are several kinds of yams which the more civilized tribes cultivate - the nearest approach to labor of which they can be accused. It is almost exmainland he never saw an attempt at clearing the ground for a garden. In the islands, however, the natives manage after a fashion

to raise crops of yams.

When they want to clear a piece of ground, they strew the surface with branches, which are allowed to wither and dry; as soon as they are thoroughly dried, fire is set to them, and thus the space is easily cleared from vegetation. The ground is then pecked up with a stick sharpened at the point and hardened by fire; the yams are cut up and planted. and by the side of each hole a stick is thrust into the ground, so as to form a support for the plant when it grows up. The natives plant just before the rainy season. They never trouble themselves to build a fence round the simple garden, neither do they look after the growth of the crops, knowing that the rains which are sure to fall will

bring their crops to perfection. There are also multitudes of vegetable products on which the natives feed. One of them, which is largely used, is called by them "blyu." It is made from the young and tender shoots of the mangrove tree. The sprouts, when three or four inches in length. are laid upon heated stones, and covered with bark, wet leaves, and sand. After being thoroughly stewed, they are beaten between two stones, and the pulp is scraped away from the fibres. It then forms a slimy grav paste, and, although it is largely eaten, the natives do not seem to like it, and only resort to it on a necessity. They contrive, however, to improve its flavor by adding large quantities of wild yams and other vegetable products.

Perhaps the most celebrated wild food of the Australians is the "nardoo," which has become so familiar to the British reader since the important expedition of Burke and Wills. The nardoo is the produce of a cryptogamous plant which grows in large quanties, but is rather local. The fruit is about as large as a pea, and is cleaned for use by being rubbed in small wooden troughs. is then pounded into a paste, and made into cakes, like oatmeal.

The nardoo plant is one of the ferns, and those of my readers who are skilled in bot any will find it in the genus Marsiles Like many of the ferns, the plant presents strangely unfernlike aspect, consisting d upright and slender stems, about twelvinches high, each having on its tips a small quadruple frond, closely resembling a flower. The fruit, or "sporocarp," of the nardoo is the part that is eaten; and it is remarkable for its powers of absorbing water, and sincreasing its size. Indeed, when the fruits soaked in water, it will in the course of single hour swell until it is two hundred times its former size.

The nardoo is useful in its way, and, whe clusively on the islands that cultivation is mixed with more nutritious food, is a vale (2) THE SEA GRASS CLOAK

(See page 706.)

(1.) THE HUNTER AND HIS DAY'S PROVISIONS

(Not page 701)

tes that on the empt at clear-In the islands, after a fashion

ece of ground, anches, which y; as soon as is set to them, cleared from on pecked upoint and hardpand planted, stick is thrust a support for The natives leason. They build a fence ither do they rope, knowing e to fall will on.

vegetable pro-eed. One of called by them e young and ve tree. The hes in length covered with After being ater being aten between craped away a slimy gray ely eaten, the and only resort ontrive, how adding large her vegetable

wild food of o," which has ritish reader of Burke and uce of a cryphalarge quantities about the druse by troughs. It and made into

he ferns, and silled in bot us Marsiles nt presents; consisting d about twelves tips a smalling a flower the perdocis he nardoo i remarkable rater, and when the fruite course of the work of the course of the cours

y, and, whe



able article of it has scarcely and though i keeps off the gives no streng eaten with fis quires either f power of nour brightness of s to keep up, even hardships, an dying, he gives rate picture of of time on an liked the nardo quantities of it leaving a reco vation on nare ant but for the utter inability as appetite is co satisfaction."

The death of another proof o stranger to the ersing a new lar on the route passed, and, fr resources of the port themselves lers seem to have midst of plenty.

The chief veg hished by the bu

Australians who of life. As the very disagreeabl the women, who procuring the ro

It is cooked manner. A hea and heated by fi on the hot stone layer of the same duce a quantity grass is thrown o and a mound of s

As the root, ho fibrous, the nativ parts, they reject throws aside his e quantities of thes be found same fibre is cour usea in the manuf

nets.

The singular kr possessed by the r with greater force they have of procu-ently desert place are to be found, bigeon can be seen pigeon can be seen the air, as the gu toward which it

able article of diet. Taken alone, however, | it has scarcely the slightest nutritive powers, and though it distends the stomach, and so and though it distents the stomach, and so keeps off the gnawing sense of hunger, it gives no strength to the system. Even when eaten with fish, it is of little use, and requires either fat or sugar to give it the due power of nourishment. With the wonderful brightness of spirit which Mr. Wills managed to keep up, even when suffering the severest hardships, and fealing binself greguelt. hardships, and feeling himself gradually dying, he gives in his diary a curiously accu-rate picture of the effects of living for a length of time on an innutritious substance. liked the nardoo, and consumed considerable quantities of it, but gradually wasted away, leaving a record in his diary that "star-vation on nardoo is by no means unpleasant but for the weakness one feels, and the utter inability to rouse one's self; for as far as appetite is concerned, it gives the greatest satisfaction."

The death of this fine young man affords another proof of the disad antice at which a stranger to the country is placed while traversing a new land. Many native tribes lived or the route along which the travellers passed, and, from their knowledge of the resources of the country, were able to support themselves; whereas the white travellers seem to have died of starvation in the

midst of plenty.

The chief vegetable food, however, is fur-aished by the bulrush root, which is to the Australians who live near rivers the staff of life. As the task of procuring it is a very disagreeable one, it is handed over to the women, who have to wade among the reeds and half bury themselves in mud while procuring the root.

It is cooked after the usual Australian manner. A heap of limestones is raised, and heated by fire. The roots are then laid on the hot stones, and are covered with a layer of the same material. In order to pro-duce a quantity of steam, a heap of wet grass is thrown on the upper layer of stones, and a mound of sand heaped over all.

As the root, however well cooked, is very fibrous, the natives do not swallow it, but, after chewing it and extracting all the soft parts, they reject the fibres, just as a sailor throw did his exhausted quid; and great quantities of the se little balls of fibre are to be for d very ence paent. The sam is screvertible into string, and is used in the manufacture of fishing lines and nets.

The singular knowledge of vegetable life possessed by the natives is never displayed with greater force than in the power which they have of procuring water. In an apparatus they have of procuring water. In an apparently desert place, where no signs of water are to be found, and where not even a pigeon can be seen to wing its way the surface. pigeon can be seen to wing its way through the air, as the guide to the distant water toward which it is flying, the native will maining under water twice as long as our

manage to supply himself with both water and food.

He looks out for certain eucalypti or gumtrees, which are visible from a very great distance, and makes his way toward them. Choosing a spot at three or four yards from the trunk, with his katta he digs away at the carth, so as to expose the roots, tears them out of the ground, and proceeds to propare them. Cutting them into pieces of a foot or so in length, he stands them upright in the bark vessel which an Australian mostly carries with him, and waits patiently. Presently a few drops of water coze from the lower ends of the roots, and in a short time

lower ends of the roots, and in a short time water pours out freely, so that an abundant supply of liquid is obtained.

Should the native be very much parched, he takes one of the pleces of root, splits it lengthwise, and chews it, finding that it gives as much juice as a water-meion. The youngest and freshest-looking trees are always above for the number of this light in the property of the pro ways chosen for the purpose of obtaining water, and the softest-looking roots selected. After the water has all been drained from them, they are pealed, pounded between two stones, and then roasted; so that the euca-lyptus supplies both food and drink.

As, however, as has been stated, the chief reliance of the natives is upon animal food and fish, molluscs, crustacea, reptiles, and and nsn, monuses, crustacea, reptiles, and insects form a very considerable proportion of their fool. Collecting the shell-fish is the duty of the women, chiefly because it is really hard work, and requires a great amount of diving. Throughout the whole of this vast continent this duty is given to the women; and whether in the Gulf of Carpentaria, on the extreme north, or in the island of Van Diemen's Land, in the extreme south. the same custom prevails.

During Labillardière's voyage in search of
La Perouse, the travellers came upon a party of the natives of Van Diemen's Land while the women were collecting shell-fish, and the author gives a good description of the labors to which these poor creatures were subjected: -

"About noon we saw them prepare their repast. Hitherto we had but a faint idea of the pains the women take to procure the food requisite for the subsistence of their families. They took each a basket, and were followed by their daughters, who did the same. Getting on the rocks that projected into the sea, they plunged from them to the bottom in search of shell-fish. When they had been down some time, we became very uneasy on their account: for where they had dived were seaweeds of great length,

ablest divers. * An instant was sufficient | tion with respect to several of the children, for them to take breath, and then they dived again. This they did repeatedly till their baskets were nearly full. Most of them were provided with a little bit of wood, cut into the shape of a spatula, and with these they separated from beneath the rocks, at great depths, very large sea-ears. Perhaps they chose the biggest, for all they brought

were of a great size.

"On seeing the large lobsters which they had in their baskets, we were afraid that they must have wounded these poor women terribly with their large claws; but we soon found that they had taken the precaution to kill them as soon as they caught them. They quitted the water only to bring their husbands the fruits of their labor, and frequently returned almost immediately to their diving till they had procured a sufficient meal for their families. At other times they stayed a little while to warm themselves, with their faces toward the fire on which their fish was roasting, and other little fires burning behind them, that they might be warmed on all sides at once,

"It seemed as if they were unwilling to lose a moment's time; for while they were warming themselves, they were employed in roasting fish, some of which they laid on the coals with the utmost caution, though they took little care of the lobsters, which they threw anywhere into the fire; and when they were ready they divided the claws among the men and the children, reserving the body for themselves, which they sometimes ate before returning into the water.

"It gave us great pain to see these poor women condemned to such severe toil; while, at the same time, they ran the hazard of being devoured by sharks, or entangled among the weeds that rise from the bottom of the sea. We often entreated their husbands to take a share in their labor at least, but always in vain. They remained constantly near the fire, feasting on the best bits, and eating broiled fucus, or fern-roots. Occasionally they took the trouble to break boughs of trees into short pieces to feed the fire, taking care to choose the dryest.

"From their manner of breaking them we found that their skulls must be very hard; for, taking hold of the sticks at each end with the hand, they broke them over their heads, as we do at the knee, till they broke. Their heads being constantly bare, and often exposed to all weathers in this high latitude, acquire a capacity for resisting such efforts: besides, their hair forms a cushion which diminishes the pressure, and renders it much less painful on the summit of the head than any other part of the body. Few of the women, however, could have done as much, for some had their hair cut

but none of the men. These had the back, breast, shoulders, and arms covered with downy hair."

Sometimes a party of women will go out on a raft made of layers of reeds, pushing themselves along by means of very long poles. When they arrive at a bed of mussels, they will stay there nearly all day diving from the raft, with their nets tied round their necks, and, after remaining under water for a considerable time, come up with a heavy load of mussels in their nets.

They even manage to cook upon this fragile raft. They make a heap of wet sand upon the reeds, put a few stones on it, and build their fire on the stones, just as if they had been on shore. After remaining until they have procured a large stock of mussels, they pole themselves ashore, and in all probability have to spend several hours in cooking the mussels for the men. The mussels are usually

eaten with the bulrush root.

There is a sort of crayfish which is found in the mud-flats of rivers and lakes. are also caught by the women, who feel for them in the mud with their feet, and hold them down firmly until they can be seized by the hand. As soon as the creatures are taken, the claws are crushed to prevent them from biting, and they are afterward roasted, while still alive, on the embers of the fire. Tadpoles are favorite articles of diet with the Australians, who fry them on grass.

The ordinary limpet, mussel, and other molluses, are largely eaten by the natives, who scoop them out by means of smaller shells, just as is done by boys along our own coasts—a plan which is very efficacious, as I can testify from personal experience. Sometimes they cook the molluses by the simple process of throwing them on the embers, but as a general rule they eat them

in a raw state, as we eat oysters.

Fish they catch in various ways. The usual method is by a hook and line; the former of which is ingeniously cut out of the shell of the hawksbill turtle. Two of these hooks are now before me, and raise a feeling of wonder as to the fish which could be induced to take such articles into its mouth It is flat, very clumsily made, and there is no barb, the point being curved very much inward, so as to prevent the fish from slip-ping off the hook. In fact the whole shape of the hook is almost exactly identical with that of the hook which is found throughout Polynesia and extends to New Zealand.

The hook is fastened to a long and stout line, made by chewing reeds, stripping them into fibres, and rolling them on the thighs Two of these strings are then twisted to gether, and the line is complete. My own specimen of a line is about as thick as the fishpretty short, and wore a string several times round the head; others had only a simple crown of hair. We made the same observa-

rather clums line is made o Another m This requires The net is m four feet in wi and can then package and man then take and with the a it into the w edge of the net wade toward the two ends of happen to be v they near the s of the net to are then able i all the fish that more active fish upper edge of th loving and craf the lower edge; of fish to

labor. Like the fishi chewed reeds, as twisting the strir women.

A third mode certain traps or of rattan, and ma pass into them, b get out again.' and with unerrin with his spear. in this spear. ing better than one end, contrive the same stick th mud, and turn er and when they ca to be able to shift parents take no r them.

They are not m ing of fish than of just throw them o or twice with a warmed through they pick them or burnt scales, and ceremony.

Insect food is m tralians. As mig greatly valued by great ingenuity i native sees a bewishes to find the nearest pool, selec shelves very gradu his mouth with w the arrival of a be a considerable amo one knows who ha the children, had the back, covered with

n will go out eeds, pushing of very long a bed of musy all day divets tied round g under water e up with a nets.

on this fragile et sand upon it, and build is if they had ng until they mussels, they all probability cooking the els are usually

hich is found akes. These who feel for cet, and hold an be scized creatures are prevent them ward roasted, s of the fire. f diet with the grass.

el, and other the natives, as of smaller long our own efficacious, as experience. lluses by the hey eat them

ways. The nd line; the cut out of the Two of these l raise a feelnich could be to its mouth and there is ed very much sh from slipwhole shape dentical with d throughout Zealand.

ng and stout ripping them n the thighs n twisted to te. My own ck as the fish nd it is ven r end. The very firm but

rather clumsy wrapping. line is made of scraped rattan fibres.

Another mode of fishing is by the net. This requires at least two men to manage it. The net is many feet in length, and about four feet in width. It is kept extended by a number of sticks placed a yard or so apart, and can then be rolled up in a cylindrical package and be taken to the water. One man then takes an end of the net, unrolls it, and with the assistance of his comrade drops it into the water. As soon as the lower edge of the net touches the bottom, the men wade toward the shore, drawing with them the two ends of the net and all the fish that happen to be within its range. As soon as they near the shore, they bring the two ends of the net to the land, fix them there, and are then able to pick up and throw ashore all the fish that are in the net. Some of the more active fish escape by leaping over the upper edge of the net, and some of the mudloving and crafty wriggle their way under the lower edge; but there is always a suffi-coor of fish to reward the natives for their labor.

Like the fishing line, the net is made of chewed reeds, and the labor of chewing and twisting the string belongs exclusively to the women.

A third mode of fishing is by employing certain traps or baskets, ingeniously woven of rattan, and made so that the fish can easily pass into them, but cannot by any possibility get out again. Sometimes fish are speared in the shallow water, the native wading in, and with unerring aim transfixing the fish with his spear. Even the children take part in this sport, and, though armed with nothing better than a short stick, sharpened at one end, contrive to secure their fish. With the same stick they dig molluscs out of the mud, and turn crustacea out of their holes; and when they can do this, they are supposed to be able to shift for themselves, and their parents take no more trouble about feeding them.

They are not more fastidious in the cooking of fish than of crustacea or molluses, but just throw them on the fire, turn them once or twice with a stick, and when they are warmed through and the outside scorched, they pick them out of the fire, scrape off the burnt scales, and eat them without further ceremony.

Insect food is much used among the Australians. As might be expected, honey is greatly valued by them, and they display great ingenuity in procuring it. When a native sees a bee about the flowers, and wishes to find the honey, he repairs to the hearest pool, selects a spot where the bank shelves very gradually, lies on his face, fills his mouth with water, and patiently awaits the arrival of a bee. These insects require a considerable amount of moisture, as every

Sometimes the hunter reckons on this fact to procure him in fibres. After a while a bee is sure to come and drink, and the hunter, hearing the insect approaching him, retains his position and scarcely breathes, so fearful is he of alarming it. At last it alights, and instantly the native blows the water from his mouth over it, stunning it for the moment. Before it can recover itself, he seizes it, and by means of a little gum attaches to it a tuft of white down obtained from one of the trees.

As soon as it is released, the insect flies away toward its nest, the white tuft serving the double purpose of making it more conspicuous and retarding its flight. Away goes the hunter after it at full speed, run-ning and leaping along in a wonderful manner, his eyes fixed on the guiding insect, and making very light of obstacles. (See illustration No. 1, on the 716th page.) Sometimes of the control of the times a fallen tree will be in his way, and if he can he jumps over it; but at all risks he must get over without delay, and so he dashes at the obstacle with reckless activity. Should he surmount it, well and good; but if, as often happens, he should fall, he keeps his eyes fixed, as well as he can, on the bee, and as soon as he springs to his feet he resumes the chase. Even if he should lose sight of it for a moment, he dashes on in the same direction, knowing that a bee always flies in a straight line for its home; and when he nears it, the angry hum of the hampered insect soon tells him that he has

recovered the lost ground.

The reader will see that this mode of tracking the bee to its home is far inferior to that of the American bee-hunters, and is rather a business of the legs than of the head. The Australian bee-hunter waits until a bee happens to come to the spot where he lies; the American bee-hunter baits an attractive trap, and induces the insect to come to the spot which he selects. Then the Australian bee-hunter only runs after the single bee; whereas the American bee-hunter economizes his strength by employing two bees, and saving his legs.

He puts honey on a flat wooden slab, having drawn a circle of white paint round it. The bee alights on the honey, and, after filling its crop, crawls through the white paint and sets off homeward. The hunter follows the "bee-line" taken by the insect, and marks it by scoring or "blazing" a few trees. He then removes his honeyed trap to a spot at an angle with his former station and repeats the process. There is no need for him to race after the flying bee, and to run considerable risk of damaging himself more or less seriously; he simply follows out the lines which the two bees have taken, and, by fixing on the point at which they meet, walks leisurely up to the nest.

one knows who has kept them, and the bee- loses no time in ascending to the spot, Having found his bee nest, the Australian

whether it be a cleft in a rock, or, as is usually the case, a hole in a tree. This latusually the case, a hole in a tree. This latter spot is much favored by the bees, as well as by many of the arboreal mammals, of which there are so many in Australia. The sudden and violent tempests which rage in that part of the world tear off the branches of trees and hurt them to the ground. Dur-ing succeeding rainy seasons, the wet lodges in the broken branch, and by degrees rots away the wood, which is instantly filled with the larvæ of beetles, moths, flies, and other insects that feed upon decaying wood. Thus, in a few years, the hollow extends itself until it burrows into the tree itself. and sometimes descends nearly from the top to the bottom, thus forming an admirable locality for the bees.

Taking with him a hatchet, a basket, and a quantity of dry grass or leaves, the native a quantry of dry grass or leaves, the native ascends, lights the grass, and under cover of the smoke chops away the wood until he can get at the combs, which he places in the basket, with which he descends. Should he be too poor to possess even a basket, he extemporizes one by cutting away the bark of the tree; and should the nest be a very large one, he is supplied by his friends from below with a number of vessels, and passes them down as fast as they are filled.

Perhaps some of my readers may remark that honey cannot be rightly considered as insect food, and that it ought to have been ranked among the vegetable produc-tions. The Australian, however, does not content himself with extracting the honey from the comb, but eats it precisely in the arom the comb, but eats it precisely in the state in which it is brought from the nest. As the bees are not forced, as amongst English bee-masters, to keep their honey-cells distinct from those which contain the hoard and the "bee-bread," each comb contains indiscriminately bee-bread, young beerwish and honey and the Australian each grubs, and honey, and the Australian eats

all three with equal satisfaction.

Another kind of insect food is a grub which inhabits the trunks of trees, and of which the natives are inordinately fond. They have a wonderful faculty of discovering the presence of this grub, and twist it out of its hole with an odd little instrument composed of a hook fastened to the end of a slender twig. This implement is carried in the hair so as to project over the ear, like a clerk's pen, and for a long time puzzled travellers, who thought it to be merely an ornament, and could not understand its very peculiar shape.

The larva is the caterpillar of a moth The larva is the caterpillar of a moth which is closely allied to the goat-moth of our own country, and has the same habit of burrowing into the wood of living trees. The hooked instrument which is used for drawing them out of their holes is called the "pileyah," and is employed also for hooking heatles grubs and other incorts. hooking beetles, grubs, and other insects exceptions, did not differ out of their holes in the ground. When the other parts of the colony.

pileyah is used for extracting grubs from the earth, the ground is first loosened by means of a wooden scoop that looks some-thing like a hollowed waddy. The pileyah is then tied to the end of a polygonum twig of sufficient length, and by such means can be introduced into the holes.

Perhaps the most celebrated of the vari-ous insect banquets in which the Australians delight is that which is furnished by the bugong moth, as the insect is popularly, but wrongly, called. Instead of belonging to the moth tribe, it is one of the butterflies, and belongs to the graceful family of the Heliconide. Its scientific name is Euplæa Heliconide. Its scientific name is Eupleae hamata. The bugong is remarkable for the fact that its body, instead of being slender like that of most butterflies, is very stout, and contains an astonishing amount of oily matter. The color of the insect is dark brown, with two black spots on the upper wings. It is a small insect processive of wings. It is a small insect, measuring only an inch and a half across the wings.

It is found in the New South Wales dis-

trict, and inhabits a range of hills that are called from the insect the Bugong Mountains. The Australians eat the bugong butterflies just as locusts are eaten in many parts of the world, and, for the short time during which the insect makes its appearance, feast inordinately upon it, and get quite fat. The following account is given by Mr.

G. Bennett:

"After riding over the lower ranges, we arrived a short distance above the base of the Bugong Mountain, tethered the horses. and ascended on foot, by a steep and rugged path, which led us to the first summit of the mountain: at this place, called Ginandery by the natives, enormous masses of granite rock, piled one upon another, and situated on the verge of a wooded precipice, excited our attention. An extensive and romantic view was here obtained of a distant, wooded,

mountainous country.

"This was the first place where, upon the smooth sides or crevices of the granite blocks, the bugong moths congregated in such incredible multitudes; but, from the blacks having recently been here, we found but few of the insects remaining. At one part of this group of granite rocks were two pools, apparently hollowed naturally from the solid stone, and filled with cool and clear water; so, lighting a fire, we enjoyed a cup of tea previous to recommencing our further ascent. On proceeding we found the rise more gradual, but unpleasant, from the number of loose stones and branches of trees strewed about; several of the deserted bark huts of the natives (which they had temporarily erected when engaged in collecting and preparing the bugong) were scattered around. Shrubs and plants were numerous as we proceeded, but, with few exceptions, did not differ from those seen in

"Near a si $L_{ycopodium}$ carpet over The timber elevation the we had antic we arrived granite rock various forms formed the lo congregate, a the natives. apprised us recently left t character a fe

"Our nativ and join the advanced tha able to retur the blacks rea they had clea we should fin removed to ot "From the

appears that such multitude iar masses of solitary granit over the rang moth, or even they should be ticular places, collect togethe interesting su be for the pu other cause, or satisfactorily a "The bugor

observed, colle the crevices, of credible quanti greater facility fires undernea they are collec smoke, at the s frequently in 1 they have colle proceed to prep the following m

"A circular ground, of a si ber of insects t lighted and kep considered to 1 the fire being re away, the moth ground, and stir wings are remov placed on piece separate the dus bodies; they are a wooden vesse bum,' and pound masses or cakes may be compare to dough made with fat.

grubs from cosened by looks somethe pileyah gonum twig means can

of the varihe Austratrainished by
spopularly,
f belonging
butterflies,
mily of the
is Euplaa
able for the
ing slender
very stout,
bunt of oily
cet is dark
a the upper
suring only

Wales disWales dislls that are
ong Mounougong butn in many
short time
its appearnd get quite
ven by Mr.

ranges, we the base of the horses, and rugged mmit of the Ginandery s of granite nd situated ice, excited d romantic nt, wooded,

e, upon the he granite regated in , from the , we found g. At one rocks were l naturally th cool and we enjoyed encing our we found asant, from oranches of he deserted they had ong) were olants were , with few ose seen in

"Near a small limpid stream a species of Lycopodium grew so dense as to form a carpet over which we were able to walk. The timber trees towered to so great an elevation that the prospect of the country we had anticipated was impeded. At last we arrived at another peculiar group of granite rocks in enormous masses and of various forms; this place, similar to the last, formed the locality where the bugong moths congregate, and is called 'Warrogong' by the natives. The remains of recent fires apprised us that the aborigines had only recently left the place for another of similar character a few miles further distant.

"Our native guides wished us to proceed and join the tribe, but the day had so far advanced that it was thought more advisaable to return, because it was doubtful, as the blacks removed from a place as soon as they had cleared it of the insects, whether we should find them at the next group, or removed to others still further distant.

"From the result of my observations it appears that the insects are only found in such multitudes on these insulated and poculiar masses of granite, for about the other solitary granite rocks, so profusely scattered over the range, I did not observe a single moth, or even the remains of one. Why they should be confined only to these particular places, or for what purpose they thus collect together, is not a less curious than interesting subject of inquiry. Whether it be for the purpose of emigrating, or any other cause, our present knowledge cannot satisfactorily answer.

"The bugong moths, as I have before observed, collect on the surfaces, and also in the crevices, of the masses of granite in incredible quantities. To procure them with greater facility, the natives make smothered fires underneath these rocks about which they are collected, and suffocate them with smoke, at the same time sweeping them off frequently in bushelfuls at a time. After they have collected a large quantity, they proceed to prepare them, which is done in the following manner.

the following manner.

"A circular space is cleared upon the ground, of a size proportioned to the number of insects to be prepared; on it a fire is lighted and kept burning until the ground is considered to be sufficiently heated, when, the fire being removed, and the ashes cleared away, the moths are placed upon the heated ground, and stirred about until the down and wings are removed from them; they are then placed on pieces of bark, and winnowed to separate the dust and wings mixed with the bodies; they are then eaten, or placed into a wooden vessel called 'walbum,' or 'calibum,' and pounded by a piece of wood into massee or cakes resembling lumps of fat, and may be compared in color and consistence to dough made from smutty wheat mixed with fat.

"The bodies of the moths are large and filled with a yellowish oil, resembling in taste a sweet nut. These masses (with which the 'netbuls,' or 'talabats,' of the native tribes are loaded during the season of feasting upon the bugong) will not keep more than a week, and seldom even for that time; but by smoking they are able to preserve them for a much longer period. The first time this diet is used by the native tribes, violent vomiting and other debilitating effects are produced, but after a few days they become accustomed to its use, and then thrive and fatten exceedingly upon it.

"These insects are held in such estimation among the aborigines, that they assemble from all parts of the country to collect them from these mountains. It is not only the native blacks that resort to the bugong, but crows also congregate for the same purpose. The blacks (that is, the crows and the aborigines) do not agree about their respective shares: so the stronger decides the point; for, when the crows (called 'arabul' by the natives) enter the hollows of the rocks to feed upon the insects, the natives stand at the entrance and kill them as they fly out; and they afford them an excellent meal, being fat from feeding upon the rich bugong. So eager are the feathered blacks or arabuls after this food that they attack it even when it is preparing by the natives; but as the aborigines never consider any increase of food a misfortune, they lay in wait for the arabuls with waddies or clubs, kill them in great numbers, and use them as food."

REPTILES form a very considerable part of an Australian's diet, and he displays equal aptitude in capturing and cooking them. Turtle is an especial favorite with him, not only on account of its size, and of the quantity of meat which it furnishes, but on account of the oil which is obtained from it.

On the coast of Australia several kinds of turtle are found, the most useful of which are the ordinary green turtle and the hawksbill. They are caught either in the water, or by watching for them when they come on shore for the purpose of laying their eggs, and then turning them on their backs before they can reach the sea. As, however, comparatively few venture on the shore, the greater number are taken in the water. Along the shore the natives have regular watchtowers or cairns made of stones and the bones of turtles, dugongs, and other creatures. When the sentinel sees a turtle drifting along with the tide, he gives the alarm, and a boat puts out after it. The cance approaches from behind, and paddles very cautiously so that the reptile may not hear it. As soon as they come close to it, the chief hunter, who holds in his hand one end of a slight but tough rope, leaps on the turtle's back, and clings to it with both

hands on its shoulders. The startled reptile dashes off, but before it has got very far the hunter contrives to upset it, and while it is struggling he slips the noose of the rope over one of its flippers. The creature is then comparatively helpless, and is towed ashore by the canoe.

In some districts the turtle is taken by means of a harpoon, which is identical in principle with that which is used by the hippopotamus hunters of Africa. There is a long shaft, into the end of which is loosely slipped a movable head. A rope is attached to the head, and a buoy to the other end of

M'Gillivray that they sometimes caught the turtle by means of the remora, or suckingfish. One of these fish, round whose tail a line has been previously made fast, is kept in a vessel of water on board the boat, and, when a small turtle is seen, the remora is dropped into the sea. Instinctively it makes its way to the turtle, and fastens itself so firmly to the reptile's back that they are both hauled to the boat's side and lifted in by the fishermen. Only small turtles can be thus taken, and there is one species which never attains any great size which is generally

captared in this curious manner.

The hawksbill turtle is too dangerous an antagonist to be chased in the water. The sharp-edged scales which project from its sides would cut deeply into the hands of any man who tried to turn it; and even the green shell, has been known to inflict a severe wound upon the leg of the man who was elinging to its back. The native, therefore, is content to watch it ashore, and by means of long, stout poles, which he introduces leverwise under its body, turns it over without danger to himself. out danger to himself.

When the Australians have succeeded in turning a turtle, there are great rejoicings, as the very acme of human felicity consists, according to native ideas, in gorging until the feasters can neither stand nor sit. They may be seen absolutely rolling on the ground in agony from the inordinate distension of their stomachs, and yet, as soon as the pain has abated, they renew their feastings. Mostly they assemble round the turtle, cook it rudely, and devour it on the spot; but in Torres Straits they are more provident, and dry the flesh in order to supply themselves with food during their voyages. They cut up the meat into thin slices, boil the slices, and then dry them in the sun.

During the process of cooking, a considerable amount of oil rises to the surface, and is skimmed off and kept in vessels made of pugnant to our ideas that many persons can

bamboo and turtles' bladders. The cook, however, has to exercise some vigilance while performing his task, as the natives are so fond of the oil that, unless they are closely watched, they will skim it off and drink it while in an almost boiling state. The boiling and subsequent drying render the flesh very hard, so that it will keep for several weeks; but it cannot be eaten without a second boiling.

The shell of the hawksbill turtle is doubly valuable to the natives, who reserve a little for the manufacture of hooks, and sell the rest to shippers or traders, who bring it to Europe, where it is converted into the "torthe rope. As soon as the reptile is struct, the shaft is disengaged, and is picked up by the thrower; while the float serves as an indication of the turtle's whereabouts, and enables the hunters to tow it toward the lit was purchased from the natives. It is about eleven inches in length and seven in width, and has a hole at one end by which they string the scales together. There are the scars of eight large limpet shells upon it, showing the singular appearance which the

animal must have presented when alive.

The cooking of turtle is a far more important process than that of boiling fish, and a sort of oven is required in order to dress it properly. In principle the oven resembles that which is in use in so many parts of the world, and which has been already described when showing how the hunters of South Africa cook the elephant's foot. Instead, however, of digging a hole and burning wood in it, the Australian takes a number of stones, each about the size of a man's fist, and puts them into the fire. When they are heated, they are laid closely together, and the meat placed upon them. A second layer of heated stones is arranged upon the meat, and a rim or bank of tea-tree bush, backed up with sand or earth, is built round this primitive oven. Grass and leaves are then strewn plentifully over the stones, and are held in their places by the circular bank. The steam is thus retained, and so the meat is cooked in a very effectual manner.

In some parts of the country, however, a more elaborate oven is used. It consists of a hole some three feet in diameter and two feet in depth, and is heated in the following manner: — It is filled to within six inches of the top with round and hard stones, similar to those which have already been described. and upon them a fire is built and maintained for some time. When the stones are thought to be sufficiently heated, the embers are swept away, and the food is simply laid upon the stones and allowed to remain there until thoroughly cooked.

This kind of oven is found over a large range of country, and Mr. M Gillivray has seen it throughout the shores of Torres Straits, and extending as far southward as

The cook, e vigilance the natives ess they are a it off and oiling state. ving render ill keep for eaten with-

tle is doubly
erve a little
and sell the
bring it to
to the "torso familiar.
utiful specioise-shell as
tives. It is
ad seven in
d by which
There are
ells upon it,
e which the

There are ells upon it, e which the n alive. more imporfish, and a to dress it

to dress it a resembles parts of the y described s of South t. Instead, and burning a number of man's fist, ten they are gether, and econd layer a the meat, sush, backed round this es are then ees, and are sular bank.

o the meat ner. however, a consists of er and two e following x inches of nes, similar described, naintained are thought muers are y laid upon there until

er a large livray has of Torres thward as

ng isso rersons can-



(1.) BEE HUNTING. (See page 711.)



(2.) COOKING A SNAKE. (See page 717.)

not eat eel the Austral snake as on the earth p no reason w as disgustin so many of matter whe etable. Th in good cor fat, and to

easy in his n The proceexactly like except that is consistent the food. T squats in fro and smoke h carefully coil ing it and red so scorched t then allows in cording to his as becomes best parts for humor, tossin Snake hun

curious mann unless it shoul sumption, wo would be unfl passed away. the plan which ter, and this h

way. Should he co serpents, he co with one hand the narrow w and dexterous shield, flinging repulse. Time the attack, and it yields the ba completely bear his forked stick it firmly, and he over it and it is It is then carri

It is then carri next day's band Sometimes the the place of the lowed to bite it. The carpet sur the length of te game with the A size furnishes h of meat, as well of meat, as well delights. This s the foot of the we shall see sev the following pa without its snake not eat eels because they look like snakes, the Australian knows better, and considers a snake as one of the greatest delicacies which the earth produces. And there is certainly no reason why we should repudiate the snake as disgusting while we accept the turtle and so many of the tortoise kind as delicacies, no matter whether their food be animal or vegetable. The Australian knows that a snake in good condition ought to have plenty of fat, and to be well flavored, and is always easy in his mind so long as he can catch one.

The process of cooking (see page 716) is exactly like that which is employed with fish, except that more pains are taken about it, as is consistent with the superior character of the food. The fire being lighted, the native squats in front of it and waits until the flame and smoke have partly died away, and then carefully coils the snake on the embers, turning it and recoiling it until all the scales are so scorched that they can be rubbed off. He then allows it to remain until it is cooked according to his ideas, and eats it deliberately, as becomes such a dainty, picking out the best parts for himself, and, if he be in a good humor, tossing the rest to his wives.

Snake hunting is carried on in rather a curious manner. Killing a snake at once, unless it should be wanted for immediate consumption, would be extremely foolish, as it would be unfit for food before the night had passed away. Taking it alive, therefore, is the plan which is adopted by the skilful hunter, and this he manages in a very ingenious way.

Should he come upon one of the venomous serpents, he cuts off its retreat, and with his spear or with a forked stick he irritates it with one hand, while in his other he holds the narrow wooden shield. By repeated blows he induces the reptile to attack him, and dexterously receives the stroke on the shield, flinging the snake back by the sudden repulse. Time after time the snake renews the attack, and is as often foiled; and at last it yields the battle, and lies on the ground completely beaten. The hunter then presses his forked stick on the reptile's neck, seizes it firmly, and holds it while a net is thrown over it and it is bound securely to his spear. It is then carried off, and reserved for the next day's banquet.

Sometimes the opossum-skin cloak takes the place of the shield, and the snake is allowed to bite it.

The carpet snake, which sometimes attains the length of ten or twelve feet, is favorite game with the Australian native, as its large size furnishes him with an abundant supply of meat, as well as the fat in which his soul delights. This snake mostly lives in holes at the foot of the curious grass-tree, of which we shall see several figures in the course of the following pages, and in many places it is so plentiful that there is scarcely a grass-tree without its snake.

As it would be a waste of time to probe each hole in succession, the natives easily ascertain those holes which are inhabited by smearing the earth around them with a kind of white clay mixed with water, which is as soft as putty. On the following day they can easily see, by the appearance of the clay, when a snake has entered or left its hole, and at once proceed to induce the reptile to leave its stronghold. This is done by putting on the trunk of the tree immediately over the hole a bait, which the natives state to be honey, and waiting patiently, often for many hours, until the serpent is attracted by the bait and climbs the tree. As soon as it is clear of the hole, its retreat is cut off, and the result of the ensuing combat is a certainty. The forked spear which the native employs is called a bo-bo.

All the tribes which live along the eastern coast, especially those which inhabit the northern part of the country, are in the habit of capturing the dugong. This animal is very fond of a green, branchless, marine alga, and ventures to the shore in order to feed upon it. The natives are on the watch for it, and, as soon as a dugong is seen, a canoe puts off after it.

Each canoe is furnished with paddles and a harpooner, who is armed with a weapon very similar to that which is used by the turtle catchers, except that no buoy is required. It is composed of a shaft some twelve or fifteen feet in length, light at one end, and heavy at the other. A hole is made at the heavy end, and into the hole is loosely fitted a kind of spear head made of bone, about four inches in length, and covered with barbs. One end of a stout and long rope is made fast to this head, and the other is attached to the canoe.

As soon as he is within striking distance, the harpooner jumps out of the boat into the water, striking at the same time with his weapon, so as to add to the stroke the force of his own weight. Disengaging the shaft, he returns to the canoe, leaving the dugong attached to it by the rope. The wounded animal dives and tries to make its way seaward. Strange to say, although the dugong is a large animal, often eight feet in length, and very bulky in proportion to its length, it seldom requires to be struck a second time, but rises to the surface and dies in a few minutes from a wound occasioned by so apparently insignificant a weapon as a piece of bone struck some three inches into its body. When it is dead, it is towed ashore, and rolled up the bank to some level spot, where preparations are at once made for cooking and eating it.

Those who are acquainted with zoology are aware that the dugong is formed much after the manner of the whale, and that it is covered first with a tough skin and then with a layer of blubber over the muscles. This structure, by the way, renders its suc-

cumbing to the wound of the harpoon the more surprising. The natives always cut it up in the same manner. The tail is sliced much as we carve a round of beef, while the body is cut into thin slices as far as the ribs, each slice having its own proportion of meat, blubber, and skin. The blubber is esteemed higher than any other portion of the animal, though even the tough skin can be rendered tolerably palatable by careful cooking.

Of all Australian animals, the kangaroo is most in favor, both on account of the excellent quality of the flesh, and the quantity which a single kangaroo will furnish. It is hardly necessary to remind the reader that with the Australian, as with other savages, quantity is considered rather than quality. A full grown "boomah" kangaroo will, when standing upright, in its usual attitude of defence, measure nearly six feet in height, and is of very considerable weight. And, when an Australian kills a kangaroo, he performs feats of gluttony to which the reader that with the Australian and certainly not a superior. Give an in bringing down his game.

Australian a kangaroo and he will eat until he is nearly dead from repletion; and he will go on eating, with short intervals of rest, until he has finished the entire kanga-

Like other savage creatures, whether human or otherwise, he is capable of bearing deprivation of food to a wonderful extent; and his patient endurance of starvation, when food is not to be obtained, is only to be excelled by his gluttony when it is plentiful. This curious capacity for alternate gluttony and starvation is fostered by the innately lazy disposition of the Australian savage, and his utter disregard for the future. The animal that ought to serve him and his family for a week is consumed in a few hours; and, as long as he does not feel the pain of absolute hunger, nothing can compel the man to leave his rude couch and go off on a hunting expedition. But when he does make up his mind to hunt, he has a bulldog sort of tenacity which forbids him to relinquish the chase until he has been successful in bringing down his game.

WEAPONS OF FORMS-OF THE MISSILE DIGS A: STRALIA BOY QUE

As in the continuous the weapons be mentioned of describing ourselves as each modification.

We will be of all weapo club are to b tled "Austral All the figure mens, some tion, some be in the British taken from the Lane Fox.

The simple that which is the stralian savage without a waw what other we carry. One of fig. 4, and anot specimen in a very good ex waddy. It is not wood of the grefective weaps marks of long feet eight inche from the illustration, so that it for stabbing as we exactly twenty-

ll eat until n; and he ntervals of ire kanga-

hether huof bearing ful extent; starvation, , is only to it is plenr alternate red by the Australian the future. im and his few hours: the pain of ompel the go off on a he does s a bulldog n to relin-

successful

CHAPTER LXXI.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

WEAPONS OF THE AUSTRALIANS, THEIR FORMS AND USES - THE CLUB OR WADDY, AND ITS VARIOUS FORMS — USES OF THE WADDY — A DOMESTIC PANACEA — AN AUSTRALIAN DUEL — THICK SKULLS OF THE NATIVES-LOVE OF THE NATIVE FOR HIS WADDY-THE BLACK POLICE FORCE-THE MISSILE WADDY - THE KATTA, OR DIGGING-STICK, AND ITS VARIED USES - HOW AN AUSTRALIAN DIGS A HOLE -THE STONE TOMAHAWK AND ITS USE -THE ASCENT OF TREES -HOW AN AU STRALIAN KNOWS WHETHER AN ANIMAL IS IN A TREE - SMOKING OUT THE PREY - THE BLACK-BOY GUM — THE GRASS-TREE OF AUSTRALIA — THE AUSTRALIAN SAW.

As in the course of the following pages all the weapons of the Australian will have to be mentioned, we will take the opportunity of describing them at once, without troubling ourselves as to the peculiar locality in which each modification is found.

We will begin with the club, the simplest of all weapons. Several examples of the club are to be seen in the illustration entitled "Australian Clubs," on the 722d page. All the figures are drawn from actual specimens, some belonging to my own collec-tion, some being sketched from examples in the British Museum, and others being taken from the fine collection of Colonel Lane Fox.

The simplest form of Australian club is that which is known by the name of "waddy," and which is the favorite weapon of an Australian savage, who never seems to be happy without a waddy in his hands, no matter what other weapons he may happen to carry. One of these waddies may be seen at fig. 4, and another at fig. 5. The latter is a specimen in my own collection, and affords a very good example of the true Australian waddy. It is made of the tough and heavy wood of the gum-tree, and is really a most effective weapon, well balanced, and bears marks of long usage. The length is two feet eight inches, and, as the reader may see from the illustration, it is sharpened at the point, so that in close combat it can be used for stabbing as well as for striking. It weighs he has reserved for hand-to-hand combat.

Four deep grooves run along the waddy, from the point to the spot where it is grasped, and seem to be intended as edges whereby a blow may cut through the skin as well as inflict a bruise. Besides these as well as innict a pruise. Desides these grooves, there are sundry carvings which the native evidently has thought to be ornamental. On two of the sides the pattern is merely the double-headed T seen in the illustration, but on the other two sides the pattern is varied. In every case the top figure is the double T; but on one side there is first a T than a goog with curved arms. is first a T, then a cross with curved arms, then a T, and then a pattern that looks something like a key, having a bow at each end. The fourth side is evidently unfinished, there being only two patterns on it; the second, evidently an attempt to imitate the letter B, showing that the maker had some acquaintance with civilization.

With this waddy the native is better armed than most men would be with the keenest sword that ever was forged, and with it he strikes and stabs with marvellous rapidity, seeming to be actuated, when in combat, by an uncontrollable fury. He can use it as a missile with deadly effect; and if, as is generally the case, he has several of these wad-dies in his hand, he will hurl one or two of them in rapid succession, and, while the antagonist is still attempting to avoid the flying weapon, precipitate himself upon the foe, and attack him with the waddy which

The waddy is the Australian panacea for

domestic troubles, and if one of his wives should presume to have an opinion of her from long experience the hardest part of his own, or otherwise to offend her dusky lord, a blow on the head from the ever-ready waddy settles the dispute at once by leaving her senseless on the ground. Sometimes the man strikes the offender on a limb, and breaks it; but he does not do this unless he should be too angry to calculate that, by breaking his slave's arm or leg, he deprives himself of her services for a period.

With the Australian man of honor the waddy takes the place which the platol once held in England and the United States, and ic the weapon by which disputes are settled. In case two Australians of reputation should fall out, one of them challenges the other to single combat, sending him a derisive message to the effect that he had better bring his stoutest waddy with him, so that he may break it on the challenger's head.

Thickness of skull—a reproach in some parts of the world—is among the Australians a matter of great boast, and one Australian can hardly insult another in more contemptuous words than by comparing his skull to an emu's egg-shell. I have examined several skulls of Australian natives, and have been much surprised by two points: the first is the astonishing thickness and hardness of the bone, which seems capable of resisting almost any blow that could be dealt by an ordinary weapon; and the second is the amount of injury which an Australian skull can endure. Owing to the thickness of the skull, the Australian puts his head to strange uses, one of the oddest of which is his custom of breaking sticks on his head instead of snapping them across

In due time the combatants appear on the ground, each bearing his toughest and heaviest waddy, and attended by his friends. After going through the usual gesticula-tions and abuse which always precede a duel between savages, the men set definitely

to work.

The challenged individual takes his waddy, and marches out into the middle of the space left by the spectators. His adversary confronts him, but unarmed, and stooping low, with his hands on his knees, he offers his head to the opponent. The adversary exe-cutes a short dance of delight at the blow which he is going to deal, and then, after taking careful aim, he raises his waddy high in the air, and brings it down with all his force on the head of his foe.

The blow would fell an ordinary ox; but the skull of an Australian is made of sterner stuff than that of a mere ox, and the man accordingly raises himself, rubs his head, and holds out his hand to his nearest friend, who gives him the waddy, which he is about to use in his turn. The challenged man now takes his turn at stooping, while the chal-lenger does his best to smash the skull of much resembles this club, the long pointed

ground, when the victory is decided to remain with his antagonist.

In consequence of the repeated injuries to which the head of a native Australian is subjected, the skull of a warrior presents, after death, a most extraordinary appearance, being covered with dents, fractures, and all kinds of injuries, any one of which would have killed an European immediately, but which seems to have only caused tem-porary inconvenience to the Australian.

So fond is the Australian of his waddy, that even in civilized life he cannot be induced to part with it. Some of my readers may be aware that a great number of cap-tives are now enrolled among the police, and render invaluable service to the community, especially against the depredations of their fellow-blacks whom they persecute with a relentless vigor that seems rather surprising to those who do not know the singular antipathy which invariably exists between wild and tamed animals, whether human or otherwise. In fact, the Australian native policeman is to the colonist what the "Tofty" of South Africa is to the Dutch and English colonists, what the Ghoorka or Sikh of India is to the English army, and what the tamed elephant of Ceylon or India is to the hunter.

These energetic "black fellows" arearmed with the ordinary weapons of Europeans, and are fully acquainted with their use. But there is not one of them who thinks himself properly armed unless he has his waddy; and, when he enters the bush in search of native thieves, he will lay aside the whole of his clothing, except the cap which marks his office, will carry his gun with him, buckle his cartouch-pouch round his naked waist, and will take his waddy as a weapon, without which even the gun would seem to him an insufficient

weanon.

This form of waddy (fig. 4), although it is often used as a missile, is not the one which the native prefers for that purpose. His throwing waddy or "wadna," is much shorter and heavier, and very much resem-bles the short missile club used so effectively by the Polynesians. Two other forms of waddy are shown at figs. 3 and 5, the latter of which is generally known by the name of "piccaninny waddy," because it is generally smaller and lighter than the others, and can be used by a child.

Nos. 1 and 2 are also clubs, but are made in a different form, and used in a different manner. If the reader will refer to the account of the Abyssinian curved sword, or ver, knows part of his nt it to the continue to falls to the ided to re-

injuries to stralian is presents, y appearfractures, of which mediately, used temralian. ais waddy, not be in-

ny readers
er of caphe police,
the compredations'
persecute
ms rather
know the
bly exists
3, whether
Austrelian
by what the

he Dutch

choorka or army, and n or India lows " are of Eurowith their chem who unless he enters the lee will lay xcept the carry his lich-pouch

take his a even the usufficient though it to the one; purpose, is much chresemeffectively forms of the latter e ame of generally s, and can

are made different er to the sword, or al form it g pointed



head of ing dow is not on in the na atrokes of

The reculus har This for increasin one, and the case combatan cach other fight, stralian cearth witheir han prevent their grae This cl

This cl way, the gnarled b grain of rather the greatly to the same s angle of a and, but i workmausi the angula

This par bly wide ra inhabit the Marpangy

Marpangyo
In many
have a curi
bles a sworr
length, is fi
and has the
Being made
gum-tree, it
its size, and
formidable

formidable
The Aus
ment which
spear, and a
the hands of
man will son
pose. It is
sharpened a
ened by fire
"katta," and
propriate na
With this

up the grouner, and and spade, and be surprised at naked black, pointed stick be set to woo echidna from powers of dicapabilities of its way through the navvy. deep into the

head of each being equally useful in striking downward over a shield. This weapon is not only used in combat, but is employed in the native dances to beat time by repeated strokes on the shield.

The reader will notice that many of these clubs have the ends of the handles pointed. This formation is partly for the purpose of increasing their efficiency as offensive weapons, and partly for another object. As was the case with the warriors of the Iliad, both combatants will occasionally rest, and give each other time to breathe, before renewing the fight. During these intervals the Australian combatants squat down, dig up the earth with the handle of the club, and rub their hands with the dusty soil, in order to prevent the weapons from slipping out of their grasp.

This club is made in a very ingenious

This club is made in a very ingenious way, the artificer taking advantage of some gnarled branch, and cutting it so that the grain of the wood follows the curve, or rather the angle of the head, which adds greatly to its strength. A club of almost the same shape, and cut similarly from the angle of a branch, is used in New Caledonia, and, but for the great superiority of the workmanship, might easily be mistaken for the angular club of the Australian.

This particular form of club has a tolerably wide range, and among the tribes which inhabit the shores of Encounter Bay is called Marpangye.

AN CLUBS.

In many parts of Australia the natives have a curious weapon which much sembles a sword. It is from three to four feet in length, is flat, about three inches in width, and has the outer edge somewhat sharpened. Being made of the close-grained wood of the gum-tree, it is very heavy in proportion to its size, and in practised hands is a most formidable weapon.

The Australian women carry an instrument which is sometimes thought to be a spear, and sometimes a club, but which in the hands of a woman is neither, though a man will sometimes employ it for either purpose. It is simply a stick of variable length, sharpened at one end and the point hardened by fire. It is called by the natives the "katta," and is popularly known by the appropriate name of the disciplination.

propriate name of the digging-stick.

With this stick the natives contrive to dig up the ground in a most astonishing manner, and an English "navvy," with his pick, spade, and barrow, would feel considerably surprised at the work which is done by the naked black, who has no tools except a pointed stick. Let, for example, a navvy be set to work at the task of digging out an echidna from its hole, and he would find his powers of digging baffled by the burrowing capabilities of the animal, which would make its way through the earth faster than could the navy. In order to sink some six feet deep into the ground, the white man would

be obliged to make a funnel-shaped hole of very large size, so as to allow him to work in it, and to give the pick and spade free play as he threw out the soil.

as he threw out the soil.

The black man, on the contrary, would have no such difficulty, but knows how to sink a hole without troubling himself to dig a foot of needless soil. This he does by handling the katta precisely as the Bosjesman handles his digging-stick, i. e. by holding it perpendicularly, jobbing the hardened point into the ground, and throwing out with his hands the loosened earth.

In digging out one of the hurrowing ent-

In digging out one of the burrowing animals, the black hunter pushes a long and flexible stick down the hole, draws it out, measures along the ground to the spot exactly above the end of the burrow, replaces the stick, and digs down upon it. By the time that he has reached it, the animal has gone on digging, and has sunk its burrow still further. The stick is then pushed into the lengthened burrow, and again dug down upon; and the process is repeated until the tired animal can dig no more, and is captured. The katta also takes the part of a weapon, and can be wielded very effectively by a practised hand, being used either for striking or thrusting.

We now come to a curious instrument which is often thought to be a weapon, but which, although it would answer such a purpose very well, is seldom used for it. This is the tomahawk, or hammer, as it is generally called. Three yarieties of the tomahawks are given in the illustration "Tomahawks" on the 722d page. In all of them the cutting part is made of stone and the handle of wood, and the head and the handle are joined in several different ways, according to the fashion of the locality in which the instrument is made. The simplest plan is that which is shown in fig. 1. In this instrument, a conveniently shaped piece of stone has been selected for a head, and the handle is made of a flexible stick bent over it, and the two ends firmly lashed together, just as the English blacksmith makes handles for his punches and cold chisels. This weapon was made in Now South Wales.

At fig. 3 is shown a tomahawk of a more claborate construction. Here the stone head has been lashed to the shaft by a thong, which is wrapped over it in a way that exactly resembles the lashing employed by the New Zealander or the Dyak for the same purpose. The tomahawk at fig. 4 is, however, the best example of the instrument, and is taken from a specimen in the British Museum. The handle and head are shaped much like those of fig. 3, but the fastening is much more elaborate.

capabilities of the animal, which would make its way through the earth faster than could the navvy. In order to sink some six feet deep into the ground, the white man would savage. The sinews are steeped in hot

water, and pounded between two stones, in order to separate them into fibres; and, while still wet and tolerably elastic, they are wrapped round the stone and the handle. Of course, as they dry, they contract with great force, and bind the head and handle together far more securely than can be done with any other material. Even raw hide does not hold so firmly as sinew.

When the sinew lashing is perfectly dry, the native takes a quantity of the peculiar substance called "black-boy" wax, and kneads it over the head and the end of the handle, so as to bind everything firmly

together.

Another instrument is shown at fig. 2, in which the combination of stone and vegetable is managed in another way. The blade is formed from a piece of quartz about as long as a man's hand, which has been chipped into the form of a spear-head. The handle, instead of being a piece of wood, is simply a number of fibres made into a bundle. The base of the stone head has been pushed among the loose ends of the fibres, and then the whole has been bound firmly together by a lashing of string made of reeds. This is a sort of dagger; and another form of the same instrument is made by simply sharpening a stick about eighteen inches in length, and hardening the sharpened end in the fire. It is, in fact, a miniature katta, but is applied to a different surpose

katta, but is applied to a different purpose.
These axes and daggers have been mentioned together, because they are used for the same purpose, namely, the ascent of trees.

Active as a monkey, the Australian native can climb any tree that grows. Should they be of moderate size, he ascends them, not by clasping the trunk with his legs and arms (the mode which is generally used in England), and which is popularly called "swarming." Instead of passing his legs and arms round the tree-trunk as far as they can go, he applies the soles of his feet to it in front, and presses a hand against it on either side, and thus ascends the tree with the rapidity of a squirrel. This mode of ascent is now taught at every good gymnasium in England, and is far superior to the old fashion, which has the disadvantage of slowness, added to the certainty of damaging the clothes.

Those who have seen our own acrobats performing the feat called La Perche, in which one man balances another on the top of a pole, or the extraordinary variations on it performed by the Japanese jugglers, who balance poles and ladders on the soles of their feet, will be familiar with the manner in which one of the performers runs up the pole which is balanced by his companion. It is by this method that the Australian ascends a tree of moderate dimensions, and, when he is well among the boughs, he traverses them with perfect certainty and quick-

Trees which will permit the man to ascend after this fashion are, however, rather scarce in the Australian forests, and, moreover, there is comparatively little inducement to climb them, the hollows in which the bees make their nests and the beasts take up their diurnal abode being always in the branch or trunk of some old and decaying tree. Some of these trees are so large that their trunks are veritable towers of wood, and afford no hold to the hands; yet they are ascended by the natives as rapidly as if they were small trees.

By dint of constant practice, the Australian never passes a tree without casting a glance at the bark, and by that one glance he will know whether he will need to mount it. The various arboreal animals, especially the so called opossums, cannot ascend the tree without leaving marks of their claws in the bark. There is not an old tree that has not its bark covered with scratches, but the keen and practised eye of the native can in a moment distinguish between the ascending and descending marks of the animal, and can also determine the date at which they were made.

The difference between the marks of an ascending and descending animal is easy enough to see when it has once been pointed out. When an animal climbs a tree, the marks of its claws are little more than small holes, with a slight scratch above each, looking something like the conventional "tears" of heraldry. But, when it descends, it does so by a series of slippings and catchings, so that the claws leave long scratches behind them. Nearly all arboreal animals, with the exception of the monkey tribe, leave marks of a similar character, and the bear hunter of North America and the 'possum hunter

of Australia are guided by similar marks. Should the native hunter see an ascending mark of more recent date than the other scratches, he knows that somewhere in the tree lies his intended prey. Accordingly, he lays on the ground everything that may impede him, and, going to the tree-trunk, he begins to deliver a series of chopping blows with his axe. These blows are delivered in pairs, and to an Englishman present rather a ludicrous reminiscence of the postman's double rap. By each of these double blows he chops a small hole in the tree, and manages so as to cut them alternately right and left, and at intervals of two feet or so.

Having cut these notches as high as he can reach, he places the great toe of his left foot in the lowermost hole, clasps the tree with his left arm, and strikes the head of the tomahawk into the tree as high as he can reach. Using the tomahawk as a handle by which he can pull himself up, he lodges the toe of his right foot in the second hole, and is then enabled to shift the toe of the left foot into the third hole. Here he waits for a moment, holding tightly by both his feet and

the left he notches; a soon reach When h

When h carefully t tell-tale so by them al which the dimensions trunk with moderate (the wood,

the wood, and Should, one, he is other plant same note: climbed it, longings a wood, which ike that of to school in a bundle ascends the the entrance bundle rounthrough the flame.

As soon a

some of the row, so as to which it pas also holds th trance of the the smoke animal by th a chance of s may seem to but in fact i have known . oven, and y sleep, as wa curled up, wi tail wrapped ber of a dome often as it lik nearly so deep ion the senses all night, and tended for a

The choppi into them, as tedious busine the contrary, quickly as if h the large trees the animals of there is scarce several series track of a natistalian hunter the notches the persons, but er holes for himse ascend a tree. Sometimes a

in to ascend ather scarce moreover, ucement to h the bees ake up their e branch or ree. Some heir trunks d afford no scended by

the Austrat casting a one glance ed to mount s, especially ascend the eir claws in ee that has es, but the tive can in the ascendanimal, and which they

were small

arks of an nal is easy een pointed a tree, the than small each, looknal "tears" nds, it does tchings, so hes behind ls, with the ave marks ear hunter um hunter r marks. an ascend-

n the other ere in the rdingly, he at may ime-trunk, he oing blows elivered in ent rather postman's ible blows and manright and r so.

igh as he of his left s the tree read of the as he can handle by lodges the hole, and of the left waits for a is feet and

the left hand and arm, while he cuts more animal or the indication of a bee's nest on a notches; and, by continuing the process, he soon reaches the top of the tree.

When he reaches the first branch, he looks carefully to find the spot toward which the tell-tale scratches are directed, and, guided by them alone, he soon discovers the hole in which the animal lies hidden. He tests the dimensions of the hollow by tapping on the trunk with the axe, and, if it should be of moderate depth, sets at work to chop away

the wood, and secure the inmate.

Should, however, the hollow be a deep one, he is obliged to have recourse to another plan. Descending the tree by the same notches as those by which he had climbed it, he takes from his bundle of belongings a fire-stick, i. e. a sort of tinderlike wood, which keeps up a smouldering fire, like that of the willow "touchwood" so dear to schoolboys. Wrapping up the fire-stick in a bundle of dry grass and leaves, he re-ascends the tree, and, when he has reached the entrance of the burrow, he whirls the bundle round his head until the fire spreads through the mass, and the grass bursts into flame.

As soon as it is well inflamed, he pushes some of the burning material into the burrow, so as to fall upon the enclosed animal, and to rouse it from the heavy sleep in which it passes the hours of daylight. He also holds the rest of the torch at the entrance of the burrow, and manages to direct the smoke into it. Did he not rouse the animal by the burning leaves, he would run a chance of suffocating it in its sleep. This may seem to be a very remote contingency, but in fact it is very likely to happen. I have known a cat to be baked alive in an oven, and yet not to have awaked from sleep, as was evident by the attitude in which the body of the animal was found curled up, with its chin on its paws, and its tail wrapped round its body. Yet the slumber of a domesticated cat, which can sleep as often as it likes in the day or night, is not nearly so deep as that which wraps in oblivion the senses of a wild animal that is abroad all night, and whose whole structure is intended for a nocturnal life.

The chopping holes, and getting the toes into them, seems in theory to be rather a tedious business, but in practice it is quite the contrary, the native ascending almost as quickly as if he were climbing a ladder. the large trees are so capable of containing the animals on which the Australians feed, there is scarcely one which does not exhibit several series of the notches that denote the track of a native. Strange to say, the Australian hunters will not avail themselves of persons, but each man chops a new series of holes for himself every time that he wants to

ascend a tree.

tree when he happens not to have an axe in hand. In such a case he is still able to ascend the tree, for he can make use of the dagger which has been already described, punching holes in the bark, and pulling himself up exactly as if he had a tomahawk, the only difference being that the holes are smaller and the work is harder.

When the hunter has once found the entrance of the burrow, the capture of the inmate is simply a matter of time, as the heat and smoke are sure to force it into the air, where it has the double disadvantage of being half-choked with smoke and being blind with the flame and the daylight, to which its eyes are unaccustomed. A blow on the head from the tomakawk, or a stab from the dagger, renders it senseless, when it is flung on the ground, and the successful hunter proceeds to traverse the tree in case some other animal may be hidden in it

The skill of the natives in tree climbing is also exercised for another purpose besides hunting for bees and animals. The well-known cabbage-palm grows to a very great height, and, like other palms, never grows quite straight, but has always a bend in the trunk. After the manner of the palm-tribe it grows by a succession of the palm-tribe, it grows by a succession of buds from the top, and this bud, popularly called the "cabbage," is a favorite article of food. It has been called the prince of vegetables, and one enthusiastic traveller declares that it must have been the ambrosia of the Olympic gods. The removal of the bud causes the death of the tree, and for that reason the vegetable is forbidden in civilized regions under penalty of a heavy fine. The savage, however, who has no idea of care for the morrow, much less of looking forward to future years, takes the bud wherever he meets it, caring nothing for the death of the useful tree. He ascends by means of a little wooden dagger, or warpoo, or makes use of the tomahawk. The quartz dagger which was shown in a previous illustration would not be used for tree climbing, unless the owner could not procure a tomahawk or warpoo. Its chief use is as a weapon, and it can be also employed as a knife, by means of which the the manner which will be described when we come to treat of warfare in Australia. The "black-boy" gum, which plays so large a part in the manufacture of Australian waspens and implements.

lian weapons and implements, is obtained from the grass-tree, popularly called the "black boy," because at a distance it may easily be mistaken for a native, with his the notches that have been made by other own country, but when brought to England spear and cloak. It is very tenacious in its it becomes brittle, and is apt to break away ples for himself every time that he wants to cend a tree.

Sometimes a man sees the track of an gum, which is made by the natives of Guiana. It is quite black, and when dry is size, and being on an average as large as a extremely hard.

The grass-tree is one of the characteristic plants of Australia, and partakes of the strange individuality of that curious coun-try. The trunk is cylindrical, and looks like that of a palm, while an enormous tuft of long leaves starts from the top and droops in all directions, like a gigantic plume of feathers. The flower shoots up straight from the centre; and the long stalk becomes, when dried, so hard, tough, and light, that it is made into spear shafts.

There is in my collection an Australian saw (illustrated on page 722), in the manufacture of which the black-boy gum plays a considerable part. No one would take it for a saw who did not know the implement, and indeed it looks much more like a rude dagger than a saw. It is made from a piece of wood usually cut from a branch of the gum-tree, and about as thick as a man's finger at the thickest part, whence it tapers gradually to a point. The average length of the saw is fourteen inches, though I have

seen them nearly two feet long.

Along the thicker end is cut a groove, which is intended to receive the teeth of the saw. These teeth are made from chips of quartz or obsidian, the latter being preferred; and some makers, who have been owing to the pointed end of the handle, brought in contact with civilization, have the saw can be used after the fashion of a taken to using fragments of glass bottles. A number of flat and sharp-edged chips are poo, for the ascent of trees. selected as nearly as possible of the same

size, and being on an average as large as shilling. These the natives insert into the groove with their sharp edges uppermost. A quantity of black-boy wax is then warmed and applied to them, the entire wood of the saw being enveloped in it, as well as the teeth for half their depth, so as to hold them firmly in their places. As the chips of stone are placed so as to leave little spaces between them, the gaps are filled in with this useful cement.

For Australian work this simple tool seems to answer its purpose well enough. Of course it is very slow in its operation, or course it is very slow in its operator, and no great force can be applied to it, lest the teeth should be broken, or twisted out of the cement. The use of this saw entails great waste of material, time, and labor; but as the first two of these articles are not of the least value to the natives, and the third is of the lightest possible kind, the tool works well enough for its purpose. A perfect specimen of this saw is not often seen in this country, as the black-boy wax flakes off, and allows the teeth to drop out of their place. Even in my own specimen, which has been carefully tended, the wax has been chipped off here and there, while in instruments that have been knocked about carelessly scarcely a tooth is left in its place.

THE AUSTRAL AUSTRA INGENIO

ELASTIC WEAPON MISSILES OR WUM - DISTAL SPEARING STRING A OF THE WEAPON . ITS FORM

WE now com spears which líans.

The usual exceeds in dia Africa. It is, the ordinary eleven feet. constructed at the maker see the shaft be r weapon be tol are several sp in my collecti that has evide: shows marks the second ber and so bring straight.

The butt of that of the So slight, the shaft head, which is a ger, to the but than an artist's the common sp the end, and a wood. I have, l there is almost dimensions, and in Australia

Some of these ciple as that wh but differ from i as large as a sert into the uppermost, then warmed wood of the well as the as to hold s the chips leave little os are filled

simple tool vell enough. ts operation, ed to it, lest twisted out s saw entails and labor; articles are ives, and the le kind, the purpose. is not often ack-boy wax to drop out n specimen, ed, the wax ere, while in ocked about in its place. the handle, fashion of a

ike the war-

CHAPTER LXXII.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

THE AUSTRALIAN SPEAR AND ITS MANY FORMS—THE THROWING-SPEAR OB JAVELIN—A GROUP OF AUSTRALIAN SPEARS—THE LIGHTNESS OF THE SHAFT—THE MANY-POINTED FISH-SPEAR INGENIOUS MODE OF TIPPING THE POINTS WITH BONE, AND FASTENING THEM TO THE SHAFT-ELASTICITY OF THE POINTS - DOUBLE USE AS PADDLE AND SPEAR - AN ELABORATELY-MADE WEAFON - FLINT-HEADED SPEARS - EXCELLENCE OF THE AUSTRALIAN AS A THROWER OF MISSILES - THE CLUB, THE STONE, AND THE "KANGAROO-RAT" - THE THROW-STICK, MIDLAH, OR WUMMERAH - PRINCIPLE ON WHICH IT IS CONSTRUCTED - MODES OF QUIVERING THE SPEAR - DISTANCE TO WHICH IT CAN BE THROWN-THE UNDERHAND THROW-ACCURACY OF AIM-SPEARING THE KANGAROO - THE BOW AND ARROW - STRENGTH OF THE BOW - THE RATTAN STRING AND INGENIOUS KNOT - CAREFUL MANUFACTURE OF THE ARROWS - PRESUMED ORIGIN OF THE WEAPONS -THE BOOMERANG AND ITS VARIOUS FORMS -MODE OF THROWING THE WEAPON -- ITS PROBABLE ORIGIN -- STRUCTURE OF THE BOOMERANG -- THE AUSTRALIAN SHIELD, ITS FORMS AND USES - THE WOODEN AND THE BARK SHIELDS.

WE now come to the various forms of the made of hard and heavy wood. This is spears which are used by the native Austra-deeply cut with barbs; so that the weapon spears which are used by the native Austra-

The usual weapon is slight, and scarcely exceeds in diameter the assagai of Southern Africa. It is, however, considerable longer, the ordinary length being from nine to eleven feet. As a general rule, the spear is constructed after a very rude fashion, and the maker seems to care but little whether the short he results of the state of the st the shaft be perfectly straight, so that the weapon be tolerably well balanced. There are several specimens of Australian spears in my collection, one of which (a weapon that has evidently been a favorite one, as it shows marks of long usage) is twice bent, the second bend counteracting the former, and so bringing the weapon tolerably straight.

The butt of the Australian spear, like that of the South African seagai, is very slight, the shaft tapering gradually from the head, which is about as large as a man's fin-ger, to the butt, where it is hardly thicker than an artist's pencil. This, being one of the common spears, is simply sharpened at the end, and a few slight barbs cut in the wood. I have, however, specimens in which there is almost every variety of material, dimensions, and structure that can be found

is a more formidable one than that which is made simply from one piece of wood. The head of one of these spears is shown at fig. 7 in the illustration "Heads of Spears," on

page 731. Several of the spears are perfectly plain, being simply long sticks, pointed at the larger end. These, however, have been scraped very carefully, and seem to have had more pains bestowed upon them than those with more elaborate heads. spears are about eight feet in length.

Then there are other spears with a variable number of heads, and of variable dimensions. The commonest form of multiheaded spears has either three or four points; but in every other respect, except number, the spear heads are constructed in the same manner. One of these spears, now before me, has a shaft about nine feet in length, and rather more than an inch in diameter at the thickest part, which, as is usual with Australian spears, is just below the head. The wood of which it is made is exceedingly light and porous; but this very quality has unfortunately made it so acceptable to the ptilinus beetles that they have damaged it dimensions, and structure that can be found in Australia.

Some of these are made on the same principle as that which has just been described, but differ from it in having a separate head, while coming down stairs.

The four points which constitute the head ten-foot spear, added to the violent strug-e cut from the gum-tree, the wood of gles which the wounded fish makes, seems are cut from the gum-tree, the wood of which is hard and durable, and can be trimmed to a very sharp point without dan-ger of breakage. Each of them is twenty inches in length, and they are largest in the middle, tapering slightly at one end so as to permit of their being fastened to the shaft, and being scraped to a fine point at the other end.

On examination I find that the large end of the shaft has been cut into four grooves, in each of which is placed the butt end of one of the points, which is fixed temporarily by black-boy gum. Wedgelike pegs have then been pushed between the points, so as to make them diverge properly from each other, and, when they have assumed the proper position, they have been tightly bound together with cord. A layer of blackboy gum has then been kneaded over the string, so as to keep all firmly together.

So much for the mode of putting on the points, the end of one of which may be seen at fig. 3 in the illustration. My own specimen, however, is better made than that from which the sketch has been taken. reader will perceive that there is a barb attached to the point, and lashed in its place by string. In my specimen the barb is made of a piece of bone about as long as a skewer, and sharply pointed at both ends. In the example shown in the illustration, the barb merely projects from the side of the point, whereas in my specimen the bone answers the purpose both of point and barb. In order to enable it to take the proper direction, the top of the wooden point is bevelled off, and the piece of bone lashed to it by the middle, so that one end becomes the point of the weapon, and the other end does duty for the barb. Wishing to see how this was done, I have cut away part of the lashings of one of the four points, and have been much struck with the ingenuity have been much struck with the ingentity displayed by the maker in fastening the bone to the point, so as to make it discharge its double duty. The barbs are all directed inward, so that, when the native makes a stroke at a fish, the slippery prey is caught between the barbs, and held there just as is an eel between the prongs of the spear. The elasticity of the four long points causes them to diverge when they come upon the back of a fish, and to contract tightly upon it, so that the points of the barbs are pressed firmly into its sides.

This spear also stands the native instead of a paddle, and with it he contrives to guide his fragile bark with moderate speed. How he manages to stand erect in so frail a vessel, to paddle about, to strike the fish, and, lastly, to haul the struggling prey aboard, is really a marvel. The last-men tioned feat is the most wonderful, as the fish

sufficient to upset a far more stable vessel.

Yet the natives manage to pass hour after hour without meeting with an accident, and in one of their tiny boats, which seem scarcely large enough to hold a single European, even though he should be accustomed to the narrow outrigger skiff, or the comparatively modern canoe, two men will be perfectly comfortable, spearing and hauling in their fish, and even cooking them with a fire made on an extemporized hearth of wet sand and stones in the middle of the canoe.

Night is the favorite time for fish spearing, and then the sight of a number of natives engaged in the watery chase is a most picturesque one. They carry torches, by means of which they see to the bottom of the water, and which have also the advantage of dazzling the fish; and the effect of the constantly moving torches, the shifting glare on the rippled water, and the dark glare—on the rippled water, and the dark figures moving about, some searching for fish, others striking, and others struggling with the captured prey, is equally picturesque and exciting. The torches which they use are made of inflammable bark; and the whole scene is almost precisely like that which is witnessed in "burning the water," in North America, or, to come nearer home "leistoring" in Scotland. nearer home, "leistering" in Scotland.

In the daytime they cannot use the torch, and, as the slightest breeze will cause a ripple on the surface of the water that effectually prevents them from seeing the fish, they have an ingenious plan of lying flat across the canoe, with the upper part of the head and the eyes immersed in the water, and the hand grasping the spear ready for the stroke. The eyes being under the rip-

ple, they can see distinctly enough.

I have often employed this plan when desirous of watching the proceedings of subaquatic animals. It is very effectual, though after a time the attitude becomes rather fatiguing, and those who are not gymnasts enough to be independent as to the relative position of their heads and heels are apt to find themselves giddy from the determina-tion of blood to the head.

Another spear, also used for fishing, and with an elaborate head, is seen at fig 8. In this spear one point is iron, and the other two are bone. The weapon is remarkable for the manner in which the shaft is allowed to project among the points, and for the peculiar mode in which the various parts are lashed together. This specimen comes from the Lower Murray River.

There is in my collection a weapon which was brought from Cape York. It is a fishing spear, and at first sight greatly resembles that which has just been described. It is, however, of a more elaborate character, are often of considerable size, and the mere and deserves a separate description. It is leverage of their weight at the end of a seven feet in length, and very slender, the

thickest p than half points, two of a crow inches in are made the rays, ar of the bone has a doub ward, one r At fig. 6

very formic spear. Alo native war stuck in it quartz, faste boy gum, j saw. is, however, the pieces of nor so carefi as if the sa ments of fli tool, and afte head of his in my collect head only, a pieces of obsi and being ke coating of bla very point of At figs 4 a

rious parts of to races of 1 spear heads ar hand, and are fully into the flat, and the m edge of the cle to each side a edge. It will ! darker than fig accidental, but ety in the hue some of the spe and some almo in fact, nothing shown in fig.

are seen two

observer of th

late years bee

page 722. If the reader the illustration, two heads of tion, except that double. These Port Essington.

Specimens of tion. They are more than thirt other falling but ment. In diam man's wrist; and wood of which exceedingly weigh violent strugmakes, seems table vessel. pass hour after accident, and seem scarcely gle European, occustomed to or the commen will be g and hauling g them with a hearth of wet of the canoe. for fish spearnumber of naase is a most v torches, by the bottom of so the advanthe effect of s, the shifting and the dark searching for ers struggling equally pictu-orches which nmable bark;

a, or, to come Scotland. use the torch, will cause a ter that effeceing the fish, of lying flat er part of the in the water, ear ready for nder the ripugh.

nost precisely in "burning

s plan when edings of subctual, though comes rather not gymnasts the relative els are apt to e determina-

fishing, and at fig 8. nd the other s remarkable aft is allowed and for the various parts cimen comes

eapon which It is a fishreatly resemescribed. It te character, iption. It is slender, the

thickest part of the shaft not being more ferior in efficiency to the light throwing-than half an inch in diameter. It has four spears which have already been described, points, two of which are iron and without Of course such a weapon as that is meant to than hair an inch in diameter. It has four points, two of which are iron and without barbs, the iron being about the thickness of a crow-quill, and rather under three inches in length. The two bone points are made from the flat tail-bone of one of the rays, and, being arranged with the point of the bone in front, each of these rounts. of the bone in front, each of these points has a double row of barbs directed back-

ward, one running along each edge.
At fig. 6 of the same illustration is seen a very formidable variety of the throwing-spear. Along each side of the head the native warrior has cut a groove, and has stuck in it a number of chips of flint or quartz, fastened in their places by the blackboy gum, just as has been related of the saw. The workmanship of this specimen is, however, far ruder than that of the saw, the pieces of flint not being the same size, nor so carefully adjusted. Indeed, it seems as if the saw maker laid aside the frag-ments of flint which he rejected for the tool, and afterward used them in arming the head of his spear. One of these weapons in my collection is armed on one side of the head only, along which are arranged four pieces of obsidian having very jagged edges, and being kept in their places by a thick coating of black-boy gum extending to the very point of the spear.

At figs 4 and 5 of the same illustration are seen two spear heads which remind the observer of the flint weapons which have of late years been so abundantly found in various parts of the world, and which belonged to races of men now long extinct. The spear heads are nearly as large hand, and are made of flint chipped care-hand, and are made shape. They are spear heads are nearly as large as a man's flat, and the maker has had sufficient knowlhat, and the maker has had sumctent knowledge of the cleavage to enable him to give to each side a sharp and tolerably uniform edge. It will be observed that fig. 5 is much darker than fig. 4. This distinction is not accidental, but very well expresses the variety in the hue of the material employed, some of the speer heads being half brown. some of the spear heads being pale brown, and some almost black. The weapons are, in fact, nothing but elongations of the dagger shown in fig. 2, of the "tomahawks," on page 722.

If the reader will look at figs. 1 and 2 of the illustration, he will see that there are two heads of somewhat similar construction, except that one is single and the other double. These spears were brought from Port Essington.

Specimens of each kind are in my collect tion. They are of great size, one beilig more than thirteen feet in length, and the other falling but little short of that measure-ment. In diameter they are as thick as a be used as a pike, and not as a missile. Besides these, I have another with three heads, and of nearly the same dimensions as the two others.

In every case the head and the shaft are of different material, the one being light and porous, and the other hard, compact, and heavy. Instead of being lashed together heavy. Instead of being lashed together with the neatness which is exhibited in the with the neatness which is exhibited in the lighter weapons, the head and shaft are united with a binding of thick string, wrapped carefully, but yet roughly, round the weapon, and not being covered with the coating of black-boy gum, which gives so neat a look to the smaller weapons. In the three-pointed great, the maker has every three-pointed spear, the maker has exercised his ingenuity in decorating the weapon with paint, the tips of the points being painted with red and the rest of the head white, while the lashing is also painted

In his wild state the Australian native never likes to be without a spear in his hand, and, as may be expected from a man whose subsistence is almost entirely due to his skill in the use of weapons, he is a most accomplished spear thrower. Indeed, as a thrower of missiles in general the Australian stands without a rival. Putting aside the boomerang, of which we shall presently treat, the Australian can hurl a spear either with his hand or with the "throw-stick," can fling his short club with unerring aim, and, even should he be deprived of these missiles, he has a singular faculty of throwing stones. Many a time, before the character of the natives was known, has an armed soldier been killed by a totally unarmed Australian. The man has fired at the native, who, by dodging about, has prevented the enemy from taking a correct aim, and then has been simply cut to pieces by a shower of stones, picked up and hurled with a force and precision that must be seen to be be and precision that must be seen to be be-lieved. When the first Australian discoverer came home, no one would believe that any weapon could be flung and then return to the thrower, and even at the present day it is difficult to make some persons believe in the stone-throwing powers of the Austra-lian. To fling one stone with perfect precision is not so easy a matter as it seems, but the Australian will hurl one after the other with such rapidity that they seem to be poured from some machine; and as he throws them he leaps from side to side, so as to make the missiles converge from different directions upon the unfortunate object of his aim.

In order to attain the wonderful skill man's wrist; and, however light may be the wood of which they are made, they are exceedingly weighty, and must be very inting up sham fights, armed with shield, throw-stick, and spear, the latter weapon being headless, and the end blunted by being split and scraped into filaments, and the bushy floments then turned back, until they form a both fibrous pad. Even with this protection, the weapon is not to be despised; and if it strike one of the combatants fairly, it is sure to knock him down; and if it should strike him in the ribs, it leaves him gasping for breath. This mimic spear goes by the name of "matamoodlu," and is made of various sizes according to the age and capabilities of the person who uses it.

and is made of various sizes according to the age and capabilities of the person who uses it.

There is one missile which is, I believe, as peculiar to Australia as the boomerang, though it is not so widely spread, nor of such use in war or hunting. It is popularly called the "kangaroo-rat," on account of its peculiar leaping progression, and it may be familiar to those of my readers who saw the Australian cricketers who came over to England in the spring of 1868. The "kangaroo-rat," is a piece of hard wood shaped like a double cone, and having a long flexible handle projecting from one of the points. The handle is about a yard in length, and as thick as an artist's drawing-pencil, and at a little distance the weapon looks like a huge tadpole with a much elongated tail. In Australia the natives make the tail of a flexible twig, but those who have access to the resources of civilization have found out that whalebone is the best substance for the tail that can be found.

When the native throws the kangaroorat, he takes it by the end of the tail and swings it backward and forward, so that it bends quite double, and at last he gives a sort of underhanded jerk and lets it hy. It darts through the air with a sharp and menacing hiss like the sound of a rifle ball, its greatest height being some seven or eight feet from the ground. As soon as it touches the earth, it springs up and makes a succes-sion of leaps, each less than the preceding, until it finally stops. In fact, it skims over the ground exactly as a flat stone skims over the water when boys are playing at "ducks and drakes." The distance to which this instrument can be thrown is really astonishing. I have seen an Australian stand at one side of Kennington Oval, and throw the "kangaroo-rat" completely across it. Much depends upon the angle at which it first takes the ground. If thrown too high, it makes one or two lofty leaps, but traverses no great distance; and, if it be thrown too low, it shoots along the ground, and is soon brought up by the excessive friction. When properly thrown, it looks just like a living animal leaping along, and those who have been accustomed to traverse the country say that its movements have a wonderful resemblance to the long leaps of a kangaroo-rat fleeing in alarm, with its long tail trailing as a balance behind it.

A somewhat similarly shaped missile is used in Fiji, but the Fijian instrument has a stiff shaft, and it is propelled by placing the end of the forefinger against the butt, and throwing it underhanded. It is only used in a game in which the competitors try to send it skimming along the ground as far as possible.

To return to our spears. It is seldom that an Australian condescends to throw a spear by hand, the native always preferring to use the curious implement called by the aborigines a "wummersh," or "midlah," and by the colonists the "throw-stick." The theory of the throw-stick is simple enough, but the practice is very difficult, and requires a long apprenticeship before it can be learned with any certainty.

with any certainty.

The principle of this implement is that of the sling; and the throw-stick is, in fact, a sling made of wood instead of cord, the spear taking the place of the stone. So completely is the throw-stick associated with the spear, that the native would as soon think of going without his spear as without the instrument whereby he throws it. The implement takes different forms in different localities, although the principle of its construction is the same throughout. In the illustration entitled "Throw-sticks," on page 731, the reader may see every variety of form which the throw-stick takes. He will see, on inspecting the figures, that it consists of a stick of variable length and breadth, but always having a barblike projection at one end. Before describing the manner in which the instrument is used, I will proceed to a short notice of the mode of its construction, and the various forms which it takes.

In the first place, it is always more or less flattened; sometimes, as in fig. 3, being almost leaf-shaped, and sometimes, as in fig. 6, being quite narrow, and throughout the greater part of its length little more than a flattened stick. It is always made of some hard and elastic wood, and in many cases it is large and heavy enough to be serviceable as a club at close quarters. Indeed, one very good specimen in my collection, which came from the Swan River, was labelled, when it reached me, as an Indian club. This form of the throw-stick is shown at

fig. 3.

This particular specimen is a trifle under two feet in length, and in the broadest part it measures four inches and a half in width. In the centre it is one-sixth of an inch in thickness, and diminishes gradually to the edges, which are about as sharp as those of the wooden sword already mentioned. Toward the end, however, it becomes thicker, and at the place where the peg is placed it is as thick as in the middle. Such a weapon would be very formidable if used as a club—scarcely less so, indeed, than the well-known "merai" of New Zealand.

ped missile is trument has a by placing the the butt, and is only used in ors try to send as far as pos-

It is seldom ds to throw a ays preferring t called by the "midlah," and v-stick." The imple enough, t, and requires can be learned

ment is that of k is, in fact, a cord, the spear So completely with the spear, think of going he instrument plement takes localities, almostruction is as in lillustration page 731, the of form which fill see, on insists of a stick, but always at one end. in which the seed to a short istruction, and es.

s more or less fig. 3, being imes, as in fig. uroughout the more than a made of some many cases it be serviceable Indeed, one lection, which

was labelled, Indian club. is shown at

a trifle under broadest part aalf in width.

of an inch in dually to the p as those of tioned. Towomes thicker, ag is placed it uch a weapon d as a club e well-known



That it h evident from been caused The wood is half along rendered for ful owner h the fracture, ingenious m surfaces acc bound them which have sinews are fl a thick coatii the reader m is knotted, th them, which knobs. The and the nativities cisely as an

grained gumof much har
whether from
but I cannot r
each of the s
attached a cat
have tried to
and glue, neit
days the label
This specimes
which has bee
insect, and the
hole is bored ty
very curious a
exactly like th
the great Sirex

The wood i

The peculial entirely of bla exception of a the wood, it is a was first made. but of the spe wood, but in me of bone. Figs. flattened form from specimens figs. 4 and 5 ms throw-stick of Pfg. 4, is remarka handle. That of ably inconvenier made for the exp the native from weepon.

weapon. Fig. 6
stick of Queens
seen, can be use
it be reversed, a
handle.
There is anoth
in Northern Aus
may be seen at fit
than that which of

may be seen at fit than that which c is one of the "fla been casually mer spike for the spea able handle. T

That it has been used for this purpose is evident from a fracture, which has clearly been caused by the effect of a severe blow wer pon, one on each side. Black-boy gum half along the weapon, and so it has been profusely used in fixing these pieces, and the whole of the interior space that the shells has been filled up with ingenious manner. He has fitted the broken surfaces accurately together, and has then bound them with the kangaroo-tail sinews which have already been mentioned. The sinews are flat, and have been protected by a thick coating of black-boy gum. Perhaps the reader may be aware that, when catgut is knotted, the ends are secured by scorching them, which makes them swell into round knobs. The sinew has the same property, and the native has secured the ends precisely as an English artisan would do.

The wood is that of the tough, hard, wavy-grained gum-tree. Whether in consequence of much handling by greasy natives, or whether from other causes, I do not know, but I cannot make a label adhere to it. To each of the specimens in my collection is attached a catalogue number, and though I have tried to affix the label with paste, gum, and glue, neither will hold it, and in a few days the label falls off of its own accord. This specimen has been cut from a tree which has been attacked by some boring insect, and the consequence is, that a small hole is bored through it edgewise, and has a very curious appearance. The hole looks exactly like that of our well-known insect,

the great Sirex.

The peculiarly-shaped handle is made entirely of black-boy gum, and, with the exception of a tendency to warp away from the wood, it is as firm as on the day when it was first made. The peg which fits into the butt of the spear is in this case made of wood, but in many throw-sticks it is made of bone. Figs. 1 and 2 are examples of this flattened form of midlah, and were drawn from specimens in Southern Australia. At figs. 4 and 5 may be seen examples of the throw-stick of Port Essington, one of which, fig. 4, is remarkable for the peculiarly-shaped handle. That of fig. 5 seems to be remarkably inconvenient, and almost to have been made for the express purpose of preventing the native from taking a firm hold of the weapon. Fig. 6 is an example of the throw-stick of Queensland, and, as may easily be seen, can be used as a club, provided that it be reversed, and the peg end used as a handle.

There is another form of throw-stick used in Northern Australia, an example of which may be seen at fig. 6. It is a full foot longer than that which came from the Murray, and is one of the "flattened sticks" which have been casually mentioned. It has a wooden spike for the spear-butt, and a most remark-

ful owner has, however, contrived to mend it. A diagonal lashing of sinew, covered between the shells has been filled up with with the same gum, passes over the shells, and the handle is strongly wrapped with the same material for a space of five inches. We will now proceed to see how the

native throws the spear.

Holding the throw-stick by the handle, so that the other end projects over his shoulder, he takes a spear in his left hand, fits a slight hollow in its butt to the peg of the midlah, and then holds it in its place by passing the forefinger of the right hand over the shaft. It will be seen that the leverage is enormously increased by this plan, and that the force of the arm is more than doubled.

Sometimes, especially when hunting, the native throws the spear without further trouble, but when he is engaged in a fight he goes through a series of performances which are rather ludicrous to an European, though they are intended to strike terror into the native enemy. The spear is jerked about violently, so that it quivers just like an African assagai, and while vibrating strongly it is thrown. There are two ways strongly it is thrown. There are two ways of quivering the spear; the one by merely moving the right hand, and the other by seizing the shaft in the left hand, and shaking it violently while the butt rests against the peg of the throw-stick. In any case the very fact of quivering the spear acts on the Australian warrior as it does upon the African. The whirring sound of the vibrating weapon excites him to a pitch of frenzied excitement, and while menacing his foe with the trembling spear, the warrior dances and leaps and yells as if he were mad—and indeed for the moment he becomes a raving

The distance to which the spear can be thrown is something wonderful, and its aspect as it passes through the air is singu-larly beautiful. It seems rather to have been shot from some huge bow, or to be furnished with some innate powers of flight, than to have been flung from a human arm, as it performs its lofty course, undulating like a thin black snake, and writhing its graceful way through the air. As it leaves the throw-stick, a slight clashing sound is heard, which to the experienced ear tells its story as clearly as the meneging clary of an story as clearly as the menacing clang of an

archer's bowstring.

To me the distance of its flight is not nearly so wonderful as the precision with which it can be aimed. A tolerably long throw-stick gives so powerful a let grage that the length of range is not so very astonishable handle. Two pieces of melon-shell attained as well as length of flight is really

wonderful. I have seen the natives, when engaged in mock battle, stand at a distance of eighty or ninety yards, and throw their fatal throw. The reader will note the curispears with such certainty that, in four throws out of six, the antagonist was obliged to move in order to escape the spears

Beside the powerful and lofty throw, they have a way of suddenly flinging it under-hand, so that it skims just above the ground, and, when it touches the earth, proceeds with a series of ricochets that must be peculiarly embarrassing to a novice in that kind

of warfare.

The power of the spear is never better shown than in the chase of the kangaroo. When a native sees one of these animals engaged in feeding, he goes off to a little distance where it cannot see him, gathers a few leafy boughs, and ties them together so as to form a screen. He then takes his spears, throw-stick, and waddy, and goes off in chase of the kangaroo. Taking advantage of every cover, he slips noiselessly forward, always taking care to approach the animal against the wind, so that it shall not be able gainst the wind, so that it shall not be able to detect his presence by the nostrils, and gliding along with studied avoidance of withered leaves, dry twigs, and the other natural objects which, by their rustling and snapping, warn the animal that danger is at hand.

As long as possible, the hunter keeps under the shelter of natural cover, but when this is impossible, he takes to his leafy screen, and trusts to it for approaching within range. Before quitting the trees or bush behind which he has been hiding himself, he takes his spear, fits it to the throw-stick, raises his arm with the spear ready poised, and never moves that arm until it delivers the spear. Holding the leafy screen in front of him with his left hand, and disposing the second spear and other weapons which cannot be hidden so as to look like dead branches growing from the bush, he glides carefully toward the kangaroo, always advancing while it stoops to feed, and crouching quietly behind the screen whenever it raises itself, after the fashion of kangaroos, and surveys the surrounding country.

At last he comes within fair range, and with unerring aim he transfixes the unsuspecting kangaroo. Sometimes he comes upon several animals, and in that case his second spear is rapidly fixed in the midlah and hurled at the flying animals, and, should he have come to tolerably close quarters, the short missile club is flung with certain aim. Having thrown all the missiles which he finds available, he proceeds to despatch the wounded animals with his waddy.

of trees, and is just poising his spear for the fatal throw. The reader will note the curious bone ornament which passes through the septum of the nose, and gives such a curious character to the face. In the background is another hunter, who has been obliged to have recourse to the bough screen, behind which he is hiding himself like the soldiers in "Macbeth," while the unsuspecting kangaroos are quietly feeding within easy range. One of them has taken alarm, and is sitting upright to look about it, just as the squirrel will do while it is feeding on the ground.

The reader will now see the absolute necessity of an accurate aim in the thrower an accomplishment which to me is a practical mystery. I can hurl the spear to a considerable distance by means of a throw-stick, but the aim is quite another business, the spear seeming to take an independent course of its own without the least reference to the wishes of the thrower. Yet the Australian is so good a marksman that he can make good practice at a man at the distance of eighty or ninety yards, making due allow-ance for the wind, and calculating the curve described by the spear with wonderful ac-curacy; while at a short distance his eye and hand are equally true, and he will transfix a kangaroo at twenty or thirty yards as certainly as it could be shot by an experienced

In some parts of Australia the natives use the bow and arrow; but the employment of such weapons seems to belong chiefly to the inhabitants of the extreme north. There are in my collection specimens of bows and arrows brought from Cape York, which in their way are really admirable weapons, and would do credit to the archers of Polynesia. The bow is more than six feet long, and is made from the male, i. c. the solid bamboo. It is very stiff, and a powerful as well as a practised arm is needed to bend it properly.

Like the spear shaft, this bow is greatly subject to being worm-eaten. My own specimen is so honeycombed by these tiny borers that when it arrived a little heap of yellow powder fell to the ground wherever the bow was set, and, if it were sharply struck, a cloud of the same powder came from it. Fortunately, the same looseness of texture which enabled the beetle to make such havor served also to conduct the poisoned spirit which I injected into the holes; and now the ravages have ceased, and not the most voracious insect in existence can touch the wea-The string is very simply made, being nothing but a piece of rattan split to the required thickness. Perhaps the most ingenious part of this bow is the manner in which In the illustration No. 1, on the 739th page, the action of the throw-stick is well shown, and two scenes in the hunt are depicted. In the foreground is a hunter who has succeeded which would not suit the stiff and harsh rates the local state of the local stat in getting tolerably close to the kangaroos tan, he native has invented a knot which is

quite as ef same prine the cord ro order to gi it has been fibres and which sur then been sort of rude wrapping o preserve it The arro

are variabl longer than men were a being a " cle measures th while the lo from butt vestige of fe that the nati arrow again: finger, and fore and mis archers have known. The shafts

and they are some dark a them to fly p plain, rounde rately barbed gle row of six and another of the "broad has, instead o gradually in a purpose, exce Another has t the longest of then an attem of the very si only piece of The same arr the point cove a sort of vari sealing-wax, w terial encircles nearer the sha the weapons o nish was poise whether it is a The end of

is inserted is rattan fibre, co nish, which, he gum that is so facture of othe the place of t inch or so of fully with the c flat strips sca twine, that it b of the weapon belief that the digenous to Au imported from

d the shadow spear for the note the curisses through ssuch a curie background en obliged to creen, behind c the soldiers pecting kann easy range. and is sitting the squirrel

e ground. the absolute the thrower me is a pracear to a conthrow-stick, business, the ndent course erence to the e Australian e can make distance of g due allowng the curve onderful ace his eye and ill transfix a ards as cerexperienced

e natives use ployment of chiefly to the orth. There of bows and rk, which in veapons, and f Polynesia. long, and is lid bamboo. as well as a it properly. w is greatly y own specie tiny borers p of yellow ver the bow ly struck, a me from it. s of texture e such havoc soned spirit and now the e most voraich the weamade, being lit to the remost ingenner in which nacquainted string knot, archers, and d harsh rat-

not which is

quite as efficacious, and is managed on the made their way inland. The natives of same principle of taking several turns, with Northern Australia have also evidently bororder to give the rattan the needful flexibility it has been beaten so as to separate it into fibres and break up the hard, flinty coating which surrounds it, and these fibres have then been twisted round and round into a sort of rude cord, guarded at the end with a wrapping of the same material in order to

preserve it from unravelling.

The arrows are suitable to the bow. They are variable in length, but all are much longer than those which the English bowmen were accustomed to use, and, instead of being a "cloth yard" in length, the shortest measures three feet seven inches in length, while the longest is four feet eight inches from butt to point. They are without a vestige of feathering, and have no nock, so that the native archer is obliged to hold the arrow against the string with his thumb and finger, and cannot draw the bow with the fore and middle finger, as all good English archers have done ever since the bow was

The shafts of the arrows are made of reed, and they are all headed with long spikes of and they are all heavy wood, which enable some dark and heavy wood, which enable them to fly properly. Some of the heads are plain, rounded spikes, but others are elaborately barbed. One, for example, has a single player and the property of the parks such an inch in length. gle row of six barbs, each an inch in length, and another has one double barb, like that of the "broad arrow" of England. Another has, instead of a barb, a smooth bulb, ending gradually in a spike, and serving no possible purpose, except perhaps that of ornament. Another has two of these bulbs; and another, the longest of them all, has a slight bulb, and then an attempt at carving. The pattern is of the very simplest character, but it is the only piece of carving on all the weapons. The same arrow is remarkable for having the point covered for some two inches with a sort of varnish, looking exactly like red sealing-wax, while a band of the same material encircles the head about six inches nearer the shaft. The sailor who brought the weapons over told me that this red varnish was poison, but I doubt exceedingly whether it is anything but ornament.

The end of the reed into which the head is inserted is guarded by a wrapping of rattan fibre, covered with a sort of dark varnish, which, however, is not the black-boy gum that is so plentifully used in the manuacture of other weapons. In one instance the place of the wrapping is taken by an inch or so of plaiting, wrought so beautifully with the outside of the rattan cut into flat strips scarcely wider than ordinary twine, that it betrays the Polynesian origin

rowed much from Polynesia, as we shall see in the course of this narrative.

The bow is usually about six feet in length, though one in my possession is somewhat longer. Owing to the dimensions of the bow and arrows, a full equipment of the bow and arrows, and together ment of them is very weighty, and, together with the other weapons which an Australian thinks it his duty to carry, must be no

slight burden to the warrior.

Ferocity of countenance is very charac-teristic of the race, and, as we shall see when we come to the canoes and their occupants, the people are very crafty: mild and complaisant when they think themselves overmatched, insolent and menacing when they fancy themselves superior, and tolera-bly sure to commit murder if they think they can do so with impunity. The only mode of dealing with these people is the safe one to adopt with all savages: i.c.

we now come to that most wonderful of all weapons, the boomerang. This is essentially the national weapon of Australia, and is found throughout the West country. As far as is known, it is peculiar to Australia, and, though curious missiles are found in other parts of the world, there is none which can be compared with the boomerang.

On one of the old Egyptian monuments there is a figure of a bird-catcher in a canoe. He is assisted by a cat whom he has taught to catch prey for him, and, as the birds fly out of the reeds among which he is pushing his canoe, he is hurling at them a curved missile which some persons have thought to be the boomerang. I cannot, however, see that there is the slightest reason for such a

supposition.

No weapon in the least like the boomerang is at present found in any part of Africa, and, so far as I know, there is no example of a really efficient weapon having entirely disappeared from a whole continent. The harpoon with which the Egyptians of old killed the hippopotamus is used at the present day without the least alteration; the net is used for catching fish in the same manner; the spear and shield of the Egyptian infantry were identical in shape with those of the Kanemboo soldier, a portrait of whom may be seen on page 612; the bow and arrow still survive; and even the whip with which the Egyptian task masters beat their Jewish servants is the "khoorbash" with which the Nubian of the present day beats his slave.

In all probability, the curved weapon which the bird-catcher holds in his hand, and which he is about to throw, is nothing of the weapons, and confirms me in the belief that the bow and arrow are not indigenous to Australia, but have only been imported from New Guinea, and have not indigenous to Australia, but have only been imported from New Guinea, and have not indigenous to Australia, but have only been imported from New Guinea, and have not indigenous to the knob-kerry of the Kaffir, and having no returning power. Varying slightly in some of its details, the boomerang is identical in

principle wherever it is made. It is a flattish curved piece of wood, various examples of which may be seen in the illustration on the 731st page; and neither by its shape nor material does it give the least idea of its wonderful powers.

The material of which the boomerang (or bommereng, as the word is sometimes ren-dered) is made is almost invariably that of the gum-tree, which is heavy, hard, and tough, and is able to sustain a tolerably severe shock without breaking. It is slightly convex on the upper surface, and flat below, and is always thickest in the middle, being scraped away toward the edges, which are moderately sharp, especially the outer edge. It is used as a missile, and it is one of the strangest weapons that ever was invented.

In the old fairy tales, with which we are more or less acquainted, one of the strange gifts which is presented by the fairy to the hero is often a weapon of some wonderful power. Thus we have the sword of sharpness, which cut through every thing at which it was aimed, and the coat of mail, which no weapon would pierce. It is a pity, by the way, that the sword and the coat never seem to have been tried against each Then there are arrows (in more modern tales modified into bullets) that always struck their mark, and so on. And in one of the highest flights of fairy lore we

In Australia, however, we have, as an actual fact, a missile that can be thrown to a considerable distance, and which always returns to the thrower. By a peculiar mode of hurling it the weapon circles through the air, and then describes a circular course, falling by the side of or behind the man who threw it. The mode of throwing is very simple in theory, and very difficult in practice. The weapon is grasped by the handle, which is usually marked by a number of cross cuts, so as to give a firm hold, and the flat side is kept downward. Then, with a quick and sharp fling, the boomerang is hurled, the hand at the same time being drawn back, so as to make the weapon revolve with extreme rapidity. A billiardplayer will understand the sort of movement when told that it is on the same principle as the "screw-back" stroke at billiards. The weapon must be flung with great force, or it will not perform its evolutions properly.

If the reader would like to practice throwing the boomerang, let me recommend him, in the first place, to procure a genuine weapon, and not an English imitation thereof, such as is generally sold at the toy-shops. He should then go alone into a large field, where the ground is tolerably soft and there are no large stones about, and then stand facing the wind. Having grasped it as described, he should mark with his eye a spot on the ground at the distance of forty

yards or so, and hurl the boomerang at ft, Should he throw it rightly, the weapon will at first look as if it were going to strike the ground; but, instead of doing so, it will shoot off at a greater or less angle, according to circumstances, and will rise high into the air, circling round with gradually diminishing force, until it falls to the ground. Should sufficient force have been imparted to it, the boomerang will fall some eight or ten yards behind the thrower.

It is necessary that the thrower should be alone, or at least have only an instructor with him, when he practises this art, as the boomerang will, in inexperienced hands, take all kinds of strange courses, and will, in all probability, swerve from its line, and strike one of the spectators; and the force with which a boomerang can strike is almost incredible. I have seen a dog killed on the spot, its body being nearly cut in two by the boomerang as it fell; and I once saw a brass spur struck clean off the heel of an incautious spectator, who ran across the path of

the weapon.

It is necessary that he choose a soft as well as spacious field, as the boomerang has a special knack of selecting the hardest spots on which to fall, and if it can find a large stone is sure to strike it, and so break itself to pieces. And if there are trees in the way, it will get among the boughs, perhaps smash read of arrows that always returned of their itself, certainly damage itself, and probably own accord to the archer.

In Australia, however, we have, as an should throw also against the wind, as, if the boomerang is thrown with the wind, it does not think of coming back again, but sails on as if it never meant to stop, and is sure to reach a wonderful distance before it falls.

Nearly thirty years ago, I lost a boomerang by this very error. In company with some of my schoolfellows, I was throwing the weapon for their amusement, when one of them snatched it up, turned round, and threw it with all his force in the direction of the wind. The distance to which the weapon travelled I am afraid to mention, lest it should not be believed. The ground in that neighborhood is composed of successive undulations of hill and vale, and we saw the boomerang cross two of the valleys, and at last disappear into a grove of limetrees that edged the churchyard.

In vain we sought for the weapon, and it was not found until four years afterward, when a plumber, who had been sent to repair the roof of the church, found it sticking in the leads. So it had first traversed that avtragalization, hed they are the control of the church in the leads. that extraordinary distance, had then cut clean through the foliage of a lime-tree, and lastly had sufficient force to stick into the leaden roofing of a church. The boomerang was brought down half decayed, and wrenched out of its proper form by the shock.

Should the reader wish to learn the use

of the w throw it. hurls the Holding t left hand, his right, object whi to which ancing the hand, he s ward, and stroke, lau

Should h back again In the one into which circling the that remin on until it thrower, w a bird shot over, and f

There is returning b remarkable. ing high in ground som vance, and h weapon stril being smashe from the vic from the gre attain new earth. It fli from the gro a comparativ most curious that it looks with an opa course in an alarming to to it. I have vres within s ground, hissin with a strange it finally came as if it were a

We will not of boomerange on the 731st pa are taken from from the colle some from my by Mr. Angas the country. gether, so that boomerang has of the club.

At fig. 4 is tl may either ans ture club, a das used in the as is a club or we and at fig. 6 th into a point, a

nerang at ft. weapon will to strike the so, it will ngle, accordae high into hually diminthe ground. en imparted me eight or

er should be n instructor s art, as the aced hands, es, and will, its line, and d the force ike is almost tilled on the n two by the saw a brass of an incauthe path of

a soft as well g has a speest spots on large stone in the way, rhaps smash nd probably he learner wind, as, if the wind, it again, but stop, and is

st a boomempany with browing the when one of round, and e direction which the o mention, The ground sed of sucale, and we the valleys, ve of lime-

pon, and it afterward. sent to red it stickt traversed then cut lime-tree, stick into The boomecayed, and rm by the

rn the use

of the weapon, he should watch a native throw it. The attitude of the man as he hurls the boomerang is singularly graceful. hurls the boomerang is singularly graceful. Holding three or four of the weapons in his left hand, he draws out one at random with his right, while his eyes are fixed on the object which he desires to hit, or the spot to which the weapon has to travel. Hal-ancing the beomerang for a moment in his hand, he suddenly steps a pace or two for-ward, and with a quick, sharp, almost angry stroke, launches his weapon into the air.

Should he desire to bring the boomering back again, he has two modes of throwing. In the one mode, he flings it high in the air, into which it mounts to a wonderful height, circling the while with a bold, vigorous sweep that reminds the observer of the grand flight of the eagle or the buzzard. It flies on until it has reached a spot behind the thrower, when all life seems suddenly to die out of it; it collapses, so to speak, like a bird shot on the wing, topples over and over, and falls to the ground.

There is another mode of throwing the returning boomerang which is even more The thrower, instead of aimremarkable. ing high in the air, marks out a spot on the ground some thirty or forty yards in advance, and hurls the boomerang at it. The weapon strikes the ground, and, instead of being smashed to pieces, as might be thought from the violence of the stroke, it springs from the ground Antœus-like, seeming to attain new vigor by its contact with the earth. It flies up as if it had been shot from the ground by a catapult; and, taking a comparatively low elevation, performs the most curious evolutions, whirling so rapidly that it looks like a semi-transparent disc with an opaque centre, and directing its course in an erratic manner that is very alarming to those who are unaccustomed to it. I have seen it execute all its manceuvres within seven or eight feet from the ground, hissing as it passed through the air with a strangely menacing sound, and, when it finally came to the ground, leaping along as if it were a living creature.

We will now examine the various shapes of boomerangs, as seen in the illustration on the 731st page. Some of the specimens are taken from the British Museum, some from the collection of Colonel Lane Fox, some from my own, and the rest are drawn by Mr. Angas from specimens obtained in the country. I have had them brought together, so that the reader may see how the boomerang has been gradually modified out

of the club,

At fig. 4 is the short pointed stick which may either answer the purpose of a miniature club, a dagger, or an instrument to be used in the ascent of trees. Just below it

the handle flattened, and the curve of the head extended to the handle.

The transition from this club to the boomerang is simple enough, and, indeed, we have an example (fig. 1) of a weapon which looks like an ordinary boomerang, but is in fact a club, and is used for hand-to-hand combat.

These figures show pretty clearly the progressive structure of the boomerang. The flattened clubs were probably made from necessity, the native not being able to find a suitable piece of wood, and taking the best that he could get. If, then, one of these clubs were, on the spur of the moment, hurled at an object, the superior value which this flatness conferred upon it as a missile would be evident as well as the curved course which it would take through the air. The native, ever quick to note anything which might increase the power of his weapons, would be sure to notice this latter peculiarity, and to perceive the valuable uses to which it could be turned. He would therefore try various forms of flattened missiles, until he at last reached the true boomerang.

The strangest point about the boomerang is, that the curve is not uniform, and, in fact, scarcely any two specimens have precisely the same curve. Some have the curve so sharp that it almost deserves the name of angle, for an example of which see fig. 8; others, as in fig. 9, have the curve very slight; while others, as in fig. 2, have a tendency to a double curve, and there is a specimen in the British Museum in which the double curve is very boldly marked. The best and typical form of boomerang is, how-ever, that which is shown at fig. 8. The specimen which is there represented was made on the banks of the river Darling.

The natives can do almost anything with the boomerang, and the circuitous course which it adopts is rendered its most useful characteristic. Many a hunter has wished that he only possessed that invaluable weapon, a gun which would shoot round a corner, and just such a weapon does the Australian find in his boomerang. If, for example, he should see a kangaroo in such a position that he cannot come within the range of a spear without showing himself and alarming the animal, or say, for example, that it is sheltered from a direct attack by the trunk of a tree, he will steal as near as he can without disturbing the animal, and then will throw his boomerang in such a manner that it circles round the tree, and strikes the animal at which it is aimed.

is a club or waddy, with a rounded head, and at fig. 6 the head has been developed markable, but those of my readers who are into a point, and rather flattened. If the

mind the enormous power which is given to them by the "bias," or weighted side of the bowl, and the bold curves which they can force the missile to execute, when they wish to send the bowl round a number of obsta-cles which are in its way. The boomerang is used as a sort of aerial bowl, with the advantage that the expert thrower is able to alter the bias at will, and to make the weapon describe almost any curve that he

It is even said that, in case there should be obstacles which prevent the boomerang from passing round the tree, the native has the power of throwing it so that it strikes the ground in front of the tree, and then, by the force of the throw, leaps over the top of the branches, and descends upon the object

at which it is thrown.

On page 739 is shown a scene on the river Murray, in which the natives are drawn as they appear when catching the shag, a species of cormorant, which is found there in great numbers. They capture these birds in various ways, sometimes by climbing at night the trees on which they roost, and seizing them, getting severely bitten, by the way, on their naked limbs and bodies. They have also a very ingenious mode of planting sticks in the bed of the river, so that they project above the surface, and form convenient resting-places for the birds Fatigued with diving, the cormorants are sure to perch upon them; and as they are doz-ing while digesting their meal of fish, the native swims gently up, and suddenly catches them by the wings, and drags them under water. He always breaks the neck of the bird at once.

They are so wonderfully skilful in the water, that when pelicans are swimming unsuspectingly on the surface, the natives approach silently, dive under them, seize the birds by the legs, jerk them under water, and break both the wings and legs so rapidly that the unfortunate birds have no chance of

Sometimes, as shown in the illustration, the natives use their boomerangs and clubs, knock the birds off the branches on which they are roosting, and secure them before they have recovered from the stunning blow of the weapon. When approaching cormorants and other aquatic birds, the native has a very ingenious plan of disguising himself. He gathers a bunch of weeds, ties it on his head, and slips quietly into the water, keep-ing his whole body immersed, and only allowing the artificial covering to be seen. The bird, being quite accustomed to see patches of weeds floating along the water, takes no notice of so familiar an object, and so allows the disguised man to come within

not a very easy one. The various points which constitute the excellence of a boomerang are so light that there is scarcely an European who can see them, especially as the shape, size, and weight of the weapon differ so much according to the locality in which it was made. The native, when employed in making a boomerang, often spends many days over it, not only on account of the very imperfect tools which he possesses, but by reason of the minute care which is required in the manufacture of a good weapon.

Day after day he may be seen with the boomerang in his hand, chipping at it slowly and circumspectly, and becoming more and more careful as it approaches completion. When he has settled the curve, and nearly settled it to be settled the curve, and nearly settled it to be settled to the curve. flattened it to its proper thickness, he scarcely makes three or four strokes without balancing the weapon in his hand, looking carefully along the edges, and making movements as if he were about to throw it. The last few chips seem to exercise a wonderful effect on the powers of the weapon, and about them the native is exceedingly fastid-

Yet, with all this care, the weapon is a very rough one, and the marks of the flint axe are left without even an attempt to smooth them. In a well-used boomerang the projecting edges of the grooves made by various cuts and chips become quite polished by friction, while the sunken portion is left rough. In one fine specimen in my possession the manufacturer has taken a curious advantage of these grooves. Besides marking the handle end by covering it with cross-scorings as has already been described, he has filled the grooves with the red ochre of which the Australian is so fond, and for some eight inches the remains of the red paint are visible in almost every

So delicate is the operation of boomerang making, that some men, natives though they be, cannot turn out a really good weapon, while others are celebrated for their skill, and can dispose of their weapons as fast as they make them. One of the native "kings" was a well-known boomerang maker, and his weapons were widely distributed among the natives, who knew his handiwork as an artist knows the touch of a celebrated painter. To this skill, and the comparative wealth which its exercise brought him, the king in question owed the principal part of his author-

A fair idea of the size and weight of the boomerang may be gained by the measurements of the weapon which has just been mentioned. It is two feet nine inches long To return to the boomerang. The reader inches from tip to tip. It is exactly two inches in width, only narrowing at the tips, facture of so remarkable an involvement. when measured with the curve, and two feet facture of so remarkable an implement is This, by the way, is a war boomerang, and is cious points of a boomescarcely an especially as the weapon the locality ative, when orang, often only on acls which he minute care facture of a

en with the cat it slowly g more and completion. and nearly tekness, he okes without und, looking aking moveow it. The a wonderful eapon, and ngly fastid-

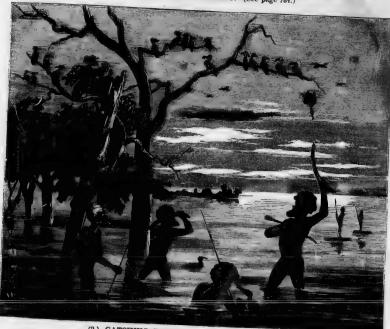
reapon is a cof the flint attempt to boomerang es made by quite policien portion men in my as taken a covering it ty been dees with the n is so fond, remains of most every

boomerang hough they dweapon, their skill, as fast as ze "kings" ker, and his among the as an artist manter. To anter. To ag in quesais author-

ight of the e measurejust been nches long nd two feet exactly two at the tips, en ounces. rang, and is



(1.) SPEARING THE KANGAROO. (See page 784.)



(2.) CATCHING THE CORMORANT, (See page 738.)
(789)

shaped li rangs" men, wh shaped li feet five one inch in width

ally towa In orde various mashield, vand dimen is so unli is so unli adequate that when tion I ofte ing them can by an is so grea collected (which, I shield use them are f tion, severa others are British Mu by Mr. An

As a gen and heavy, more like a knocked do

knocked do
be saved for
ing sharp efficting inju
If the rea
on page 742
hibit two vi
one of the c
and is found
tion of West and is found tion of West a solid piece is in consequence. As may be stion, the for triangular, the weapon is handle being edge on which the best be used by a seal by seal by seal by seal to seal the be used by ar is amply wide cate looking I My own is a sto hold the A
The reader

forming the h with the slig This faculty i the instrumen spear or the c to be just tur them away fr One of thes is a very fine e

shaped like that which is shown in "Boomerangs" on page 731, fig. 3. Another specimen, which is of about the same weight, is shaped like that of fig. 8. It measures two snaped like that of hig. c. It measures two feet five inches along the curve, two feet one inch from tip to tip, and is three inches in width in the middle, diminishing gradu-ally toward the tips.

In order to enable thom to ward off these various missiles, the natives are armed with a shield, which varies exceedingly in shape and dimensions, and, indeed, in some places is so unlike a shield, and apparently so inadequate to the office of protecting the body, that when strangers come to visit my collection I often have much difficulty in persuading them that such strange-looking objects can by any possibility be shields. As there can by any possibility be shields. As there is so great a variety in the shields, I have collected together a number of examples, which, I believe, comprise every form of shield used throughout Australia. Two of them are from specimens in my own collection, several from that of Colonel Lane Fox, others are drawn from examples in the British Museum, and the rest were sketched by Mr. Angas in the course of his travels through Australia.

As a general fact, the shield is very solid and heavy, and in some cases looks much more like a club with which a man can be knocked down, than a shield whereby he can be saved from a blow, several of them hav-ing sharp edges as if for the purpose of inflicting injury.

If the reader will look at the row of shields on page 742, he will see that figs. 2 and 3 exhibit two views of the same shield. This is one of the commonest forms of the weapon, and is found throughout a considerable portion of Western Australia. It is cut out of a solid piece of the ever useful gum-tree, and is in consequence very hard and very heavy. As may be seen by reference to the illustra-tion, the form of the shield is somewhat triangular, the face which forms the front of the weapon being slightly rounded, and the handle being formed by cutting through the edge on which the other two faces converge. The handle is very small, and could scarcely be used by an ordinary European, though it is amply wide enough for the small and deli-cate looking hand of the Australian native. My own is a small hand, but is yet too large to hold the Australian shield comfortably.

The reader will see that by this mode of forming the handle the wrist has great play, and can turn the shield from side to side with the slightest movement of the hand. This faculty is very useful, especially when the instrument is used for warding off the

them away from the body.

One of these shields in my own collection is a very fine example of the instrument, and unscathed.

its dimensions will serve to guide the reader as to the usual form, size, and weight of an Australian shield. It measures exactly two feet seven inches in length, and is five inches wide at the middle, which is the broadest part. The width of the hole which receives the hand is three inches and three-eighths. and the weight of the shield is rather more than three pounds.

The extraordinary weight of the shield is needed in order to enable it to resist the shock of the boomerang, the force of which may be estimated by its weight, eleven ounces, multiplied by the force with which it is hurled. This terrible weapon cannot be merely turned aside, like the spear or the waddy, and often seems to receive an addi-tional impulse from striking any object, as the reader may see by reference to page 737, in which the mode of throwing the boomerang is described. A boomerang must be stopped, and not merely parried, and more-over, if it be not stopped properly, it twists round the shield, and with one of its revolving ends inflicts a wound on the careless warrior.

Even if it be met with the shield and stopped, it is apt to break, and the two halves to converge upon the body. The very fragments of the boomerang seem able to inflict almost as much mury as the entire weapon; and, in one of the skirmishes to which the natives are so addicted, a man was seen to fall to the ground with his body

cut completely open by a broken boomerang. It is in warding off the boomerang, therefore, that the chief skill of the Australian is shown. When he sees the weapon is pursuing a course which will bring it to him, he steps forward so as to meet it; and, as the boomerang clashes against the shield, he gives the latter a rapid turn with the wrist. If this manœuvre be properly executed, the boomerang breaks to pieces, and the frag-ments are struck apart by the movement of the shield.

Perhaps some of my readers may remember that "Dick-a-dick," the very popular member of the Australian cricketers who came to England in 1868, among other exhibition of the control of the hibitions of his quickness of eye and hand, allowed himself to be petted with cricket balls, at a distance of fifteen yards, having nothing wherewith to protect himself but the shield and the leowal, or angular club, the former being used to shield the body, and the latter to guard the legs. The force and accuracy with which a practised cricketer can throw the ball are familiar to all Englishmen, and it was really wonderful to see a man, with no clothes but a skin-tight the instrument is used for warding off the elastic dress, with a piece of wood five inches spear or the club, weapons which need only wide in his left hand, and a club in his them away from the body. of cricket-balls as long as any one liked to throw at him, and come out of the ordeal

Not the least surprising part of the performance was the coolness with which he treated the whole affair, and the almost instinctive knowledge that he seemed to possess respecting the precise destination of each ball. If a ball went straight at his body or head, it was met and blocked by the shield; if it were hurled at his legs, the club knocked it aside. As to those which were sure not to hit him, he treated them with sure not to hit him, he treated them with contemptuous indifference, just moving his head a little on one side to allow the ball to pass, which absolutely ruffled his hair as it shot by, or lifting one arm to allow a ball to pass between the limb and his body, or, if it were aimed but an inch wide of him, taking to patice of it whatever. The shield which no notice of it whatever. The shield which he used with such skill was the same kind as that which has just been described, and was probably selected because its weight enabled it to block the balls without the

hand that held it feeling the shock.

To all appearances, the natives expend much more labor upon the shield than upon the boomerang, the real reason, however, being that much ornament would injure the grooves, and each groove has been filled with red ochre. The space between is filled in with a double zigzag pattern, and the effect of all these lines, simple as they are,

The pattern, by the way, is one that seems common to all savage races of men, wherever they may be found, and is to be seen on weapons made by the ancient races now long passed away, among the Kaffir tribes of South Africa, the cannibal tribes of Central Western Africa, the inhabitants of the various Polynesian islands, the savages of the extreme north and extreme south of America, and the natives of the great continent of Australia.

At fig. 7 of the accompanying illustration may be seen a shield made of solid wood, in which the triangular form has been developed in a very curious manner into a quadrangular shape. The handle is made in the same manner as that of the former shield, i. s. by cutting through two of the faces of the triangle, while the front of the shield, instead of being a tolerably round face, is flattened out into a sharp edge. It is boomerang, but can have no injurious effect scarcely possible to imagine any instrument



SHIELDS.

upon the shield. By reference to the illustration, the reader will see that the face of curious weapon, which seems to have been the shield is covered with ornament, which, simple in principle, is elaborate in détail.

There is a specimen in my collection which is ornamented to a very great extent on its face, the sides and the handle being perfectly plain. It has a number of lines drawn transversely in bands, which, however, are seven instead of five in number. Each band is composed of three zigzag

made for the express purpose of presenting as small a surface as possible to the enemy.

The fact is, however, that the Southern Australian who uses these shields has not to defend himself against arrows, from which a man can only be defended by concealing his body behind shelter which is proof against them: he has only to guard against the spear and boomerang, and occasionally he can that ha

One . two fee than si: inches just tw much m indeed, might b head of shields, same ch been me oughly reddish of the w off some for this k much use at regula In the

is much which ha turer evic the wood made mu by altern handle is two deep the shield being rou

been filled een is filled rn, and the as they are,

that seems men, wherto be seen races now fir tribes of of Central of the variages of the t continent

illustration id wood, in een develnto a quadnade in the ner shield. he faces of the shield. ound face, dge. It is instrument

does this ave been resenting enemy. Southern has not ws, from by con-which is

to guard and occa-

sionally the missile club, all which weapons he can turn aside with the narrow shield that has been described.

One of these shields in my collection is two feet seven inches in length, rather more than six inches in width, and barely three inches thick in the middle. Its weight is just two pounds. Such a weapon seems much more like a club than a shield, and, indeed, if held by one end, its sharp edge might be used with great effect upon the head of an enemy. Like most Australian much more like a club than a shield, and, indeed, if held by one end, its sharp edge might be used with great effect upon the head of an enemy. Like most Australian shields, it is covered with a pattern of the same character as that which has already been mentioned, and it has been so thoroughly painted with ochre that it is of a reddish mahogany color, and the real hue of the wood can only be seen by scraping off some of the stained surface. The name for this kind of shield is tamarang, and it is for this kind of shield is tamarang, and it is much used in dances, in which it is struck at regular intervals with the waddy.

In the British Museum is a shield which is much more solid than either of those which have been described. The manufacturer evidently found the labor of chipping the wood too much for him, and accordingly made much use of fire, forming his shield had huch use of hire, forming his sincid by alternate charring and scraping. The handle is rather curiously made by cutting two deep holes side by side in the back of the shield, the piece of wood between them had been described by the correction of the shield, the piece of wood between them in which curves form the chief element.

made of bark, and going by the title of Mul-abakka. Shields in general are called by the name of Hieleman. Some of these bark shields are of considerable size, and are so snields are of considerable size, and are so wide in the middle that, when the owner crouches behind them, they protect the greater part of his body. As the comparatively thin material of which they are composed prevents the handle from being made by cutting into the shield itself, the native is obliged to make the handle sometic retained. obliged to make the handle separately, and fasten it to the shield by various methods.

The commonest mode of fixing the handle to a Mulabakka shield is seen at figs. 4 and 5, on page 742, which exhibit the front and profile views of the same shield. Another Mulabakka is shown at fig. 6. The faces of

CHAPTER LXXIII.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

REAL WAR UNKNOWN TO THE AUSTRALIANS - FEUDS AND THE CAUSES OF THEM -- A SAVAGE TOURNA-MENT - VENGEANCE FOR DEATH - THE TROPHY OF VICTORY - AUSTRALIAN VENDETTA - FIRE-SIGNALS - DEATH OF TARMEENIA - ORDEAL OF BATTLE - CANNIBALISM AS AN ADJUNCT OF WAR - DANCES OF THE ABORIGINES - THE KURI DANCE AND ITS STRANGE ACCOMPANIMENTS - THE PALTI DANCE - THE CONCLUDING FIGURE - DANCE OF THE PARNKALLA TRIBE - ORDINARY COR-ROBBOREES - THE KANGAROO DANCE - TASMANIAN DANCE.

THE mention of these various weapons naturally leads us to warfare; and that they are intended for that purpose the existence of the shields is a proof. Offensive weapons, such as the spear and the club, may be used merely for killing game; but the shield can only be employed to defend the body from the weapons of an enemy

War, however, as we understand the word, is unknown among the Australians. have not the intellect nor the organization for it, and so we have the curious fact of skilled warriors who never saw a battle. No single tribe is large enough to take one side in a real battle; and, even supposing it to possess sufficient numbers, there is no spirit of discipline by means of which a force could be gathered, kept together, or directed, even if it were assembled.

Yet, though real war is unknown, the Australian natives are continually fighting, and almost every tribe is at feud with its neighbor. The cause of quarrel with them is almost invariably the possession of some territory. By a sort of tacit arrangement, the various tribes have settled themselves in certain districts; and, although they are great wanderers, yet they consider them-selves the rightful owners of their own dis-

It mostly happens, however, that members of one tribe trespass on the district of another, tribe has gone off on a travelling expedition, another tribe will settle themselves in the vacated district; so that, when the rightful owners of the soil return, there is sure to be a quarrel. The matter is usually settled by a skirmish, which bears some resemblance to the mêlée of ancient chivalry, and is conducted according to well-understood regulations

The aggrieved tribe sends a challenge to the offenders, the challenger in question bearing a bunch of emu's feathers tied on the top of a spear. At daybreak next morning the warriors array themselves for battle, painting their bodies in various colors, so as to make themselves look as much like demons, and as much unlike men, as possible, laying aside all clothing, and arranging their various weapons for the fight.

Having placed themselves in battle array, at some little distance from each other, the opposite sides begin to revile each other in quite a Homeric manner, taunting their antagonists with cowardice and want of skill in their weapons, and boasting of the great deeds which they are about to do. When, by means of interposing these taunts with shouts and yells, dancing from one foot to the other, quivering and poising their spears, and other mechanical modes of exciting themselves, they have worked themselves up to the requisite pitch of fury, they begin especially if it be one in which game of any kind is plentiful. And sometimes, when a general. Confused as it appears, it is, how-

ever, arr warrior fight is, i a battle. ous resen the ancie

Genera scattered wide skir. which th are very chief obje antagonis times the apart, and manner w tions of th ing, they movement themselve turn their challenge drop on a

Mr. M'G men never but, even the warrior ing to see avoid a sp wounded t on, the wo bush, watch sort of wai regular cade

Sometime though the man is kille which the d ered as hav thought tha principles w but the Aus warding off nists that the time before remembered. can endure, v worse for the European at however, mu only one ma barbed spear inflict terrible wounded mar

Other cause tory may or tribes. One one. A woma but, as no blo was thought t mous one, an However, the and her death war between be but little

ever, arranged with a sort of order. Each events, but according to Australian ideas warrior selects his antagonist; so that the the feud was a justifiable one. fight is, in fact, a series of duels rather than a battle, and the whole business bears a curious resemblance to the mode of fighting in

the ancient days of Troy.
Generally the combatants stand in rather scattered lines, or, as we should say, in wide skirmishing order. The gestures with which they try to irritate their opponents are very curious, and often grotesque; the chief object being apparently to induce the chier object being apparently to induce the antagonist to throw the first spear. Some-times they stand with their feet very widely apart, and their knees straight, after the manner which will be seen in the illustrations of the native dances. While so standing, they communicate a peculiar quivering movement to the legs, and pretend to offer themselves as fair marks. Sometimes they turn their backs on their adversary, and challenge him to throw at them; or they drop on a hand and knee for the same pur-

Mr. M'Gillivray remarked that two spearmen never throw at the same combatant; but, even with this advantage, the skill of the warrior is amply tested, and it is surprising to see how, by the mere inflection of the body, or the lifting a leg or arm, they avoid a spear which otherwise must have wounded them. While the fight is going on, the women and children remain in the bush, watching the combat, and uttering a sort of wailing chant, rising and falling in

regular cadence.

Sometimes the fight is a very bloody one, though the general rule is, that when one man is killed the battle ceases, the tribe to which the dead man belonged being considered as having been worsted. It might be thought that a battle conducted on such principles would be of very short duration; but the Australian warriors are so skilful in warding off the weapons of their antagonists that they often fight for a considerable time before a man is killed. It must be remembered, too, that the Australian natives can endure, without seeming to be much the worse for them, wounds which would kill an European at once. In such a skirmish, however, much blood is spilt, even though only one man be actually killed, for the barbed spears and sharp-edged boomerangs inflict terrible wounds, and often crippl3 the wounded man for life.

Other causes beside the quarrel for territory may originate a feud between two tribes. One of these cases is a very curious one. A woman had been bitten by a snake; but, as no blood flowed from the wound, it was thought that the snake was not a venomous one, and that there was no danger. However, the woman died in a few hours, and her death was the signal for a desperate war between two tribes. There seems to

The natives of the part of Australia where this event occurred have a curious idea concerning death. Should any one die without apparent cause, they think that the death is caused by a great bird called marralya, which comes secretly to the sick person, seizes him round the waist in his claws, and squeezes him to death. Now the marralya is not a real bird, but a magical one, being always a man belonging to a hostile tribe, who assumes the shape of the bird, and so finds an opportunity of doing an injury to the tribe with which he is at feud. Having made up his mind that the snake which bit the woman was not a venomous one, her husband could not of course be expected to change his opinion, and so it was agreed upon that one of a neighboring tribe with whom they were at feud must have become a marralya, and killed the woman. The usual challenge was the consequence, and from it came a series of bloody fights.

Like most savage nations, the Australians mutilate their fallen enemies. Instead, however, of cutting off the scalp, or other trophy, they open the body, tear out the fat about the kidneys, and rub it over their own bodies. So general is this custom, that to "take fat" is a common paraphrase for killing an enemy; and when two antagonists are opposed to each other, each is sure to boast that his antagonist shall furnish fat for him. As far as can be learned, they have an idea that this practice endues the victor with the courage of the slain man in addition to his own; and, as a reputation for being a warrior of prowess is the only dis-tinction that a native Australian can achieve, it may be imagined that he is exceedingly anxious to secure such an aid to ambition.

Not from deliberate cruelty, but from the utter thoughtlessness and disregard of inflicting pain which characterizes all savages, the victorious warrior does not trouble himself to wait for the death of his enemy before taking his strange war trophy. Should the man be entirely disabled it is enough for the Australian, who turns him on his back, opens his body with the quartz knife which has already been described, tears out the coveted prize, and rubs himself with it until his whole body and limbs shine as if they were burnished Oftentimes it has happened that a wounded man has been thus treated, and has been doomed to see his conqueror adorn himself before his eyes. Putting aside any previous injury, such a wound as this is necessarily mortal; but a man has been known to live for more than three days after receiving the injury, so wonderfully strong is the Australian constitution.

Sometimes these feuds spread very widely, and last for a very long time. Before the be but little connection between the two declaration of war, the opposing tribes

GE TOURNA-TTA -- FIRE-NCT OF WAR ENTS - THE INARY COB-

expedition. ves in the 1e rightful is sure to ally settled semblance nd is conod regulaallenge to

question rs tied on ext mornfor battle. lors, so as like des possible, ging their

ttle array, other, the h othér in their ant of skill the great When, ints with ne foot to eir spears, exciting nemselves hey begin t becomes

t is, how-

refrain from attacking each other, but, after that declaration is once made, the greatest secrecy is often observed, and the warrior is valued the highest who contrives to kill his enemy without exposing himself to danger. Sometimes there is a sort of wild chivalry about the Australians, mingled with much that is savage and revolting. A remarkable instance of these traits is recorded by Mr. M'Gillivray.

An old man had gone on a short expedition in his canoe, while the men of his tribe were engaged in catching turtle. He was watched by a party belonging to a hostile tribe, who followed and speared him. Leaving their spears in the body to indicate their identity, they returned to shore, and made a great fire by way of a challenge. Seeing the signal, and knowing that a column of thick smoke is almost always meant as a challenge, the men left their turtling, and, on finding that the old man was missing, instituted a search after him. As soon as they discovered the body they lighted another fire to signify their acceptance of the challenge, and a party of them started off the same evening in order to inflict reprisals on the enemy.

They soon came upon some natives who belonged to the inimical tribe, but who had not been concerned in the murder, and managed to kill the whole party, consisting of four men, a woman, and a girl. They cut off the heads of their victims, and returned with great exultation, shouting and blowing conch-shells to announce their victory.

The heads were then cooked in an oven, and the eyes scooped out and eaten, together with portions of the cheeks. Only those who had been of the war-party were allowed to partake of this horrible feast. When it was over the victors began a dance, in which they worked themselves into a perfect frenzy, kicking the skulls over the ground, and indulging in all kinds of hide-ous antics. Afterward the skulls were hung up on two cross sticks near the camp, and allowed to remain there undisturbed.

Fire, by the way, is very largely used in making signals, which are understood all over the continent. A large fire, sending up a great column of smoke, is, as has already been mentioned, almost invariably a sign of defiance, and it is sometimes kindled daily until it is answered by another. If a man wishes to denote that he is in want of assistance, he lights a small fire, and, as soon as it sends up its little column of smoke, he extinguishes it suddenly by throwing earth on it. This is repeated until the required assistance arrives.

Some years ago, when the character and habits of the natives were not known so well as they are now, many of the settlers were murdered by the natives, simply through their system of fire-signalling.

women, as causing least suspicion, and being entirely unarmed, would approach the farm or camp, and hang about it for some days, asking for food, and cooking it at their own little fires.

The white men had no idea that every fire that was lighted was a signal that was perfectly well understood by a force of armed men that was hovering about them under cover of the woods, nor that the little puffs of smoke which occasionally arose in the distance were answers to the signals made by their treacherous guests. When the spies thought that, their hosts were lulled into security, they made the battlesignal, and brought down the whole force

upon the unsuspecting whites.

The Australians are wonderfully clever actors. How well they can act honesty and practise theft has already been mentioned. They have also a way of appearing to be unarmed, and yet having weapons ready to hand. They will come out of the bush, with green boughs in their hands as signs of peace, advance for some distance, and ostentatiously throw down their spears and other weapons. They then advance again, apparently unarmed, but each man trailing a spear along the ground by means of his toes. As soon as they are within spear range, they pick up their weapons with their toes, which are nearly as flexible and useful as fingers, hurl them, and then retreat to the spot where they had grounded their weapons.

The Australians have a tenacious memory for injuries, and never lose a chance of reprisal. In 1849, some men belonging to the Badulega tribe had been spending two months on a friendly visit to the natives of Muralug. One of their hosts had married an Itálega woman, and two of the brothers were staying with her. The Badulegas happened to remember that several years before one of their own tribe had been insulted by an Itálega. So they killed the woman, and tried to kill her brothers also, but only succeeded in murdering one of them. They started at once for their home, taking the heads as proof of their victory, and thought that they had done a great ar i

praiseworthy action.

A similar affair took place among some of the tribes of Port Essington. A Monobar native had been captured when thieving, and was imprisoned. He attempted to escape, and in so doing was shot by the sentinel on duty. By rights his family ought to have executed reprisals on a white man; but they did not venture on such a step, and accordingly picked out a native who was on good terms with the white man, and killed him. The friends of the murdered man immediately answered by killing a Mon-obar and so the feud went on. In each obar, and so the feud went on. In each case the victim was murdered while sleep-One or two natives, generally old men or ing, a number of natives quietly surrounding

him, and, with their Should plained de of vengear sions he

male warr adorn him his best w to return u inimical tri stralian wi may be seen Lloyd.

He was

ous barking tern he fou black nam wounds infl and waddie strange brol The gist of son were liv gone out to was ill. Pr i. e. an ener the hut and kill my wif Whereupon man's side, when he was son. The yo certainly mur in the hut, a four miles to down in the y

A hut was house, and attended to. uneasy in his stable might rounds, "cos agin, and di Tarmeenia." seemed rather tion of the hi About three we placed in the h daybreak by a black fellow h Dead he certa the body two fra spear just or a deep cut in " bungilcarney

Occasionally against some n advantage of h mentions a cui ordeal.

"The only ir corporeal punish dently, too, by upon the person who, having fin

nicion, and l approach bout it for cooking it

that every al that was a force of about them at the little ly arose in the signals hosts were the battlewhole force

ully clever onesty and mentioned. ring to be ns ready to bush, with ns of peace, id ostentaand other gain, appa-trailing a of his toes. ear range, with their and useful retreat to nded their

us memory chance of elonging to ending two e natives of ad married ne brothers Badulegas veral years had been killed the others also, ng one of heir home, eir victory, a great ar t

ng some of Monobar thieving, empted to by the senly ought to e man; but step, and vho was on and killed lered man g a Mon-In each hile sleepurrounding

plained death of a man or woman, the duty of vengeance belongs to the most formidable male warrior of the family. On such occasions he will solemnly accept the office, adorn himself with the red war-paint, select his best weapons, and promise publicly not to return until he has killed a male of the inimical tribe. How pertinaciously the Australian will adhere to his bloody purpose may be seen from an anecdote related by Mr.

He was startled one night by the furious barking of his dogs. On taking a lanous parking of his dogs.

tern he found lying on the ground an old black named Tarmeenia, covered with wounds inflicted by spears, and boomerangs, and waddles. He told his story in the strange broken English used by the natives. The gist of the story was, that he and his son were living in a hut, and the son had gone out to snare a bird for his father, who was ill. Presently a "bungilcarney coolie," was in Presently a bunginearing toolog, i. e. an enemy from another tribe, entered the hut and demanded, "Why did your son kill my wife? I shall kill his father." Whereupon he drove his spear into the old whereupon had not beating him to death man's side, and was beating him to death, when he was disturbed by the return of his son. The young man, a singularly powerful native, knowing that his father would be certainly murdered outright if he remained in the hut, actually carried him more than four miles to Mr. Lloyd's house, put him down in the yard, and left him.

A hut was at once erected close to the A flut was at once erected close to the house, and Tarmeenia was installed and attended to. He was very grateful, but was uneasy in his mind, begging that the constable might visit his hut in his nightly rounds, "cos same bungilcarney coolie cum and distinct the much bell limited by the constable might with the hut in his nightly rounds, "cos same bungilcarney coolie cum and distinct the much bell limited by asserted that the Australians are allers have asserted that the Australians are agin, and dis time too much kill 'im Tarmeenia." The alarm of the old man seemed rather absurd, considering the posi-tion of the hut, but it was fully justified. About three weeks after Tarmeenia had been placed in the hut, Mr. Lloyd was aroused at daybreak by a servant, who said that the old black fellow had been burned to death. Dead he certainly was, and on examining the body two fresh wounds were seen, one by a spear just over the heart, and the other a deep cut in the loins, through which the

"bungilcarney" had torn the trophy of war.
Occasionally a man who has offended against some native law has to engage in a kind of a mimic warfare, but without the

"The only instance I ever witnessed of corporeal punishment being inflicted—evidently, too, by some legal process—was upon the person of a fine sleek young black, who, having finished his morning's repast,

him, and, after spearing him, beating him with their waddies into a shapeless mass. can stoicism to the appointed spot, divested of his shield, waddy, or other means of deone word, or move a muscle of his graceful and well-moulded person, but with folded arms and defiant attitude awaited the fatal

"A few minutes only elapsed when two equally agile savages, each armed with two spears and a boomerang, marched with stately gait to within sixty yards of the cul-prit. One weapon after another was hurled at the victim savage, with apparently fatal precision, but his quick eye and wonderful activity set them all at defiance, with the exception of the very last cast of a boomerang, which, taking an unusual course, severed a piece of flesh from the shoulderblade, equal in size to a crown-piece, as if sliced with a razor, and thus finished the

The lex talionis forms part of the Austra-lian traditional law, and is sometimes exercised after a rather ludicrous fashion. A young man had committed some light of-fence, and was severely beaten by two natives, who broke his arm with a club, and laid his head open with a fishing spear. Considerable confusion took place, and at last the elders decided that the punishment was much in excess of the offence, and that, when the wounded man recovered, the two assail-ants were to offer their heads to him, so that he might strike them a certain number of blows with his waddy.

tion of cannibalism, inasmuch as some trav-ellers have asserted that the Australians are cannibals and others denying such a pro-

pensity as strongly.

That the flesh of human beings is eaten by the Australians is an undeniable fact; but it must be remarked that such an act is often intended as a ceremonial, and not merely as a means of allaying hunger or gratifying the palate. It has been ascertained that some tribes who live along the Murray River have been known to kill and eat children, mixing their flesh with that of the dog. This, however, only occurs in seasons of great scarcity; and that the event was exceptional and not customary, is evident from the fact that a man was pointed out as advantage of having weapons. Mr. Lloyd having killed his children for food. Now it mentions a curious example of such an is plain, that, if cannibalism was the custom, such a man would not be sufficiently conspicuous to be specially mentioned. These tribes have a horrible custom of killing little boys for the sake of their fat, with which they bait fish-hooks.

Another example of cannibalism is de-

scribed by Mr. Angas as occurring in New South Wales. A lad had died, and his body was taken by several young men, who proceeded to the following remarkable ceremonies. They began by removing the skin, together with the head, rolling it round a stake, and drying it over the fire. While this was being done, the parents, who had been uttering loud lamentations, took the fiesh from the legs, cooked, and ate it. The remainder of the body was distributed among the friends of the deceased, who carried away their portions on the points of their spears; and the skin and bones were kept by the parents, and always carried about in their wallets.

IT may seem strange that the mention of the weapons and mode of fighting should lead us naturally to the dances of the Australians. Such, however, is the case; for in most of their dances weapons of some sort are introduced. The first which will be mentioned is the Kuri dance, which was described to Mr. Angas by a friend who had frequently seen it, and is illustrated on the next page. This dance is performed by the natives of the Adelaide district. It seems to have one point in common with the cotillon of Europe, namely, that it can be varied, shortened, or lengthened, according to the caprice of the players; so that if a spectator see the Kuri dance performed six or seven times, he will never see the movements repeated in the same order. The following extraot describes a single Kuri dance, and from it the reader may form his impressions of its general character:—

"But first the dramatis persone must be

"But first the dramatis personæ must be introduced, and particularly described. The performers were divided into five distinct classes, the greater body comprising about twenty-five young men, including five or six boys, painted and decorated as follows: in nudity, except the yoodna, which is made expressly for the occasion, with bunches of gum-leaves tied round the legs just above the knee, which, as they stamped about, made a loud switching noise. In their hands they held a katta or wirri, and some a few gum-leaves. The former were held at arm's length, and struck alternately with their legs as they stamped. They were painted, from each shoulder down to the hips, with five or six white stripes, rising from the breast; their faces also, with white perpendicular lines, making the most hide-

ous appearance. These were the dancers.

"Next came two groups of women, about five or six in number, standing on the right and left of the dancers, merely taking the part of supernumeraries; they were not painted, but had leaves in their hands, which they shook, and kept beating time with their feet during the whole performance, but never moved from the spot where

they stood.

"Next followed two remarkable characters, painted and decorated like the dancers, but with the addition of the palyertutta—a singular ornament made of two pieces of stick put crosswise, and bound together by the mangna, in a spreading manner, having at the extremities feathers opened, so as to set it off to the best advantage. One had the palyertutta stick sideways upon his head, while the other, in the most wizard-like manner, kept waving it to and fro before him, corresponding with the action of his head and legs.

"Then followed a performer distinguished by a long spear, from the top of which a bunch of feathers hung suspended, and all down the spear the mangna was wound; he held the koonteroo (spear and feathers) with both hands behind his back, but occasionally altered the position, and waved it to the right and left over the dancers. And last came the singers—two elderly men in their usual habiliments; their musical instruments were the katta and wirri, on which they managed to beat a double note; their song was one unvaried, gabbling tone.

their song was one unvaried, gabbling tone.

"The night was nild; the new moon shone with a faint light, casting a depth of shade over the earth, which gave a sombre appearance to the surrounding scene that highly conduced to enhance the effect of the approaching play. In the distance, a black mass could be discerned under the gum-trees, whence occasionally a shout and a burst of flame arose. These were the performers dressing for the dance, and no one approached them while thus occupied.

"Two men, closely wrapped in their opossum-skins, noiselessly approached one of the wurlies, where the Kurl was to be performed, and commenced clearing a space for the singers; this done, they went back to the singers, but soon after returned, sat down, and began a peculiar harsh and monotonous tune, keeping time with a katta and a wirri by rathling them together. All the natives of the different wurlies flocked round the singers, and sat down in the form of a horse-shoe, two or three rows deep.

rows deep.

"By this time the dancers had moved in a compact body to within a short distance of the spectators; after standing for a few minutes in perfect silence, they answered the singers by a singular deep shout simultaneously: twice this was done, and then the man with the koonteroo stepped out, his body leaning forward, and commenced with a regular stamp; the two men with the palyertattas followed, stamping with great regularity, the rest joining in: the regular and alternate stamp, the waving of the palyertatta to and fro, with the loud switching noise of the gum leaves, formed a scene highly characteristic of the Australian natives. In this style they approached the singers, the spectators every now and then shouting forth

ble charache dancers, ne cancers, ilyertutta—
vo pieces of together by ner, having ad, so as to
One had upon his ost wizard-and fro be-te action of

stinguished of which a led, and all wound; he thers) with it occasionvaved it to cers. And erly men in musical inl wirri, on louble note; bbling tone.

new moon
ng a depth
gave a somding scene e the effect e distance, under the a shout and e were the s occupied. their oposhed one of a to be perng a space went back r returned, harsh and

wo or three id moved in distance of for a few y answered shout simul-e, and then ped out, his nenced with h the palyereat regular-ar and alteralyertatta to ng noise of highly char-es. In this rs, the spec-buting forth

with a katta a together. ent wurlies a sat down



(1.) THE KURI DANCE. (See page 748.)



(2.) PALTI DANCE, OR CORROBOREE. (See page 752.)

(749)

their stampi had an to thei one th way b as these way to odd app

and the plause the sing the danc to the ca tioned, over ag palyerta of leading these par the usua ing one, singers, menoed a applause on one si his back, time with and eye, precision this posi round, sta

"In the mystic pa ments to motions o silent tran well. Th stopped, a ground, st it; two da the same n with wond final stamp spear in a sall the rest to the spea "The pa

same move accompanie head, leg, a round, and thrust in th at the same began to n singers, wit when they I they ceased, or groan (af garoo, as the "During t ing went or

their applause. For some time they kept stamping in a body before the singers, which stamping in a body before the singers, which had an admirable effect, and did great credit to their dancing attainments; then one by one they turned round, and danced their way back to the place they first started from, and sat down. The palyertatta and koonteroo men were the last who left, and these three singular belong stamped their as these three singular beings stamped their way to the other dancers they made a very

odd appearance.

"The singing continued for a short time, and then pipes were lighted; shouts of applause ensued, and boisterous conversation followed. After resting about ten minutes, the singers commenced again; and soon after the dancers huddled together, and responded to the call by the peculiar shout already mentioned, and then performed the same feat over again — with this variation, that the palyertatta men brought up the rear, instead of leading the way. Four separate times these parts of the play were performed with the usual effect; then followed the concluding one, as follows: after tramping up to the singers, the man with the koonteroo commenced a part which called forth unbounded applause; with his head and body inclined on one side, his spear and feathers behind his back, standing on the left leg, he beat time with the right foot, twitching his body and eye, and stamping with the greatest precision; he remained a few minutes in this position, and then suddenly turned round, stood on his right leg, and did the same once with his left foot,

"In the mean while the two men with the mystic palyertatta kept waving their instruments to and fro, corresponding with the motions of their heads and legs, and the silent trampers performed their part equally well. The koonteroo man now suddenly well. The koonteroo man now studenty stopped, and, planting his spear in the ground, stood in a stooping position behind it; two dancers stepped up, went through the same manœuvre as the preceding party with wonderful regularity, and then gave a final stamp, turned round, and grasped the spear in a stooping position, and so on with all the rest, until every dancer was brought to the spear, so forming a circular body

"The palyertatta men now performed the same movement on each side of this body, accompanied with the perpetual motion of the head, leg, and arm, and then went round and round, and finally gave the arrival stamp, thrust in their arm, and grasped the spear: at the same time all sunk on their knees and began to move away in a mass from the singers, with a sort of grunting noise, while their bodies leaned and tossed to and fro; when they had got about ten or twelve yards they ceased, and, giving one long semi-grunt or groan (after the manner of the red kangaroo, as they say), dispersed.

after the last act of the performers, the rattling accompaniment of the singing ceased, the strain died gradually away, and shouts and acclamations rent the air."

There are many other dances among the Australians. There is, for example, the Frog-dance. The performers paint themselves after the usual grotesque manner, take their wirris in their hands, beat them together, and then squat down and jump after each other in circles, imitating the move-ments of the frog. Then there is the emu-dance, in which all the gestures consist of imitation of emu-hunting, the man who enacts the part of the bird imitating its voice.

In some parts of Australia they have the canoe dance, one of the most graceful of these performances.

Both men and women take part in this dance, painting their bodies with white and red ochre, and each furnished with a stick which represents the paddle. They begin to dance by stationing themselves in two lines, but with the stick across their backs and held by the arms, while they move their feet alternately to the tune of the song with which the dance is accompanied. At a given signal they all bring the sticks to the front, and hold them as they do paddles, swaying themselves in regular time as if they were paddling in one of their light

Another dance, the object of which is not very certain, is a great favorite with the Moorundi natives. The men, having previously decorated their bodies with stripes of red ochre, stand in a line, while the women are collected in a group and beat time together. The dance consists in stamping simultaneously with the left foot, and shaking the fingers of the extended arms, This dance is called Pedeku.

There is a rather curious dance, or movement, with which they often conclude the performance of the evening. They sit cross legged round their fire, beating time with their spears and wirris. Suddenly they all stretch out their arms as if pointing to some distant object, rolling their eyes fearfull, as they do so, and finish by leaping on their feet with a simultaneous yell that echoes for

miles through the forest.

In his splendid work on South Australia, Mr. Angas describes a rather curious dance performed by the Parnkalla tribe, in which both sexes take part. Each man carries a belt made either of human hair or opossum fur, holding one end in each hand, and keeping the belt tightly strained. There is a slight variation in the mode of performing this dance, but the usual plan is for all the men to sit down, while a woman takes her place in the middle. One of the men then dances up to her, jumping from side to side, "During the whole performance, the sing-movements. The woman begins jumping as ing went on in one continued strain, and, her partner approaches, and then they dance and swaying his arms in harmony with his movements. The woman begins jumping as

back again, when their place is taken by a fresh couple.

Some persons have supposed that this dance is a religious ceremony, because it is usually held on clear moonlight evenings. Sometimes, however, it is performed during the day-time.

The commonest native dance, or "corrobboree," is that which is known as the Palti, and which is represented on the 749th page. It is always danced by night, the fitful blaze of the fire being thought necessary to bring

out all its beauties.

Before beginning this dance, the performers prepare themselves by decorating their bodies in some grotesque style with white and scarlet paints, which contrast boldly with the shining black of their skins. The favor-ite pattern is the skeleton, each rib being marked by a broad stripe of white paint, and a similar stripe running down the breast and along the legs and arms. The face is painted in a similar fashion. The effect produced by this strange pattern is a most startling one. Illuminated only by the light of the fire, the black bodies and limbs are scarcely visible against the dark background, so that, as the performers pass backward and forward in the movements of the dance, they look exactly like a number of skeletons endued with life by magic powers.

This effect is increased by the curious quivering of the legs, which are planted firmly on the ground, but to which the dancers are able to impart a rapid vibratory movement from the knees upward. The wirris, or clubs, are held in the hands, as seen in the illustration, and at certain intervals they are brought over the head, and clashed violently together. The Palti, as well as the Kuri dance is conducted by a leader, who gives the word of command for the different movefront teeth of the kangaroo, and tying it

round their foreheads.

Once in a year, the natives of some districts have a very grand dance, called the "cobbongo corrobboree," or great mystery dance. This dance is performed by the natives of the far interior. An admirable account of this dance was published in the Illustrated London News of October 3, 1863, and is here given. "The time selected for this great event is every twelfth moon, and during her declination. For several days previous a number of tribes whose territories adjoin one another congregate at a particular spot, characterized by an immense mound of earth covered with ashes (known amongst the white inhabitants as 'a black's oven') and surrounded by plenty of 'couraway' or water holes. To this place they bring numbers of kangaroos, 'possums, emus, and wild ducks, and a large quantity of wild honey, together with the grass from the seeds of which they make a sort of bread.

"Upon the evening on which the 'corrobboree' is celebrated, a number of old men (one from each tribe), called by the natives 'wammaroogo,' signifying medicine men or charm men, repair to the top of the mound, where, after lighting a fire, they walk round it, muttering sentences and throwing into it portions of old charms which they have worn round their necks for the past twelve months. This is continued for about half an hour, when they descend, each carrying a fire-stick, which he places at the outskirts of the camp, and which is supposed to prevent evil spirits approaching. As soon as this is over, during which a most profound silence is observed by all, the men of the tribe prepare their toilet for the 'corrobboree,' daubing themselves over with chalk, red ochre, and

"While the men are thus engaged, the gentler sex are busy arranging themselves in a long line, and in a sitting posture, with rugs made of 'possum skins doubled round their legs, and a small stick called 'nullanullà ' in each hand. A fire is lighted in front of them, and tended by one of the old charmers. As the men are ready, they seat themselves cross-legged like tailors, and in regular 'serried file,' at the opposite side of the fire to the women, while one of the medicine men takes up his position on the top of the mound to watch the rising of the moon, which is the signal for 'corrobboree.' All is now still; nothing disturbs the silence save the occasional jabber of a woman or child. and even that, after a few minutes, is hushed. The blaze of the fire throws a fitful light along the battalion-like front of the black phalanx, and the hideous faces, daubed with paint and smeared with grease, show out at such a moment to anything but advantage.

ments. Some of the dancers increase their day and appearance by making a fillet from the been 'taking the lunar' announces the advent of that planet, which seems to exercise as great an influence over the actions of these people as over many of those amongst ourselves, the 'corrobboree' commences. The women beat the little sticks together, keeping time to a peculiar monotonous air, and repeating the words, the burden of which when translated may be-

'The kangaroo is swift, but swifter is Ngoyullo-

man;
The snake is cunning, but more cunning is Ngoyulloman, &c.,

each woman using the name of her husband or favorite in the tribe. The men spring to their feet with a yell that rings through the forest, and, brandishing their spears, boomerangs, &c., commence their dance, Linging themselves into all sorts of attitudes, howling, laughing, grinning, and singing; and this they continue till sheer exhaustion compels them to desist, after which they roast and eat the product of the chase, gathered for the one by The 1 " corrol culiar n the var

describe A da used to the occa by Mr. (sembled the won a space adorn th bunches wrists, a

The w this space strode fo performe challengi charge. response. through daring ir pause he his praise chant, wl porized d skins. Sudden

movemen forty grin through t arena, lo a special thoroughl ing in imi through tl These we: lovely gin beldame s themselves state unad into the w and bodies first-class ever, with was to scre

This dan toms, has rigines, fr Tasmanian There is b three rema which som tween six should hav influence of the fact tha extent, and to the abor are small in five feet thr very ill-fav from the no

the 'corer of old d by the medicine

op of the

fire, they

nces and

l charms

eir necks

s is con-

hen thev

k, which

amp, and

il spirita

over, du-

ice is obprepare daubing

chre, and

aged, the iemselves

ture, with

led round

ed 'nullà-

ighted in

of the old

they seat

rs, and in

te side of

the medi-

the top of

the moon, e.' All is

ence save

or child.

is hushed.

itful light

the black

ubed with

ow out ai

who has

es the ad-

o exercise

actions of

e amongst

mmences. together. onous air

burden of

s Ngoyullo-

cunning is

r husband

spring to

rough the

rs, boome-

e, dinging

ides, howl-

ging; and

stion com-

they roast

, gathered

vantage.

culiar movements which are to be found in the various dances that have already been described.

A dance of somewhat similar character used to be celebrated by the Tasmanians at the occasion of each full moon, as is described by Mr. G. T. Lloyd. The various tribes assembled at some trysting-place; and while the women prepared the fire, and fenced off a space for the dance, the men retired to adorn themselves with paint, and to fasten bunches of bushy twigs to their ankles, wrists, and waists.

The women being seated at the end of this space, one of the oldest among them strode forward, calling by name one of the performers, reviling him as a coward, and challenging him to appear and answer her charge. The warrior was not long in his response, and, bounding into the circle through the fire, he proclaimed his deeds of daring in war and in the hunt. At every pause he made, his female admirers took up his praises, vaunting his actions in a sort of chant, which they accompanied by extemporized drums formed of rolled kangaroo

Suddenly, upon some inspiring allegretto movement of the thumping band, thirty or forty grim savages would bound successively through the furious flames into the sacred arena, looking like veritable demons on a special visit to terra firma, and, after thoroughly exhausting themselves by leaping in imitation of the kangaroo around and through the fire, they vanished in an instant. These were as rapidly succeeded by their lovely gins, who, at a given signal from the beldame speaker, rose en masse, and ranging themselves round the fresh-plied flames in a state unadorned and genuine as imported into the world, contorted their arms, legs, and bodies into attitudes that would shame first-class acrobats. The grand point, how-ever, with each of the well-greased beauties was to scream down her sable sister.

This dance, as well as other native customs, has departed, together with the aborigines, from the island, and the native Tasmanians are now practically extinct. There is before me a photograph of the three remaining survivors of these tribes, which some sixty years ago numbered between six and seven thousand. That they should have so rapidly perished under the influence of the white man is explained from the fact that their island is but limited in extent, and that they are altogether inferior to the aborigines of the continent. They are small in stature, the men averaging only five feet three inches in height, and they are very ill-favored in countenance, the line

for the occasion, and then drop off to sleep one by one."

The reader will see that this great mystery

The hair is cut very closely. This is done by means of two sharp-edged fragments of flint, broken glass being preferred since Europeans settled in the country. Cutting the hair is necessarily a tedious ceremony, only ten or twelve hairs being severed at a time, and upwards of three hours being consumed in trimming a head fit for a dance. Shaving is conducted after the same man-

The general habits of the Tasmanian natives agree with those of the continent. The mode of climbing trees, however, is a curious mixture of the Australian and Polynesian When the native discovers the marks of an opossum on the bark, he plucks. a quantity of wire grass, and rapidly lays it up in a three-stranded plait, with which he encircles the tree and his own waist. By means of a single chop of the tomahawk he makes a slight notch in the bark, into which he puts his great toe, raises himself by it, and simultaneously jerks the grass band up the trunk of the tree. Notch after notch is thus made, and the native ascends with incredible rapidity, the notches never being less than three feet six inches apart.

Often, the opossum, alarmed at the sound of the tomahawk, leaves its nest, and runs along some bare bough, projecting horizon-tally from eighty to a hundred feet above the ground. The native walks along the bough upright and firm as if the tree were his native place, and shakes the animal into the midst of his companions who are assembled under the tree.

The natives never, in their wild state, wear clothes of any kind. They manufacture cloaks of opossum and kangaroo skins, but only in defence against cold. They are wonderful hunters, and have been successfully employed by the colonists in tracing sheep that had strayed, or the footsteps of the thief who had stolen them. The slightest scratch who had stolen them. The singuistic who tell its tale to these quick-eyed people, who know at once the very time at which the impression was made, and, having once impression was made, and, having once and are seen it, start off at a quick pace, and are certain to overtake the fugitive.

The untimely end of the aboriginal Tasmanians is greatly to be attributed to the conduct of a well-known chief, called Mosquito. He was a native of Sydney, and, having been convicted of several murders, was, by a mistaken act of lenity, transported to Tasmania, when he made acquaintance with the Oyster Bay tribe. Being much taller and stronger than the natives, he was unanimously elected chief, and took the command. His reign was most disastrous for the Tasmanians. He ruled them with a rod of iron, punishing the slightest disobedience with a blow of his tomahawk, not caring in the least whether the culprit were killed or not. He from the nose to the corners of the mouth organized a series of depredations on the

property of the colonists, and was peculiarly | and the Government even appointed a rescelebrated for his skill in stealing potatoes, teaching his followers to abstract them from the ridges, and to rearrange the ground so as to look as if it had never been disturbed, and to obliterate all traces of their footmarks with boughs.

Under the influence of such a leader, the natives became murderers as well as thieves. so that the lives of the colonists were always in peril. It was therefore necessary to take some decided measures with them; and after sundry unsuccessful expeditions, the natives at last submitted themselves, and the whole of them, numbering then (1837) scarcely more than three hundred, were removed to Flinder's Island, where a number of comfortable stone cottages were built for them, infinitely superior to the rude bough huts or miam-miams of their own construction. They were liberally supplied with food, clothing, and other necessaries, as well as luxuries, on the ruins of the old.

ident surgeon to attend them when ill. All this care was, however, useless. Contact with civilization produced its usual fruits, and in 1861 the native Tasmanians were only thirteen in number. Ten have since died, and it is not likely that the three who sur-

vived in 1867 will perpetuate their race.

That the singularly rapid decadence of the Tasmanians was partly caused by the conduct of the shepherds, and other rough and uneducated men in the service of the colonists, cannot be denied. But the white offenders were comparatively few, and quite unable themselves to effect such a change in so short a time. For the real cause we must look to the strange but unvariable laws of progression. Whenever a higher race occupies the same grounds as a lower, the latter perishes, and, whether in animate or inanimate nature, the new world is always built

> MARRIAGE --A BRU

> > TREATS DEAD C

WE will no the native A of existence

begin with a Betrothal the girl bei when she is being perha wives and a the girl is price varyin husband. A now exceedi knife, a glass considered a

Exchange young man spare will lo daughter unl cable exchan possesses sist sure of a corr if he had the Until her

wife, the betr and during t with the stric cised toward the contrary, as many love a conventior served, and l her, makes n however, the lover were to ted a res ill. All Contact al fruits, vere only nce died, who surce of the the con-

race. ough and the colowhite ofind quite hange in we must laws of ace occuhe latter or inaniays built

CHAPTER LXXIV.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

DOMESTIC LIFE.

MARRIAGE - PURCHASE AND EXCHANGE OF WIVES - A ROUGH WOOING - TREATMENT OF THE WIVES -A BRUTAL HUSBAND - NARROW ESCAPE - A FAITHFUL COMPANION - AUSTRALIAN MOTHERS -TREATMENT OF THE NEW-BORN INFANT - PRACTICE OF INFANTICIDE - THE MOTHER AND HER DEAD CHILD.

WE will now proceed to the domestic life of acquaintance, the husband would avenge the native Australian, if, indeed, their mode of existence deserves such a name, and will

begin with marriage customs.

Betrothal takes place at a very early age, the girl being often promised in marriage when she is a mere child, her future husband being perhaps an old man with two or three being perhaps an old man state. Of course wives and a number of children. Of course the girl is purchased from her father, the price varying according to the means of the husband. Articles of European make are husband. now exceedingly valued; and as a rule, a knife, a glass bottle, or some such article, is considered as a fair price for a wife.

Exchange is often practised, so that a young man who happens to have a sister to spare will look out for some man who has a daughter unbetrothed, and will effect an amicable exchange with him, so that a man who possesses sisters by his father's death is as sure of a corresponding number of wives as

if he had the means wherewith to buy them. Until her intended husband takes her to wife, the betrothed girl lives with her parents, and during this interval she is not watched with the strictness which is generally exercised toward betrothed girls of savages. On the contrary, she is tacitly allowed to have as many lovers as she chooses, provided that a conventional amount of secrecy be observed, and her husband, when he marries her, makes no complaint. After marriage,

himself by visiting both parties with the severest punishment. There is no ceremony about marriage, the girl being simply taken to the hut of her husband, and thenceforth

considered as his wife.

In some parts of Australia, when a young man takes a fancy to a girl he obtains her after a rather curious fashion, which seems a very odd mode of showing affection. Watching his opportunity when the girl has strayed apart from her friends, he stuns her with a blow on the head from his waddy, carries her off, and so makes her his wife. The father of the girl is naturally offended at the loss of his daughter, and complains to the elders. The result is almost invariably that the gallant offender is sentenced to stand the ordeal of spear and boomerang. Furnished with only his narrow shield, he stands still, while the aggrieved father and other relatives hurl a certain number of spears and boomerangs at him. It is very seldom that he allows himself to be touched, but, when the stipulated number of throws has been made, he is considered as having expiated

his offence, whether he be hit or not.

Polygamy is of course practised, but to no very great extent. Still, although a man may never have more than two or three wives at a time, he has often married served, and her husband, when he marries her, makes no complaint. After marriage, them, when they are too old to please his however, the case is altered, and, if a former taste, or perhaps killing them in a fit of lover were to attempt a continuance of the

getting rid of a wife, and no one seems to | dark recesses of the forest, they disclosed think that her husband has acted cruelly. Indeed, the genuine native would not be able to comprehend the possibility of being cruel to his wife, inasmuch as he recognizes in her no right to kind treatment. She is as much his chattel as his spear or hut, and he would no more think himself cruel in beating his wife to death than in breaking the one or burning the other.

Since white men came to settle in the country the natives have learned to consider them as beings of another sphere, very powerful, but unfortunately possessed with some unaccountable prejudices. Finding, therefore, that breaking a wife's limb with a club, piercing her with a spear, or any other mode of expressing dissatisfaction, shocked the prejudices of the white men, they ceased to mention such practices, though they did

not discontinue them.

Quite recently, a native servant was late in keeping his appointment with his master, and, on inquiry, it was elicited that he had just quarrelled with one of his wives, and had speared her through the body. On being rebuked by his master he turned off the matter with a laugh, merely remarking that white men had only one wife, whereas he had two, and did not mind losing one

until he could buy another.

Considering and treating the women as mere articles of property, the men naturally repose no confidence in them, and never repose no confidence in them, and with condescend to make them acquainted with their plans. If they intend to make an attack upon another tribe, or to organize an expedition for robbery, they carefully conceal it from the weaker sex, thinking that such inferior animals cannot keep secrets, and might betray them to the objects

of the intended attack.

The utter contempt which is felt by the native Australians for their women is well illustrated by an adventure which occurred after a dance which had been got up for the benefit of the white men, on the understanding that a certain amount of biscuit should be given to the dancers. When the performance was over, the biscuit was injudiciously handed to a woman for distribuplace. The men, although they would not hesitate to take away the biscuit by force, would not condescend to ask a woman for it, and therefore considered that the promised payment had not been made to them. Some of them, after muttering their discontent, slipped away for their spears and throw ing-sticks, and the whole place was in a turmoil.

Fortunately, in order to amuse the natives, the white visitors, who had never thought of the offence that they had given, sent up a few rockets, which frightened the

numbers of armed men among the trees, some alone and others in groups, but all evidently watching the movements of the visitors whose conduct had so deeply insulted them. A friendly native saw their danger at once, and hurried them off to their boats, saying that spears would soon

be thrown.

There was much excuse to be found for them. They had been subjected to one of the grossest insults that warriors could receive. To them, women were little better than dogs, and, if there were any food, the warriors first satisfied their own hunger, and then threw to the women any frag-ments that might be left. Therefore, that a woman - a mere household chattel - should be deputed to distribute food to warriors was a gross, intolerable, and, as they naturally thought, intentional insult. It was equivalent to degrading them from their rank as men and warriors, and making them even of less account than women. No wonder, then, that their anger was roused, and the only matter of surprise is that an attack was not immediately made. Australian warriors have their own ideas of chivalry, and, like the knights of old, feel themselves bound to resent the smallest

aspersion cast upon their honor.
Mr. M'Gillivray, who narrates this anecdote makes a few remarks which are most valuable, as showing the errors which are too often committed when dealing with savages, not only those of Australia, but of

other countries.

"I have alluded to this occurrence, trivial as it may appear, not without an object. It serves as an illustration of the policy of respecting the known customs of the Australian race, even in apparently trifling matters, at least during the early period of intercourse with a tribe, and shows how a little want of judgment in the director of our party caused the most friendly intentions to be a superior of the state of the sta tions to be misunderstood, and might have led to fatal results.

"I must confess that I should have considered any injury sustained on our side to have been most richly merited. Moreover, I am convinced that some at least of the collisions which have taken place in Australia between the first European visitors and the natives of any given district have originated in causes of offence brought on by the indiscretion of one or more of the party, and revenged on others who were

innocent."

Mr. McGillivray then proceeds to mention the well-known case of the night attack on Mr. Leichhardt's expedition. For no apparent reason, a violent assault was made on the camp, and Mr. Gilbert was killed. The reason of this attack did not transpire people for a time, and then burned a blue until long afterward, when a native atlight. As the brilliant rays pierced the tached to the expedition divulged, in a state of int a fellow-cou native wom

Yet, in sp women ofte feeling which brutal savag markable in tioned by 1 an attachme became a bi her industry always prece The chief

flans are the and the water police. Her. ply him with concealed, sh and then to c quickness of detect the ar the instinctiv blacks are gir pursuers off t worthy of the on him, and u but, undeterr flagged in he and on one oc engaged in illupon his plac captured him, them, and sen place where I ventured out dental absenc hanged. But creature neve when he was low him, but w

a mother she times alone, bu a female friend constitution of mains in her r or so. Among ceremony atten rather curious, by Mr. Lloyd: the Australian to describe the of the indigenou

When a nati

"The unhapp retired with her secluded dell, ab A fire was kindle miam speedily c slender repast, c kangaroo or otl sparing hand by tive), grilled, an of green opiate co roots of the bulb "The sable at y disclosed the trees, ps, but all nts of the deeply insaw their nem off to vould soon

found for to one of could rettle better y food, the n hunger, any frag-fore, that a l - should o warriors they natut. It was from their d making n women. anger was surprise is tely made. n ideas of

this anec-1 are most which are with sav-ia, but of

f old, feel e smallest

nce, trivial object. It policy of the Auifling matperiod of hows how director of dly intenight have

have conur side to Moreover, ast of the e in Aun visitors trict have rought on ore of the who were

o mention attack on or no apwas made as killed. transpire ative atged, in a state of intoxication, the fact that he and her interesting duties. One of the first was, a fellow-countryman had grossly insulted a native woman.

Yet, in spite of this brutal treatment, the women often show a depth of affectionate feeling which raises them far above the brutal savages that enslave them. One remarkable instance of this feeling is mentioned by Mr. Bennett. She had formed an attachment to an escaped convict, who became a bushranger, and enabled him, by her industry and courage, to prolong the always precarious life of a bushranger beyoud the ordinary limits.

The chief dangers that beset these rufflans are the necessity for procuring food, and the watch which is always kept by the police. Her native skill enabled her to supply him with food, and, while he was lying concealed, she used to fish, hunt, dig roots, and then to cook them for him. Her native quickness of eye and ear enabled her to detect the approach of the police, and, by the instinctive cunning with which these blacks are gifted, she repeatedly threw the pursuers off the scent. He was utterly unworthy of the affection which she bestowed on him, and used to beat her unmercifully, but, undeterred by his cruelty, she never flagged in her exertions for his welfare; and on one occasion, while he was actually engaged in ill-treating her, the police came upon his place of refuge, and must have captured him, had she not again misled them, and sent them to a spot far from the place where he was hidden. At last, he ventured out too boldly, during her accidental absence, was captured, tried and hanged. But up to the last this faithful creature never deserted him, and, even when he was imprisoned, she tried to follow him, but was reclaimed by her tribe.

When a native woman is about to become a mother she retires into the bush, somea mother site features into the busin, some times alone, but generally accompanied by a female friend, and, owing to the strong constitution of these women, seldom re-mains in her retirement more than a day or so. Among the natives of Victoria, the ceremony attending the birth of a child is rather curious, and is amusingly described by Mr. Lloyd: "While upon the subject of the Australian about the property of the Australian about the subject of the subject o the Australian aborigines, I must not omit to describe the very original modus operandi

of the indigenous sage femme.
"The unhappy loobra (native woman) retired with her wise woman into some lone secluded dell, abounding with light sea-sand. A fire was kindled, and the wretched miammiam speedily constructed. Then came the slender repast, comprising a spare morsel of kangaroo or other meat, supplied with a sparing hand by her stoical coolie (male native), grilled, and graced with the tendrils of green opiate cow-thistles, or the succulent roots of the bulbous leaf 'mernong.'

"The sable attendant soon entered upon

to light a second fire over a quantity of prepared sand, that had been carefully divested of all fibrous roots, pebbles, or coarser matter. The burning coals and faggots were removed from thence, upon some nice calculation as to the period of the unfortunate little nigger's arrival. When the miniature representative of his sable father beheld the light of day, a hole was scratched in the heated sand, and the wee russet-brown thing safely deposited therein, in a state of perfect nudity, and buried to the very chin, so effectually covered up as to render any objectionable movement on his or her part utterly impossible.

"So far as any infantine ebullitions of feeling are concerned, the learned sages femmes appeared to have a thorough knowledge as to the world-wide method of treating the mewling and puking importunities of unreasoning nurslings. They knew well that a two-hours' sojourn in the desert sand, warm as it might be, would do much to cool the new comer, and temper it into compli-ance. At the expiration of that time, having acquired so much knowledge of earthly troubles, the well-baked juvenile was considered to be thoroughly done, and thereupon introduced to his delighted loobra

mamma."

Following the custom of many savage nations, the Australians too often destroy their children in their first infancy. Among the Muralug tribes the practice is very common. It has already been mentioned that the girls live very unrestrainedly before marriage and the result is, that a young woman will sometimes have several children before her marriage. As a general rule, these children are at once killed, unless the father be desirous of preserving them. This, however, is seldom the case, and he usually gives the order "Marana teio," i. e. Throw it into the hole, when the poor little thing is at once buried alive. Even those children which are born after marriage are not always preserved. In the first place, a woman will scarcely ever take charge of more than three children, and many a female child is destroyed where a male would be allowed to

All children who have any bodily defect are sure to be killed, and, as a general rule, half-caste children are seldom allowed to live. The mothers are usually ashamed to acknowledge these murders, but in one case the unnatural parent openly avowed the deed, saying that the infant was like a waragul, i. e. the native dog or dingo. The fact was that its father was a sailor who had flery red hair, and his offspring partook of the same rufous complexion. Of course there are excep-tions to the rule, one of which may be found in the case of the poor woman who was so faithful to her convict mate. She had a male child, which was brought up by

the tribe to which she belonged, and they were so fond of him that they refused to give him up when some benevolent persons tried to obtain possession of him in order to

educate him in civilization,

If, however, the child is allowed to live, the Australian mother is a very affectionate one, tending her offspring with the greatest care, and in her own wild way being as loving a parent as can be found in any part of the world. The engraving No. 2, on the next page, illustrates this devotion of Australian mothers to their children.

In nothing is this affection better shown than in the case of a child's death. Although she might have consigned it when an infant to a living grave without a pang of remorse, yet, when it dies after having been nurtured by her, she exhibits a steady sorrow that exhibits the depth of affection with which she regarded the child. When it dies, she swathes the body in many wrappers, places it in her net-bul, or native wallet,

and carries it about with her as if it were alive. She never parts with it for a moment. When she cats she offers food to the dead corpse, as if it were still alive, and when she lies down to sleep, she lays her head upon the wallet, which serves her as a pillow. The progress of decay has no effect upon her, and though the body becomes so offensive that no one can come near her, she seems unconscious of it, and never dreams of abandoning the dreadful burden. In process of time nothing is left but the mere bones, but even those are tended in the same loving manner, and even after the lapse of years the mother has been known to bonr, in addition to her other burdens, the remains of her dead child. Even when the child has been from six to seven years old she will treat it in the same manner, and, with this burden on her back, will continue to discharge her heavy domestic duties.

as if it wore
it for a mos food to the
il alive, and
she lays her
yes her as a
has no effect
r becomes so
ne near her,
and never
dful burden,
left but the
re tended in
ren after the
been known
other burshild. Even
six to soven
or same manor back, will
vy domostic



(L) AN AUSTRALIAN FEAST. (See page 763.)



(2.) AUSTRALIAN MOTHERS, (See page 758.)

AUSTRALIAN CHI HUNTER -OUT THE T THE FINAL AND ITS DE HEAD-NET gi'om — ma AUSTRALIAN of children, and as ion of their medittle creatures. pretty, partly ov rather ignorance partly on accountly on accountly are fed. The sess the half-weight as the half-weight accident, the by accident, the by accident, the lors in unkemp and their stomathose of the your lin process of characteristics. But of their eyes clous glance of the become quantifications for pecome candidate in the lore of the lor

CHAPTER LXXV.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

FROM CHILDHOOD TO MANHOOD.

AUSTRALIAN CHILDREN — CEREMONIES ATTENDANT ON BECOMING MEN — ADMISSION TO THE RANK OF HUNTER-CEREMONY OF THE KANGAROO-THE KORADJEES AND THEIR DUTIES-KNOCKING OUT THE TOOTH-TRIAL BY ENDURANCE-TEST OF DETERMINATION-THE MAGIC CRYSTAL-THE FINAL FEAST - INITIATION AMONG THE MOORUNDI AND PARNKALLA TRIBE - THE WITARNA, AND ITS DREADED SOUND—THE WHISPERERS—TAKING THE SECOND DEGREE—THE APRON AND HEAD-NET - THE THIRD AND LAST CEREMONY - ENDURANCE OF PAIN - A NAUO MAN - STORY OF

AUSTRALIAN children, while they remain agree in one point, namely, — in causing children, and as such are under the dominion of their mothers, are rather engaging little creatures. They cannot be called pretty, partly owing to the total neglect, or rather ignorance, of personal cleanliness, and partly on account of the diet with which they are fed. Their eyes are soft, and possess the half-wistful, half-wild expression that so peculiarly distinguishes the young savage. But they are never washed except by accident, heir profuse black hair wan-lers in unkempt masses over their heads, and their stomachs protrude exactly like those of the young African savage.

In process of time they lose all these characteristics. The wistful expression dies out of their eyes, while the restless, suspi-cious glance of the savage takes its place. They become quarrelsome, headstrong, and asubordinate, and, after exhibiting these qualifications for a higher rank in life, they become candidates for admission into the ights and privileges of manhood. Among ivilized nations, attaining legal majority is simple process enough, merely consisting if waiting until the candidate is old enough; ut with many savage nations, and specially vith the Australians, the process of becomng men is a long, intricate, and singularly ainful series of ceremonies.

These rites vary according to the locality

to the utmost their endurance of pain. As many of these rites are almost identical in different tribes, I shall not repeat any of them, but only mention those points in which the ceremonies differ from each

One of these customs, which seems to belong to almost every variety of savage life, namely, the loss of certain teeth, flourishes among the Australians. The mode of extracting the teeth is simple enough. The men who conduct the ceremony pretend to be very ill, swoon, and writhe on the ground, and are treated after the usual method of healing the sick, i. e. their friends make a great howling and shouting, dance round them, and hit them on the back, until each

sick man produces a piece of sharp bone.

This ceremony being intended to give the initiates power over the various animals, a series of appropriate ceremonies are performed. On the morning after the sharp bones have been mysteriously produced, the Koradjees, or operators, dress themselves up with bits of fur and other decorations, which are conventionally accepted as representing the dingo, or native dog. The wooden sword, which is thrust into a belt, sticks up over the back, and takes the place n which they are celebrated, but they all on the ground, while the koradjees run

round and round them on all fours, thus strokes, the whole party poising their spears representing dogs, and giving the lads to understand that the succeeding ceremony will give them power over dogs. In token of this power, each time that they pass the removal of the tooth. The initiates are boys they throw sand and dust over them.

Here it must be remarked that the Australian natives are great dog-fanciers, the dog being to them what the pig is to the Sandwich Islanders. There is scarcely a lad who does not possess at least one dog, and many have several, of which they take charge from earliest puppyhood, and which charge from carness pappy and a company their masters wherever they go. Besides their value as companions, these dogs are useful for another reason. They dogs are useful for another reason. are a safeguard against famine; for when a man is in danger of starving, he is sure to rescue himself by killing and cooking his faithful dog. The animal has never cost him any trouble. It forages for itself as it best can, and always adheres to its owner, and is always at hand when wanted. The object, therefore, of the first part of the ceremony is to intimate to the lads that they are not only to have dominion over the dogs, but that they ought to possess its excellent qualities.

The next part of the ceremony is intended

to give them power over the kangaroos.

Accordingly, a stout native new appears on the scene, bearing on his shoulders the on the scene, cearing on his shounders one rude effigy of a kangaroo, made of grass; and after him walks another man with a load of brushwood. The men move with measured steps, in time to the strokes of clubs upon shields, wherewith the spectators accompany the songs which they sing. At the end of the dance, the men lay their hurdens at the feet of the youths the grass. burdens at the feet of the youths, the grass effigy signifying the kangaroo, and the brushwood being accepted as a sign of its

The koradjees now take upon themselves the character of the kangaroo, as they formerly personated the dog. They make long ropes of grass in imitation of the kangaroo's tail, and fasten them at the back of their girdles. They then imitate the various movements of the kangaroo, such as leaping, feeding, rising on their feet and looking about them, or lying down on their sides and scratching themselves, as kangaroos do when basking in the sun. As they go through these performances, several men enact the part of hunters, and follow them with their spears, pretending to steal upon them unobserved, and so to kill them.

After a few more ceremonies, the men lie on the ground, and the boys are led over their prostrate bodies, the men groaning and writhing, and pretending to suffer horrible agony from the contact with uninitiates. At last the boys are drawn up in a row, and opposite to them stands the principal koradjee, holding his shield and waddy, with which he keeps up a series of regular

placed on the shoulders of men seated on the ground, and the operator then lances the gums freely with the sharp bone. One end of a wummerah, or throw-stick, is next placed on the tooth, and a sharp blow is struck with the stone, knocking out the tooth, and often a piece of gum also if the lancing has not been properly done.

Among another tribe, the initiate is seated opposite a tree. A stick is then placed against the trunk of the tree, with its other end resting on the tooth. The operator end resting on the tooth. The operator suddenly pushes the lad's head forward, when, as a matter of course, the tooth comout. The blood is allowed to flow over the spot, and, as it is a sign of manhood, is

never washed off.

The tooth being finally extracted, the boy is led to a distance, and his friends press the wounded gum together, and dress him in the emblems of his rank as a man. The opossum fur belt, or kumeel, is fastened round his waist, and in it is thrust the wooden sword, which he, as a warrior, is now expected to use. A bandage is tied round his forehead, in which are stuck a number of grass-tree leaves; his left hand is placed over his mouth, and for the rest of the day he is not allowed to eat.

In some parts of the country there is a curious addition to the mere loss of the tooth. The warriors stand over the lad, exhorting him to ratience, and threatening him with instant death if he should flinch, cry out, or show any signs of pain. The operators then deliberately cut long gashes all down his back, and others upon his shoulders. Should he groan, or display any symptoms of suffering, the operators give three long and piercing yells, as a sign that the youth is unworthy to be a warrior. The women are summoned, and the recreant is handed over to them, ever after to be ranked with the women, and share in their menial and despised tasks.

Even after passing the bodily ordeal, he has to undergo a mental trial. There is a certain mysterious piece of crystal to which various magic powers are attributed, and which is only allowed to be seen by men, who wear it in their hair, tied up in a little packet. This crystal, and the use to which it is put, will be described when we come to treat of medicine among the Australians.

The youth having been formally admitted as a huntsman, another ring is formed round him, in order to see whether his firmness of mind corresponds with his endurance of body. Into the hands of the maimed and bleeding candidate the mysterious crystal is placed. As soon as he has taken it, the old men endeavor by all their arts to persuade him to give it minded enou warrior; and resisted all th finally admitt

The cereme is set up as a to the camp, follows them, all chanting a braia. They tive fires, who and rejoicing 759); and th with the dance much delight.

As may be these ceremon into the societ of himself, ai largest game o and the dingo. killing either a trophy, which time, as a proo profession. T a yard or so in is tied the tail a huge tuft of These trophies is as proud of t first brush, or o Among the M the great Murra

practised. Wh years old, and b moustache whi their after-life made by sendi friendly tribe, office, the weeard lected are sudde one of their own place of initiatio spears set in the other, and being emu feathers. with red ochre a flock round ther ting their own le they inflict horr blood to flow abu would think that lads, were the in The boys lie do

spears, surrounde who watch them display any indi pain. The wee pluck off every h causing a long an they have endubranches are pr the bodies of the apron, and the oth kangaroo teeth a ng their spears roke touching

l to the actual initiates are nen seated on or then lances rp bone: One v-stick, is next sharp blow is king out the um also if the done.

itiate is seated s then placed with its other The operator head forward, re touch our now over the f manhood, is

acted, the boy ends press the dress him in a man. The el, is fastened is thrust the a warrior, is andage is tied h are stuck a his left hand for the rest of nt.

try there is a e loss of the over the lad. nd threatening should flinch, of pain. The ut long gashes ers upon his or display any operators give as a sign that warrior. The he recreant is er to be ranked n their menial

dily ordeal, he ystal to which ttributed, and seen by men, up in a little use to which en we come to Australians. nally admitted ng is formed

ether his firmhis endurance e maimed and rious crystal is ken it, the old ts to persuade him to give it up again. Should he be weak-minded enough to yield, he is rejected as a termed, are entitled to wear a bunch of emu minded enough to yield, he is rejected as a warrior; and not until he has successfully resisted all their threats and cajoieries is he finally admitted into the rank of men,

The ceremony being over, a piercing yell is set up as a signal for the women to return to the camp, and the newly-admitted man follows them, accompanied by their friends, all chanting a song of joy, called the korinda braia. They then separate to their respective fires, where they hold great feasings and rejoicings (see engraving No. 1, page 759); and the ceremonies are concluded with the dances in which the Australians so much delight.

As may be gathered from the account of these ceremonies, the lad who is admitted into the society of hunters thinks very much of himself, and addresses himself to the of ministry, in the diagram of Australia; namely, the emu and the dingo. When he has succeeded in killing either of these creatures, he makes a trophy, which he carries about for some time, as a proof that he is doing credit to his profession. This trophy consists of a stick, a yard or so in length, to one end of which is tied the tail of the first dingo he kills, or a huge tuft of feathers from the first emu. These trophies he displays everywhere, and is as proud of them as an English lad of his first brush, or of his first pheasant's tail.

Among the Moorundi natives, who live on the great Murray River, another ceremony is practised. When the lads are about sixteen years old, and begin to grow the beard and moustache which become so luxuriant in made by sending for some men from a friendly tribe, who are called, from their office, the weearoos, or pluckers. When they have arrived, the lads who have been selected are suddenly pounced upon by some one of their own tribe, and conducted to the place of initiation, which is marked by two spears set in the ground, inclining to each other, and being decorated with bunches of emu feathers. They are then smeared over with red ochre and grease, and the women flock round them, crying bitterly, and cut-ting their own legs with mussel-shells, until they inflict horrible gashes, and cause the blood to flow abundantly. In fact, a stranger would think that the women, and not the lads, were the initiates.

The boys lie down, with their heads to the spears, surrounded by their anxious friends, who watch them attentively to see if they display any indications of flinching from pain. The weearoos now advance, and pluck off every hair from their bodies, thus causing a long and irritating torture. When they have endured this process, green branches are produced, and fastened to the bodies of the lads, one being worn as an feathers in their hair.

With another tribe there is a curlous variation. The laitiate is brought to the selected spot by an old man, and laid on his back in the midst of five fires, each fire consisting of three pieces of wood laid across each other, so as to form a triangle. An opossum-skin bag is laid on his face, and the various operations are then performed.

Among the Parnkallas, and other western tribes, there are no less than three distinct ceremonies before the boys are acknowl-

edged as men.
The first ceremony is a very simple one. When the boys are twelve or fifteen years old, they are carried away from the women, and are blindfolded. The operators then begin to shout the words "Herri, herri" with the full force of their lungs, swinging at the same time the mysterious instrument called the witarna.

This mysterious implement is a small shuttle-shaped piece of wood, covered with carved ornaments, and being suspended, by a hole cut at one end, from a string made of plaited human hair. When swung rapidly in the air, it makes a loud humming or booming sound. The witarna is kept by the old men of the tribe, and is invested with sundry and somewhat contradictory attri-butes. Its sound is supposed to drive away evil spirits, and at the same time to be ver injurious to women and children, no uninitiated being allowed to hear it. Consequently the women are horribly afraid of it, and take care to remove themselves and their children so far from the place of initiation that there is no chance of being reached by the dreaded sound.

When the witarna has been duly swung, and the blindfolded boys have for the first time heard its booming sound, the operators advance, and blacken the faces of the boys, ordering them at the same time to cease from using their natural voices, and not to speak above a whisper until they are re-leased from their bondage. They remain whisperers for several months, and, when they resume their voices, assume the title of warrara.

They remain in the condition of warrara for at least two and sometimes three years, when they unvergo a ceremony resembling the circumcision of the Jews. Their hair is tied in a bunch on the top of the head, is not allowed to be cut, and is secured by a net.

The net used for this purpose is made out of the tendons drawn from the tails of kangaroos. When they kill one of these animals, the natives always reserve the tendons, dry them carefully in the sun, and keep them in reserve for the many uses to which they are put. The sinews taken from the apron, and the others under the arms. Two leg of the emu are dried and prepared in the kangaroo teeth are then fastened in the same manner. In order to convert the sinew

into thread, two of the fibres are taken and in a semicircle around, making a noise with rolled upon the thigh, just as is done with the fibre of the bulrush root. A thread of many yards long is thus spun, and is formed into a net with meshes made exactly after the European fashion. Sometimes it is left plain, but usually it is colored with red ochre, or white with pipe-clay, according to the taste of the wearer. These tendons, by the way, are valued by the white colonists, who use them chiefly for whip-lashes, and say that the tendon is more durable than any other material.

The initiates of the second degree are also distinguished by wearing a bell-shaped apron, made of opossum fur spun together, and called "mabbirringe." This is worn until the third and last ceremony. The young men are now distinguished by the name of Partnapas, and are permitted to marry, though they are not as yet considered as belonging to the caste, if we may so call it, of warriors.

Even now, the young men have not suffered sufficient pain to take their full rank, and in course of time a ceremony takes place in which they become, so to speak, different beings, and change, not only their appearance, but their names. Up to this time, they have borne the names given to them by their mothers in childhood, names which are always of a trivial character, and which are mostly numerical. For example, if the first child be a boy, it is called Peri (i. e. Primus); if a girl, Kartanya (i. e. Prima). The second boy is Wari (or Secundus), the second girl Waruyau, and so on. Sometimes the name is taken from the place where the child was born, or from some accidental circumstance, such as the appearance of a bird or insect, or the falling of a shower of rain. But, when the youth becomes a man, he puts away this childish name, and chooses another for himself, which marks him out as a man and a warrior. The process of converting a lad into a man is admirably told by Mr. G. F.

"In the third and last ceremony the young men are styled Wilyalkanye, when the most important rites take place. Each individual has a sponsor chosen for him, who is laid on his back upon another man's lap, and surrounded by the operators, who enjoin him to discharge his duties aright. The young men are then led away from the camp, and blindfolded; the wemen lamenting and crying, and pretending to object to their re-

"They are taken to a retired spot, laid upon their stomachs, and entirely covered over with kangaroo skins; the men uttering the most dismal wail imaginable, at intervals of from three to five minutes. After lying thus for some time, the lads are raised, and, whilst still blindfolded, two men throw and, whilst still blindfolded, two men throw representation No. 1, on page 765, is given green boughs at them, while the others stand in order to show the curious appearance

their wirris and voices combined, which is so horrible that the wild dogs swell the hideous chorus with their howlings. Suddenly one of the party drops a bough, others fol-low; and a platform of boughs is made, on which the lads are laid out. The sponsors then turn to and sharpen their pieces of quartz, choosing a new name for each lad, which is retained by him during life. These names all end either in alta, ilti, or ulta. Previous to this day they have borne the names of their birth-places, &c.; which is always the case amongst the women, who never change them afterward. The sponsors now open the veins of their own arms. and, raising the lads, open their mouths, and make them swallow the first quantity of

"The lads are then placed on their hands and knees, and the blood caused to run over their backs, so as to form one coagulated mass; and when this is sufficiently cohesive, one man marks the places for the tattooing by removing the blood with his thumb nail.

The sponsor now commences with his quartz, forming a deep incision in the nape of the neck, and then cutting broad gashes from the shoulder to the hip down each side, about an inch apart. These gashes are pulled open by the fingers as far as pos-sible; the men all the while repeating very rapidly, in a low voice, the following incantation :-

"'Kanya, marra, marra, Kano, marra, marra, Pilbirri, marra, marra.'

When the cutting is over, two men take the witarnas, and swing them rapidly round their heads, advancing all the time toward the young men. The whole body of opera-tors now draw round them, singing and beating their wirris, and, as they reach the the lads, each man puts the string of the witarna over the neck of every lad in succession. A bunch of green leaves is tied round the waist, above which is a girdle of human hair; a tight string is fastened round each arm just above the elbow, with another about the neck, which descends down the back, and is fixed to the girdle of hair; and their faces and the upper part of their bodies, as far as the waist, are blackened with charcoal.

"The ceremony concludes by the men all clustering round the initiated ones, enjoining them again to whisper for some months, and bestowing upon them their advice as regards hunting, fighting and contempt of pain. All these ceremonies are carefully kept from the sight of the women and children; who, when they hear the sound of the witarna, hide their heads, and exhibit every outward sign of terror."

2) YOUNG MAN AND BOY. (South Australia.) (See page 771.)

(4.) TOMB OF SKULLS. (Cape York.) (See page 773.

ng a noise with cined, which is swell the hidgs. Suddenly gh, others folhas is made, on The sponsors their pieces of of for each lad, ng life. These a, lift, or ulta, ave borne the &c.; which is e women, who d. The sponseir own arms, oir mouths, and st quantity of

on their hands
ied to run over
one coagulated
ently cohesive,
r the tattooing
its thumb nail.
ces with his
on in the nape
broad gashes
ip down each
These gashes
as far as posrepeating very
lowing incan-

omen take the rapidly round a time toward ody of opera, singing and they reach the string of the string of the ry lad in successes tied the second in the second to the girdle upper part of ist, are black-

ones, enjoinsome months, eir advice as contempt of are carefully nen and chile sound of the exhibit every

e 765, is given s appearance







which is s when they their variou was Mintal tribe, which apron, he w Across his which mark are seen upo with a little at the tip. ornaments. as they seen are simply scraped so a one end. In those little times hawke streets, or, to

boxes.

Many of the Australians v manner. In sons belongin out shooting, tive woman, o the generality a narrow apro ment, the sur English, sayin and desired t furnished he brought her or she contrived Her name wa widow of the o ing one day in missed his way the vessel was ern Prince of to swim on sho drowned, while party of nativ wreck after the

The tribe int was the Kowr lug, on the We When she got men, who fully the white men tives, recognize ter named Gi'd Ho accordingly ter, she was act one of themselve the wife of one roto.

her ashore.

For nearly fly oner by the bla see many Engli miles, she was so was hopeless.

which is sometimes presented by the men | nals told the tribe that another vessel was when they have successfully passed through their various ordeals. The name of the man was Mintalta, and he belonged to the Nauo tribe, which lives near Coffin's Bay. In his hand he holds the waddy, and, by way of apron, he wears a bunch of emu feathers. Across his breast are seen the bold ridges which mark his rank as a man, and others are seen upon his arms. His beard is gathered into a long pointed tuft, and decorated with a little bunch of white cockatoo feathers at the tip. In his hair he wears two curious ornaments. These are not feather plumes, as they seem to be in the illustration, but are simply slender sticks of white wood, scraped so as to let the shavings adhere by one end. Indeed, they are made exactly like those little wooden brooms that are sometimes hawked by German girls about the streets, or, to use a more familiar simile, like the curly-branched trees in children's toy-

Many of the particulars which have been and will be related of the domestic life of the Australians were obtained in a very curious manner. In the autumn of 1849 some persons belonging to H.M.S. Rattlesnake were out shooting, when they came across a native woman, or gin, dressed rather better than the generality of native women, as she wore a narrow apron of leaves. To their astonishment, the supposed gin addressed them in English, saying that she was a white woman, and desired their help. They immediately furnished her with some clothing, and brought her on board the Rattlesnake, where she contrived to make known her sad story. Her name was Thomson, and she was the widow of the owner of a small vessel. Cruising one day in search of a wreck, the pilot missed his way, a gale of wind came on, and the vessel was dashed on a reef on the Eastern Prince of Wales Island. The men tried to swim on shore through the surf, but were drowned, while the woman was saved by a party of natives, who came on board the wreck after the gale had subsided, and took her ashore.

The tribe into whose hands she had fallen was the Kowrárega, which inhabits Muralug, on the Western Prince of Wales Island. When she got ashore, one of the principal men, who fully held the popular idea that the white men are the ghosts of dead na-tives, recognized in Mrs. Thomson a daughter named Gi'ôm, who had long ago died. He accordingly took her home as his daughter, she was acknowledged by the tribe as one of themselves, and was forced to become the wife of one of the natives, called Bo-

For nearly five years she was kept prisoner by the blacks, and, although she could see many English ships pass within a few miles, she was so closely watched that escape

approaching, Gi'am cleverly worked on the cupidity of the aborigines, and persuaded them to take her to the mainland, promising them to procure plenty of axes, knives, to-bacco, and other things which an Australian savage values above all things, and saying that she had lived so long with the natives that she could not think of leaving them. When she was safely lodged on board, many of her friends came to see her, bringing presents of fish and turtle, but always expecting an equivalent. Boroto was one of the visitors, and in vain tried to persuade her to return. When she definitely refused, he became very angry, and left the ship in a passion, declaring that, if he or any of his friends could catch her ashore, they would take off her head and carry it to Muraing. Not feeling the least doubt that the threat would be fulfilled, she never ventured on shore near those parts of the coast which the Kowraregas seemed likely to visit.

Being a woman of no education, she had in the course of her sojourn among the natives almost forgotten how to express herself in her native tongue, and for some time mixed Kowrárega words and phrases with English in a very curious manner. A vast amount of valuable information was obtained from her, but, when she was restored to civilization, she forgot the language and customs of savage life with singular rapidity, her untrained mind being unable to comprehend the mutual relationship of ideas,

and utterly incapable of generalization.

From her was learned the curious but dreadful fact that many of the really unprovoked assaults on ships' crews while unsuspectingly visiting the shore were instigated by white men, who had degraded them-selves into companionship with native tribes, and, by reason of their superior knowledge, had gained a supremacy over them. One of these men had lived with the Badu tribe many years, and, having heard of a white woman among the Kowraregas, visited Muralug, and tried to induce Gi'om to leave Boroto and share his fortunes. Who he was is not known. He goes by the name of Wini, and is supposed to be an escaped convict, who repels the visits of English ships, lest he should be captured and sent back to prison. By means of his instigations, the Badu people became so violently opposed to all white men that any European who visited that part of the country would do so at the imminent hazard of his life.

Among many of these tribes, there is a custom which is common also to many savages in all parts of the world. This is the custom of making "kotaiga," or brotherhood, with strangers. When Europeans visit their districts, and behave as they ought to do, the natives generally unite themselves in bonds of fellowship with the was hopeless. At last, when the smoke sig- strangers, each selecting one of them as

his kotaiga. The new relations are then considered as having mutual responsibili-ties, each being bound to forward the welfare of the other.

The memory of the natives is wonderful, and, even if a ship does not repeat a visit and, even if a snip does not repeat a visit until after a lapse of several years, no sooner does she arrive than the natives swarm on board, and at once pick out their kotaigas. They bring presents to their guests while on board; they accompany them joyfully to the shore; they carry their bags and haveracks for them; they take them on hunting,

shooting, and fishing excursions, point out the game, retrieve it, no matter where it may have fallen, and carry it home on their shoulders rejoicing. Of course they expect biscuit and tobacco in return for their kind offices, but the wages are very cheap, and their services are simply invaluable. The rescue

> BILBOS, OR 1 ACHE -WOMEN CHARM AS A 81

> > PARNK OF BOY OF OLD EVIL SI

WE will n tives treat sic them are ce or doctors, to in cases of il however, who man the rank tained by sun with the Afri The most

local disease hands upon th it, a remedy w the world, and many compla affections, or muscles. If a sore, the nat tightly above i of preventing body. Headac bandage firml the pain be ob patient under f quartz as a la never allowed on the hody of rubbed into the by this process ened. This de-of the patient, nor allowed to person sprinklee About 1832,

among the nat

ons, point out tter where it home on their se they expect for their kind heap, and their The rescue arty from the ves was owing , the friendly , and saw him eir boats, was r to save him.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

AUSTRALIA - Continued.

MEDICINE, SURGERY, AND THE DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD.

BILBOS, OR NATIVE DOCTORS — WOUNDS AND BRUISES — A STRANGE CURE — TREATMENT OF THE HEAD-ACHE — A DREAM AND ITS RESULTS — THE MAGIO CRYSTAL, OR DOCTOR-STONE—ITS EFFECTS ON WOMEN AND CHILDREN - THE DOCTOR-HOUSE - SUCTION AS A MEANS OF CURE - BELIEF IN CHARMS - THE PARENT'S SKULL - CEREMONIES OF MOURNING - CUTTING THE HEAD AND BODY AS A SIGN OF WOE -DRIVING AWAY THE EVIL SPIRITS-FRAR \F GHOSTS-BURIAL AMONG THE PARNKALLAS AND NAUOS-THE TOMB OF SKULLS-A SUMMARY MODE OF BURIAL-FUNERAL OF BOYS - THE TREE-TOMBS - SMOKING THE WARRIORS - INCONSISTENT BEHAVIOR - BURIAL OF OLD WOMEN - THE WIDOWS' CAPS - RELIGIOUS IDEAS OF THE ABORIGINES - THE VARIOUS EVIL SPIRITS - THE BUNYIP - ROCK AND CAVE PAINTINGS - THEORY OF TRANSMIGRATION.

WE will now see how the Australian na- resembling the small-pox in many things, tives treat sickness of various kinds. Among them are certain personages called bilbos, or doctors, to whom the sick usually appeal in cases of illness or pain. It is not known, however, whether the mere fact of age gives a man the rank of bilbo, or whether it is attained by sundry ceremonials, as is the case with the Africans and other savages.

The most usual mode of treating any local disease or pain is by pressing the hands upon the affected part, and kneading it, a remedy which is found in every part of the world, and which is really efficacious in many complaints, especially in rheumatic many compinants, especially in order affections, or in sprained or over-exerted muscles. If a limit be wounded, bruised, or sore, the native practitioners tie a fillet tightly above it, for the purpose, as they say, of preventing the malady from reaching the body. Headaches are treated by tying a bandage firmly round the temples, and if

and yet displaying symptoms which scarcely belong to that dread disease, the one fatal scourge of savage tribes. It was preceded by headache, fever, sere-throat, &c., and accompanied by pustules very much resembling those of the small-pox. It was, however, scarcely virulent enough for the real disease, though it was probably a milder form of it, and was subject to the power of vaccine matter. It was not limited to the natives, but attacked many Europeans just like the genuine small-pox, and in one case was fatal.

It is here mentioned on account of the mode of cure adopted by the native doctors. They punctured the pustules with sharp fish-bones, and squeezed them well with the blust end of their rade lancets, and it body. Headaches are treated by tying a bandage firmly round the temples, and if the pain be obstinate, the doctors bleed the patient under the arm, using a sharp piece of quartz as a lancet. The flowing blood is never allowed to be wasted, but is received on the body of the operator, and diligently is a noteworthy fact that the rate of mortalquartz as a macet. The nowing blood in never allowed to be wasted, but is received to never allowed to be wasted, but is received to nine feet in length, which were stack to nine feet in length, which of the patient, women being nover bled, not strike the spicet terror with when nor allowed to have the blood of any other person sprinkled upon them.

About 1999 a upon them. About 1832, a curious disease broke out the sick person, unless perhaps the doctor among the natives of Wellington Valley, pronounces the patient incurable; in which

"thunna-thunna," and it is known to have existed when the country was first discovered, so that it is not imported from civilized

countries.

Another remarkable kind of cure for the headache is mentioned by Mr. Angas. The patient being seated on the ground, a string is tied round his head, the knot being carefully adjusted to the middle of the forehead. The operator, who is always a woman, seats herself opposite the patient, places the line between her lips, and frets them with it a fit place to discharge it upon; but, affect-until they bleed freely. The idea is that the disease, attracted by the blood, passes deposited the nauseous extract behind a along the line from the patient's head, and is cast out together with the blood.

A very remarkable instance of this mode of cure is related in Tyerman and Bennett's "Voyage round the World." A man had dreamed that he had been speared in the side, and had died in consequence of the wound. Although, when he woke, he knew it was but a dream, he was so frightened that he became very ill, retired to his hut, chose the place of his burial, and lay down to

Nearly a week elapsed, during which he could take no food, grew worse and worse, and it was plain that nature would not hold out much longer. The priests—or rather sorcerers, for it cannot be ascertained that the New Hollanders have any other kind of priests, having, in fact, no religious worship came to do what they could for him with their enchantments. By their order he was carried down to the side of a running water, and tumbled into the stream, where it was pretty deep, head foremost. When taken out, he was rolled in the sand till his body was quite encased with it. This again was washed off by pouring water over him.

"Meanwhile a young woman of the company was perceived plaiting a cord of kangaroo's hair, which, when completed, was bound round his chest, and a knot, very cunningly implicated by one of the operators, was placed over that part of his side into which the spear of his dream had entered. From this knot a line was passed to the young woman who had prepared the bandage. This she drew through her mouth backward and forward (as children sometimes do with a piece of packthread) until she began to spit blood, which was said to be sucked by that process from the wound in the sick man's side. There it was now perceptible that, from whatever cause, a considerable swelling had arisen under the Toward this one of the sorcerers began to stroke the man's flesh from all the adjacent regions of the back, belly, and chest, as though to force the blood thither. He then applied his mouth to the swelling, and, with hideous noises, sometimes sucked it Golong, was suffering from a spear wound

case they save him prolonged pain, and with his lips, sometimes pressed it violently themselves useless trouble, by burying him with his hands, till forth came the point of a live. The native term for this disease is spear, four inches in length, which he presented to the astonished spectators and the expecting sufferer, as verily extracted from

the man's side.

"Then he applied his mouth again to the swollen part, from which, although there was no visible wound, he appeared to draw blood and corrupt matter, stains of both being soon seen on the swarthy skin. At length, with distended cheeks, as though he had filled his mouth with the abominable matter, he ran about, anxiously looking for bush. The poor man's hopes revived, and he now believed that he should get well again. Mr. Dunlop thereupon sent him some tea, which, however, he would not again. drink, but requested that it might be given to the sorcerer, and, if he drank it, then it would do himself (the patient) good. He was deceived, disappointed, and died."

The Australians are tolerably good surgeons in a rough and-ready sort of way, and are clever at setting broken limbs. bringing the broken ends of the bone together, they support the limb by several pieces of wood which act as splints, and then make the whole secure by bandages, which they often strengthen with gum, exactly as

is done in modern surgery.

One of the most powerful remedies employed by the native practitioners is the "doctor-stone." This is nothing but a common quartz crystal; but the doctors aver that they manufacture it themselves, and that the ingredients are kept secret. the witarna, mentioned on page 747, women are never allowed even to look upon the doctor-stone, and are impressed with the belief that, if they dared to set their eyes upon the forbidden object, they would be immediately killed by its radiant powers. The larger the crystal, the more valuable is it; and a tolerably large one can scarcely be procured from the natives at any price.

The doctors say that this stone is not only fatal to women, but also destroys men if flung at them with certain incantations. An European settler once challenged a native doctor to say as many charms as he liked, and throw the magic stone as much as he pleased. This offer, however, he declined, giving the usual excuse of savages, that the white man belonged to a totally different order of beings, and, although the poor black fellow would die from the effects of the doctor-stone, the white man was much too

powerful to be hurt by it.

The mode in which the crystal is used is very curious, and has been described by an eye-witness.

A native of the Tumat country, named

received and was mumbup, laid on ment so risk of de of the cry amination He then patient, n minute or mouth. I time, he re with his fe ing it dee repeated s his leave. For seve

of the pro recovery o rapid, was wonderful e making inq the physici saliva disch ground, no tained, a va to the query they consid finally destr extracted by tues of the this proceed observation may be prese that he (i. e again,' "

It is remai exactly ident the Guaycur the doctors, whether wo the part affect the ground, a if to bury the

The Austr the principle has a bad pa eating, or suff from the blov at the afflicte produces from some other ha to be the cond or other ailme that the bone youths are lan ation are supp bodies of the

A very res which is taken It consists of first sight looks ical remain t one, except fo d it violently the point of a hich he pretors and the tracted from

again to the hough there ared to draw ains of both hy skin. At as though he abominable y looking for ; but, affectne water, and act behind a revived, and uld get well on sent him e would not ght be given nk it, then it

t) good. He oly good sur-t of way, and imbs. After the bone tob by several ints, and then dages, which m, exactly as

emedies emoners is the ng but a comdoctors aver mselves, and secret. Like e 747, women ok upon the sed with the et their eyes ey would be iant powers. e valuable is n scarcely be

ly price. ne is not only troys men if ntations. An ged a native as he liked, much as he he declined, ges, that the ally different he poor black ffects of the as much too

tal is used is cribed by an

intry, named spear wound

received in a skirmish with a hostile tribe, and was brought to a bilbo, named Baramumbup, to be healed. The patient being laid on the ground outside the encampment so that women could not run the risk of death through the accidental sight ture being just wide enough to admit his of the crystal the destar bogs a close exof the crystal, the doctor began a close examination of the wound, and sucked it. He then retired to a distance from the patient, muttered some magic words for a minute or so, and placed the crystal in his mouth. Having retained it there for a short with his feet trampled on the saliva, pres-ing it deeply into the ground. This was repeated several times, and the doctor took

For several successive evenings the whole of the process was gone through, and the recovery of the patient, which was really recovery of the patient, which rapid, was attributed by all parties to the rapid, will afficacy of the doctor-stone. "On wonderful efficacy of the doctor-stone. "On making inquiry," writes Dr. Bennett, "why the physician is so careful in trampling the saliva discharged from his mouth into the ground, no satisfactory reason could be obtained, a vague answer only being returned to the query. But it is not improbable that they consider, by this practice, that they finally destroy the power of the evil spirit, extracted by the operation through the virtues of the stone. Some such reason for this proceeding may be inferred from an observation made to any European who may be present at this part of the ceremony, 'that he (i. e. the disease) may not come up

It is remarkable that a ceremony almost exactly identical in principle is employed by the Guaycura tribe of Brazil. Among them the doctors, or payés, cure local ailments, whether wounds or otherwise, by sucking the part affected, spitting into a hole dug in the ground, and then filling in the earth, as if to bury the complaint.

The Australian doctors make great use of the principle of suction, and employ it in all kinds of cases. If, for example, a patient has a bad pain in his stomach from overeating, or suffers more than he thinks right from the blow of a waddy, the doctor sucks at the afflicted part vigorously, and at last produces from his mouth a piece of bone, or some other hard substance, which he asserts to be the concentrated essence of the pain, or other ailment. The reader may remark that the bones with which the gums of youths are lanced in the ceremonies of initiation are supposed to be produced from the bodies of the operators by means of suction.

A very remarkable curative agent is shown in the illustration No. 3, page 765, which is taken from a sketch by Mr. Baines. It consists of a stone building, which at first sight looks so like an ordinary Druidical remain that it might be taken for

ach weighing several tons, it is quite a tiny edifice, scarcely larger than the grotto which children erect with oyster-shells. The patient lies in, or rather under it, the aperture being just wide enough to admit his body, and the small roof only covering a very small portion of the inmate. Sundry superstitious rites are employed at the some superstitious rites are employed at the same time, and the remedy is cificacious, like the crystal already mentioned, in consequence of enlisting the imagination of the sufferer.

These little buildings are found along the Victoria River, and for a considerable time the object for which they were built greatly puzzled the discoverers,

A medicine scarcely less efficacious than the doctor's stone is human fat, which is carefully preserved, and administered by being rubbed in and around the affected part. As, however, it is highly valued by the warriors it is not easily procured, and had it to be taken solely from the bodies of slain enemies, ould in all probability never be used at all. The efficacy of this repulsive remedy does not depend on the individual from whom it is taken, that of a child or woman being quite as useful as that of a warrior.

According to Mr. G. T. Lloyd, the practice of deserting the helpless is found in Australia as well as in other countries, and is practised exactly as is the case in Africa. When a person is ill the relations, as a rule, do not trouble themselves to visit the sick person, and, when there is no apparent hope of recovery, a supply of food and firing enough to last them for several days is left near them, and they are then abandoned to their fate. Even in the case of poor old Tarmeenia, mentioned on page 747, the son, although he carried his wounded father

in safety, never once came to see him.

Seeing that the natives place such implicit faith in the healing power of the doctor's stone, it is natural that they should also believe in sundry charms as preservatives against disease and misfortune. these charms is a sort of girdle, several inches wide in the middle, and tapering to a mere thong at each end. If it be made of string prepared from the bulrush root, it is called Taara or Kuretti; and if made of human hair, it goes by the name Godlotti. It is used more as a curative than a preventive, and is mostly found among the tribes of the lower Murray Piver. The street when twisted into thread, is wound upon .. urious spindle, consisting of two slender pieces of wood placed acress each other at right angles.

Another charm is shown in the illustratien No 2, on the 765th page, slung round the neck of the boy. It is the beak of the black swan, which, from its scarlet color, one, except for its dimensions. Instead, contrasts well with the black skin of the

wearer. The little boy's name is Rimmilli-peringery, and Mr. G. F. Angas remarks that he was an engaging little fellow, and had the largest and softest pair of dark eyes that could be imagined. The elder figure is that of a young man named Tyilkilli, belonging to the Parnkalla tribe of Port Lincoln. He has been selected as a favorable example of the Australian young man in good circumstances, well-fed, careless, and gay with the unthinking happiness of mere animal life, which finds a joy in the very fact of existence.

Among many of the tribes may be seen a strange sort of ornament, or rather utensil; namely, a drinking-cup made of a human skull. It is slung on cords and carried by them, and the owner takes it wherever he or she goes. These ghastly utensils are made from the skulls of the nearest and dearest relatives; and when an Australian mother dies, it is thought right that her daughter should form the skull of her mother into a drinking-vessel. The prepa-ration is simple enough. The lower jaw is removed, the brains are extracted, and the whole of the skull thoroughly cleaned. A rope handle made of bulrush fibre is then attached to it, and it is considered fit for use. It is filled with water through the vertebral aperture, into which a wisp of grass is always stuffed, so as to prevent the water from being spilled.

Inconsistency is ever the attribute of savage minds. Although they consider that to convert the skull of a parent into a drink-ing vessel, and to carry it about with them, is an important branch of filial duty, they seem to have no very deep feelings on the subject. In fact, a native named Wooloo sold his mother's skull for a small piece of tobacco. His mind was evidently not comprehensive enough to admit two ideas together, and the objective idea of present tobacco was evidently more powerful than the comparative abstraction of filial rever-

Mr. Angas saw one which was carried by a little girl ten years of age. Like "Little Nell," she was in attendance upon an old and infirm grandfather, and devoted her little life to him. In nothing was the difference of human customs shown more plainly than in the use of the mother's skull as a drinking vessel-an act which we should consider as the acme of heathen brutality, but with these aborigines is held to be a

duty owed by the child to the parent. Perhaps my classical readers will remember a chapter in Herodotus which bears on this very subject. He finds fault with Cambyses for breaking into the temples of the Cabeiri, burning their idols, and so hurting the religious feelings of the people; and remarks that he was wary in offending

proceeds to tell an anecdote of Darius, who had at his court some "Indians called Callatians," and some Greeks. He asked the Greeks (who always burned their dead, as the Hindoos do now), what bribe would induce them to eat the bodies of their dead parents, and they naturally replied that for no bribe could they perform so horrible a deed. Then, in the presence of the Greeks, he asked the Callatians, who are their dead (as several savage nations do now), what sum they would consent to burn the bodies of their dead. They, as it appears from the style of their answer, were even more shocked than the Greeks at the idea of such horrible sacrilege, and would not deign to give a direct answer, but begged Darius "speak words of good omen." Thalia, xxxvii. 8.)

A somewhat similar proceeding is narrated in the life of Nussir-er-deen, the late king of Oude. His native ministers, jealous of the influence exercised over him by some of his European friends, complained that the English guests treated the monarch with disrespect, by retaining their shoes in his royal presence. The king, who, enervated as he was by vanity, dissipation, self-indulgence, and flattery, was no fool, immediately proposed a compromise. "Listen to me, nawab; and you, general, listen to me. The King of England is my master, and these gentlemen would go into his presence with their shoes on. Shall they not come into mine, then? Do they come before me with their hats on? Answer me, your excellency.'

"They do not, your majesty."

"No, that is their way of showing respect. They take off their hats, and you take off your shoes. But come now, let us have a bargain. Wallah! but I will get them to take off their shoes and leave them without, as you do, if you will take off your turban and leave it without, as they do." (See Knighton's "Privade Life of an Eastern

We now come naturally to the burial of the dead, and the various ceremonies which accompany the time of mourning. Although the relatives seem so careless about the sick person, they really keep a watch, and, as soon as death actually takes place, they announce the fact by loud cries. The women are the principal mourners, and they continue to sob and shriek and moan until they are forced to cease from absolute exhaustion. They cut their bodies until the blood streams freely from their wounds, and some of them chop their own heads with their tomahawks until their shoulders and bodies are covered with blood.

The reader will probably have noticed how widely spread is this custom of wounding the body as a sign of mourning, and especially as a lamentation for the dead. We have seen against any religious sentiment, however that it exists in Africa, and we shall see that absurd it might appear to himself. He then it is practised in many other countries. That

it was pra ple among several pa ample De selves, nor eyes for the shall not b for them, n selves balo well-know that the pr of which manner wit gushed out

The body suffered to during which is allowed t watched car passing me people shou to drive aw Yúmburbar, though invis ties, and to h lies for the p When dec

bones are c painted red,

up in bark, for a time. are finally di cording to th they belonge soft rocks, as while others pose. Somet cave without and in some ture that the decomposition the Exhibition cated bodies v called the "pe ever, nothing bedy, such as in Near the Wellington Va

lactitic cavern, This cavern is, ing-place of the employed it for ham purchased consequence of burial place, th about entering venture into the the "dibbil-dil visited it in 18; cave the skeleto had been placed before.

The Parnkalls other mode of l sembles that wh chuanas. The b

Darius, who called Callae asked the heir dead, as bribe would lied that for so horrible a the Greeks. te their dead o now), for to burn the s it appears r, were even at the idea of ald not deign gged Darius men." (See

ng is narrated e late king of alous of the v some of his hat the Engch with diss in his royal rvated as he f-indulgence, ediately proome, nawab; The King of se gentlemen h their shoes mine, then? heir hats on?

wing respect,
you take off
et us have a
get them to
nem without,
your turban
y do." (See
an Eastern

the burial of nonies which courses which cout the sick tech, and, as ace, they and they contain they contain until they exhaustion. load streams of them temahawks are covered

noticed how ounding the especially as a have seen hall see that tries. That it was practised in ancient days by the people among whom the Jews lived, we see from soveral passages of Scripture. See for example Deut. xiv. 1: "Ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead." Also Jer. xvi. 6: "They shall not be buried, neither shall men lament for them, nor cut themselves, nor make themselves bald for them." There is also the well-known passage concerning the sacrifice that the priests of Baal offered, in the course of which they "cut themselves after their manner with knives and lancets, till the blood gushed out upon them."

The body is not disposed of at once, but is suffered to remain for a considerable time, during which decomposition takes place, and is allowed to work its course until the flesh is separated from the bones. The body is watched carefully during the night; and if a passing meteor should appear in the sky, the people shout and wave firebrands in order to drive away a certain evil spirit named Yúmburður, which is thought to be the real though invisible cause of death and all calamities, and to haunt the spot where a dead body lies for the purpose of feeding upon it.

When decomposition has done its work, the bones are carefully collected, cleaned, and painted red, after which they are wrapped up in bark, and carried about with the tribe for a time. This term being fulfilled, they are finally disposed of in various ways, according to the customs of the tribe to which they belonged. Some tribes scoop holes in soft rocks, and place the remains therein, while others prefer hollow trees for that purpose. Sometimes the body is placed in the cave without being reduced to a skeleton, and in some places the soil is of such a nature that the body becomes dried before decomposition can proceed very far. During the Exhibition of 1862 one of these desicated bodies was exhibited in England, and called the "petrified" man. It was, however, nothing but a shrivelled and dried-up bedy, such as is often found in very dry soils.

Near the Murrumbidgee River, in the Wellington Valley, there is a remarkable stalactitic cavern, divided into several "halls." This cavern is, or has been, a favorite burying-place of the aborigines, who seem to have employed it for the same purpose that Abraham purchased the cave of Machpelah. In consequence of the use of the cavern as a burial place, the natives are rather nervous about entering it, and they flatly refuse to venture into the darker recesses, for fear of the "dibbil-dibbil." When Dr. Bennett visited it in 1832, he found in a small side cave the skeleton of a woman. The bones had been placed there nearly twenty years before.

The Parnkalla and Nauo tribes have another mode of burial, which somewhat resembles that which is employed by the Bechuanas. The body is placed in a crouching

or squatting position, such as is employed by the natives when sitting, the knees being drawn up to the chin, the legs close to the body, and the hands clasped over the legs. Examples of this attitude may be seen in many of the illustrations. A circular pit or grave, about five feet in depth, is then dug, and after the body is lowered into the pit a number of sticks are laid over the grave, nearly touching one another. A thick layer of leaves and another of grass are then placed on the sticks, and over all is heaped the earth which has been dug out of the pit, so that the grave looks something like a huge anthill.

In Northern Australia the natives have a curious method of disposing of the dead. They gather the skulls together, and heap them into a circular mound, placing stones round them to keep them in their places. They do not cover the skulls, but make the tomb in an open and conspicuous place. Such a tomb is illustrated on page 765.

The blacks of the Clarence River build monuments which are somewhat similar in appearance, but are made of different materials. They place a number of stones in a circle, and in the centre they erect an upright slab of stone. They can give no reason for this custom, but only say that "blackfella." The former reply signifies that the custom has always prevailed among the natives; and the second, that the tomb shows that a native lies buried beneath the upright stone.

Some of the tribes along the Clarence River have a curious mode of disposing of the dead—a mode which certainly has its advantages in its greateconomy of trouble. When an old man feels that the hand of death is on him, he looks out for a hollow tree, climbs it, lets himself down to the bottom of the hollow, and so dies in his tomb.

In New South Wales the young people are buried beneath small tumuli, but the adults are buried in a rather curious fashion. A pile of dry wood, leaves, &c. is built, about three feet in height and six or seven in length. On the pile the body is laid on its back, having the face directed toward the rising sun. The fishing apparatus, spears, and other weapons and implements of the dead man are next laid on the pile, and the body is then covered over with large logs of wood. The pile is fired by the nearest relative, and on the following day, when the place is cool, the ashes of the dead are collected, and carefully buried.

Should a woman die, leaving an unweaned child, the poor little creature is buried together with the ashes of its mother. The natives defend this practice as a humane one, saying, with savage justice, that it is better to kill the child speedily than to allow it to pine to death from starvation.

As is the case with many tribes in different parts of the world, as soon as any one

dies the name borne by the deceased is no canoe coffin, and so covered over with leaves more mentioned. So strictly is this rule observed, that if another member of the tribe should happen to bear the same name, it must be abandoned, and a new name taken, by which the bearer will ever afterward be known.

Mr. Angas, to whom we are indebted for so much of our knowledge of the Australians, gives an interesting account of the burial of a boy, as described to him by an

eye-witness:
"Previously to burying the corpse of the boy, a contest with clubs and spears took place, but no injury was done to the parties engaged. The body was placed in a bark cance, cut to the proper length, a spear, a fishing-spear, and a throwing-stick, with several other articles, being placed besides the corpse. The women and children made great famentations during the ceremony, and the father stood apart, a picture of silent

" The canoe was placed on the heads of no natives, who proceeded with it slowly to ward the grave; some of the attendants waying tufts of dried grass backward and forward under the canoe and amongst the busies as they passed along. The grave being dug, a native strewed it with grass, and stretched himself at full length in the grave, first on his back and then on his side. As they were about to let down the child into the grave, they first pointed to the deceased and then to the skies, as though they had a vague idea that the spirit had ascended to another world.

"The body was then laid in the grave, with the face looking toward the rising sun, and, in order that the sunshine might fall upon the spot, care was taken to cut down all shrubs around that could in any way obstruct its beams. Branches were placed over the grave, grass and boughs on them, and the whole was crowned with a log of wood, on which a native extended himself for some minutes, with his face to the sky."

At the beginning of this description is mentioned a sham fight. This is held in consequence of a curious notion prevalent among the aborigines, that death from natural causes must be ransomed with blood. It suffices if blood be drawn even from a friend, and the mode by which they make the required offering, and at the same time gratify their combative nature, is by get-ting up a sham fight, in which some one is nearly sure to be wounded more or less severely

Sometimes the body of the dead man is disposed of rather oddly. In some parts of Australia the natives, instead of consuming the body by fire, or hiding it in caves or in graves, make it a peculiarly conspicuous object. Should a tree grow favorably for their purpose, they will employ it as the final resting-place of the dead body. Lying in its tioned.

and grass that its shape is quite disguised, the body is lifted into a convenient fork of the tree, and lashed to the boughs by native ropes. No further care is taken of it, and if, in process of time, it should be blown out of the tree, no one will take the trouble of replacing it.

Should no tree be growing in the selected spot, an artificial platform is made for the body, by fixing the ends of stout branches in the ground, and connecting them at their tops by smaller horizontal branches. Such are the curious tombs which are represented in the illustration No. 3, on page 775. These strange tombs are mostly placed among the strange tomos are mostly paced among the reeds, so that nothing can be more mournful than the sound of the wind as it shakes the reeds below the branch in which the corpse is lying. The object of this aerial tomb is evident enough, namely, to protect the corpse from the dingo, or native dog. That the ravens and other carrion-eating birds should make a horsest mean the hold. birds should make a banquet upon the body of the dead man does not seem to trouble the survivors in the least, and it often happens that the traveller is told by the croak of the disturbed ravens that the body of a dead Australian is lying in the branches over his head.

The aerial tombs are mostly erected for the bodies of old men who have died a natural death; but when a young warrior has fallen in battle the body is treated in a very different manner. A moderately high platform is erected, and upon this is seated the bedy of the dead warrior with the feed the body of the dead warrior, with the face toward the rising sun. The legs are crossed, and the arms kept extended by means of sticks. The fat is then removed, and, after being mixed with red ochre, is rubbed over the body, which has previously been carefully denuded of hair, as is done in the ceremony of initiation. The legs and arms are covered with zebra-like stripes of red, white,

and yellow, and the weapons of the dead man

are laid across his lap.

The body being thus arranged, fires are lighted under the platform, and kept up for ten days or more, during the whole of which time the friends and mourners remain by the body, and are not permitted to speak. Sentinels relieve each other at appointed intervals, their duty being to see that the fires are not suffered to go out, and to keep the flies away by waving leafy boughs or bunches of emu feathers. When a body has been treated in this manner, it becomes hard and mummy-like, and the strangest point is, that the wild dogs will not touch it after it has been so long smoked. It re-mains sitting on the platform for two months or so, and is then taken down and buried, with the exception of the skull, which is made into a drinking-cup for the nearest relative, as has already been menwith leaves e disguised, ient fork of hs by native of it, and if, blown out of couble of re-

the selected ande for the branches in their tehes. Such represented 776. These I among the nore mournas it shakes a which the f this aerial y, to protect native dog, rrion-eating on the body on to trouble and it often told by the t the body of the branches

erected for nave died a ung warrior treated in a erately high is is seated ith the face are crossed, by means of d, and, after rubbed over een carefully ee ceremony ms are covred, white, are dead man

ed, fires are kept up for bole of which remain by d to speak. t appointed ee that the and to keep boughs or a body has it becomes e strangest not touch it ted. It rem for two n down and the skull, cup for the

been men-



(L) CARVED FEATHER BOX, NEW ZEALAND. (See page 813.)



(2.) SMOKING THE BODIES OF SLAIN WARRIORS. (See page 777.)



(3.) TREE TOMBS OF AUSTRALIA. (See page 774.)

Consider the preportion of treatment when a fame trib bodies for it, but loadead man such needing that he to die who country. Body for selub at it.

"Why did
In the
two of the
platform, a
rights by
their weap
one of the
the flies w
is a second
The seated
Around

Around south-easte tives have: ment and h down into is supported tity of dry upon the transfer, amid the women It is rathe

It is rather are only em death is sup Men, and ewith funera are warriors riors, and the arms, and a Even young amount of significant dren for the

But of all terly despise she has nev but a mere for domestic useful. Whe regrets her, burden on he she does not when the yo work. It is worn herself never ceasin life of an Aushe dies her camp by the in some holl most conveniated on a bo scribed; but of she had be seen to be

Considering the trouble which is taken in | laid on the branch, without being placed in the preparation of these bodies, and the evident respect which is felt for a brave warrior in death as well as in life, the after treatment of them is very remarkable. When a friend, or even an individual of the same tribe, sees one of these mummified bodies for the first time, he pays no honor to it, but loads it witt. reproaches, abusing the dead man for dying when the tribe stood in such need of brave and skilful men, and saying that he ought to have known better than to die when there was plenty of food in the Then, after contemplating the body for some time, he hurls his spear and club at it, crying out at the same time, "Why did you die? Take that for dying."

In the illustration No. 2, on page 775, two of these bodies are seen seated on the platform, supported by being tied to the uprights by their hands and heads, and having their weapons in their laps. On one side is one of the sentinels engaged in driving away the flies with his flapper, and on the other is a second sentinel bringing fuel for the fire. The seated figures belong to the same tribe.

Around Portland Bay, and toward the south-eastern parts of the continent, the natives have a curious combination of entombment and burning. They let the dead body down into one of the hollow trees, where it is supported in an upright position. A quantity of dry leaves and grass is then heaped upon the tree, and the whole consumed by fire, amid the dismal screams and cries of the women.

It is rather curious that funeral ceremonies are only employed in the case of those whose death is supposed to be a loss to the tribe. Men, and even boys, are therefore honored with funeral rites, because the younger men are warriors, the boys would have been warriors, and the old men have done service by arms, and are still useful for their wisdom. Even young women are buried with some amount of show, because they produce children for the tribe.

But of all beings an old woman is most ut-terly despised. She can render no service; she has never been considered as anything but a mere domesticated animal, and even for domestic purposes she has ceased to be useful. When she dies, therefore, no one regrets her. She is nothing but a useless burden on her people, consuming food which she does not earn, and sitting by the fire when the younger women are engaged in work. It is nothing to them that she has worn herself out in the hard, thankless, and never ceasing labor which constitutes the life of an Australian woman, and so when she dies her body is drawn away out of the camp by the heels, and stuffed away hastily in some hollow tree or cave that may be most convenient. Sometimes the body is laid on a bough, as has already been de- of her late husband, and scribed; but even in such a case it is merely cally the earth around it.

a canoe, or covered with matting, boughs, and leaves, as is the case with the bodies of men. The corpse is allowed to remain on the branch until it falls to pieces; and when any of her relatives choose to take the trouble, they will scrape a hole in the sand and bury the scattered bones.

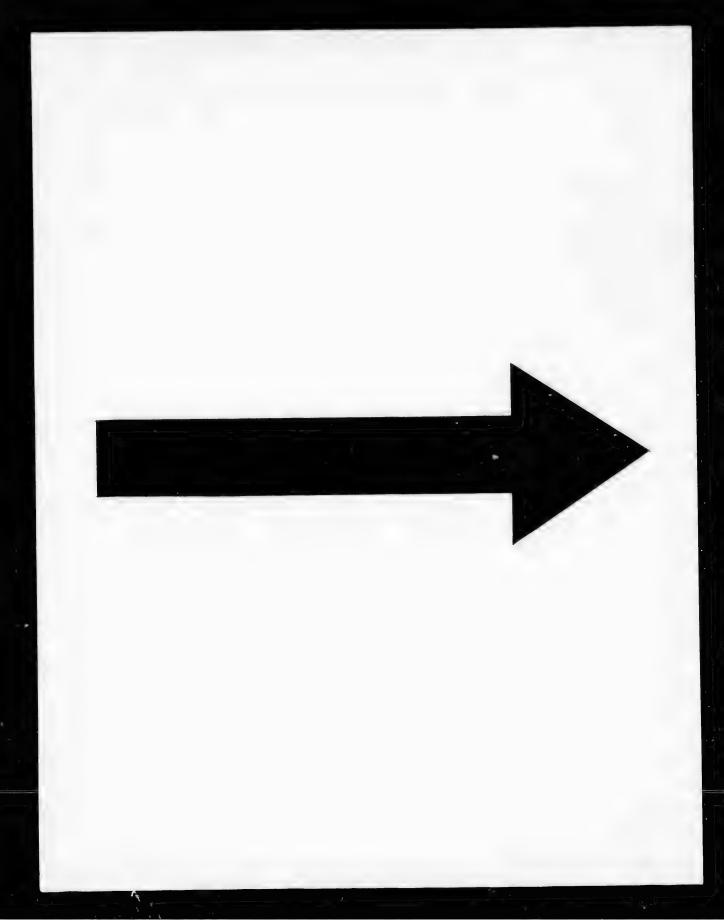
The shee-oak, or casuarina, is the tree which is generally selected for this purpose, partly because it is one of the commonest trees of Australia, and partly because the peculiar growth of its boughs affords a firm platform for the corpse.

The time of mourning does not cease with the funeral, nor, in case of a tree-tomb, with the subsequent interment of the bones. At stated times the women, by whom the mourning is chiefly performed, visit the tomb, and with their kattas, or digging-sticks, peck up the earth around them, and make the place look neat. This done they sit down and utter their most doleful cries and lamentations. In some places they content themselves with vocal lamentations, but in others the women think it necessary to show their grief by repeating the head chopping, limb scarring, and other marks of blood-letting which accompany that portion of the funeral ceremonles.

In one part of Australia, near the north-west bend of the Murray, a most remarkable custom prevails. Widows attend upon the tombs of their dead husbands, and, after shaving their heads, cover them with pipe-clay kneaded into a paste. The head is first covered with a net, to prevent the pipe-clay from sticking too tightly to the skin, a misfortune which is partly averted by the amount of grease with which every Austra-lian is anointed.

A layer of this clay more than an inch in thickness is plastered over the head, and when dry it forms a skull-cap exactly fitting the head on which it was moulded, and on account of its weight, which is several pounds, must be very uncomfertable to the wearer. These badges of mourning may be found lying about near the tumuli, and, until their real use was discovered, they were very mysterious objects to travellers. In the iflustration No. 1, on the 781st page, is seen a burying place near the river. Several of the mound tombs of the natives are shown, and in the foreground are two widows, seated in the peculiar attitude of Australian women, and wearing the widow's cap of pipe-clay. Several other caps are lying near the tombs. having been already employed in the ceremonies of mourning.

So careful are the natives of the marks of respect due from the survivors to the dead; that a widow belonging to one of the tribes on the Clarence River was put to death because she neglected to keep in order the tomb of her late husband, and to dig up periodis



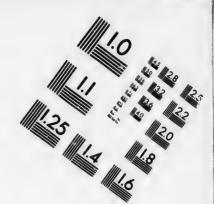
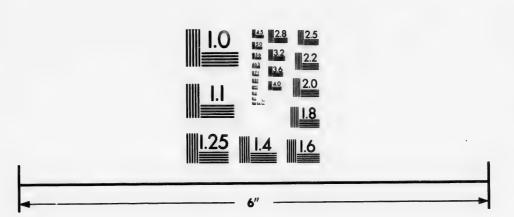


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation 23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503



From the disposal of the dead, we are naturally led to the religious belief of the Australians. Like all savages, they are very reticent about their religious feelings, con-cealing as far as possible their outward observances from the white people, and avowing ignorance, if questioned respecting the meaning of those which have become known to the strangers. Some observances, how-ever, have been explained by Gi'ôm, the unfortunate Scotch woman who had to reside so long among the Kowráregas, and others by native converts to Christianity. Even these latter have not been able to shake off the superstitious ideas which they had contracted through the whole of their pre-vious lives, and there is no doubt that they concealed much from their interro-gators, and, if pressed too closely, wilfully misled them.

The following short account will, however, give an idea of the state of religious feeling among the aborigines, as far as can be ascertained. And, in consequence of the rapid and steady decrease of the native tribes, it is possible that our knowledge of this subject will never be greater than it is at present.

In the first place, there are no grounds for thinking that the aborigines believe in any one Supreme Deity, nor, in fact, in a deity of any kind whatever. As is usual with most savage nations, their belief in supernatural beings is limited to those who are capable of doing mischief, and, although the conception of a beneficent spirit which will do good never seems to enter an Australian's mind. he believes fully, in his misty fashion, in the existence of many evil spirits which will do

Of these there are many. One of them is the Arlak, a being which takes the shape of a man. It is only seen at night, and is in the habit of watching for stragglers in the dark, seizing them and carrying them off. Several natives told Mr. McGillivray that they had seen the arlak; and one man, who had summoned enough courage to fight it when it attacked him, showed the marks of the demon's teeth upon his body. For-tunately, the arlak cannot endure light, and therefore the natives, if they have to go the smallest distance in the dark, take a fire-stick in one hand and a weapon of some sort in

One kind of evil spirit, which is very much dreaded by the aborigines, is the one in whom death is personified. He is short, thick, very ugly, and has a disagreeable smell. The natives of the Moorundi district believe in a native spirit, wonderfully similar in attributes to the Necker of Germen mythology. Although, according to their accounts, it is very common, they have great difficulty in describing it, and, as far been grounds for believing it to be merely an exaggeration of the cuttle-fish.

Throughout the greater part of Australia is found the belief in the Bunyip, a demon which infests woods, and which has been seen, as is said, not only by natives but by white men. The different accounts of the animal vary extremely. Some who have seen it aver it to be as large as a horse, to have a pair of eyes as big as saucers, and a pair of enormous horns.

Others give a very different account of it, and one of the Barrabool Hill natives gave a very animated description of the dreaded bunyip. He illustrated his lecture by a spirited drawing, in which the bunyip was represented as having a long neck and head, something like that of the giraffe, a thick flowing mane, and two short and massive fore-legs, each of which was armed with four powerful talons. The entire body was covered with strong scales, overlapping each other like those of the hawksbill turtle. This creature he represented as half beast, half demon, and vaunted the superior courage of his ancestors, who ventured to oppose this terrible creature as it lay in wait for their wives and children, and drove it out of the reeds and bush into the water whence it

Thinking that some large and now extinct beast might have lived in Australia, which might have been traditionally known to the aborigines, scientific men have taken particular pains to ransack those portions of the country which they could reach, in hopes of finding remains which might be to Australia what those of the megatherium and other huge monsters are to the Old World. Nothing of the kind has, however, been found. Some very large bones were once discovered on the banks of a shallow salt lagoon (just the place for the bunyip), but when sent to the British Museum they were at once found to be the remains of a gigantic kangaroo. At present, the legend of the bunyip stands on a level with that of the kraken - every native believes it, some aver that they have seen it, but no one has ever discovered the

least tangible proof of its existence.

To these evil spirits the natives attribute every illness or misfortune, and in consequence are anxious to avoid or drive them away. All meteors are reckoned by them among the evil spirits, and are fancifully thought to be ghosts which multiply by selfdivision. The aborigines think, however, that by breathing as loudly as they can, and repeating some cabalistic words, they disarm the demons of their power.

They have one very curious belief,—namely, that any one who ventured to sleep on the grave of a deceased person, he would ever afterward be freed from the power of as can be ascertained from their statements, evil spirits. The ordeal is, however, so terit is like a huge star-fish. This demon inrible that very few summon up sufficient habits the fresh water, or there might have courage to face it. "During that awful

sleep tl him, se him, ta afterwa Such as terrible the nigh are the and pra the othe

In Southat the who one are dogs groups of sun or n calamity, disease a

All bur liable to therefore those whi considered account o ments, me Some of

esting by showing really poss artistic po which prev induced to reason for dibbil walk nate enoug siderable n carvings, ar his service scription is his own wor

"The mos bles around of Port Jack and remarks history of t this portion "I refer to into the surfi hood, and es

various pron the coast. A considerable rocks upon m ing the water the present t mained unobs friend Mr. Mi of a kangaroo rock near Can make a carefu interesting rer nearly extinct

About a de Broken Bay tr the bushes on water lake, clo to be merely ìsh. of Australia

yip, a demon atives but by counts of the ne who have as a horse, to aucers, and a

account of it. natives gave a the dreaded lecture by a bunyip was eck and bead. raffe, a thick and massive armed with ire body was rlapping each ksbill turtle. s half beast. perior courred to oppose in wait for rove it out of er whence it

now extinct tralia, which nown to the taken par-, in hopes of to Australia n and other orld. Nothbeen found. e discovered agoon (just hen sent to t once found angaroo. At ip stands on every nather they have covered the

ice. es attribute d in consedrive them ed by them e fancifully iply by self-, however, ey can, and they disarm

B belief. red to sleep n, he would e power of ever, so terp sufficient that awful

sleep the spirit of the deceased would visit amongst them we selected 'Old Queen him, seize him by the throat, and, opening him, take out his bowels, which it would afterward replace, and close up the wound! Such as are hardy enough to go through this terrible ordeal—encounter the darkness of the night and the solemnity of the grave — are thenceforth 'koradjee' men, or priests, and practise sorcery and incantations upon the others of their tribe."

In Southern Australia, the natives believe that the sun and moon are human beings, who once inhabited the earth. The planets are dogs belonging to the moon, who run about her; and the various constellations are groups of children. An eclipse of either the sun or moon is looked upon as a terrible calamity, being sure to be the forerunner of disease and death.

All burial-places of the dead are held as liable to be haunted by evil spirits, and are therefore avoided. Promontories, especially those which have rocky headlands, are also considered as sacred; and it is probably on account of that idea that the skull monuments, mentioned on page 773, are raised.

Some of these places are rendered interesting by specimens of native drawings, showing that the aborigines of Australia really possess the undeveloped elements of rearry possess the undeveloped elements of artistic power. Owing to the superstition which prevails, the natives can scarcely be induced to visit such spots, giving as their reason for refusing that "too much dibbil-dibbil walk there." Mr. Angas was fortunate enough, however, to discover a considerable number of these drawings and carvings, and succeeded in impressing into his service an old native woman. His description is so vivid, that it must be given in his own words: -

"The most important result of our rambles around the bays and rocky promontories of Port Jackson was the discovery of a new and remarkable feature connected with the history of the natives formerly inhabiting

this portion of New South Wales.
"I refer to their carvings in outline, cut into the surface of flat rocks in the neighborhood, and especially on the summits of the various promontories about the harbors of the coast. Although these carvings exist in considerable numbers, covering all the flat rocks upon many of the headlands overlooking the water, it is a singular fact that up to the present time they appear to have re-mained unobserved; and it was not until my friend Mr. Miles first noticed the rude figure of a kangaroo out upon the surface of a flat rock near Camp Cove, that we were led to make a careful search for these singular and interesting remains of a people who are now

"About a dozen natives of the Sydney and Broken Bay tribes were encamped amongst the bushes on the margin of a small fresh-

Gooseberry' (as she is generally styled by the colonists) to be our guide, promising her a reward of flour and tobacco if she would tell us what she knew about these carvings, and conduct us to all the rocks and headlands in the neighborhood where like figures existed. At first the old woman objected, saying that such places were all koradjee ground, or 'priest's ground,' and that she must not visit them; but at length, becoming more communicative, she told us all she knew, and all that she had heard her and she knew, and an dust she had heard her father say, respecting them. She likewise consented at last to guide us to several spots near the North Land, where she said the carvings existed in greater numbers; as also the impressions of hands upon the sides of

high rocks.
"With some difficulty we prevailed upon the haggard old creature to venture with us into a whale-boat; so, with Queen Goose-berry for our guide, we crossed to the North Land. After examining the flat rocks in every direction, we found sufficient examples of these singular outlines to confirm at once the opinion that they were executed by the aboriginal inhabitants; but at what period is quite uncertain. From the half-obliterated state of many of them (although the lines are cut nearly an inch deep into the hard rock), and from the fact that from several of them we were compelled to clear away soil and shrubs of long-continued growth, it is evident that they have been

executed a very long time.
"At first we could not bring ourselves to believe that these carvings were the work of savages, and we conjectured that the figure of the kangaroo might have been the work of some European; but when, pursuing our researches further, we found all the most out-of-the-way and least accessible head-lands adorned with similar carvings, and also that the whole of the subjects represented indigenous objects - such as kangaroos, opossums, sharks, the heileman or shield, the boomerang, and, above all, the human figure in the attitudes of the corrobboree dances—we could come to no other conclusion than that they were of native origin. Europeans would have drawn ships, and horses, and men with hats upon their heads, had they attempted such a laborious

and tedious occupation. "An old writer on New South Wales, about the year 1808, remarks, when referring to the natives, They have some taste for sculpture, most of their instruments being carved with rude work, effected with pieces of broken shell; and on the rocks are frequently to be seen various figures of fish, clubs, swords, animals, &c., not contempti-

bly represented.'
"Some of the figures of fish measured twenty-five feet in length; and it is curious water lake, close to Camp Cove; and from that the representations of the shield ex-

eries of native delineations in caves upon the north-west coast of Australia, during his expedition of discovery. At Lane Cove, at Port Aiken, and at Point Piper, we also met with similar carvings. Whilst on a met with similar carvings. Whilst on a visit at the latter place, it occurred to me that on the flat rocks at the extremity of the grounds belonging to the estate where I was staying, there might be carvings similar to those at the Heads; and on searching carefully I found considerable numbers of them in a tolerably perfect state of preservation.
Of all these I took measurements, and
made careful fac-simile drawings on the spot."

In the appendix to his work, Mr. Angas gives reduced copies of these figures, some of which are executed with wonderful spirit and fidelity. Even the human figures, and fidelity. Even the human figures, which are shown with extended arms and which are shown with extended arms and spread legs, as in the dance, are far better than those usually drawn by savages, infinitely superior to those produced by the artists of Western Africa, while some of the animals are marvellously accurate, reminding the observer of the outline drawings upon Egyptian monuments. The best are, perhaps, a shark and a kangaroo. The latter is represented in the attitude of feeding

ter is represented in the attitude of feeding. In some parts of Australia, the carvings and paintings are usually in caves by the water's edge, and of such a character is the cave which is shown in the illustration No. 2, on the following page. These caves are in sandstone rock, and the figures upon them are mostly those of men and kangaroos, and it is a remarkable fact that in the human figures, although their eyes, noses, and even the joints of the knees, are boldly marked, the mouth is invariably

absent. Human hands and arms are often carved on rocks. One very remarkable example was discovered by Captain Grey in North-West Australia. When penetrating into a large cave, out of which ran a number of smaller caves, the explorers were struck by a really astonishing trick of native art. The sculptor had selected a rock at the side of the cavity, and had drawn upon it the figure of a hand and arm. This had then been painted black, and the rock around it colored white with pipe-clay, so that on enter-ing the cave it appeared exactly as if the hand and arm of a black man were project-ing through some crevice which admitted

actly corresponded with finat used by the natives of Port Stephens at the present day. These sculptured forms prove that the New spirit leaves the body, it wanders about for Hollanders exercised the art of design, which has been questioned, and they also serve to corroborate Captain Grey's discovery the corresponding to th They believe, for example, that when the spirit leaves the body, it wanders about for some time in darkness, until at last it finds a cord, by means of which a "big black-fella spirit" named Oomudoo pulls it up from the earth. Yet they appropriate certain parts of the certain set to fit the set of the certain parts of the certain set to fit the certain parts of the certain set to fit the certain parts of the certain set to fit the certain set of the earth as the future residence of the different tribes, the spirits of the departed Nanos being thought to dwell in the islands of Spencer's Gulf, while those of the Parnkal-las go to other islands toward the west. As is go to other islands toward the west. If to contradict both ideas, we have already seen that throughout the whole of Australia the spirits of the dead are supposed to haunt the spots where their bodies lie buried.

And, to make confusion worse confounded, And, to make confusion worse confounces, the aborigines believe very firmly in transmigration, some fancying that the spirits of the departed take up their abode in animals, but by far the greater number believing that they are transformed into white men. This latter belief was put very successful. cincily by a native, who stated in the odd jar-gon employed by them, that "when black-fella tumble down, he jump up all same

white-fella."

This idea of transmigration into the forms of white men is very remarkable, as it is shared by the negro of Africa, who could not have had any communication with the black native of Australia. And, still more strangely, like the Africans, they have the same word for a white man and for a spirit. The reader may remember that when Mrs. Thompson was captured by the natives, one of them declared that she was his daughter Gi'on, who had become a white woman, and the rest of the tribe coincided in the belief. Yet, though she became for the second time a member of the tribe, they always seemed to feel a sort of mistrust and often, when the children were jeering at her on account of her light complexion and ignorance of Australian accomplishments, some elderly person would check them, and tell them to leave her in peace, as, poor thing, she was nothing but a ghost.

It has been found, also, that numbers of

white persons have been recognized by the blacks as being the spirits of their lost relatives, and have in consequence been digni-fled with the names of those whom they represented. Mr. M'Gillivray mentions that the natives of Port Essington have a slight modification of this theory, believing that after death they become Malays.

Of their belief in the metempsychosis, or

transmigration into animal forms, there are but few examples. Dr. Bennett mentions that on one occasion, at Berana Plains, when an European was chasing one of the native Their belief in ghosts implies a knowledge animals, a native who was with him begged that the spirit of man is immortal. Yet their ideas on this subject are singularly was "him brother." When it was killed, misty, not to say inconsistent, one part of he was very angry, and, as a proof his sinng the other. at when the errs about for t last it finds sig black-fella tup from the ertain parts of of the differented Nauos he islands of the Parnkalhe west. As have already to faustralia supposed to r bodies lie

e confounded, mly in transthe spirits of bode in aninumber beed into white put very sucn the odd jarwhen blackup all same

into the forms able, as it is aca, who could tion with the nd, still more hey have the d for a spirit, at when Mrs. e natives, one his daughter thite woman, acided in the came for the ne tribe, they of mistrust, er jeering at mplexion and anplishments, sek them, and as, poor thing,

t numbers of gnized by the heir lost relabeen dignie whom they mentions that have a slight elieving that

npsychosis, or rms, there are tett mentions. Plains, when of the native h him begged it alive, as it it was killed, proof his sin-



(1.) AUSTRALIAN WIDOWS AND THEIR CAPS.

(See page 777.)



(2.) CAVE WITH NATIVE DRAWINGS.

(See page 780.)

cerity, r
grumbli
bling do
The I
involves
a time,
Willoo,
the won
two. T
followed
off the
so that h
by a ding
and was
has ever
of Willoo
The sa
was the o
sequence
using the
Followin
male liza
women d
Connec
of creatio
they have
sess some

followed by Willoo. They, however, broke off the branch on which he was climbing, so that he fell to the ground, and was seized by a dingo below, when he immediately died, and was changed into an eagle hawk, which has ever afterward been called by the name of Willoo.

The same tribe think that a small lizard was the originator of the sexes, and in con-sequence call it by different names; the men using the term ibirri, and the women waka. Following up the idea, the men kill every male lizard that they can find, while the women do the same by the females.

Connected with this subject is their idea they have not the least notion, but they possess some traditions as to the origin of men

cerity, refused to eat any of it, continually or natural objects. The Kowrárega tribe grumbling and complaining of the "tum-sey that the first created man was a huge sey that the first created man was a huge giant named Adi. One day, while he was fishing off Hammond Island, he was caught The Nauo tribe preserve a tradition which involves this metempsychosis. Once upon a time, a certain great warrior, named Willoo, fought their tribe, and carried off all the women, and killed all the men except committed suicide by flinging themselves into the sea, and were immediately changed into the sea, and were immediately changed into a series of dry rocks on a neighboring reef. These rocks are still called by the natives Ipile, i.e. the Wives.

The natives of the Lower Murray have a the natives of the Lower Bully have a curious tradition respecting the origin of the river, and the Alexandrina and Albert Lakes. The river was made by Oomudoo, the "big black-fella spirit," already mentioned. He came down from the sky in his canoe, and ordered the water to rise and form the river, which he then clothed with bulrushes and populated with fish. He brought two wives with him, but they unfortunately proved intractable, and ran away Connected with this subject is their idea from him, whereupon Oomudoo made the of creation. Of a single Creator of all things two lakes in question, one of which drowned each wife.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

AUSTRALIA - Concluded

ARCHITECTURE AND BOAT-BUILDING.

PARALLEL BETWEEN THE BOSJESMAN AND THE AUSTRALIAN - MODES OF BUILDING HUTS -- A SUMMER ENCAMPMENT-RUDE NATURE OF THE HUTS-RETREATS OF THE WOMEN-BONE HUTS OF ENCOUNTER BAY — WINTER HOUSES — HUTS NEAR THE COORUNG — FIRE-MAKING — BIRD-SNABING - A SELF-ACTING SNARE - BOAT-BUILDING - USES OF THE STRINGY BARK - A FRAIL VESSEL -CANCE FOR CENERAL USE - THE REED CANCE - GRADUAL EXTINCTION OF NATIVE TRIBES.

In many points the Australian savage bears a curious resemblance to the Bosjesman of Southern Africa, of whom a full account has already been given at 242-268 page.

So similar, indeed, are they, that the col-onists use the word Bushman to designate the native savage, just as they call the spot-ted dasyure by the name of cat, and the wombat by that of badger. Much confusion has consequently arisen; and there is now before me a book descriptive of savage life, in which the author has mixed up the Bosjesman of Africa and the Bushman of Australia in the most amusing manner, actually transplanting a quotation from a book of African travels into the account of Australia.

Like the Bosjesman, the Australian depends upon his weapons for the greater part pends upon his weapons for the greater part of his food, living almost entirely upon the game which he kills, and being skilled in the art of destroying the wariest and most active of animals with the simplest of weapons. He lives in a state of perpetual feed, his quarrels not being worthy of the name of warfers; and his heart of the lives in the lives i name of warfare; and his beau idéal of a warrior is a man who steals upon his enemy by craft, and kills his foe without danger to himself.

He cultivates no land, neither has he the least notion of improving his social condition. He cares nothing for clothes, except, perhaps, as a partial shelter from the elements, and utterly ridicules the notion that there is any connexion between clothing and modesty.

Indeed, on one occasion, when a girl had been presented with a petticoat by a white than her forefathers, that she should want to wear clothes like the white strangers. The consequence was, that in a day or two the solitary garment was thrown aside, and she walked about as before, in the primitive

accoutrements of her tribe.

Like the African Bosjesman, the Australian native has no settled home, although he considers himself as having a right to the district in which his tribe have taken up their abode. Contrary to the usage of civilized life, he is sensitive on the general question, and careless in detail. With civilized beings the hearth and home take the first place in the affections, the love of country being merely an extension of the love of home. With the Australian, however, as well as the Bosjesman, the case is just reversed. He has no home, and cares not for any one spot more than another, except that some spots are sheltered and others exposed. He passes a semi-nomad existence, not unlike that of the Arab, save that instead of pitching his tent on a convenient spot, and taking it away when he leaves it, he does not trouble himself even to carry the simple materials of a tent, but builds a rude hut in any spot which he may happen to fancy, and leaves it to decay when he for-sakes the spot.

The chief object of the ordinary hut made by an Australian savage is to defend the inmates from the cold south-west breezes. Consequently, the entrances of the huts may be found, as a rule, turned toward the north-east, whence come the warm winds that have passed over the equator.

The summer encampment (see page 787) lady, and returned to her people, displaying with pride her newly acquired property, her companions instead of displaying envy at her finery, only jeered at her, inquiring the enclosed space varying with the number whether she thought herself so much better of the family. These boughs are seldom

more t scarcel being i squat r any on is stand nation other s when h trouble

All th try of sa if labor nobility. " noble s the nativ a place v with foo enormou is there and, as In the

example natives h usual, an form the spears, sl natives a round the satisfied perceive an encam and, inde scarcely are encan project ab distance r the inhab observatio ment in a ing objects with the their needs In many

in structure the eucaly natives ma appearance. strip off the six or seve branches o ground, so framework, flakes of ba will make o tives have any care of which a nati be inferior boy of ten I remember those of the the time mu

habitation

more than four feet in height, and often scarcely exceed a yard, their only object being to keep off the wind from the fire, and from the bodies of the natives as they squat round the flame or lie asleep. That which they can be made, and the shelter which they really desire from the shelter which they really desired the shelter which they are the shelter which the shelter which they are the shelter which the shelter which the sh is standing never seems to enter the imagination of an Australian savage, who, like other savages, never dreams of standing when he can sit, or, indeed, of taking any trouble that is not absolutely necessary.

All the stories that are told of the industry of savage life are pure inventions, and if labor be, as we are often told, the truest nobility, we ought to hear no more of the "noble savage." Consistently with this idea, the native 'Australian's only idea of the hut is a place where he can sit and gorge himself with food, and lie down to sleep after his enormous meal. A fence a yard in height is therefore quite good enough for him, and, as long as no rain falls, he thinks a roof to be a needless expenditure of labor.

In the illustration referred to we have an example of an encampment on which the natives have bestowed rather more care than usual, and have actually taken the pains to The reader will perceive that from a little distance such an encampment would be almost invisible; and, indeed, except by the thin smoke of the fire, the most practised eye can scarcely detect the spot where natives are encamping. Even the spears which project above the bush huts look at a little distance merely like dried sticks; and, if distance merely like dried sucks; and, if the inhabitants be very anxious to escape observation, they establish their encamp-ment in a retired spot, where the surround-ing objects harmonize as closely as possible with the rude shelter which answers all their needs.

In many places the natives construct a habitation similar in principle, but differing in structure. Should the locality abound in the eucalypytus, or stringy-bark tree, the natives make a hut altogether different in appearance. With wonderful dexterity, they strip off the bark of the tree in large flakes, six or seven feet in length. A few large branches of trees are then laid on the ground, so that they form a rough sort of framework, and upon these branches the flakes of bark are laid. An hour's labor will make one of these huts, so that the natives have really no inducement to take any care of them. Even the very best hut which a native Australian ever made would be inferior to the handiwork of an English boy of ten years old. For my own part, I remember building far better huts than those of the Australians, though I was at

There is, nowever, one great advantage in these bark huts — nt. nely, the rapidity with which they can be made, and the shelter which they really do give from the traveler's great enemy, the night wind. Even European travellers have been glad to avail the number of these simple attentions and the number of these simple attentions. themselves of these simple structures, and have appreciated the invaluable aid of a few sheets of bark propped against a fallen branch. Those who have been forced to travel without tents through a houseless country have learned by experience that the very best shelter from the night winds is not height, but width. A tree, for example, forms but a very poor shelter, while a low wall barely eighteen inches high and six feet in length keeps off the wind, and enamed to the state of the wind, and enamed to the state of the wind. bles the wearied traveller to rest in comparative comfort. Such a shelter is easily made from the sheets of stringy bark, one or two of which will form a shelter for several sleepers.

Perhaps the simplest huts that human beings ever dignified by the name of habitaform the branches into rude huts. The of a tribe when the men are away. It somespears, shields, and other weapons of the times happens that the whole of the adult tion are those which are made by the women round the fire sit or lie the men who have last for a considerable time—such, for example, as a raid upon a neighboring tribe -leaving the women and children to take care of themselves. These, knowing that they might be pounced upon by enemies who would take advantage of the absence of their defenders, retire into the recesses of the woods, where they build the oddest houses imaginable, half burrows scraped among the roots of trees, and half huts made of bark and decayed wood. These habitations are so inconspicuous that even the practised eye of the native can scarcely discover them.

On the shores of Encounter Bay may be seen some very curious habitations. now and then a whale is thrown ashore by a tempest; and in such a case the tribes of the neighborhood flock round it with great rejoicings, seeing in it an unlimited supply of food. Huge as the animal may be, it is re long consumed, and nothing left but the keleton. Of the bones the natives make the framework of their huts, the ends of the ribs being fixed in the ground, so that the bones form the supports of the arched roof, which is nothing more than boughs, grass, and matting thrown almost at random upon the bony framework.

During the winter time the native huts are of better construction, although the best hut that an Australian ever made is but a very rude and primitive specimen of architecture. These winter huts are made on the same principle as those employed in those of the Australians, though I was at summer, but the materials are more closely the time much below ten years of age, and put together. The framework of these huts

S-A STIMMER NE HUTS OF BIRD-SNABING AIL VESSEL -TRIBES.

should want

e strangers. day or two n aside, and he primitive the Austrane, although a right to the ve taken up sage of civif-

eneral ques-ith civilized ke the first of country the love of however, as e is just recares not for , except that others exad existence, ave that ina convenient he leaves it, en to carry but builds a may happen when he for-

rdinary hut e is to de-l south-west rances of the rned toward warm winds

ee page 787) simple. tuck in the the size of the number are seldom

is made by sticking a number of saplings in the ground, and tying them together. Smaller branches and twigs are then passed in and out of the uprights, and pressed down to make a tolerably firm wall. Over the wall comes a layer of large leaves, and an outer covering of tea-tree bark is placed over the trees, and held in its place by a lashing of rattan. These houses are about five feet in height, and have an arched openfive feet in height, and have an arched opening just large enough for a man to enter on

his hands and knees.

Such huts as these, however, are but seldom seen, the ordinary winter dwellings being made of bushes, as seen in an illustration on the next page. Near the en-trance, but not within it, the fire is kindled, and at night the natives crowd into the hut, and at night the natives crowd into the nut, filling it so completely that a view of the interior displays nothing but a confused mass of human limbs. The reader will perceive that the luxury of a door has not been contemplated by the native architects—an omission which is perhaps rather fortunate, considering the crowded state of the interior.

Along the shores of the Coorung a rather peculiar kind of habitation is used. It must first be mentioned that the Coorung is a back-water inlet of the sea, running parallel to it for some ninety miles or so, never more than a mile and a half from the sea, and divided from it only by a range of enormous sandhills. It is a wild and desolate place, but is inhabited by the Milmendura tribe, who made themselves so notorious for the massacre of the passengers and men of the ship Maria. The natives probably like the spot, because in the Coorung, which is protected from the ocean waves by the sandhills, they can take fish without danger, and because the sandhills furnish a fruit called the monterry, or native apple, as, although a berry growing upon a creeping plant, it looks and tastes like a miniature apple.

The situation is much exposed in the winter time to the cold south-west blasts, and the natives accordingly make compara-tively strong huts. Their dwellings are formed of a framework of sticks, over which is plastered a thick layer of turf and mud. In addition to this they heap over the hut a great quantity of the sand and shells of which the ground is chiefly composed, so that the houses of the Milmendura look like mere mounds or hillocks rising from the

sandy soil.

The fire which is found in every Australian encampment is generally procured by friction from two pieces of wood, one being twirled rapidly between the hands and the other held firmly by the feet. Indeed, the Australian savage produces fire exactly as does the South African (see page 100). This accomplishment, however, is not universal, some tribes being unable to produce fire, and being dependent on the "fire-sticks" which the tempting object, and in so doing pulls

the women carry with them. It has occasionally happened that the women have been careless enough to allow all their fire-sticks to expire, and in such a case they are obliged to go to the nearest friendly tribe, and beg a light from them, in order to procure fire wherewith to cook the game that their husbands have brought home.

Before leaving this part of the subject, it will be as well to mention briefly a few of the devices used by the Australian natives

One of these devices is remarkably ingenious, and is principally employed in duck catching. The natives find out a spot where the ducks resort in order to feed, and arrange their nets so that they may intercept birds that fly down upon them. When the ducks are all busy feeding, the native hunter, who has concealed himself near the place, alarms the birds by suddenly imitating the cry of the fish-hawk, one of their deadliest foes. The terrified ducks rise in a body; but, just as they ascend, the wily native flings into the air a triangular piece of bark, imitating again the cry of the hawk. The birds, fancying that the hawk is sweeping down upon them, try to escape by darting into the reeds, and are caught in the nets.

Another ingenious plan is used for cap-aring birds singly. The native makes a turing birds singly. The native makes a sort of screen of branches, and conceals himself within it. In his hand he carries a long and slender rod, at the end of which there is a noose, and within the noose a bait. Under cover of the screen he comes close to the bird, and gently places the treacherous noose near it. By degrees the bird comes closer and closer to the bait, and, as soon as its head is fairly within the noose, it is secured by a dexterous twist of the hand. Sometimes the native does not employ a bait. He builds his simple shelter by some spot where birds are accustomed to drink, and calls them by imitating their note. They come to the spot, and, not seeing their companions, perch upon the sticks under which the hunter is concealed, a large bunch of grass being generally used to prevent the birds from seeing him. As soon as the bird perches, he slips the noose over its head, draws it inside the shelter, kills it, and waits for another.

In some parts of the country the natives make a self-acting snare, very much on the principle of the nets used in snaring rabbits. It consists of a sort of bag, and has its opening encircled by a running string, the other end of which is fastened to some fixed ob-ject, such as a tree-stump. The bag is made of split rattans, so that it remains open, and, as the meshes are very wide, the bait which is placed within it can easily be seen. If a bird or animal should come to the

bait, which is fixed at the very extremity of the bag, it naturally forces its way toward

It has occaen have been ir fire-sticks y are obliged be, and beg a procure fire at their hus-

he subject, it efly a few of alian natives

markably inemployed in
dout a spot
to feed, and
sy may interhem. When
g, the native
self near the
dealy imitatone of their
ucks rise in a
the wily naular piece of
of the hawk.
wk is sweepeape by darttin the nets,
used for capcive makes a
and conceals
he carries a
and of which
mose a bait.
ones close to
treacherous
and, as soon
e noose, it is
of the hand.
ot employ a
lter by some
ed to drink,
their note,
seeing their
sticks under
a large bunch

ver its head, it, and waits by the natives much on the aring rabbits. has its opening, the other me fixed oblag is made no open, and, he bait which to seen.

prevent the on as the bird

come to the extremity of way toward doing pulls



(1.) WINTER HUTS. (See page 786.)



(2.) A SUMMER ENCAMPMENT. (See page 784.)

upon the bag beh firmer is taken out ingeniou coots and sometim.

The na which is baskets a A numbor of care, so by eight mouth, tapered fidenly enispocket, the into the befrom retrivable in a narrowers force party of r

in a narro were force party of r The rea 785 there bark," am same bark purposes, a is perhaps native con does not w with a boa Going to the chops a sec is to make of the tree, other side. his tomaha implement, and, by ju bark it tweeter

pieces each into a boat. Should himself to gether at e this frail verthe river. person, shot summitty of ing it into e the bark or reaches the the canoe bit, knowing into the nearl of the first.

upon the string and closes the mouth of the bag behind it. The more it struggles, the firmer is it held; and so it remains until it is taken out, and the trap set again. This very ingenious snare is used mostly for bandl-coots and similar animals, though birds are

sometimes caught in it.

The natives have another self-acting trap, which is identical in principle with the eel baskets and lobster pots of our own country. A number of these traps were found by Mr. Carron in some huts near Princess Charlotte's Bay. They were made of strips mouth. From the opening they gradually tapered for some four feet, and then suddenly enlarged into a large round basket or pocket, the lower ends of the neck projecting into the basket so as to hinder any animal from returning through the passage by which it entered. This trap was used indifferently for catching fish and small animals. For the latter purpose it was laid in their track, and for the former it was placed in a narrow channel, through which the fish were forced to pass by being driven by a party of natives in the water.

The reader will remember that on page 785 there is a reference to the "stringybark," and its use in architecture. The same bark is used for a great number of purposes, among which that of boat-building is perhaps the most conspicuous. Should a native come to the side of a river which he does not wish to swim, he supplies himself with a boat in a very expeditious manner. Going to the nearest stringy-bark trees, and choosing one which has the lines of the bark straight and not gnarled, he chops a circle round the tree so as to sever the bark, and about seven or eight feet higher he chops a second circle. His next proceeding is to make a longitudinal cut down one side of the tree, and a corresponding one on the other side. He then inserts the handle of his tomahawk, his digging-stick, or any such implement, between the bark and the wood, and, by judicious handling, strips off the bark in two semi-cylindrical, trough-like pieces each of which is capable of being made into a boat.

Should he be alone, he seldom troubles himself to do more than tie the bark together at each end of the trough, and in this frail vesssel he will commit himself to the river. But if his wife, or any second person, should be with him, he makes the simple boat more trustworthy by digging a quantity of clay out of the river bank, kneading it into each end of the trough, and tying the bark over the clay. As soon as he reaches the opposite shore, he lands, pushes the canoe back into the river and abandons it, knowing that to make a second canoe will not be nearly so troublesome as to take care

of the first.

If, however, he wants a canoe in which he goes fishing, and which, in consequence, must be of a stronger make, he still adheres to the stringy bark as his material, though takes more care in the manufacture. The bark is bent, like the birch bark of the North American Indians, by moisture and heat; and even with this better kind of boat clay is required at each end, and is also

used for stopping up any leakage. He also exhibits a still better use of the stringy-bark. The bark is not only formed Charlotte's Bay. They were made of strips into a boat-like shape, but it is kept in its of cane, and were about five feet in length by eight or nine inches in diameter at the mouth. From the opening they gradually tapered for some four feet, and then suddenly enlarged into a large round basket or regular paddle instead of the fish spear; and packet the lower ands of the neck projecting. altogether the boat and the accompanying implements remind the observer of the birch-bark canoes and vessels of America.

Another simple form of boat is made on a totally different principle from those which have already been described, and, instead of being a hollow trough of bark, is a solid bundle of reeds and sticks tied together in a very ingenious manner, and giving sup-port to one or more persons, according to its

SUCH is the history of the aboriginal tribes of Australia, whose remarkable manners and customs are fast disappearing, together with the natives themselves. poor creatures are aware of the fact, and seem to have lost all pleasure in the games and dances that formerly enlivened their existence. Many of the tribes are altogether extinct, and others are disappearing so fast that the people have lost all heart and spirit, and succumb almost without complaint to the fate which awaits them. In one tribe, for example, the Barrabool, which numbered upward of three hundred, the births during seventeen years were only twenty-four, being scarcely two births in three years; while the deaths had been between eighteen and nineteen per annum.

Mr. Lloyd gives a touching account of the survivors of this once flourishing

tribe:

"When I first landed in Geelong, in 1837, the Barrabool tribe numbered upward of three hundred sleek and healthy-looking blacks. A few months previous to my leavstrolling up to a couple of miam-miams, or native huts, that were erected upon the banks of the Burwan River, I observed seated there nine loobras (women) and one sickly child.

"Seeing so few natives, I was induced to ask after numbers of my old dark friends of early days - Ballyyang, the chief of the Barrabool tribe, the great Jaga-jaga, Panige-rong, and many others, when I received the following pathetic reply: 'Aha, Mitter

Looyed, Ballyyang dedac (dead), Jaga-jaga regret that entire races of men, possessing dedac; Panigerong dedac, &c., naming many fine qualities, should be thus passing many others; and, continuing their sorrowful away; but it is impossible not to perceive tale, they chanted, in minor and funereal tones, in their own soft language, to the fol-

lowing effect:
"The stranger white man came in his gree swimming corong (vessel), and landed at Corayio with his dedabul boulganas (large animals), and his anaki boulganas (little animals). He came with his boombooms (double guns), his white miam-miams (tents), blankets, and tomahawks; and the dedabul ummageet (great white stranger) took away the long-inherited hun-ing-grounds of the poor Barrabool coolies and their children, &c., &c.

"Having worked themselves into a fit of

passionate and excited grief, weeping, shaking their heads, and holding up their hands in bitter sorrow, they exclaimed, in wild and frenzied tones: 'Coolie! coolie! coolie! where are our coolies now! Where are our fathers — mothers — brothers — sisters? Dead! — all gone! dead!' Then, in broken Looyed, tir; by 'm by all dem black fella come back white fella like it you.' Such is the belief of the poor aborigines of Victoria; hence we may firmly infer that they possess a latent spark of hope in their minds as to another and better world.

"Then, with outstretched finger, they showed me the unhappy state of the aborig-inal population. From their statement it appeared that there existed of the tribe at that moment only nine women, seven men, and one child. Their rapid diminution in numbers may be traced to a variety of causes. First, the chances of obtaining their natural food were considerably lessened by the entire occupation of the best grassed parts of the country, which originally abounded in kangaroo and other animals upon which they subsisted. greater number of these valuable creatures, as an irresistible consequence, retired into the wild uninhabitable countries, far from the haunts of the white man and his destruc-

"Having refused the aid of the Government and the Missionary Societies' establishments at the River Burwan and Mount Rouse, the natives were to a serious extent deprived of animal food, so essential to a people who were ever exposed to the inclemencies of winter and the exhausting heats of summer. Influenza was one of the greatest scourges under which they suffered. Then, among other evils attending their association with the colonists, the brandy, rum, and tobacco told fearfully upon their already weakened constitutions."

This one tribe is but an example of the

many fine qualities, should be thus passing away; but it is impossible not to perceive that they are but following the order of the world, the lower race preparing a home for the higher.

the com

nor ever of savag

is not p

In the present instance, for example, the aborigines performed barely half of their duties as men. They partially exercised their dominion over the beasts and the birds -killing, but not otherwise utilizing them. But, although they inherited the earth, they did not subdue it, nor replenish it. They cleared away no useless bush or forest, to replace them with fruits; and they tilled no land, leaving the earth exactly in the same condition that they found it. Living almost entirely by the chase, it required a very large hunting-ground to support each man, and a single tribe gained a scanty and precarious living on a tract of land sufficient, when cultivated to feed a thousand times their number. In fact, they occupied precisely the same relative position toward the human race as do the lion, tiger, and leopard toward the lower animals, and suffered in consequence from the same law of extinction.

In process of time white men came to introduce new arts into their country, clearing away useless forest, and covering the rescued earth with luxuriant wheat crops, sufficient to feed the whole of the aborigines of the country; bringing also with them herds of sheep and horned cattle to feed upon the vast plains which formerly nourished but a few kangaroo, and to multiply in such numbers that they not only supplied the whole of their adopted land with food, but their flesh was exported to the mother country.

The superior knowledge of the white man thus gave to the aborigines the means of securing their supplies of food; and therefore his advent was not a curse, but a benefit to them. But they could not take advantage of the opportunities thus offered to them, and, instead of seizing upon these new means of procuring the three great necessaries of human life, food, clothing, and lodging, they not only refused to employ them, but did their best to drive them out of the country, murdering the colonists, killing their cattle, destroying their crops, and burning their houses

The means were offered to them of infinitely bettering their social condition, and the opportunity given them, by substituting peaceful labor for perpetual feuds, and of turning professional murderers into food-producers, of replenishing the land which help avariant guarante, irregular mode of their everlasting quarrels, irregular mode of existence, and carelessness of human life had well-nigh depopulated. These means they could not appreciate, and, as a natural consequence, had to make way for those who others, all of whom are surely, and some not slowly, approaching the end of their exform the superior, and such has ever been the istence. For many reasons we cannot but case with the savage. I am persuaded that

en, possessing thus passing ot to perceive e order of the ng a home for

e example, the half of their ally exercised and the birds tilizing them.
the earth, they
hish it. They or forest, to re-they tilled no y in the same Living almost quired a very ort each man, anty and pre-land sufficient, ousand times occupied pre-on toward the er, and leopard ad suffered in of extinction. en came to incountry, clearcovering the wheat crops, the aborigines ith them herds feed upon the urished but a in such numied the whole ood, but their ier country. the white man e means of seand therefore it a benefit to ke advantage ered to them, se new means necessaries of lodging, they

burning their them of incondition, and y substituting feuds, and of ers into food-e land which gular mode of iuman life had e means they a natural conor those who ays make way ever been the ersuaded that

hem, but did the country, g their cattle,

the coming of the white man is not the sole, nor even the chief, cause of the decadence of savage tribes. I have already shown that we can introduce no vice in which the savage is not profoundly versed, and feel sure that

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

NEW ZEALAND.

GENERAL REMARKS.

LOCALITY OF NEW ZEALAND - GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE PROPLE - THE TWO CASTES, AND THEIR SUPPOSED ORIGIN -- CONTRAST BETWEEN THE SEXES -- LAXNESS OF MORALS -- NUMBER OF THE POPULATION, AND THE DIFFERENT TRIBES - MODE OF GOVERNMENT - DISTINCTION BETWEEN RANKS-FORMATION OF THE CLANS, OR SUB-TRIBES-THE SLAVES, THEIR VALUE AND TREAT-MENT-THE TENURE OF LAND-A COMPLEX ARRANGEMENT AND CONSEQUENT DIFFICULTIES-ESTABLISHING A CLAIM—NATIVE LAW—THE "LEX TALIONIS"—SENSITIVENESS TO DISGRACE— THE PREVALENCE OF SUICIDE -STRANGE CONDUCT OF A MAORI CHIEF-THE SISTER'S VEN-GRANGE.

come to the group of islands known collectively as New Zealand. Like Australia, New Zealand possesses many peculiarities of climate and natural production, and is in-habited by a number of tribes which are generally hostile to each other, but which are almost identical in appearance and habits. We shall therefore be enabled to treat of this important portion of the globe with much more brevity than could be the case if, as in Africa, the tribes differed from each other in hue, dress, and customs.

TAKEN as a whole, the New Zealanders are a singularly fine race of people—tall, powerful, and well made. Though varying somewhat in shade, the color is always a brown of some kind, the complexion being sometimes as light as that of a Spaniard, and sometimes of a dark umber. It is, however, always of a clear tint and never approaches to the deep black of the Australian. The nose is straight and well formed, in many cases being boldly aquiline; and the mouth is rather large, and the lips moderately full, though not resembling those of the negro. The cheekbones are rather high, but not much more prominent than those of a genuine Scotchman; and the eyes are large, dark, and vivacious.

The teeth are remarkably white and even, and the feet and hands small and well proportioned, The foot is very well developed, the native never having spoiled its beautiful mechanism with shoes or boots, and being accustomed to use the toes in many tasks wherein a civilized European requires his fingers. The toes are, for example, continingers insensible gradations with the former, and is

SOUTHWARD and eastward of Australia we (ually employed in holding one end of a rope, while the fingers are engaged in twisting or plaiting it; and the consequence is that the natives are able to ridicule with justice the misshapen feet and toes of the European.

The men have naturally a full beard; but they always remove every vestige of hair on the face, in order to show the patterns which are tattooed upon it. Now and then a very old and powerful chief will dare to allow his beard to grow; but, as a rule, the face is divested of all covering: so that the absence of the beard, together with the profuse tattoo, destroys all evidences of age, and makes the countenance of a young man of twenty look nearly as old as that of his grandfather aged

The hair is plentiful, and mostly straight, being twisted and curled by art into the various fashionable forms. In some cases it is light, or even reddish, in color; and in such instances accompanies a complexion of peculiar fairness. Albinism exists among the New Zealanders, but is not agreeable in appearance, the eyes being always weak. and the skin looking as if it had been artificially whitened. In fact, such an albino looks among his dark fellows like a plant that has been bleached by growing in the dark.

There seems to be two castes of men among the New Zealanders. The upper caste is distinguished by the above characteristics; but the lower is shorter in stature, and has coarse and curly, though not woolly hair, more prominent cheekbones, and a much blacker skin. This second race. according to Dr. Dieffenbach, "is mixed in

STES, AND THEIR
NUMBER OF THE
ICTION BETWEEN
LUE AND TREATDIFFICULTIES—
S TO DISGRACE—
E SISTER'S VEN-

e end of a rope,
I in twisting or
nce is that the
with justice the
e European.
full beard; but
stige of hair on
ad then a very
are to allow his
the face is dilat the absence
profuse tattoo,
and makes the
of twenty look
randfather aged

mostly straight, by art into the n some cases it color; and in complexion of exists among not agreeable g always weak, had been artifluch an albmo vs like a plant growing in the

castes of men s. The upper se above charthorter in statly, though not the cheekbones, his second race, h, "is mixed in e former, and is



NEW ZEALANDER FROM CHILDHOOD TO AGE.
(See page 795.)

far less n in any or occupy ar there is n races amo "But I

"But I any man tribe, and pied the perhaps, i stood to country, a ends are s "From

Zealand the darker the soil, a of true Poconquered minated. regarding a observe the hose differ the natives to such a se in all Poly: that they sence of casthe inhabit ocean. "If one

"If one cannot be dit is very curacted of the traces of su where they or in the trhave mentic by the other Crozet, a Fr. Zealand, say North Cape observe notil Visited all darker-colore in the interior the cannot be considered to the constant of the const

"There is of color and of New Zeale circumstance early blendin ence of socia position would hall the New go-Mango, or as unconnects selves; but the tion regarding

As is often
ple, the wom
the men, being
so well made
the harshness
istic of marrie
even taken in
and have grea
Still, the heav

far less numerous; it does not predominate upon their shoulders, and the lot of an ordinary one part of the island, nor does it nary New Zealand wife is rather a severe occupy any particular station in a tribe; and there is no difference made between the two races among themselves.

"But I must observe that I never met any man of consequence belonging to this tribe, and that, although freemen, they occupied the lower grades: from this we may, perhaps, infer the relation in which they stood to the earliest immigrants into the country, although their traditions and leg-ends are silent on the subject.

"From the existence of two races in New Zealand the conclusion might be drawn that the darker were the original proprietors of the soil, anterior to the arrival of a stock of true Polynesian origin; that they were conquered by the latter, and nearly exterminated. This opinion has been entertained regarding all Polynesian islands; but I must observe that it is very doubtful whether those differences which we observe among the natives of New Zealand are really due to such a source. We find similar varieties in all Polynesian islands, and it is probable that they are a consequence of the difference of castes so extensively spread among the inhabitants of the tribes of the great

"If one part of the population of New Zealand are a distinct race - a fact which cannot be denied as regards other islands it is very curious that there should be no traces of such a blending in the language, where they would have been most durable, or in the traditions, which certainly would have mentioned the conquest of one race by the other, if it had happened. Captain Crozet, a Frenchman, who early visited New Zealand, says that he found a tribe at the North Cape darker than the rest. I could observe nothing of the kind there, though I visited all the natives. Nor are those darker-colored individuals more common

in the interior; I should say, even less so.
"There is undoubtedly a greater variety
of color and countenance among the natives of New Zealand than one would expect—a circumstance which might prove either an early blending of different races, or a difference of social conditions, which latter supposition would go far to explain the fact. All the New Zealanders speak of the Mango-Mango, or Blacks of New South Wales, as unconnected with and inferior to themselves; but they never make such a distinction regarding their own tribes."

As is often the case with uncivilized people, the women are decidedly inferior to the men, being much shorter, and not nearly so well made. They are not treated with the harshness which is the usual characteristic of married life among savages, and are even taken into their husbands' counsels,

one. She has to cultivate the ground, to carry the produce of the distant fields to the liouse, and, when the family is travelling, the women have to carry all the heavy loads. It is no wonder, therefore, that a life of such drudgery should tell upon the women, both in preventing the proper development of their frame and in causing their beauty to decay. Those who preserve their beauty longest are the daughters of wealthy chiefs, who can afford slaves by whom all the hard work is done, and who therefore free their mistresses from one of the causes of deterioration.

There is, however, another cause, which is perhaps equally effective, but not so pal-pable. This is the very lax code of morality paple. This is the very lax code of morality which prevails among them, a young girl being permitted the utmost freedom until she is married, although afterward she is a model of constancy. This license is exercised at a very early age, and the natural consequence is that the due development of the frame is checked. This vicious system is so much a metter of course that it corrections. is so much a matter of course, that it carries no reproach with it, and the young girls are remarkable for their modest and childlike demeanor.

Of course they become aged much earlier than those whose development takes place at a later period of life; but they compen-sate for their deteriorated appearance by their peculiar kindliness of demeanor. The engraving No. 1, illustrates the countenance and dress of a New Zealand woman and

her boy

Unlike the men, the women do not disfigure their faces by the tattoo, which gives to them the stern and fixed expression so characteristic of a New Zealand warrior; and they thus allow the really flexible and intelligent features to have full play. The only portions of the face that are marked with the tattoo are the lips, which are rendered blue by the process, as it is considered disgraceful for a woman to have red lips. The tattooing is always performed when the child is allowed to take her place among women; and, as may be imagined, it gives a livid and altogether unpleasant appearance to the mouth.

The children are very pleasing and interesting little creatures. They are full of intelligence, and unusually free and open in their manner. Unlike the children of most savage nations, they live as much with the men as with the women, and partake even in the councils of their parents, thus having their faculties sharpened at a very early age. The illustration opposite gives typical examples of the New Zealander from childhood to age, and the reader will notice the and have great influence in political affairs. lines of the youth, and the harsh, rigid counstill, the heavy work of the household falls tenances of the old man and his consort. contrast between the soft and rounded out-

In proportion to the dimensions of New Zealand, the population is very small; and, even in the earliest days of our acquaintance with it, the land seems to have been but thinly inhabited. That such should be the case is very remarkable, as a very thin population is generally found in those counties where as in Australia the inhabitents. tries where, as in Australia, the inhabitants live principally by the chase, and therefore require a very large tract of land to support them. The New Zealanders, however, do not live by the chase, for the simple reason that there are no animals which are worth the trouble of hunting; so that a family of twenty or so, even if they had the entire country as a hunting-ground, would find themselves in very great straits were they obliged to procure their food by the chase. The reasons for this thin population will be presently seen.

According to Dieffenbach's calculation, the native population of the entire country may be reckoned rather below one hundred and fifteen thousand. These are divided into twelve great tribes, which are again subdivided into sub-tribes, or clans, each of which has its separate name, and is supposed to belong to a certain district. The fighting men, or warriors, form about one-fourth of the whole population; the remaining threefourths being made up of old men, women, and children. Since this calculation the numbers of the aborigines have considerably lessened. The most important of the tribes seems to be the Waikato, which is divided into eighteen clans, and which occupies a very large proportion of the country. This tribe alone can bring into the field six thousand fighting men; so that the entire number of the tribe may be calculated at twenty-four thousand or so.

The Walkato clans have managed to preserve their individuality better than the others, and, though brought much in con-tact with civilization, and having adopted some of the habits of their white visitors, they have still retained many of their ancient customs, and, as Dieffenbach remarks, have preserved much of their ancient

vigor and original virtues.

The tribe that is strongest in mere numbers is the Nga-te-kahuhuna, which inhabits the east coast, and may be reckoned at thirty-six thousand strong. In fact, these two tribes alone outnumber the whole of the others taken collectively. One tribe, the Rangitani, is interesting from the fact that it was described by Captain Cook. In his days it was evidently a large and flourishing tribe, but some few years ago it could scarcely muster three hundred warriors, representing a total number of twelve hundred. The decadence of this tribe is probably owing to the destructive wars in which the New Zealanders engage, and which are often so fierce as to erase a tribe entirely. The government of the New Zealanders

is a curious mixture of simplicity and complication. Monarchy is unknown, each tribe having its own great chief, while an inferior chief presides over each clan, or sub-tribe. The whole of the population may be roughly divided into three ranks. First come the nobility, then the free men, and lastly the slaves. The nobility go by the general name of Rangatira—a title which is always given to officers, missionaries, and other white men who are placed in command over others.

In each tribe one of the Rangatira is the

Ariki, or principal chief; but, as he is necessarily a Rangatira, he is always addressed by that title, and, in consequence, a stranger finds some difficulty, even after a prolonged visit, in ascertaining who is the Ariki. Among the New Zealanders there is no Salic law, so that the Ariki need not be a warrior, and may be a woman. The office is hereditary, and the existing Ariki is always held in the highest veneration in virtue of his descent. Even the hostile tribes respect an Ariki, and in most cases, if he should be captured in battle, the victors will spare his life. One or two of the most powerful chiefs living have been captured and afterward released, whereas, had they been common men, or even ordinary Rangatiras, they would have been killed, their bodies eaten, and their heads dried and fixed as trophies on the houses of their conquerors.

A sort of tax, or tribute, is paid by the different families, though the tax is entirely a voluntary one, and may be great or small, or withheld altogether, at pleasure. Mostly the Ariki is a man of considerable mental powers, and, in such a case, he exercises great authority over the tribe, either as a priest or a warrior. There is nothing to prevent the Ariki from assuming the office of priest, and in many instances he has been able to exercise a far greater influence

been able to exercise a lar greater influence by spiritual than by physical means. The Rangatira are the great men, or nobles, of the land, and with them, as with the Ariki, the rank is hereditary. The law of succession is very remarkable, the eldest son being the heir to his father's rank; but if the child dies, the youngest, and not the next eldest, becomes the lawful successor. These two heirs, the eldest and the young-est sons, are called by a name which signifies

the fat of the earth.

Each Rangatira is independent of his fellows, though they collectively form a sort of body which we may compare with the House of Peers in England. Any Rangatira who has sufficient influence may gather together the members of his clan, build a fortified village, or pah, and become a petty sovereign in his own dominions. It is in this way that the various clans, or subtribes, are formed, each gathering round a noble of more than usual ability, and adopting a name by which the members will ever afterward be known.

The fre warriors; Rangatirs privilege it the rig times a fr generalshi mand of a higher rar in it.

Last cor procured ! captives to of such ca is very gre New Zeals tals in time and spirit; about, and can possib

He may, posts of his blance of t chance, em stone club adorning h is to be do slaves, and daughter w will relieve

There are the appropr considered owner, who and, if he without attr he would n reasons, as valuable ar been cases, the owner e dered them heads. Once a sla

of these unfiget back to apply for his the right of universally r slaves are tr who have a arts, often b owners. So many a war mere purpose the most disa originated in

Connected New Zealand is a strangely inch of groun there are usu low their righ abeyance as l one who can all prefer thei during a leng plicity and comnown, each tribe vhile an inferior in, or sub-tribe. may be roughly First come the n, and lastly the he general name is always given other white men

over others. Rangatira is the t, as he is neceslways addressed quence, a stranven after a pro-who is the Ariki. there is no Salic not be a warrior, office is heredi is always held in virtue of his tribes respect an if he should be ctors will spare most powerful tured and afterthey been comary Rangatiras, ed, their bodies ed and fixed as neir conquerors.
, is paid by the le tax is entirely e great or small, leasure. Mostly siderable mental se, he exercises ribe, either as a e is nothing to

greater influence l means. great men, or th them, as with ditary. The law ditary. The law kable, the eldest ther's rank; but est, and not the awful successor. and the younge which signifies

uming the office

astances he has

pendent of his vely form a sort mpare with the d. Any Ranga ence may gather his clan, build a become a petty inions. It is in clans, or subthering round a oility, and adopt-

embers will ever

The free men form the great body of the warriors; some of them being the sons of Rangatira, and others merely having the privilege of free birth; which carries with it the right of tattooing the face. Some-times a free man who is remarkable for his generalship and courage will take the command of an expedition, even though men of higher rank than himself should be engaged

Last come the slaves. These are always procured from two sources: they are either captives taken in battle, or are the children of such captives. The value of such slaves is very great. All savages are idle, but the New Zealander is one of the laziest of mortals in the control of the laziest of the laziest of the control of the laziest of tals in time of peace. In war he is all fire and spirit; but in peace he lounges listlessly about, and will not do a stroke of work that can possibly be avoided.

He may, perhaps, condescend to carve the posts of his house into some fantastical semblance of the human form, or he may, per-chance, employ himself in slowly rubbing a stone club into shape, or in polishing or adorning his weapons. "Whatever real work is to be done is left to the women or the slaves, and a man who values his wife or daughter will endeavor to procure slaves who

will relieve her of the drudgery.

There are slaves of both sexes, to whom the appropriate work is allotted. They are considered the absolute property of their owner, who may treat them as he pleases, and, if he prefers to kill them, may do so without attracting any attention. Of course he would not do so except for very good reasons, as he would deprive himself of a valuable article of property. There have been cases, as we shall presently see, when the owner of slaves has deliberately murdered them for the sake of selling their heads.

Once a slave, always a slave. Should one of these unfortunates manage to escape and get back to his own tribe, his owner would apply for him, and he would be given up, the right of the master to his slave being universally recognized. Still, as a rule, the slaves are treated well, and some of them, who have attained excellence in certain arts, often become richer men than their ares, over become ficine finds that the owners. So great is the value of slaves, that many a war has been undertaken for the mere purpose of slave hunting, and some of the most disastrous and obstinate feuds have originated in the slave hunt.

Connected with the government of the New Zealanders is the land question. This is a strangely complicated business, as every inch of ground has an actual owner, while there are usually several claimants who al-

So it has often happened that the white men, while desiring to act according to law and honor, have involved themselves in a very net of difficulties. A chief, for example, may agree to sell a portion of terriample, may agree to sell a portion of terri-tory, will receive the price, and will sign a deed, which will be witnessed by natives as well as by Europeans. No sooner has he done so, than a claimant comes forward, declaring that the chief in question had no real right to the land, and therefore had no right to sell it.

His claim will be inquired into, and, if it seems to be tolerably consistent with likelihood, the man will be paid an additional sum for his consent to the sale. The mat-ter, however, is not at an end, for such is the jealousy with which the natives regard land, that, as long as a foreigner holds an inch of ground, so long will there be a native who prefers a claim to it. Strange as it may seem, the white man would incur less odium by taking the land by force, and seizing it by right of conquest, than by trying to act according to justice and equity.

War is a fertile source of misunderstanding about land. A tribe may be driven out of a district, and their land given to others, who hold it as long as they can keep it, the original possessors being sure to reconquer it if possible. It has sometimes happened that a chief to whom such lands have been presented has transferred them to another chief, and he, in his turn, has sold them to European settlers, the bargain being ratified by his own followers, who are considered as having a share in such property.

The colonists take the land, clear it, cultivate it, and when the crops are fairly in the ground, the dispossessed tribe will come forward and prefer their claim to it. Those to whom it was sold have already received their price, and do not trouble themselves to oppose the claim; and the consequence is, that the colonists are obliged either to make a second payment or to run the risk of

As to the claims themselves, they are of the most curious and unexpected character, such as no European would be likely to anticipate. According to Dieffenbach, "There are the rights of exists a very distinct notion of the rights of landed property among the natives, and every inch of land in New Zealand has its proprietor. Sometimes land is given to a strange tribe, either as pay, or from other considerations but the proportions of the strange tribe. ations, but the proprietor reserves certain rights, some of which are what we should term manorial.

"It was formerly very common that the fat of the native rats (Kiore) killed on such there are usually several claimants who are there are usually several claimants who are there are usually several claimants who are the land is owned by seems to have been derived from the fact of a seems to have been derived from the fact of having killed rats on it. Thus a chief will all prefer their claims at his death, or even a langthoned absence. ever, land descends, as with us, by inheri-| sometimes destroy themselves under the

Such being the complicated tenure on which land is held—a tenure which is often puzzling to the natives themselves—it is no matter of wonder that English settlers should have found themselves in difficulties. It is said that the colonists tried to make themselves masters of the land by unfair means, i. c. either by forcibly taking posses-sion of it, or by inveigling the ignorant na-tives into signing documents which they did not understand, and thus selling their paternal estates for rum, tobacco, and a few blan-

This may to some extent have been the case when the colonists first came to settle in the country. But the natives are far too intelligent to remain long ignorant of the power of pen, ink, and paper, and there is no doubt that in many cases they intentionally outwitted the purchaser, either by put-ting forward a sham owner of the ground, who had no right to sell it, and who van-ished with his share of the prize as soon as the bargain was concluded, or by asserting ignorance of the meaning of the document which had beer signed, and refusing to carry out its conditions. That the white men succeeded too often in cheating the natives is unfortunately true, but it is no less true that the natives as often cheated the col-

Law among the New Zealanders seems to be of the simplest kind, and, as far as we know, is not so well developed as among some of the tribes of Southern Africa. The three offences of which the law takes cognizance are murder, theft, and adultery. For the first of these offences a sort of lex tationis holds good, the relatives of the slain man being sure, sooner or later, to kill the murderer, unless he manages to compromise with them. Even theft is punished in a similar fashion, the thief being robbed in

various ways; but both the offending parties are supposed to have forfeited their lives to the husband. If, therefore, the fact be discovered, and the culprit be a person of low rank, he seeks safety in flight, while, if he be a man of rank, he expects that the offended bushond will realfended husband will make war upon him. Sometimes, if a wife discovers that her husband has been unfaithful to her, she will kill his paramour, or, at all events, disgrace her after the native custom, by stripping off all her clothes, and exposing her in public. Even the husband is sometimes subjected to this punishment by the wife's relations; and so much dreaded is this disgrace that men have been known to commit suicide when their offence has been discovered.

most trivial provocation. One such case is mentioned by Mr. Angas. "On arriving mentioned by Mr. Angas. "On arriving at the village or kainga of Ko Nghahokowitu, we found all the natives in a state of ex-traordinary excitement. We had observed numbers of people running in that direction, along the margin of the river, from the different plantations, and, on inquiry, we learned that an hour previously to our arrival the son of an influential chief had committed suicide by shooting himself with a musket.

"Our fellow-travellers, with Wisihona their chief, were all assembled, and we followed them to the shed where the act had been perpetrated, and where the body still lay as it fell, but covered with a blanket. The mourners were gathered round, and the women commenced crying most dolefully, wringing their hands, and bending their bodies to the earth. We approached the body, and were permitted to remove the blanket from the face and breast. The countenance was perfectly placid, and the yellow tint of the skin, combined with the tattooing, gave the corpse almost the appearance of a wax model. The deceased was a fine and well-made young man. He had placed the musket to his breast, and deliberately pushed the trigger with his toes, the bullet passing right through his lungs. Blood was still oozing from the orifice made by the bullet, and also from the mouth, and the body was still warm.

The cause of this suicide was that which has already been mentioned. The young man had been detected in an illicit correspondence with the wife of another man in the same village. The woman had been sent away to a distant settlement, a proceeding which had already made her lover nurderer, unless he manages to compromise ith them. Even theft is punished in a milliar fashion, the thief being robbed in is turn.

As to the third offence, it is punishable in a ritous ways; but both the offending many at the reproaches which were levelled at him by some of his relations, that he stepped aside and shot himself.

The determined manner in which the New Zealanders will sometimes commit suicide was exemplified by the conduct of another man, who deliberately wrapped himself up in his blanket, and strangled himself with his own hands. The crime was perpetrated in the common sleeping-house, and was achieved with so much boldness that it was not discovered until the man had been dead for some time.

A remarkable instance of this phase of New Zealand law took place when Mr. Dieffenbach visited the Waipa district. He was accompanied by a chief, who called a girl to him, and handed her over to the police magistrate as a murderess. The fact was, that her brother, a married man, had formed an intimacy with a slave girl, and, fearing the vengeance of his wife's relatives, Suicide, by the way, is not at all uncommon among the New Zealanders, who always think that death is better than disgrace, and had killed himself. His sister, in order to

avenge the slav The stra the accu The g

ing, who avengin lves under the one such case is
"On arriving
Nghahokowitu, a state of exe had observed in that direcriver, from the on inquiry, we ously to our archief had comhimself with a

with Wisihona led, and we fol-ere the act had the body still vith a blanket. round, and the most dolefully, bending their pproached the to remove the breast. The placid, and the bined with the ost the appeardeceased was a man. He had east, and delibth his toes, the gh his lungs, he orifice made the mouth, and

nan had been ement, a pro-nade her lover the day when he had become hich were levrelations, that imself. which the New ommit suicide luct of another d himself up in mself with his petrated in the was achieved t was not disbeen dead for

that which it. The young n illicit correnother man in

this phase of ce when Mr. district. He who called a over to the ess. The fact ried man, had lave girl, and, ife's relatives, r, in order to

avenge the death of her brother, found out the slave girl in the bush, and killed her. The strangest part of the business was, that the accused girl was the daughter of the chief who denounced her.

The girl pleaded her own cause well, saying, what was perfectly true, that she had acted according to the law of the land in avenging the death of her brother, and was

CHAPTER LXXIX.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

DRESS

DRESS AND ORNAMENTS OF THE NEW MEALANDER - THE TATTOO OR THE MORO - ITS FORMIDABLE CHARACTER - THE TATTOO A MARK OF FREEDOM - THE TATTOO OF THE FACE, AND ITS DIFFER-ENT PORTIONS - COST OF THE OPERATION - THE IMPLEMENTS, AND MODE OF USING THEM -TIME OCCUPIED IN COMPLETING IT - PAYMENT OF THE OPERATOR, AND THE TATTOO BONG -SOURCE WHENCE THE PIGMENT IS OBTAINED - SCARLET PAINT, AND MODE OF MAKING IT-THE NEW SEALAND RELT - SYMBOLISM OF THE TATTOO - PRESERVING THE HEADS OF WAR-RIGHS - THE TRAFFIC IN HEADS - A COOL BARGAINER.

which the face and some other portions of the body are decorated, we will begin our account with a description of the moko, as it is called by the natives.

There are many parts of the world where the tattoo is employed, but in none is it of so formidable a description as among the New Zealanders. As the reader is probably New Zealanders. As the reader is probably aware, the tattoc consists of patterns made by introducing certain coloring matters under the skin; charcoal, variously prepared, being the usual material for the purpose. We have already seen among the Kaffirs examples of ornamenting the skin by sufficiently against the skin by sufficient the skin to be a to be sufficient to the skin by sufficient the skin to the skin by sufficient the skin to be stated to the skin by sufficient the skin to the skin to the skin to the skin by sufficient the skin to cutting it deeply so as to form scars, and in Australia a similar but more cruel custom prevails. In neither of these countries, however, is there any attempt at producing an artistic effect, while in New Zealand beauty of design is the very object of the tattoo.

There is a distinction between the tattoo of the New Zealanders and the Polynesians; that of the latter people being formed by rows of little dots, and that of the former by lines cut completely through the skin. On account of this distinction, though a New Zealander and a Polynesian be covered from head to foot with tattoo marks, there is no possibility of mistaking the one for the other.

The moko of the New Zealander is a mark of rank, none but slaves being without a more or less complete tattooing of the face. In the present day, even the chiefs have

WE will now proceed to the appearance and dress of the natives of New Zealand, or mark of heathendom. Consequently, several most conspicuous part of the New Zealander's adornment is the tattooing with which can hardly have a good effect in lander's adornment of the New Zealander's adornment is the tattooing with which can hardly have a good effect in recommending Christianity to the people. Having been converted before the moke was completed, and being unwilling to continue the process and unable to obliterate those portions which were already drawn, they appear with one half of their faces tattooed and the other half plain, or perhaps with a solitary ring round one eye, and a couple of curves round one side of the mouth.

As, however, the present work treats only of the native customs, and not of modern civilization, the New Zealanders will be described as they were before they had learned to abandon the once-prized tattoo, to exchange the native mat for the English blanket, the picturesque war canoe for the commonplace whaling boat, and the spear and club for the rifle and bayonet.

The principal tattoo is that of the face and upper part of the head, which, when com-pleted, leaves scarcely an untouched spot on which the finger can be placed. When on which the inger can be placed. When finished, the whole face is covered with spiral scrolls, circles, and curved lines; and it is remarkable, that though a certain order is observed, and the position of the principal marks is the same in every case, no two persons are tattooed in precisely the same man-ner, the artists being able to produce an infinite variety with the few materials at his command.

For example, the first portion of the tatbegun to discontinue the ancient custom, too is always a series of curved lines, reach-chiefly owing to the exertions of the mis-

and pass of the Next co bone; ar ing as l Next con forehead are sever the nose spread of cupy the and enre ornamen

Beside chief is a his hips has, like t Althou

mark of

laws which vided he as much a the opera men of po of moko. the delica was so diff became an the hands a good inc of those w for their al fees when their servi cured by t rather ren celebrated . were forbid own persor

The mode patient lies between th squats on th fashion. T black pigm line of the low; and in them with a a sketch or this scratchi from being cand the blac the wounds. Next, he to

which is usua of a bird, an cutting comp times, when careless oper completely th temporary ch experiencing smoke into hi ing it escape to On page 722 t tion which give

and passing round the mouth. This portion of the tattoo goes by the name of **errept.* tor proceeds, he continually dips the edge of Next comes a spiral scroll on the cheek-bone; and below it is another spiral, reachbone; and reachbone; another spiral, reachbone; and reachbone; another spiral, reachbone; and reachbone; another spiral, reachbone; and reachbone; and reachbone; and reachbone; another spiral, reachbone; and reachb and passing round the mouth. I'ms portion of the tattoo goes by the name of *terepi. Next comes a spiral seroli on the cheekbone; and below it is another spiral, reaching as low as the jaw-bone. These are called respectively *kakoti and *korohaha. Next come four lines on the middle of the freshord called title and headles these there forehead, called titi; and besides these there are several lines which run up the centre of the nose and cover its sides, some which spread over the forehead, others which oc-cupy the chin; and even the lips, eyelids, and cars are adorned with this singular

Besides possessing these marks, a great chief is seldom content unless he can cover his hips with similar lines, each of which has, like those of the face, its proper name.

Although the moke was considered as a Atthough the most was considered as a mark of rank, there were no sumptuary laws which forbade its use. Any one, provided he were not a slave, might be tattooed as much as he pleased; but the expense of the operation was so great, that none but men of position could afford a complete suit of make. No man could tattoo himself and of moko. No man could tattoo himself, and the delicacy of touch and certainty of line was so difficult of attainment, that tattooing became an art or science, which was left in the hands of a few practitioners, who derived a good income from their business. Some of those who had attained much reputation for their skill used to command very high fees when called in to decorate a client, and their services could therefore only be secured by the men of high position. It is rather remarkable that some of the most celebrated operators were slaves, men who were forbidden to wear the tattoo on their own persons.

The mode of operation is as follows. The patient lies on his back, and places his head between the knees of the operator, who squats on the ground after the usual native fashion. The latter then takes a little of the black pigment, and draws on the face the line of the pattern which he intends to follow; and in some cases he slightly scratches then with a sharp instrument, so as to make them with a sharp instrument, so as to make a sketch or outline drawing. The object of this scratching is to prevent the pattern from being obliterated by the flowing blood and the block nigneest which is rubbed into and the black pigment which is rubbed into the wounds.

Next, he takes his instrument or chisel, which is usually made of teeth, or the bone of a bird, and with it follows the pattern, cutting completely through the skin. Sometimes, when engaged in tattooing the face, a careless operator has been known to cut completely through the cheek, so as to put a temporary cheek to smoking the sufferer experiencing some difficulty in getting the smoke into his mouth at all, and then findrubs more of the pigment into the wound, using a little bunch of fibre by way of a brush

or sponge.

The cutting is not done as with a knife, but by placing the edge of the chisel on the skin, and driving it along the lines of the skin, and driving it along the lines of the skin, and driving it along the lines of the skin, and driving it along the lines of the skin, and driving it along the lines of the skin, and driving it along the skin, and driving the skin, and drivin sain, and uriving it along the lines of the pattern by repeated blows with a small mallet. As may be imagined, the pain caused by this operation is excruciating. It is painful enough to have the skin cut at all, even with the keenest blade, as any one can testify who has been unfortunate enough to come under the surgeon's knife. But when the instrument employed is a shark's when the instrument employed is a shark's tooth, or a piece of bone, when it is driven slowly through the skin by repeated blows, and when the wound is at once filled with an irritating pigment, it may be imagined that the torture must be dreadful. It is, however, reckoned a point of honor to endure it without giving any signs of suffer-

Owing to the character of the tattoo, the destruction of the skin, and the consequent derangement of its functions, only a small portion can be executed at a time, a complete moke taking from two to three years, according to the constitution of the individual. Dreadful swellings are always caused by it, especially of the glands in the neigh-borhood of the wounds, and the effects are so severe that men have died when too large

a portion has been executed at one time.

Every stroke of the chisel or uki leaving an indelible mark, it is of the greatest consequence that the operator should be a man of skill, and devote all his energies to tracing a clear, though elaborate pattern, in which the lines are set closely together, sweep in regular curves, and never interfere with each other.

While a man is being tattooed, his friends and those of the operator sing songs to him, in which he is encouraged to endure the pain bravely, and to bear in mind the lasting beauty which will be conferred upon him when the pattern is completed. The songs of the operator's friends contain some very broad hints as to the scale of payment which is expected. Although, as has been stated, the best of tattooers are paid very highly, there is no definite fee, neither is any bargain made, the operator trusting to the liberality of his client. But, as a man would be contemned as a skulking fellow if he were to ask the services of a good operator and then pay him badly, the practical result is that a good tattooer always secures good

Moreover, he has always the opportunity on page 722 the reader may find an illustration which gives a good idea of the different more as a ways the opportunity of avenging himself. As only a small portion of the moko can be executed at a time —say, for example, the spiral curve on one

S PORMIDABLE ND ITS DIFFER-USING THEM-TATTOO SONG MARING IT-EADS OF WAR-

practice as a ently, several hiefs present crous, aspect, od effect in the people. e the moko lling to conto obliterate eady drawn, eir faces tat-, or perhaps eye, and a side of the

k treats only t of modern lers will be they had rized tattoo, the English noe for the d the spear the face and

when comouched spot When ced. vered with d lines; and ertain order he principal no two persame manproduce an naterials at

of the tatines, reachto the chin,

cheek — if the operator be badly paid for the first portion of his work, he will take care to let the chisel slip out of its course when he proceeds to the second part, or will cut his lines coarsely and trregularly, thus disfigur-ing the stingy man for life. Mr. Taylor gives a translation of one of these tattooing songs:

"He who pays well, let him be beautifully ornamented;

But he who forgets the operator, let him be done

But he who forgets the operator, let him be done corolessly.

Be the lines wide apart.

O hik! Tangaroa!

O hik! Tangaroa!

Strike that the chisel as it cuts along may sound.

O hik! Tangaroa!

Mon do not know the skill of the operator in driving his sounding chisel along.

O hik! Tangaroa!

The reader will see that the song is a very ingenious one, magnifying the skill of the operator, promising a handsome moke to the liberal man, and threatening to disfigure him if he be niggardly in his payments.

While the operation of tattooing is going on, all persons in the pah, or enclosure, are under the tabu, or tapu, lest any harm should happen to them; the work of tattooing being looked upon with a kind of superstitious reverence. The meaning of the word 'tapu' will be explained when we come to treat of the religious system of the New Zealander.

The effect of the moko on the face is well shown in illustration No. 2, on the next page, which represents a chief and his wife. The reader will probably observe that on the face of the woman there are marks which resemble the tattoo. They are, however, the scars left by mourning over the body of some relative, a ceremony in which the women cut themselves unmercifully. The dress worn by both persons will be presently described.

The pigment used in tattooing is made from the resin of the kauri pine, and the greater part of it is made at one spot, where the tree grows plentifully. There is a rocky precipice, and a little distance from its edge precipice, and a name uses. A channel a deep and narrow pit is sunk. A channel is cut through the face of the cliff into the native wishes to make a supply of tattooing pigment, he cuts a quantity of kauri wood, places it in the pit, and sets fire to it, thus causing the burnt resin to fall to the bottom of the pit, whence it is scraped out through the channel

Scarlet paint is much employed by the natives, especially when they decorate themselves for battle. It is obtained from an ochreous substance which is eposited in many process where water has a en allowed to become stagnant. Some spots are cele-brated for the excellence of the ochre, and

scarlet paint, they first carefully dry and then burn the ochre; the result of which operation is, that a really fine vermilion is

This paint is used for many purposes, and before being used it is mixed with oil ob-tained from the shark. The natives are fond of decorating their houses with it, and by means of the scarlet lines increase, according to their own ideas, the beauty of the carved work with which every available point is adorned. Even their household goods are painted after a similar manner, the fash-ionable mode being to paint all the hollows scarlet, and the projecting portions black. Their canoes and wooden ornaments are profusely adorned with red paint. But the most valued use of this pigment is the part which it plays in the decoration of a warrior when he goes to battle.

In such cases paint constitutes the whole of his costume, the mats in which he takes so great a pride in time of peace being laid aside, many warriors being perfectly naked, and with the others the only covering of any kind being a belt made of plaited leaves.

One of these belts in my collection is seven feet in length, and only three and a half inches wide in the broadest part; while at either end it diminishes to a mere plaited thong. It is folded fourfold, and on opening it the mode of construction is plainly seen; all the loose ends being tucked inside.

The material is phormium leaf cut into strips an inch in width, each alternate strip being dyed black. Each strip is then divided into eight little strips or thongs, and they are so plaited as to produce an artistic checkered pattern of black and white. The ingenuity in forming so elaborate a pattern with so simple a material is extreme; and, as if to add to the difficulty of his task, the dusky artist has entirely changed the pattern at either end of the belt, making it run at right angles to the rest of the fabric. The belt is also used in lieu of clothing when the men are engaged in paddling a canoe.

The paint, therefore, becomes the characteristic portion of the New Zealander's war dress, and is applied for the purpose of making himself look as terrible as possible, and of striking terror into his enemies. It is, however, used in peace as well as in war. being regarded as a good preservative against the bites and stings of inacets, especially the sandflies and mosquitoes. It is also used in mourning, being rubbed on the body as a sign of grief, precisely as ashes are used among some of the Oriental nations. Some travellers have thought that the continual use of this pigment gives to the New Zea-landers the peculiar softness and sleekness of skin for which they are remarkable, and which distinguishes them from the Fijians, whose skin feels as if it had been roughened with a file. This theory, however, is scarcely the natives come from great distances to pro-cure it. When they wish to make their tenable, the soft texture of the skin being (2.) TATTOOED CHIEF AND

SIH

(In will be)

WEW

fully dry and oult of which vermilion is

purposes, and
with oil obstives are fond
th it, and by
ase, according
of the carved
able point is
old goods are
er, the fashell the hollows
ortions black.
ments are proBut the most
he part which
warrior when

tes the whole hich he takes ce being laid rfectly naked, overing of any ed leaves. ction is seven

and a half inart; while at mere plaited ad on opening plainly seen; inside.

leaf cut into alternate strip then divided ags, and they artistic checkaite. The inatte a pattern extreme; and, his task, the ed the pattern ing it run at a fabric. The aing when the

cance.

s the characalander's war
rpose of makpossible, and
emies. It is,
ll as in war,
vative against
especially the
s also used in
the body as a
ties are used
tions. Some
the continual
the New Zeaand sleekness
arkable, and
the Fijians,
en roughened
er, is scarcely
e skin being



chief wou

eviden causes A w

object, iuto the regard however ing in t ciplined doned

weapon than th More well it i the prin effect w civilizat trait of Except.: a checke evidentl he has n didly ma But inst he bears fixed bay tened by His fac

which ar pattern, i fair skin. in his ha having a absurd. better th to associat

The cur pean dress wearing i "Raupaha woman, ar stiff and w upon her l what after which, who her a rema "She wa native man

tufts of cot wore silk in leather. The very pretty her charms ropean dre ornaments, tishly in a blarge here! large hazel
It has ofte
regarded hi

permanently notion was one, that in nists the na pending a

A warrior adorned in all the pride of the tattoo and scarlet paint is certainly a terrific object, and is well calculated to strike terror iuto those who have been accustomed to regard the Maori warriors with awe. however, the natives found that all the painting in the world had no effect upon the disciplined soldiers of the foreigner, they abandoned it, and contented themselves with the weapons that none are more able to wield than themselves.

Moreover, the paint and tattoo, however well it might look on a warrior armed after the primitive fashion, has rather a ludicrous effect when contrasted with the weapons of civilization. There is now before me a portrait of a Maori chief in full battle array. Except a bunch of feathers in his hair, and a checked handkerchief tied round his loins, evidently at the request of the photographer, he has no dress whatever. He is tall, splendidly made, stern, and soldierlike of aspect. But instead of the club, his proper weapon, he bears in his hand a Belgian rifle, with fixed bayonet, and has a cartouche-box fastened by a belt round his naked body.

His face is tattooed, and so are his hips, which are covered with a most elaborate pattern, that contrasts boldly with his really fair skin. Had he his club and chief's staff in his hands, he would look magnificent; having a rifle and a cartouche-box, he looks absurd. Even a sword would become him better than a rifle, for we are so accustomed to associate a rifle with a private soldier, that it is difficult to understand that a powerful chief would carry such a weapon.

The curious mixture of native and European dress which the Maories are fond of wearing is well described by Mr. Angas. "Raupahara's wife is an exceedingly stout woman, and wears her hair, which is very stiff and wiry, combed up into an erect mass upon her head about a foot in height, somewhat after the fashion of the Tonga islanders, which, when combined with her size, gives her a remarkable appearance.

tufts of cotton wool; and one of her nieces wore silk stockings and slippers of patent leather. This gay damsel was, moreover, a very pretty girl, and knew how to set off her charms to advantage; for over an European dress she had retained her native ornaments, and had wrapped herself coquet-tishly in a beautiful, 'kaitaka,' displaying her large hazel eyes above its silky folds."

It has often been thought that the warrior regarded his moko, or tattoo, as his name, permanently inscribed on his face; and this notion was strengthened by two facts: the

evidently due to physical and not to external other, that each man knows every line of his tattoo, and sometimes carves a wooden bust on which he copies with admirable fidelity every line which appears on his own head or face. Such a work of art is greatly valued by the Maories, and a man who has carved one of them can scarcely be induced by any bribe to part with it.

Moreover, the moko of a warrior is often accepted as the conventional representation of himself. For example, on the pillars of a very celebrated house, which we shall presently describe, are numerous human figures which represent certain great chiefs, while men of lesser mark are indicated by their moke carved on the posts. Thus it will be seen that the moke of a chief is as well known to others as to himself, and that the practised eye of the native discerns among the various curves and spirals, which are common to all free men, the characteris-tic lines which denote a man's individuality, and in producing which the tattooers' skill is often sorely tried.

It has already been mentioned, that when a warrior falls in battle, and his body can be carried off by the enemy, the head is preserved, and fixed on the dwelling of the conqueror. No dishonor attaches itself to such an end; and, indeed, a Maori warrior would feel himself direfully insulted if he were told that in case of his death in the field his body would be allowed to remain untouched.

In fact, he regards his moko precisely in the same light that an American Indian looks upon his scalp-lock; and, indeed, there are many traits in the charecter of the Maori warrior in which he strangely resembles the best examples of North American savages.

In order to preserve the head of a slain warrior, some process of embalming must evidently be pursued, and that which is commonly followed is simple enough,

The head being cut off, the hair is removed, and so are the eyes; the places of which are filled up with pledgets of tow, over which the eyelids are sewed. Pieces "She was well dressed in a flax mat of native manufacture, thickly ornamented with the head is hung in the smoke of the wood fire until it is thoroughly saturated with the pyroligneous acid. The result of this mode of preparation is, that the flesh shrinks up, and the features become much distorted; though, as the Maori warrior always distorts his countenance as much as possible before battle, this effect is rather realistic than otherwise.

It is often said that heads prepared in this fashion are proof against the attacks of insects. This is certainly not the case, as I have seen several specimens completely riddled by the ptilinus and similar creaone, that in the earlier times of the colo-tures, and have been obliged to destroy the nists the natives signed documents by ap-little pests by injecting a solution of corro-pending a copy of their moke; and the sive sublimate. In spite of the shrivelling

to which the flesh and skin are subject, the looked as well when preserved as one which tattooing retains its form; and it is most had been tattooed for years. The chiefs curious to observe how the finest lines completely retain their relative position to each other.

Not only are the heads of enemies treated in this fashion, but those of friends are also preserved. The difference is easily perceptible by looking at the mouth, which if the head be that of a friend, is closed,

and if of an enemy, is widely opened.

Some years ago, a considerable number of these preserved heads were brought into Europe, having been purchased from the natives. Of late years, however, the trade in them has been strictly forbidden, and on very good grounds. In the first place, no man who was well tattooed was safe for an hour, unless he were a great chief, for he might at any time be watched until he was off his guard, and then knocked down, killed, and his head sold to the traders. Then, when the natives became too cautious to render head hunting a profitable trade, a new expedient was discovered.

It was found that a newly tattooed head ducted by savage nations.

were not slow in taking advantage of this discovery, and immediately set to work at killing the least valuable of their slaves, tattooing their heads as though they had belonged to men of high rank, drying, and

then selling them.

One of my friends lately gave me a curious illustration of the trade in heads. His father wanted to purchase one of the dried heads, but did not approve of any that were brought for sale, on the ground that the tattoo was poor, and was not a good example of the skill of the native artists. The chief allowed the force of the argument, and, allowed the force of the argument, and, pointing to a number of his people who had come on board, he turned to the intending purchaser, saying, "Choose which of these heads you like best, and when you come back I will take care to have it dried and ready for your acceptance." As may be imagined, this speech put an abrupt end to all head purchasing, and gave an unexpected insight into the mysteries of trading as con-

Z

ST

AC FE HA

WE no Zealand characte generic the belt costume square o in size, principle generally neck, an them af stage vil

differ as the fabr material and even the value the mater upon it, s The ma

is the sotifically k tenax. It The plan flowers as and a nun ing from t long, and the broad The fib

are very s dressed ar as one which The chiefs ntage of this t to work at their slaves, gh they had drying, and

ve me a cuheads. His of the dried ny that were that the tatood example s. The chief gument, and, ople who had he intending hich of these en you come it dried and As may be brupt end to n unexpected

ading as con-

CHAPTER LXXX

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

DRESS AND ORNAMENTS.

THE "MATS" OF THE NEW SEALANDERS—THE MATERIAL OF WHICH THEY ARE MADE—THE NEW ZEALAND FLAX, OR PHORMIUM - MODE OF MAKING THE MATS - VARIOUS KINDS OF MATS - THE RAIN MAT AND ITS USES -- THE OPEN-WORKED MAT -- THE DIFFERENT ORNAMENTS OF THE MAT: STEINGS AND TAGS, SCARLET TUPTS AND BORDERS - WAR CLOAKS OF THE CHIEFS - THE DOGS'-HAIR MAT — THE CHIEF PARÂTENE IN HIS CLOAK — MODE OF MAKING THE WAR CLOAKS — BRIEF ACCOUNT OF THE CHIEF-AMUSING INSTANCE OF VANITY IN A CHIEF-SUBSTITUTION OF THE BLANKET AND ITS ATTENDANT EVILS—ORNAMENTS OF THE NEW ZEALANDER'S HEAD— FEATHERS, AND FEATHER BOXES - VARIOUS DECORATIONS OF GREEN JADE - TIKIS AND EAR-RINGS — A REMARKABLE AMULET — THE SHARK'S TOOTH — MODES OF DRESSING THE HAIR — HAIR-CUTTING AND SHAVING -A PRIMITIVE RAZOR.

WE now come to the costume of the New Zealanders. This is of a rather remarkable character, and may be characterized by the generic title of mat, with the exception of the belt which has just been described. The costume of the New Zealander consists of a square or oblong mat, varying considerably in size, though always made on the same In size, though always made on the same principle. In this mat the natives envelop themselves after a very curious fashion, generally muffling themselves up to the neck, and often throwing the folds round them after the fashion of a conventional

stage villain.

These mats are of various textures, and differ as much in excellence and value as do the fabrics of more civilized lands. The material is, however, the same in all cases, and even the mode of wearing the garment, the value being estimated by the fineness of the material, the amount of labor bestowed upon it, and the ornaments introduced into

The material of which the mats are made is the so-called New Zealand "flax," scientifically known by the name of Phormium the third year than the hance of Prormsum tenax. It belongs to the natural family of the Liliaceæ and the tribe Asparagaceæ. The plant has a number of showy yellow flowers arranged on a tall branch-panicle, and a number of straightish leaves, all starting from the root, and being five or six feet long, and not more than two inches wide at long, and not more than two inches wide at the broadest part.

The fibres which run along these leaves are very strong and fine, and, when properly

look about them. At one time great quantities of New Zealand flax, as it was called, were imported into Europe, and the plant was cultivated in some of the southern parts of the Continent. Strong, however, as it may be, it has the curious fault of snapping hay be, it has the currous lattit of snapping casily when tied in a knot, and on this account is not valued so much in Europe as in its own country. I have before me a large roll of string made by natives from the phormium. It is very strong in proportion to its thistness and much of it has tion to its thickness, and much of it has been used in suspending various curiosities in my collection; but it cannot endure being made into a knot. It is useful enough in hitches, especially the "clove-hitch;" but as soon as it is tied into a knot, it will hardly bear the least strain.

The principle on which the mats are made is very simple. A weaving frame is erected on sticks a foot or so from the ground, and upon it is arranged the weft, made of strings or yarns, placed as closely together as possible, and drawn quite tight. The weft is double, and is passed under and over each yarn, and the upper one is always passed between the ends of the under west before it is drawn tight. The mat is therefore nothing more than a number of parallel strings laid side by side, and connected, at intervals of an inch or so, by others that pass across them. More care is taken of the edges, which are turned over, and the yarns are so interwoven as to make a thick

and strong border.

When the wests are hauled tight, they are dressed and combed, have a beautiful silky beaten into their place by means of a bone instrument, very much like a paper knife in warp. This mat is of the very best quality, shape; and in every respect the weaving of and, considering the nature of the material a New Zealander most strongly reminds the spectator of the process of making the Gobe-lin tapestries. In both cases there is a fixed warp on which the west is laboriously woven by hand, and is kept straight and regular by being struck with an instrument that passes between the threads of the warp. Although at the present day the warp of the Gobelin tapestry is stretched perpendicularly, in former times it was stretched longitudinally in a low frame, exactly similar in principle to that which is employed by the New Zea-

The reader will perceive that the process of weaving one of these mats must be a work of considerable time, and an industrious woman can scarcely complete even a common mat under eighteen months, while one of the more elaborate robes will occupy

twice that time.

The illustration No. 1 on the next page, is drawn from a sketch of a house belonging to one of the great chiefs, and in it are seen some women busily employed in making mats. One of them is scraping the leaves with a shell or stone, while another is engaged at the primitive loom. The mat is represented as nearly completed, and the woman is seen with the four ends of the double weft in her hand, passing them across each other before she draws them A heap of dressed leaves of the phormium is seen in the background, and a bundle of the long swordlike leaves is strewn on the floor. Various baskets and other implements, made of the same material, are hung from the rafters; and in front is one of the curiously carved poles which support the roof.

It has been mentioned that there is but one principle on which all the mats are made, but that there is a very great variety in making them. There is, for example, the rain mat, which is used in wet weather. As the structure proceeds, the manufacturer inserts into each knot of the west an undressed blade of the phormium upon which the epidermis has been allowed to remain. When wrapped round the body, the leaves all fall over each other, so as to make a sort of penthouse, and to allow the rain to run over their smooth and polished surfaces until

it falls to the ground.

When rain comes on, and a number of natives are seen squatting on the ground, each wearing his rain mat, they have a most absurd appearance, and look like a number of human beings who had hidden themselves in haycocks. On page 803 may be seen the figure of a chief wearing one of

of which it is made, is wonderfully light, soft, and pliant.

Another kind is the woman's mat, of which there are several varieties. It is of larger size than that employed by the men, and is capable of enveloping the entire figure from head to foot. It is of rather lighter material than the rain mat, and is decorated on the exterior with a number of strings, varying in length from a few inches to three feet or so. A variety of this mat is distinguished by having the strings white instead of black. Specimens of both these mats are in my collection; and the genoral effect of them can be seen by reference to any of the illustrations which represent the native women.

Strings or tags are undoubtedly the most characteristic portion of the dress, and there is scarcely a mat of any description that is not ornamented with them. One variety of mat, which is called E wakaiwa, is covered with long cylindrical ornaments that look very much as if they were made of porcupine quills, being hard, and colored alternately black and yellow. The ornaments are, however, made of the phormium leaf in a very ingenious manner. The epidermis is carefully scraped off the under side of the leaf with a sharp-edged shell, and the leaf is then turned over. On the upper side the epidermis is removed at regular intervals, so

as to expose the fibres.

The next process is to put the scraped leaf into a dye made of a decoction of kinan bark, and to let it remain for a definite time. When it is taken out, the dye has stained the exposed fibres a deep glossy black, while it has not been able to touch the polished yellow epidermis that is allowed to remain. The dyed leaves are next rolled up until they form cylinders as large as goose quills, and are then woven in regular rows into the material of a mat. As the wearer moves about, the cylinders rustle and clatter against to be peculiarly grateful to the ears of the natives. Such a mat or cloak is highly prized. Several of these mats are in my collection, and very curious examples of native art they are.

One of these has cost the weaver an infinity of trouble. It is nearly five feet wide and three in depth. The warp has been dyed black, while the weft is white; and the effect of the west passing in reverse lines across the warp is very good. Every other line of weft is decorated with the cylindrical tassels each of which is nine inches in be seen the figure of a chief wearing one of these dresses. The name of the mat is E mangaika.

I have seen another kind of mat, which is made in a kind of open-work pattern, produced by crossing every fifth strand of the on account of their number, they would best quality, the material lly light, soft,

an's mat, of
es. It is of
by the men,
the entire
is of rather
mat, and is
h a number
from a few
ariety of this
the strings
nens of both
and the genby reference
the represent

dly the most ss, and there obtion that is. ne variety of a, is covered to that look de of porcuolored alterornaments nium leaf in he epidermis er side of the dd the leaf is per side the intervals, so

the scraped ion of kinan lefinite time, has stained black, while the polished do remain, led up until goose quills, ows into the earer moves atter against which seems ears of the k is highly re in my colles of native

ver an infine feet wide
p has been
iite; and the
everse lines
Every other
the cylindrine inches in
parts by the
lesse tassels
rp, and are
ower edge,
m a fringe,
they would



(1.) WOMEN MAKING MATS. (See page 808.)



(2.) THE TANGI.

(See page 824.)

qualify emerge the ma which i tles its

Along
the shot
together
and the
soft bor
The por
the edge
mented
into the
costly or
cured fr
they unp
the dress
One of

One of Zealand very larg pletely be a narrow upper edg the two nearly fo the wool loops; but cut so as In this

being cyli yellow, ar being who the fibres sel fashion of this mo eye from yellow tage der to exh. Scarlet yentage.

vantage.
Scarlet v
tively late
introduced
In former
fond of orn
obliged to
purpose.
breast of th
mostly used
colored orn
lines, they s
which are d
the whole c
kind of dec
of the cost

work.
The yarm made are no merely of the leaf. T purpose by both sides, a stone with a stone emplo and other to The most

the war cloal

qualify the garment as a rain mat on an very large, being sometimes nearly six feet emergency; and the rattling they make as in depth, and wide enough to be wrapped which is produced by a peacock when it rustles its train.

Along the upper edge, which passes over the shoulders, the strings have been rolled together into ropes as thick as the finger, and then plaited so as to form a thick and soft border which will not hurt the neck. The portion of the mat which comes between the edge and the first row of tassels is ornamented with scraps of scarlet wool plaited into the weft. This wool is a favorite though costly ornament to the natives, being pro-cured from seamen's woollen caps, which they unpick, and the yarns used to ornament the dress.

One of these mantles brought from New Zealand by Stiverd Vores, Esq., is adorned very largely with scarlet wool. pletely bordered with the precious material, It is coma narrow line of scarlet running under the upper edge, a broader under the lower, while the two sides are decorated with a band nearly four inches in width. In this case the wool has been arranged in a series of loops; but in another specimen the loops are

cut so as to form a fringe.

In this latter mantle the tags, instead of being cylindrical and alternately black and yellow, are entirely black, each rolled leaf being wholly divested of its epidermis, and the fibres radiating from each other in tassel fashion. I rather think that the object of this mode of treatment is to prevent the eye from being distracted by the jangling yellow tags, and so to permit the scarlet border to exhibit its beauties to the best advantage.

Scarlet worsted is, of course, a comparatively late invention, and has only been introduced since the visits of Europeans. In former days the natives were equally fond of ornamenting their cloaks, and were obliged to use the plumage of birds for the purpose. The feathers taken from the breast of the kaka (a species of nestor) were mostly used for this purpose. Although the colored ornaments are generally disposed in lines, they are sometimes arranged in tufts, which are disposed in regular intervals over the whole of the dress. Examples of this kind of decoration may be seen in several of the costumes which are drawn in this

The yarns or strings of which the warp is made are not twisted or plaited, but consist merely of the phormium fibres as they lie in the leaf. The leaves are prepared for this purpose by scraping off the epidermis on both sides, and then beating them on a flat stone with a pestle made of the hard volcanic stone employed in the manufacture of adzes and other tools.

The most valuable of all the dresses are

over the entire body and limbs. Their native name is Parawai.

Before making one of these great war mats, the weaver collects a large quantity of dog's hair, which she assorts into parcels of different colors. She then sets up her simple loom, and fixes the warp as usual. But with every knot or mesh which she makes with the west she introduces a tust of hair, taking care to make each tust long enough to overlap and conceal the insertion of the tufts in the next row. She is also careful about the regular arrangement of the hues, so that when a complete mat is made by a skilful weaver, it looks exactly as if it was composed of the skin of some large animal, the vegetable fibres which form the fabric itself being entirely concealed by the tufts of hair.

One of these mats is the result of some four years' constant labor, and causes some surprise that a people so naturally indolent as the Maories should prove themselves capa-ble of such long and steady industry. But the fact is, the mat maker is a woman and

the fact is, the mat maker is a woman and not a man, and in consequence is obliged to work, whether she likes it or not.

In the next place, mat weaving scarcely comes under the denomination of labor. The woman is not tied to time, nor even bound to produce a given number of mats within a given period. Her living, too, does not depend upon the rate of her work, and whether she takes eighteen months or two years to produce a garment is a matter of total indifference to all parties. Besides, she never works alone, but is always accompanies. nied by friends, one of whom, perhaps, may be occupied in a similar manner, another may be employed in scraping the phormium leaves, and another is engaged in pounding and softening the fibres, or drying those that have just been dyed black.

But, whatever their hands may be doing, the weavers' tongues are never still. continual stream of talk flows round the looms, and the duty of mat making is thus changed into an agreeable mode of enjoying the pleasures of conversation while the hands are employed in a light and easy

Very great ingenuity is displayed by the woman to whom is entrusted the onerous task of making a war mat. No two are alike, the weaver exercising her discretion respecting the colors and their arrangement. Some of them are made on the same principle as the Bechuana kaross,—namely, darkest in the centre, and fading into the lightest hues round the edges. Others are white or pale in the middle, and edged with a broad band of black or dark brown hair. Sometimes the colors are arranged in a zigzag the war cloaks of the great chiefs. They are tiger skins. They always have a sort of pattern, and several mats are striped like

collar, composed of strips of fur, which hang for him a marked ascendancy over many of about aix inches over the aboulders.

In New Zealand there are one or two dresses which are made almost entirely of fur, the skins being dressed with the hair adhering to them, and then sewed together. A very remarkable mat is possessed by a powerful chief named Paratene Maioha. It is made of strips of dogs' fur sewed over a large flaxon mat. Of this garment he is very proud, and reserves it to be worn on grand occasions. A portrait of this celebrated chief is given in the illustration No. 1, on the 820th page, partly to show the aspect of a Maori chief in time of peace, and partly to give the reader an idea of the peculiar look of the war cloak.

peculiar look of the war cloak.

There is also before me a photographic portrait of Paratene, authenticated by his autograph, in which he is represented as clad in a different manner. He wears two mats or cloaks, the lower being of the finest flax, and called by the natives kaitaka. A description of this kind of cloak will be presently given. Our the kaitaka be wears. sently given. Over the kaitaka he wears a very remarkable war cloak, which is made of dogs' fur sewed upon a flax mat. It reaches a little below the knees, and is made in perpendicular stripes alternately dark and pale, and is furnished with a thick collar or cape of the same material. This cape, by the way, bears a curious resemblance to the ornament which is worn by the Abyssinian

Unfortunately for the general effect of the picture, Paratene has combed, divided, and brushed his hair in European fashion; and brushed his hair in European mannon; and muffled up as he is to the chin, it is too evi-dent that he is wearing a complete European suit under his mats. The cape has fallen off a little on the right side, and we have the absurd anomaly of a face profusely tattooed surmounted with hair that has just been hundred and combed a decastin war mat brushed and combed, a dog-skin war mat, from which protrudes a bare right arm, a jade earring six inches long, and a black cravat and turn-down collar. In his right hand he grasps his cherished merai; his staff of office, or E'hani, rests against his shoulder; and by his side is his long battle-axe, adorned with a tuft of feathers and dogskin. This same Paratene is a man of great mark among the Maories.

As is the case with natives of rank who have associated with Europeans, he is known by several names. The following account of him is given by Mr. G. F. Angas:

"Parátene (Broughton), whose native name was Te Maihoa, is a cousin of Te Whero-whero, and one of the leading men of the Ngatimahuta branch of the Waikato tribes. He generally reaides in a village (or kainga) on the northern bank of the pleturesque little harbor of Waingaroa, on the west coest of the Northeyn Leads, and

"Eccentricity is the principal feature in the character of this chief; and the scrupulous attention which he invariably pays to those trifling circumstances which constitute his notions of etiquette often renders his conduct highly curious. He has gained, by unwearled application, a smattering of arithmetic, and one of his most self-satisfactory exploits is the correct solution of some such important problem as the value of a pig of making the usual deduction for the offal. His crudite quality and the dignified gravity of his carriage have commanded the defer-ential respect of his people, and encouraged them to consider him quite an oracle.

"One little incident will place the harm-less foible of this chier's character in a striking light. When the author was about to employ his pencil in the delineation of his figure, Paratene desired to be excused for a few moments. Having gained his point, he sought an interview with Mrs. Wells, the missionary's wife (under whose hospitable roof his portrait was taken), and, preferring his request with some solemn intimations of its paramount importance, begged 'Mother' to lend him a looking-glass, that he might compose his features in a manner suitable to his own idea of propriety ere he took his stand before the easel of the artist."

It may be observed, by the way, that "Mother" is the term always employed by the natives when addressing the wife of a missionary. The autograph of Paratene, to missionary. The autograph of Parasette, to which allusion has already been made is written with pencil, and is perfectly intelligible, though the characters are shaky, large, and sprawling, and look as if they had been made by fingers more accustomed to handle the club than the pencil.

The last kind of mat which will be mentioned is the kaitaka. This garment is made of a peculiar kind of flax, cultivated for the express purpose, and furnishing a fibre which is soft and fine as silk. The whole of the mat is plain, except the border, which is in some cases two feet in depth, and which is most elaborately woven into a vandyked pattern of black, red, and white. At the present day a good kaitaka is scarcely anywhere to be seen, the skill required in making them being so great that only a few weavers can produce them, and European blankets being so easily procured that the natives will not take the trouble of weav-ing garments that take so much time and trouble.

Handsome as are these native garments, they are not very pleasant to wear. As the threads are only laid parallel to each other, and are not crossed, as in fabrics woven in the west coast of the Northern Island; and the loom, they form scarcely any protection the correctness of his general conduct, and against the wind, although they may serve the gravity of his demeanor, have obtained to keep out the rain. The mats are very

heavy, waikaw. a half, a venlent out of contrary is very small co the nativ

Unfor healthy i themselv without | rated wit the nativ In conse of the ski and it has blanketa i ments the raiment.

In som ground is for them very much the Japan ful phorm cords, and of a shoe a

WE nov ornaments In some which are Feathers : among the is a bunch pelican, and on the shor be seen in t page 704. bird is rud as an earrin be placed a nearly meet The most

the tail feat natives E E dii). It is a markable for male is straig female is lo The color of of so deep a l to be black. tipped with bird spreads looks at a litt edged with w

The bird is Port Nicholso scarcely be of a native, who perfection. T merely an imi of the bird. Maories that over many of

ipal feature in nd the scrupuariably pays to hich constitute n renders his has gained, by tering of arith-elf-satisfactory n of some such lue of a pig of rice per pound, for the offal. gnified gravity and encouraged

n oracle. ace the harmacter in a strikwas about to lineation of his e excused for a ed his point, he frs. Wells, the ose hospitable and, preferring intimations of gged 'Mother' that he might anner auitable ere he took his artist."

the way, that s employed by the wife of a of Paratene, to been made, is perfectly intelers are shaky, k as if they had accustomed to cil.

h will be menarment is made tivated for the ng a fibre which whole of the er, which is in , and which is o a vandyked white. At the s scarcely anyquired in makat only a few and European cured that the ouble of weav-much time and

tive garments, wear. As the to each other, rics woven in any protection hey may serve mats are very

heavy, my own small specimen of the walkawa cloak weighing five pounds and a half, and so stiff that they cannot be convenlently rolled up and packed away when out of use. An English blanket, on the

healthy a garment as that which is made by themselves, as it is worn for a long time without being washed, and so becomes saturated with the grease and paint with which the natives are fond of adorning their bodies. In consequence, it fosters several diseases of the skin to which the Macries are subject, and it has been found that those who wear blankets are much more subject to such ailments than those who adhere to the native

In some parts of the country, where the ground is hard and stony, the natives plait for themselves sandals or slippers, which very much resemble those which are used by the Japanese. They consist of the ever-useful phormium fibres, which are twisted into cords, and then plaited firmly into the shape of a shoe sole.

WE now proceed from the dress to the ornaments worn by the New Zealanders.

In some respects they resemble those which are in use among other dark tribes. Feathers are much valued by them, and among the commonest of these adornments is a bunch of white feathers taken from the pelican, and fastened to the cars so as to fall on the shoulder. An example of this may be seen in the portrait of the old warrior on page 794. Sometimes the skin of a small bird is rudely stuffed, and then suspended as an carring, and sometimes one wing will be placed at each side of the head, the tips nearly meeting above.

The most prized of these adornments are the tail feathers of the bird called by the natives E Elia, or E Huia (Neomorpha Gouldi). It is allied to the hoopoos, and is remarkable for the fact that the beak of the blance of a human being, and made of various male is straight and stout, while that of the female is long, slender, and sickle-shaped. The color of the bird is a dark glossy green of so deep a hue that in some lights it seems to be black. The tail feathers, however, are tipped with snowy white, so that when the bird spreads its plumage for flight, the tail looks at a little distance as if it were black, edged with white.

The bird is only found in the hills near Port Nicholson, and, as it is very wary, can scarcely be obtained except by the help of a native, who imitates its cry with wonderful perfection. The name E Elia is said to be

would have been extinet by this time, but for the introduction of European customs, which to a certain degree have driven out the ancient customs.

out of use. An English blanket, on the contrary, is close-textured, resists the wind, is very light, and can be rolled up into a small compass; so that it is no wonder that the natives prefer it.

The reatners of the tall are the parts of the single that are most valued by the chiefs, who place them in their hair on great occasions. So much do they prize feathers, that the natives prefer it. they are kept with the greatest care. These boxes are made by the chiefs themselves, and are covered with the most elaborate carvings, some of them being the finest speccarvings, some of them being the lines, special mens of art that can be found in New Zealand. They are of various shapes, but a very good idea of their usual form may be obtained from the illustration No. 3, on page 775. usual forms are similar to that of the illustration, but in some cases the boxes are oblong. There is now before me a drawing of one of these boxes, which is covered with an equally elaborate pattern, in which the lines are mostly straight instead of curved, the pattern being of a vandyked character, similar to that upon the kaitaka cloak. There is a projecting handle upon the lid, and an almost similar handle upon each end.

The natives do not, however, confine themselves to wearing the tail feathers, but, when they can obtain so valuable a bird, are sure to use every portion of it. The head seems to be thought of next importance to the tail, and is suspended to the car by a thong.

Perhaps the most characteristic ornaments that are worn by the New Zealanders are those which are made of green jade. This mineral, called by the natives Poonamu, is mostly found near the lakes in the Middle Island, and is valued by them with almost a superstitious reverence. If a very large piece be found, it is taken by some chief, who sets to work to make a club from it. This club, called a merai, will be described when we come to treat of war as conducted by the

In the illustration No. 1, on page 841, are represented some of the most characteristic

sizes. That which is here given is rather smaller than the usual dimensions. It is called by the natives Tiki, and is at the same time one of the commonest and the highest prized articles among the New Zealanders. A new one can be purchased for a sum which, though it would be considered absurdly high in England for such an object, is in New Zealand really a low price, and scarcely repays the trouble of carving it.

Jade is an extremely hard mineral, ranking next to the ruby in that respect, and, in perfection. The name E Elia is said to be merely an imitation of the long shrill whistle other substance. The time which is ocof the bird. The birds are so valued by the cupied in carving one of these ornaments is Maories that in all probability the species necessarily very great, as the native does

not possess the mechanical means which | jade which is too small to be converted into a render its manipulation a comparatively easy

render its manipulation a comparatively easy task to the European engraver, and can only shape his ornaments by laboriously rubbing one piece of stone upon another.

That ornaments made of such a material should be highly prized is not a matter of surprise, and it is found that a wealthy chief will give an extraordinarily block surprise. surprise, and it is found that a wealthy chief will give an extraordinarily high price for a handsome jade ornament. There is in my collection a very ancient Buddhist amulet, made of the purest green jade, and beautifully carved, the remarkable portion of it being a revolving wheel with spiral spokes, the wheel being cut out of the solid jade. The amulet was found in the apartments of the Queen of Oude, and had evidently been imported from China, where it was enimported from China, where it was engraved, the whole character of the work belonging to a very ancient epoch of Chinese art. It was shown to a Maori chief, who was then visiting England, and who was intensely pleased with it, saying that, if it were sent to New Zenland and offered for sale to one of the great chiefs, it would be purchased for £20 or £25 of English montey. money

It has been just mentioned that, in spite of the labor bestowed on the ornament, a new tiki can be purchased for a moderate aum. Such, however, would not be the case were the tiki an old one. These ornaments are handed down from father to son, and in process of time are looked upon with the greatest reverence, and treated as heirlooms

which no money can buy.

One of these tikis was seen by Mr. Angas lying on the tomb of a child, where it had been placed as an offering by the parents. It had lain there for a long time; but, in spite of the value of the ornament, no one had ventured to touch it. It was a very small one, even less in size than the drawing in the illustration, and had in all probability been worn by the child on whose tomb it lay.

Most of these tikis are plain, but some of them have their beauty increased by two patches of scarlet cement with which the

sockets of the eyes are filled.

The tikis are worn on the breast, suspended by a cord round the neck; and almost every person of rank, whether man or woman, possesses one. They are popularly supposed to be idols, and are labelled as such in many museums; but there is not the least reason for believing them to fulfil any office except that of personal decoration. The Maories are fond of carving the human figure upon everything that can be Their houses are covered with human figures, their canoes are decorated with grotesque human faces, and there is not an implement or utensil which will not have upon it some conventional representation of the a long and tedious operation, and is con-

weapon, and too flat to be carved into one of the cylindrical carrings which are so much valued, he should trace upon it the same figure as that which surrounds him on every side.

The most common forms of earring are those which are shown at figs. 4 and 5, the atter being most usually seen. It is so strangely shaped that no one who did not know its use would be likely to imagine that it was ever intended to be worn in the ear. Two rather remarkable earrings are ost. Two rather remarkable earrings are worn in New Zealand as marks of rank; one being a natural object, and the other an imitation of it. This earring is called make tamina, and is nothing but a tooth of the tiger shark. Simple though it be, it is greatly prized, as being a mark of high rank, and is valued as much as a plain red button by a Chinese mandalin or to come button by a Chinese mandarin, or, to come nearer home, the privilege of wearing a piece of blue ribbon among ourselves. Still more prized than the tooth itself is

an imitation of it in pellucid jade. The native carver contrives to imitate his model wonderfully well, giving the peculiar curves of a shark's tooth with singular exactness. Such an ornament as this is exceedingly scarce, and is only to be seen in the ears of the very greatest chiefs. Anything seems to serve as an earring, and it is not uncom-mon to see natives of either sex wearing in their ears a brass button, a key, a button-

hook, or even a pipe.

There is very little variety in the mode of dressing the hair, especially among women. Men generally keep it rather short, having it cut at regular intervals, while some of the elders adhere to the ancient custom of wearing it long, turning it up in a bunch on the top of the head, and fastening it with combs. These are formed after a fashion common

to all Polynesia, and extending even to Western Africa. The teeth are not cut out of a single piece of wood, but each is made separately, and fastened to its neighbor by a strong cross-lashing. The teeth, although slight, are strong and elastic, and are well capable of enduring the rather rough hand-

ling to which they are subjected.
Children of both sexes always wear the hair short like the men; but as the girls grow up, they allow the hair to grow, and permit it to flow over their shoulders on either side of the face. They do not part it, but bring it down over the forehead, and cut it in a straight line just above the eyebrows. When they marry, they allow the whole of the hair to grow, and part it in the middle. They do not plait or otherwise dress it, but merely allow it to hang loosely in its natural curls.

human form. It is therefore not remarkable ducted after the fashion which prevails in so that when a New Zealander finds a piece of many parts of the world. Not knowing the

use of so ducing a keen ene shells for one unde scraping Althou slow one,

might be out the hi stiff bear onverted into a arved into one which are so rounds him on

of earring are
gs. 4 and 5, the
seen. It is so
the who did not
be worn in the
te earrings are
marks of vank;
and the other an
t is called make ; is called make a tooth of the h it be, it is mark of high as a plain red in, or, to come of wearing a ourselves.

tooth itself is cid jade. The itate his model peculiar curves ular exactness, is exceedingly n in the cars of nything seems sex wearing in key, a button-

in the mode of among women, short, having it le some of the custom of wearbunch on the g it with combs. askion common nding even to are not cut out t each is made its neighbor by teeth, although c, and are well er rough handted.

ways wear the ut as the girls r to grow, and r shoulders on ey do not part above the eyethey allow the and part it in it or otherwise to hang loosely

Tew Zealanders n, and is conh prevails in 80 ot knowing the

use of scissors, and being incapable of producing any cutting instrument with an edge keen enough to shave, they use a couple of shells for the operation, placing the edge of one under the hair that is to be cut, and scraping it with the edge of the other.

Although this plan is necessarily a very slow one, it is much more efficacious than might be imagined, and is able not only to cut the hair of the head, but to shave the stiff beards of the men. In performing the

CHAPTER LXXXI.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

DOMESTIC LIFE.

CEREMONIES ATTENDANT ON BIRTH-PREVALENCE AND CAUSES OF INFANTICIDE-A CURIOUS IN-STANCE OF SUPERSTITION-NAMES AND THEIR SIGNIFICATION-THE CEREMONY OF SPRINKLING - THE RECITATIONS - CHANGES OF NAME - MARRIAGE - COURTSHIP AND WIFE-SNATCHING -AMUSEMENTS OF THE NEW ZEALANDERS-THE SWING, OR GIANT STRIDE-DRAUGHTS AND OTHER SEDENTARY GAMES - CHILDREN'S SPORTS - TOP-SPINNING, KITE-FLYING - AND CAT'S-CRADLE - SWIMMING AND DIVING - CURIOUS PETS: DOGS, PIGS, AND PARROTS - BALL-PLAYING - MUSIC AND SINGING - CHARACTER OF THE SONGS - MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS - THE FIFE, THE WAR TRUMPET, AND THE WAR BELL-CURIOUS MODE OF SALUTATION-THE "TANGI," AND ITS LUDICROUS APPEARANCE -- ITS WEARISOME EFFECT ON A FOREIGNER -- UNCERTAIN TEMPER OF THE MAORIES - STRENGTH OF MEMORY, AND CURIOSITY.

WE will now examine the domestic life of the New Zealander, and begin at the begin-

ming, i. c. with his birth.

As is mostly the case in those nations which do not lead the artificial life of civilization, there is very little trouble or ceremony about the introduction of a new member of society. The mother does not trouble herself about medical attendants or nurses, but simply goes off into some retired place near a stream, and seldom takes with her even a companion of her own sex. When the baby is born, the mother bathes her child and then herself in the stream, ties the infant on her back, and in a short time resumes the business in which she was engaged. Until the child is named the mother is sacred, or "tapu," and may not

be touched by any one.

The New Zealand women are too often guilty of the crime of infanticide, as indeed might be imagined to be the case in a land where human life is held at so cheap a rate. Various causes combine to produce this result. If, for example, the child is deformed or seems sickly, it is sacrificed as an act of mercy toward itself, the Maories thinking that it is better for the scarcely conscious child to be destroyed at once than to die slowly under disease, or to live a

Maori mind, has caused the death of many an infant, the mother being jealous of her husband, or being separated from him longer than she thinks to be necessary. Even a sudden quarrel will sometimes cause the with remorse for the crime that she had

woman, maddened by anger, to destroy her child in the hope of avenging herself upon her husband. Slave women often systematically destroy their children, from a desire to save them from the life of servitude to which they are born. In many cases the life of the child is sacrificed

through superstitious terror.

A very curious example of such a case is given by Dr. Dieffenbach. A recently married wife of a young chief was sitting near a pah or village, on the fence of which an old priestess had hung her blanket. As is generally the case with New Zealand garments, the blanket was infested with vermin. The young woman saw one of these loathsome insects crawling on the blanket, caught it, and, according to the custom of the country, ate it. The old woman to whom the garment belonged flew into a violent passion, poured a volley of curses on the girl for meddling with the sacred garment of a priestess, and finished by prophesying that the delinquent would kill and eat the child which she was expecting.

The spirit of revenge was strong in the old hag, who renewed her imprecations whenever she met the young woman, and succeeded in terrifying her to such a degree that she was almost driven mad. Immediately after the child was born the old woman despised life as a cripple.

Revenge, the leading characteristic of the found out her victim, and renewed her threats, until the young mother's mind was

committe and her selves fro and had It is se

her child general rebut for a ered as a seem equ nursing t and wrappfolds of hi

Soon af either by name alwa tion, and 1 quality, or which may birth. M invention seldom for his father are harmo vowel; an that are gi tism the ter into a vov ideas of eu

When th months old is remarka tian baptisi is not know the words scure. Ver ceremony, mystery, ar The thre

that the chi it should b priest, and used. As f mode of c follows: The child and la stands by w calabash of then said, a the child wi fers according the sense o even the na ing of the g lete words, t retained, whi

As far as c tion consists the priest an on the mat. by Dieffenba beginning of female child guarantee its that the true committed; and before very long both she is very doubtful. The translation runs as and her husband had emancipated themselves from their superstitious thraldom,

and had become converts to Christianity.

It is seldom, however, that a mother kills her child after it has lived a day; and, as a general rule, if an infant survives its birth but for a few hours, its life may be considered as safe from violence. Both parents seem equally fond of infants, the father nursing them quite as tenderly as the mother, lulling it to sleep by simple songs, and wrapping its little naked body in the folds of his mat.

Soon after its birth the child is named, either by its parents or other relatives, the name always having some definite signification, and mostly alluding to some supposed quality, or to some accidental circumstance which may have happened at the time of birth. Much ingenuity is shown in the invention of these names, and it is very seldom found that the son is named after his father or other relative. All the names are harmonious in sound, and end with a vowel; and even in the European names that are given by the missionaries at baptism the terminal syllable is always changed into a vowel, in order to suit the native ideas of euphony.

When the child is about two or three months old, a ceremony is performed which is remarkable for its resemblance to Christian baptism. The origin of the ceremony is not known, and even the signification of the words which are employed is very obscure. Very few persons are present at the ceremony, which is carried on with much

mystery, and is performed by the priest.

The three principal parts of the rite are that the child should be laid on a mat, that it should be sprinkled with water by the priest, and that certain words should be used. As far as has been ascertained, the mode of conducting the ceremony is as follows: The women and girls bring the child and lay it on a mat, while the priest stands by with a green branch dipped in a calabash of water. A sort of incantation is then said, after which the priest sprinkles the child with water. The incantation differs according to the sex of the child, but the sense of it is very obscure. Indeed, even the natives cannot explain the meaning of the greater part of the incantation: so that in all probability it consists of obsolete words, the sounds of which have been retained, while their sense has been lost.

As far as can be ascertained, the incantation consists of a sort of dialogue between the priest and the women who lay the child on the mat. The following lines are given by Dieffenbach, as the translation of the beginning of the incantation said over female children. He does not, however,

Girls. "We wish this child to be im-Girls. "We wish this child to be immersed." —Priest. "Let it be sprinkled."

Girls. "We wish the child to live to womanhood." —Priest. "Dance for Atua."

Girls. "Me ta nganahau." (These words are unitablishle.

are unintelligible.)—Priest. "It is sprinkled (firls. "The se words.")

Girls. "The mat is spread." — Priest. Dance in a circle."

"Thread the dance."

The reader must here be told that the word "Atua" signifies a god, and that the word which is translated as "womanhood" is a term that signifies the tattooing of the lips, which is performed when girls are admitted into the ranks of women. The above sentences form only the commencement of the incantation, the remainder of which is wholly unintelligible.

When the child is old enough to undertake a journey to the priest's house, another ceremony takes place, in which the baby name that the parents have given to the infant is exchanged for another. According to Mr. Taylor's interesting account, when the child has arrived at the house of the priest, the latter plants a sapling as a sign of vigorous life, and holds a wooden idol to the ear of the child, while he enumerates a long string of names which had belonged to its ancestors. As soon as the child sneezes, the priest stops, the name which he last uttered being that which is assumed by the child. We are left to infer that some artificial means must be used to produce sneezing, as otherwise the task of the priest would be rather a tedious one.

After the requisite sign has been given, and the child has signified its assent to the name, the priest delivers a metrical address, differing according to the sex. Boys are told to clear the land and be strong to work; to be bold and courageous in battle, and comport themselves like men. Girls are enjoined to "seek food for themselves with panting of breath," to weave garments, and to perform the other duties which belong to

their sex. Even this second name is not retained through life, but may be changed in after life in consequence of any feat in war, or of any important circumstance. Such names, like the titles of the peerage among ourselves, supersede the original name in such a manner that the same person may be known by several totally distinct names at different

periods of his life.

There seems to be no definite ceremony by which the young New Zealand lad is admitted into the ranks of men. The tattoo is certainly a sign that his manhood is acknowledged; but this is a long process, guarantee its entire accuracy, and remarks considered as an initiatory rite like those that the true sense of several of the words which are performed by the Australians. extending over several years, and cannot be

-A CURIOUS DI-Y OF SPRINKLING IFE-SNATCHING --DRAUGHTS AND ING -AND CAT'S-- BALL-PLAYING -THE FIFE, THE "TANGI," AND ITS TAIN TEMPER OF

, to destroy her

ng herself upon

en often syste-

ildren, from a

he life of servi-

orn. In many of such a case is A recently maras sitting near a of which an old ket. As is genaland garments, h vermin. The these loathsome nket, caught it, of the country, whom the garviolent passion, on the girl for garment of a rophesying that

as strong in the er imprecations ng woman, and to such a degree mad. Immedin the old woman d renewed her ther's mind was hat she hastily ild into it, and however, filled e that she had

nd eat the child

When a young man finds himself able to maintain a wife, he thinks about getting married, and sets about it very deliberately. Usually there is a long courtship, and, as a general fact, when a young man fixes his affections on a girl, he is sure to marry her in the end, however much she or her friends may object to the match. He thinks his honor involved in success, and it is but sel-

dom that he fails.

Sometimes a girl is sought by two men of tolerably equal pretensions; and when this is the case, they are told by the father to settle the matter by a pulling match. This is a very simple process, each suitor taking one of the girl's arms, and trying to drag her away to his own house. This is a very veritive husings for the virial and the same tolerable th exciting business for the rivals as well as for the friends and spectators, and indeed to every one except the girl herself, who is always much injured by the contest, her arms being sometimes dislocated, and always so much strained as to be useless for some time.

In former times the struggle for a wife assumed a more formidable aspect, and several modern travellers have related instances where the result has been a tragic one. If a young man has asked for a girl and been refused, his only plan is to take her by force. For this purpose he assembles his male friends, and makes up his mind to carry the lady off forcibly if he cannot obtain her peacefully. Her friends in the mean-time know well what to expect, and in their turn assemble to protect her. A flerce fight then ensues, clubs, and even more danger-ous weapons being freely used; and in more than one case the intended bride has been killed by one of the losing side. Sometimes, though not very often, a girl is betrothed when she is quite a child. In that case she is as strictly sacred as if she were actually a married woman, and the extreme laxity of morals which has been mentioned cannot be imputed to such betrothed maidens. Should one of them err, she is liable to the same penalties as if she were actually mar-

The New Zealanders seldom have more than one wife. Examples are known where a chief has possessed two and even more wives; but, as a general rule, a man has but one wife. Among the Maories the wife has very much more acknowledged influence than is usually the case among uncivilized people, and the wife always expects to be consulted by her husband in every important undertaking. Marriage usually takes place about the age of seventeen or eighteen, sometimes at an earlier age in the case of the woman and a later in the case of the

As to the amusements of the New Zealanders, they are tolerably varied, and are throw with great dexterity, and emulate far superior to the mere succession of sing-each other in aiming at a small target. ing and dancing, in which are summed up

the amusements of many uncivilized races. Songs and dances form part of the amuse-ments of this people, but only a part, and they are suplemented by many others.

One of the mest curious was seen by Mr. Angas in the interior of the country, but never on the coasts. A tall and stout pole, generally the trunk of a pine, is firmly set in the ground on the top of a steep bank, and from the upper part of the pole are sus-pended a number of ropes made of phormium fibre. The game consists in seizing one of the ropes, running down the bank, and swinging as far as possible into the air. Sometimes they even run round and round the pole as if they were exercising on the giant stride; but as they have not learned to make a revolving top to the pole or swivels for the ropes, they cannot keep up this amusement for any long time.

amusement for any tong time.

They have a game which is very similar to our draughts, and is played on a checkered board with pebbles or similar objects as men. Indeed, the game bears so close a resemblance to draughts, that it may probably be a mere variation of that game, which some New Zeelander has bearsed to me. some New Zealander has learned from an European, and imported into his country.

There is also a game which much re-sembles the almost universal "morro," and which consists in opening and closing the hand and bending the elbow, performing both actions very sharply, and accompanying them with a sort of doggrel recitation, which has to be said in one breath.

The children have many games which are very similar to those in use among our-selves. They spin tops, for example, and fly kites, the latter toy being cleverly made of the flat leaves of a kind of sedge. It is triangular in form, and the cord is made of the universal flax fibre. Kite-flying is always accompanied by a song; and when the kites are seen flying near a village, they are a sign that the village is at peace, and may be approached with safety.

Perhaps the chief amusement of the children is the game called Maui, which is in fact a sort of "cat's-cradle." The Maori children, however, are wonderful proficients at the game, and would look with contempt on the few and simple forms which English children produce. Instead of limiting themselves to the "cradle," the "pound of candles," the "net," and the "purse," the New Zealander produces figures of houses, canoes. men and women, and various other patterns. They say that this game was left to them as an inheritance by Maui, the Adam of New Zealand, and it appears to be intimately connected with their early traditions.

The elder children amuse themselves with

spear-throwing, making their mimic weapons of fern-stems bound at the end. These they

Swimming is one of the favorite amuse

civilized races. of the amuse-only a part, and

only a part, and my others. The seen by Mr. the country, but and stout pole, is firmly set in steep bank, and a pole are susmade of phornisists in seizing down the bank, tole into the air. ble into the air. ercising on the e not learned to pole or swivels keep up this

is very similar yed on a check-similar objects gears so close a at it may proba-at game, which carned from an his country.

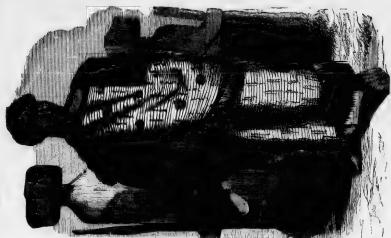
hich much red "morro," and and closing the ow, performing nd accompanygrel recitation, reath.

ames which are ames which are see among ourrexample, and geleverly made of sedge. It is a cord is made of sedge, and when a village, they sat peace, and ty, ent of the chilui, which is in "." The Maori erful proficients

erful proficients with contempt which English limiting thempound of canurse," the New houses, canoes. other patterns. left to them as Adam of New be intimately traditions.

hemselves with mimic weapons and emulate ll target.

vorite amuse







(a) HONGI-HONGI, CHIEF OF WAIPA (2.) THE CHIEF'S DAUGHTER. (See page 821.)

(1.) PARÍTENE MAIOHA IN HIS STATE WAR CLOAK.

(See page 812)

(See page 850.)

dling the Being coup the ebathing amphibit they switcher the In tho springs a the follo "Upon t there is which t folks, lux time for of an eve ting toge heads about Boiling

ments c have an element in the

which v

close to a rock, whi boiling st voir grad water is l out the be which it

body runs
"The r
mineral s
healthy st
fully smoo

fully smoo finest peop about Tau of the lim render the tor."

Perhaps the New themselves sixty years produced, took away took away Island for t tlers the a he planted then new in natives with never seen the others, the others, seeing horse sei, naturally Thinking the them as ho them to deal better end, fi and was bill and was kill

Nowadays far too well

ments of the New Zealanders, who can swim | come quite an institution in New Zealand. almost as soon as they can walk, and never have an idea that the water is an unfriendly element. Both sexes swim alike well, and in the same manner, i. e. after the fashion which we call "swimming like a dog," paddling the water with each arm alternately. Being constantly in the water, they can keep being constantly in the water, and in their bathing parties sport about as if they were amphibious beings. They dive as well as they swim, and the women spend much of

their time in diving for crayfish.

In those parts of the country where hot springs are found the natives are fond of bathing in the heated water. Mr. Angas makes the following observations on this custom:-"Upon the beach of the lake, near Te Rapa, there is a charming natural hot bath, in which the natives, especially the young folks, luxuriate daily. Sunset is the favorite time for bathing, and I have frequently seen of an evening at least twenty persons squat-ting together in the water, with only their heads above the surface.

"Boiling springs burst out of the ground, close to a large circular basin in the volcanic rock, which, by the assistance of a little art, had been rendered a capacious bath. The boiling stream is conducted into this reservoir gradually, and the temperature of the water is kept up or decreased by stopping out the boiling stream with stones, through which it trickles slowly, whilst the main body runs steaming into the lake.

"The medicinal properties of these hot mineral springs preserve the natives in a healthy state, and render their skins beautifully smooth and clear. Indeed, some of the finest people in the island are to be observed about Taupo, and the beauty and symmetry of the limbs of many of the youth would render them admirable studies for the sculp-

Perhaps the oddest amusement with which the New Zealanders have ever recreated themselves is one that only occurred some sixty years ago, and is not likely to be re-produced. About that date Captain King took away two New Zealanders to Norfolk Island for the purpose of teaching the set-tlers the art of flax-dressing. When he came back to restore them to their homes, he planted a quantity of maize, which was then new in the country, and presented the natives with three pigs. Most of them had never seen any animal larger than a cat, and the others, who had a vague recollection of seeing horses on board Captain Cook's vessel, naturally mistook them for those animals. Thinking them to be horses, they treated them as horses, and speedily rode two of them to death. The third did not come to a better end, for it strayed into a burial-ground,

and was killed by the indignant natives.

Nowadays the Maories understand pigs

Every village is plentifully populated with pigs, and, as may be seen in the illustration of a village which will be given on a future page, one of the commonest objects is a sow with a litter of pigs.

821

Little pigs may be seen tottering about the houses, and the natives, especially the women, pet pigs exactly as European women pet dogs and cats. They carry them in their arms, fondle and pet them; and nothing is more common than to see a young girl unfold her mantle and discover a pig nestling under its folds. Such a girl, for example, as the one who is represented in the illustration No. 2, on the preceding page, would be very likely indeed to have a pig in her arms under the shelter of her mantle.

The figure in question is the portrait of the daughter of a chief. Her name is Tienga, and she is the daughter of a very powerful and celebrated chie. Her costume is, like her character, an odd mixture of civilization and nature. Her mantle is the native flax mat, under which she may probably wear a muslin, or even silken, garment, articles of dress of which the young lady in question was, when her portrait was taken, exceedingly proud. On her head she wears a common straw hat, purchased from the trader at some five hundred per cent. or so above its value, and round it she has twisted a bunch of a species of clematis, which grows with great luxuriance in the forests.

It is a curious study to note the different characteristics of the human mind. Oriental would turn with unspeakable disgust from the very touch of a pig, and is scarcely less fastidious concerning the dog. Yet the inhabitants of that wonderful group of islands which stretches from Asia to America have a wonderful affinity for both these animals, and especially for pigs, dis-playing, as we shall find on a future page, their affection in a manner that seems to

our minds extremely ludicrous. Pigs are now fast becoming acclimatized to the country, just like the mustang horses of America. When a tribe has suffered extinction, as too often happens in the sanguinary and ferocious wars in which the people engage, the pigs escape as well as they can; and those that evade the enemy have to shift for themselves, and soon resume all the habits of the wild swine from which they were originally descended. Those which now inhabit the country are easily to be distinguished from their immediate ancestors, having short heads and legs and round compact bodies.

The native name for the pig is "poaka," a word which some have thought to be derived from the English word "pork." Dr. Dieffenbach, however, differs from this theory, and thinks that the native word, although of far too well to ride them. Pigs have be- common both to England and New Zealand.

He thinks that the New Zealanders had some knowledge of the pig previous to its introduc-tion by England, and that they derived their knowledge from Spanish voyagers. He is strengthened in this opinion by the fact that the name for dog, "perro," is likewise Span-

Pigs and dogs are not the only pets, the natives being in the habit of catching the kaka parrot, which has already been men-tioned, and keeping it tame about their houses. They make a very effective and pic-turesque perch for the bird, covering it with a sloping roof as a protection against the sun, and securing it to the perch by a string round its leg. Mr. Angas mentions that he has brought these birds to England, but that the climate did not agree with them, and they all died.

Many of the New Zealanders, especially the women, are dexterous ball-players, throwing four balls in various ways so as always to keep them in the air. Some few of them are so skilful that they surpass our best jugglers, playing with five balls at a time, and throwing them over the head, round the neck, and in various other ingenious modes of increas-ing the difficulty of the performance.

Most of their sports are accompanied with

songs, which, indeed, seem to be suited to all phases of a New Zealander's life. In paddling canoes, for example, the best songster takes his stand in the head of a vessel and begins a song, the chorus of which is taken up by the crew, who paddle in exact time to

the melody.

Respecting the general character of these songs Dieffenbach writes as follows: "Some songs are lyric, and are sung to a low, plaintive, uniform, but not at all disagreeable tune. E' Waiata is a song of a joyful nature; E' Haka one accompanied by gestures of mimicry; E' Karakia is a prayer or an incantation used on certain occasions. In saying this prayer there is generally no modulation of the voice, but syllables are lengthened and shortened, and it produces the same effect as reading the Talmud in synagogues. Most of these songs live in the memory of all, but with numerous variations. Certain Karakia, or invocations, however, are less generally known, and a stranger obtains them with difficulty, as they are only handed down among the tohunga, or priests, from father to

"To adapt words to a certain tune, and thus to commemorate a passing event, is common in New Zealand, and has been the beginning of all national poetry. Many of these children of the moment have a long existence, and are transmitted through several generations; but their allusions become unin-telligible, and foreign names, having undergone a thorough change, cannot be recog-

nized."

All these songs are accompanied by gestic-

which is known as E' Haka the bodily exertion is extreme. The singers sit down in a circle, throw off their upper mats, and sing in concert, accompanying the song with the wildest imaginable gestures, squinting and turning up their eyes so as to show nothing but the whites.

Of musical instruments they have but very vague and faint ideas. Even the drum, which is perhaps the instrument that has the widest range through the world, is unknown to the native New Zealander. Drums resound in all the islands of the Pacific, but the New Zealander never indulges himself, in a drumming. The sole really musical instrument which he possesses is a sort of fife made out of human bone. Generally, the flute is formed from the thigh-bone of a slain enemy; and when this is the case, the Maori warrior prizes the instrument inordinately, and carries it suspended to the tiki which he wears slung on his breast.

There are certainly two noise-producing instruments, which have no right to be honored with the title of musical instruments. These are the war bell and the war

trumpet.

The former is called the war bell in default of a better word. It consists of a block of hard wood about six feet long and two thick, with a deep groove in the centre. This "bell" is suspended horizontally by cords, and struck by a man who squats on a scaf-fold under it. With a stick made of heavy wood he delivers slow and regular strokes in the groove, the effect being to produce a most melancholy sound, dully booming in the stillness of the night. The war bell is never sounded by day, the object being to tell the people inside the pah, or village, that the sentinel is awake, and to tell any approaching enemy that it would be useless for him to attempt an attack by surprise. Its native name is Pahu.

The war trumpet is called Putara-putara. It is a most unwieldly instrument, at least seven feet in length. It is hollowed out of a suitably-shaped piece of hard wood, and an expanding mouth is given to it by means of several pieces of wood lashed together with flaxen fibre, and fitted to each other like the staves of a cask. Toward the mouth-piece it is covered with the grotesque carvings of which the New Zealanders are so fond. It is only used on occasions of alarm, when it is laid over the fence of the pah, and sounded by a strong-lunged native. The note which the trumpet produces is a loud roaring sound, which, as the natives aver, can be heard, on a calm night, the distance of several miles. In fact, the sound appears to be very much the same as that which is produced by the celebrated Blowing Stone of Wiltshire.

In some places a smaller trumpet is used in time of war. The body of this trumpet is always made of a large shell, generally ulations more or less violent and in that that of a triton, and the mode of blowing it

differs plest ki use thr ands. shell, a near th flute, be fact, it horn an shown o There

a much which is case the and a we so that i in our o The d

almost e therefore treat of t The n

meeting

sufficient meet who time, it i etiquette tangi. T hard, as in themselve faces, exc opposite o piously. mand, and whole of t demands i approach gether for series of satisfied an ful and liv there had in existenc

Mr. Ang which he paddling a the explor canoes. S the large between th

Time be to wrap h but burst i approved f with equal board a bas received in tangi being woman bu lively talk v canoe roun sight.

In one i rather ludic shall tell his "At Hop

the bodily exrs sit down in mats, and sing song with the squinting and show nothing

have but very en the drum, nt that has the ld, is unknown r. Drums re-Pacific, but the s himself in a nusical instruort of fife made lly, the flute is a slain enemy; Maori warrior ately, and car-

oise-producing right to be nusical instrull and the war

bell in defhult of a block of and two thick, centre. This tally by cords, lats on a scafnade of heavy ular strokes in to produce a y booming in he war bell is ject being to or village, that tell any apbe useless for surprise. Its

Putara-putara. ment, at least owed out of a wood, and an t by means of together with other like the mouth-piece te carvings of e so fond. It larm, when it , and sounded e note which oaring sound, be heard, on several miles. be very much oduced by the liltshire.

mpet is used

this trumpet ell, generally

of blowing it

differs according to the locality. The simplest kind of shell-trumpet is that which is in use throughout the whole of the Pacific Islands. It is made by taking a large empty shell, and boring a round hole on one side for some time, when, to my surprise and the point. The shell is blown like a ands. It is made by taking a large empty shell, and boring a round hole on one side near the point. The shell is blown like a flute, being placed horizontally to the lips, and the air directed across the aperture. In fact, it exactly resembles in principle the horn and ivory trumpets of Africa, which are shown on a preceding page.

There is, however, in the British Museum a much more elaborate form of trumpet, which is blown with a mouth-piece. In this case the point of the shell has been removed and a wooden mouth-piece substituted for it, so that it is blown at the end, like trumpets in our own country.

The dances of the New Zealander are almost entirely connected with war and will therefore be mentioned when we come to treat of that subject.

meeting is very curious, and to an European sufficiently ludicrous. When two persons meet who have not seen each other for some time, it is considered a necessary point of etiquette to go through the ceremony called tanyi. The "g," by the way, is pronounced hard, as in the word "begin." They envelope themselves in their mats, covering even their faces, except one eye, squat on the ground opposite each other, and begin to weep coplously. They seem to have tears at command, and they never fail to go through the whole of the ceremony as often as etiquette demands it. Having finished their cry, they definition in the state of the ful and lively, chatting and laughing as if there had never been such a thing as a tear in existence.

Mr. Angas tells a ludicrous story of a tangi which he once witnessed. A woman was paddling a very small canoe, and fell in with the exploring party, who were in two large canoes. Seeing some friends on board of the large canoes, she ran her little vessel

between them, and began a vigorous tangi. Time being pressing, she could not stop to wrap herself up in the orthodox style, but burst into a flood of tears in the most approved fashion, and paddled and howled with equal vigor. Still crying, she put on board a basket of potatoes as a present, and received in return a fig of tobacco. The received in return a ng of tobacco. The langs describes a tangi to which ne was tangi being by this time complete, the old woman burst into a loud laugh, had a lively talk with her friends, turned her little cance round, and paddled briskly out of the lake. There were but few natives residents

In one instance this force of habit was rather ludicrously exemplified. The writer shall tell his own story.

"At Hopeton we met with a sister of

amusement, she at once commenced a most affectionate tangi before the sketch; waving her hands in the usual manner, and uttering successively low whining sounds expressive

of her joy.

"After she had, as I imagined, satisfied
"After she had, as I imagined, satisfied brother, I was about to replace the sketch in my portfolio, when she begged of For-saith that she might be permitted to tangi over it in good earnest, saying, 'It was her brother—her brother; and she must TANGI till the tears come.' And sure enough, presently the tears did come, and the old most entirely connected with war and will be determined by the connected with war and will woman wept and moaned, and waved her hands before the picture, with as much apparent feeling as if her brother himself had thus suddenly appeared to her. I could not prevent the cold apparent of the cold apparent not prevail upon the old creature to desist, and was at length compelled to leave the portrait in Forsaith's care, whilst I was employed in sketching elsewhere. In future I shall be more cautious how I show my sketches to the old women, finding that they are liable to produce such melancholy results.'

Mr. A. Christie, to whom I am indebted for much information about the country, told me an anecdote of a tangi performed in England by a party of Maories who had visited this country. They were about to bid farewell to one of their friends, and visited his house for that purpose, desiring to be allowed to perform the tangi.

Knowing their customs, their host took them into an empty room, previously cau-tioning his family not to be surprised at the ceremony. The whole party then sat down on the floor, and raised a most dismal howl, wailing, waving their hands, shedding floods of tears, and, in fact, enjoying themselves in their own queer way. The tangi being over, they all became lively and chatty, and finally took leave after the undemonstrative English fashion.

To a stranger the performance of the langi is very amusing for the first few times or witnessing it; but he soon becomes tired of it, and at last looks upon it as an unmitigated nuisance, wasting time, and subject-ing him to a series of doleful howls from which he has no mode of escape. Mr. Angas describes a tangi to which he was

"At sunset we reached a small fortified ing in it, to whom the sight of a pakeha (white man) was indeed astonishing; and, after the salutation of welcome, they commenced a tangi at my guides and myself.

"The man who introduced us uttered a

son crying at a distance, and continued to look mournfully on the ground. The welthey howled dismally, and their tears fell

fast for some time.

"Another female soon arrived, who, squatting on the ground, commenced a tangi with her friends, so loud and doleful now muttering and anon howling like a hyena — that it made me feel quite dismal. There she sat, yelling horribly, to my great annoyance, but Maori etiquette compelled me to look grave and not to disturb her. There seemed to be no end to this woman's wailings of welcome. The night was cold, and she still continued to sit by the fire prolonging her lugubrious and discordant strains. Sometimes she would pitch a higher key, going upward with a scream, shaking her voice, and muttering between every howl; then it would be a squall with variations, like 'housetop cats on moonlight

nights.'
"Then blowing her nose with her fingers,
"the woman next her, and recommenced howling in the most systematic way. Once again she became furious; then, during an interval, she spoke about the pakeha, joined in a hearty laugh with all the rest, and at last, after one long continued howl, all was silent, to my great

relief."

The manner in which the natives can produce such torrents of tears is really marvellous; and they exhibit such apparent agony of grief, acting the part to such perfection, that for some time a stranger can hardly believe that the profusely weeping natives are simply acting a conventional

In the illustration No. 2, on the 809th page, is shown the sort of scene which takes place at a pah when some of the inhabitants return after a long absence - a scene which would be very pathetic did it not trench

upon the ludicrous.

When a party of strangers arrive at a pah, the preliminary part of the tangi, i. e. the sitting down and weeping, is omitted, another ceremony being substituted for it. The visitors are introduced into the interior of the pah, where a large space has been kept clear. The principal chief of the village then advances, clad as if for war, i. e. wearing nothing but his moke and plenty of scarlet paint, and bearing a spear in his hand. He brandishes and aims the spear as if he meant to pierce the chief of the op-posite party, and then throws it toward, but not at, the stranger. The visitors then squat silently on the ground, according to Maori etiquette, and presently each stranger is faced by one of the receiving tribe, who goes through the ceremony of ongi, or pressing noses, which is the last part of the tangi.

This lasts for some time, and, when it is comideath should be the immediate consequence."

faint sound in his throat, like that of a per- | pleted, the provisions are brought out and a great feasting ensues.

As to the general character of the natives, it presents a curious mixture of wildness and ferocity, affection and fickleness, benevo-lence and vengefulness, hospitality and covetousness. The leading characteristic of the Maori mind is self-esteem, which sometimes takes the form of a lofty and even chivalrous pride, and at other times degenerates into childish vanity. It is this feel-ing which leads a New Zealander to kill himself rather than live to suffer disgrace, and which causes him to behave with the politeness for which the well-bred New Zealander is so conspicuous. Degenerating into vanity, it is easily wounded; and hence the accidentally hurt feelings of a Maori, added to the vengefulness which forms so large a portion of his nature, have occasioned long and desolating wars, in which whole tribes have been extinguished.

The temper of the Maories is, as is often the case with uncultivated natures, quick, tetchy, and, though pleasing enough as a general rule, is apt to change suddenly with-out the least provocation; a lively, agreea-ble person becoming suddenly dull, sullen, and ill-tempered. This fickleness of demeanor is very troublesome to Europeans, and, indeed, is sometimes assumed by the natives, for the purpose of seeing how much their white companion will endure. When they find that he meets them with firmness, they lay aside their unpleasant manner, and

become quite gay and sociable.

Often, however, an European hurts their feelings quite unintentionally, through sheer ignorance of the minute code of etiquette which they observe. If, for example two Europeans meet and wish to discuss a subject, they stand still and have their talk, or perhaps they walk backward and forward. Two New Zealanders, on the contrary, would always sit down, as it is thought a mark of inattention to stand while addressed by another. Again, when a New Zealander enters a house, he makes his salutation and then squats down in silence for some time, the omission of this ceremony being looked upon as great a mark of ill-breeding as to go into a drawing-room with the hat on is con-

sidered among ourselves. One curious trait of the Maori character is the inability to keep a secret. This curious disposition sometimes subjects the natives to very unpleasant consequences. Those, for example, who have adopted the laws of the white man, have discovered that there are many delinquencies which can be done with impunity, provided that they are committed in secret. But according to Dieffenbach, "with the art of keeping a secret the New Zealander is little acquainted. Although he

The ory, ea taining strengt fled by who w and ma One this cha

named larly kr a most engage once ac chief E' called. assisted had he made p same fat His la

Bay wh pah, and dred of he becan met wit time he labored earnest e itary care taking lo purnose men. M funeral o which he most imp ever hear ght out and a

of the natives. f wildness and ness, benevoracteristic of , which someofty and even times degent is this feellander to kill uffer disgrace. have with the ored New Zea-Degenerating ed; and hence of a Maori, hich forms so ve occasioned

is, as is often atures, quick, enough as a suddenly withlively, agreea-ly dull, sullen, leness of deto Europeans, sumed by the ing how much idure. When with firmness, t manner, and

which whole

in hurts their through sheer e of etiquette example two discuss a subtheir talk, or and forward. ontrary, would ght a mark of addressed by w Zealander alutation and or some time, being looked eding as to go hat on is con-

ri character is This curious s the natives Those, nces. ed the laws of that there are be done with are commit-Dieffenbach, ret the New Although he ts great selfut, even if his onsequence."

They have a strong and tenscious memory, easily acquiring knowledge, and retaining it with wonderful accuracy. The strength of their memory is well exemplified by the native converts to Christianity who will repeat long passages of the Bible

and many hymns with absolute exactness.

One of the most remarkable examples of this characteristic is afforded by an old chief named Horomana Marahau, who is popularly known as Blind Solomon. He has led a most exciting and varied life, having been engaged in war ever since he was a boy, and once actually taken prisoner by the ferocious chief E' Hongi, or Shongi, as he is generally called. He has captured many a pah, and assisted in eating many a slain enemy, and had he not escaped when he himself was made prisoner, he would have shared the same fate.

His last exploit was an attack on Poverty Bay where he and his followers took the pah, and killed and afterward ate six hundred of the enemy. Shortly after this feat he became blind, at Otawaho, where he first met with the missionary. In process of time he became a convert, and afterward labored as a teacher, displaying the same earnest energy which distinguished his military career, and, though an old man, undertaking long and toilsome journeys for the purpose of instructing his fellow-country-raen. Mr. Angas once heard him deliver a funeral oration over the body of a child,

Horomana was peculiarly suited for the office of instructor in consequence of his exceptionally retentive memory. He knows the whole of the Church Service by heart, together with many hymns and long passages of the Bible, and when he was examined in the Catechism, it was found that he knew every word correctly. This strength of memory, by the way, useful as it is when rightly employed is sometimes abused by rightly employed, is sometimes abused by becoming an instrument of revenge, a Maori never forgetting an insult, whether real or imaginary, nor the face of the person by whom he was insulted.

The curiosity of the people is insatiable, and they always want to hear all about everything they see. This spirit of curiosity has naturally led them to take the greatest interest in the various arts and sciences possessed by the white man, and in order to gratify it they will often hire themselves as sailors in European ships. Accustomed to the water all their lives, and being admirable canoe men, they make excellent sailors, and soon learn to manage boats after the European fashion, which differs essentially from their own. Some of them penetrate into the higher mysteries of navigation, and in 1843 a New Zealander was captain of

They take quite as much interest in the familiar objects of their own country as in those which are brought to them by forfuneral oration over the body of a child, which he describes as one of the finest and most impassioned bursts of eloquence he any peculiarities which may be found in them.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

FOOD AND COOKERY.

ROSPITALITY OF THE NEW ZEALANDERS -EFFECTS OF CIVILIZATION - THE CHURLISH HOSTS AND THEIR REWARD - A NEW ZEALAND FEAST - THE WALL OF PROVISIONS - FOOD-BASKETS - THE KUMARA OR SWEET POTATO - WASHING AND COOKING VEGETABLES -- THE CABBAGE PALM AND FERN ROOT -- A NATIVE LEGEND -- THE PAWA SHELL -- THE MUSSEL AND OYSTER -- FISHING --THE NET, THE TRAP, THE HOOK, AND THE SPEAR-BIRD-CATCHING -CAPTURING THE KIWI-KIWI AND PARROT - PIG-CATCHING AND GOOKING - CANNIBALISM, ITS SIGNIFICATION AND EX-TENT - EATING HUMAN FLESH A SUPERSTITIOUS CUSTOM - ANECDOTES OF CANNIBALISM.

pitable and generous of people; a stranger, whether native or European, is welcomed into the villages, is furnished with shelter, and provided at once with food. Should the visitor be a relative, or even an intimate friend, they hold all their property in common, and will divide with him everything that they possess. Even if a Maori has earned by long labor some article of property which he was very anxious to possess, he will give it to a relation or friend who meets him after a long separation.

This generosity of disposition has unfortunately been much checked by contact with the white man, and those natives who have much to do with the white settlers have lost much of their politeness as well as their hospitality. Instead of welcoming the traveller, housing him in their best hut, providing him with their choicest food, and tending him as if he were a near relation, they have become covetous and suspicious, and instead of offering aid gratuitously will sometimes refuse it altogether, and at the best demand a high rate of payment for their assistance.

The native converts to Christianity have deteriorated greatly in this respect through the misjudged zeal of the missionaries, who have taught their pupils to refuse food and shelter to, or to perform any kind of work for, a traveller who happens to ar-

THE New Zealanders are the most hos- stance which must continually occur in a country where the travellers are entirely dependent on the natives. Dr. Dieffenbach, who always speaks in the highest terms of the zeal and self-denial of the missionaries, writes as follows on this subject: "Highly as I appreciate the merits of the missionaries, I must say that they have omitted to teach their converts some most important social, and therefore moral, duties, which they will only acquire by a more intimate intercourse with civilized Europeans.

"In their native state they are as laborious as their wants require; but, easily satisfying those, and incapable even by their utmost exertions to compete with the lowest of Europeans, they get lazy and indolent, prefer begging to working, and pass a great part of their time in showing their acquired fineries and in contemplating the restless doings of the colonist. As servants they are very independent, and Europeans will do well, if they want any native helpers, to treat them with attention, and rather as belonging to the family than as servants. They have this feeling of independence very strongly, and it is very creditable to them.

"There is every reason to believe that in a short time the character of the New Zealanders will be entirely changed, and any one who wishes to see what they were forrive at their houses on a Sunday - a circum- merly must study them in the interior,

tercour beer ' 21 1 dota re pitality distanc came u hospita furnish One of needles tained, the pari march. After suddenl

where

the nati large so was cut liking to Dr. Die on a bus sers and however saying ti try that food, and he had and how amused a many jol at a good been take Hospita

Maori, it chief give on so end trict is ra visions, a quence to for many when he Where-W men plant nish prov intended in the foll These fe

imperativ

food is le sometimes ply of pro several w cially the tervals thr The firs

gives a goo are observ ordinary i by a wellfold is ere hung large shark, tog

31 same writer relates an amusing anecdots respecting the ancient custom of hospitality. He had been travelling for some distance with scarcely any provisions, and came upon a tribe which churlishly refused hospitality to the party, and would not even furnish a guide to show them their way. One of them condescended to sell a small basket of potatoes in exchange for some needles, but nothing more could be obtained, and, after spending a day in vain, the party had to pack up and resume their

After they had left the pah, they came suddenly across a family of pigs. One of the native attendants immediately killed a large sow, and in a few minutes the animal large sow, and the pieces distributed. Not liking to take food without paying for it, Dr. Dieffenbach hung the offat of the pig on a bush, together with an old pair of trousers and an iron kettle. His attendants, however, went back and took them away, saying that it was the custom of the country that a stranger should be supplied with food, and that, if it were not given to him, he had a right to take it when, where, and how he could. They were very much amused at the whole proceeding, and made many jokes on the disappointment of the churlish people who refused to sell a pig at a good price, and then found that it had been taken for nothing.

Hospitality being such a universal and imperative characteristic of the aboriginal Maori, it may be imagined that when a chief gives a feast he does so with a liberal hand. Indeed, some of these banquets are on so enormous a scale, that a whole district is ransacked to furnish sufficient provisions, and the inhabitants have in consequence to live in a state of semi-starvation for many months. Mr. Angas mentions that, when he visited the celebrated chief Te Where-Where, he saw more than a thousand men planting sweet potatoes in order to furnish provisions for a feast that the chief intended to give to all the Waikato tribes in the following spring.

These feasts are continued as long as any food is left, and a very liberal chief will sometimes get together so enormous a sup-ply of provisions that the banquet lasts for several weeks. Songs and dances, especially the war dance, are performed at intervals throughout the time of feasting.

The first illustration on the 831st page gives a good idea of the preliminaries which are observed before the celebration of an ordinary feast, such as would be given by a well-to-do Rangatira. A sort of scaf-

where they are still little influenced by in-tercourse with us, which I must repeat, has scaffold is formed into a flat stage, on which are placed large baskets full of sweet pota-toes and common potatoes. The guests range themselves in a circle round the scaffold, and the chief who gives the feast makes a speech to them, brandishing his staff of office, running up and down the open space, leaping in the air, and working himself up by gestures to an extraordinary pitch of excitement.

pitch of excitement.

One of my friends was distinguished by having a feast given in his honor, and described the ceremony in a very amusing manner. The generous founder of the feast had built a sort of wall, the contents of which were potatoes, sweet potatoes, pigs, and fish. By way of ornament, he had fixed a number of sticks into the wall, like so many flagstaffs, and to the top of each he had fastened a living eel by way of a flag or streamer, its contortions giving, according to his ideas, a spirit to the whole proceedings. ceedings.

He then marched quickly backward and forward between the wall of provisions and his guests, who were all seated on the ground, and as he marched uttered a few broken sentences. By degrees his walk became quicker and quicker, and changed into came quicker and quicker, and changed into a run, diversified with much leaping into the air, brandishing of imaginary weapons, and utterance of loud yells. At last he worked himself up into a pitch of almost savage fury, and then suddenly squatted down silently, and made way for another crater.

The waste which takes place at such a feast, which is called in the native language hui, is necessarily very great. In one such party mentioned by Mr. Angas, the donor arranged the provisions and presents for his guests in the form of a wall, which was five feet high, as many wide, more than a mile in length, and supplied for many days thousands of natives who came to the feast from very great distances. The great chiefs take great pleasure in rivalling each other in their expenditure, and it was for the purpose of building a still larger food wall that Te Whero-Whero was so busily setting his men to work in planting the kumeras, or sweet potatoes.

Considerable variety is shown in the manner of presenting the food to the guests. Generally it is intended to be eaten on the spot, but sometimes it is meant to be given away to the people, to be consumed when and where they like. In such a case either the scaffold or the wall is used. The scaf-fold is sometimes fifty or sixty feet high, and divided into a number of stories, each of which is loaded with food. If the wall be employed, it is separated into a number of divisions. In either case, when the guests are scated, a chief who acts as the master of by a well-to-do Rangacita. A soft of sear-fold is erected, on the bars of which are divisions. In either case, when the guests hung large supplies of fish, mostly dried are scated, a chief who acts as the master of shark, together with pieces of pork, and the ceremonies marches about and makes a

H HOSTS AND BASKETS -- THE GE PALM AND R - FISHING -NG THE KIWI-TION AND EX-ALISM.

.

y occur in a are entirely Dieffenbach, nest terms of missionaries, et: " Highly the missionre omitted to st important luties, which ore intimate peans. are as labout, easily sat-

ven by their th the lowest and indolent, pass a great heir acquired the restless ervants they ropeans will ve helpers, to rather as beas servants. ndependence creditable to

elieve that in ne New Zeaed, and any ey were forthe interior, speech, after the fashion of his country; and, after having delivered his oration, he points out to each tribe the portion which is in-tended for it. The chief man of each tribe takes possession of the gift, and afterward subdivides it among his followers.

It is rather remarkable that the baskets in which the provisions are served are made for the express purpose, and, having fulfilled their office, are thrown aside and never used ngain. Should a chief take one of these bas-kets and begin to eat from it, not only the basket but any food which he may leave in it is thrown away, no chief ever eating after any one, or allowing any one to eat after

So when a chief takes his basket of food, he withdraws himself from the rest of the company and consumes his food, so that no one shall be incommoded by his rank. Ordinary people, even the Rangatiras, are not nearly so fastidious, one basket of food sufficing several of them, three or four being the usual number for a basket. Each of these baskets contains a complete meal, and is usually supplied with plenty of potatoes and kumeras, some fish, and a piece of pork. The meat is passed from one to another, each taking a bite, or tearing off a portion; and when they have finished, they wipe their hands on the backs of the dogs which are sure to thrust themselves among the revel-

These feasts naturally lead us to the various kinds of food used by the New Zealanders, and their modes of procuring and preparing

We will begin with the plant which is the very staff of life to the New Zealander, namely, the kumera, or sweet potato, as it is popularly though erroneously called. This plant is largely cultivated by the Maories, who are very careful in selecting a proper soil for it. The best ground for the kumera is that which has been thickly wooded, and is cleared for the purpose. The natives take but little trouble about preparing the land, merely cutting down the trees and burning the brushwood, but never attempting to root

up the stumps.

The ground is torn up rather than dug by a simple instrument, which is nothing more than a sharpened pole with a cross-piece fastened to it, on which the foot can rest. As the New Zealanders do not wear shoes, they cannot use an iron spade as we do; and it may easily be imagined that the unprotected foot of the Maori would suffer terribly in performing a task which, even among our stoutly-shod laborers, forces them to wear a plate of iron on the sole of the boot.

The kaheru, as this tool is called, is more effective than an iron spade could be, in consequence of the peculiar character of the Maories, who fell every tree which they soil, which is thickly interlaced with the roots of ferns, brushwood, and shrubs. A few of these curious spades are tipped with

a piece of green jade, and are then highly valued by the natives. Such a tool is called E Toki. The Macries have also a kind of hoe which is very useful in some soils.

The kumeras are planted in regular rows, and the greatest care is taken to keep the field clear of weeds. The dark agriculturists even remove every caterpillar that is seen upon the plants; and altogether such claborate care is taken that the best managed field in Europe cannot surpass, and very few even equal, a piece of land culti-vated by the New Zealander.

Each family has its own peculiar field, the produce of which is presumed to belong to the family. But a great portion of the labor performed in it may be done by poor men who have no land of their own. In such a

case, they acquire, in virtue of their labor, a legal right over the fruits of the land which they have helped to till. Sometimes the head or chief of a tribe, considering himself as the father of the family, institutes a general sale, and distributes the proceeds according to the amount of material or labor which each has contributed.

Before the potatoes are cooked, they are carefully washed in a simple and very effective manner. A woman puts them into a basket with two handles, popularly called a "kit," wades into a running stream, puts one foot into the basket, takes hold of the handles, and rocks the basket violently backward and forward, while with her foot she continually stirs up and rubs the potatoes. In this manner the earth is washed away from the egetables, and is carried off by the stream through the interstices of the basket.

At the present day, the kumera, although very highly valued, and used at every important feast, has been rivalled, if not superseded, by the common potato which can be raised with less trouble and cooked more easily. Both the kumera and potato are cooked in a sort of oven, made by heating stones, and much resembling the cooking-place of the Australians. No cooking is allowed to take place in the house, the act of preparing food being looked upon as a des-cretion of any hulding. Through ignoecration of any building. Through ignorance of this curious superstition, Europeans have frequently brought upon themselves the anger of the natives by eating, and even cooking, food within a house which is looked upon as sacred.

In consequence of this notion, the oven is either constructed in the open air, or at best in a special house called Te-kauta, which is made of logs piled loosely upon each other, so as to permit the smoke to

The bud, or "cabbage," of the nikau-palm,

mode a is not leaves a making benight and sim this use and the dent nat means | law.

The M paring for vented f gusting the pote fresh w quite pu and eat Europea and the flavor, is starving The odor penetrati sitting in ting in th from the travellers but at fl gusting; enough t village. In forn

lenta) was the potat supersede eaten, ex else can l is cooked. long, and ciently co shell. Th sessing, ha earthy and

About . comes into of one of ful in Ne It require in the mor With re

New Zeala lowing rer tive idea tl Zealand, a and the ta proceeds as in their fe sweet pota tata)—an remembere songs, and observance

"It may

e then highly a tool is called also a kind of me soils.

regular rows, n to keep the lark agricultuerpillar that is together such he best mansurpass, and of land culti-

uliar field, the

to belong to

by poor men

n. In such a

their labor, a

their labor, a

their labor, a

their labor, a

times the head

mg himself as

utes a general

class according

r labor which

oked, they are
and very effecis them into a
ularly called a
ream, puts one
of the handles,
tly backward
ot she continatoes. In this
way from the
by the stream
basket.

nern, although at every imed, if not sued, if not sued, if not sued, if not are de by heating the cooking is house, the act upon as a deshrough ignom, Europeans hemselves the nod even cooks looked upon

n, the oven is en air, or at ed Te-kauta, loosely upon he smoke to

e nikau-palm, orized by the which they g and tender etimes eaten in the same mode as the potato. Fortunately, the tree is not wasted by being cut down, as its leaves are used for many purposes, such as making temporary sheds when travellers are benighted in the forest, thatching houses, and similar uses. Still, the destruction of this useful and graceful palm is very great, and there is reason to fear that the improvident natives will wholly extirpate it, unless means be taken to preserve it by force of law.

The Maories have one curious plan of preparing food, which seems to have been invented for the purpose of making it as disgusting as possible. They take the kumera, the potato, or the maize, and steep it in fresh water for several weeks, until it is quite putrid. It is then made into cakes, and eaten with the greatest zest. To an European nothing can be more offensive, and the very smell of it, not to mention the flavor, is so utterly disgusting that even a starving man can hardly manage to eat it. The odor is so powerful, so rancid, and so penetrating, that when Europeans have been sitting inside a house and a man has been sitting in the open air eating this putrid bread, they have been forced to send him away from the vicinity of the door. By degrees travellers become more accustomed to it, but at first the effect is inexpressibly disgusting; and when it is cooked, the odor is enough to drive every European out of the

In former days the fern-root (Pteris esculenta) was largely eaten by the natives, but the potatoes and naize have so completely superseded it that fern root is very seldom eaten, except on occasions when nothing else can be obtained. When the fern root is cooked, it is cut into pieces about a foot long, and then roasted. After it is sufficiently cooked, it is scraped clean with a shell. The flavor of this root is not prepossessing, having an unpleasant mixture of the earthy and the medicinal about it.

About December another kind of food comes into season. This is the pulpous stem of one of the tree-ferns which are so plentiful in New Zealand (Cyathea medullaris). It requires long cooking, and is generally placed in the oven in the evening, and eaten in the morning.

in the morning.

With regard to the vegetables used in New Zealand, Dr. Dieffenbach has the following remarks. After mentioning the native idea that they were conquerors of New Zealand, and brought with them the dog and the tare plant (Arum esculentum), he proceeds as follows:—"A change took place in their food by the introduction of the sweet potato or kumera (Convolvulus batata)—an introduction which is gratefully remembered and recorded in many of their songs, and has given rise to certain religious observances.

" It may be asked, What was the period

when the poor natives received the gift of this wholesome food, and who was their benefactor? On the first point they know nothing; their receilection attaches itself to events, but not to time. The name, however, of the donor lives in their memory. It is E'Paul, or Ko Paul, the wife of E'Tiki, who brought the first seeds from the island of Tawal. E'Tiki was a native of the island of Tawal, which is not that whence, according to tradition, the ancestors of the New Zealanders had come. He came to New Zealand with his wife, whether in less frail vessels than they possess at present, and whether purposely, or driven there by accident, tradition is silent.

"He was well received, but soon perceived that food was more scanty here than in the happy isle whence he came. He wished to confer a benefit upon his hosts, but knew not how to do it, until his wife, E'Paui, offered to go back and fetch kumera, that the people who nad received them kindly might not suffer want any longer. This she accomplished, and returned in safety to the shores of New Zealand.

"What a tale of heroism may lie hidden under this simple tradition! Is it a tale connected with the Polynesian race itself? or does it not rather refer to the arrival in New Zealand of the early Spanish navigators, who may have brought this valuable product from the island of Tawai, one of the Sandwich Islands, where the plant is still most extensively cultivated? There can be scarcely any doubt but that New Zealand was visited by some people antecedent to Tasman. Kaipuke is the name of a ship in New Zealand — buque is a Spanish word — Kai means to eat, or live. No other Polynesian nation has this word to designate a ship. Pero (dog) and poaca (pig) are also Spanish. Tawai, whence E'Paui brought the kumera, is situated to the east of New Zealand according to tradition, and the first discoverers in the great ocean, Alvaro Mendana (1595), Quiros (1608), Lemaire, and others, arrived from the eastward, as they did at Tahiti, according to the tradition of the inhabitants. Tasman did not come to New Zealand until 1642."

However this may be, the fields of kumera are strictly "tapu," and any theft from them is severely punished. The women who are engaged in their cultivation are also tapu. They must pray together with the priests for the increase of the harvest. These women are never allowed to join in the cannibal feasts, and it is only after the kumera is dug up that they are released from the strict observance of the tapu. They believe that kumera is the food consumed in the "reinga," the dwelling-place of the departed spirits; and it is certainly the food most esteemed among the living.

They have several ways of preparing the

sweet potato. It is either simply boiled, or | are favorite articles of diet. Those which dried slowly in a "hangi," when it has the taste of dates, or ground into powder and baked into cakes. The kumera, like most importations, is rather a delicate vegetable, and while it is young it is sheltered by fences made of brushwood, which are set up on the windward side of the plantation when bad weather is apprehended. Great tacks of dividents apprehended. stacks of dried brushwood are seen in all well-managed kumera gardens, ready to be used when wanted. So great is the venera-tion of the natives for the kumera, that the storehouses wherein it is kept are usually decorated in a superior style to the dwelling of the person who owns them.

In illustration No. 2, on the next page, several of these elaborate storehouses are shown. They are always supported on posts in such a way that the rats cannot get among the contents, and in some instances they are set at the top of poles fifteen or twenty feet high, which are climbed by means of notches in them. These, however, are almost without ornamentation, whereas those which belong specially to the chief are comparatively low, and in some cases every inch of them is covered with graceful or grotesque patterns, in which the human face always predominates.

Some of these curious storehouses are not rectangular, but cylindrical, the cylinder lying horizontally, with the door at the end, and being covered with a pointed roof. Even the very posts on which the storehouses stand are carved into the rude semblance of the human form.

The Maories also say that the calabash, or hue, is of comparatively late introduction, the seeds having been obtained from a calabash which was carried by a whale and thrown on their shores

A very curious article of vegetable food is the cowdie gum, which issues from a species of pine. This gum exudes in great quantities from the trees, and is found in large masses adhering to the trunk, and also in detached pieces on the ground. It is a clear, yellowish resin; and it is imported into England, where it is converted into varnish. The flavor of the cowdie gum is powerfully aromatic, and the natives of the northern island chew it just as sailors chew tobacco. They think so much of this gum, that when a stranger comes to visit them, the highest compliment that can be paid to him is for the host to take a partially chewed piece of gum from his mouth, and offer it to the vis-itor.

The New Zealanders eat great quantities of the pawa, a species of Haliotis, from which they procure the pearly shell with which they are so fond of inlaying their carvings, especially the eyes of the human figures. Shells belonging to this group are well known in the Channel Islands under

are found in New Zealand are very much larger than the species of the Channel Islands, and the inhabitants are tough and, to European taste, very unpalatable. Great quantities are, however, gathered for food. The putrid potato cakes are generally eaten with the pawa; and the two together form a banquet which an Englishman could hardly prevail on himself to taste, even though he were dying of hunger.

Mussels, too, are largely used for food: and the natives have a way of opening and taking out the inmate which I have often practised. If the bases of two mussels be placed together so that the projections interlock, and a sharp twist be given in opposite directions, the weaker of the two gives way, and the shell is opened. Either shell makes an admirable knife, and scrapes the mollusc out of its home even better than a regular oyster-knife.

Oysters, especially the Cockscomb oyster (Ostroa cristata), are very plentiful in many parts of the coast, and afford an unfailing supply of food to the natives. They are mostly gathered by women, who are in some places able to obtain them by waiting until low water, and at other places are forced to dive at all states of the tide.

Fish form a large portion of New Zealand diet; and one of their favorite dishes is shark's flesh dried and nearly putrescent. In this state it exhales an odor which is only less horrible than that of the putrid cakes. Mr. Angas mentions one instance where he was greatly inconvenienced by the fondness of the natives for these offen-sive articles of diet. He was travelling through the country with some native guides, and on arriving at a pah had pro-cured for breakfast some remarkably fine kumeras. The natives immediately set to work at cooking the kumeras, among which they introduced a quantity of semi-putrid shark's flesh. This was not the worst of the business, for they next wove some of the phormium baskets which have already been described, filled them with the newly-cooked provisions, and carried them until the evening repast, giving the traveller the benefit of the horrible odor for the rest of the day.

Fish are either taken with the net, the weir, or the hook. The net presents nothing remarkable, and is used as are nets all over the world, the natives weighting them at the bottom, floating them at the top, shooting them in moderately shallow water, and then beating the water with poles in order to frighten the fish into the meshes.

Traps, called pukoro-tuna, are made of funnel-shaped baskets, just like the eel-traps which they are so fond of inlaying their of our own country; but the most ingenious carvings, especially the eyes of the human figures. Shells belonging to this group are well known in the Channel Islands under many yards along its side. Often, when the the name of Ormer shells, and the molluscs Those which re very much the Channel tre tough and, atable. Great ered for food. enerally eaten gether form a a could hardly ven though he

sed for food:
f opening and
I have often
to mussels be
e projections
be given in
er of the two
ened. Either
e, and scrapes
en better than

scomb oyster nithil in many in unfailing a. They are who are in m by waiting er places are he tide. New Zealand rite dishes is ly putrescent. ofor which is

rite dishes is ly putrescent, odor which is of the putrid one instance venienced by or these offeners travelling some native pah had promarkably fine diately set to among which of semi-putrid e worst of the some of the already been newly-cooked ntil the evener the benefit at of the day, the net, the

the net, the coresents nothus are nets all ighting them at the top, hallow water, with poles in the meshes. are made of the cel-traps to the ighting the poles for ten, when the isn taken are



(1.) PREPARING FOR A FEAST. (See page 827.)



(2.) CHIEFS' STOREHOUSES. (See page 830.)

consider in gene chief.

Somet used, will This net forty fee to a store stick, and a canoe. venient s the side at either forms a liboat driff much as dredge. In the

man, who light pole one end o and stirs meshes of the curve ropes can whether the make a ha case, the roance, employees the cance, employees the roance, e

Spearing largely, en the New 2 ture of sin seems strai enough to There is, h admirable hook is ma hollowed o bone, and i a slain enen as well as bone is fast a very ing instances, e which are i sonance wit natives, who themselves, intended as hostile tribe

The body pawa shell, attached a remarkable towed astern swiftly throu idly, the pealike the whit fibres represente predatori which it reproduced by them, and cover their m should happy see that this

used, which has neither float nor sinkers. This net is about four feet wide, thirty or forty feet in length, and is tied at each end to a stout stick. Ropes are lashed to the stick, and the net is then taken out to sea in a canoe. When they have arrived at a convenient spot, the natives throw the net over the side of the canoe, holding the ropes at either end of the boat, so that the net forms a large semicircle in the water as the boat drifts along. In fact it is managed much as an English fisherman manages his dredge.

In the middle of the canoe is posted a man, who bears in his hand a very long and light pole, having a tuft of feathers tied to one end of it. With the tufted end he beats and stirs the water, thus driving into the meshes of the net all the small fishes within the curve of the net. Those who hold the ropes can tell by the strain upon the cords whether there are enough fish in the net to make a haul advisable, and when that is the case, the net is brought to the side of the

canoe, emptied, and again shot.

Spearing fish is sometimes, but not very largely, employed. The hooks employed by the New Zealanders present a curious mixture of simplicity and ingenuity. It really seems strange that any fish should be stupid enough to take such an object in its mouth. There is, however, one which is a singularly admirable contrivance. The body of the hook is made of wood, curved, and rather hollowed on the inside. The hook itself is bone, and is always made from the bone of a slain enemy, so that it is valued as a trophy, as well as a means of catching fish. bone is fastened to the rest of the hook by a very ingenious lashing; and, in some instances, even the bone is in two pieces, which are firmly lashed together. In consonance with the warlike character of the natives, who seem to be as ready to offer an insult to other tribes as to take offence themselves, the use of the enemy's bone is intended as an insult and a defiance to a hostile tribe.

The body of the hook is lined with the pawa shell, and to the bottom of it is attached a tust of fibres. This hook is remarkable for requiring no bait. It is towed astern of the canoe, and when pulled swiftly through the water it revolves rapidly, the pearly lining flashing in the light itself to be taken alive, like the white belly of fish, and the tuft of fibres representing the tail. Consequently, fat, and its flesh is said to be well flavored, the predatorial fish take it for the creature In former days, when it was plentiful, it was by them, and are hooked before they dis-

considered as belonging to the community in general, and are divided equally by the chief.

is exactly similar in principle with the "spoon-bait" which is so efficacious in practised hands. One of these hooks in my collection is quite a model of form, the curves being peculiarly graceful, and the effect being as artistic as if the maker had been a professor in the school of design. The length of my hook is rather more than four inches: and this is about the average size of these implements. The string by which it is held is fastened to the hook in a very ingenious manner; and indeed it scarcely seems possible that so apparently slight a lashing could hold firmly enough to baffle the struggles of a fish large enough to swallow a hook more than four inches in length, and three-quarters of an inch in width. Some of these hooks are furnished with a feather of the apteryx, which serves

the purpose of an artificial fly.

Both salt and fresh water crayfish are taken in large quantities. The latter, which are very large, are almost invariably captured by the women, who have to dive for them, and the former are taken in traps baited with flesh, much like our own lobster-pots. Birds are almost always caught by calling them with the voice, or by using a decoy bird. The apteryx, or kiwi-kiwi, is taken by the first of these methods. It is of nocturnal habits, and is seldom seen, never venturing out of its haunts by day. It is very thinly scattered, living in pairs, and each pair in-habiting a tolerably large district. At night it creeps out of its dark resting-place among the ferns, where it has been sleeping throughout the day, and sets off in search of worms, grubs, and other creatures, which it scratches out of the ground with its powerful feet. During the night it occasionally utters its shrill cry; that of the male being somewhat like the words "hoire, hoire," and that of the female like "ho, ho, ho."

When the natives wish to catch the apteryx, they go to the district where the bird lives, and imitate its cry. As soon as it shows itself, it is seized by a dog which the hunter has with him, and which is trained for the purpose. As the bird is a very strong one, there is generally a fight between itself and the dog. in which the powerful legs and sharp claws of the bird are used with great effect. Sometimes the hunter has ready a torch made of the cowdie resin, and by lighting it as soon as the kiwi-kiwi comes in sight he blinds the bird so effectually by the un-wonted light that it is quite bewildered, does not know in what direction to run, and allows

much used for food, but at the present time it is too scarce to hold any real place among cover their mistake. If any of my readers the food-producing animals of New Zealand, should happen to be angless, they will its wingless state rendering it an easy prey to those who know its habits. The skin is

very tough, and, when dressed, was used in the manufacture of mantles.

The parrots are caught by means of a decoy bird. The fowler takes with him a parrot which he has taught to call its companions, and conceals himself under a shelter made of branches. From the shelter a long rod reaches to the branches of a neighboring tree, and when the bird calls, its companions are attracted by its cries, fly to the tree, and then walk down the rod in parrot fashion, and are captured by the man in the cover.

Formerly the native dog used to be much eaten; but as the species has almost entirely been transformed by admixture with the various breeds of English dogs, its use, as an article of food, has been abandoned. Pigs are almost the only mammalia that are now eaten; but they are not considered as forming an article of ordinary diet, being reserved for festive occasions. The pork of New Zealand pigs is said to surpass that of their European congeners, and to bear some resemblance to veal. This superiority of flavor is caused by their constantly feeding on the fern roots. In color they are mostly black, and, although tame and quiet enough with their owners, are terribly frightened when they see a white man, erect their bristles and dash off into the bush.

We now come to the question of cannibalism, a custom which seems to have resisted civilization longer in New Zealand than in any other part of the world. In some places cannibalism is an exception; here, as among the Neam-Nam of Africa, it is a rule. An illustration on the next page represents a cannibal cooking-house, that was erected by a celebrated Maori chief, in the Waitahanui Pah. This was once a celebrated fort, and was originally erected in order to defend the inhabitants of Te Rapa from the attacks of the Waikato tribes. Both these and their enemics having, as a rule, embraced Christianity, and laid aside their feuds, the pah has long been deserted, and will probably fall into decay before many years have passed. Mr. Angas, description of this pah is an exceedingly interesting one.

"Waitahanui Pah stands on a neck of low swampy land jutting into the lake, and a broad, deep river, forming a delta called the Tongariro, and by some the Waikato (as that river runs out again at the other end of Tampo Lake), empties itself near the pah. The long ficade of the pah presents an imposing appearance when viewed from the lake; a line of fortifications, composed of upright poles and stakes, extending for at least half a mile in a direction parallel to the water. On the top of many of the posts are carved figures, much larger than life, of men in the act of defiance, and in the most savage posture, having enormous protruding tongues; and, like all the Maori carvings, these images, or waikapokos, are colored with kokowai, or red ochre.

"The entire pah is now in ruins, and has been made tapu by Te Heuheu since its desertion. Here, then, all was forbidden ground; but I eluded the suspicions of our natives, and rambled about all day amongst the decaying memorials of the past, making drawings of the most striking and peculiar objects within the pah. The cook houses, where the father of Te Heuheu had his original establishment, remained in a perfect state; the only entrance to these buildings was a series of circular apertures, in and out of which the slaves engaged in preparing the food were obliged to crawl.

"Near to the cook houses there stood a carved patuka, which was the receptacle of the sacred food of the chief; and nothing could exceed the richness of the elaborate carving that adorned this storehouse. I made a careful drawing of it, as the frail material was falling to decay. Ruined houses—many of them once beautifully ornamented and richly carved—numerous waki-tapu, and other heathen remains with images and carved posts, occur in various portions of this extensive pah; but in other places the hand of Time has so effectually destroyed the buildings as to leave them but an unintelligible mass of ruins. The situation of this pah is admirably adapted for the security of its inmates: it commands the lake on the one side, and the other fronts the extensive marshes of Tukanu, where a strong palisade and a deep moat afford protection against any sudden attack. Water is conveyed into the pah through a sluice or canal for the supply of the besieged in times of war.

"There was an air of solitude and gloomy desolation about the whole pah, that was heightened by the screams of the plover and the tern, as they uttered their mournful cry through the deserted courts. I rambled over the scenes of many savage deeds. Ovens, where human flesh had been cooked in heaps, still remained, with the stones used for heating them lying scattered around, blackened by fire; and here and there a dry skull lay bleaching in the sun and wind, a grim memorial of the past."

The chief reason for the persistent survival of cannibalism is to be found in the light in which the natives regard the act. As far as can be ascertained, the Maorics do not eat their fellow-men simply because they have any especial liking for human flesh, although, as might be expected, there are still to be found some men who have contracted a strong taste for the flesh of man. The real reason for the custom is based on the superstitious notion that any one who eats the flesh of another becomes endowed with all the best qualities of the slain person. For this reason, a chief will often content himself with the left eye of an adversary, that portion of the body being considered as the seat of the

ruins, and has uheu since its was forbidden spicions of our all day amongst the past, making and peculiar e cook houses, euheu had his ined in a perto these buildar apertures, in apgaged in preto crawl.

is there stood a ereceptacle of f; and nothing f the elaborate storehouse. I it, as the frail decay. Ruined ace beautifully ed—numerous pah; but in me has so effects as to leave mass of ruins. Is admirably of its inmates: the one side, ensive marshes palisade and a gainst any veyed into the lor the supply

rar.

Ide and gloomy pah, that was of the plover their mournated courts. If many savage flesh had been the district their mournated their mournated their mournated their mournate flesh had been their their mournate flesh past."

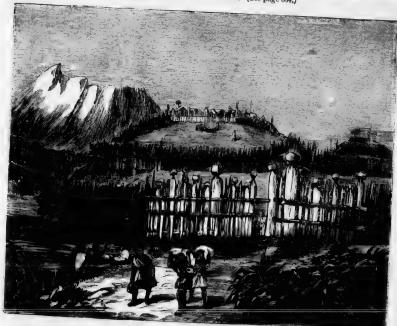
Ide and here and ing in the sun f the past."

The found in the sound in the found in the found in the first many control of the past.

e found in the regard the act. dd, the Maories simply because mg for human expected, there men who have for the flesh of the custom is otion that any other becomes unalities of the with the left with the left portion of the ne seat of the



(1.) CANNIBAL COOK HOUSE. (See page 834.)



(2.) MAORI PAH, (See page 846.)

soul.
the t
W
broug
atten
They
until
part.
the fi
tall st
comp
mysti
Moo
flesh,
childr
age, t
of hur
new p
songs,
initiat
able, i
himsel
The
are sup
of the
come t
which
utors, i
human
That

pends sources the Ne nized as His who that of revenge of glutt bodies we lander wo f a man nothing than trib balism we can trib. Howe centers in can be in battle. To f Plenty the inha dred in 1 or fort, in the attacl

soul. the blood.

When the dead bodies of enemies are When the dead bodies of enemies are brought into the villages, much ceremony attends the cooking and eating of them. They are considered as tapu, or prohibited, until the tohunga, or priest, has done his part. This consists in cutting off part of the flesh, and hanging it up on a tree or a tall stick, as an offering to the deities, accompanying his proceedings with certain mystic prayers and invocations.

Most women are forbidden to eat human

Most women are forbidden to eat human flesh, and so are some men and all young children. When the latter reach a certain age, they are permitted to become eaters of human flesh, and are inducted into their new privileges by the singing of chants and songs, the meaning of which none of the initiates understand, and which, it is probable, are equally a mystery to the priest himself who chants them.

The palms of the hands and the breast are supposed to be the best parts; and some of the elder warriors, when they have overcome their reluctance to talk on a subject which they know will shock their interlocutors, speak in quite enthusiastic terms of

human flesh as an article of food.

That cannibalism is a custom which depends on warfare is evident from many sources. In war, as we shall presently see, the New Zealander can hardly be recog-nized as the same being in a state of peace. His whole soul is filled with but one idea that of vengeance; and it is the spirit of revenge, and not the mere vulgar instinct of gluttony, that induces him to eat the bodies of his fellow-men. A New Zea-lander would not dream of eating the body of a man who had died a natural death, and nothing could be further from his thoughts than the deliberate and systematic cannibalism which disgraces several of the African tribes.

How completely this spirit of vengeance enters into the very soul of the Maories can be inferred from a short anecdote of a battle. There is a small island in the Bay of Plenty called Tuhua, or Mayor's Island, rather repressed than extirpated, and there the inhabitants of which, about two hun- are many well-known occasions when it has the attacks of tribes who lived on the main- ascendency over him.

A similar idea prevails regarding land, and wanted to capture this very convenient little island. The fort was built on a very steep part of the island, craggy, precipitous, and chiefly made up of lava.

After making several unsuccessful attacks, the enemy at last made an onslaught in the night, hoping to take the people off their guard. The inmates were, however, awake and prepared for resistance; and as soon as the enemy attacked the pah, the defenders retaliated on them by allowing them to come partly up the hill on which the pah stands, and then rolling great stones upon them. Very many of the assailants were killed,

and the rest retreated.

Next morning the successful defenders related this tale to a missionary, and showed the spot where so sanguinary an encounter had taken place. The missionary, finding that all the stones and rocks were perfectly clean, and betrayed no traces of the bloody struggle which had taken place only a few hours previously, asked to be shown the marks of the blood. His guide at once an-swered that the women had licked it off. It has sometimes been stated that the Maories will kill their slaves in order to furnish a banquet for themselves; but such

statements are altogether false.

Cannibalism is at the present day nearly, though not quite, extinct. Chiefly by the efforts of the missionaries, it has been greatly reduced; and even in cases where it does take place the natives are chary of speaking about it. In wars that took place some forty years ago, we learn that several hundred warriors were slain, and their bodies eaten by their victors. comparatively recent times twenty or thirty bodies have been brought into the pah and eaten, while at the present day many a native has never seen an act of cannibalism. This strange and ghastly custom is, however, so dear to the Maori mind that one of the chief obstacles to the conversion of the natives to Christianity is to be found in the fact that the Christian natives are obliged to abjure the use of human flesh. Still, the national instinct of vengeance is dred in number, had erected a strong pah, or fort, in order to defend themselves from nature of the Maori has for a time gained

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

WAR.

THE MODE OF WARFARE DEPENDENT ON WEAPONS-THE SPEAR, NOW EXTINCT-THE MERAI, AND THE MATERIALS OF WHICH IT IS MADE - THE GREEN JADE MERAI, AND ESTIMATION IN WHICH IT IS HELD BY THE CHIEFS - THE STONE MERAI - THE BONE MERAI, AND ITS VARIED SHAPES -MODE OF USING THE WEAPON -- CAPTURE OF SHIPS -- AN EXCITING SCENE AND TIMELY RELIEF --THE BATTLE-AXE, OR PATU - ITS FORM, AND MODE OF USING IT - THE CHIEF'S SPEAR, OR HANI - ITS RESEMBLANCE TO THE ANCIENT SCEPTRE - THE TONGUE OF DEFIANCE - THE WAR DANCE - ITS EFFECT ON BOARD SHIP - THE FORT, OR PAH, AND ITS CONSTRUCTION - NATIVE ENGI-NEERING - THE REPULSE AT THE GATE PAH - CONCEALING AN AMBUSH - FATE OF CAPTIVES -THE CHIEF E'HONGI AND HIS BATTLES-SLAVE-DRIVING WITH A MERAI-ETIQUETTE OF WAR - A TRUCE AND A BARTER - RETALIATION FOR BLOODSHED - CEREMONIES BEFORE AND AFTER A BATTLE.

WE now come to the one great object of a Maori's life, namely, war. Before we treat of actual warfare, it will be necessary to describe the weapons which are used, as much of the character of warfare materially depends on them.

In those parts of the world, for instance, where missiles, such as bows and arrows or spears, are the principal weapons, war becomes a series of skirmishes, each individual trying to conceal himself as much as possible from the enemy, and to deal his own blows without exposing himself to retaliation. But when the weapons are of a nature that necessitates hand-to-hand combat, warfare naturally assumes a different aspect, and, if the forces be at all disciplined, more resembles the regulated war of civilized nations than the independent single combats which represent war in most savage countries.

To this latter category belong the weapons of the New Zealander. In former days the Maori warriors used to employ the spear, but that weapon has long been laid aside. A few specimens are still retained, but they are intended, not to be used against an enemy, but in welcoming a friend, the chief who receives his guests pointing the spear at them, and throwing it toward them, as has already been described. When Mr. Angas visited the islands, he found only a very few of these spears, and they were used entirely for peaceful purposes. They were

Polynesian group, i. e. made entirely of wood, long, sharply pointed, and armed with a series of barbs.

One of these spears is shown at figure 1, of "Maori weapons," on page 841. The reader will understand that only the head of the spear is shown, the entire length of the weapon being about twelve feet. The barbs are seen to be arranged in double order, a number of them pointing backward, and then, after a blank space, several rows pointing forward. The object of this device was ingenious enough. The spear was supposed to be pushed through the body of a man until it was stopped by the second row of barbs. It will be seen that his body would then rest in the blank space, and the barbs on either side of him would prevent it from being drawn out or pushed through, so that a wound from the weapon was necessarily mortal. A spear made on the same principle, and employed by the Bechuanas, is shown on page 281.

The weapons used by the Maories are very few in number, and of the simplest possible construction. It is extraordinary, by the way, what misconceptions exist on this subject. With the generality of persons almost every club, axe, or spear is set down as belonging to New Zealand, especially if it has any carving about it. Even the best public collections are not free from these errors, and in one of the most celebrated collections of arms I discovered within five of the same character as those of the great minutes ten or twelve wrong labels.

The Work which contai one is and tv Fiji cl lar ha donia, Maori lander and or two a have : been t bottledescrip theref or it n anothe

We

trifling

scene l

scribed and the with $oldsymbol{A}$ men ar forked | dresses those of woman. fashion. white cl itself is perversi who has acteristi hut. In times to of clay . employe floor, w with clay concrete while, b enough t ing, and porch co With t by some

for a Ho ture, its i the slight of South with mus surprised the weapo very inde Of cour have pra weapons

know well inal weap

active ser

to do with will restri

belong to

There is now before me an illustrated work on savage manners and customs, in which is a group of "New Zealand arms," containing thirteen objects. Of these only one is a genuine weapon of New Zealand, and two others are doubtful. There are two Fiji clubs (one of them with a hollow tubular handle!), one stone knife of New Caledonia, two clubs of the Tonga Islands, one Maori chief's staff of office, one New Zealender's commentary and the comment of the comme lander's carpenter's adze, one "poi" mallet and one "gnatoo" mallet from Tonga, and two articles which the draughtsman may have intended for clubs, but which have been transformed by the engraver's art into bottle-gourds. Besides, there is one nondescript article which may be a drum (and therefore cannot belong to New Zealand) or it may be a pail, or it may be a jar, and another nondescript article.

We need not, however, wonder at these trifling errors when, in the same work, a scene in a North American wigwam is described as a "New Zealand christening," and the "Interior of a Caffre hut" is fitted with Abyssinian arms and implements: the men are represented as wearing long two-forked beards like those of the Fans, headdresses like those of Tonga, and capes like those of Abyssinia; while a smooth-haired woman, instead of being dressed in Kaffir fashion, is naked with the exception of a white cloth tied round her hips. The hut itself is a singularly ingenious example of perversity on the part of the draughtsman, who has selected precisely those very characteristics which do not belong to the Kaffir hut. In the first place, the hut is three times too large, and the walls are apparently of clay - certainly not of the basket-work employed by Kaffirs in house-building. The floor, which in a Kaffir hut is laid down with clay, as smooth as a table and hard as concrete, is irregular and covered with grass; while, by way of climax, the door is high enough to allow a man to pass without stoop-ing, and is finished with a beautiful arched porch covered with creepers.

With the exception of one man, who may, by some stretch of imagination, be taken for a Hottentot, neither the hut, its furniture, its inhabitants, nor their weapons, bear the slightest similitude to those of any part of Southern Africa. Such being the case with museums and books, we need not be surprised that the popular ideas respecting the weapons and warfare of New Zealand are

very indefinite.

Of course, at the present day, the Maories have practically discarded their ancient weapons in favor of the rifle, which they know well how to use, retaining the aborig-

The first and most important of these is the merai, or short club. This weapon is exactly analogous to the short sword used by the ancient Romans, and in some cases resembles it so closely that if the cross-guard were removed from the sword and the blade rendered convex instead of flat, the shapes of the two weapons would be almost exactly identical.

The material of which these weapons are made is sometimes wood and sometimes stone, but mostly bone, the latter material being furnished by the spermaceti whale. The stone merai is the most valued, on account of the difficulty of finding a suitable piece for the purpose, and of the enormous time which is consumed in cutting it to the desired shape with the very imperfect instrument which the Maori possesses. In fact, a stone meral is lowly and laboriously ground into shape by rubbing it with a piece of stone and a sort of emery powder. Every merai has a hole drilled through

the end of the handle. Through this hole is passed a loop of plaited cord, by means of which the weapon is slung to the wrist, to prevent the wearer from being disarmed in battle. Drilling the hole is a very slow process, and is done by means of a wetted stick

dipped in emery powder.

The finest meral of this description that I have seen belongs to H. Christie, Esq., and is remarkable not merely for its size, but for the regularity and beauty of its curves. The material is the dark, dull green volcanic stone of which the New Zealanders make so many of their implements. It is nearly eighteen inches in length, and rather more than four inches wide at the broadest part. There is a similar weapon, nearly as large, in the col-lection of the United Service Institution; but the curves are not so regular, nor is the article so handsome.

One of these weapons is in my collection. It is of equal beauty in shape with that which has been described, but is not so long. It is rather more than fourteen inches in length, and not quite four inches wide. It weighs two pounds six ounces, and is a most formidable weapon, a blow from its sharp edge being sufficient to crash through the skull of an ox, not to mention that of a hu-

man being.

Every chief, however low in rank, is sure to have one of these merais, of which he is very proud, and from which he can scarcely be induced to part. The great chiefs have their merais made of green jade, such as has already been described when treating of Maori ornaments. These weapons are handed down from father to son, and are so inal weapons more as marks of rank than for active service. We have, however, nothing tured in battle. If a chief should die will tured in battle. If a ch highly valued by the natives that it is hardly

E MERAI, AND TION IN WHICH RIED SHAPES-IELY RELIEF -PEAR, OR HANI IE WAR DANCE NATIVE ENGI-OF CAPTIVES -ETTE OF WAR RE AND AFTER

irely of wood, med with a wn at figure re 841. The ge 841.

y the head of ength of the t. The barbs ouble order, a ckward, and al rows pointis device was was supposed dy of a man second row of s body would nd the barbs event it from ough, so that s necessarily same princi-Bechuanas, is

Maories are the simplest xtraordinary, ions exist on ity of persons r is set down l, especially if ven the best e from these st celebrated d within five abels.

is seen one of these green jade merais. The lit is a much more efficient weapon than the shape is not nearly so elegant as that of my stone meral; for the latter is so heavy that, weapon which has just been described. Indeed, with so valuable and rare a mineral as this green jade, it is not easy to find a piece large enough to be cut into an ordinarily shaped weapon and the manufacturer is obliged to do his best with the material at his command.

At fig. 7 is an example of the commonest kind of meral, that which is made of wood. As the material of such a weapon is comparatively valueless, the Maories seem to indemnify themselves by adding ornament to the weapon. For example, they very seldom make the meral of the same simple shape as that at fig. 6, but give it a distinct edge and back as at fig. 7. In some cases they make it into a most elaborate plece of native art, the whole being so beautifully carved that it looks more like a number of carved pieces of wood fitted together than a weapon cut out of one solid block.

A singularly beautiful example of such a weapon is to be seen in fig. 1 of the illustra-tion "Merais," on page 841. As the reader may see it is one mass of carving, the design being cut completely through the wood, and therefore being alike a both sides. The back of the meral is carved into a pattern of singular beauty and boldness, and the edge is armed with a row of shark's teeth, which make its blows very formidable when di-rected against the naked bodies of the Maori warriors. The specimen from which the drawing was taken may be seen in the collection of the British Museum.

The second fig. of the illustrations shows a merai made of bone. The material is mostly obtained from the blade bone of the spermaceti whale, and in consequence the weapon is said in books of travel to be made of whalebone, thus misleading the ordinary reader, who is sure to understand "whale-bone" to be the black elastic substance obtained from the Greenland whale.

These merais are extremely variable in shape. Some of them are made like the stone weapons, except that they are much flatter, and have in consequence both edges alike. Sometimes they are studded with knobs and cut into hollows; sometimes carved into patterns, much resembling that of the wooden meral, but not so elaborate. The specimen which I have selected for the illustration shows examples of the ornaments and studs.

I possess a very good meral which has been made from the lower jaw of the spermaceti whale. This weapon is shown in fig. 4 of the same illustration, opposite, and close by it is a section of the jaw of the whale, in order to show the manner in which it is cut. This weapon measures seventeen inches in length by three and a half inches in width, and weighs one pound nine ounces. In consequence of this comparative lightness. stone merai; for the latter is so heavy that, if a blow misses its aim, the striker is unable to recover the weapon in time to guard himself, or to repeat the blow, and so lays him-

set, or to repeat the blow, and so lays him-self open to the enemy.

If the reader will look at the section of bone, he will see that it is porous in the cen-tre and hard and solid at the edges. It is from the solid part that the meral has been cut, and in consequence the weapon is very The numerous channels through which pass the blood vessels that nourish the bone are seen in the section, and in the drawing of the merai one of them is shown traversing the weapon longitudinally. The name of the merai is "patu-patu," the u having the same sound as in flute.

Many of the natives have found out that the English bill-hook answers admirably as a merai, and can be obtained with very little trouble. Great quantities of them were at one time imported from Birmingham; but the rifle and bayonet have in latter days so completely superseded all other weapons that the Maories trouble themselves little about

the bill-hook.

When a Maori fights with the meral, he does not merely strike, his usual movement being to thrust sharply at the chin of the enemy; and if he succeeds in striking him with the point, he cuts him down with the edge before he can recover himself.

At fig. 5 of the "Maori weapons," on the next page, is seen an axe, or toma-hawk. This is a curious mixture of European and Maori work, the blade being obtained from England, and the handle made and carved in New Zealand with the usual grotesque patterns which a Maori likes to introduce into all objects connected with war-fare. The thigh bone of a slain enemy is a favorite handle for such a tomahawk.

Before the flerce and warlike character of the New Zealanders was known, they took several vessels by the use of the merai. It was easy to suspend the short club over the shoulder, where it was hidden by the mat, so that when a party of natives came on board. apparently unarmed, having ostentatiously le t their patus and other weapons in their canoes, each man was in fact armed with the weapon that he most trusted. The plan pursued was, that the Maories should mingle freely with the crew, until each man was close to one of the sailors. At a signal from the chief, the concealed merni was snatched from beneath the mat, and in a moment it had crashed through the head of the selected victim.

Even after this ruse was discovered, the ingenious Maories contrived to get hold of more than one vessel under pretence of exhibiting their war dance, which in a moment was changed from the mimicry of battle into reality, the warriors leaping among the spectators and dealing their blows right and left

on than the heavy that, ter is unable guard himso lays him-

e section of an the cenders. It is at has been upon is very its through hat nourish, and in the em is shown nally. The "the u hav-

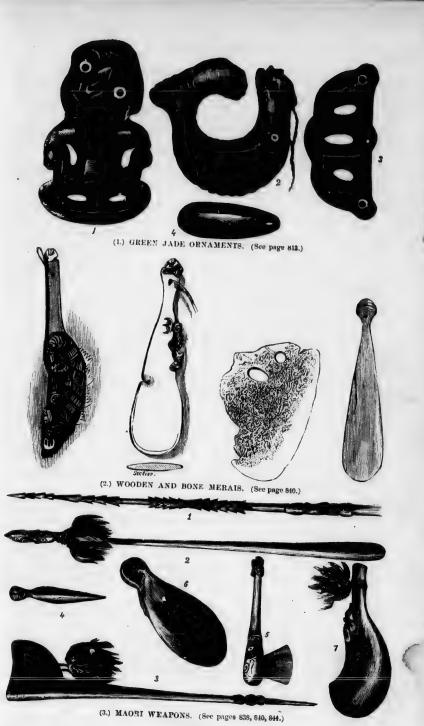
and out that dmirably as th very little em were at ngham; but tter days so veapons that little about

movement chin of the triking him with the elf.

eapons," on ee, or tomare of Euroo being obandle made th the usual i likes to ind with warenemy is a nawk.

character of an, they took e merai. It ub over the the mat, so eo no board, tentatiously ons in their ned with the he plan pursuld mingle h man was signal from ras snatched moment it the selected

covered, the get hold of ence of exna moment f battle into ng the specght and left



(841)

among i be a pr lander, tation w Tyerma age" the that bef aid of a have had The sh while at

while at curred:was surr eral hum who pres much tha the quar The com sides, we one prov occurred, of the shi "In the

throng in to exercis ties for waway unit out, 'The scarcely hat then and then a 'They hav and then a cooking bawled out they have ried away "Up to the

"Up to intercourse and purch and other c But now, in without out the whole afterward tring of the a had become oring, rathe of some of to n being jo side into the vessel. as the pret The women few minute overboard in

on deck; of they had te forthwith me "Trement screechings stamped, and sisting princichief with h rounded the his breast and

them the kal The latter, th

among them. Ship-taking seems, indeed, to be a proceeding so dear to the New Zea-of another band, stood on the starboard; and lander, that he can scarcely resist the temp-Mr. Bennet on the same side, but aft, toward lander, that he can scarcely resist the temp-tation when it is offered him. In Messrs. Tyerman and Bennet's "Missionary Voyage" there is an anecdote of an adventure that befell them, which, but for the timely aid of a friendly chief, would undoubtedly have had a tragic issue.

The ship had arrived off New Zealand, and while at anchor the following events oc-curred: — "This morning our little vessel was surrounded with canoes, containing several hundreds of the natives, of both sexes, who presently climbed up, and crowded it so much that we were obliged to put a bar across the quarter-deck, and tabu it from intrusion. The commerce in various articles, on both sides, went on pretty well for some time, till one provoking circumstance after another occurred, which had nearly led to the seizure of the ship and the loss of our lives.

"In the confusion occasioned by the great throng in so narrow a space, the natives began to exercise their pilfering tricks, opportunities for which are seldom permitted to slip ties for which are seldom permitted to slip away unimproved. Suddenly the cook cried out, 'They have stolen this thing;' but scarcely had he named the thing (some kitchen article), when he called out again, 'They have stolen the beef out of the pot!' and then a third time,' They have stolen my cooking pan!' Presently another voice bawled out from the forecastle, 'Captain! they have broken onen your trunk, and carthey have broken open your trunk, and car-ried away your clothes !

"Up to this time we had been in friendly intercourse with the chiefs, rubbing noses, and purchasing their personal ornaments and other curiosities, suspecting no mischief. But now, in the course of a few moments, without our perceiving the immediate reason, the whole scene was changed. We found afterward that the captain (Dibbs), on hearing of the audacious thefts above mentioned, had become angry, and while he was endeavoring, rather boisterously, to clear the deck of some of the intruders, one of them, a chief, on being jostled by him, fell over the ship's side into the sea, between his own canoe and the vessel. This was seized instantaneously as the pretext for commencing hostilities. The women and children in the course of a few minutes had all disappeared, leaping overboard into their canoes, and taking with them the kakaous, or mantles, of the warriors. The latter, thus stripped for action, remained on deck; of which, before we were aware, they had taken complete possession; and forthwith made us their prisoners.

"Tremendous were the bawlings and screechings of the barbarians, while they stamped, and brandished their weapons, consisting principally of clubs and spears. One

the stern. Mr. Threlkeld and his little boy, not seven years old, were near Mr. Bennet not under direct manual grasp of the savages. The chief who, with his gang, had been traf-ficking with Mr. Bennet, now brought his huge tattooed visage near to Mr. B.'s, screaming, in tones the most odious and horrifying:

Tongata, New Zealandi, tongata kakino?— Tongata, New Zealandi, tongata kakino?— "This he repeated as rapidly as lips, tongue, and throat could utter the words, which mean, Man of New Zealand, is he bad man? — Man of New Zealand, a bad man? Happily Mr. Bennet understood the question (the New Zealand dialect much re-sembling the Tahitian): whereupon, though convinced that inevitable death was at hand, he answered, with as rauch composure as could be assumed, 'Kaore kakino tongata New Zealandi, tongata kapai' ('Not had; the New Zealander is a good man'); and so often as the other, with indescribable ferocity of aspect and sharpness of accent, asked the same question (which might be a hundred) same question (which might be a hundred times), the same answer was returned.

"" But,' inquired Mr. Bennet, 'why is all this uproar? Why cannot we still rub noses, and buy and sell, and barter, as before? this moment a stout slave, belonging to the chief, stepped behind Mr. Bennet, and pinioned both his arms close to his sides. effort was made to resist or elude the giganenorr was made to resist or clude the gigan-tic grasp, Mr. B. knowing that such would only accelerate the threatened destruction. Still, therefore, he maintained his calmness, and asked the chief the price of a neck ornament which the latter wore. Immediately another slave raised a large tree-felling axe (which, with others, had been brought to be sharpened by the ship's company) over the head of the prisoner. This ruffian looked with demon-like eagerness and impatience toward his master for the signal to strike.

"And here it may be observed that our good countrymen can have no idea of the almost preternatural fury which savages can throw into their distorted countenances, and infuse into their deafening and appalling voices, when they are possessed by the legion-flend of rage, cupidity, and revenge. Mr. Bennet persevered in keeping up conversation with the chief, saying, 'We want to buy bruaa, kumera, ika, &c. (hogs, pota-

toes, fish), of you.'

"Just then he perceived a youth stepping on deck with a large fish in his hand. 'What shall I give you for that fish?'—'Why, so many fish-hooks.'—'Well, then, put your hand into my pocket and take them.' The fellow did so. 'Now put the fish down there, so the kinwade and him some account of the second the kinwade and him some account of the second the kinwade and him some account of the second the kinwade and him some account of the second the sisting principally of clubs and spears. One chief with his cookies (his slaves) had surrounded the captain, holding their spears at fish that he had just bought was brought his breast and his sides, on the larboard quar- round from behind and presented to him

again for sale. He took no notice of the armed with the patu, meets an adversary, knavery, but demanded, 'What shall I give he does not rush at him heedlessly, but you for that fish?'—'So many hooks.'—'Take there. Have you no other fish to sell?' A it both hands, twilling it about, and flour-him the house, but for the face of third time the same fish was offered, and the same price in hooks required and given, or rather taken, by the vendor, out of his jacket pockets, which happened to be well stored with this currency for traffic. A fourth time Mr. Bennet asked, 'Have you never another fish?' At this the rogues could contain their scorn no longer, but burst into laughter, and cried, 'We are cheating the foreigner!'
('Tangata ke!') supposing that their customer was not aware how often they had caught him with the same bait."

By this ingenious plan of pretending to be the dupe of the Maories, Mr. Bennet contrived to gain time, of which he knew that every minute was of the greatest importance, and at last he was rewarded for his courageous diplomacy by the arrival of a boat, in which was a friendly chief, who at once

cleared the ship.

The reader will observe that at this time the New Zealanders had not abandoned the use of the spear as a weapon of war, though only twenty years afterward scarcely a spear could be found that was not intended as an

emblem of hospitality instead of strife. At fig. 3 of "Weapons" is shown a very curious club, called Patu by the natives, and popularly, but wrongly, called by sailors a battle-axe. It is about five feet in length, and has at one end a flat, axe-like head, and at the other a sharp point. One of these weapons in my possession, presented to me, together with many similar articles, by E. Randell, Esq., is five feet one inch in length, and weighs two pounds six ounces, being exactly the same weight as the stone merai already described. The rounded edge of the axe-like head is very sharp, and certainly looks as if it was intended for the purpose of inflicting wounds. Such, however, is not the case, the Maori using the pointed butt as a spear or pike, and striking with the back of the head and not with the edge.

Through the lower portion of the head is bored a hole, to which is suspended a bunch of feathers and streamers. Sometimes this tuft is only a foot in length, but is often longer. In a specimen taken by Sir J. E. Alexander it is half as long as the patu itself. At first sight this appendage seems, like the multitudinous feathers which decorate a North American spear or club, to be merely an ornament, and to detract from, rather than add to, the efficiency of the weapon. But the Maori warrior is far too keen a soldier to sacrifice use to ornament, and, if he employs the latter, he is sure to take care that the former is not endangered

by it.

In the present case, this apparently use-less appendage adds materially to the effec-tiveness of the weapon. When the warrior,

ishing the bunch of feathers in the face of his foe so as to distract his attention. Neither does he stand in the same spot, but leaps here and there, endeavoring to take the foe off his guard, and making all kinds of feints in order to test the adversary's powers. Should he see the least opening, the sharp point of the butt is driven into his adversary's body, or a severe blow delivered with the head, the stroke being generally made upward and not downward, as might be imagined.

In fact, the whole management of the patu is almost identical with that of the old quarterstaff of England, a weapon whose use is unfortunately forgotton at the present day. The bunch of feathers is not an inva-riable appendage. In my own specimen, for example, it has never been used, and I have seen many others in which the hole has not been bored for the insertion of the string that ties the feathers together.

The last weapon drawn in this illustration is hardly worthy of the name. It is a dagger, and is shown at fig. 4. At fig. 2 of the same illustration is seen an implement which is generally mistaken for a spear, and is labelled as such in many a collection. It is, however, no spear at all, but a sceptre, or staff of office belonging to a chia? The staff of office belonging to a chief. The Maori name is E'Hani. It is shaped at the butt like an exceedingly elongated merai, and indeed the entire implement looks as if the hani and the merai were but different modifications of the same weapon.

Be this as it may, the hani is no spear, but a staff of office, almost identical in form with that which was borne by the ancient kings and heralds in the times of Troy. the upper end is seen the head, which bears some resemblance to the point of a spear, and has given ground to the notion that the implement in question is really a spear. This portion, however, does not serve the purpose of offence, but is simply a conventional representation of the human tongue, which, when thrust forth to its utmost, conveys, according to Maori ideas, the most bitter insult and defiance. When the chief wishes to make war against any tribe, he calls his own people together, makes a fiery oration, and repeatedly thrusts his hani in the direction of the enemy, each such thrust being accepted as a putting forth of the tongue in defiance.

In order to show that the point of the hani is really intended to represent the human tongue, the remainder of it is carved into a grotesque and far-fetched resemblance of the human face, the chief features of which are two enormous circular eyes made

of haliotis shell.

Generally, the hani is ornamented with

feathers staves a looked u staves v specime length, ments, v a bunch The chie hani as easy if it years ago England. sights of to the the or to ma hanis w short one ing to at session. One of

of the sa upright th outstretch if it be he altered, ar represent thrust ou lips. As representa a ridge ru side being curves and

collection

In spite very conv emergency tongue-like as a spear heavy enor directed bl sess the which dece " weapons " ment is no sary part of

Before a themselves There are tribes, but passes then rior gives l the momen brandishes l fit; but the far different discipline a that of the I irregular.

They beg their clothin with scarlet as hideous a ble for the in lines, mos naturally pas an adversary sedlessly, but apon, holding out, and flourin the face of ention. Nei-me spot, but oring to take ing all kinds e adversary's east opening, s driven into re blow delivbeing generlownward, as

ment of the eapon whose at the present not an invavn specimen, n used, and I hich the hole sertion of the gether.

is illustration It is a dagt flg. 2 of the n implement r a spear, and collection. It t a sceptre, or a chief. The haped at the gated merai, nt looks as if but different on.

i is no spear, atical in form y the ancient of Troy. At , which bears at of a spear, otion that the ally a spear. of serve the oly a convenıman tongue, utmost, conas, the most hen the chief any tribe, he makes a fiery s his hani in h such thrust forth of the

point of the epresent the resemblance f features of ar eyes made

mented with

feathers like the patu; but many of the est pitch by contorting their faces and staves are without this decoration, which is thrusting out their tongues as an act of looked upon as a mere non-essential. These deflance, interspersing these gestures with staves vary greatly in length. My own specimen is between five and six feet in specimen is between five and six feet in length, and is without the feather ornaments, whereas others are not more than a yard in length, and are decorated with a bunch of feathers as long as themselves. The chiefs are nearly as tenacious of the hani as the meral, and do not seem to be easy if it be put out of their reach. Some years ago several Maori chiefs came to visit England and were taken to see the various England, and were taken to see the various sights of London. But whether they went to the theatre, or to the Zoological Gardens, or to make calls, they invariably took their hanis with them, sometimes carrying a short one for convenience' sake, but appearing to attach the greatest value to its possession.

One of these curious implements in my collection is six feet in length, and is made of the same wood as the patu. If held upright the resemblance of the point to the outstretched tongue is not very plain; but if it be held horizontally, the effect is quite altered, and the whole of the tip is seen to anared, and the whole of the up is seen to represent a human head with the trague thrust out as far as possible between the lips. As the tongue is only a conventional representation, it is covered with a pattern, a ridge running along the centre, and each side being marked with precisely similar curves and semi-spirals.

In spite of its length, it really makes a very convenient walking-staff, and, on an emergency, might do duty as a weapon, the tongue-like tip being sharp enough to act as a spear head, and the flattened butt being heavy enough to stun a man with a well-directed blow. My specimen does not possess the tuft of feathers and dog's-hair which decorates the hani shown in the "weapons" (fig. 2, p. 841); but this adornment is not considered as forming a necessary part of the implement. In spite of its length, it really makes a sary part of the implement.

Before a party engage in war, they think themselves bound to join in the war dance. There are war dances in almost all savage tribes, but that of the New Zealander sur-passes them all. In other cases, each war-rior gives himself up to the excitement of the moment, and shouts, yells, dances, and brandishes his weapons as he seems to think fit; but the Maori warrior's dance is of a far different character, being guided by a discipline and precision of drill to which

ble for the dance, they arrange themselves in lines, mostly three deep, and excite their naturally passionate disposition to the high-

thrusting out their tongues as an act or deflance, interspersing these gestures with shouts, yells, and challenges to the enemy. The dance itself begins with stamping the feet in perfect time with each other, the vigor of the stamp increasing continually, and the excitement increasing in similar proportion.

Suddenly, with a yell, the whole body of men leap side-ways into the air, as if actuated by one spirit, and, as they touch the ground, come down on it with a mighty stamp that makes the earth tremble. The stamp that makes the earth tremble. war song is raised, and in accordance with its rhythm the men leap from side to side, each time coming down with a thud as of some huge engine. The effect of the dance upon the performers is extraordinary. seems to make them for the time absolute maniacs, their whole nature being given up to the furious excitement of the moment Their faces are frightfully contorted, and thus assume an absolutely demoniacal expression.

Even when war is not impending, the magic influence of the dance affects the performers as strongly as if they were close to a pah or fort of the enemy, ready for battle; and when, as is sometimes the case, the Maories give a dance in honor of a visitor, they become so furiously excited that they are quite dangerous until they have had

time to cool.

On one such occasion a party of Maories who had visited a ship were requested to exhibit their war dance, and very goodnaturedly did so. But in a short time their measured leaps became so vehement, and their stamps so powerful, as they shouted the martial rhymes of the war song, that they shook the whole ship as if by blows of a battering-ram; and the commanding officer, fearful that they would absolutely smash the deck, begged them to desist. His entreaties were in vain, even if they were heard, though it is very likely that, in their furious excitement, the dancers were deaf to every sound except the were song which they every sound except the war song which they were yelling at the top of their voices; and the dance proceeded to its end, and did not cease until the performers were quite ex-hausted by the furious exertions they had made.

The most ludicrous part of the dance was the conduct of the chief. He had been treated with much attention, and presented They begin by smearing the whole of their clothing and by painting their faces with scarlet ochre, so as to make themselves as hideous as possible. When they assemble for the dance, they arrange themselves in lines, mostly three darks as the stalked about the deck to the great admiration of his subjects. When he was asked where the war dance could be given, he at once ordered his followers to accede to the request, and at first great stalked about the deck to the great admiration of his subjects. When he was asked where the war dance could be given, he at once ordered his followers to accede to the

extended itself to him. First he merely swayed his body in rhythm with the steps of the dancers, then he joined sotto voce in the song, then he began to stamp in time with them, and at last threw off all restraint, sprang into line, and leaped, yelled, and stamped as enthusiastically as any of them, splitting his new garments to pieces, and presenting a very sorry sight when his ex-citement had died away.

The illustration opposite represents a portion of a party of warriors as they appear when performing their war dance. Only when performing their war dance. the first three ranks of them are seen; but the reader must picture for himself the long lines of warriors stretching into the distance. numbering often from one to two hundred. The leading chief is seen in front, with his green jade merai in his hand; and another but inferior chief is stationed behind him. In the background is shown a portion of the pah in which the dance is taking place; a chief's storehouse for food is seen on the right, and under the shelter of the houses are seated the women who are watching the

I have already said that war is always in the thoughts of a genuine Maori. Unlike the vaporing Fiji warrior, who is always ready to boast, and seldom ready to fight, preferring to knock his enemy on the head when asleep, the Maori is a brave soldier, accustomed from his earliest childhood to deeds of war. A mimic war forms one of the favorite games of the Maori children, though it is necessarily restricted to boys. Just as boys of our country build snow cas-tles, and attack and defend them with snowballs, so do the young New Zealanders build miniature forts, and enact on a small scale the deeds of actual war, using light sticks instead of the meral and patu. They make their forts by erecting mounds of earth, and building the fortresses of stakes, in exact imitation of the more substantial

architecture of the veritable pah.

These ingenious pahs well exemplify the whole system of Maori warfare. The two opposing parties seldom meet each other in the open ground, as is the case with European warfare; neither do they employ an irregular skirmishing fight among trees or under cover, as is the case with many savage tribes. The attacking party is sure to be very superior in numbers to their foes, and the latter, knowing that this will be the case, resort to the system of fortification, and entrench themselves in forts, or pahs.

These pahs are marvellous examples of uncivilized engineering, and are admirably adapted to the purpose which they are intended to fulfil. They are always placed in some strong situation, sometimes on the seashore, sometimes on heights, and one or two of the strongest are built on the very edge of a perpendicular precipice, so that they canfourth can only be approached by a narrow and awkward path, along which only a few men can pass, and which can be defended by a comparatively limited number of the bosieged. (See p. 835.)

Taking one of these pahs is really a great

enterprise for the natives, and before they knew the use of firearms it is wonderful that they ever took a pah at all. Many of them are indeed impregnable, and, until firearms were introduced into the colony, could bid defiance to all enemies. They were so situated that by merely rolling stones down the approach the path could be cleared of every foe. They are surrounded with trenches, and have ingenious sallyports so constructed that the defenders can issue from unexpected parts of the fort, make a sudden attack on the assailants, and retreat through the same aperture when

they have attained their purpose.

They are fenced round with very strong posts, lashed together so firmly that they are able is resist any ordinary attack. Since firearms were introduced, the Maories have modified the structure of the pahs to suit their new weapons, throwing out angles to secure a flanking fire, and filling the interior with trenches in which the defenders can lie secure from the fire of the enemy. Since they learned the terrible power of shells, the natives have learned to construct "traverses," i. c. cross-walls, in the trenches, which not only guard the inmates from the fragments of the shells, but prevent an en-filading fire from doing much damage. Riflepits are also constructed with singular ingenuity. One pah was remarkable for being built over a number of boiling springs, which were used as traps for the enemy when the

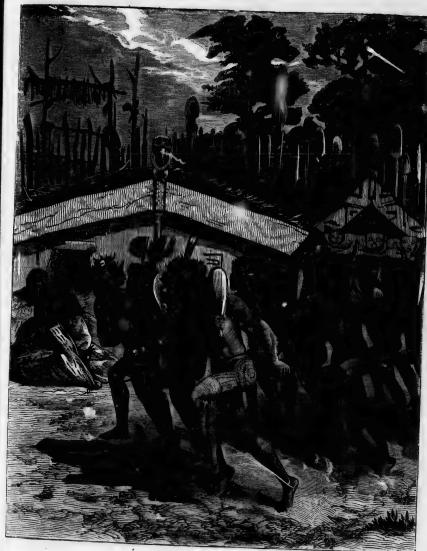
fort was besieged. The reader may remember the unfortunate business at the Gate Pah, at Tauranga. When taken by storm, the pan appeared to be empty and deserted, the natives having apparently escaped, according to their custom, when they found the place no longer tenable. They had, however, laid a trap, into which the assailants fell. When the latter had scattered themselves over the interior, and were quite off their guard, picking up arms, utensils, and other objects lying carelessly about, a terrific musketry fire was opened from under their very feet, the natives having constructed pits in which they hid themselves until the enemy were attracted within their range by the weapons and implements which they had laid on pur-pose to act as a bait. The men, who were entirely off their guard, and many of whom besides were but raw recruits, were struck with a sudden panic, and, with a few hon-orable exceptions, rushed out of the pah, followed and cut up by the fire of the wily foe.

Of course the repulse was but temporary; but such a stratagem as this is sufficient to not be attacked on three sides, while the show the military genius of the Maori, who, by a narrow ch only a few be defended umber of the

really a great d before they is wonderful all. Many of le, and, until o the colony, temies. They aerely rolling path could be es surrounded genious sallydefenders can of the fort, assailants, and perture when

h very strong y that they are attack. Since Maories have on the interior defenders can enemy. Since rofshells, the struct "travthe trenches, ates from the revent an enlamage. Riflesingular ingelble for being springs, which my when the

the unfortuat Taurange, a appeared to atives having to their cusce no longer, laid a trap, l. When the was over the their guard, other objects ific musketry eir very feet, pits in which e enemy were to the weapons d laid on puren, who were any of whom , were struck ha few honof the pah, folthe wily foe, te temporary; sufficient to a Maori, who,



THE MAORI WAR DANCE, (See page 840.)

if he beed be despise taking th mode of idisplay we ambushes them. We with the infrequently in one case to our mei in the shad soldiers we faces comunburnt penemy.

If the ass a terrible man is kill weapon, wh carried off querors—a already state fortunate we future offsp possibility tribe being interfere wi

The bodie reserved to even the pri for blood whi and in this r the men, if principal wif E'Hongi, w blind, to mun they were bit husband. H tragic than E'Hongi was excursions to in which he one of these had to be left her blindness unable to number of dotore her to pie

She seems, woman of une vengeance, "a little slav toward whom ment. The li and good-temn apparently so spared the e: slavery; she w

and good-tem apparently so spared the espared to the espared the e

if he becomes an enemy, is one that caunot be despised with impunity. This system of taking the enemy by surprise is the usual isfaction of her selfish sorrow." mode of fighting among the Maories, who display wonderful ingenuity in contriving ambushes, and enticing the enemy into left behind, a small shed was erected on with the natives of New Zealand, we were frequently entrapped in an ambuscade; and in one case the hidden enemy were so close to our men, their dusky forms bein vidden in the shadows of the bush, that many of the soldiers who escaped with life had their faces completely tattooed with grains of unburnt powder from the muskets of the

If the assailants succeed in taking the pah, a terrible massacre always ensues. man is killed who is capable of wielding a weapon, while the women and children are carried off to become the slaves of the conquerors - a doom from which, as I have already stated, there is no escape; the unfortunate women, their children, and any future offspring, being slaves without the possibility of release, not even their own titibe being able, according to Maori law, to interfere with the right of the captors.

In which the former had, after finally conductive being able, according to Maori law, to interfere with the right of the captors. interfere with the right of the captors.

The bodies of the warriors are of course reserved to be baked and eaten. Sometimes even the prisoners fall victims to the thirst for blood which characterizes these islanders; and in this respect the women are as bad as the men, if not worse. For example, the principal wife of a very great chief, named E'Hongi, was accustomed, even though blind, to murder some of the captives, when they were brought home by her formidable husband. Her own end was, however, more tragic than that of any of her victims. E'Hongi was in the habit of making long excursions to different parts of the country, in which he took his wife with him. On one of these excursions she fell sick, and had to be left behind. In consequence of her blindness, added to her debility, she was unable to act in her own defence, and a number of dogs, discovering her weakness, tore her to pieces and devoured her.

She seems, however, to have been a woman of unexceptionally strong feelings of vengeance. "She had," writes Mr. Angas, 'a little slave-girl to attend upon her, toward whom she evinced a strong attachment. The little creature was interesting and good-tempered, and her mistress was apparently so fend of her that she was spared the experience of the misery of slavery; she was only a favorite.

"Hongi returned from one of his successful expeditions of war, but had left a son upon the field of battle, and the lamentation was great. The petted slave-child laid her head upon the lap of her mistress, and oured out her share of the general sorrow. But the spirit of vengeance or of insane

It was not long after this incident that she met with her death. When she was left behind, a small short custom, and a poles, according to native custom, and a poles, according to native custom, and a supply of food was placed near her. When the party returned the shed was lying prostrate, and among its ruins were the whitened bones of the inmate. It is supposed that the wind blew down the shed, and so enabled the dogs to reach her.

This same E'Hongi was a really remarkable man, and earned a great name for wisdom and courage. Having made a voyage to England, he threw all his energies into strengthening his military power, and took back with him a quantity of muskets and ammunition.

He came back to his own country exactly at the proper time. A long and somewhat desultory war had been going on between the Waikatos and other tribes, in which the former had, after many vicissi-

Just then E' Hongi came back to his own tribe, the Nga Puis, distributed his fire-arms among the best warriors, and when he had instructed them in the use of the new and terrible weapons, entered the Waikato country, and attacked their great pah called Matuketuke. The Waikatos, having only their clubs, and not having sunk the trenches which in these days are dug in every pah that is intended to resist an assault, could not contend against firearms, and in a few minutes the fort was taken. It was in this engagement that Horomona and Te Whero-

Where were captured. The slaughter on this occasion was terrible, two thousand warriors being killed, and their bodies eaten by the victorious tribe, who built vast numbers of ovens for the special purpose of cooking the bodies of the slain. For many years afterward the remains of the ovens, and the whitened bones of the two thousand warriors, might be seen as tokens of the terrible scene, where feasts were kept up until all the bodies had been consumed, and every evil passion of unrestrained human nature was allowed to have its full sway.

One of the very muskets which were used on this occasion, and which was given by George IV. to E' Hongi when he visited England, is now in the collection of Colonel Sir. J. E. Alexander. It is one of the regular "Brown Bess" weapons, once so dear to soldiers, and now irreverently termed a

gaspipe.
Prisoners without number were captured on this occasion; and indeed the supply of retribution came over the heart of the be- mand for them, that the Nga Puis killed slaves thus obtained so far exceeded the demany of them on their journey home, merely to rid themselves of them. E' Hongi, though known to be a man of the most determined courage, not to say ferocity, when engaged in war, and rather disposed to bethose whom he considered as his inferiors, was at the same time peculiarly mild and courteous in his demeanor to his equals, and toward strangers was remarkable for

his gentle courtesy.

There was another very celebrated chief of a somewhat similar name, Hongi-Hongi, who has sometimes been confounded with his great predecessor. One feat of this warrior is so characteristic that it deserves mention. He was leading an attack on a pah near Mount Egmont, captured it, and, according to custom, killed the warriors, and took the rest of the inmates as his slaves. Sixty of these unfortunate beings fell to the share of Hongi, who drove them like a flock of sheep, with his green jade merai, all the way to his home, a distance of one hundred and eighty miles.

This chief was proof against the mission-

aries of all kinds. Mr. Angas once asked him whether he was a mihanari, i. e. a Protestant convert, or a pikopo, i. e. a Roman Catholic. Hongi denied that he was either one or the other, and confessed with glee that he was a revera, or devil, i. e. that he

still remained a heathen.

It is very unfortunate that intolerance in religious matters has been fostered by those who ought to have made it their business to repress any such feeling. The consequence is, that the Protestant converts regard their Roman Catholic brethren as reveras, or devils, while the latter have allied them-selves with their acknowledged heathen countrymen; and thus, under the pretence of religion, the customary feuds are kept up with perhaps even additional bitterness.

I have the pleasure of presenting to the reader, on the 820th page, a portrait of Hongi-Hongi, as he appeared in the year 1844, dressed in his full panoply of war costume. This, of course, would be doffed before he went into actual fight. In his ear is one of the green jade ornaments which have already been described, and in his right hand he bears his merai, the celebrated weapon with which he drove the slaves before him. He is represented as standing just inside the wall of his pah, a position which he insisted on taking up, and having his portrait drawn to send to the Queen of England. In fact, he was so decided on this point, that he refused to let Mr. Angas leave the pah until the por-trait was completed. The portion of the pah which is shown in the illustration gives a good idea of this kind of fortification, the enormous posts with their circular tops being sunk deeply into the ground, and widely celebrated for his dauntless courage smaller posts placed between them; a hor-

izontal pole is laid across them; and the whole is firmly lashed together, either with the ordinary phormium rope, or with the stem of the wild vine.

Warfare among the Maories, fierce and relentless as it may be in some particulars, is not devoid of a sort of chivalry which somewhat relieves it from its more ferocious aspect. There is, for example, a well-known code of military etiquette which is sometimes exhibited in a mode that to us seems rather ludicrous.

For example, the Waikatos and Taranaki tribes were at war as usual, and the Waikato were besieging a pah belonging to their enemies. The pah, however, was too strong for them; and moreover the defenders had contrived to get hold of several guns belonging to a vessel that had been wrecked on the shore, and had induced some Europeans to mount and work them, which they did with such success that the Waikatos were forced at last to abandon the siege.

But, in the very midst of the contest, a vessel appeared in the offing, and a truce was immediately concluded in order to allow both parties to trade. Accordingly, both the besiegers and besieged set off amicably to the vessel, and, having completed their bargains, returned to resume their hostilities. A very amusing scene then occurred.

The Taranakis, who were the besieged party, had much the best of the trading. as they possessed a large quantity of dressed flax, or phormium, and exchanged it for a quantity of tobacco.

Now tobacco is one of the greatest luxuries that a New Zealander can possess; and unfortunately for the besieging Waikatos, they had no tobacco. They had, however, a plentiful supply of muskets, which they had taken in an attack upon another pah, while the besieged were very short of arms. So they struck up a trade, the Waikatos being so inordinately desirous of obtaining tobacco, that they gave in return fire-arms which were to be turned against themselves.

"The scene," writes Mr. Angas, "as described by an eye-witness, must have been most ludicrous. The Waikato thrust his musket half-way through the palisades of the pah, retaining, however, a firm hold of his property until the intending purchaser from within thrust out in a similar manner the quantity of tobacco he was willing to give; neither party relinquishing his hold of the property about to change hands until he had secured a firm grasp of that offered by his adversary."

The chief who led the Waikatos on this occasion was the celebrated Wiremu Nera, or William Taylor; the former name being the nearest approach that the Maories can make to the proper pronunciation. His Maori name was Te Awaitaia, and he was widely celebrated for his dauntless courage

ing an at the famous tatau), he combats 1 Taranakis. tions he to teen hund killed near survivors a trict.

Latterly, became as he had be became a so well awa he exclaime news, "I ha

Although the three gr made a seco ever, had se age to risk made off, s accompanie served the rightly spike pah, so that and took th and the gur

The Taran powerful and the love whi country, wor even obliged the bush, w! find them; fo that if their the sources obtained, th plantation, a They were in about a susp ful neighbors fire was seen it for grante Waikatos, ar kept awake alarm at the Among the

them; and the ther, either with pe, or with the

ories, fierce and ome particulars, chivalry which s more ferocious le, a well-known which is somethat to us seems

os and Taranaki and the Waikato onging to their r, was too strong e defenders had everal guns bed been wrecked iced some Eurohem, which they t the Waikatos lon the siege.

f the contest, a ng, and a truce in order to allow cordingly, both set off amicably completed their ne their hostilie then occurred.

e the besieged of the trading, antity of dressed changed it for a

e greatest luxucan possess; and eging Waikatos, y had, however, ets, which they on another pah, y short of arms. , the Waikatos ous of obtaining return fire-arms inst themselves. Angas, "as demust have been kato thrust his he palisades of , a firm hold of ading purchaser similar manner was willing to ishing his hold

aikatos on this Wiremu Nera, ner name being the Maories can unciation. His aia, and he was auntless courage ucting or resist

ange hands until p of that offered

ing an attack. Being closely allied with the famous chief Te Whero-Whero (or Potatau), he was engaged in nearly all the combats between the Waikatos and the Taranakis. On one of his warlike expeditions he took a pah containing nearly eighteen hundred inhabitants, and, of course, killed nearly all of them, and carried the survivors as slaves into the Waikato dis-

Latterly, he embraced Christianity, and became as zealous in the cause of peace as he had been in that of war. When he became a Christian, Te Whero-Whero was so well aware of his value as a warrior, that he exclaimed to those who brought him the news, "I have lost my right arm!"

Although repulsed on this occasion by the three guns taken from the wrecked ship, the Waikatos were not discouraged, and made a second attack. The Taranakis, however, had seen too much of Waikato courage to risk a second siege, and so quietly made off, some two thousand in number, accompanied by the Europeans who had served the guns for them. The latter very rightly spiked the guns when they left the pah, so that when the Waikatos came again and took the pah, they found it deserted, and the guns useless to the captors. The Taranakis lived in deadly fear of the

powerful and warlike Waikatos, and, but for the love which they felt toward their native country, would have fled, and left the conquerors to take quiet possession. They were even obliged to have their plantations in the bush, where none but the owner could find them; for they feared, and with reason, that if their dreaded enemies could discover the sources whence their provisions were obtained, they would destroy the whole plantation, and leave their victims to starve. They were in such a state of nervous alarm about a suspected invasion by their powerful neighbors, that on one occasion, when a fire was seen in the distance, every one took it for granted to be a fire lighted by the Waikatos, and in consequence every one kept awake all night, ready to give the alarm at the first unwonted sight or sound.

Among the New Zealanders is a custom

of retaliation which is found with but little variation in many parts of the world. If blood has been shed, the friends of the dead blood has been shed, the friends of the dead man issue from the pah, with the determination of killing the first person whom they may happen to meet. Should he belong to an inimical tribe, so much the better; should he belong to the same tribe, so much the worse; for in either case he is killed. On such an occasion one of the avengers would be bound to kill his own brother, should he happen to be the first man who came in the way of the party

Such an exercise of vengeance is rather an inconvenient one to those who are engaged in it; for they are forbidden the use of their ordinary comforts, they may not eat any food except that which is indigenous to New Zealand, and, above all, they are not allowed to smoke. When, therefore they have been unable to find any human being whom they a sacrifice, the aid of the priest, or tohunga, is called in. pulls up a tuft of grass, and, after repeating one of the many incantations which abound in New Zealand lore, and of which neither the hearers nor the reciter understand one word in ten, he throws the grass into the nearest stream, in token that the avengers are released from their vow. Blood, how-ever, must still be shed; but after this ceremony has been performed, the blood of any living thing, even though it be a bird, is held sufficient to satisfy the traditional custom of the Maori race.

Elaborate rites closely allied with this ceremony are employed both before and after battle; but, as they belong rather to the subject of religion than of war, we will

postpone them for the present.

As the New Zealanders know that it is a point of military honor combined with personal gratification to cat the bodies of slain enemies, they are equally desirous of securing the bodies of their foes and of carrying off those who have fallen on their own side; and in many instances the anxiety to save those who have fallen has caused others to share the same fate while attempting to carry off their dead or wounded comrades.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

CANOES.

THE CANOE, AND ITS USES IN PEACE AND WAR -- THE COMMON TRADING CANOE -- SKILL OF THE BOAT-MEN -- THE LARGE WAR CANCES, AND MODE OF BUILDING THEM -- DECORATIONS OF THE CANCES -SKILFUL CARVINGS - THE THEORY OF THE VARIOUS PATTERNS - NAMES OF CANOES - MANAGE-MENT OF THE SAIL -CANOE SONGS - A COMPLETE BOAT-LOAD - MODE OF LANDING - SHAPE OF THE PADDLES, AND MODE OF USING THEM - CARVING TOOLS - SUPPOSED COMPASSES.

take care to build their pahs in spots where they are well defended from attack both on the seaward and the landward side. Some of them are on the very verge of highwater mark, while others are perched on the tops of cliffs, the base of which is washed by the waves.

One of the most picturesque of these is a pah situate near Mount Egmont, and known by the name of the Waimate Pah. is a cliff that rises perpendicularly some four or five hundred feet above the level of the water which laves its foot, and on the very summit of this cliff is situated the pah in question. It is of considerable size, containing many houses and is fortified with the usual wooden fence. In order to render it as nearly as possible impregnable, the only approach is by a very narrow and very steep path, that cannot be ascended except by people who have strong heads, the path being so narrow, so steep, and so dangerous that two men could defend it against fifty.

In his warlike expeditions E'Hongi made great use of his canoes, taking them inland as far as they would go, and then having them dragged over land to the next river.

These canoes play so important a part in the life of a New Zealander, whether in war or peace, that they require a detailed description. The canoes are of several kinds, according to the work which they tree haing a very large one, the natives are have to perform. The simplest form of the able to make their canoes of considerable New Zealander's canoe is little more than a size.

WAR is carried on quite as much by water as by land, and a chief who knows the principles of good generalship always uses the rough. Boing incapable of withstanding ciples of good generalship always uses the rough weather, this canoe is only used upon sen as well as the land to serve as a basis rivers. Some of these canoes, which are for his attack. For this reason the Maories called by the name of kaupapas, are from forty to fifty feet in length, and in the widest part not exceeding a yard in "beam." plentiful supply of fern leaves is laid at the bottom of the canoe, and upon these the passengers recline. Canoes of a similar character, called tiwai, are used in the inland lakes, and sit so low in the water that they appear to have no gunwale.

Owing to their want of beam, these canoes are as easily upset as the slight skiffs in which races are rowed on English rivers, The agile Maori, accustomed from childhood to balance himself in these crank vessels, traverses them with ease and security, but an European generally upsets four or five canoes before he learns how to enter or leave them properly. The natives manage these canoes with wonderful skill, and, apparently regardless of the risk of capsizing the canoe, dash their paddles into the water with furious energy, driving up spray on all sides, and making the canoe and its rowers look at a distance like some gigantic centipede dashing through the water.

The vessels, however, of which the Maories are most fond, and on which they expend the most labor, are the large canoes in which the warriors embark when on a campaign. Those canoes are made from the cowrie pine (the same tree which furnishes the aromatic gum already mentioned); and the tree being a very large one, the natives are Some of these canoes are upward of

eighty fe able to c They

manner. formed fr left in the large kau for sea v rough we tion than rivers, an worthy by arately, a the boat b

Both th decorated character which has are pierce which hav human co curve. Pe have fifty with the to and forehe with a pair tis shell. when carvi follows:

After she article to which he purpose, an When this second spot and carves way until b he thinks th He next

and limbs, a very squar in the vac curved lines and carve. of these wa baffles all po but a well e: correct idea ship. It is a velopment c quite unique who is acqua moment mis carving for the

Besides ca paints them warlike obje fusely with I hair, just lik to the patu. wanted, they thatched in weather.

Like more landers give seem to delig rous titles th eighty feet in length and in consequence are ample, one canoe is called Maratuhai, i. c.

able to carry a great number of warriors.

They are built in rather an elaborate manner. First the trough-like vessel is formed from the tree trunk; and if it were left in that state, it would be simply a very large kaupapa. As, however, it is intended for sea voyages, and may have to endure rough weather; it is much wider in propor-tion than the boat which is only used on tion than and is, moreover, rendered more sea-rivers, and is, moreover, rendered more sea-worthy by gunwales. These are made sep-arately, and are lashed firmly to the sides of the boat by the ordinary flax ropes.

Both the head and stern of the cance are decorated with carving, exactly similar in character to the specimens of native art which have already been described. They are pierced with the most elaborate patterns, which have as their basis the contour of tire human countenance and the semi-spiral Perhaps a single canoe head will curve. have flfty or sixty human faces on it, each with the tongue protruded, with the cheeks and forehead covered with tattooed lines, and with a pair of goggle eyes made of the haliotis shell. The mode which a native adopts when carving these elaborate patterns is as

After shaping out the general form of the article to be carved, he fixes on some part which he thinks will be suitable for the purpose, and carves a human head upon it. When this is completed, he pitches upon a second spot at some distance from the first, and carves another head, proceeding in this way until he has carved as many heads as

he thinks the pattern will require. He next furnishes the heads with bodies and limbs, which are always represented in a very squat and ungainly manner, and fills in the vacant spaces with the beautiful curved lines which he loves so well to draw and carve. The minute elaboration of some of these war canoes is so intricate that it baffles all power of description, and nothing but a well executed photograph could give a correct idea of the beauty of the workmanship. It is a marvellous example of the development of art under difficulties. It is quite unique in its character, so that no one who is acquainted with the subject can for a moment mistake a piece of New Zealand carving for that of any other country.

Besides carving the canoes, the Maori paints them with vermilion in token of their warlike object, and decorates them profusely with bunches of feathers and dog's hair, just like the tufts which are attached to the patu. When the canoes are not wanted, they are drawn up on shore, and are thatched in order to save them from the weather.

Like more civilized nations, the New Zea-

Devouring Fire; and others have names that coincide almost exactly with our Invincibles, Terribles, Thunderers, and the like.

These boats are furnished with a very remarkable sail made of the raupo rush. It is small in proportion to the size of the vessel, is triangular in shape, and is so arranged that it can be raised or lowered almost in a moment. They are better sailors than would be imagined from their appearance, and run wonderfully close to the wind.

Sometimes from fifty to sixty men paddle in one of these war canoes, singing songs in time to the stroke, and guided both in song and stroke by a conductor who stands in the middle of the canoe, prompting the words of the song, and beating time for the paddlers with a staff which he holds in his hand. Owing to the power of the water in reflecting sound, the measured chant of the paddlesong can be heard on a river long before the canoe comes in sight.

Mr. Angas gives an interesting account of a journey in a Maori canoe. After men-tioning that the vessel was so deeply laden that its sides were not more than two inches above the water, he proceeds as follows: "The paddles were plied with great spirit; the exertions of the natives being stimulated by the animated shouting song kept up in-cessantly by the one or other of the party. At length the splashing was so violent that we became nearly drenched, and on requesting the Maori before us to throw less water in our faces, he replied with a proverb common among them, that 'No one is dry who travels with the Waikatos,' meaning that the people of this tribe excel all others in the speed and dexterity with which they man-

age their canoes,
"Our natives were in excellent spirits. They had been on a long journey to Auckland, where they had seen the pakcha (white man, or stranger) in his settlement, and had witnessed many sights of civilization to which they were previously strangers. They had also purchased articles of European manufacture, and longing to return home to the peaceful banks of the Waipa, to present them to their friends as tokens of their regard. Their wild, deafening songs, with their heads all undulating at every stroke, the contortions of their eyes, and their bare, tawny shoulders, finely developing their muscles as they all dashed their paddles simultaneously into the water, rendered the scene at once novel and animating.

"The canoe songs are generally improvised, and frequently have reference to passing objects. Such ejaculations as the following were uttered by our companions at landers give names to their canoes, and the higest pitch of their voices, 'Pull away! seem to delight in selecting the most sone-Pull away! 'Dig into the rous titles that they can invent. For ex-water!' 'Break your backs,' &c. From

ILL OF THE BOAT-S OF THE CANOES ANOES - MANAGE-NDING -- SHAPE OF ASSES.

into a sort of

of withstanding

only used upon

oes, which are

papas, are from nd in the widest in "beam." es is laid at the upon these the s of a similar used in the w in the water o gunwale. m, these canoes slight skiffs in English rivers. ed from childhese crank vesse and security, sets four or five ow to enter or natives manage skill, and, appak of capsizing into the water up spray on all and its rowers

ter. hich the Maowhich they exlarge canoes in when on a came from the cowh furnishes the oned); and the the natives are of considerable are upward of

gigantic centi-

the prow of one of the canoes a native flute family repeated the sound of welcome to the sounded plaintively. This is a very rude opposite shore, as their canoe also dashed in and imperfect instrument, and they do not safety against its banks." play it with any degree of skill, it having only two or three notes." The flute in question is that which is made of human bone, and has been described on a previous page. It is played by placing the orifice against one nostril, and stopping the other with the

finger.
When the natives proceed on a journey in their canoes, they are so sure of their own skill and management that they overload them to a degree which would cause an immediate capsize in most countries. chief, named Wirihona, who was travelling with his family, afforded a curious example of overloading a boat with impunity. canoe was delicate and frail, and in the bow sat a little boy with a small fire kept between two pieces of bark. In the fore part of the canoe, where it was narrow, sat the younger children, the adult members of the family being placed in the middle, where the boat was widest. Toward the stern came another batch of young children, and on the stern, which projects over the water, sat Wirihona himself, steering the vessel with his paddle.

The canoe in which were Mr. Angas and his companions was, as the reader may recollect, so laden that her gunwale barely rose two inches above the surface. As long as they were paddling along the narrower and more sheltered parts of the river, all went smoothly enough, though the deeply-laden state of the crank boat gave cause for uneasiness. At last, however, they came to some wide and open reaches exposed to the wind, and had, moreover, to cross the current di-

"The wind blew violently, and meeting the current, caused an unpleasant sea in the middle channel of the river. Our heavilyladen canoe was not fitted to encounter anything beyond still water; and, as our natives related to each other where this and that canoe were upset, they dashed their paddles into the water with all their energy, and our bark was soon in the midst of the terrible current. We were every moment in imminent danger of being swamped; the water rushed in on both sides; and nothing but the extreme swiftness with which we glided through the current prevented us from filling.

"As the canoe dashed against the opposite shore, our natives gave a loud shout and commenced bailing out the water, which we had shipped in great quantities, with a tatau or scoop. We now looked anxiously toward the second canoe, and watched them literally pulling for their lives, splashing and dashing with the utmost vehemence. The

The paddles with which the Maories pro-The paddles with which the Maories propel their cances are curious-looking implements, and are so formed that they will answer almost equally well as paddles or weapons. Indeed, it is not unlikely that their peculiar shape was given to them for this very reason. In the illustration No. 1, on page 881, are seen two examples of the New Zealand paddle, both being drawn from specimens in my collection, and being useful as showing the typical form of the imple-

They are rather more than five feet in length, and have very long blades which are leaf-shaped and sharply pointed at the tips, so that a thrust from one of these paddles would be quite as dangerous as if it were made with the butt of the patu. The blade, too, is sharp at the edges, and, being made of rather heavy wood, is capable of splitting a man's skull as effectually as if it had been

the short merai.

In one of these paddles the handle is curved in a peculiar manner, while in the other it is straight, and forms a continuation of the blade. The former of these implements is quite plain, and even at the end of the handle there is no carving, while the latter is liberally adorned with ratterns both on the blade and handle, and at their junction there is the inevitable human figure with the protruding tongue, the goggle eyes, and the generally aggressive expression that characterizes all such figures. None of the New Zealand paddles are adorned with the minute and elaborate carving which is found upon the paddles of several of the Polynesian The carving of the New Zeaislands. landers is of a far different and much bolder character; and, instead of covering his paddle with small patterns repeated some hundreds of times, the Maori carves nothing but bold, sweeping curves and imitations of the human face.

As far as is known, the Maori carver makes no use of measuring tools, doing all his work by the eye alone. He does not even use compasses in describing his circles; and in consequence, whenever he carves, as is often the case, a number of concentric circles on a rafter or beam, the circles are quite undeserving of the name, and always tend rather to an irregular oval form.

There is in my collection a remarkable instrument, presented to me by C. Heaton, Esq. It bears a label with the following inscription, "A New Zealand Compass, by which the natives turn the volute in their carving." In shape it resembles one half of a parenthesis, and is armed at each point with a shark's tooth, which is inserted frail bark appeared almost swallowed up by the angry stream, but she glided securely cord passing through holes bored in the through it, and the drenched chief and his tooth and through the semicircular handle.

It is mad Having, reason to and think land carv which we been ske showed th lers who l land, and None of the Christie, manufactu about it, a informatio whose pen illustration New Zeala such a tool elcome to the also dashed in

Maories proooking imple-that they will as paddles or unlikely that n to them for stration No. 1, amples of the ng drawn from d being useful of the imple-

an five feet in ades which are ed at the tips, these paddles as if it were u. The blade, being made of of splitting a

the handle is , while in the a continuation f these implen at the end of ing, while the patterns both at their junchuman figure ne goggle eyes, None of the

orned with the which is found the Polynesian he New Zead much bolder ering his padted some hunarves nothing l imitations of

Maori carver ools, doing all He does not ng his circles; he carves, as concentric cirircles are quite d always tend m.

a remarkable by C. Heaton, the following Compass, by olute in their bles one half armed at each ch is inserted firmly with a bored in the cular handle.

It is made of the same wood as the paddle. New Zealand carving, and have seen many Having, as I have already stated, abundant others, together with a great number of the same wood is have already stated. photographs, and in no case have I noticed a single circle or portion of a circle that was regular enough to have been drawn by the aid of compasses.

I even doubt whether this article was made in New Zealand at all, and am inclined to think that it belongs to the Tonga or the Kingsmill Islands. As to its use, I have no opinion.

lers who have spent much time in New Zealand, and asked them if they recognized it. None of them had seen the implement. Mr. Christie, who gave much attention to the manufactures of New Zealand, knew nothing In propelling these canoes, the New Zea-lander holds his paddle in both hands, and manuactures of New Zealand, knew nothing lander noids his paddle in both hands, and about it, and Mr. Angas, who visited the island for the express purpose of collecting information respecting the Maories, and to whose pen I am indebted for nearly all the illustrations of the life and manners of the New Zealanders, had never seen or heard of such a tool. I nessess many specimens of large paddle in the stern. about it, and Mr. Angas, who visited the island for the express purpose of collecting such a tool. I possess many specimens of large paddle in the stern.

Having, as I have already stated, abundant reason to distrust the accuracy of labels, and thinking that the curves of New Zea-

and carving did not possess the regularity which would accompany them had they been sketched out by an instrument, I showed the tool to several observant travel-

CHAPTER LXXXV.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

RELIGION.

THE GOOD AND EVIL INFLUENCES - THE LIZARD ATUAS - ALARM OF THE CHIEF - MAORI PRAYERS -DIFFICULTY IN TRANSLATING THEM - THE SACRED LANGUAGE - THE TOHUNGAS, OR PRIESTS -BELIEF IN THE FUTURE STATE -- THE SACRED BRANCH -- THE MALEVOLENT SPIRITS -- HAUNTED MOUNTAINS - THE TIKIS, OR SUPPOSED IDOLS OF THE MAORIES - SOME GIGANTIC WOODEN TIKIS -- BELIEF IN WITCHCRAFT -- FATE OF A WITCH -- COUNTRY OF THE WIZARDS -- INCANTA-TION OVER THE SICK - MAORI ANATOMISTS.

WE now come to the religion of the Maories. This is a curious mixture of simplicity and elaboration, having the usual superstitions common to all savage tribes, and being complicated with the remarkable system of "tapu," or "taboo," as the word is sometimes spelt.

Of real religion they have no idea, and, so far as is known, even their superstitions lack that infusion of sublimity which distinguishes the religious system of many savage nations. They have a sort of indefinite belief in a good and evil influence; the former going by the generic name of Atua, and the latter of Wairua. Now, Atua is a word that has a peculiar significance of its own. It may signify the Divine Essence, or it may be applied to any object which is considered as a visible representative of that

Thus, if a Maori wishes to speak of God, he would use the word Λ tua. But he would equally apply it to a lizard, a bird, a sun-ray, or a cloud. There is one species of lizard, of a lovely green color, called by the natives kakariki, which is held in the greatest veneration as a living representative of divinity, and is in consequence always dreaded as an atua. The belief which the natives hold on this subject is well shown by an anecdote told by Mr. Angas.

"The following incident will show how deeply the belief in witchcraft and the supposed influence of the atuas obtains among those who are still heathens. The mission-ary was shown some small green lizards preserved in a phial of spirits, Muriwenua

and another man being in the room. We forgot at the moment that the little creatures in the phial were atuas, or gods, according to the superstitious belief of Maori polytheism, and inadvertently showed

them to the man at the table.

No sooner did he perceive the atuas than his Herculean frame shrank back as from a mortal wound, and his face displayed signs of extreme horror. The old chief, on discovering the cause, cried out, 'I shall die! I shall die!' and crawled away on his hands and knees; while the other man stood as a defence between the chief and the atuas. changing his position so as to form a kind of shield, till Muriwenua was out of the influence of their supposed power. It was a dangerous mistake to exhibit these atuas, for the chief is very old, and in the course of nature cannot live long, and, if he dies shortly, his death will certainly be ascribed to the baneful sight of the lizard gods, and I shall be accused of makutu or witchcraft." In connection with this superstition about the lizard, the same traveller mentions a curious notion which prevails regarding a spider.

"On the beach of the west coast is found a small, black, and very venomous spider, called katipo by the natives. Its bite is exceedingly painful, and even dangerous, and the natives think that if the katipo bites a man and escapes, the man will die. But if he contrives to catch the spider, and makes a circle of fire round it so that it perishes in the flames, then the man recovers as the spider dies."

The extent to which the imagination of

to any of t the invisib representa entirely m and are a s the priest The meani tain, owing are profuse which, ind consists. 1 may perhap are made of

however to

desires safe

the nativ craft is woman n ebrated v exercised minds of a superio angry wit taken out lieved he Ohiects often con

Thus a co in one dir its invisib

because it an atua, o and movir

be atuas i and lost th tached to

Yet the

when on th or good luci apon to r Many of the been prese others. On more correc is uttered at designated a be pure, tha fire burns, th "When it sacred fire, (sacred morn

fat. It burn for thee the the parrot; for for thee the eels; where heaven; sprin Offerings Maori native

of both vege much to be re ancient religi have perished tirely forgotte Such a loss a and the fact make us the

the natives is excited by their fear of witch- speedy oblivion the expiring religious cuscraft is scarcely credible. There was one woman named Eko, who was the most cel-ebrated witch of the Waikato district. She exercised extraordinary influence over the minds of the people, who looked upon her as a superior being. On one occasion, when angry with a man, she told him that she had taken out his heart. The man entirely believed her, and died from sheer terror.

(Thjects which they cannot understand are often considered by the Maories as atuas. Thus a compass is an atua, because it points in one direction, and directs the traveller by its invisible power. A barometer is an atua, because it foretells the weather. A watch is an atua, on account of the perpetual ticking and moving of the hands. Fire-arms used to be atuas until they came into common use, and lost the mystery which was at first at-

tached to them.

Yet the Maori never addresses his prayers to any of these visible objects, but always to the invisible Atua of whom these are but the representatives. The prayers are almost entirely made by the priests or tohungas, and are a set form of words known only to the priests and those whom they instruct. The meaning of the prayers is often uncertain, owing to the obsolete words which are profusely employed in them, and of which, indeed, the prayer almost entirely consists. Prayers, or incantations, as they may perhaps be called with more precision, are made on almost every occasion of life, however trivial, and whether the Maori desires safety in a battle, a favorable wind when on the water, success in a campaign, or good luck in fishing, the tohunga is called apon to repeat the appropriate prayer. Many of these prayers or incantations have been preserved by Dr. Dieffenbach and others. One of these prayers, which can be more correctly translated than many of them, is uttered at the offering of a pigeon. It is designated as "A prayer that the pigeon may be pure, that it may be very fat: when the fire burns, the prayer is said."
"When it is lighted, when it is lighted, the sacred fire, O Tiki! When it burns on the

sacred morning, O give, O give, O Tiki, the fat. It burns for thee the fat of the pigeon: for thee the fat of the owl; for thee the fat of the parrot; for thee the fat of the flycatcher; for thee the fat of the thrush. A water of eels; where is its spring? Its spring is in heaven; sprinkle, give, be it poured out." Offerings of food are common rites of

Maori native worship, and offerings are made of both vegetable and animal food. It is much to be regretted that very many of the ancient religious rites of the New Zcalanders have perished, and that they have been entirely forgotten by the present generation. Such a loss as this can never be replaced, and the fact that it has occurred ought to

toms of other uncivilized nations.

Prayers, such as have been mentioned, are handed down by the tohungas or priests from father to son, and the youths undergo a long course of instruction before they can take rank among the priests. Dr. Dieffen-bach was once fortunate enough to witness a portion of this instruction. "I was present at one of the lessons. An old priest was sitting under a tree, and at his feet was a boy, his relative, who listened attentively to the repetition of certain words, which seemed to have no meaning, but which it must have required a good memory to retain in their due order. At the old tohunga's side was part of a man's skull filled with water. Into this from time to time he dipped a green branch, which he moved over the boy's head. At my approach the old man smiled, as if to say, 'See how clever I am,' and continued his abracadabra.

"I have been assured by the missionaries that many of these prayers have no meaning; but this I am greatly inclined to doubt. The words of the prayers are perhaps the remains of a language now forgotten; or, what is more probable, we find here what has existed among most of the nations of antiquity, even the most civilized, viz: that religious mysteries were confined to a certain class of men, who kept them concealed from the profanum vulgus, or communicated only such

portions of them as they thought fit.
"They often had a sacred symbolic language, the knowledge of which was confined Egyptian hieroglyphics and the Sanscrit; or, if we look nearer home, we find the religion of Thor, Odin, and Freya enveloped in a poetical mythos, which has for its foundation deep and grand philosophical conceptions of morals and ethics.'

It is a rather curious fact that, contrary to the usual custom of heathen priests, the tohungas did not oppose the Christian missionaries, but were among the first to receive the new religion. Some of them seem to have received it too hastily and without sufficient knowledge of its principles, as we see from the miserable travesty of Christianity which has sprung up of late years among the Maories, and which is in New Zealand what the system of Taeping is in China.

The priests are, as a rule, the most expert artists and woodcarvers in the country; so that the word "tohunga" is often applied by the natives to a man who is skilful in any

art, no matter whether he be a priest or not. The illustration No. 1, on the 860th page, is a portrait of a very celebrated tohunga, taken by Mr. Angas in 1844. His name was Te Ohu. The portrait was obtained during a great meeting of chiefs at Ahuahu. Ohu distinguished himself greatly on this make us the more careful in rescuing from occasion, running about after the fashion of

MAORI PRAYERS -AS, OR PRIESTS-PIRITS -- HAUNTED IGANTIC WOODEN ZARDS - INCANTA-

the room. We the little creaatuas, or gods, tious belief of ertently showed e the atuas than back as from a displayed signs d. chief, on dis-ut, 'I shall die!

ay on his hands man stood as a and the atuas, o form a kind of ut of the influwer. It was a t these atuas, for he course of nahe dies shortly, ascribed to the ods, and I shall vitcheraft." In tition about the ntions a curious ling a spider.

t coast is found nomous spider, Its bite is exdangerous, and katipo bites a ill die. But if der, and makes at it perishes in ecovers as the

imagination of

Maori orators, shaking his long and grizzled locks from side to side, stamping furiously on the ground, and uttering his speech in a singularly deep and sonorous voice.

In the background of the sketch may be seen two remarkable articles. The one. which is the half of a canoe, stuck upright in the ground, marks the grave of a deceased chief; and the other is a pole, on which are hung a calabash of water and a basket of food, with which the spirit of the dead can refresh himself when he returns to visit the scene of his lifetime. Sometimes a dish of cooked pigeons is added; and in one case a model of a canoe, with its sail and paddles, was placed on the tomb, as a conveyance for the soul of the departed when he wished to cross the waters which lead to the eternal abodes of

Concerning the state of the spirit after the death of the body the Maories seem to have very vague ideas. The sum of their notions on this subject is as follows: - They believe that the spirit of man is immortal, and that when it leaves the body it goes to the Reinga, or place of departed spirits. Shooting and falling stars are thought to be the souls of men going to this place. The entrance to the Reinga is down the face of a rocky cliff at Cape Maria Van Diemen. Lest the spirit should hurt itself by falling down this precipice, there is a very old tree which grows there, on which the spirits break their fall. One particular branch was pointed out as being the portion of the tree on which the spirits alighted.

One of the missionaries cut off this branch, and in consequence the natives do not regard it with quite so much awe as they did in former days. Still Dr. Dieffenbach re-marks that, when he visited the islands, they held the spot in great veneration, and not even the Christian natives would go near it.

All spirits do not enter the Reinga in the same manner, those of chiefs ascending first the upper heavens, where they leave the left eye, which becomes a new star. For this reason, if a chief is killed in war, his left eye is eaten by the chief of the victorious party, who thinks that he has thus in-corporated into his own being the courage,

skill, and wisdom of the dead man.

Spirits are not considered as imprisoned in the Reinga, but are able to leave it when they please, and to return to the scene of their former life. They can also hold converse with their friends and relatives, but only through the tohungas. Sometimes, but very rarely, the tohunga sees the spirit; and even then it is only visible as a sunbeam or a shadow. The voice of the spirit is a sort of low whistling sound, like a slight breeze, and is sometimes heard by others beside the tohunga. He, however, is the only one who can understand the mysterious voice and can interpret the wishes of the dead to the living.

As to the life led by departed spirits, the As to the life led by departed spirits, the Macries seem to have no idea; neither do they seem to care. They have a notion that in Reinga the kumeras, or sweet potatoes, abound; but beyond that tradition they appear to know nothing.

As to the malevolent spirits, or wairuas, the same cloudy indefiniteness of ideas seems to prevail. The word wairua significantibus the soul or a draw and is matter.

fles either the soul or a dream, and is mostly fies either the soul or a dream, and is mostly used to signify the spirit of some deceased person who desires to act malevolently toward the living. Such spirits are supposed to haunt certain spots, which are in consequence avoided by the New Zealander. Mountains are especial objects of his veneration, and those which are lofty enough to have their tops covered with perpetual anow are specially feared. He perpetual snow are specially feared. He fancies that they are inhabited by strange and monstrous animals, that flerce birds of huge size sit continually on their whitened tops, and that every breeze which blows from them is the voice of the spirit which haunts it.

In consequence of these superstitions, the natives can no more be induced to ascend one of these mountains than to approach a burial ground. They have a curious legend about the Tongariro and Mount Egmont, saying that they were originally brother and sister, and lived together, but that they afterward quarrelled and separated. There is another strange legend of a spot near Mount Egmont. Owing to the nature of the ground, a strong chemical action is constantly taking place, which gives out great quantities of sulphuretted hydrogen gas. The natives say that in former days an Aiua was drowned near the spot, and that ever since that time his body has been decompos-

As to the idols of the New Zealanders, it is very doubtful whether they ever existed. There are, it is true, many representations of the human form, which are popularly supposed to be idols. It was formerly supposed that the green jade ornaments, called "tikis," which are worn suspended from the neck, were idols; but it is now known that they are merely ornaments, deriving their sole value from being handed down from

one generation to another.

Three examples of the so-called idols are here given. One of them is remarkable for its gigantic proportions and curious shape. It is about sixteen feet in height, and instead of consisting of a single human figure, as is usually the case, the enormous block of wood is carved into the semblance of two figures, one above the other. This arrangement is not uncommon in New Zealand, and is found also in Western Africa. I possess a walking staff of both countries, which are composed of several human figures, each upon the other's head. The New Zealand staff will be presently described and figured

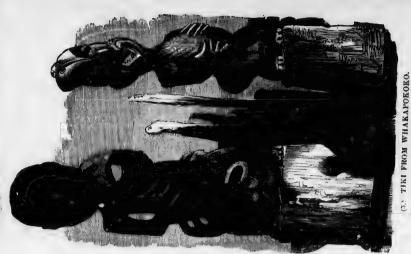
rted spirits, the lea; neither do ve a notion that sweet potatoes, adition they aprits, or wairuas, eness of ideas d wairua signin, and is mostly some deceased t malevolently t malevolenty
pirits are supjoints, which are
the New Zeaecial objects of
which are lofty
covered with
y feared. He
tied by strange
fierce birds of
their whitened
e which blows

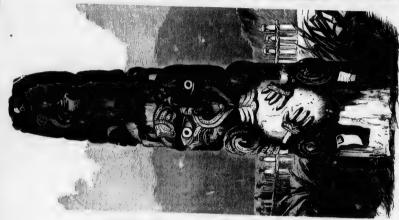
perstitions, the uced to ascend to approach a curious legend fount Egmont, ginally brother r, but that they parated. There of a spot near the nature of al action is congives out great hydrogen gas. er days an Atua t, and that ever been decompos-

e which blows he spirit which

v Zealanders, it ey ever existed. representations are popularly s formerly supnaments, called pended from the ow known that deriving their ded down from

called idols are remarkable for curious shape. height, and ine human figure, ormous block of nblance of two This arrange-This arrange-sew Zealand, and rica. I possess ries, which are n figures, each New Zealand ped and figured







(No page 861.)

A TIKI AT RAOERA PAH.

(See page 857.)

(See page 861.)

tradition, bottom of As may on the pr both figur curved pr arms, and which do paling of ground, a plants of flax. Near thi

This g

ter of Te ment wh one of the to be four

object of truding to show that statues we natives sa Maui, the

Near thi
of carving
ordinary ty
the illustra
sketches ta
not quite
Raroera, th
be seen by
of the wor
them.
The firm
New Zealan

New Zealan as in many ness for wh covered, esp rank, "mal suspected, that he has the names of spite agains unfortunate doomed to of such a mu

He met a him that a Ngawaka, hi who suspect son. The y and, though best to cure it into his he her incantati ket with a st ket with a st was demand com that the mur heavy sum. called "taua."

There are but that whi formed by dig invoking the

(860)

This gigantic tiki stands, together with be bewitched. After the incantations are several others, near the tomb of the daugh- said, the invoked spirit appears above the ter of Te Whero-Whero, and, like the monu-ment which it seems as it were to guard, is one of the finest examples of native carving to be found in New Zealand. The precise object of the tiki is uncertain; but the protruding tongue of the upper figure seems to show that it is one of the numerous deflant statues which abound in the islands. The natives say that the lower figure represents Maui, the Atua who, according to Maori tradition, fished up the islands from the bottom of the sea.

As may be seen in the illustration No. 2. on the preceding page, nearly the whole of both figures is carved with most elaborate curved patterns, which descend over the arms, and adorn those parts of the statue which do duty for hips. A portion of the paling of Raroera Pah is seen in the back-

ordinary type. Two such tikis are shown in the illustration No. 3, opposite, drawn from sketches taken at Whakapokoko. Although not quite so large as the double tiki of Raroera, they are of very great size, as may be seen by contrasting them with the figure of the woman who is standing by one of them.

The firmest belief in witchcraft prevails in New Zealand, though not to such an extent as in many parts of Africa. In cases of illness for which no ordinary cause can be discovered, especially if the patient be of high rank, "makuta," or witchcraft, is always suspected. If a chief, for example, fancies that he has been bewitched, he thinks over the names of those who are likely to have a spite against him, and ritches upon some unfortunate individual, who is thereby doomed to death. One curious example of such a murder is related by Mr. Angas.

He met a party of natives, who told him that a woman, a relation of the chief Ngawaka, had been shot by another chief, who suspected that she had bewitched his son. The young man had been taken ill, and, though the woman in question did her best to cure him, he died. His father took it into his head that she had killed him by her incantations, and, after loading his musket with a stick, shot her through the body. As, however, she was the relation of Ngawaka, it was expected that the chief would demand compensation for her death, and that the murderer would have to pay a very heavy sum. This sort of compensation is called "taua."

be bewitched. After the incamations are said, the invoked spirit appears above the hole like a flickering light, and is then solemnly cursed by the witch. Sometimes, instead of digging a hole, the witch goes by night to the river bank, and there invokes the spirit, who appears as a flame of fire on the opposite bank.

Dr. Dieffenbach gives rather a curious account of a district named Urewera, which is supposed to be the special abode of witches. It is situated in the northern island, between Taupo and Hawkes' Bay, and consists of steep and barren hills. The inhabitants of this district are few and scattered, and have the reputation of being the greatest witches in the country.

"They are much feared, and have little connection with the neighboring tribes, who avoid them, if possible. If they come to paning of harders I am is seen in the back-ground, and around the tiki grow many plants of the phormium, or New Zealand flax.

Near this wonderful and mysterious piece of carving stand several others, all of the ordinary type. Two such tikis are shown in the coast, the natives there scarcely venture working them evil. Like our witches and sorcerers of old, they appear to be a very harmless people, and but little mixed up with the quarrels of their neighbors.

"It is a curious fact that many of the old settlers in the country have become complete converts to the belief in these supernatural powers. Witchcraft has been the cause of many murders: a few days before I arrived at Aotea, on the western coast, three had been committed, in consequence of people declaring on their deathbeds that

they had been bewitched.

"It is another curious fact, which has been noticed in Tahiti, Hawaii, and the islands inhabited by the great Polynesian race, that their first intercourse with Europeans produces civil wars and social degradation, but that a change of ideas is quickly introduced, and that the most ancient and deeply-rooted prejudices soon become a subject of ridicule to the natives, and are abolished at once. The grey priest, or tohunga, deeply versed in all the mysteries of witchcraft and native medical treatment, gives way in his attendance on the sick to every European who pretends to a knowledge of the science of surgery or medicine, and de-

rides the former credulity of his patient. "If a chief or his wife fall sick, the most influential tohunga, or a woman who has the odor of sanctity, attends, and continues day and night with the patient, sometimes repeating incantations over him, and sometimes sitting before the house and praying. The following is an incantation which is said by the priest as a cure for headache. There are several modes of witchcraft; He pulls out two stalks of the Pteris esculenta, from which the fibres of the root must be removed, and, beating them toinvoking the spirit of the person who is to gether over the head of the patient, says

this chant."—The chant in question is as | can find one, or, if no such spring is at hand, unintelligible as those which have already been mentioned. Its title is "A prayer for the dead (i. c. the sick man) when his head

when its read that this prayer is prayed, that he, the sick man, may become well."

When a chief is ill, his relations assemble near the house and all weep bitterly, the patient taking his part in the general sortowing, and when all the wearing and rowing; and when all the weeping and mourning has been got out of one village, the patient is often carried to another, where the whole business is gone over again. Should the sick person be of an inferior class, he goes off to the bush, and remains there until he is well again, choose the state of the bush and the state of the bush and remains there until he is well again, choose the bush appring if he ing the neighborhood of a hot spring if he

infusing certain herbs in boiling water and inhaling the steam.

As may be imagined from the practice As may be imagined from the practice which they have in cutting up the dead for their cannibal feasts, the Maories are good practical anatomists, and know well the position of all the principal organs and vessels of the body. Consequently, they can operate in cases of danger, using sharpedged shells if they have no knives. They can also set broken limbs well, bringing the broken surfaces together, binding the limb broken surfaces together, binding the limb with splints, laying it on a soft pillow, and surrounding it with a wickerwork contrivance in order to guard it against injury.

> THE TAPU, PROPE CHIEF MISTA CARVE EFFEC' TERMI

> > THE T

WE now c Tapu or T which exte Polynesia, the locality

The gene may be infe which signi tapu is ther when strip which it ofto very excelle the purpose laws. In government less, and we the earth wh tive law it h lar governm Were it n

lute anarchy Polynesia, il of property may be enfo of superstitie the absence powers are e Unprotect

not exist: pi and coveted would be in the elaborate every man th Zealand, whe of kumeras, ing is at hand. ling water and

the practice up the dead for ories are good now well the rgans and vesntly, they can using sharp-knives. They l, bringing the ding the limb oft pillow, and rwork contriinst injury.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

NEW ZEALAND - Continued.

THE TAPU.

THE TAPU, OR LAW OF PROHIBITION-TAPU A SUBSTITUTE FOR GOVERNMENT-PROTECTION TO PROPERTY AND MORALS - ABUSE OF THE TAPU - THE CHIEF AND THE SAILOR - THE CHIEF AND HIS MAT -- A VALUABLE SPLINTER -- THE HEAD OF THE CHIEF -- AN UNLUCKY MISTAKE -- HOW TAONUI GOT HIS ARMOR -- HAIR CUTTING -- TROUBLES OF AN ARTIST -- THE CARVED HEAD -TE-WHERO-WHERO AND HIS PORTRAIT -THE TAPU MOUNTAIN -BANEFUL EFFECTS OF THE TAPU ON NATIVE ART—DESTRUCTION OF THE PAHS AND HOUSES—THE TERMINABLE TAPU—THE BATTLE-TAPU—TAKING OFF THE TAPU—DUTY OF THE TOHUNGA— THE TAPU THE STRENGTH OF THE CHIEFS.

WE now come naturally to the custom of fence and no watchman. He simply sends Tapu or Taboo, that extraordinary system which extends throughout the whole of Polynesia, modified slightly according to the locality in which it exists.

The general bearings of the law of tapu may be inferred from the sense of the word, which signifies prohibition. The system of tapu is therefore a law of prohibition, and, when stripped of the extravagances into which it often deteriorates, it is seen to be a very excellent system, and one that answers the purpose of a more elaborate code of In countries where an organized government is employed the tapu is needless, and we find that even in those parts of the earth where it was once the only restrictive law it has fallen into disuse since regular government has been introduced.

Were it not for the law of tapu, an absolute anarchy would prevail in most parts of Polynesia, the tapu being the only guardian powers are evoked.

Unprotected by the tapu, property could not exist: protected by it, the most valued and coveted articles are safer than they would be in England or America despite the elaborate legal system that secures to every man that which is his own. In New Zealand, when a man has cultivated a field of kumeras, or sweet potatoes, he needs no morals. There are, of course, many instan-

for the tohunga, who lays the tapu on the field; and from that moment no one save the owner will venture within its boundaries.

Sometimes a canoe is hauled up on the beach, and must be left there for some time unwatched. The owner need not trouble himself about securing his vessel. He has the tapu mark placed upon it, and the boat is accordingly held sacred to all except its possessor. Similarly, if a native boat-builder fixes on a tree which he thinks can be made into a canoe, he places the tapu on it, and knows that no one but himself will dare to cut it down. The mark of tapu in this case is almost invariably the removal of a strip of bark round the trunk of the tree.

Then the system of tapu is the only guardian of morals. It has been already mentioned that an extreme laxity in this respect prevails among the unmarried girls. But as soon as a girl is married she becomes tapu of property and morality. In order that it may be enforced on the people, the terrors of superstition are called into play, and, in the absence of secular law, the spiritual the pensity of the tapu if the delinquents be discovered. Nor is the tapu restricted to married women. It is also extended to young girls when they are betrothed; and any girl on whom the tapu has thus been laid is reckoned as a married woman.

ces where this system has run into extrava- which she sat was subject to this law, and

Take, for example, the very praiseworthy idea that the life of a chief is most important to his people, and that his person is therefore considered as tapu. This is a proper and wholesome idea, and is conducive to the interests of law and justice. But the development of the system becomes a tyranny. The chief himself being tapu, everything that he touched, even with the skirt of his garment, became tapu, and thenceforth belonged to him. So ingrained is this idea that on one occasion, when a great chief was wearing a large and hand-some mantle and found it too heavy for a hot day, he threw it down a precipice. His companion remonstrated with him, saving that it would have been better to have hung the mat on a bough, so that the next comer might make use of it. The chief was hor-

ror-struck at such an idea. It was hardly possible that a superior to himself should

should do so, and if an inferior were to wear

it, he would at once die. As the very contact of a chief's garment renders an object tapu, à fortiori does his blood, and one drop of the blood of a chief falling upon even such objects as are free from the ordinary laws of tapu renders them his property. A curious example of the operation of this law occurred when a meeting of chiefs was called at the Taupo lake. As the principal man of the tribes, the celebrated chief Te Heu-heu was invited, and a new and beautifully carved canoe sent to fetch him. As he stepped into it, a splinter ran into his foot, inflicting a very slight wound. Every man leaped out of the canoe, which was at once drawn up on the beach and considered as the property of Te Heu-heu. Another canoe was procured, and in it the party proceeded on their jour-

Another kind of tapu takes place with regard to any object which is connected with the death of a native. If, for example, a Maori has fallen overboard from a canoe and been drowned, the vessel can never be used again, but is tapu. Or if a man commits suicide by shooting himself, as has already been mentioned, the musket is tapu. But in these cases the articles are tapu to the atuas, and not to men. Some-times they are left to decay on the spot, no man daring to touch them, or they are broken to pieces, and the fragments stuck upright in the earth to mark the spot where the event occurred.

Sometimes this personal tapu becomes exceedingly inconvenient. The wife of an old and venerable tohunga had been ill, and was made tapu for a certain length of time,

gances, and where, instead of a protection, it has developed into a tyranny. ground, the spot on which she had sat was surrounded with a fence of small boughs stuck archwise into the earth, in order to prevent profane feet from polluting the sacred spot.

The most sacred object that a New Zealander can imagine is the head of the chief. It is so sacred that even to mention it is considered as an affront. Europeans have often given deadly offence through ignorance of this superstition, or even through inadvertence. Mr. Angas narrates a curious instance of such an adventure. A friend of his was talking to a Maori chief over his fence, and the conversation turned upon the crops of the year. Quite inadvertently he said to the chief, "Oh, I have in my garden some apples as large as that little boy's head "-pointing at the same time to the chief's son, who was standing near his father.

He saw in a moment the insult that he find the mat, and not likely that an equal had offered, and apologized, but the chief was so deeply hurt that it was with the greatest difficulty that a reconciliation was brought about. The simile was a peculiarly unfortunate one. To use the head of a chief's son as a comparison at all was bad enough, but to compare it to an article of food was about the most deadly insult that could be offered to a Maori. All food and the various processes of preparation are looked down upon with utter contempt by the free Maori, who leaves all culinary operations to the slaves or "cookies."

One of the very great chiefs of New Zealand was remarkable for his snowy white hair and beard, which gave him a most ven-erable aspect. He was held in the highest respect, and was so extremely sacred a man that his head might only be mentioned in comparison with the snow-clad top of the sacred mountain.

The same traveller to whom we are indebted for the previous anecdote relates a curious story illustrative of this etiquette. There was a certain old chief named Taonui, who was in possession of the original suit of armor which was given by George IV. to E'Hongi when he visited England. "The subsequent history of this armor is somewhat curious. It passed from the Nga Puis to Tetori and from Tetori to Te Whero-Whero at the Waikato feast, and came into Taonui's hands under the follow-

ing circumstances.
"On the death of a favorite daughter Te Where-Where made a song, the substance of which was, that he would take off the scalps of all the chiefs except Ngawaka, and fling them into his daughter's grave to avenge her untimely death. The words of this song highly insulted the various indiduring which everything that she touched became tapu. Even the very ground on especially as it was a great curse for the

hair of treated . who dar aman as demande the affro Hongi in

"I ma was old with bra possessor pede thei a sort of tives, who ordinary. A chief

that, if he gers, he r out havin and smelt virtue whi The hair of growing u operation wives, wh cut hair ground. chief's he during wh that she is all things, she would hands by would be o chief's hea the mind o hend its po When en

Zealand, an object of in Mr. Angas chief's head He was not nected with which he sk to put a dra or any such which conta thought to I

The artist the whole named Ko T sacred with only rescued heu, a super of seeing that harm. War always made stealth, and o eluding the s

Even the c considered a represents. ous instance

"In one o head chief of made by hin this law, and ose from the e had sat was small boughs i, in order to polluting the

t a New Zeal of the chief. mention it is ropeans have hrough ignoeven through ates a curious A friend of hief over his turned upon inadvertently ve in my garat little boy's e time to the ng near his

nsult that he but the chief was with the aciliation was s a peculiarly ne head of a t all was bad an article of lly insult that All food and eparation are contempt by all culinary cookiés."

of New Zeasnowy white a most venn the highest sacred a man nentioned in d top of the

n we are inote relates a nis etiquette. hief named of the origs given by n he visited story of this passed from om Tetori to ito feast, and er the follow-

daughter Te ie substance take off the gawaka, and The words of various indirected, more urse for the hair of a chief, which is sacred, to be thus treated with contempt. But the only chief who dared to resent this insult from so great pressing that he parted with it. I had to go demanded a 'taua,' or gift, as recompense for the affront, and received the armor of E' Hongi in compensation.

"I made a drawing of the armor, which was old and rusty. It was of steel, inlaid with brass, and, though never worn by the possessors in battle - for it would sadly impede their movements—it is regarded with a sort of superstitious veneration by the natives, who look upon it as something extra-

A chief's head is so exceedingly sacred that, if he should touch it with his own fingers, he may not touch anything else without having applied the hand to his nostrils and smelt it so as to restore to the head the virtue which was taken out of it by the touch. The hair of a chief is necessarily sacred, as growing upon his head. When it is cut, the operation is generally confided to one of his wives, who receives every particle of the cut hair in a cloth, and buries it in the ground. In consequence of touching the chief's head, she becomes tapu for a week, during which time her hands are so sacred that she is not allowed to use them. Above all things, she may not feed herself, because she would then be obliged to pollute her hands by touching food, and such a deed would be equivalent to putting food on the chief's head—a crime of such enormity that the mind of a Maori could scarcely comprehend its possibility.

When engaged in his explorations in New Zealand, and employed in sketching every object of interest which came in his way, Mr. Angas found this notion about the chief's head to be a very troublesome one. He was not allowed to portray anything con-nected with food with the same pencil with which he sketched the head of a chief, and to put a drawing of a potato, a dish for food, or any such object, into the same portfolio which contained the portrait of a chief, was thought to be a most fearful sacrilege.

The artist had a narrow escape of losing the whole of his sketches, which a chief named Ko Tarui wanted to burn, as mixing sacred with profane things. They were only rescued by the intervention of Te Heu-They were heu, a superstitious old savage, but capable of seeing that the white man had meant no harm. Warned by this escape, Mr. always made his drawings of tapu objestealth, and often had very great difficution eluding the suspicious natives.

Even the carver, image of a chief's head is considered as sacred as the object which it represents. Dr. Dieffenbach relates a cu ious instance of this superstition.

to his house to fetch it myself, as none of his to his notes to reten it myser, as hole of his tribe could legally touch it, and he licked it all over before he gave it to me; whether to take the tapu off, or whether to make it more strictly sacred, I do not know. He particularly engaged me not to put it into the provision bag, nor to let it see the natives at Rotu-nua, whither I was going, or he would certainly die in consequence.

"Payment for the bust he would not take; but he had no objection to my making him a present of my own free will: which I accordingly did, presenting him and his wife with a shirt each."

Once the natives were very angry because Mr. Angas went under a cooking shed having with him the portfolio containing the head of Te Heu-heu. Even his hands were tapu because they had painted the portrait of so great a chief, and he was subjected to many annoyances in consequence. Finding that the tapu was likely to become exceedingly inconvenient, he put a stop to further encroachments by saying that, if the people made any more complaints, he would put Te Heu-heu's head into the fire. This threat shocked them greatly, but had the desired effect.

Sometimes this sanctity of the chief is exceedingly inconvenient to himself. On one occasion, when Mr. Angas was visiting the chief Te Whero-Whero, he found the great man superintending the plantation of a kumera ground and the erection of a house for himself. Rain was falling fast, but the old chief sat on the damp ground, wrapped up in his blanket, and appearing to be entirely unconcerned at the weather, a piece of sail-cloth over the blanket being his only de-

He did not rise, according to the custom of the old heathen chiefs, who will sometimes sit for several days together, in a sort of semi-apathetic state. To the request that his portrait might be taken Te Whero-Where graciously acceded, and talked freely on the all important subject of land while the painter was at work. Finding the rain exceedingly unpleasant, the artist suggested that they had better move into a house. The old chief, however, knowir hat he could not enter a house withou his property by reason of contact with his sacred person, declined to move, but ordered a shelter to be erected for the white man. This was done at once, by fastening a blanket to some upright poles; and so the portrait was con-pleted, the painter under cover and the sitter out in the rain.

Localities can be rendered tapu, even those which have not been touched by the "In one of the houses of Te Puai, the head chief of all the Waikato, I saw a bust, chief Te Heu-heu, for example, was pleased the walker of the head chief of all the Waikato, I saw a bust, made by himself, with all the serpentine to declare the volcano Tongariro under the

Mr. Angas was naturally desirous of visiting this mountain, but found that such a scheme could not be carried out. He offered blankets and other articles which a New Zealander prizes; but all to no pur-pose, for the tapu could not be broken. The chief even tried to prevent his white visitors from travelling in the direction of the mountain, and only gave his consent after ordering that the sacred Tongariro should not even be looked at. So deeply is this superstition engraven in the heart of the New Zealander, that even the Christian natives are afraid of such a tapu, and will not dare to approach a spot that has thus been made sacred by a tohunga. Reasoning is useless with them; they will agree to all the propositions, admit the inference to be drawn from them, and then decline to run so terrible a risk.

One of the finest examples of native architecture was made tapu by this same chief, who seems to have had a singular pleasure in exercising his powers. It was a pah called Waitahanui, and was originally the stronghold of Te Heu-heu. It is on the borders of the lake, and the side which fronts the water is a full half-mile in length. It is made, as usual, of upright posts and stakes, and most of the larger posts are carved into the human form, with visages hideously distorted, and tongues protruded seaward, as if in defiance of expected ene-

Within this curious pah were the cannibal cook-houses which have already been fig-ured, together with several of the beautifully carved patukas or receptacles for the sacred food of the chief. Specimens of these may be seen figured on page 831. In this pah Mr. Angas found the most elaborate specimen of the patuka that he ever saw. It was fortunate that he arrived when he did, as a very few years more would evidently complete the destruction of the place. Many of the most beautiful implements of native art were already so decayed that they were but a shapeless heap of ruins, and the others, were rapidly following in the same path. Of these specimens of Maori carving and architecture nothing is now left but the sketches from which have been made the illustrations that appear in this work.

Here I may be allowed to controvert a popular and plausible fallacy, which has often been brought before the public. Travellers are blamed for bringing to England specimens of architecture and other arts from distant countries. It is said, and truly too, that such articles are out of place in England. So they are: but it must be remem-

tapu, by calling it his backbone, so that not a native would dare approach it, nor even look at it, if such an act could be avoided. by avoided. the Soane Museum, would have been broken to pieces and hopelessly destroyed if it had been allowed to remain in the spot where it was found.

Again, had not the Assyrian sculptures found a home in the British Museum, they would have been knocked to pieces by the ignorant tribes who now roam over the ruins of Nineveh the Great. Even had the vast statues defied entire destruction, the inscriptions would long ago have been defaced, and we should have irreparably lost some of the most valuable additions to our scanty knowledge of chronology.

So again with the Elgin Marbles. Undoubtedly they were more in their place in Greece than they are in England; but, if they had not been brought to England, the iconoclastic hand of the Mussulman would have utterly destroyed them, and the loss to art would have been indeed terrible.

Thus is it with regard to the specimens of savage art, no matter in what way it is developed. Taking New Zealand as an example, there is not in England a single specimen of a Maori house. It could be easily taken to pieces and put together again; it is peculiarly valuable to ethnologists on account of the extraordinary mixture which it displays of ancient Egyptian architecture and ancient Mexican art; and in a very few years there will not be a single specimen of aboriginal architecture in the whole of New Zealand. The Maories, who have abandoned the club for the rifle, the mat for the blanket, and even the blanket for the coat and trousers, have begun to modify their ancient architecture, and to build houses after the European models.

Unless, therefore, means be taken to rescue specimens of Maori architecture from destruction, it is much to be doubted whether in twenty years' time from the present date a single specimen will exist as a type of native art. So it is with the canoes. Graceful, picturesque, and adorned with the finest specimens of Maori art, the canoes were unique among vessels. At the present day the more useful but more commonplace whaleboat has superseded the canoe, and in a few years the elaborately decorated vessels of the Maories will have utterly passed away.

We may be sure that the tide of civilization is sweeping so rapidly over the world, that a very few years will see the end of savage life in all lands to which the white man can gain access. The relics of the ancient mode of life are left by the natives to perish, and, unless they are rescued, and brought to a country where they can be preserved, they will necessarily vanish from bered that if they had not been in England the face of the earth. Having this idea in they would not have been in existence. The marvellous sarcophagus, for example, to collect articles of daily use from all parts

of the w upon an among a mens, th own stor Take,

lies befor of the co the work shows the country; weapon s ageous ra the grace the weapo artist. 1 been ma stone, an labor. Se tells usageous witime. Ye worked at face over watching i Then, afte carried it foes, and once sharp ward, whe and the me the dead w battle, its p Nevermore before very weapons wi

We will 1 tapu. Usei property, it produces v example, s through the wearied, an tunely there the animal of ground v quence bec number of d

There are the country. has been trav to rest is ta fence of stithese sacred same is the c carried to his ing place of Therefore no come across easy than for slight fence.

A curious place before a assembled the went with the , and now in yed if it had spot where it

n sculptures Auseum, they pieces by the am over the Even had destruction, go have been e irreparably ble additions

onology. Iarbles. Un-England; but, to England, Mussulman them, and the deed terrible. he specimens n what way v Zealand as n England a i house. It s and put toy valuable to extraordinary incient Egyp-Mexican art; will not be a architecture club for the and even the sers, have be-

he European taken to resitecture from be doubted ne from the en will exist t is with the and adorned Maori art, the sels. At the it more comperseded the e elaborately ies will have

architecture,

le of civilizaer the world. e the end of ich the white relics of the y the natives rescued, and they can be vanish from this idea in me years ago rom all parts

of the world. The light which they throw had been made tapu for the purpose. The upon anthropology is really astonishing, and, among some eight or nine hundred specimens, there is not one that does not tell its own story.

Take, for example, the stone meral that lies before me. What a tale does it not tell of the country where it was found, and of the workman who made it! The stone shows that it was obtained from a volcanic country; the short, weighty form of the weapon shows that it was made for a courageous race who fought hand to hand; and the graceful curves and perfect balance of the weapon show that the maker was a true artist. More than that. The merai has been made by rubbing it with another stone, and must have occupied years of labor. See, then, what a tale this weapon labor. See, then, what a tale this score tells us—the volcanic region, the courageous warrior, and the worthlessness of time. Year after year the man must have worked at that meral, bending his tattooed face over it, balancing it in his hand, and watching its soft curves grow into perfection.
Then, after it was made, he has evidently carried it about with him, fought with his foes, and dashed out their brains with its once sharp and now notched edge. Afterward, when he, or may be his grandson, came to fight against the white men, their fire-arms were too terrible to be opposed, and the merai was taken from the hand of the dead warrior as he lay on the field of battle, its plaited cord still round his wrist. Nevermore will a stone merai be made, and before very long the best examples of Maori weapons will be found in English museums.

We will now return to the subject of the tapu. Useful as it may be as a guardian of property, it often exaggerates that duty, and produces very inconvenient results. For example, some travellers were passing through the country, and were hungry and wearied, and without food. Very opportunely there came in sight a fine pig; but the animal contrived to run across a piece of ground which was tapu, and in consequence became tapu itself for a certain number of days, and could not be eaten.

There are thousands of such tapu spots in the country. If, for example, a great chief has been travelling, every place where he sits to rest is tapu, and is marked by a slight fence of sticks. In many cases, each of these sacred spots has its own name. The same is the case when the body of a chief is carried to his own pah for burial, every resting place of the bearers becoming tapu. Therefore nothing was more likely than to come across one of these tapu spots, or more easy than for the pig to break through its slight fence.

A curious modification of the tapu took inferior of his property. place before and after a battle. The tohunga

men then threw off all their clothing, and went into the water, which they scooped up with their hands and threw over their heads and bodies. The priest then recited the appropriate incantation.

Thus the battle tapu was laid upon the warriors, who were thereby prohibited from undertaking any other business except that of fighting, and were supposed, moreover, to be under the protection of the gods. This tapu was most strictly regarded, and the warriors had to learn quite a long list of occupations which were forbidden to them, such as carrying a load, cutting their own hair, touching the head of a woman, and so forth.

After the fighting is over, it is necessary that the tapu should be taken off from the survivors, so that they should be enabled to return to their usual mode of life. This ceremony is rather a complicated one, and varies slightly in different parts of the country. The chief features, however, are as

Each man who had killed an enemy, or taken a slave, pulled off a lock of hair from the victim, and retained it as a trophy. They then went in a body to the tohunga, and gave him a portion of the hair. This he tied on a couple of little twigs, raised them high above his head, and recited the incantation; after which the whole body joined in the war song and dance. This being over, the warriors clapped their hands together and struck their legs, that act being supposed to take off the tapu which had been contracted by imbruing them in the blood of the enemy.

The war party then goes home, and a similar ceremony is undergone in the presence of the principal tohunga of their pah, the hands being clapped and the war dance performed. The remainder of the hair is given to the tohunga, who, after reciting his incantation, flings the tuft of hair away, and ends by another incantation, which declares that the tapu is taken away.

As a general rule, the tapu can only be taken off by the person who imposed it; but if a man imposed a tapu on anything, another who was very much his superior would not have much scruple in breaking through it. By courtesy the tapu was mostly respected by great and small alike, and, by courtesy also, the very great men often put themselves to great inconvenience by refraining from actions that would lay the tapu on the property of inferiors. Thus we have seen how a chief refused to enter a house, lest he should render it his property, and preferred to sit in the pouring rain, rather than run the risk of depriving an

assembled the warriors of his own party, and dent, the tohunga can take off the tapu and Should an object become tapu by acciwent with them to the lake or river, which restore the object to use. A curious instance

of the exercise of this power is related by a missionaries treat the tapu as a mere supertraveller. A white man, who had borrowed eaves of a house from which the rain was Now, the house happened to be tapu, and in consequence the water running from it made the pot tapu. It so happened that a woman, who was ignorant of the cir-cumstance, used the pot for cooking, and when she was told that the vessel was tapu she was greatly frightened, declaring that she would die before night. In this difficulty a tohunga came to her relief, repeated an incantation over the vessel, and made it noa," or common, again,

Sometimes the tapu only lasts for a period, and, after that time has clapsed, expires without the need of any ceremony. Thus, if a person who is tapu by sickness is touched by another, the latter is tapu for a definite time, usually three days. If a sick person dies inside a house, that house is ipso facto, tapu and may never again be used. It is painted with red ochre, as a sign of its sanctity, and is left to decay. In consequence of this superstition, when the patient seems likely to die, he is removed from the house, and taken to a spot outside the pah, where a shed is built for his reception.

It will be seen from the foregoing account how great is the power of the tapu, and how much it adds to the power of the chiefs. Indeed, without the power of tapu, a chief would be but a common man among his people — he would be liable to the tapu of of their wants, and command at will all who others, and could not impose his own. The are beneath them. In imposing a tapu, a tapu is one of the chief obstacles against the chief need only be checked by a care that spread of Christianity. Knowing that the he is countenanced by ancient precedents."

stition, the great chiefs do not choose to an iron pot for cooking, wanted some soft embrace a religion which will cause them to water, and so he placed the pot under the lose their highest privilege, and would deembrace a religion which will cause them to prive them of the one great power by which they exercise their authority.

Mr. Williams, the well-known missionary sums up the subject of the tapu in very bold and graphic language: - "It is the secret of power, and the strength of despotic rule. It affects things both great and small. Here it is seen tending a brood of chickens, and there it directs the energies of a kingdom. Its influence is variously diffused. Coasts, islands, rivers, and seas; animals, fruit, fish, and vegetables; houses, beds, pots, cups, and dishes; canoes, with all that belong to them, with their management; dress, ornaments, and arms; things to eat and things to drink the members of the body; the manners and customs; language, names, temper; and even

the gods also; all come under the influence of the tapu.

"It is put into operation by religious, political, or selfish motives; and idleness lounges for months beneath its sanction. Many are thus forbidden to raise their hands or extend their arms in any useful employment for a long time. In this district it is tapu to build canoes; on that island it is tapu to erect good houses. The custom is much in favor among chiefs, who adjust it so that it sits easily on themselves, while they use it to gain influence over those who are nearly their equals; by it they supply many

THE MOU BUR OF

> PAH AGE HOT - TI

WE now

long to fu When a dies, his f possessed semble ro The wom indulge in say ostent times the bodies and as if utter times they ing their h sorrow; as wailing er their chee Much of

sarily feig New Zeala so many o that much cut the nse incisions ir These inci if they had tattoo, and perpetual r women cut that in thei the thin bl faces, limbs them in ra tangi lines tattooing, e a mere superot choose to cause them to nd would dewer by which

n missionary u in very bold the secret of despotic rule. I small. Here chickens, and f a kingdom. sed. Coasts, als, fruit, fish, ots, cups, and long to them, s, ornaments, ngs to drink; manners and per; and even the influence

by religious, and idleness its sanction, se their hands seful employdistrict it is land it is tapu stom is much ust it so that hile they use ose who are supply many t will all who ing a tapu, a a care that precedents."

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

NEW ZEALAND - Concluded.

FUNERAL CEREMONIES AND ARCHITECTURE.

THE MOURNING OVER THE DEAD CHIEF-THE TANGI, AND THE SCARS WHICH IT LEAVES-FIRST BURIAL OF THE CHIEF-THE WAHI TAPU-THE SECOND BURIAL, OB "HAHUNGA"-REMOVAL OF THE TAPU, AND INSTALLATION OF THE SUCCESSOR - E' HONGI'S DEATHBED - A DECAYING PAH — CANOE TOMBS — MONUMENT TO E'TOKI — TOMB OF TE WHERO-WHERO'S DAUGHTER — SAV-AGE SENTIMENT -- MAORI ARCHITECTURE -- MAYERIAL, SHAPE, AND SIZE OF THE HOUSES -- A CROWDED SLEEPING FLACE — THE EAT MAN HOUSE — BANGIHAEATA'S REVENGE — PUATIA'S WAR-HOUSE AND ITS SCULPTURES - INTERIOR VIEW OF A PAH - TOOLS USED IN HOUSE-BUILDING - THE AME AND THE CHISEL - THE TORO-TOKO, OB WALKING STICK.

long to funerals.

When a chief, or indeed any Rangatira, dies, his friends and relations deck the body in the finest clothes which the deceased had possessed in his lifetime, lay it out, and assemble round it for the customary mourning. The women are the chief mourners, and indulge in the most demonstrative, not to say ostentatious, ebullitions of grief. Sometimes they squat upon the ground, their bodies and faces wrapped in their mantles, as if utterly overpowered by grief. Some-times they wave their arms in the air, shaking their hands with expressive gestures of sorrow; and all the while they utter loud wailing cries, while the tears stream down their cheeks.

Much of this extravagant sorrow is necessarily feigned, according to the custom of New Zealand life, which demands tears on so many occasions; but there is no doubt that much is real and truly felt. The women cut the selves severely with shells, making incisions in the skin several inches in length. These incisions are filled with charcoal, as if they had been part of the regular moke or he they had been part of the regular moto of tattoo, and become indelible, being, in fact, perpetual records of sorrow. Some of these women cut themselves with such severity, that in their old age they are covered with the thin blue lines of the "tangi," their faces, limbs, and bodies being traversed by them in rather a ludicrous manner. The tangi lines might be mistaken for regular tattooing, except for one point. They have

WE now come to the ceremonies that be- no pattern, and instead of being curved, as is always the case with the moko, they are straight, about two inches in length, and run parallel to each other.

They address long speeches to the dead man, enumerating his many virtues, his courage, his liberality, the strength of his tapu, and so forth, mixed with reproaches to him for dying and going away from them when they stood in such need of him. Indeed, the whole of the proceedings, with the exception of cutting the skin, are very like

exception of cutting the skin, are very like those of an Irish wake.

In the illustration No. 1, on the 872nd page, are shown these various ceremonies. The dead body of the chief is lying under the shed, wrapped in the best mantle, and with a coronal of feathers in the hair. In the front aits a chief, whose rank is denoted by h iani, or staff of office, that lies by him, and by the elaborate mantle in which he has wrapped himself. Standing which he has wrapped himself. Standing near the corpse is one of the mourners, with arms upraised and hands quivering, while others are seen sitting in various attitudes of woe. The fence of the pah is shown in the background, with its grotesque images

and curious architecture.

When the old people attend a funeral, when the old people attend a luneral, they usually paint themselves freely with red ochre, and wear wreaths of green leaves upon their heads. The house in which the death took place is rendered tapu until the body is finally disposed of—an event which does not take place for some time.

After the mourning ceremonies have been

completed, the body is placed in a sort of wanted to omit the preliminary orations and coffin and allowed to decay, the green jade meral, the tiki, the hani, and other emblems of rank being placed with the corpse. In some parts of the country this coffin is canoeshaped, and suspended to the branches of a tree, certain places being kept sacred for this purpose. There existed for example, several graves belonging to the Nga-pui tribe, which had been preserved on account of the sacred character which belonged to them. The natives had long abandoned the custom of hanging the coffins of the dead on the trees, but the sacred character still clung to them, and, though the woods in that part of the country had been felled, the sacred groves were allowed to flourish unharmed.

Sometimes the body of a very great chief was placed in a wooden receptacle in the midst of the pah, called the waki tapu, and there allowed to decay. As might be expected, a most horrible odor is disseminated through the pah during the process of decomposition; but the inhabitants do not seem to trouble themselves, their nostrils not being easily offended. For example, when a whale is thrown ashore, the stench of the huge mass of decomposition is so overpowering that an European cannot endure it. The natives, however, say that they are used to it, and do not notice it. Indeed, people who can eat the horrible messes of putrid maize of which they are so fond must be so obtuse of scent as to be indifferent to any ill odor.

Be it as it may, in time the process of decay is supposed to be complete, — seven or eight months being the usual time. A curious ceremony, called the "hahunga," then takes place. The friends and relatives then takes place. of the deceased chief are again assembled, and the bones are solemnly taken from their receptable and cleaned. The person who cleans them is necessarily tapu, but is rendered " noa," or common again, by the eldest son and daughter of the deceased chief eating of the sacred food offered to the dead. Should the eldest girl happen to be dead, the food is placed in a calabash, and laid in the now empty coffin, the spirit of the girl being called by name, and the food offered to her. The spirit is supposed to partake of the food; and the tapu is thus removed as effectually as if she were alive, and had visibly eaten the provisions. Should the chief have had no daughter, the nearest female relative takes the office. The usual orations are made in honor of the deceased and the merai, tiki, and other ornaments of the dead chief are then handed over to his eldest son, who thus takes possession of the post which his father had vacated, the ceremony being analogous to a coronation among Europeans.

When the celebrated chief E' Hongi, the "Scourge of New Zealand," as he has been called, died, his children were so afraid that they would be attacked by those whom the isaded passages. terror of his name had kept quiet, that they

"tangi," and to lay his body in the "wakitapu," or sacred place, on the day after his death. This intention was, however, overruled, chiefly in consequence of the foresight of the dying chief.

Feeling that his end was close at hand, he rallied his sons round him, sent for all his warlike stores, the merals, patus, muskets, ammunition, and, above all, the armor which he had received from George IV., and bequeathed them to his children. He was asked what "utu," or satisfaction, should be exacted for his death, but replied that the only utu which his spirit would desire was, that his tribe should be valiant, and repel any attack that might be made upon them. But for this really noble sentiment, there would have been great slaughter at his death, in order to furnish attendants for him.

That his tribe should for the future be valiant, and repel the attacks of their enemies, was the ruling idea in E' Hongi's mind; and on March 6, 1828, he died, continually repeating the words, "Kia toa! kia toa!"—i. e. "Be valiant! be valiant!"

After the ceremony of cleaning the bones over, they are taken by the principal tohunga, or priest, who generally disposes of them in some secret spot sacred to the remains of dead chiefs, and known only to himself. Sometimes, however, they are laid in beautifully carved boxes, which are supported on posts in the middle of the pah.

Sometimes the waki-tapu, or sacred place in which the body of a chief is placed while it undergoes decomposition, is marked in a very curious manner, and the entire village deserted for a time. For example, at the pah of Hurewenua, the chief had died about six weeks before Mr. Angas arrived at the place, which he found deserted. "Not far from this island pah stood the village of Huriwenua, the gaily-ornamented tomb of the late chief forming a conspicuous object in the centre. Here, although everything was in a state of perfect preservation, not a living soul was to be seen; the village, with its neat houses made of raupo, and its courtyards and provision boxes, was entirely deserted. From the moment the chief was laid beneath the upright canoe, on which were inscribed his name and rank, the whole village became strictly tapu, or sacred, and not a native, on pain of death, was permitted to trespass near the spot. The houses were all fastened up, and on most of the doors were inscriptions denoting that the property of such an one remained there.

"An utter silence pervaded the place. After ascertaining that no natives were in the vicinity of the forbidden spot, I landed, and trod the sacred ground; and my footsteps were probably the first, since the desertion of the village, that had echoed along its pal-

"On arriving at the tomb, I was struck

orations and n the "wakiday after his wever, overthe foresight

te at hand, he in for all his cus, muskets, armor which IV., and beson, should be ited that the idesire was, t, and repei upon them. Income, there is a this death, or him.

or him.

or future be
of their enE' Hongi's
ne died, conKia toa! kia
iant!"

og the bones

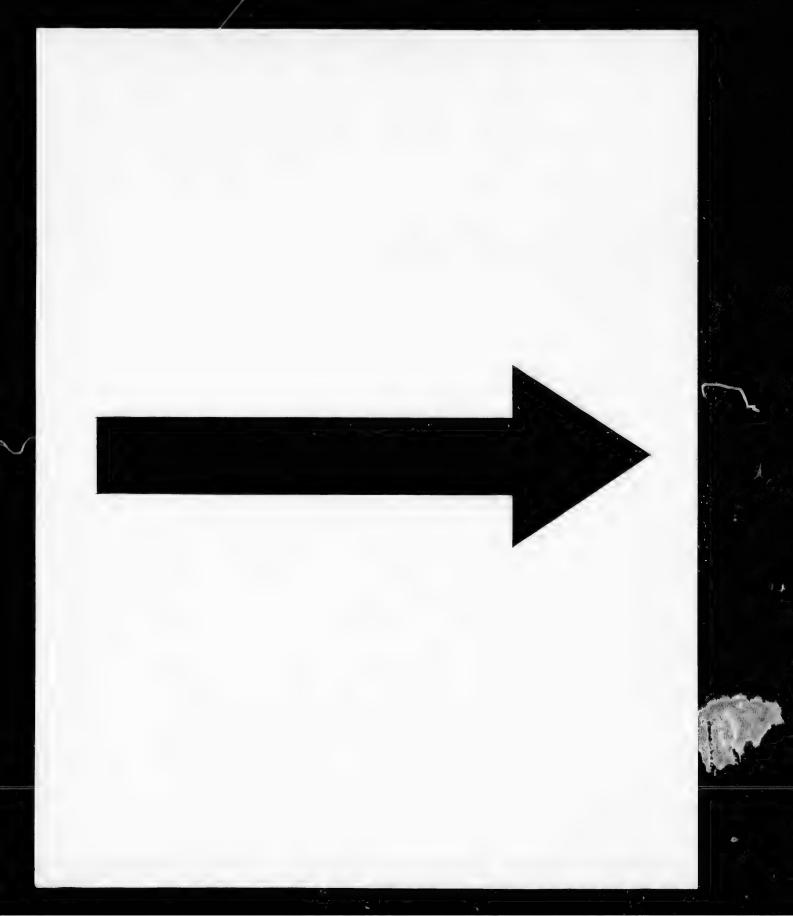
ng the bones he principal ally disposes acred to the lown only to they are laid ich are sup-'the pah. sacred place placed while marked in a

placed while marked in a ntire village mple, at the died about rived at the life. "Not far be village of ted tomb of cuous object everything vation, not a village, with nd its courtivas entirely ac chief was e, on which k, the whole sacred, and as permitted houses were

the place, ves were in bt, I landed, my footsteps are desertion long its pal-

of the doors the property

was struck



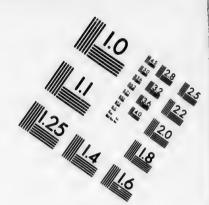
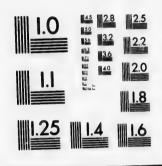


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



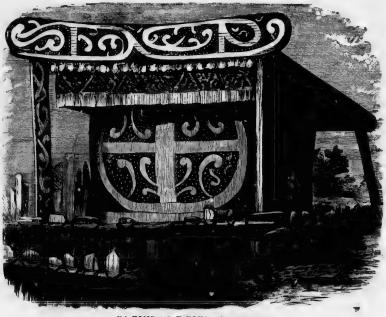
Photographic Sciences Corporation PRET

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503





(1.) MOURNING OVER A DEAD CHIEF. (See page 869.)



(2.) TOMB OF E TOKI. (See page 873.)

(872)

with th the sav In the while r feather tomb. six wee or sacr were f upright and red of the c ters, bu large m double and orn work, ex fastenin were at stuck tv whitene with the

mainder
One of
backgro
containi
another
which w
Withi

ment or beautifu was erec memory hara.

It was rebody was to was corners, round, an central the supported elaborate spiral chon it, the being redorated the lin front the beauticeased we can be a considered the lar interval.

Even we example to decay, natives n It was, of liked to geven a frewithin a cobeen a death.

I have the preced beautiful from a dr 1844, while

with the contrast between the monument of which the tomb was made were yet in the savage and that of the civilized European. tolerable preservation. Under the carved In the erection of the latter, marble and stone and the most durable of metals are employed, while rapidly decaying wood, red ochre, and feathers form the decorations of the Maori tomb. Huriwenua having been buried only six weeks, the ornaments of the waki-tapu, or sacred place, as those erections are called, were fresh and uninjured. The central upright canoe was richly painted with black and red, and at the top was written the name of the chief; above which there hung in clusters, bunches of kaka feathers, forming a large mass at the summit of the canoe. A double fence of high palings, also painted red, and ornamented with devices in arabesque and ornamented with devices in hardesque work, extended round the grave, and at every fastening of flax, where the horizontal rails were attached to the upright fencing, were stuck two feathers of the albatross, the sunny whiteness of which contrasted beautifully with the sombre black and red of the remainder of the monument."

One of these tombs may be seen in the background of illustration No. 1, on p. 860, containing the portrait of an old priest, and another is shown in the view of a village

which will be given on a future page.

Within the pah is often erected a monument or mausoleum of the dead. A very beautiful example of this kind of tomb was erected in the pah of Rangihaeta to the memory of E' Tokl, the mother of Raupa-

It was nearly semi-circular in shape, and the body was placed in it in an upright position. It was covered with a roof, squared at the corners, and projecting like a verandah all round, and sloping toward the back. The central tomb, the roof, and the posts which supported it, were all covered with the most elaborate arabesque pattern, mostly of a spiral character. Paint was liberally used on it, that on the central tomb or coffin being red and white, while that which decorated the roof and posts was red and black. In front of the projecting roof was hung the beautifully woven kaitaka mat of the deceased woman, and tufts of the white feathers of the albatross were arranged at regular intervals upon it

Even when Mr. Angas saw this beautiful example of Maori art, it was beginning to decay, the climate being damp, and the natives never repairing a decaying tomb. It was, of course, strictly tapu. No native liked to go close to it, and for a slave, or even a free man of inferior rank, to go within a certain distance of it would have

the preceding page an illustration of this beautiful monument of Maori art, taken

and decorated roof may be seen the semi-circular coffin in which the body had been placed, distinguished from the outer portion of the tomb by the red and white colors with which it was painted, in contrast to the red and black of the outer portions. The reader will notice that red is the prevalent color in all tombs, because red is the hue of mourning as well as of war among the Maories. Immediately under the eaves of the front may be seen the highly ornamented border of the kaitaka mat once worn by the deceased, and now left to decay upon her tomb.

Round the tomb itself runs a slight and low fence. This palisade, small as it might appear, afforded ample protection to the tomb, inasmuch as the whole space within it was rendered sacred by a tapu laid upon it by Raupahara, so that not even the highest chief would venture to enter the forbidden enclosure.

One of the finest specimens of carving in New Zealand - perhaps the finest in the whole country - is, or rather was, a mauwhole country—is, or rather was, a mau-soleum erected by Te Whero-Whero to his favorite daughter. It was upon the death of this daughter that Te Where-Where gave such dire offence to the other chiefs by threatening to throw their scalps into his daughter's grave, for which offence he had to give up the celebrated armor of E' Hongi by way of fine.

The monument was erected in Raroera, formerly one of the largest and finest pals in New Zenland, but rendered desolate by the act of the headstrong and determined chief. He had this wonderful tomb built for his daughter, and, as soon as her body was placed within it, he pronounced the whole pah to be tapu. It was at once deserted: old and young quitted the place, leaving everything behind them, the provisions to moulder and the weapons to decay. Solid houses that had occupied many years in building and carving were allowed to fall into mere shapeless heaps of ruins; and even in 1844 the rank vegetation had so completely overrun the place that many of the best pieces of native work were covered by the foliage.

The tomb is about twelve feet high, and consists of the usual box for the reception of the body, covered by a projecting roof, which is supported by pillars. Were it as graceful in form as the monument to E' Toki, this would be by far the finest specwithin a certain distance of it would have imen of native art; but unfortunately it been a crime punishable with instant does not possess the bold outline and contrast of the curve and the straight line which are so characteristic of E Toki's tomb.

The elaboration of the carving on this from a drawing made by Mr. Angas in monument is so great that it almost baffles 1844, while the perishable materials of the skill of the draughtsman. Mr. Angas succeeded in copying it, and when the imagine. The savage, finding that the drawing was shown to the artist who had white man yields to him on this point, is executed the work he was astounded, and only too glad to find any vantage ground, pronounced the white man to be a great tohunga. The roof is supported by pillars, each pillar consisting of two human figures, the upper standing on the head of the lower. The upper figure is about seven feet in height, and has a gigantic head, with an enormous protruding tongue that reaches

to the breast

The whole of the tomb is covered with human heads. Exclusive of those upon the posts, the front alone of the tomb contains fourteen faces, each differing from the other in expression and pattern of the moko, but all wearing the same defiant air. enormous eyes are made peculiarly conspicuous by being carved out of haliotis shell, carrying out on a large scale the plan adopted in the chiefs' hanis and other sculp-tures. The whole of the space between the figures is covered with the most elaborate arabesques, intertwining with each other in a bewildering manner, but each running its own boldly curved course. Between the various pieces that compose this tomb are set bunches and tufts of white and green feathers, which serve to adorn as well as disguise the necessary seams of the woodwork.

This wonderful monument was entirely carved by one man, named Paranui. He was lame, and in consequence had expended his energies in art, in which he had so greatly distinguished himself that he took rank as a tohunga. He was equally celebrated as a tattooer; and it may well be imagined that a man who could design so extraordinary a piece of workmanship must be skilful in inventing the endless variety of patterns needful in the decoration of chief's faces. In performing this work, Paranui had but one tool, the head of an old bayo-

The loss of such specimens of native art as those which have been described carries out my former remarks on the necessity for removing to our own country every memorial of savage life that we can secure. We inflict no real injury upon the savages, and we secure an invaluable relic of vanishing customs. These monuments, for example, were simply carved and then left to decay. Had they been removed to this country, where they would have been guarded from the power of the elements and the encroachments of vegetation, we should have seen them in complete preservation at the present day, and likely to last as long as the building which contained them.

Of course the sentimental argument may be pleaded against this view of the case; but in matters which are of vital importance in the grand study of anthropology insult to himself.

In spite of his sentiment, I think that the Neither has it such place as some often Maori might have been induced to sell such

and always presses on as fast as the other yields — just as has been done in India with the question of caste. We cannot measure their mental sensibilities any more than their physical by our own. A savage endures with stoicism tortures which would kill an European, simply because he does not feel them as much. And the mental and physical sensibilities are very much on

a par.

The Maori is perhaps the finest savage race on the face of the earth, and yet we cannot think that he is exactly an estimable being, whose ambition is murder, and whose reward is to eat the body of his victim, who never does a stroke of work that he can avoid, and who leads a life of dissipation as far as his capabilities go. Of all savage nations, the New Zealander displays most sorrow for the loss of a friend or relation. Tears flow profusely from his eyes, and every tone of his voice and every gesture of his body convey the impression that he is borne down by unendurable woe. Yet we have seen that this effusion of sorrow is mostly premeditated, and merely a conventional mode of acting required by the eti-

quette of the country.

When two people can be bathed in tears, speak only in sobbing accents, utter heartrending cries, and sink to the ground as overwhelmed by grief, we cannot but compassionate their sorrow and admire their sensibility. But if, in the middle of all these touching demonstrations of grief, we see them suddenly cease from their sobs and cries, enter into a little lively conversa-tion, enjoy a hearty laugh, and then betake themselves afresh to their tears and sobs, we may take the liberty of doubting their sin-

cerity.

So with those beautiful houses and monuments that are left to perish by neglect. The builder did in all probability feel very keenly at the time, though the feeling of grief seems sometimes to take a curious turn, and be metamorphosed into vengeance and an excuse for war; but it is very much to be doubted whether grief for the departed is a feeling that is really permanent in the savage mind. The Maori chief may lay his tapu on an entire village when a relative dies, and if, after the lapse of years, any one be rash enough to invade the forbidden precincts, he will visit the offence with instant punishment. But it must be remembered that the infringement of the tapu in question is not an insult to the dead but to the living, and that when the chief punishes the offender, he does not avenge an affront offered to his dead relative, but a direct

specimens yield to s respected captured a conquest, buy. Or o unadvisabl difficult to execute a price whic

Such ser with the 1 savage at a case of sav ment to th believe the that the c savage life. thankful for this himsel ority. H3 but always

To return mer times and even in survive are that may h Mexico, tha transfer to Angas' sket

Ir will be vious illustra must posses The observa that the art wanting in be the case that architec oped among The New 2 much in com able for the s in architectus fore be devot

As is the general, the r is wood, and house is com by nails, but in many case rate and artis ied not only i in the carved adorned, but with which th however, this tecture is carr than in New 2 tails for the de

The size of great. For converts built ship large en persons, and length by fort ing that the this point, is ntage ground, t as the other in India with nnot measure y more than A savage enwhich would cause he does id the mental very much on

finest savage n, and yet we y an estimable der, and whose is victim, who dissipation as Of all savage displays most d or relation. nis eyes, and every gesture ession that he ole woe. Yet n of sorrow is ely a convened by the eti-

thed in tears, s, utter hearthe ground as admire their middle of all s of grief, we m their sobs vely conversad then betake s and sobs, we ing their sin-

es and monuh by neglect. ility feel very he feeling of ke a curious ato vengeance is very much the departed nanent in the of may lay his en a relative rears, any one orbidden prewith instant remembered tapu in quesead but to the punishes the e an affront but a direct

think that the d to sell such

specimens of art, and even if he refused to | this edifice was evidently determined by the yield to such a proposition, he would have length of the ridge-pole. respected us none the less if, when we had respected us none the less n, when we had captured a pah, we exercised the right of conquest, and took that which we could not buy. Or even supposing that the first idea had proved impracticable, and the second unadvisable, it would not have been very difficult to have induced a native artist to execute a duplicate which he could sell for a price which would enrich him for life.

Such sentiments are, I know, unpopular with the mass of those who only see the savage at a distance, which certainly, in the case of savage life, lends the only enchantment to the view that it can possess. But I believe them to be just and true, and know that the closer is our acquaintance with savage life, the more reason we have to be thankful for civilization. The savage knows this himself, and bitterly feels his inferi-ority. He hates and fears the white man, but always ends by trying to imitate him.

To return to these monuments. In former times they existed in great numbers, and even in more recent days those which survive are so characteristic of a style of art that may have taken its rise from ancient Mexico, that I should have been glad to transfer to these pages several more of Mr. Angas' sketches.

Ir will be seen from several of the previous illustrations that the New Zealanders must possess much skill in architecture. The observant reader must have remarked that the art of house-building is practically wanting in Australia; and that such should be the case is most extraordinary, seeing that architectural skill is singularly developed among the great Polynesian families. The New Zealander, whose country has much in common with Australia, is remarkable for the skill and taste which he displays in architecture; and a short space will therefore be devoted to this subject.

As is the case throughout Polynesia in general, the material used in house-building is wood, and the various pieces of which a house is composed are fastened together not by nails, but by ropes and strings, which in many cases are applied in a most elaborate and artistic manner, beauty being studled not only in the forms of the houses and in the carved patterns with which they are adorned, but in the complicated lashings with which they are bound together. As, however, this branch of ornamental architecture is carried to a greater extent in Fiji than in New Zealand, I shall reserve the details for the description of the Fiji Islands.

The size of some of these edifices is very great. For example, in 1843 the Maori converts built for themselves a place of worlength of the ridge-pole. This was cut from a single tree, and was dragged by the natives a distance of three miles. The cross-lashings of the building were all ornamental, giving to it a peculiar richness of finish.

We are, however, chiefly concerned with the domestic architecture of the Maories. Within each pah or enclosed village are a number of houses, each representing a family, and separated from each other by fences, several houses generally standing near each other in one enclosure. A fulltwenty wide, and is built on precisely the same principle as the tombs which have been just described, the actual house taking the position of the coffin, and being shel-tered from the weather by a gable roof, which extends far beyond the walls, so as to form a sort of verandah. The roof is supported on separate posts, and does not, as with ourselves, rest upon the walls of the house. The roof always projects greatly at the principal end of the house, in which the door is situated, so that it forms a sort of shed, under which the members of the family can shelter themselves from the sun or rain without going into the house. A genuine New Zealander has a great love for fresh air, and, as we have seen, will composedly sit for a whole day on the wet ground in a pouring rain, although a house may be within easy reach. Yet at night, when he retires to rest, he is equally fond of shutting himself up, and of excluding every breath of fresh air.

Indeed, the native does not look upon a house as a place wherein to live, but merely as a convenient shelter from the elements by day and a comfortable sleeping-place by night. As soon as evening is near, a fire is lighted in the middle of the house, which fills it with smoke, as there is no chimney. The New Zealander, however, seems to be smoke-proof, and sits composedly in a place which would drive an European half mad with smarting eyes. Indeed, before the natives become inured to the acrid vapor, their eyes have much to endure, and it is to the habit of sitting in the smoke that the bleared look so prevalent in old people is chiefly due.

Not only do the natives thus surround themselves with a smoky atmosphere, but they limit its quantity as well as its quality. The number of men and women that will pack themselves into one house at night is almost incredible, each person lying down on a simple mat, and retaining the same clothes that have been worn during the day. As, however, the heat becomes excessive, converts built for themselves a place of wor-ship large enough to contain a thousand persons, and measuring eighty-six feet in length by forty-two in width. The size of

amusing sight to see a hut give up its inmates on the morning of a cold day, the whole party being enveloped in steam as they come into the cold air.

At the principal end of the house, under the verandah, is the entrance. This strangely resembles the gate of an Egyptian temple, being made of three large beams, the two side posts slightly inclining to each other, and the third laid upon them. The aperture is closed by a sliding door, and at the side of the door is generally a square window, which can be closed in the same manner. In some large houses there were two of these windows, one on either side of the door.

As the roof is made with a considerable slant, the walls are seldom more than two or three feet high where the roof touches them, though in the middle the house is lofty enough. The roof is supported on the inside by one or two posts, which are always carved elaborately, and almost invariably have the human figure as one of the ornaments upon them. The ridge-pole is flattened and boardlike, and in good houses is carved and painted in patterns, usually of the spiral character. This board, as well as those which are used in different parts of the building, is made by hacking the trunk of a tree on both sides, until it is reduced to the required thickness, the native Maories having no tool which can answer the purpose of a saw.

At the end of the ridge-pole, over the door, is carved a distorted human figure, intended to represent the owner of the house, and recognized as such by the lines of the moko or tattoo on its face, and generally having the tongue thrust out to an inordinate

extent

An illustration on page 877 represents the most celebrated of all Maori houses, namely, the war house of the ruthless chief Rangihaeta, an edifice which fully expresses the ferocious character of the builder. These houses are designed by chiefs in honor of some great victory, and are surrounded with wooden figures, which either represent in derision the leading warriors of the en-emy who have been killed, or the victorious chief and his own warriors in the act of delying and insulting the enemy by thrusting out their tongues at them. This house bears the ominous name of Kai-tangata, or Eat-

The illustration is taken from a sketch made by Mr. Angas, who describes the building as follows: "Kai-tangata, or Eat-man House, is a wooden edifice in the primitive Maori style, of large dimensions, with the door-posts and the boards forming the portico curiously and elaborately carved in grotesque shapes, representing human figures, frequently in the most indecent attitudes.

The tongues of all these figures are monstrously large, and protrude out of the mouth, as a mark of defiance toward their enemies who may approach the house. The whole of the carved work, as well as the wooden parts of the building, are colored red with kokowai, an ochre found principally on the side of the volcano of Taran-

aki.
"The portico or verandah of Rangihaeta's house is about twelve feet deep, and the ridge-pole and frame boards of the roof are richly painted in spiral arabesques of black and red; the margin of each spiral being dotted with white spots, which add richness to the effect. The spaces between the woodwork are filled up with variegated reeds, beautifully arranged with great skill, and fastened together with strips of flax dyed red, and tied crosswise, so as to present the appearance of ornamental basket-

"Above the centre of the gable-roofed portico is fixed a large wooden head, elaborately tattooed, with hair and a beard fastened on, composed of dogs' tails. Within the house is a carved image of most hideous aspect, that supports the ridge-pole of the roof. This is intended to represent the proprietor, and is said by the natives to be entirely the work of Rangihaeta's own hand."

This figure, together with the pole that issues from the head, may be seen in illustration No. 1, on page 809, which represents the interior of the house. On account of the circumstance recorded in the beginning of this description, the artist has been unable to draw a vast number of carvings which decorated this house, so that much of the extraordinary elaboration is necessarily

omitted.

Rangihaeta displayed his merciless dis-position in one of the unfortunate skirmishes which often took place between the Maories and the English, and which have afterward been equally regretted by both parties, the white men having generally of fered an unintentional insult to the na-tives, and the latter having resented it in the heat of passion. On this occasion, a number of the white men had been captured by the Maories under the two chiefs Rangihaeta and Raupahara, who were related to each other by marriage, the former having married a daughter of the latter. Some time previously, this woman had been accidentally killed by a chance shot, which, as a matter of course, her relations insisted on considering as intentional.

While the prisoners and their capturers were standing together, another chief named Puatia tried to make peace, saying that the slain on both sides were about equal. His proposition was accepted, the lately oppos-The eyes are inlaid with pawa shell, and ing parties shook hands, and all would have the tattooing of the faces is carefully cut. gone well had they not been joined by ures are mone out of the toward their the house, ork, as well as idding, are colare found princano of Taran-

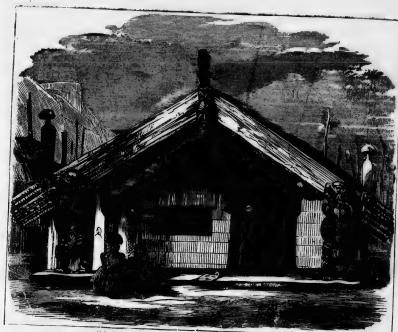
of Rangihaeta's deep, and the of the roof are seques of black h spiral being nich add richis between the ith variegated ith great skill, strips of flax, so as to premental basket-

e gable-roofed en head, elaboid a beard fastails. Within if most hideous ge-pole of the represent the e natives to be gibaeta's own

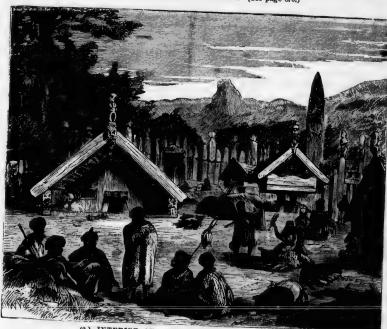
the pole that e seen in illuswhich repree. On account l in the beginartist has been er of carvings to that much of is necessarily

merciless disfortunate skirce between the and which have etted by both generally ofatt to the naresented it in casion, a numen captured by chiefs Rangivere related to former having en accidentally as a matter of on considering

heir capturers er chief named aying that the ut equal. His a lately opposall would have en joined by



(1.) RANGIHAETA'S WAR HOUSE. (See page 876.)



(2.) INTERIOR OF A PAH OR VILLAGE. (See page 879.)
(877)

Rangihae self in th wounded. lives of the refused t haeta tole The bere plied rep to collect round the the captiv ries, and merai. T the botton

Houses merly con the ancien as celebra described of Otawha the captur Since Puat pah was re the buildin decay. Massecure a sk the rest of entirely de The hou

neatly mad rives great figures wit posts are de verandah s which are i who fell in the victorio

enemy. The figure represents a cipal warrio the height of sent two oth too, doing d Still higher senting war ing to stand the upper p Pokana, a w time when is represent Around the figures, each individual, a is perfectly v It was in t

the disused The former to Christian he lay sick westablished for Christianity, round him f prayers. It has been

Rangihaeta, who had been employing himself in the congenial task of killing all the wounded. He immediately demanded the lives of the prisoners, and when Raupahara refused to accede to his demand, Rangihaeta told him to remember his daughter. The bereaved chief was silent at this implied represely and before he had time. plied reproach, and, before he had time to collect his thoughts, Rangihaeta glided round the party, getting behind each of the captives as they stood among the Maories, and killed them successively with his marrie. merai. The ubiquitous land question was at the bottom of this sad business.

Houses like the Kai-tangata were for-merly common, answering the purpose of the ancient trophies. A war house nearly as celebrated as that which has just been described was erected by Puatia, the chief of Otawhao Pah, in order to commemorate the capture of Maketu on the east coast. Since Puatia died, the whole of this splendid pah was rendered tapu, and, in consequence, the buildings within it were given up to decay. Mr. Angas was fortunate enough to secure a sketch of the war house before, like the rest of the buildings in the pah, it had entirely decayed.

The house itself is perhaps scarcely so neatly made as the Kai-tangata, but it deposts are decorated. On either side of the verandah stand two huge wooden figures, which are intended to represent two chiefs who fell in battle, but who, as belonging to

The figure that supports the central pole represents a chief who was one of the principal warriors at the capture of Maketu. At the height of six and ten feet respectively, on the same pole, are carvings which represent two other warriors, their moke, or tattoo, doing duty for the whole of the person. still higher are a couple of figures representing warriors, the upper figure appearing to stand on the roof itself. Just within the upper part of the gable is the figure of Pokana, a warrior who was living at the time when the house was built, and who is represented with a pipe in his mouth. Around the house are numbers of similar figures, each representing some well-known individual, and baving a signification which is perfectly well understood by the natives.

It was in this ruined pah of Otawhao that the disused wooden war-bell was found. The former owner, Puatia, was converted to Christianity before his death, and, while he lay sick within his pah, he had a school characteristics within the part, he had a senior established for the purpose of disseminating Christianity, and used to call his people round him for the morning and evening prayers.

purpose, and no one with any claims to rank ever enters within them. Were no shelter but a cooking shed to be found within miles, the Maori chief would not enter it, no matter how severe the weather might be.

The cooking sheds are built very simply the sides or walls being purposely made with considerable interstices, so that the wind may pass freely between them. They are roofed with beams, over which is placed a thatch of the raupo rush. As, among other articles of diet, the putrid maize is prepared in these sheds, the European traveller is often glad to find that the abominable mess will be cooked at a distance from him.

Some of the larger pahs contain a great number of houses, and several of them are inhabited by at least two thousand people. Civilization has at the present day exercised great influence upon the pahs, and reduced them, as a rule, to fortresses rather than villages. In many districts the use of the neatly made as the Kai-tangata, but it derives great interest from the number of figures with which the beams, rafters, and themselves to the cultivation of the ground and living in scattered houses, without caring for the protection of the fence.

The illustration No. 2, on page 877, is taken from a sketch by Mr. Angas, reprethe victorious side, are represented with their tongues defiantly menacing the beaten in 1844. One or two of the houses are seen scattered about, adorned with the grotesque figures of which the Maori is so fond, and having several of the inmates sitting under the shelter of the deep verandah. Rather in the background are one or two of the ingenious and beautifully carved storehouses, in which food is protected from the rats, and on one side is a great wooden tiki projecting from the ground. Just behind the large storehouse is seen the curious monument that marks the waki-tapu, or sacred burial-place of a chief, a half canoe being planted in the ground and painted with elaborate patterns in red, the color for mourning and war among the New Zealanders.

Groups of the natives may be seen scattered about, conspicuous among whom is the council that is sitting in the foreground, under the presidency of the seated chief, whose hani, or staff of office, marks his dignity. A slave woman is seen working at her task of beating the flax leaves; and wandering promiscuously about the pah, or lying comfortably asleep, are the pigs, with which every village swarms.

WE now come to the tools with which ayers.

It has been mentioned that, owing to the Maori performs all this wonderful amount of carpentering and carving.

Looking at the results, we might naturally the reader may see from the illustration ney that the dusky architect possessed a lit is ornamented with six complete human coolly array of tools; but, in fact, his tools figures, and a human face on the knob of fancy that the dusky architect possessed a goodly array of tools; but, in fact, his tools are as few and simple as his weapons, and may be practically considered as two, the adze and the chisel. On the next page an example of each is drawn, the artist having taken care to select the best and most valuable specimens; the blades being formed from the precious green jade, and the handies carved elaborately, so as to be worthy of the valuable material from which the blades are shaped.

As may be imagined, these tools cannot have very sharp edges given to them, as the brittleness of the stone would cause it to chip into an edge like that of a bad saw, and in consequence the worst iron axe is a far better tool than the best specimen of green stonework that a Maori ever made.

At No. 3 may be seen one of the common "tokis," or stone axes, that were formerly so much used in building canoes. The specimen from which it is drawn is in my collection, and I have selected it for illustration because it gives so excellent an idea of the structure of the tool, and the mode of fastening the blade to the handle. This is achieved in a very ingenious manner, and although it scarcely seems possible to secure the requisite firmness by a mere lashing of string, the Maori workman has contrived to attach the blade as firmly as if it had been socketed.

This mode of fastening the blade to the handle prevails over the greater part of the Polynesian group, and, although the elaboration of the lashings varies considerably, the principle is exactly the same throughout. The same plan prevails even in Borneo, and there is in my collection a boat-builder's adze, the iron blade of which is lashed to the socket in precisely the same manner, the only difference being that split rattan is employed instead of string. The reader will notice the peculiar shape of the adze-edge, which is exactly that of the incisor tooth of any rodent animal. Whether the maker intentionally copied the tooth is doubtful, but that he has done so is evident.

Tools such as these are necessarily imperfect; yet with these the Maories patiently executed the elaborate and really artistic designs which they once lavished on their dwellings, their canoes, their weapons, and their tools. They could not even make a walking stick but they must needs cover it with carvings. There is in my collection, and illustrated at fig. 4, a remarkably fine example of such a walking stick, called in the Maori tongue "toko-toko," which was presented to me by Stiverd Vores, Esq. As pology.

the handle. The portions of the stick that come between the figures are completely covered with carving, and the only plain surface is that which is intended to be grasped by the hand.

The six figures are in three pairs, set back to back, and those of each pair exactly resemble one another. A distinct grada-tion is observed in them, the uppermost pair having their faces most elaborately tattooed, the middle pair being less ornamented, and the lowermost pair having a comparatively simple tattoo. In the posi-tion of the heads there is also a distinction, which I believe to have some signification known to the carver. The upper pair have the left hand laid on the breast, and the right hand pressed to the lips; the middle pair have the left hand still on the breast, and the right fingers touching the throat; while the lower figures have both hands clasped on the breast.

All the figures are separated, except at the backs of the heads, the hips, and the heels, where they touch each other; so that the labor expended on this stick has been very great.

WE now take farewell of this interesting race—a race which is fast waning away, and will soon perish altogether. No New Zealander will ever sit on the broken arches of London Bridge, and contemplate the ruins of St. Paul's. The Maori is fast disappearing, and in a comparatively few years it is certain that not a Maori of pure blood will be found in the islands; and before a century has elapsed, even the characteristic tattoo will be a remembrance of the past, of which the only memorials will be the dried heads that have been preserved in European museums. It is pitiful that such a race should be passing away; but its decadence cannot be arrested, and in a short time the Maories will be as completely extinct as the people of the stone age, leaving nothing but their manufactures as memorials of their existence. Such memorials, therefore, ought to be sedulously preserved. Every piece of genuine native carving that can be found in New Zealand ought to be secured and brought to England, where it can be preserved for future ages, and, with the isolated specimens that are scattered in private houses throughout the country, ought to be gathered together in some central museum, where they can be accessible to all who interest them-selves in the grand science of anthro-

he illustration mplete human n the knob of the stick that are completely he only plain atended to be

ree pairs, set
ch pair exactly
listinct gradathe uppermost
set elaborately
ing less ornapair having a
In the posio a distinction,
e signification
pier pair have
reast, and the
bos; the middle
on the breast,
ig the throat;
e both hands

ted, except at hips, and the other; so that tick has been

is interesting waning away, er. No New broken arches plate the ruins and disappearate wyears it is ure blood will before a cencharacteristrance of the orials will be en preserved a pitiful that ag away; but ested, and in all be as comfort the stone manufactures be sedulously enuine native New Zealand aght to Engreed for future eccimens that a throughout

ered together ere they can terest themof anthro-



POSITION A THE DRINI ISLE (East of A known by of no very a people w a people w pages.

The new color, and bear some Tasmania, ing, and we probably or regular su obtain. The one man we more than however, we scarcely any a single lea at the most the purpose woman work.

women wear passes seven Their hai Their hai distance ma long-haired of making an length, out of Some of the they fall to the head is swide meshes sort of a hat. decorated wie ach side, a I a long droc

WEAF

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

NEW CALEDONIA.

TOSITION AND DIMENSIONS OF NEW CALEDONIA -- APPEARANCE AND DRESS OF THE NATIVES -- THE DANCING MASK -- NATIVE ARCHITECTURE -- SMOKE AND MOSQUITOES -- WARFARE -- CURIOUS WEAPONS - THE SLING AND THE SPEAR - MODE OF THROWING THE SPEAR - THE OUNEP, OB "AMENTUM" OF THE ANCIENTS - SHAPE OF THE CLUB - OBJECTS OF WAB - CANNIBALISM -THE RNIPE AND FORK -- DIET AND COOKERY IN GENERAL -- THE NOUGUI SPIDER -- MODE OF DRINKING - CHARACTER OF THE NEW CALEDONIANS - AN INGENIOUS THEFT - THE KATA - THE ISLE OF PINES, AND ITS INHABITANTS.

East of Australia is a tolerably large island known by the name of New Caledonia. It is of no very great extent, but is inhabited by a people who deserve a short notice in these

pages.
The new Caledonians are nearly black in color, and in general form and appearance bear some resemblance to the aborigines of Tasmania. They are, however, better looking, and wear altogether a less savage aspect, probably on account of the comparatively regular supplies of food which they can obtain. They are of ordinary stature, but one man was seen who measured rather more than six feet in height. His form, however, was ill proportioned. They wear scarcely any dress, the men having generally a single leaf hanging from their girdles, or at the most a strip of soft bark answering the purpose of drawers, while the adult women wear a narrow fringed girdle, which passes several times round the waist.

Their hair is woolly and short, but at a distance many of them would be taken for long-haired people, in consequence of a habit of making artificial tresses some two feet in length, out of grass and the hair of a bat. Some of these appendages are so long that they fall to the middle of the back. Round the head is sometimes tied a small net with wide meshes, and the chiefs wear an odd sort of a hat. These hats are cylindrical, and decorated with a large circular ornament at each side, a plume of feathers at the top, and

that hangs down the back. The hat forms no protection to the head, having no crown to it, and is only used as a mark of rank.

The natives also make a sort of mask, very ingeniously cut out of wood, having the mouth open and the eyes closed. The wearer looks, not through the eyes, but through some apertures which are made in the upper part of the mask. It is supposed that these masks are employed in war, when the combatants desire to disguise themselves from their opponents. This however, is only a conjecture. I have little doubt that the wooden mask described and figured by D'Entrecasteaux is nothing more than an ornament used in the native dances. It is, in fact, the "momo," which is described by more recent travellers. When complete, the "momo" is decorated with plumes of feathers, long tufts of hair, and a thick, coarse network, which does duty for a beard, and descends as far as the knees of the wearer.

A mask made in a precisely similar manner is used by the natives of Vancouver's Island, but is employed by them in their dances, One of these masks is in my collection, and will be described in the course of the work.

Ear ornaments of various kinds are in favor among the New Caledonians, and some of the natives enlarge the hole in the lobe to such an extent that it forms a long loop, the end of which falls on the shoulders. casionally, they try the elasticity of the ear too much, and tear it completely through. a long drooping tuft of grass and hair Anything seems to be worn in the ears, and

when a New Caledonian cannot find a suit-able ornament, he fills up the ear with a leaf native name for this shelf is "paite." able ornament, he fills up the ear with a leaf or a roll of bark. They do not tattoo themselves, but draw black lines across the breast with charcoal, the lines being broad, and traced diagonall across the breast. Neck-laces of various kinds are worn, and these ornaments bear a certain resemblance to those of New Guinea, consisting principally of a twisted string, to which is suspended a shell or piece of bone, carved in a manner which the natives are pleased to consider as ornamental.

Although by nature the men possess thick and stiff beards, these hirsute ornaments are generally removed, the hair being pulled up by the roots by means of a pair of shells used

in lieu of tweezers.

Architecture among the New Caledonians is infinitely superior to that of Australia, and in some respects almost equals that of New Zealand. The houses are conical in shape, and often reach from ten to eleven feet in

height in the middle.

The principle on which the huts are built is perfectly simple. The native architect begins by digging a hole in the ground, and planting in it a stout pole, some fifteen feet in length, and nine or ten inches in circumrafters are set in the ground around the standard or central pole, their bases being planted in the earth and their tips leaning against the standard. Smaller branches are interwoven among the rafters, and the whole is rendered weather-tight by dried herbage lashed to the walls.

These simple walls are often several inches in thickness; and as the natives spread thick mats on the floor, they are well sheltered

from the weather.

The entrance is very small, never above three feet in height, and on occasions can be closed with a rude door made of palm branches. Some of the latter kind of huts have regular door-posts, on which are carved rude imitations of the human face. A fire is almost always kept burning inside the hut, not so much for the sake of warmth or for culinary purposes, as to form a defence it against mosquitoes. Smoke, therefore, is encouraged; and, though it may be the lesser of two evils, it forms a great drawback to the comfort of Europeans, who can defy the mosquitoes by their clothes, and can protect themselves at night by means of curtains. The central post of the house is mostly decorated with shells, and carved at the top into the shape of a human being.

Each house is usually surrounded with a fence some four or five feet in height, and within the hut there is a curious piece of furniture which gives to the rude habitation quite a civilized look. This is a wooden shelf, suspended by cords exactly like our hanging bookshelves. It is hung about four feet from

WE will now proceed from domestic to military life, and devote a small space to warfare among the New Caledonians.

It is very remarkable that among these naked and peculiarly savage cann'bals we should find two of the weapons of war which were in greatest favor among the civilized Romans of the classic times. These are the sling and the javelin, the latter being cast by a peculiar arrangement of a thong, so that, in point of fact, the New C ledonian warrior does not only sling the stone, but the spear

We will take these weapons in order, the sling coming first, as being the simpler of

the two weapons.

The construction of the sling or "wendat," as the natives call it, is very simple, the weapon being merely a doubled thong with a pouch in the middle, in which the stone is placed. This pouch is made of two small cords laid side by side, and as the smooth stone might slip out of it, the slinger always wets the missile in his mouth before placing it in the pouch. The stones are cut out of a hard kind of steatite, which can take a good polish. They are oval in shape, and are carefully ground down by friction, the surface becoming very smooth in the process.

Thirty or forty of these stones are kept in a small net, which is fastened to the left side of the slinger. In illustration No. 1, on page 893, one of the warriors is seen with his sling in his hand, and the net filled with stones fastened to his side. When the slinger wishes to hurl a stone, he does not waste time and strength by whirling the sling round and round, but merely gives it one half turn in the air, and discharges the missile with exceeding force and wonderful accuracy of aim. In consequence of only giving one half turn to the sling, the stones can be hurled nearly as fast as they can be thrown by the hand, and the weapon is therefore an exceedingly formidable one in the open field when fire-arms are not opposed to

We now come to the spear, or rather

javelin.

This weapon is of very great length, some specimens measuring fourteen or fifteen feet from butt to point; and unless the warrior were able to supplement the natural strength of his arm by artificial means, he would not be able to throw the spear more than a few yards. He has therefore invented an instrument by which he can hurl this long and unwieldly weapon to a considerable distance. The principle on which this instrument is formed is identical with that of the Australian throw-stick, but there is a difference in the application. The Australian throw-stick is straight, rigid, and is applied to the the ground, but as the cords are very slight, butt of the spear, whereas the implement

used by elastic, a

the midd This ir is nothin made of fish-skin. is furnish the other tic cord When th he slips t right han ness for comes for balances to find the of the tho drawing i

As long the thong and as soo gives way The warri his forefin the spear. loosens th the spear

The cla

member th cisely the is actually manipulati loop of cor of the ja When the he grasped fingers in t tional leve weapon to example, O

"Inscrit a In juven

in English. the amenti whirled the tators have this passage rather unce word "ame they could: "torsit," i. the term, th ing moveme same word acres arcus, writer also a

Amentum Et totis ja

i. e. "Stretcl fingers, and strength."

weight. The paite."

om domestic to small space to edonians.

t among these
c cann'bals we
ns of war which
g the civilized
These are the
er being cast by
hong, so that, in
donian warrior
e, but the spear

s in order, the the simpler of

g or "wendat,"
ry simple, the
ied thong with
ich the stone is
of two small
as the smooth
slinger always
before placing
are cut out of a
an take a good
hape, and are
iction, the suriction, the surict he process.
nes are kept in
to the left side
No. 1, on page

No. 1, on page seen with his let filled with h. When the e, he does not whirling the errely gives it lischarges the and wonderful dence of only ing, the stones us they can be apon is therele one in the oto opposed to

ar, or rather

t length, some or fifteen feet s the warrior tural strength he would not tre than a few ted an instrusion and unstruent list of the Austra-difference in alian throw-upplied to the

e implement

used by the New Caledonian is flexible, elastic, and applied to a spot a little behind the middle of the spear.

This instrument is ingeniously simple. It is nothing more than a plaited cord or thong made of a mixture of cocoa-nut fibre and fish-skin. It is a foot or more in length, and is furnished at one end with a knob, while the other is worked into a loop. This clastic cord is called by the natives "ounep." When the warrior desires to throw a spear, he slips the loop over the forefinger of his right hand, and allows it to hang in readiness for the spear. As soon as the time comes for the spear to be thrown, the man balances the weapon for a moment so as to find the middle, and then casts the end of the thong round it in a sailor's half-hitch, drawing it tight with his forefinger.

As long as pressure is thus kept upon the thong, it retains its hold of the spear; and as soon as it is released, "the half-hitch" gives way and allows the spear to free itself. The mode of throwing is therefore evident. The warrior holds the loop of the thong on his forefinger, the rest of the hand grasping the spear. As he throws the weapon, he loosens the hold of his hand, and so hurls

the spear by means of the thong.

The classical reader will doubtless remember that this thong or "ounep" is precisely the "amentum" of the ancients, but is actually superior in its construction and manipulation. The amentum was simply a loop of cord or leather fastened to the shaft of the javelin just behind the balance. When the warrior wished to throw a spear, he grasped the shaft in his hand, inserted his fingers in the loop, and by means of the additional leverage was able to throw a heavy weapon to a considerable distance. See, for example, Ovid's Metamorphoses, xii. 321:

"Inserit amento digitos, nec plura locutus, In juvenem torsit jaculum;"

in English, "He inserted his fingers into the amentum, and, without saying more, whirled the dart at the youth." Commentators have been extremely perplexed about this passage. In the first place they were rather uncertain as to the meaning of the word "amentum," and in the second place, they could not see the force of the word "torsit," i. e. whirled. The reader will, however, see how perfectly appropriate is the term, the spear being flung with a whirling movement as a stone from a sling. The same word is used by Virgil: "Intendunt acres arcus, amentaque torquent." Another writer also alludes to this instrument:

"Amentum digitis tende prioribus, Et totis jaculum dinige viribus;"

t. e. "Stretch the amentum with your first fingers, and aim the javelin with your full strength."

Ingenious as was the amentum of the ancients, the ounep is far superior to it. With the ancients a separate amentum had to be fixed to each spear, while among the New Caledonians only one ounep is required.

Besides these weapons, the club is much used, and great ingenuity is shown in its manufacture. The shape and size of the clubs are extremely variable, and in some of them the natives have exhibited a surprising amount of artistic skill, the curves being singularly bold and flowing. One of these clubs, which is indeed a typical form, is in my collection. The form of the head is evidently taken from the beak of a bird, and the curves are exceedingly bold and sweeping. It is rather more than three feet in length, and it weighs almost exactly two

pounds and a half.

War is in New Caledonia, as in New Zealand, the chief occupation of the men. The first lesson that a child receives is fighting, and the idea is prevalent with him as long as he lives. As soon as he is born, the boy is consecrated to the god of war, and a hard black stone is laid on his breast, as a symbol that his heart must be as hard as a stone in battle. Even the women take a share in the fighting, and, though they are not actual combatants, they follow their relatives to the battle, in order to seize the bodies of slain enemies, and drag them away to the cooking oven. Strife is always fomented by the priests from interested motives, inasmuch as the hands of the slain are their perquisites, and among the connoisseurs in cannibalism the palms of the hands are the most delicate portions of the human body.

Primarily the New Caledonians are cannibals because they are warriors, the body of a dead enemy being always supposed to be eaten by the victors. There is mostly a fight over the body of a fallen warrior, the one party trying to drag it away to the cooking oven, and the other endeavoring to save it for burial by themselves.

As a rule, however, the body is carried oft by the women, who have the task of cooking it. The preparation of the body is quite a ceremonial, each part of it belonging by right to certain individuals, and even the carving being regulated by strict rules. A peculiar kind of knife is made of flat serpentine stone, oval in form, and about seven inches in length. Two holes are bored on one side of it, by means of which it is fastened to a wooden handle. This knife is called "nbouet."

With the nbouet the body is opened, and the whole of the intestines are torn out by means of a fork made expressly for the purpose. This ork is composed of two human armbones placed side by side, about an inchapart, and fastened tightly together. They are sharply pointed, and are very effectual instruments for the purpose. Sometimes

the bodies are cut up for cooking, but in this idea, a man was seen to eat a piece of many cases they are baked entire, the steatite twice as large as his fist, even though women priding themselves in serving them he had just taken a full meal. Some of the many cases they are baked entire, the women priding themselves in serving them up in a sitting posture, furnished and dressed in full war costume.

Thus, then, we see that cannibalism is connected with warfare; but unfortunately it is not restricted to war. When Captain D'Entrecasteaux went in search of La Pérouse, one of the natives was eating a newly-roasted piece of meat. The naturalist to the expedition immediately recognized it as being part of the body of a child. The man who was eating it did not attempt to deny the fact, but even pointed out on the body of a little boy the part of the body which he was eating, and gave his hearers to understand that the flesh of children was very

This cannibalism of New Caledonia explained some curious geatures which the natives were fond of making. They used to be very familiar with their white visitors, feeling their arms and legs, looking at each other with admiration, and then whistling and smacking their lips loudly. In point of fact, they were admiring the well-fed limbs of the white men, and anticipating to each other the delights of a feast upon the plump

Europeans.

As, however, flesh is but a luxury among the New Caledonians, and cannot be considered as an ordinary article of diet, the natives depend chiefly for their existence on vegetable food. Roots of various kinds are eaten by them, as well as cocoa-nut and other fruit; all the cooking, as well as the work in general, being performed by the women. Shell-fish are also much eaten, and are procured by the women. The large clam-shell is found on the shores of the island, and supplies abundance of food; while the smaller molluscs are mostly dug out of the sand by women, who frequently

Two very strange articles of diet are in use among the New Caledonians. The first is a sort of spider, which spins large and thick nets in the woods, often incommoding travellers by the number and strength of the silken cords. They are not eaten raw, but cooked by being placed in a covered earthen jar, which is set on a brisk fire. The natives call the spider by the name of "nougui." It is gray above, the back being covered with a fine silvery down, and below

it is black.

The second article of diet is clay, of which the natives will consume a great amount. The earth in question is a soft greenish steatite, which crumbles very easily, and has the property of distending the stomach, and so allays the cravings of hunger, even though it does not nourish the body. A welldistended stomach is one of the great luxuries of a savage, and, in accordance with is generally the case with islanders.

natives have been known to eat as much as two pounds of this substance. A similar propensity is found both in Africa and America

When they drink at a pool or river, they have an odd fashion of dipping the water with their hands, and flinging it into their mouths, so that much more water is splashed over their heads than enters their mouths.

With regard to the bodies of those who fall in war, and are rescued from the enemy, many ceremonies are employed. According to Captain Head, in his "Voyage of the Fawn," they are "brought home with loud lamentations, and buried with great wailing and shricking from the appointed mourners, who remain unclean often for several years after burying a great chief, and are subject to many strict observances. For weeks they continue nightly to waken the forest echoes with their cries. After ten days have elapsed, the grave is opened, and the head twisted off; and, again in this custom resembling the Andaman islanders, the teeth are distributed as relics among the relatives, and the skull preserved as a memorial by the nearest kin, who daily goes through the form of offering it food. "The only exceptions are in the case of

the remains of old women, whose teeth are sown in the yam patches as a charm to produce good crops; their skulls set up upon poles being deemed equally potent in this

respect."

The general character of the New Caledonians seems to be tolerably good, and, in spite cr their evident longing after the flesh of their visitors, they are not on the whole inhospitable. They are clever thieves, and are ingenious in robbery by means of an accomplice. On one occasion, when a naspend half a day up to their waists in tive was offering for sale a basket full of shing-stones, and was chaffering about the price, an accomplice came quietly behind the white man and uttered a loud yell in his ears. Naturally startled, he looked behind him, and in a moment the man with whom he was trading snatched away the basket and the goods offered in exchange, and ran away with them.

One of the officers was robbed of his cap and sword in an equally ingenious manner. He had seated himself on the ground, and for better security had placed his sword under him. Suddenly one of the natives snatched off his cap, and as he instinctively rose to rescue it, another man picked up his sword and escaped with it. They even tried to steal a ship's boat, together with the property in it, and would not leave it until they were attacked by a strong body of armed

They make very good canoes - as, indeed,

largest o being p gle mast of the c consider so mana some of ing. Th ble num erally a f is protec of earth.

A rati among th est from Northern of felicity red mate they exc.

SOME t New Cale the same called by in consequ with which between t donia prop by the nun In many

island rese They are features ar nibals from of the dea cooking th they contr human fles bors.

About 18 grew on the this valuabl with great i ward, howe an establis storing of s and since th quite peaces In course

tween utter

eat a piece of st, even though Some of the eat as much as ice. A similar in Africa and

l or river, they ping the water og it into their ater is splashed their mouths. of those who from the enmployed. Acht home with ed with great the appointed

n often for sevreat chief, and observances. ghtly to waken cries. After ave is opened, l, again in this man islanders. relics among preserved as a in, who daily ing it food. in the case of hose teeth are charm to pro-

set up upon

potent in this he New Calegood, and, in after the flesh on the whole r thieves, and means of an , when a naoasket full of ng about the tly behind the ell in his ears. behind him, whom he was sket and the nd ran away

ed of his cap ious manner. ground, and d his sword the natives instinctively picked up his ey even tried er with the eave it until ody of armed

- as, indeed, inders.

largest canoes are mostly double, two boats being placed alongside of each other, and connected by a platform. They have a single mast, which is stepped toward one end of the compound vessel, and can sail with considerable swiftness, though they are not so manageable as those of New Guinea, some of which are marvels of boat-building. They can accommodate a considerable number of passengers, and have generally a fire burning on the platform, which is protected from the heat by a thick layer of earth. largest canoes are mostly double, two boats which is analogous to shaking hands among

A rather remarkable custom prevails red material; and when two persons meet is most remarkable. they exchange their katas - a ceremony

ourselves.

Whether these savages are the aborigines of the island is doubtful. If they be so, they seem to have declined from the comparative civilization of their ancestors. This, indeed is their own opinion; and, in support of this theory, they point to the ruins which are still to be seen, and which tall of architecture for beyond the average of the second the architecture for beyond the average of the second the second the average of the second the secon tell of architecture far beyond the power of the present natives. There are even the remains of an aqueduct eight miles in length, a piece of engineering which would never have entered the head of the New Caledoamong them, which derives its chief interest from the fact that it is practised in Northern Asia. This is the Kata, or scarf of felicity. It is a little scarf, of white or but, in any case, their presence in such a spot is most removable in the fact that it is practised in fac nian of the present day. Perhaps these works

THE ISLE OF PINES.

Some thirty miles to the south-east of New Caledonia, and in fact forming part of the same group, there is a small island, called by Captain Cook the Isle of Pines, was to procure a large stock of fire-arms and to go off with them to New Caledonia. in consequence of the number of araucarias with which its hills are covered. The strait between the Isle of Pines and New Caledonia proper is nearly all shoal water, caused by the numerous coral reefs.

In many respects the inhabitants of this island resemble those of New Caledonia. They are not, however, so dark, and their features are tolerably good. They are cannibals from choice, wrapping up the bodies of the dead in banana leaves, and then cooking them in ovens. Some years ago, they contrived to indulge their taste for human flesh at the expense of their neigh-

About 1840, it was found that sandal wood grew on the island, and several vessels proceeded thither for the sake of procuring this valuable product. At first they did so with great risk, and lost many of their men from the onslaughts of the natives. Afterward, however, a Sydney merchant set up an establishment for the collecting and storing of sandal wood and beches-de-mer, and since that time the natives have become quite peaceable.

In course of this transitional time between utter barbarism and commerce, they been prepared by the women.

and to go off with them to New Caledonia, where they landed, shot as many of the na-tives as they could, and brought their bodies home for consumption. It is true that a constant feud raged between the two islands, but the sudden acquisition of firearms gave the people of the Isle of Pines a terrible advantage over their hereditary foes, and enabled them almost to depopulate

the south-eastern part of the island.

They care no more for dress than the New Caledonians, but are very fond of ornament, the men appropriating all the best decorations, and leaving the women to take what they can get. The men friz their hair out as much as possible, and wrap a thin scarf round it, or sometimes cut it short, leaving only a tuft on one side of the head. The women shave off the whole of the hair, thus depriving themselves of their natural ornament, and rendering themselves very unprepossessing to European eyes. The rough work is done by them, the men reserving to themselves the noble occupations of war, fishing, house building, and cance making, the only real work which they do being yam planting, after the ground has

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

THE ANDAMAN AND NICOBAR ISLANDS.

POSITION OF THE ANDAMAN ISLANDS - ORIGIN OF THE NATIVES - THEIR ROVING HABITS AND LACK OF CLOTHING - THEIR HATRED OF STRANGERS - THE NATIVES AND THE STEAMER - APPEARANCE OF THE WOMEN - THE ENORMOUS BOW AND SKILL OF THE MINCOPIE ARCHERS - VARIOUS MODES OF FISHING - EXCELLENCE OF THEIR CANOES, AND MODE OF MAKING THEM - THE LONG PAD-DLES - THE SHIP'S CREW BEATEN BY THE MINCOPIE CANOE MEN - CANNIBALISM NOT PRACTISED IN THE ANDAMAN ISLANDS - INGENIOUS FIREPLACES AND METHOD OF COOKING - WANT OF ARCHITECTURAL SKILL - EDUCATION OF THE CHILDREN, AND THEIR GAMES - POWERS OF SWIM-MING - MATRIMONIAL ARRANGEMENTS - DEATH AND BURIAL - THE NICOBAR ISLANDS - APPEAR-ANCE AND COSTUME OF THE INHABITANTS - THE CROSS-BOW AND ITS ARROW - A PRIMITIVE HAMMOCK - TOMBS IN THE NICOBAR ISLANDS.

WE will now pass to the westward, and travel | lem to anthropologists. They are small in gradually through the wonderful group of islands which extends almost from Asia to America, and which is known by the general title of Polynesia. One or two of them will have to be omitted for the present, so as not to break the continuity of races, but will be described before we pass upward through America, from Tierra del Fuego to the Esquimaux.

In the Bay of Bengal, and not much to the eastward of India, is seen a group of islands, named the Andamans. They are of considerable length, but very narrow, seldom exceeding twenty miles in breadth, and are arranged very much after the fashion of the New Zealand islands, though on a smaller scale. These islands exhibit a phenomenon almost unparalleled in the history of the human race.

They lie close to India, a country in which a high state of civilization has been reached many centuries ago. They are almost in the middle of the track which is traversed by multitudes of ships, and yet their inhabitants are sunk in the deepest depths of savage degradation. Even the regular visits made by the Chinese vessels to the Andaman coasts, for the purpose of procuring the trepang, have had not the least effect upon them; and they afford perhaps the most perfect example of savage life which the surface of the earth can show.

The origin of the Andamaners is a prob-

stature, the men being on an average but little above five feet in height, and the women being still smaller. They are very dark, but have scarcely anything except their color in common with the negro. They have neither the huge projecting jaws and cavernous mouth of the true negro, nor his curiously elongated heel; and though they are so small as almost to merit the name of pigmies, they are perfectly well formed. The hair, when it is allowed to grow, is seen to be thick and bushy, and resembles that of the Papuans; and it is the opinion of many competent judges that the Andamaners are the aborigines of the Papuan race, who have never permitted contact with strangers, and have preserved their own individuality intact.

In habits they are absolutely savage, their arts being limited to the manufacture of canoes and weapons, architecture and agriculture being equally unknown. They possess one of the chief characteristics of savage life in their roving disposition, never remaining long in one spot, a stay of three or four days being considered a long visit to any place. They have no laws, no religion, and no tribal distinctions. Marriage, as we understand the word, is unknown to them; and there seems to be few restrictions of consanguinity, a mother and her daughter being sometimes the wives of the same hus-

Clothing is entirely unknown to them; and

and yelled from the bo been a Bedl most unmar Their manne and formids excitement. in our direct their arrows often a liar

always fe to them gaudy ha one whi many of employ fo more tha natives p and even from the and other Until th

when ca

the And conseque and the offer to a ship seen Captain A islands is which occ The ste

suddenly 1 were at fir apparition columns o escape-pip dles. In from their ous shout were sent the Minco "A ped

impressive parties, the gradually d of the boat from the l reflecting the natives. giants of 1 more than neared that had station perceived th to land, the appeared a frantic.

"They se

control which

to exhibit

by every postomime the

when captives have been taken, they have always found clothes to be an incumbrance to them, though they were pleased with gaudy handkerchiefs tied round their heads. The only covering which they care for is one which they share in common with many of the pachydermatous animals, and employ for the same purpose. It is nothing more than a layer of mud, with which the natives plaster themselves in the morning and evening, in order to defend themselves from the attacks of the mosquitoes, sandflies, and other insect plagues.

Until the last few years our knowledge of the Andamaners has been almost nil, in consequence of their hatred of strangers, and the determined opposition which they offer to any foreigners landing on their shores. The very presence of a boat or a ship seems to excite them to frenzy. In Captain Mouatt's valuable account of these islands is an animated description of a scene

which occurred off the coast.

The steamer, on rounding a point, came suddenly upon two groups of savages, who were at first paralyzed by fear at the sudden apparition of the unknown object, with its columns of white steam roaring from the escape-pipe, its smoke, and its plashing pad-In a few moments they recovered from their surprise, and raised a simultaneous shout of defiance. Two boats' crews were sent ashore, to the extreme anger of the Mincopies.

"A peculiar natural phenomenon ren-dered the scene still more striking and impressive as the interval between the two parties, the savage and the civilized, was gradually diminished by the onward motion gradually diminished by the olivard motion of the boats. The spray as it rose in clouds from the breakers dashing on the shore, reflecting the rays of the declining sun, magnified considerably the slight figures of the natives, making massive and formidable giants of men who were in reality little more than sable dwarfs. As the cutters neared that part of the shore where they had stationed themselves, and they clearly perceived that we were making preparations to land, their excitement was such that they appeared as if they had suddenly become

"They seemed to lose that restraint and control which it is the pride of the savage to exhibit in time of danger, and jumped and yelled like so many demons let loose from the bottomless pit, or as if there had been a Bedlam in that locality, and they the most unmanageable of its frantic inmates. Their manner was that of men determined and formidable in the midst of all their excitement. They brandished their bows in our direction; they menaced us with their arrows, said by common report—so often a liar - to be poisoned; exhibiting by every possible contortion of savage pan-tomime their hostile determination. To

use a common vulgar expression of some of the seamen, they seemed to have made up their minds to 'chaw us all up.'

"The spear which he flourished incessantly was terminated by a bright, flat pointed head, which gleamed with flashes of pointed nead, which greamed with mastes of light, as, circling rapidly in the air, it reflected the rays of the sun. Sometimes he would hold it aloft, polsing it in his uplifted hand, as if with the intention of hurling it with unerring and deadly aim at the first who dared to approach the shore of his native island. At length, in a paroxysm of well-acted fury, he dashed boildy into the water, boiling and seething round him as it broke in great billows on the beach, and on the rocks by which it was defended, and, fixing an arrow in his bow, he shot it off in the direction of the steamer, as if that were the arch enemy that had provoked his bellicose fury.

The second party of natives, who turned out to be females, were as frightened as their male friends were angry. After several failures in launching a canoe, they rushed in a body to the jungle and hid themselves from the strangers. They exhibited the usual characteristics of the people, a basket for fish doing duty for clothes, and a patch of red ochre on their heads taking the place of hair. So repulsive were they in their appearance, that the sailors declined to leave mirrors on the shore as presents for them, saying that such hideous creatures ought not to be allowed to look at

their own features.

The weapons with which the Mincopie men threatened the strangers are really formidable, and before very long the explor-ing party learned to hold them in great respect. The bows are sometimes six feet long and enormously powerful, — so powerful in fact that the strongest sailors tried in vain to bend the weapons which the pigmy Mincopies handled with such skilful

The shape of the bow is very peculiar. Instead of being nearly cylindrical, largest in the middle and tapering regularly to each end, it is nearly flat except at the handle, on either side of which it becomes very broad. In fact, a good idea of it may be taken from a flattened hour-glass, the channel in the middle being the handle.

The force and accuracy with which these tiny men can shoot are really wonderful. They very seldom fail to hit their mark at any reasonable distance, and can make tolerably sure of a man at sixty or seventy yards, so that the Mincopie bow is really a far better weapon than the old "Brown Bess" musket ever was. One arrow that was shot at a boat's crew at a distance of sixty yards struck a hickory oar, and knocked off a piece of wood as large as a man's hand.

These arrows are very neatly made.

R - APPEARANCE - VARIOUS MODES THE LONG PAD-I NOT PRACTISED KING - WANT OF OWERS OF SWIM-LANDS - APPEAR-W - A PRIMITIVE

TS AND LACK OF

y are small in n average but eight, and the They are very ything except th the negro. ige projecting of the true ongated heel; l as almost to they are per-ir, when it is be thick and the Papuans; any competent are the aboho have never gers, and have ality intact. y savage, their

nanufacture of ture and agrin. They poseristics of savosition, never a stay of three a long visit to vs, no religion, Iarriage, as we own to them; restrictions of her daughter the same hus-

n to them; and

They are about three feet in length, and large fish they make nets of cord as thick as are made of a reed by way of shaft, to the a man's finger. One side of the net is held end of which is fastened a piece of hard to the bed of the sea by heavy stones laid wood in order to give weight. Upon this tip is fixed the head, which is usually the barbed tail bone of the sting-ray, and sometimes, though not always, poisoned. Should this terrible weapon enter the body, it cannot be removed without a severe operation, the sharp brittle barbs being apt to snap off and remain in the wound if any force be used in extracting the arrow.

Their consummate skill in the use of the bow is obtained by constant practice from earliest infancy. As is the assagai to the Kaffir, the boomerang to the Australian, and the lasso to the Guacho, so is the bow to the Andamaner. The first plaything that a Mincopie boy sees is a miniature bow made for him by his father, and, as he advances in age, bows of progressive strength are placed in his hands. Consequently, he is so familiarized with the weapon that, by the time he is of full age, the pigmy Andamaner draws with graceful ease a bow which seems made for a giant.

Numbers of the toy bows and arrows may be seen scattered about an encampment if the natives are forced to leave it in a hurry, and their various sizes show the ages of the children to whom they belonged. The education of the Mincopie archer is in fact almost precisely like that of the old English bowmen, who, from constant practice in the art, and being trained from childhood in the use of the bow, obtained such a mastery of the weapon as made them the terror of

Being such skilful archers, they trust almost entirely to the bow and arrow, caring little for any other weapon. Even the harpoon, with which they catch the larger fish, is shot from the powerful bow. It is, in fact, a very large arrow, with a move-able head. This head fits loosely into a hole at the end of the arrow, and is secured to the shaft by a thong. It is a very remarkable fact that the bow and harpoon arrow of the Mincopies are almost exactly like those which are used by the inhabitants of Vancouver's Island. They are twice as large, but in shape almost identical, as will be seen when we come to the North of America.

When they use the harpoon, a long and elastic cord is attached to it, one end of which is retained by the archer. The cord is made from a fibre which has the useful property of hardening by being soaked in water. For killing the fish when held with the harpoon the Mincopies use smaller arrows, without barbs or movable heads.

The Mincopies are very expert fishermen, and use nets which are made from the same fibre that has been mentioned. For small fish they make the nets of rather thin that the Andamaners venture far from the but very tough string, but for turtle and shore.

a man's finger. One side of the net is held to the bed of the sea by heavy stones laid on it, and the other is upheld by floats.

The women search for molluscs, a business which occupies a considerable part of their time. They always carry neat baskets, in which to put the results of their industry, and each woman has generally a small net fixed to a handle, like that which is used by butterfly collectors.

In nothing do the Andamaners show their superior skill more than in canoe making. Their bows and arrows are, as we have seen, good specimens of savage manufacture, but in the making and management of canoes they are simply unapproachable, even though their tools are of the rudest possible description.

Furnished merely with a simple adze made of a stone fixed into a handle, the Mincopie boat maker searches the forest for a suitable tree, and after a week or ten days succeeds in bringing it to the ground. The rest of the process is so well described by Captain Mouatt, that it must be given in his own words.

"The next operation is to round the trunk, a process which they perform with remarkable dexterity, it being almost impossible to conceive how, with the imperfect instru-ments at their command, they execute their work with so much skill and neatness. Practice, however, must render them, as well as others, perfect; and hence it is that in a short time the rough and shapeless trunk begins to assume form and proportions; and, when the process is finished, exhibits a finish and perfection that even a Chinese carpenter, by far the most handy and ingenious of human 'chips,' would regard with a feeling of envy, as a work of dexterity which it would be vain for him to attempt to imitate.

" As soon as the trunk has been rounded, they commence the operation of cutting and chipping at it externally, until eventually the outlines of the elegant canoe begin to appear from the shapeless mass of the knotted trunk, just as, by the skill of the statuary, the beautiful figure gradually assumes its fair proportions in the block of marble. The shape externally is generally finished with great care and elaboration before they proceed to hollow it internally, the next process to which they direct their attention. The interior is excavated in the same perfect and business-like manner, until the shell is no thicker than the side of a deal bonnet-box, although it still preserves that strength which would enable it to resist successfully the utmost force and violence of the waves, should it even be assailed by a storm -a thing not at all probable, as, unless carried out to sea by some accident, it is rare

"The are well is remar top of th celved so impossibl made th We fired Mouatt of Andan of Mincor stage of p with as g They wou we believ structed b builders."

Near sh perfect eas an Europ yards with further to one side of or fifty m such cases the double at night, a Sometimes all night at and torche from the la The out

be seen, th some Cings current and The pade form, and, a bowls, or, or which bake The women implements long. They and the wor

laborious.

ways minu

not mentio

Imperfect to be, they efficiency. with these a canoe cut by can beat with Mouatt got Mincopies at favorite boa never any ra ing it all the liked. The p man-of-war's the little Mir over, the wat ors were hop strained the the results of afterward.

ord as thick as the net is held beld by floats. olluscs, a busi-derable part of ry neat baskets, their industry, lly a small net hich is used by

amaners show han in canoe rows are, as we savage manud management napproachable, the rudest pos-

a simple adze andle, the Minhe forest for a k or ten days ground. The l described by st be given in

ound the trunk, with remark-t impossible to perfect instruy execute their and neatness. nder them, as nence it is that shapeless trunk oportions; and, ed, exhibits a ven a Chinese handy and inald regard with k of dexterity him to attempt

been rounded, of cutting and til eventually ance begin to mass of the e skill of the gradually asthe block of ly is generally laboration beit internally, ey direct their cavated in the manner, until e side of a deal preserves that t to resist sucviolence of the led by a storm as, unless carent, it is rare far from the

"The buoyancy of these boats, when they are well constructed and carefully finished, is remarkable. They float lightly on the top of the waves, and, unless they have received some injury, it is considered almost impossible to sink them. We sometimes made the attempt, but never succeeded. We find at them, repeatedly when at Port We fired at them repeatedly when at Port Mouatt — which may be regarded as a sort of Andaman Pembroke-yard, where a fleet of Mincopie men-of-war were lying in every stage of preparation - but they still floated with as great ease and buoyancy as ever. They would make excellent life-boats, such, we believe, as have never yet been con-structed by any of our most experienced boat-

Near shore the boatmen paddle about with perfect ease in these fragile vessels, though an European can hardly proceed twenty yards without being upset. When they go further to sea they add a light outrigger to one side of the canoe, and then venture forty or fifty miles from land. They always, in such cases, take fire with them, which has the double advantage of attracting the fish at night, and of cooking them when taken. Sometimes a number of boats will remain all night at sea, and the effect of their fires and torches is very picturesque when seen from the land.

The outrigger is certainly a new invention. The earlier travellers, who were always minute enough in their accounts, did not mention the outrigger, and, as far as can be seen, the idea has been borrowed from some Cingalese canoe which had got into a current and been drifted toward the island.

The paddles are rather peculiar in their form, and, apparently, very ineffective, looking something like long spoons with flattened bowls, or, on a smaller scale, the "peels" with which bakers take bread out of their ovens. The women are the paddle makers, and the implements vary from three to four feet long. They are cut from a very hard wood, and the work of making them is necessarily

laborious,

Imperfect as the canoe and paddles seem to be, they are in fact absolute marvels of efficiency. The tiny Mincopies, furnished with these simple paddles, and seated in a canoe cut by themselves out of a tree trunk, can beat with ease our best oarsmen. Captain Mouatt got up several races between the Mincopies and his own prize crew in their favorite boat. In point of fact there was never any race at all, the Andamaners having it all their own way, and winning as they liked. The powerful, sweeping stroke of the man-of-war's crew was beautiful to see, but the little Mincopies shot through, or rather over, the water with such speed that the sailors were hopelessly beaten, although they strained themselves so much that they felt the results of their exertions for some time afterward.

Slight, and almost as active as monkeys, the Mincopies ascend the tallest trees with the like agility, applying the soles of their feet and the palms of their hands to the trunk, and literally running up them. When they reach the branches, they traverse them with as much case and security as if they were on firm land. Indeed, their powers of tree climbing seem to be equal to those of the inhabitants of Dourga Strait, of whom an account will presently be given.

We now come to a question which has often been agitated, namely, the asserted

cannibalism of the Andamaners.

It is a question that every observant reader would be sure to ask himself, as the Andamaners are just such a savage race as might be expected to feed habitually on human bodies. Yet, though we find the comparatively civilized New Zealander sharing with the savage New Caledonian the habit of eating human flesh, the Mincopie, who is infinitely below the New Zealander, and certainly not above the New Caledonian, is free from that revolting practice. He undoubtedly has been known to eat human flesh, but only when urged by extreme hunger to eat the flesh of man or to die; and in so doing he has but set an example which has been followed by members of the most civilized countries.

That they are fierce and cruel toward foreigners is true enough, and it is also true that the bodies of those whom they have killed have been found frightfully mutilated, the flesh being almost pounded from the bones by the blows which have been showered upon the senseless clay in the blind fury of the savage. But no attempt has been made to remove any part of the body, and it was evident that the victors had not even entertained the idea of eating it.

The food of the Andamaners is tolerably varied, and is prepared in a very simple and ingenious oven. A large tree is selected for this purpose, and fire is applied to it at the bottom, so that by degrees a large hole is burned in it, the charred wood being scraped away so as to form eventually a large hole. This is the Mincopie oven, and at the bottom a heap of ashes, about three feet in depth, is always left. The fire smoulders away gradually among the ashes, and never entirely goes out; so that whenever a native wishes to cook his pig, turtle, or fish, he has only to blow up the smouldering embers, and in a few moments he has fire sufficient for his purposes.

These oven-trees are very carefully preserved, the natives never cutting them down, and always managing to prevent them from being entirely burned through. In illustration No. 2, on the 893d page, one of these trees is shown, with the fire burning in the hollow, and the natives sitting round it. The Mincopies always contrive to have the opening of the oven in such a direction that

Pigs have been mentioned as forming part of the Andamaners' food. These pigs are small and black, with spare, hard bristles, that look like pieces of wire. They are wonderfully active, and, according to Captain Mouatt, "are the most curious and mischievous little animals in creation. They have a leer that makes them look like so many Mephistopheles, who have chosen to assume that peculiar form, in many respects a very appropriate one, for, if they are not so many little devils, they are certainly possessed by them.

"At the time of our visit to the Cinque Islands, we turned out a dozen of them, and, our unwonted appearance filling them with alarm, they ran off from us with the velocity of an Indian express train, squeaking like mad. We set off and had a regular hunt after them - a hunt that beats to chalks the most exciting scene of pig-sticking ever seen in Bengal. After discharging their rifles, some of the hunters would probably find the pigs between their legs, making them measure their length on the sand. The falls were made with considerable violence, though they were not dangerous, for they only excited our risible faculties; and as each one came down he was greeted with a loud and hearty burst of laughter, as a sort of congratulation to him in his misfor-

The architecture of the Andamaners is very primitive. Four posts are stuck in the ground in the form of a square, and the builder is quite indifferent as to their straightness. Two of them are much longer than the others, so that when they are connected by sticks, a sloping roof is formed. Palm leaves are then placed upon them, one lying over the other in tile fashion, so that they form a protection from perpendicularly falling rain. A number of these huts are generally erected in a circle, in some cleared space in the forest, which is sheltered by large trees, and within a convenient distance of water. One or two of these simple houses may be seen in the illustration.

Primitive as are these huts, some attempt is made at ornamenting them, the decorations being characteristically the trophies of the chase. Skulls of pigs and turtles, bundles of fish-bones, and similar articles are painted with stripes of red ochre, and hung to the roofs of the huts. Ochre painting, indeed, seems to be the only idea that the Andamaners have of ornament, if perhaps we except a string which the dandies tie round the waist, having a piece of bone or other glittering article hanging from it.

This ochre is in great request among the Mincopies, the women being especially fond of it by way of a decoration of their heads. As has already been mentioned, they shave

the ram cannot get into it and put out the | a piece of flint chipped very thin, and having a sharp edge. They are wonderfully adroit at making these primitive knives, which are exactly like those of the stone agc. The hair having been scraped off, a tolerably thick plastering of red ochre is rubbed on the head, and the toilet of a Mincopie belle is complete.

Not only is the ochre used for external application, but it is administered internally. What is good for the outside, the Mincopie logically thinks will be equally good for the inside. So, when he feels ill, he makes a sort of bolus of red ochre and turtle oil, swallows it, and thinks that he has cured himself. Wounds are dressed by binding certain leaves upon them, and in many cases of internal pains, bruises, or swellings, scarification is freely used. Certain individuals enjoy a sort of reputation for success in the treatment of disease, and are much honored by the less skilful.

It has already been mentioned that marriage is nothing more than taking a female slave.

When a wife becomes a mother, the only treatment which she receives is, that after the birth of her child she is plentifully rubbed with the red ochre and turtle oil, and is expected to follow her usual occupations on the next day. The young child is soused with cold water, poured out of one of the great bamboo vessels which the Mincopies use, and is dried by rubbing with the hand. Like its parent, the child wears no clothing; but if the party should be on their travels, and rain begin to fall, the mother pulls a few leaves from the next tree, ties them together with a fibre of rattan, and fastens them on the body of the child. This is the only clothing which an Andamaner ever wears.

Children are never weaned, but continue to take their childish nourishment until the mother is absolutely incapable of affording it. Both parents redeem much of their savage nature by their affection for their children, the father being quite as loving a parent as the mother — a trait which is often absent among savage tribes. The children reciprocate the affection, so that, in spite of the absence of any definite home, there is a domestic character about the family which could scarcely have been expected from such a race.

It has been already mentioned that the boys amuse themselves chiefly with small bows and arrows, having these toys of a continually increasing size to suit their growth. The girls are fond of disporting themselves by the sea-shore, and building sand houses for the waves to knock down, precisely as is done by the civilized children of Europe and America. Their great amusement is to build an enclosure with walls of sand, and to sit in it as if it were a house of their own until the rising tide washes the head completely, using, instead of a razor, away the frail walls. Both sexes are fond

hin, and having derfully adroit ives, which are one age. The ff, a tolerably is rubbed on Mincopie belle

d for external ered internally, the Mincopie y good for the l, he makes a und turtle oil, he has cured ed by binding in many cases wellings, scarinin individuals success in the much honored

ned that marking a female

other, the only is is, that after is plentifully it turtle oil, and all occupations child is soused of one of the the Mincopies with the hand. It is no clothing; their travels, her pulls a few them together stens them on is is the only rever wears. I, but continue ment until the e of affording nuch of their tion for their tite as loving a trait which is tribes. The ction, so that, any definite laracter about

oned that the ly with small case toys of a to suit their of disporting and building knock down, lilzed children great amusewith walls of were a house g tide washes

exes are fond

ely have been



(1.) NEW CALEDONIANS DEFENDING THEIR COAST. (See page 884.)



(2.) ANDAMANERS COOKING A PIG. (See page 892.)

of swimr into and pick som they dive A Hindoo prisoner spared for they are seral of the rocks, so and bring This state whom it observatio many of the

in this cas This ma two wives, was above expresses ! ance of the from the i that one of the Minco likely that to live, and introduced

They hav theirswimm tivity. Sev ers on board reconciled t cape for a me slipped over always diver to the surfac respiration, greater par This mode

This mode practised by from the ari In Captain there is a c Mincopie giboard the si kindly, and would be do clothes to b sgain as soo as a again as soo threw them s When their cheerful, chat inexpressibly own persons i

of swimming, and as soon as they can walk in a melancholy recitative, at others in a the little black children are seen running lively key; and often danced about the deck with great agility, slapping the lower part of their bodies with the back of their heels. into and out of the water, and, if they can pick some sheltered spot free from waves, they dive and swim like so many ducks. A Hindoo, named Pooteeah, who was taken prisoner by the Mincopies, and his life spared for some reason or other, states that they are such excellent swimmers that several of them will dive together among the rocks, search for fish in the crevices, and bring their struggling captives to shore. This statement was discredited by those to whom it was made, as were several other of his accounts. As, however, subsequent observations showed that he was fight in many of the statements which were at first disbelieved, it is possible that he was right in this case also.

This man, by the way, was furnished with two wives, mother and daughter, and, as he was above the ordinary size, Captain Mouatt expresses some curiosity as to the appearance of the progeny. He made his escape from the island before the birth of a child that one of his wives was expecting, and, as the Mincopie mothers are remarkable for their affection toward their children, it is likely that the little half-caste was allowed to live, and that a new element may thus be

introduced into the race.

They have more than once made use of their swimming powers in escaping from cap-tivity. Several instances have been known where Andamaners have been kept prisoners on board ship, and have seemed tolerably reconciled to their lot. As soon, however, as the ship neared land, they contrived to escape for a moment from the eye of the sentry, slipped overboard, and swam to land. They always dived as soon as they struck the water, swam as far as they could without rising to the surface, and then, after taking a single respiration, dived again, and so swam the greater part of the distance under water. This mode of swimming was doubtless practised by them when trying to escape

from the arrows of an unfriendly party.

In Captain Syme's "Embassy to Ava"
there is a curious account of two young Mincopie girls who had been decoyed on board the ship. They were treated very kindly, and soon learned that no harm would be done to them. "They suffered clothes to be put on, but took them off again as soon as opportunity offered, and threw them away as useless encumbrances. When their fears were over, they became cheerful, chattered with freedom, and were

Wine and spirituous liquors were disagreeable to them; no food seemed so palatable as fish, rice, and sugar. In a few weeks, having recovered strength and become fat, from the more than half-famished state in which they were brought on board, they

which they were brought on board, they began to think confinement irksome, and longed to regain their native freedom.

"In the middle of the night, when all but the watchman were asleep, they passed in silence into the Captain's cabin, jumped in silence into the research. out of the stern windows into the sea, and swam to an island half a mile distant, where it was in vain to pursue them, had there been any such intention; but the object was to retain them by kindness, and not by compulsion, an attempt that has failed on every trial. Hunger may (and these instances are represented by the statement of the statement stances are rare) induce them to put themselves into the power of strangers; but the moment that their want is satisfied nothing short of coercion can prevent them from re-turning to a way of life more congenial to their savage nature."

Like many other savage races, the Min-copies make a kind of festivity on each new moon; and as soon as the thin crescent appears they salute it after their odd fashion, and get up a dance. Their dances are rather grotesque, each performer jumping up and down, and kicking himself violently with the sole of his foot, so as to produce a smart slapping sound. This is the dance which is mentioned in the preceding ac-

count of the two captives.

When a Mincopie dies, he is buried in a very simple manner. No lamentations are made at the time; but the body is tied in a sitting position, with the head on the knees, much after the fashion employed among the Bechuanas, and described on page 300. It is then buried, and allowed to decay, when the remains are dug up, and the bones distri-buted among the relatives. The skull is the right of the widow, who ties it to a cord and hangs it round her neck, where it remains for the rest of her life. This outward observance is, however, all that is required of her, and is the only way in which she troubles herself to be faithful to the memory of her dead husband. It is rather strange that, though the Andamaners make no lamentations on the death of a relative, they do not altogether dispense with these expressions of sorrow, but postpone them inexpressibly diverted at the sight of their to the exhumation and distribution of the "They were fond of singing, sometimes over it for some time in honor of the dead." relics, when each one who gets a bone howls

THE NICOBAR ISLANDS.

IMMEDIATELY to the south of the Andaman Islands, and barely thirty miles distant, lie the NICOBAR ISLANDS. The group consists of nine tolerably large islands, and several of much smaller size. One of the large islands, called Great Nicobar, is twenty miles long by eight wide, while Little Nicobar is barely half these dimensions.

The islands are singularly fertile, and abound in various kinds of vegetation, especially in the cocoa-nut palm, not a specimen of which is to be found in the Andaman Islands. This curious fact is accounted for by the character of the Andamaners. who have an almost superstitious love for the cocoa-nut. If one of the nuts be washed ashore, it is always broken up and eaten; and if perchance one of the fruit happens to escape the sharp eyes of the natives and to germinate, its green feathery shoots are sure to attract the attention of the first Mincopie who passes in that direction. A similar barrier to the production of the cocoanut is found on the coast of Australia.

Although so close to the Andaman Islands. the inhabitants of Nicobar are very unlike the Mincopies, being a fine tall race, and of a copper rather than a black hue. Unlike the Mincopies, the men are very fat, especially about the breast, so that at a little distance they might easily be mistaken for women. Moreover, they wear the hair long, and parted in the middle, which to the eyes of a modern European, gives them a peculiar effeminate look. They wear neither beard nor moustache, their features are ugly, and their large mouths are stained a dark red from the juice of the betel-nut, which they are

continually chewing.

There is one distinction, however, which is apparent at a considerable distance. In lieu of clothes, the men wear a strip of cloth. never more than two inches wide. This is passed round the waist, under the legs in front, and tucked through itself behind, the end being left as long as possible. The men place great value on the length of this tail, and he is the best dressed man who wears it the longest. Some of the wealthy among them have the tail dragging along the ground for several feet, like an European lady's train. If possible, this tail is made of blue cloth, an article that is held in very high estimation by the natives.

The women are quite as ill-favored as the men, and increase their natural ugliness by shaving off all their hair. They do not wear tails like the men, but have a plaited grass girdle, from which depends a soft fibre fringe about a fee, in depth.

The character of the Nicobarians is far gentler than that of the Mincopies, the latter being proverbially herce and cruel toward

welcome foreigners when they have made up their minds that no harm is intended them. Captain Campbell, to whom I am indebted for most of the information respecting these natives, found them very agreeable and host table, ready to barter, and always welcoming him to their houses,

After a short time, even the women and children, who had at first been scrupulously concealed, after the manner of savages, came boldly forward, and were as hospitable as the men. On one occasion, while paying a visit to one of their huts, Captain Campbell tried to make friends with one of the children, all of whom were terribly frightened at the white face of their visitor. Finding that no response was made to his advances, he pulled the child from his hiding-place, and held him for a little time, in spite of his struggles. The mother made no opposition, but laughed heartily at the skirmish, evidently feeling that no harm was intended toward her little

The native weapons of the Nicobarians are very curious. As the people are not of a warlike character like the Mincopies, their weapons are used almost exclusively for killing game. The most formidable is a tolerably large spear headed with iron, which is used for killing hogs, and is thrown like the used for killing hogs, and is thrown like the assagai of Southern Africa. They have also a smaller javelin for fish-killing, and a number of many-pointed hand-spears for the same purpose. The most remarkable of their weapons is a cross-bow, which is almost exactly like that of the Fan tribe of Africa, It is not very powerful, and only propels a small arrow. Its chief use is in killing

birds.

Besides these weapons, every man carries a cutlass-blade from which the hilt has been removed, and a handle roughly made by wrapping some six inches of the butt with cocoa-nut fibre. It is intended not so much as a weapon as a tool, and with it the natives cut down trees, carve their canoes, and perform similar operations.

The architecture of the Nicobarians is infinitely superior to that of the Mincopies, and is precisely similar in character to that which is found among the inhabitants of New

Guinea, the home of the Papuan 1.

The native architect begins by fixing a number of posts in the ground, and erecting on them a platform of split bamboo. Over this platform he builds a roof shaped exactly like a beehive, and his house is then complete. The bamboo platform is the floor of the hut, and, being elastic as well as firm, serves also for a bed. To this hut the native ascends by a primitive sort of ladder, and passes into the chamber through a hole cut in the floor. being proverbially herce and cruel toward The sides of the hut are adorned with the strangers, and the former soon learning to skulls of hogs, intermixed with spears,

peculiar A rati The ope as it affo sunbean primitiv about six or rather mock the time, doz day, sipp to have g Western of the Ni

knives,

The car beautifull but are c being holl supported a very hig propelled light, and,

"Scene i

on the 8

pearance

of archite

knives, bows, and arrows. The huts are keppeculiarly neat and clean.

ey have made

rm is intended

o whom I am nformation re-

nd them very

eady to barter, to their houses, he women and in scrupulously

f savages, came ospitable as the

e paying a visit Campbell tried

the children, all thened at the

finding that no

ances, he pulled

e, and held him

struggles. The

, but laughed idently feeling

ward her little

Nicobarians are

e are not of a

lincopies, their

exclusively for nidable is a tolh iron, which is hrown like the They have also killing, and a d-spears for the arkable of their nich is almost ribe of Africa. only propels a ry man carries e hilt has been ghly made by the butt with h it the natives r canoes, and Nicobarians is the Mincopies, uncter to that 1. 1. ns by fixing a d, and erecting amboo. Over shaped exactly then complete. oor of the hut, rm, serves also ive ascends by passes into the t in the floor. rned with the with spears,

A rather remarkable use is made of the hut. The open space between the floor and the ground is far too valuable not to be utilized, as it affords a cool and airy shelter from the sunbeams. Under this floor is suspended a primitive sort of hammock, which is a board about six feet in length, slung by ropes. In, or rather on, this very uncomfortable hammock the Nicobarian likes to lounge away his time, dozing throughout the hot hours of the day, sipping palm wine at intervals, and smoking without cessation. In fact, we seem to have got again among the inhabitants of Western Africa, so similar is the character of the Nicobarian to that of the negro. The "Scene in the Nicobar Islands," represented on the 903d page, shows the personal appearance of the Nicobarians and their style of architecture.

The canoes of the Nicobarians are not so beautifully formed as those of the Mincopies, but are constructed on the same principle, being hollowed out of the trunks of trees, and supported by a slight outrigger. They have a very high and ornamental prow, and are propelled by short paddles. They are very light, and, when properly manned, skim over

The huts are kept is made of the hut, the floor and the only intended for one person.

only intended for one person.

The mode of burial is not in the least like that which is employed among the Mincopies. When a man dies, the body is placed in a coffin, which is generally made from a can-e. The canoe is cut in half, the body being laid in one moiety, and covered with the other half. In order to supply the deceased with provisions for his journey to the spirit-land, a pig is killed and placed in the coffin, together with a supply of yams and cocoa-nuts. In case he should be attacked on his journey, a quantity of weapons, such as bows, spears, and cutlasses, are placed in the coffin.

The body is buried in the middle of the village, and the spot marked by a stick, to which is attached a small streamer. After some time, when the body has been consumed by the earth, the coffin is dug up again. The deceased being now supposed to have completed his journey to his spirithome, his bones are thrown into the bush, and the cutlasses and other weapons distributed among his relatives.

CHAPTER XC.

NEW GUINEA.

THE HOME OF THE PAPUAN RACE - DISTINGUISHING MARKS OF THE RACE - DERIVATION OF THE NAME - GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE PAPUANS - THE SIGN OF PEACE TIMEOPPHINAPE MIS. UNDERSTANDING - DRESS AND ORNAMENTS OF THE TRIBES OF DOURGA STRAIL - THEIR AGILITY AMONG THE TREES - THE OUTANATA TRIPES - TATTOOING AND ORNAMENTS - ELABORATE ABORIS TECTURE -- WEAPONS -- THE DUST SIGNALS AND THEIR MEANING -- THEIR UNSUSPICIOUS NATURE -ABRAUW, THE CHIEF.

of the Papuan race.

New Guinea is a very large island, fourteen hundred miles in length, and, as far as has been ascertained, containing some two hundred thousand geographical square miles. It is separated from Australia only by Torres Strait, and, as we have seen, a certain amount of intercourse has taken place between the Papuans of the south of New Guinea and the natives who inhabit the north of Australia. Fertile in the vegetable kingdom, it possesses one or two animals which have the greatest interest for the naturalist, such as the tree-kangaroo, the crowned pigeon,

of the Papuan race. Taken as a race, they are very fine examples of savage humanity, tall, well-shaped, and powerful. They are remarkable for two physical peculiarities. The one is a roughness of the skin, and the other is the growth of the hair. The reader may remember that some of the tribes of Southern Africa have the hair of the head growing in regular tufts or patches each about the size of a

and the bird of paradise. It is equally inter-

esting to the ethnologist as being the home

It is a remarkable fact that, in the Papuan race, the hair grows in similar patches, but, instead of being short like that of the South African, it grows to a considerable length, sometimes measuring eighteen inches from root to tip. The Papuans are very proud of this natural ornament, and therefore will seldom cut it off; but as, if left untrained, it into the large and small tribes. The for-

WE now come to the very home and centre | modes of dressing it, but in most cases manage to make it stand out at right angles from the head. Sometimes they take the hair of each patch separately and screw it up into a ringlet. Sometimes they tease out all the hairs with a wooden comb of four or five prongs, and, as the hair is very coarse and stiff, it is soon induced to assume a mop-like shape, and to increase the apparent size of the head to an enormous extent.

Indeed, the word Papua is derived from this peculiarity of the hair. In the Malay language, the word which signifies "crisped" is pua-pua, which is easily contracted into pa-pua. Even the hair of the face grows in similar patches, and so does that on the breast of the man, and in the latter case the tufts are much further apart than on the head or face.

The color of the Papuans is a very dark chocolate, sometimes inclining to black, but having nothing in common with the deep shining black of the negro. Their features are large and tolerably well made, though the nose is very broad at the wings, and the lips wide. The nose, however, is not flat like that of the negro, but is prominent, rather arched, and descends so low that when seen in front the tip nearly reaches the upper lip. The natives seem to be perfectly aware of this peculiarity, and perpetuate it in their carvings.

Although taken as a whole, they are a fine would fall over the eyes, they have various mer are powerfully built, but more remarkable for breasted not equa the body Their

some tra and hosp fierce and gers they son, havi that visit ing may civilized understan example o by Mr. Es native ra Lieutenar navy, emb men in th landing or passage be erick Hen

" When

a musket-s

tives, who and lance gestures w native inte language p partly of tribe dwelli but his wor ligible to th loud and wi long time v to lay aside of them wa the others f we also laid however, at "We now

and the inte the sea, sprin the crown of intentions. eral among most cases th depended up this silent con "This they

of them imme the interpret water, and a looking-glasse were received They now beg ing the interp soon increase woods, who w Mr. Hagenhol low water and soon became round the boat even induced t

Meanwhile and they begar able for strength than symmetry - broadbreasted and deep-chested, but with legs not equal in strength to the upper parts of

Their character has been variously given, some travellers describing them as gentle and hospitable, while others decry them as fierce and treacherous. Suspicious of strangers they certainly are, and with good reason, having suffered much from the ships that visited their coasts. A misunderstanding may soon arise between savage and civilized people, especially when neither understands the language of the other. An example of such a misunderstanding is given by Mr. Earle in his valuable work on the native races of the Indian Archipelago. Lieutenant Modera, an officer in the Dutch navy, embarked with several other gentlemen in the ship's boat, for the purpose of landing on the shore of Dourga Strait, a passage between the mainland and Frederick Henry Island.

"When the boat had proceeded to within a musket-shot distance from them, the natives, who were armed with bows, arrows, and lances, commenced making singular gestures with their arms and legs. The native interpreter called out to them in a language partly composed of Ceramese, and partly of a dialect spoken by a Papuan tribe dwelling a little further to the north; but his words were evidently quite unintelligible to them, as they only answered with loud and wild yells. We endeavored, for a long time without success, to induce them to lay aside their weapons, but at length one of them was prevailed upon to do so, and the others followed his example, on which we also laid down our arms, keeping them, however, at hand.

"We now slowly approached each other, and the interpreter, dipping his hand into the sea, sprinkled some of the water over the crown of his head as a sign of peaceful intentions. This custom seems to be general among all the Papuan tribes, and in most cases their peaceful intentions may be depended upon after having entered into this silent compact.

"This they seemed to understand, for two of them immediately did the same, on which the interpreter jumped into the shallow water, and approached them with some looking-glasses and strings of beads, which were received with loud laughter and yells. They now began dancing in the water, making the interpreter join, and the party was soon increased by other natives from the woods, who were attracted by the presents. Mr. Hagenholtz also jumped into the shallow water and joined in the dance, and they soon became so friendly as to come close round the boat; indeed some of them were even induced to get in."

Meanwhile their confidence increased,

exchanging their ornaments, and even their weapons, for beads, mirrors, and cloth. They were very inquisitive about the strange objects which they saw in the boat, and, although they handled everything freely, did not attempt to steal. One of them took up a loaded pistol, but laid it down at once when the owner said it was tapu, or forbidden. Unfortunately, a misunderstanding then took place, which destroyed all the amicable feeling which had been established.

"While all this was going on, they kept drawing the boat—unperceived, as they thought—toward the beach, which determined us to return, as our stock of presents was exhausted, and there seemed no probability of our inducing any of them to go on board with us. Shortly before this, Mr. Boers had ornamented a Papuan with a string of beads, who, on receiving it, joined two of his countrymen that were standing a little distance off with the arms that had been laid aside, but which they had been gradually getting together again—a pro-ceeding we had observed, but, trusting in the mutual confidence that had been estab-

lished, we did not much heed it.
"At the moment in which we were setting off the boat to return on board, this man fixed an arrow in his bow, and took aim at Mr. Boers, who was sitting in the fore part of the boat, on which the latter turned aside to take up his gun, but before he could do so he received the arrow in his left thigh, which knocked him over, shouting, 'Fire' fire! I am hit!' as he fell. The order was scarcely given before every one had hold of his arms (which, as before stated, were kept at hand), and a general discharge put the natives to flight, swimming and diving like ducks.

"Before they took to flight, however, they discharged several more arrows at our people, one of which struck Mr. Hagenholtz in the right knee, another hit a sailor in the leg, while a third pierced a sailor's hat and remained sticking in it; and lastly, a Javanese had the handkerchief shot off his head, but

without receiving any personal injury."

Three of the natives were severely wounded, if not killed, in this unfortunate affair, which evidently arose, as Mr. Earle points out, from misunderstanding, and not from deliberate treachery. Seeing the boats being pulled toward the ships while four of their companions were on board, they probably thought that they were being carried off as captives, as has so often been done along their coast by the slavers. They could not be expected to understand the difference between one white man and another, and evidently mistook the Dutch sailors for slavers, who had come for the purpose of inveigling them into the ships, where they could not be rescued.

and they began to barter with their visitors, agreeable specimens of the Papuan race.

ATION OF THE FORTUNATE MIS-THEIR AGILITY ABORATE ARCHI-PICIOUS NATURE

ost cases manht angles from ke the hair of ew it up into a se out all the f four or five ry coarse and me a mop-like parent size of nt. derived from

In the Malay ifies "crisped" ntracted into face grows in that on the atter case the than on the

a very dark g to black, but with the deep Their features made, though vings, and the is not flat like ninent, rather hat when seen the upper lip. te it in their

hey are a fine es among the y be divided es. The formore remarkand they ornament their bodies with red othre, paying especial attention to their faces, which are made as scarlet as ochre can make them. The hair is deep black, and is worn in various ways. Most of the men plait it in a number of tresses, which fall nearly on the shoulders, while others confine it all into two tails, and several were seen with a curious headdress of rushes, the ends of which were firmly plaited among the hair. They are a dirty set of people, and are subject to diseases of the skin, which give them a very

repulsive appearance. Dress is not used by the men, who, however, wear plenty of ornaments. They mostly have a belt made of plaited leaves or rushes, about five inches wide, and so long that, when tied together behind, the ends hang down for a foot or so. Some of them adorn this belt with a large white shell, placed exactly in the middle. Earrings of plaited rattan, necklaces, and bracelets, were worn by nearly all. Some of them had a very ingenious armlet, several inches in width. It was made of plaited rattan, and fitted so tightly to the limb that, when a native wished to take it off for sale, he was obliged to smear

his arm with mud, and have the ornament drawn off by another person. Their principal weapons are bows, arrows, and spears, the latter being sometimes tipped with the long and sharp claw

of the tree-kangaroo.

The agility of these Papuans is really astonishing. Along the water's edge there run wide belts of mangroves, which extend for many miles in length with scarcely a break in them. The ground is a thick, deep, and soft mud, from which the mangroveroots spring in such numbers that no one could pass through them even at low water without the constant use of an axe, while at high water all passage is utterly impossible.

As the natives, who are essentially maritime in their mode of life, have to cross this belt several times daily in passing from their canoes to their houses, and vice versa, they prefer doing so by means of the upper branches, among which they run and leap, by constant practice from childhood, as easily as monkeys. (See p. 909.) There is really nothing extraordinary in this mode of progress, which can be learned by Europeans in a short time, although they never can hope to attain the graceful case with which the naked savages pass among the boughs. In some places the mangroves grow so closely together that to traverse them is a matter of perfect ease, and Mr. Earle remarks that he once saw a file of marines, with shouldered arms, making their way thus over a man-

They are barely of the middle size, and caeded in reaching the villages, the natives lightly built. Their skin is decidedly black, invariably made off, and climbed into the trees that surrounded the villages

Wild and savage as they are, the Papuans of Dourga Strait display some acquaintance with the luxuries of civilized life and are inordinately fond of tobacco, the one luxury that is common to the highest and lowest races of mankind.

Some travellers have stated that these Papuans are cannibals, and it is certain that their gestures often favor such an opinion.

The Papuans of Dourga Strait are admirable cance men, and paddle with singular skill and power. They always stand while paddling, a plan whereby they obtain a great increase of power, though perhaps at the expense of muscular exertion. They give as their chief reason for preferring the erect position, that it enables them to detect turtle better than if they were sitting, and to watch them as they dive under water after being wounded.

SKIRTING the coast of New Guinea and proceeding northward from Dourga Strait, we come to the OUTANATA River, at the embouchure of which is a tribe that differs much from those natives which have already been described. They are a finer and taller set of men than those of Dourga Strait, and seem to have preserved many of their customs intact since the time when Captain Cook visited them. Their skin is a very dark brown, and is described as having a bluish tinge, and they are said to rub themselves with some aromatic substance which causes them to diffuse an agreeable odor.

It is probable that the bluish gloss may

be due to the same aromatic substance with which the body is perfumed. Mr. Earle thinks that the odoriferous material in question is the bark of the tree called the

rosamala."

The blue tinge is never seen among Papuan slaves, and this circumstance adds force to

Mr. Earle's conjecture.

The features are rather large, especially the mouth, and the lips are thick. The custom of filing the teeth to a sharp point pre-vails among this tribe, but is not universal. The eyes are small, and the septum of the nose is always pierced so as to carry a piece of white bone, a boar's tusk, or some similar ornament. The hair is thick, and, instead of being trained into long tails like that of the Dourga Strait natives, it is plaited from the forehead to the crown.

The men wear scarcely any real dress, many of them being entirely naked, and none of them wearing more than a small piece of bark or a strip of coarse cloth made either of cocoa-nut fibre or of split bamboo. They are, however, exceedingly fond of or-The familiarity of these people with the trees causes them to look upon a tree as a tattooing, or rather scarifying, the body, natural fortress, and as soon as explorers suc-

observ Austra above ! and the duced l and th age fine not wea self on of wove

The v clothing possessi vention ment. a small from the

It is r have the born ch been de extinct goes abo by mean the bark The a

superior Strait. Lieutena feet in le high and stand up doors to t first mist The floor the inhab mats. Es appropria doors wer Over the: to dry in ons were l This ho

women ar much lar raised on The wes clubs, and

form the si

The bow are furnish of bamboo arrows are made of car attached a that of the simple, the point and h ambitious v and furnish The teeth o for this pur tipped with mentioned i Strait spear

Beside the

ges, the natives nbed into the lages e, the Papuans

e acquaintance life and are inhe one luxury est and lowest

ted that these is certain that ch an opinion. rait are admiwith singular ys stand while obtain a great rhaps at the ex-

They give as ring the erect to detect turtle g, and to watch ter after being

ew Guinea and Dourga Strait, River, at the ch have already finer and taller irga Strait, and ny of their cuswhen Captain skin is a very ed as having a d to rub themubstance which eeable odor.

uish gloss may substance with ed. Mr. Earle aterial in quesree called the

among Papuan adds force to

arge, especially nick. The cusharp point prenot universal. septum of the o carry a piece or some similar k, and, instead ils like that of is plaited from

ny real dress, ly naked, and than a small rse cloth made split bamboo. gly fond of orsavage love of ing, the body, t reminds the

observer of the same process among the Australians. The scarifications project above the skin to the thickness of a finger, and the natives say that this effect is produced by first cutting deeply into the flesh, and then applying heat to the wounds. Anklets, bracelets, and other articles of savage finery are common, and a man who does not wear an inch of clothing will pride himself on his boar's teeth necklace, his bracelets of woven rattan, and his peaked rush cap.

The women always wear some amount of clothing, however small, the very fact of possessing apparel of any kind being conventionally accepted as constituting raiment. Their solitary garment consists of a small apron, about six inches square, made

from the cocoa-nut fibre.

It is rather remarkable that these people have the same habit of placing their newborn children in hot sand, as has already been described when treating of the now extinct Tasmanians. When the mother goes about her work, she carries the child by means of a sort of sling made of leaves or the bark of a tree.

The architecture of the Outanatas is far superior to that of their brethren of Dourga Strait. One of these houses, described by Lieutenant Modera, was at least a hundred feet in length, though it was only five feet high and six wide, so that a man could not stand upright in it. There were nineteen doors to this curious building, which was at first mistaken for a row of separate huts. The floor is covered with white sand, and the inhabitants generally seat themselves on mats. Each of these doors seemed to be appropriated to a single family, and near the doors were placed the different fireplaces. Over the roof a fishing net had been spread to dry in the sun, while a number of weapons were hung under the roof.

This house was built in a few days by the women and girls, and was placed near a much larger building, which had been

raised on piles.

The weapons of the Outanatas are spears, clubs, and the usual bow and arrows, which form the staple of Polynesian arms.

The bows are about five feet in length, and are furnished with a string sometimes made of bamboo and sometimes of rattan. The arrows are about four feet in length, and made of cane or reed, to the end of which is attached a piece of hard wood, generally that of the betel-tree. The tips are mostly simple, the wood being scraped to a sharp point and hardened in the fire, but the more ambitious weapons are armed with barbs, and furnished with a point made of bone. The teeth of the sawfish are often employed for this purpose, and a few of the arrows are tipped with the kangaroo claw, as already mentioned in the description of the Dourga Strait spear.

sort of axe made of stone lashed to a wooden handle, but this ought rather to be considered as a tool than a weapon, although it can be used in the latter capacity. With this simple instrument the Outanatas cut down the trees, shape them into canoes, and perform the various pieces of carpentering that are required in architecture.

The most remarkable part of an Outanata's equipment is an instrument which greatly perplexed the earlier voyagers, and led them to believe that these natives were acquainted with fire-arms. Captain Cook, who visited New Guinea in 1770, mentions that as soon as he reached the shore and had left his boat, three natives, or "Indians," as he calls them, rushed out of the wood, and that one of them threw out of his hand something which "flew on one side of him and burnt exactly like powder, but made no report." The two others hurled their spears at the travellers, who were in self-defence obliged to use their fire-arms.

Not wishing to come to an engagement, they retired to the boat, and reached it just in time, the natives appearing in considerable force. "As soon as we were aboard, we rowed abreast of the'n, and their number then appeared to be between sixty and a hundred. We took a view of them at our leisure. They made much the same appearance as the New Hollanders, being nearly of the same stature, and having their hair short-cropped. Like them they also were all stark naked, but we thought the color of their skin was not quite so dark; this, however, might be merely the effect of their

being not quite so dirty.

"All this time they were shouting defiance, and letting off their fires by four or five at a time. What those fires were, or for what purpose intended, we could not imagine. Those who discharged them had in their hands a short piece of stick - possibly a hollow cane - which they swung sideways from them, and we immediately saw fire and smoke, exactly resembling those of a musket, and of no longer duration. wonderful phenomenon was observed from the ship, and the deception was so great that the people on board thought they had firearms; and in the boat, if we had not been so near that we must have heard the report, we should have thought they had been firing volleys."

The reader will doubtless remark here that the travellers were so accustomed to associate fire with smoke that they believed themselves to have seen flashes of fire as well as wreaths of smoke issue from the strange weapon. Many years afterward, Lieutenant Modera contrived to see and handle some of these implements, and found entioned in the description of the Dourga with a mixture of sand and wood-ashes, which could be flung like smoke-wreaths. Beside these weapons, the natives carry a that they were simply hollow bamboos, filled

ons, canoes and the remarkable instrument senting a perfect fair, the boats being laid just described, are illustrated on the follow-

ing page.
Some persons have thought that the naarms, but the interpreters gave it as their opinion that they were employed as signals, the direction of the dust cloud being indicative of the intention of the thrower. Others say that the tubes are really weapons, made for the purpose of blinding their adversaries by flinging sand in their eyes. I cannot agree with this last suggestion, because the other weapons of the Outanatas show that the natives do not fight hand to hand like the New Zealanders. I think that the interpreters were right in their statement that the tubes are used for signalling, and this supposition is strengthened by the fact that the natives of Australia do use smoke for the same purpose, as has already been described.

The canoes of the Outanatas are often of considerable size, measuring fifty or sixty feet, and, although narrow in proportion to their length from stem to stern, containing a great number of men. They are hand-somely carved and adorned with paint, and both ends are flat and broad. The rowers stand up when they use their paddles, which are necessarily of considerable length, having long handles and oval blades slightly hollowed. The narrowness of these canoes strengthens the opinion of several travellers, that the Outanatas are really an inland tribe, descending the river in flotillas, and returning to their inland home when the object of their expedition is accomplished.

They seem to be less suspicious than their countrymen of Dourga Strait, and have no hesitation in meeting Europeans and exchanging their own manufactures for cloth, knives, and glass bottles, the last mentioned objects being always favorite ar-ticles of barter with Polynesian savages, who employ them when entire for holding liquids, and, if they should unfortunately be broken, use the fragments for knives, lancets, points of weapons, and similar pur-Lieutenant Modera describes the appearance of one of their flotillas as repreclosely together, and their decks crowded with natives laden with articles for barter.

Unlike the Dourga Strait natives, those of the Outanata River had no objection to come on board the European ships, and visited the vessels in great numbers. Even their principal chief came on board fre-quently. On the first occasion he disguised his rank, and merely came as an ordinary native, but he afterward avowed himself, and came freely on board in his own character. For convenience' sake he called himself Abrauw, i. e. Abraham, a name by which he was well known for a considerable distance. He offered no objection to going below and entering the Captain's cabin, though his subjects were rather uneasy at his absence, and shouted his name so perseveringly that he was obliged every now and then to put his head out of the cabin window. He had all the regal power of concealing astonishment, and witnessed with utter imperturbability the discharge of frearms, the ticking of watches, and examples of similar marvels. He did, however, display a little interest in the musketry practice, which was directed at a succession of bottles, slung from the yard-arm, but whether he was struck with the accuracy of aim or with the needless destruction of valuable bottles is doubtful.

He seemed to be worthy of his position as chief, and was desirous of establishing an European settlement near the mouth of the Outanata. Unfortunately, the river, although a noble stream, has a sandbar across the mouth which effectually prevents vessels of even light draught from passing except at high water. The people in general were wonderfully honest, not displaying the thievish propensities which cause the visits of many savage tribes to be so troublesome. They even brought on board articles which had been accidentally left on shore. probably owe much of their superiority to their connection with the Malay Mohammedans, many of whom visit New Guinea as

pats being laid lecks crowded es for barter.
natives, those
no objection to ships, and vis-imbers. Even on board fren he disguised s an ordinary owed himself, his own char-ke he called m, a name by a considerable ction to going ptain's cabin, her uneasy at name so perse-every now and he cabin winpower of con-itnessed with charge of fireand examples wever, display tetry practice, sion of bottles, it whether he

his position as stablishing an mouth of the he river, alandbar across events vessels sing except at general were splaying the use the visits troublesome. articles which shore. They superiority to alay Moham-ew Guinea as

of aim or with luable bottles





(2.) THE OUTANATAS AND THEIR WEAPONS. (See page 902.)

NOR ERN HOU WE mus
tribes ca
Haraforas
posed by
rate fami
neighbori
the genei
Bosiesman
Kafir.
This t
shown to
that the y
live in the
guese orig
applied to
just as the
America "
inhabitant
or "Moors
Most of
ceived of
trusted. "
culiarly dis
gloomy, liv
murdering
way. In fi
than the A
tained, how
originated i
yery strong
penetrate in
The reass
traders are
ing all kind

THE ALFO — A FUN ORN THE

CHAPTER XCI.

NEW GUINEA - Concluded.

THE ALFORRS OR HARAFORAS - VARIOUS REPORTS RESPECTING THEM - THERE MODE OF GOVERNMENT - AN ALFOERIAN DIVORCE COURT - TREPANG COLLECTING - DESTRUCTION OF PROPERTY -FUNERAL RITES - TRIBES OF THE SOUTH-EASTERN COAST -- A QUAINT DRUMMER -- DRESS AND ORNAMENT - THE TATTOO - THE FULL-DRESS PETTICOAT - HAIR-DRESSING - EXCELLENCE OF THEIR CANOES — AN INGENIOUS SAIL — HOW TO STOP A LEAK — THE PIG-PET — ARCHITECTURE — DEFENCE AGAINST VERMIN - HOUSES OF REDSCAR BAY - DREAD OF STEEL - TRIBES OF THE NORTH-WEST COAST - THEIR CANOES - MODES OF FISHING - AQUATIC HOUSES - MODE OF GOV-ERNMENT - APPOINTMENT OF A NEW CHIEF - NEW GUINEA WEDDINGS - THE KARWAR, OR HOUSEHOLD GOD - THE WAR-DANCE - CEREMONIES AT FUNERALS.

WE must here give a short space to some ments, which constitute the wealth of the tribes called by various names, such as Haraforas, Alfouras, and Alfoers, and supposed by many ethnologists to be a separate family living in New Guinea and the neighboring islands, but as distinct from the generality of the inhabitants as the Bosjesman of Southern Africa are from the

This theory, however, has now been shown to be untenable, and it is now known that the word Alfoers, or Alfouras, is applied by the tribes of the coast to those who live in the interior. The word has a Portuguese origin, and as Mr. Earle remarks, is applied to the mountaineers of the interior, just as the Spaniards called the aborigines of America "Indians," and the Mohammedan inhabitants of Salee and Mindano " Moros," or "Moors."

Most of the accounts that have been received of the Alfoers are not at all to be trusted. They have been described as peculiarly disgusting and repulsive, ferocious, gloomy, living in the depths of the forest, and murdering all strangers who came in their way. In fact, they have a worse reputation than the Andamaners. It has been ascertained, however, that these evil reports have originated from the coast tribes, who have a very strong objection to allow foreigners to penetrate inland.

The reason is obvious. The visits of the

savage. The natives, having purchased these with articles which to themselves are comparatively valueless, can sell their superabundance to the inland Alfoers, and make an enormous profit on their bargain. If the white men were allowed to go inland and trade directly with the natives, their profitable traffic would be broken up

As far as can be ascertained, the Alfoers are in much the same state as were the Outanatas before they were visited by traders. Those who were seen were remarkable for a certain stupidity of aspect, a taciturnness of disposition, and a slowness of movement, which are not found among the Outanatas. As, however, they were slaves, it is more than likely that these characteristics were the result of servitude.

Subsequently some discoveries were made among the Alfoërs, which entirely contra-dicted the reports of the coast tribes. They are certainly rough in their manners, and if they take a dislike to a foreigner, or if he should perchance offend any of their prejudices, they eject him from the district with more speed than ceremony; taking care, however, not to inflict personal damage, and refraining from confiscating his prop-

erty.
As far as can be ascertained from the with these tribes, there is no regular form traders are exceedingly valuable, furnishing all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating the following traders are exceedingly valuable, furnishing all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating traders are exceedingly valuable, furnishing all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating traders are exceedingly valuable, furnishing all kinds of tools, weapons and ornating traders are exceedingly valuable, furnishing traders are exceedingly valuable traders are exceeding traders are

are an honest set of people, paying the catching as much trepang as possible, and greatest regard to the rights of property; begging from all those whom he visits. At and being so scrupulous in this respect, that if any one should even enter the house of an absent man he is called to account, and made to pay a fine to the owner of the house. A similar law exists with regard to the women. If a man should even touch, though accidentally, the wife of another, he

makes himself liable to a fine.

A curious example of this regulation is mentioned by Lieutenant Kolf. A man set out in his canoe to fish, intending to return in a week; but being caught by contrary winds, he was driven away from his own part of the coast, and was detained two months. Unfortunately he had only left at home provisions for a week, and his wife, finding herself without food, asked a neighbor to provide it for her. This he did, and as, day after day, nothing was heard of the husband, the woman transferred her affec-tions and herself to the neighbor who had assisted her, and the pair went off to another

After two months had elapsed the husband came back, and, not finding his wife, demanded her from her brothers, who were then bound to produce her. They set off in search of the guilty couple, discovered them, and brought them back, when the injured husband demanded an enormous sum by way of fine. The man said that he could not possibly pay such a sum if he were to work for the rest of his lifetime. The affair was eventually brought before the elders, who decided that the husband had done wrong in leaving his wife so ill provided for, and that if he had supplied her with a sufficiency of provisions the acquaintance between herself and her paramour would probably have been avoided. So they decreed that the man should pay a small fine, and advised the husband to leave plenty of provisions at home when he next went out fishing.

The principal object for which the natives make these expeditions is the trepang, or sea-slug (Holothuria), which is in great demand in China, and is purchased by traders from the natives for the Chinese market. It is chiefly by means of the trepang that a man procures a wife. As is the case among many savage tribes, a wife can only be obtained by purchase, so that daughters are quite as valuable to their parents as sons. With the Alfoers, the marriage present must always consist of foreign valuables, such as elephants' tusks, gongs, China dishes, cloth, and similar objects. These are obtained by exchanging trepang with

the traders.

When, therefore, a young man wants a wife, and has settled the amount of the marriage portion with the father, he goes off for a year on a hunting expedition. He takes a canoe, and sails from island to island, it from him.

the end of the year he returns home, knowing that by means of the protective law his house and property will be perfectly safe, and presents himself to the father of the girl with the goods which he has obtained, is seldom that he is able to make up the entire amount at once, but he is allowed to pay by instalments.

Property cannot be inherited, owing to a peculiar custom. As soon as any one dies, his relations assemble, gather together all his valuables, break them to pieces, and throw the fragments away. Even the pre-cious brass gongs are thus broken, the sur-vivors thinking that no one may use any-thing belonging to the dead. Large heaps of broken china, ivory, and metal are found on the outskirts of villages that have existed for any long time, showing that many deaths must have occurred within its limits.

The rest of the funeral ceremonies are curious, and are worthy of a brief descrip-

When death is ascertained, notice is sent to all the relatives of the deceased, who often are scattered widely apart, so that several days usually elapse before they can all assemble. The body meanwhile is kept sprinkled with lime, in order to retard decay as much as possible, and aromatic resins are burned in the house to counteract any ill odor. As the relatives come, they take their places in the house, and begin drinking. Before the traders supplied them with arrack, they had a fermented liquor made by themselves from fruit. They always offer the deceased a share of everything, putting a little food into the mouth of the dead person, and pouring a little liquid between the senseless lips. Meanwhile the women utter loud lamentations, gongs are beaten, and a stunning uproar is kept up until the time of the funeral.

When the relatives have all assembled, a bier is provided, covered with cloth, the quantity and quality of which accord with the wealth of the deceased; and the body is then brought out in front of the house, and supported in a sitting position against a post. The villagers then assemble, and a general feast takes place, a share of which is offered to the deceased as before. Finding that he will neither eat nor drink, in spite of the solicitations of his friends and companions, the body is carried into the woods, where it is placed on a platform erected on four feet.

This being done, the concluding cere-mony is left to the women. They remove all their clothing, and then plant by the side of the platform a young sapling; this cere-mony being called the "casting away of the body," and considered as a symbol that the deceased has done with his body, and thrown

PASST Guinea, borhood. lat. 10° 4

Living islands, i three mil sarily ma another sels. Th ships, and ing no w playing t visitors. One of

ment by mer. Son which he, ately conv merely pot the ship's and began man watch began to in manner, I effect of hi the manne face. He l features w streak of v and anothe bones.

to a strang When they pinch the t and thumb the left they achs, accom gesture with natives seen after several board and to the following great quanti they refused

The mode

The men v of pandanus dress which to the thongconsists of a of pandanus knee. The g these strips, layers of the the other, lil the uppermos waist and tied tect the short shoots off the roof.

On gala day is worn. This strips than tho nary dress, and possible, and he visits. s home, know-tective law his perfectly safe. ther of the girl obtained. It make up the e is allowed to

ed, owing to a any one dies, r together all o pieces, and Even the preoken, the surmay use any-Large heaps etal are found t have existed t many deaths

limits. remonies are brief descrip-

notice is sent leceased, who part, so that fore they can while is kept retard decay atic resins are teract any ill e, they take begin drinked them with liquor made They always f everything, mouth of the little liquid eanwhile the as, gongs are r is kept up

assembled, a h cloth, the d the body is e house, and on against a mble, and a are of which efore. Findor drink, in friends and ied into the a platform

luding cere-They remove at by the side g; this cereaway of the , and thrown

Passing more to the eastward of New Guinea, we come to some interesting nations inhabiting Brumer's Island, and the neighborhood. These islands are situate about lat 10° 45° S. and lon. 150° 23° E.

Living as they do on a number of small islands, the largest being rather less than three miles in width, the natives are necessarily maritime, passing from one island to another in their admirably contrived vessels. They are accustomed to the visits of ships, and boldly put off to meet them, tak-ing no weapons, except for sale, and dis-playing the greatest confidence in their visitors

One of these natives caused great amusement by his imitation of the ship's drum-Some one gave him a large tin can, which he, being a musical genius, immediately converted into a drum. At first he merely pounded it with his hands, but when the ship's drummer was sent into the chains, and began to play upon his instrument, the man watched him for a little time, and then began to imitate him in the most ludicrous manner, his antics and grimaces being especially provocative of laughter. The effect of his buffoonery was heightened by the manner in which he had adorned his face. He had blackened his naturally dark features with charcoal, and had drawn a streak of white paint over each eyebrow, and another under the chin to the cheek-

The mode of salutation is rather ludicrous te a stranger, as it consists of pinching. When they desire to salute any one, they pinch the tip of the nose with the finger and thumb of the right hand, while with the left they pinch the middle of their stomachs, accompanying this odd and complex gesture with the word "Magasaka." These natives seem to be a hospitable people, for, after several of them had been received on board and treated kindly, they returned on the following day, and brought with them a great quantity of cooked yams, for which they refused payment.

The men wear nothing but a small strip of pandanus leaf, but the women have a dress which in principle is exactly similar to the thong-aprons of Southern Africa. It consists of a number of very narrow strips of pandanus leaf, reaching nearly to the knee. The girls wear only a single row of these strips, but the women wear several layers of them, one coming a little below the other, like flounces. In wet weather the uppermost petticoat is taken from the waist and tied round the neck, so as to protect the shoulders from the rain, which shoots off the leaf-strips as off a thatched

On gala days a much handsomer petticoat is worn. This consists of much finer leaf

Some of them which were seen by Mr. M'Gillivray were red and green, with bands of pale yellow and pure white. The tufts of which they were composed were extremely light and soft, and looked like very fine-twisted grass blades. Several of the women, by way of finishing their toilet, had black-ened their faces. This process, if it did not add to their beauty, certainly did not detract from it, as their faces were originally so plain that the black covering could not make them more ugly. The young men and lads formed a curious contrast to the women in this respect, many of them being remarkable for their good looks.

The women usually, though not invariably, divide their hair into a vast number of little tresses, and twist them up like the thrums of a mop, while the men tense out their stiff and wiry locks as much as possible, and fix in them a slender stick, some two feet in length, decorated with a little plume at the top, the base being cut into teeth and so used as a comb.

The inhabitants of Redscar Bay use a more elaborate system of tattooing than that which has been described above. The men generally restrict themselves to certain portions of the body, such as the breast, cheeks, forehead, and arms, and even on those spots the tattooing is comparatively slight. But the women are so covered with blue patterns, that there is hardly a portion of their bodies which has not been thus decorated. They have various patterns, but the usual type is formed by double parallel lines, the intervals between which are filled with smaller patterns, or with zigzag lines. As the dress of the women consists merely of the leaf-strip petticoat, the patterns of the tattooing are very fully displayed.

The hair of the men is dressed here after a rather singular fashion. It is shaved from the forehead for some three inches, and the remainder is combed backward to its full length. A string is then tied round it, so as to confine it as closely as possible to the head, leaving rather more than half its length to be frizzed into a mop-like bundle projecting from the crown.

Those who are especially careful of their personal appearance add an ornament which is not unlike the pigtail of the last century. A tolerably large bunch of hair is gathered together and tied into a long and straight tail, the end of which is decorated with some ornament. In one case, a man had attached to his pigtail a bunch of dogs' teeth. The mouths, naturally wide, are disfigured with the universal custom of chewing the betel-leaf mixed with lime, which stains the lips of a dull brick-red, and makes the whole mouth look as if it had been bleeding.

strips than those which constitute the ordi- sities of color are often seen. Sometimes it The hair is usually black, but some divernary dress, and it is dyed of various colors. is black except the tips of each tress, where

sometimes the whole of the hair is red. In all probability, this change of tint is produced by artificial means, such as limewater, the use of which is known in various parts of New Guines. Those who have the entire hair red have probably dyed it lately, while those who have only the tips red have passed several months without dyeing it. There is but little beard or moustache.

As far as can be judged from appearances.

As far as can be judged from appearances, the women are treated better than is usually the case among savages, and seem to be considered as equal with the men. They are affectionate parents, as was proved by the fact that children were often brought by their

fathers to look at the ships.

The average stature of these natives was rather small, few exceeding five feet four inches in height. They were very active, but not powerful, as was proved by testing their strength against that of the ship's

Allusion has already been made to their skill in boating. These natives possess various canoes, some so small as only to hold, and by no means to accommodate, one person, while others contain with ease fifty or

sixty at once.

The commonest canoe is that which is popularly called a catamaran, and which is more of a raft than a boat. It is formed of three planks lashed together with rattan. The man sits, or rather kneels, a little behind the centre, and is able to propel this simple vessel with great speed. Some of these catamarans are large enough to carry ten or twelve persons, together with a cargo. Instead of being merely three planks, they consist of three great logs of wood laid side by side, and lashed firmly together with rattan at their ends, in the centre, and midway between the centre and each end. There is no particular bow or stern, but the central log is longer than the others, so as to project at each end, and is generally carved into rude patterns, and ornamented with red and

Of course the sea washes freely over this primitive vessel, so that the natives are obliged to erect a small platform in the middle, on which they can place any goods that might be damaged by wetting.

One of the smaller catamarans is shown in the foreground of illustration, No. 2, on the next page, and just behind it is one of the large canoes with its sail struck. Such a favorable, he fixes the lower ends of these canoe as this is about twenty-five feet in length. It consists of two parts, the canoe proper and the outrigger. The canoe proper is very curiously formed. It is cut from the trunk of a tree, and, in spite of its length, is not more than eighteen or nineteen inches in extreme width. The most curious part of its construction is, that the sides, after bulging out below, come to-gether above, so that the space between the

erally raised well above the water, and are carved into the semblance of a snake's or turtle's head, and decorated with paint, tufts of feathers, shells, and similar orna-

ments.

The outrigger is as long as the cance, to which it is attached by a series of light poles to the gunwale of the canoe itself. The method by which the outer ends of the poles are fastened to the outrigger is very curious, and can be better understood by reference to the illustration than by a description. Like the ends of the cance, those of the outrigger poles are fashioned into a snake-like form.

The natives can run along these poles to the outrigger with perfect safety, often sit-ting upon it when the wind is high, so as to preserve the balance of the vessel. In many canoes, however, a slight platform is laid upon these poles, so as greatly to increase the burthen-carrying space of the vessel; and a corresponding but smaller platform projects from the opposite side of the canoe. On this platform several paddlers are stationed, finding it easier to work their longhandled paddles from the platform than from the narrow space of the canoe itself.

The sail is made of strips of palm leaf, interlaced with each other. When it is not required, the sail is struck and rolled up, so as to occupy as little room as possible, and the mast can also be struck, like those of our sailing barges while passing under a bridge.

Two other kinds of New Guinea canoes are shown in the same illustration. These canoes are not found in the same part of New Guinea, but, as the natives travel in them for considerable distances, they have been brought together in the same illustration for the convenience of comparison.

Beyond the large canoe is a smaller one, with a sail that is set in rather a curious manner. There is no mast, but the two edges of the sail are fastened to slight spars, and when the native finds the wind to be spars in the canoe, and supports the upper ends by stays or ropes that were fore and aft. The reader will notice the pointed end of the cylindrical outrigger. On the opposite side to the outrigger is a slight platform made of planks. The platform itself is out of sight, but the reader may see the heads and shoulders of the two men who are sitting on it.

This canoe is made near Redscar Point,

es, there is only o pass into the on of the canoe very much like ersed, thus—U, nwales from interthem through-

catamaran, both
They are genwater, and are
of a snake's or
ed with paint,
l similar orna-

as the canoe, to series of light he canoe itself, the canoe itself, the canoe itself, the canoe, those ashioned into a

these poles to afety, often sits high, so as to sseel. In many latform is laid tly to increase of the vessel; naller platform le of the cance, addlers are staork their longplatform than cance itself.

of palm leaf,
When it is not
d rolled up, so
is possible, and
like those of our
under a bridge.
Guinea cances
tration. These
o same part of
tives travel in
nees, they have
same illustraomparison.

a smaller one, ther a curious to, but the two to slight spars, the wind to be ends of these outs the upper were fore and he pointed end On the oppoa slight platplatform itself er may see the two men who

Redscar Point,



(L) THE MONKEY MEN OF DOURGA STRAIT. (See page 900.)



(2.) CANOES OF NEW GUINEA. (See page 908.)

and, exce is somewibuilt at ibetween a are rather tempt at c

The car is the moi body of the of a tree, form at ea the ends is eral feet is ends into l cannot for about two opening of the seams be tight.

tight.
These pringeneral singularly water white provided to reason to reason to render it with this price to render it with this pri

The most we are now clumsy as it ment on thos described, instrimmed to s
The mast,

The mast, upright when but is so sho ience when the alone are empinto a hole in cance, and is extends across to the other stout projecting a hole.

a hole.
The sail is r
tween two slig
it can be rolled
form of the ou
by which the s
fixed to the n
through the h
the mast-head,
end, constitutin
When the cr
about, they do
ner, merely let

and, except in the arrangement of the sail, is somewhat similar to the vessels which are built at Brumer Island. The paddles are between six and seven feet in length, and the vessel at once obeys the new impulse, are rather clumsily formed, without any attempt at ornament

The cance to the right of the illustration is the most curious of these vessels. The body of the canoe is made out of the trunk of a tree, which is first shaped to a conical form at each end, and then hollowed. Over the ends is firmly fixed a piece of wood, several feet in length, so as to make the two ends into hollow cones into which the water cannot force its way. The gunwale is raised about two feet by planks which box in the opening of the canoe, and act as wash-boards, the seams being pitched and rendered water-

tight.
These particulars are mentioned because in general the natives of New Guinea are singularly indifferent as to the amount of water which is taken in by their canoes, provided that they are not sunk. There is, for example, one kind of New Guinea canoe found in Coral Haven, in which the gunwales are not connected at the stern, which is left open. The water would of course rush in, were it not that one of the crew sits in the opening, forcing his body into it so as to render it temporarily water-tight. Even with this precaution it is impossible to prevent some water from making its way be-tween the body of the man and the sides of the canoe, as it heels over by the force of the wind, and in squally weather another of the crew is obliged to keep perpetually baling with a large shell.

The most curious part of the canoe which we are now examining is the sail, which, clumsy as it looks, is a very great improve-ment on those which have been previously described, inasmuch as it can be shifted and trimmed to suit the wind.

The mast, instead of being merely stuck upright when wanted, is permanently fixed, but is so short that it causes no inconvenience when the sail is struck and the paddles alone are employed. It is fixed, or "stepped,' into a hole in a board at the bottom of the cance, and is lashed to a transverse spar that extends across the canoe from one gunwale to the other. At the head of the mast is a

The sail is made by matting stretched between two slight spars, and when not wanted it can be rolled up and laid up on the platform of the outrigger. The halyard, a rope by which the sail is hauled to its place, is fixed to the middle of the sail, and passes through the hole in the projecting arm of the mast-head. Ropes are fastened to each end, constituting the "tack" and the "sheet." the vessel at once obeys the new impulse, and goes off in the required direction.

The cance is steered with one special paddle some nine feet in length, of which the oblong, rounded blade occupies half.

THE inhabitants of the New Guinea coasts are remarkable for their skill in swimming and diving. When H. M. S. Rattlesnake wa off New Guinea, the anchor of one of the boats caught in the coral, and could not be dislodged. An old man who was standing on the beach saw that something was wrong, and swam off to the boat. He soon understood the case, and, after diving several times, succeeded in clearing the anchor, a feat for which he was rewarded by an axe. He always dived feet foremost, without an effort, and remained under water for about half a minute.

It is rather curious that the love of pigs which is found among the New Zealanders should be quite as strongly developed among the natives of New Guinea. The girls and women make great pets of them, and it is not at all an uncommon event to see a young girl tripping along in all the graceful freedom of the savage, holding a young pig in her arms, and caressing and talking to it as an European girl talks to her doll, or to her pet landog. These pigs are long-legged, black-skinned, stiff-haired animals, not at all agreeing with our ideas of a pig's proper form.

The dress used by the women consists of slender leaf-strips, and forms a really graceful costume. Many of the women employ a kind of tattooing, though they do not carry it to such an extent as to disfigure themselves. The patterns, though claborate, are very small and delicate, and extend over a considerable portion of the body. The arms and front of the body display a regular pattern, which is usually carried over the shoulder for a little way, but leaves the back untouched. The most delicate pattern is reserved for the arm and waist, where it looks like a delicate blue lace fitting tightly to the skin. The women are very proud of this ornament, and are always gratified when a stranger expresses admiration of it. stout projecting arm, through which is bored men occasionally use the tattoo, but in a comparatively scanty manner, confining the patterns to a star or two on the breast. Now and then a man will have a double series of stars and dots extending from the centre of the chest to the shoulders, but on an average a native of this part of the country is not so much tattooed as an ordinary English sailor.

The architecture of this part of New Guinea differs from that of Dourga Strait in When the crew wish to put their canoe about, they do so in a very expeditious man-similar that we will take a few examples as being much more elaborate, but throughout ner, merely letting go the ropes and hauling representatives of the whole group of islands.

All the houses are elevated on posts like those of the Nicobar Islands, but have several

improvements in architecture.

The posts vary in number according to the size of the house, and about four feet from the ground each post passes through a wide circular wooden disc, which serves as an effectual barrier against the rats and snakes, which would otherwise take possession of the dwellings. The posts are connected together at about five feet from the ground

by rafters, on which the floor is laid.

These rafters, or joists, support a row of poles laid horizontally side by side, and upon them are laid crosswise a great number of slighter spars, thus forming a framework, on which is fixed the floor itself, which consists of a number of thin planks taken from the cocoa-nut tree. The supporting posts are about ten feet in total length, and are connected at their tops by horizontal poles, on which a second or upper floor is fixed, precisely similar to the principal floor, though much smaller. On this upper floor are kept the weapons, implements, provisions, and similar articles, for which accommodation cannot be found on the principal floor. A supply of water, for example, is generally kept in the huts, a number of empty cocoanut shells being used in lieu of bottles, and closed at the orifice by a plug of grass. In fact, they are identical in principal with the ostrich-egg vessels of the South African savage, which have been already described upon a preceding page.

Entrance is gained to the house by a square hole in the flooring, and the primitive stair-case by which the inhabitants ascend into their houses is equally simple and effectual. It is necessary that the stairs—if we may use the term — should be so constructed, that while human beings can easily obtain access to the house, the rats and other vermin shall be kept out. If an ordinary ladder or even a notched pole were fixed to the house, the rats and snakes would be sure to climb up it and take possession of the dwelling. The native architect, therefore, proceeds after a

different fashion.

Immediately under the opening in the floor he fixes two stout posts in the ground, leaving them to project rather more than three feet. The posts have forked heads, and upon them is laid a transverse pole, which is firmly lashed to them. From this transverse pole another pole is laid to the ground, so as to form an inclined plane up which the inhabitants of the house can walk. It will now be seen, that if a man walk up the inclined pole, to the transverse one, he can pass along the latter in a stooping attitude until he comes to the opening in the floor. He can then pass his body through the opening and lift himself to the level of the floor, while the space which intervenes between the horizontal post and the floor affords an effectual barrier against the rats and other vermin.

The reader will better understand this description by comparing it with illustration No. 1, on the 916th page, which represents three of these huts. That on the right is seen from the end, and is represented as half finished, in order to show the structure of the interior.

The sides and roof of the hut are formed of slight spars which are lashed together by a framework, so as to form a support for the thatching. This is made of coarse grass pulled up by the roots in large tufts, and covered with an outer layer of cocoa-nut leaves. If the house be a large one, there is an entrance at each end, and another in the middle, each being closed with neatly woven mats. Similar but coarser mats are fastened to the lower portion of the sides, in order to exclude the wind.

Up to this point the architecture is identical throughout the island, but a divergence takes place in the shape of the house itself. according to the locality. The usual form is that which is represented in the illustration, Such a house as is there drawn is on the average thirty feet in length, nine in width, and thirteen in total height, so that a space of about three feet intervenes between the upper floor and the roof. The central figure of the illustration shows the side view of a finished hut, and the left-hand figure shows the end view of a similar dwel-

In some places, however, such for example as Redscar Bay, the form of the houses is different. Instead of having the slender poles which form the framework of the walls bent over in a curved form, they are arranged so as to make a lofty and sharply-pointed gable roof. A house of this description, which measures thirty feet in length, will reach, on an average, twenty-five feet in height. There is no distinction between the roof and walls of the huts, except that the lower portion of the roof is covered with sheets of a bark-like substance, which is supposed to be the base of the cocoa-nut leaf flattened by pressure. The entrance or door of these huts is at one end, and is covered with a mat as has already been mentioned. Access is obtained by a sloping pole resting on a short post. In some of these huts a number of spears were seen in the interior, lashed along the sides, together with several human skulls; but whether the latter were intended as ornaments, or whether they were preserved in memorial of the dead owners, is not certain.

The people who inhabit Redscar Bay and its vicinity exhibited a curious mixture of shyness and confidence. They came freely to the ships as they anchored in the bay, and were very anxious to be admitted on board, peeping into the ports in the most inquisitive manner, and holding up their weapons and implements for sale. They have in use a rather remarkable arrow, with

a head in scoop.

One of The shaft i a reed, and piece of h wooden tip alips the h eight inche boo, the re leave a pie in width in to one end to the other can be slip arrow.

Bamboo but of a la and are sha biting off a M'Gillivray a native the when he fo he produced piece of wo steel over b ously with it

Strangely fled with the man was so his canoe, ca explained to been done. but he looke aggravation clined all or This aversion alent among New Guinea The bow b

pelled is a v made weapor six feet in le hard and tou cocoa-nut tre a strong arm strip of ratta been mention Australia.

Passing to we find that t are not very d long to their l Taking the D that they oft the high and r family, and marched noses, thin as those o of these nativ nance which is that several i there must he foreign blood. case, these pec dividual, and n ture.

inderstand this it with illustrae, which reprehat on the right represented as w the structure

hut are formed hed together by support for the of coarse grass large tufts, and er of cocoa-nut ge one, there is another in the th neatly woven ats are fastened ides, in order to

tecture is idenout a divergence the house itself. he usual form is the illustration. rawn is on the , nine in width, so that a space es between the The central

shows the side d the left-hand a similar dwel-

uch for example f the houses is ng the slender ork of the walls ney are arranged sharply-pointed his description, in length, will nty-five feet in ion between the except that the s covered with ce, which is supe cocoa-nut leaf ntrance or door and is covered een mentioned. ng pole resting of these huts a in the interior, ner with several the latter were ether they were

edscar Bay and ous mixture of ey came freely ed in the bay, e admitted on ts in the most lding up their or sale. They ble arrow, with

e dead owners,

a head in the form of a pointed gouge or

One of these arrows is in my collection. The shaft is made in the usual manner from a reed, and is weighted at one end with a piece of hard and heavy wood. Into this wooden tip is cut a deep groove, into which slips the butt of the head. This is about eight inches in length, and is made of bamboo, the reed being nearly cut away so as to leave a piece rather more than half an inch in width in the middle, and tapering gently to one end so as to form a point, and abruptly to the other end in order to form a butt which

Bamboo scoops of a similar description, but of a larger size, are used as knives, and are sharpened by the simple process of biting off a piece of the edge. When Mr. M'Gillivray visited New Guinea, he asked a native the use of the bamboo scoop; and when he found that it was used as a knife, he produced his own knife, and, taking up a piece of wood, he showed the superiority of steel over bamboo by cutting a stick vigor-

ously with it.

Strangely enough, instead of being gratified with the performance of the knife, the man was so frightened that he pushed off his canoe, called his friends around him, and explained to them the terrible deed that had been done. The knife was offered to him, but he looked upon the proffered gift as an aggravation of the original offence, and declined all overtures toward reconciliation. This aversion to steel was found to be prevalent among the inhabitants of this part of New Guinea

The bow by which these arrows are propelled is a very effective though clumsily made weapon. My own specimen is about six feet in length, and is made from some ax feet in length, and is made from some hard and tough wood, apparently that of the cocoa-nut tree. It is very stiff, and requires a strong arm to draw it. The string is a strip of rattan, like that which has already been mentioned when treating of North

Australia.

Passing to the north-west of the island, we find that their appearance and manners are not very dissimilar from those which belong to their brethren of the southern coast. Taking the Dory people as our type, we find that they often display good examples of the high and narrow forehead of the Papuan family, and many of them have narrow and arched noses, together with lips nearly as thin as those of an European. Indeed, some of these natives possess a cast of counte-nance which is so like that of an European that several travellers have thought that there must have been some admixture of foreign blood. Such, however, is not the case, these peculiarities belonging to the individual, and not implying any foreign mix-

The cances of this part of the country are rather different from those of the southern coast. The mast is made of three distinct spars, united at their tops. Two of them are fastened to the side by pins passing through them, on which they work back-ward and forward, as if on hinges. The third is not fastened to the vessel, but its butt fits into a cavity from which it can be removed at pleasure. If, therefore, the natives wish to use their paddles, all they have to do is to lift the foot of this spar out of its socket, when the whole of the triple mast can be lowered on deck. When the wind can be slipped into the wooden tip of the becomes favorable, and the sail is to be employed, the masts are raised again, the butt of the third spar is stepped into its socket, and the triple mast is thus kept firmly upright. A similar contrivance is now proposed for our ships of war, as these triple masts made of three slight iron bars cannot be so easily shot away as the single and solid mast

The natives are very expert canoe-men, and are accustomed to the use of their vessels from childhood. Even the small boys have their little canoes, which are so light that they can be carried to and from the

water without difficulty.

They excel as fishermen, being as expert in the water as on it. The trepang fishery is energetically conducted by them, as it is by the sale of trepang to the merchants that they obtain the greater part of the foreign luxuries on which they set so high a value. The hawksbill turtle is captured principally for the sake of the shell, which is also purchased by the traders, and, together with mother-of-pearl shell, is mostly sent to the Chinese markets.

The mode of fishing with a net is much the same as on all these coasts. The net is three or four feet in depth, and a hundred feet or more in length. The meshes are about an inch in width. One edge is furnished with a row of flat pieces of light wood, which act as floats, and along the other edge are fastened a number of perforated shells by

way of weights.

When the natives wish to use this net, they place it in a canoe, and look out for a shoal of fish. As soon as a favorable op-portunity is found, the canoe is taken to seaward of the shoal, and let carefully into the water. Each end is taken in charge by one or two men, who bring the net round the shoal in semi-circular form, so as to enclose the fish. These men gradually approach each other, while another man beats the water with a pole, or flings stones into it, so as to frighten the fish into the enclosure. As soon as the two ends of the net have been brought together, the canoe comes up, and the net with the fish hanging in its meshes, is hauled on board. They also use fish-traps, like those which have been already described in the account of Australia, sinking them by

means of a stone, and raising them by a together with the wives and families of cord, to the end of which a bamboo buoy is those who are married. All cooking is car-

They are tolerable smiths, and have a kind of bellows identical in principle with those of savage Africa, but worked in a different manner. Instead of having a couple of inflated skins, they have a pair of wide bamboo tubes, about four feet in length, the lower ends of which are buried in the earth, and connected by means of channels with the hole in which the fire is made. The pistons are formed of bunches of feathers tied to bamboos, and the blower works them alternately up and down, so as to produce a tolerably constant blast. It is remarkable that the bellows of the Chinese itinerant jeweller are fitted with feather pistons. It is most probable that these bellows have been borrowed from the more eastern

As to the actual working of the metal, it bears a curious similitude to that which is employed in savage Africa. The anvil is generally a stone, unless the native smiths can procure an iron "pig" or a piece of a broken anchor. They can work in silver and copper as well as iron, melting the two former metals and running them into moulds, former metals and running them into moulds, being the capture of slaves, each of whom to be afterward beaten and worked into is valued at fifty shillings.

The architecture of these tribes is rather remarkable. Like the generality of houses in New Guinea, the huts are raised on stakes in order to preserve them from ver-min; but those of the Dory people are similarly elevated in order to preserve them from water. These natives have a curious predilection for building their huts on the sea-shore, and place them below the level of of architecture by building a long pler, or rather jetty, which extends far into the sea, and which keeps open a communication between the house and the shore.

At the end of this jetty the hut itself is situated, and is made of boarded walls and a thatched roof. Great as is the labor that is bestowed upon it, the house does not come up to our ideas of comfort. In the first place, the floors are made of rough spars, placed parallel to each other, but still far enough apart to cause some uneasiness. not to say danger, to an unpractised walker.

A good specimen of a Dory house is about seventy feet long, twenty-five wide, and fifteen high. Along the centre runs s tolerably wide passage, and at either side are a number of rooms, separated from each other and from the passage by mats. At the end next the sea there are no walls, but only a roof, so that a sort of verandah is formed, under which the inhabitants spend much of their time when they are much of their time when they are not actively employed. Such a house as this is usually occupied by some forty or fifty indi-viduals, consisting of about twenty men, taxes. Should he fail to comply with these

ried on by the different families in their own chambers, each of which is furnished with its own fireplace.

The dress of the Dory natives varies but little from that of other Papuans of New Guines. The men, however, often ornament their bodies with raised scars like those of the Australians, and they are fond of tattooing their breasts and arms with figures of their weapons. They are fond of ornaments, such as shells, twisted wire, and armlets of plaited rattan. They ingeniously utilize the latter ornament by plaiting a very thick and strong bracelet, and wearing it on the left wrist and fore-arm, so as to protect the wearer from the recoil of the bowstring.

Though not a warlike people, they always go armed, carrying the invariable parang, or chopper, which, as its very name imparts, is procured from the Malay tribes. These parangs are chiefly made in Borneo, as we shall see when we come to treat of the Dyaks. The Dory Papuans do not seem to fight, as do some savage tribes, for the mere love of combat; the chief object of warfare

This value is, however, a conventional term; and when a bargain is made with the Dory people for so many slaves, in most cases the conventional money value is intended, and not the actual slaves. In fact, the word "slaves" is used much as we use the word "horses" in reckoning the power of a steam-engine, or "tons" in describing the capacity of a ship. Perhaps the words "pony" and "monkey," of modern sporting slang, are better illustrations:

Still, slavery is rife among the Dory people, who sometimes make a raid into a district, capture a village, and carry off the inhabitants into servitude. They do not, however, treat their captives badly, but feed them well, and seem to consider them partly in the light of domestic servants, and partly as available capital, or as a means of exchange when any of their own friends are taken prisoners by hostile tribes.

The government of the Dory tribes is nominally a delegated chieftainship, but in reality a sort of oligarchy. There is a certain dignitary, called the Sultan of Tidore, under whose sway this part of the country is supposed to be, and from him the chief of the Dory tribes receives his rank. When convey the news to the Sultan, taking with him a present of slaves and birds of paradise as tokens of allegiance. This man is almost always appointed to the vacant place, and is bound to pay a certain tribute of slaves, provisions, and war canoes, the latter

nd families of cooking is carmilies in their ch is furnished

natives varies ar Papuans of however, often aised scars like they are fond and arms with hey are fond of isted wire, and leey ingeniously by plaiting a st, and wearing e-arm, so as to be recoil of the

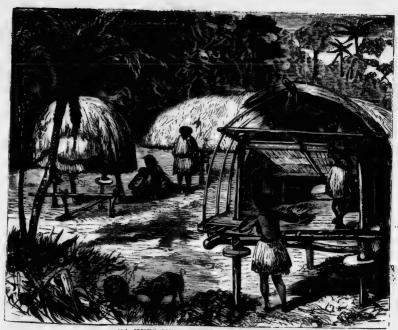
de, they always ariable parang, name imparts, tribes. These Borneo, as we o treat of the do not seem to es, for the mere ject of warfare each of whom

a conventional made with the slaves, in most by value is inlaves. In fact, such as we use ing the power in describing the words to deep aps the words ordern sporting

the Dory peccaid into a discarry off the They do not, badly, but feed consider them c servants, and as a means of ir own friends or tibes.

or tribes is ainship, but in There is a certan of Tidore, of the country im the chief of rank. When latives goes to n, taking with birds of parathis man is e vacant place,

ain tribute of noes, the latter g the Sultan's ply with these



(1.) HUTS, NEW GUINEA. (See page 912.)



(2.) DANCE BY TORCHLIGHT, NEW GUINEA. (See page 917.)

conditions, the Sultan sacked; so

anxieties as
His auth
for he dec
matters, les
council of
justice with
really good
lenient, are
old Jewish

tooth for th Marriages manner, the opposite eathe former and tobacco ent, and tak stitute the w

The idel called the I house exec Mohammeds wooden figu height, larg long-nosed, face being a sholding a wrapper on the head.

The Karwithe life of a his birth, tak we have see In all cases consulted, th tions, and ab feel nervous, posed to be are plenty of supplementar.

are plenty of supplementar. Without go various tribes earth, we will interesting cur

These Papu flowers, especi powerful scent in their hair, v their necks, an lets and armlet

They are fon as far as has habit of compos as singing those heart. As for they consist ch a trumpet made of Pandean pip reeds of differe gether. There which is nothing two feet in length.

two feet in leng
Accompanied
perform their co
has been well de

for he decides nothing but unimportant matters, leaving more weighty subjects to a council of elders, who, as a rule, administer justice with impartiality. Their laws are really good and sensible, and, though lenient, are based on the principle of the old Jewish law, the eye for the eye and the tooth for the tooth.

Marriages are managed in a very simple manner, the bride and bridegroom sitting opposite each other, in front of an idol, and the former giving the latter some betel-leaf and tobacco. His acceptance of the pres-ent, and taking the hand of the giver, constitute the whole of the ceremony.

The idol which has been mentioned is called the Karwar, and is found in every house except those which belong to Mohammedan natives. The Karwar is a wooden figure, about eighteen inches in height, large-headed, wide-mouthed, and long-nosed, — this peculiarity of the Papuan face being exaggerated. It is represented as holding a shield, and wearing a calico wrapper on the body and a handkerchief on

The Karwar plays an important part in the life of a Dory native. It is present at his birth, takes part in his funeral, and, as we have seen, is witness to his marriage. In all cases of perplexity the Karwar is consulted, the devotee stating his inten-tions, and abandoning them if he should feel nervous, such a sensation being sup-posed to be the Karwar's answer. There supplementary to the Karwar.

Without going into the details of the

various tribes which inhabit this part of the earth, we will glance at a few of the most

interesting customs.

These Papuans have a strong love for flowers, especially those which possess a powerful scent. They twine such flowers in their hair, weave them into garlands for their necks, and carry them in their bracelets and armlets.

They are fond of singing and music, and, as far as has been ascertained, are in the habit of composing extempore songs, as well as singing those ditties which they know by heart. As for their musical instruments, they consist chiefly of the cylindrical drum, a trumpet made of a triton shell, and a sort of Pandean pipe, composed of six or seven reeds of different lengths lashed firmly together. There is also a wind instrument, which is nothing but a bamboo tube some two feet in length.

Accompanied by these instruments, they perform their curious dances, one of which has been all dearthed by the second

conditions, his village would be attacked by the Sultan's fleet, and the whole district ransacked; so that the position of chief has its anxieties as well as its privileges.

They advanced and retreated together by sudden jerks, beating to quick or short time as required, and chanting an accompanying song, the cadence rising and falling accordsong, the cadence rising and falling according to the action. The attitude was a singular one—the back straight, chin protruded, knees bent in a crouching position, and the arms advanced.

"On another occasion, one of the same men exhibited himself before us in a war dance. In one hand he held a large wooden shield, nearly three feet in length, and rather more than one in width, and in the rather more than one in width, and in the other a formidable looking weapon, two feet in length—a portion of the shout of the sword-fish, with long, sharp teeth projecting on each side. Placin, himself in a crouching attitude, with one hand covered by the shield, and holding his weapon in a position to strike he advanced variable in a position to strike, he advanced rapidly in a succession of short bounds, striking the inner side of his shield with his left knee at each jerk, causing the large cowries hung round his waist and ankles to rattle violently. At the same time, with flerce gestures, he loudly chanted a song of defiance. The remainder of the pantomine was expressive of attack and defence, and exultation after victory.

"But a still more curious dance was once performed a few nights ago by a party of natives who had left the ship after sunset, and landed abreast of the anchorage. On seeing a number of lights along the beach, we at first thought they proceeded from a fishing party, but on looking through a night-glass the group was seen to consist of night-glass the group was seen to consist of above a dozen people, each carrying a blazing torch, and going through the move-ments of the dance. At one time they extended rapidly into line, at another closed dividing into two parties, advancing and retreating, crossing and recrossing, and mixing up with each other. This continued for half an hour, and, it having apparently been got up for our amusement, a rocket was sent up for theirs, and a blue light burned, but the dancing had ceased, and the lights disappeared."

An accompanying illustration represents this wild and curious scene. In the foreground are the dancers, each with his torch in his hand, and indulging in the grotesque movements of the dance. To the left are seen the musicians, one playing on the bamboo pipe, and the other beating the drum which has before been mentioned. One of these drums is lying in the foreground. It is a hollow cylinder of palm wood, about two feet in length and four inches in diameter. One end is covered with lizard-skin, and along the side there run longitudinal slits. The native name for this drum is "baiatú."

Accompanied by these instruments, they perform their curious dances, one of which has been well described by Mr. M'Gillivray.

grave, its head resting on an earthenware dish. The weapons and ornaments of the dead man are laid in the grave, which is finished, the idol is laid upon it, and idol then filled up, and a thatched roof erected and roof are left to decay together. As is

war is placed near the grave, and violently

over it.

Should the deceased be a head of a family. the Karwar is brought to perform its last afterward, those which celebrate the deaths duties. When the man is buried, the Karwar is placed near the grave, and violently

POSITION AND - RESI

-THE SOUND THEIR DEAD-

To the nor eral islands under the They consists Luza, and th dano, are by

The mante two kinds; The inhab the aborigin aged to the formed a nur course of the Malay race, present, and little negroes account of the

This strang by a name wi By some writ Ahitas, and b way, is prono Aheetas. The Ajitas

jesmans of Scheight being f well shaped, ar dark hue, are negro tribes. good, except rather flat, and ciency of chin. of other Papus how to dress it ers for allowing tched roof being pon it, and idol together. As is uneral feasts are nd for some days brate the deaths a whole month.

CHAPTER XCII.

THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS.

THE AJITAS, OR AHITAS.

POSITION AND DIMENSIONS OF THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS - THE MALAYS AND THE NEGRITOS, OR AJITAS - RESEMBLANCE TO THE BOSJESMAN - THE BOW AND POISONED ARROWS - SKILL IN ARCHERY - THE SAVAGE INSTINCT - MEETING A PARTY OF AJITAS - THEIR APPEARANCE, AND CHIRPING SOUND OF THEIR LANGUAGE — CONCILIATING THE ABORIGINES — GOVERNMENT OF THE AJITAS — THEIR ACTIVITY IN HUNTING - NOMADIC PROPENSITIES OF THE AJITAS - REVERENCE FOR THE

To the north-west of New Guinea lie sev- | round the head. The eyes are remarkable eral islands, which are grouped together under the general name of Philippines. They consist of a considerable number of islands, of which the northern island, called Luza, and the southern island, called Magin-

dano, are by far the largest.

The inhabitants of the Philippines are of two kinds; namely, the Malays and the Negritos. The former are evidently not hear the property of the Negritos. The former are evidently not the aboriginal inhabitants, but have voyaged to the islands in their canoes and formed a number of settlements. As in the course of the work we shall see much of the Malay race, we will pass them by for the present, and only notice the Negritos, or little negroes, so called by the Spanish on account of their dark skins and small size.

This strange little race is mostly known by a name which is given in different forms. By some writers it is spelt Ajitas, by some Ahitas, and by others Itas. Of these different forms. ent forms I select the first, which, by the way, is pronounced as if it were spelled

The Ajitas are quite as small as the Bosjesmans of Southern Africa, their average height being four feet six inches. They are well shaped, and their skins, though of a very dark hue, are not so black as those of the negro tribes. The features are tolerably good, except that the nose is broad and rather flat, and that there is a marked defi-ciency of chin. The hair is woolly, like that for a decided yellow tinge.

In common with other savages who lead an uncertain kind of life, fasting sometimes for two days together, and then gorging themselves like wolves, they are apt to have their limbs and projecting stomachs with a recurved back such as is the case with the Bosjesman, the back being bent like the letter S. Their shape is in no way concealed by their dress, which is nothing more than a wide belt of plaited bark fastened round the waist.

In many respects there is a great similarity between the Bosjesman and the Ajita. The latter live by the chase and by plunder, The latter live by the chase and by plunder, having no idea of agriculture. They always go armed, their weapons being bamboo lances and bows and arrows, the latter being poisoned. The effect of the poison with which they are tipped is to produce an unextinguishable thirst in the animal, which socks the passest water dripks and dies seeks the nearest water, drinks, and dies. As soon as it is dead, the hunter cuts away the flesh from around the wound, as the poison would otherwise communicate so bitter a taste to the whole carcass that the flesh could not be eaten.

Their bows are but slight, as are their arrows, the poison doing the work of death, and the depth of the wound being of no con-sequence. They are skilful archers, having the bow and arrow in their hands from inciency of chin. The hair is woolly, like that of other Papuans, and, as they do not know how to dress it, they wear it in a sort of mop

wading along the banks of streams and shoot- them. As soon as they comprehended us,

ing the fish.

Like the Bosjesman, the Ajita is always at feud with the other races that inhabit the same country, and, small as he is, makes himself dreaded by reason of his poisoned weapons. Sometimes Ajitas are taken prisoners, and are generally enslaved. As they are light, active, and not bad-looking, they are often employed as servants by the digni-

taries of Manilla. One of these people was in the household of an Archbishop of Manilla, and was educated by him with great care. To all appearance he was thoroughly civilized, and at last was ordained priest. But the instincts of his savage nature were too strong for him, and the man escaped from his position and civilized society, threw off his gar-ments, and rejoined his savage relatives. Such instances are continually occurring, and it is almost impossible to retain an Ajita in civilized society, no matter how well he

when captured.

The habits of the Ajitas are essentially of a savage character, and, as a rule, travellers in the Philippines are obliged to be very careful lest they should suddenly be set upon by these dangerous little creatures. Sometimes, however, they can be gentle, and even hospitable, and an instance of such conduct is related by M. de la Gironière, part of whose narrative has been translated and quoted by Mr. Earle: "We directed our course toward the north, among mountains always covered with thick forests, and which, like those we had just quitted, presented no traced route, excepting a few narrow pathways beaten by wild beasts. We advanced with caution, for we were now in the parts inhabited by the Ajitas. At night we concealed our fires, and one of us always acted as sentinel, for what we feared most was a surprise.

"One morning, while pursuing our way in silence, we heard before us a chorus of squeaking tones, which had more resem-blance to the cries of birds than to the human voice. We kept on our ground, concealing our approach as much as possible with the aid of the trees and brambles. All at once we perceived at a little distance about forty savages, of all sexes and ages, who had absolutely the air of animals. They were on the banks of a rivulet, surrounding a great fire. We made several steps in advance, and presented the butt-end of our guns toward them. As soon as they per-ceived us, they set up shrill cries and prepared to take to flight; but I made signs to them, by showing them some packets of ci-gars, that we wished to offer them for their

acceptance.

they ranged themselves into a line, like men preparing for a review; this was the signal that we might approach. We went up to them with our cigars in our hands, and I commenced distributing them from one extremity of the line. It was very important that we should make friends with them, and give each an equal share, according to their custom. The distribution being over, an alliance was cemented, and peace concluded, when they commenced smoking.

"A deer was hanging to a tree, from which the chief cut three large slices with a knife of bamboo, and threw them upon the fire, and, drawing them out an instant afterward, presented a piece to each of us. The exterior was slightly burned and sprinkled with ashes, but the interior was perfectly raw and bloody. It would not do, however, to show the repugnance I felt at making a repast scarcely better than that of a cannibal, for my hosts would have been scandalmay be treated, or how young he may be ized, and I wished to live in good correspondence with them for some days. I therefore ate my piece of venison, which, after all, was not ill flavored, and my Indian having followed my example, our good repute was established, and treason on their part no longer possible."

M. de la Gironière showed his wisdom in accommodating himself to circumstances, and in sacrificing his own predilections in favor of expediency; and if all travellers had acted in a similar manner, we should have known much more of savage manners and customs than we do at the present time. After propitiating his little black hosts by tact and kindness, he remained among them for some time, and by means of an interpreter, whom he was fortunate enough to obtain, continued to procure a considerable amount of information concerning a people of whom scarcely anything had been previously known since their existence.

The Ajitas live in small tribes, consisting of some fifty or sixty individuals. They have no fixed residence, but wander about the country according to the amount of game which they find. They have not the least notion of house-building, and in this respect are even below the aborigines of Australia, and at night they crowd round the fire and lie as close to it as possible. This fire is the central point of the tribe, the old people and children assembling round it during the day while the adults are hunting for game; and if the hunters should be able to bring in enough food to last for some days, they remain round the fire until it is all consumed.

There seems to be no particular form of government among the Ajitas, who always choose one of the oldest men to be the chief "I had fortunately received at Binango-nan all the instructions necessary for know-ing how to open a communication with

Ajitas sl savage tr is said to rather th must be r of the Bos travellers language affects the of Europe eigners as to the pite of the A known.

In one savage ped and both a When a y asks the co fixed day, before sunr man goes a bring her b is acknowle in his searc her. It wil lies with th herself if sl groom, or, refuse to cor ulated time The religi

far as can be which a say fetishism; a shaped tree to for a day, and other idol. Any real re Ajitas seems prehended us, line, like men was the signal e went up to r hands, and I n from one exvery important with them, and ording to their ing over, an al-ace concluded, ing.

o a tree, from ge slices with a them upon the n instant afterch of us. The and sprinkled was perfectly ot do, however, elt at making a hat of a cannibeen scandalin good corresome days. renison, which, and my Indian our good repute on their part

his wisdom in circumstances, oredilections in l travellers had we should have e manners and present time. black hosts by ed among them of an interpreenough to oba considerable erning a people had been preistence.

ibes, consisting viduals. They wander about mount of game not the least nd in this rerigines of Auwd round the ossible. This e tribe, the old g round it durere hunting for ould be able to for some days, til it is all con-

ticular form of as, who always to be the chief t acknowledge this point the

Ajitas show their superiority over many they hold in veneration. Year after year savage tribes. I is language of the Ajitas they will resort to the burial-places of their savage tribes. Lie language of the Ajitas is said to resen ole the chirping of birds rather than the voice of mankind, but it must be remembered that the same was said of the Bosjesmen's language when European travellers first came among them. Any language which is heard for the first time affects the ear u.pleasantly, and even those of Europe are generally stigmatized by foreigners as gabbling or grunting, according to the pitch of the voice. Of the structure of the Ajitas' language nothing is yet

In one point they are superior to many savage people. A man has but one wife, and both are faithful in the married state. savage people. A man has but one wile, and both are faithful in the married state. resisted, especially when used by foes as active as monkeys, who could pour their arrows on their foes, while they scarcely exposed an inch of their little dark bodies to man goes after her. If he can find her, and bring her back before sunset, the marriage is acknowledged; but if he cannot succeed in his search, he must yield all claims to her. It will be seen that the real choice lies with the girl, who can always conceal herself if she dislikes the intended bridegroom, or, even if he did find her, could refuse to come back with him until the stipulated time has passed.

The religion of the Ajitas seems to be, as far as can be ascertained on a subject from which a savage always shrinks, a mere fetishism; any object, such as an oddlyshaped tree trunk or stone, being worshipped for a day, and then forsaken in favor of some other idol.

Any real reverence in the nature of the Ajitas seems to be given to the dead, whom

friends for the purpose of laying betel-nut and tobacco upon the grave. Over each spot where a warrior is buried his bow and arrows are hung, the Ajitas having an idea that at night the man leaves his grave, and hunts until the morning. Owing to this reverence for the dead, M. de la Gironière's expedition nearly came to a fatal terminaskeleton from the burial-place, when the skeleton from the burial-place, when the theft was discovered by the Ajitas, who at once set upon them, and fairly chased them out of their country, the poisoned arrows

It is owing to another form of this veneration for the dead that travellers have so often come in collision with the Ajitas. When a warrior dies, his companions are bound to take their weapons and roam through the country, for the purpose of killing the first living thing that they meet, whether man or beast. As they pass along, they break the boughs in a peculiar manner as warnings to others for even one of their as warnings to others, for even one of their own tribe would be sacrificed if he fell in their way. Travellers from other countries would either fail to see, or, if they saw, to understand, the meaning of these little broken twigs, and in consequence have been attacked by the Ajitas, not from any unfriendly feelings, but in fulfilment of a national custom. national custom.

CHAPTER XCIII.

FIJL.

APPEARANCE AND DRESS OF THE FIJIANS.

POSITION OF THE FIJI ISLANDS - GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES - THEIR PECULIAB HAIR. AND VARIOUS MODES OF DRESSING IT - HAIR-DYES - THE FIJIAN MIRROR - WIG-MAKING - THE AMBASSADOR AND HIS MESSAGE - THE FIJIAN TURBAN - WATER-PROOF HEADDRESSES - DRESS OF THE FIJIANS - THE "MASL," AND METHOD OF WEARING IT - EAR-ORNAMENTS - NECKLACES AND FLOWERS -- TATTOOING AND PAINT -- PATTERNS USED FOR THE FACE -- DRESS OF THE WOMEN - THE ROUGHNESS OF THE SKIN AND USE OF PAINT - HAIR-DRESSING - MAKING MASI AND MODE OF PRODUCING PATTERNS - INGENIOUS MODE OF STENCILLING - THE WOMAN'S APRON, OR "LIKU," AND MODE OF WEARING IT.

To describe the inhabitants of all the multi- will mention a few of the most prominent tudinous islands of Polynesia would be an agreeable, but impossible task, our space confining us within limits which may not be transgressed. We will therefore pass at once to the large and important group of islands which is popularly known by the name of Fiji.

This group of islands lies due north of New Zealand, and to the eastward of New Guinea, so that they are just below the Equator. The collective name of the islands has been variously given, such as Fiji, Beetee, Feegee, Fidge, Fidschi, Vihi, and Viti. Of all these names, the first and the last are correct, the northern portion of the islands being known as Fiji, and the southern as Viti. The reader must remember that these names are pronounced as if written Feegee and Veetee.

The inhabitants of Fiji are a fine race of savages, tolerably well formed, and with dark, though not black skin. Like other Papuans, they are remarkable for their thick, bushy hair, which they dress in a singular variety of patterns. As the appearance and costume of savage races are the first points which strike a stranger, we will at once proceed to describe them.

The most conspicuous part of a Fijian's general appearance is his headdress, in the arrangement of which he gives the reins to his fancy, and invents the most extraordinary variations of form and color. Examples of the Fijian headdress will be seen in most of the illustrations. But as it would most of the illustrations. But as it would Fiji for thirteen years. "Most of the chiefs be tedious to describe them as they occur, I have a hair-dresser, to whose care his

varieties.

The hair of the Papuan race is always stiff, wiry, and plentiful, and grows to a considerable length; so that it necessarily assumes a bushy form if suffered to grow according to its own will. The Fijian, however, thinks that nature is to be improved by art, and accordingly lavishes all the resources of a somewhat artistic character on his hair. To train the hair into any of the graceful and flowing methods which distinguish those soft-haired races would be utterly impossible for a Fijian. He goes on quite the opposite principle, and, true to real artistic feeling, tries to develop to the utmost those characteristics which rightly belong to him, instead of endeavoring to produce effects which would not be consonant with their surroundings.

The principle on which a Fijian coiffure is arranged is, that every hair is presumed to grow naturally at right angles to the skin, and to stand out stiffly and boldly. Supposing, then, that each hair could be induced to follow its own course, without being entangled by others, it is evident that the whole head of hair would form a large globular mass, surrounding the face. It is, therefore, the business of the Fijian hair-dresser to accept this as the normal form of the hair, and to change or modify it as he thinks best.

It is impossible to describe the various modes of Fijian hair-dressing better than has been done by Mr. Williams, who resided in PECULIAR HAIB,
IG-MAKING — THE
PORESSES — DRESS
NTS — NECKLACES
SOF THE WOMEN
G MASI AND MODE
PRON, OB "LIKU,"

nost prominent

race is always grows to a connecessarily asffered to grow he Fijian, howbe improved vishes all the
istic character
air into any of
hods which disaces would be
n. He goes on
and, true to real
p to the utmost
ghtly belong to
to produce efonsonant with

Pijian coiffure is is presumed to less to the skin, I boldly. Suppould be induced hout being enthat the whole large globular It is, therefore, hair-dresser to mof the hair, he thinks best.

be the various better than has who resided in st of the chiefs hose care bis



(1.) THE AMBASSADOR'S MESSAGE. (See page 925.)



(2.) FIJIAN CANOE IN A BREEZE. (See page 932.)

master's idaily atter gress requiring all tapu from working in "The ha

and so dre
in which i
from the
inches. O
formance
'What as
'Surely th
exist in Fi
imaginatio
defy descri

defy descri
"Whatev
pearance be have a sur
accuracy of
softness of
which displ
some praise
of some sol
colored. Jo
and several
young peop
favor. Som
on the same
both as to s
English cou

English con
"In some,
iet black hai
broad as the
oblong braid
head, the bla
In each case
the white ha
ammentation
twisted coils,
the cords give
one head, all
but one-third
the rest black
dividing the

"Not a few as to appear laughter. On on his crown, bald. Anoth away, leaving clusters, as if small paint broare, except over each tem of twisted hat temple, a foot men wear a m form a curtain ing from one e

A mode the hair wrought from the head, about seven is base outward,

master's hair is intrusted, often demanding is marked out into a great number of small daily attention, and at certain stages of progress requiring several hours' labor each day. During all this time, the operator's hands are taps from touching his food, but not from working in his garden.

"The hair is strong, and often quite wiry, and so dressed that it will retain the position in which it is placed, even when projecting from the head a distance of six or eight inches. One stranger, on seeing their performance in this department, exclaims, 'What astonishing wigs!' another thinks, 'Surely the beau idéal of hair-dressing must exist in Fiji; a third, Their heads surpass imagination. No wonder, then, that they

defy description.

"Whatever may be said about the appearance being unnatural, the best coiffures have a surprising and almost geometrical accuracy of outline, combined with a round softness of surface and uniformity of dye which display extraordinary care, and merit some praise. They seem to be carved out of some solid substance, and are variously colored. Jet-black, blue-black, ashy white, and several shades of red prevail. Among young people, bright red and flaxen are in favor. Sometimes two or more colors meet on the same head. Some heads are finished, both as to shape and color, nearly like an English counsellor's wig.

"In some, the hair is a spherical mass of jet black hair, with a white roll in front, as broad as the hand; or, in lieu of this, a white, oblong braid occupies the length of the forehead, the black passing down on either side. In each case the black projects further than the white hair. Some heads have all the ornamentation behind, consisting of a cord of twisted coils, ending in tassels. In others, the cords give place to a large red roll or a sandy projection falling on the neck. On one head, all the hair is of one uniform length, but one-third in front is ashy or sandy, and the rest black, a sharply defined separation

dividing the two colors.

"Not a few are so ingeniously grotesque as to appear as if done purposely to excite laughter. One has a large knot of flery hair on his crown, all the rest of the head being bald. Another has the most of his hair cut away, leaving three or four rows of small clusters, as if his head were planted with small paint brushes. Λ third has his head bare, except where a black patch projects over each temple. One, two, or three cords of twisted hair often fall from the right temple, a foot or eighteen inches long. Some men wear a number of these braids so as to form a curtain at the back of the neck, reaching from one ear to the other.

A mode that requires great care has the hair wrought into distinct locks, radiating from the head. Each lock is a perfect cone, about seven inches in length, having the

circles, the ends being turned in, in each lock, toward the centre of the cone. In another kindred style, the locks are pyramidal, the sides and angles of each being as regular as though formed of wood. All round the head they look like square black blocks, the upper tier projecting horizontally from the crown, and a flat space being left at the top of the head. When the hair, however, is not more than four inches long, this flat does not exist, but the surface consists of a regular succession of squares or circles. The violent motions of the dance do not disturb these elaborate preparations, but great care is taken to preserve them from the effects of the dew or rain,"

Whenever the Fijian desires to know whether his headdress is in proper order, he has recourse to his mirror. This is not a portable, but a fixed article of manufacture, and is necessarily situated in the open air. When the native sees a large tree with a sloping trunk, he cuts in the upper part of the trunk several deep hollows, and arranges the leaves of the tree so that the water from the foliage drips into them, and keeps them full. These are his mirrors, and by their aid he examines his hair, sees if the outline be quite correct, and, if he be dissatisfied, arranges it with his long-handled comb, and then replaces the comb in his mop of a head, carefully sticking it over one ear as a soldier does his forage cap.

Not content with having the hair plaited and frizzed out as has already been described, many of the Fijians wear great wigs over their own hair, thus increasing the size of their heads to the most inordinate dimensions. The natives are excellent wig-makers and, as their object is not to imitate nature, but to produce as fantastic an effect as possible, it is evident that the result of their labor is often very ludicrous. As is the case with their own hair, they dye these wigs of various colors, red and white being the

favorite hues.

Three examples of these curious headdresses are shown in illustration No. 1, on preceding page, which represents an ambassador delivering a message from his chief to some man of consequence. Savages such as these have no idea of writing, but, lest they should forget the various terms of their message, they have recourse to a simple memoria technica, consisting of a bundle of sticks, no two being of the same length.

Each of these sticks answers to one of the terms of the message, which is repeated once or twice to the ambassador, who reckons them over on his sticks. When he delivers his message, he unties the bundle, selects the sticks in their order, and, laying them down in succession, delivers the message without a mistake.

In the illustration, the principal figure base outward, so that the surface of the hair represents the ambassador, the others being his attendants. He has laid down several in the opening. The Fijians also wear of the sticks, and is delivering the message belonging to one of them, while he is hold-ing the rest in his left hand. His headdress is of that remarkable kind which consists of a number of conical locks of hair -a fashion which denotes a man of rank, as no other could afford to have such a coiffure kept in order. The man seated next to the ambassador has his hair in two colors, the greater part being dark and frizzed out from the head, while a couple of rolls of a lighter hue pass over the forehead. The central figure exhibits a favorite mode of hair-dressing, in which the hair is clipped very short, except in certain spots, in which it is allowed to grow, so as to form a series of brush-like tufts.

Men of consequence mostly protect their enormous mops of hair by a sort of thin turban, which is wrapped round them. The turban is made of a piece of very delicate bark cloth, or masi, nearly as thin as gauze, and perfectly white. It is sometimes six feet in length, but varies according to the quantity of hair. It is twisted round the head in different fashions, but is mostly fastened by a bow on the forehead, or on the top of the head. Several examples of the turban will be seen in the course of the following pages. Men of rank often wear the masi of such length that the ends fall

down behind like a scarf.

In order to preserve their hair from being displaced by rain, they use a waterproof covering of their own invention. This is a young banana leaf, which is heated over a fire, and then becomes as thin, transparent, and impervious to water as oiled silk. The light turban offers no protection whatever, being soaked as easily as tissue paper,

which it somewhat resembles.

Material similar to that which is worn on the head is used for the dress. The masi which is employed for this purpose is mostly from twenty to thirty feet in length, though a wealthy man will sometimes wear a masi of nearly three hundred feet long. In this case, it is made of very delicate material. It is put on in a very simple manner, part being wound round the loins, and the rest passed under the legs and tucked into the belt, so as to hang as low as the knees in front, and to fall as low as possible behind. A wealthy man will often have his masi trailing far behind him like a train. This is all the dress which a Fiji man needs. Clothing as a protection from the weather is needless, owing to the geniality of the climate, and the masi is worn simply as a matter of fashion.

Ornaments are worn in great profusion, and are of the kinds which seem dear to all savage races. Ear ornaments of portentous size are worn by the inhabitants of Fiji, some of them stretching the lobe to such an

breast ornaments, very similar in shape and appearance to the large dibbi-dibbi which is worn by the Northern Australians, and has evidently been borrowed from the Papuan race. Any glittering objects can be made into necklaces, which often combine the most incongruous objects, such as European beads, bits of tortoise-shell, dogs' teeth, bats' jaws, and the like.

Flowers are plentifully worn by the Fijian, who keeps up a constant supply of these natural ornaments, weaving them into strings and chaplets, and passing them, like belts, over one shoulder and under other. In the illustration on page 937th, which represents the payment of taxes, several girls are seen adorned with these gar-

Tattooing is almost entirely confined to the women, and even in them is but little seen, the greater part of the patterns being covered by the liku or fringe apron. When young, the women usually tattoo their fingers with lines and stars in order to make them look ornamental as they present food to the chief, and, after they become mothers, they add a blue patch at each corner of the The operation is a painful one, though not so torturing as that which is employed in New Zealand, the pattern being made by the punctures of a sharptoothed instrument, and not by the edge of a chisel driven completely through the skin.

Paint is used very largely, the three principal colors being black, white, and red. With these three tints they contrive to produce a variety of effect on their faces, that is only to be rivalled by the fancy displayed in their hair-dressing. Sometimes the face is all scarlet with the exception of the nose, which is black, and sometimes the face is divided like a quartered heraldic shield, and painted red and black, or white, red, and black in the different quarterings. Some men will have one side of the face black and the other white, while others paint their countenances black as far as the nose, and finish them off with white.

Reversing the first-mentioned pattern, the Fijian dandy will occasionally paint his face black and his nose red, or will have a black face, a white nose, a scarlet ring round each eye, and a white crescent on the forehead. Sometimes he will wear a white face covered with round scarlet spots like those on a toy horse; or will substitute for the round spots a large patch on each cheek and another round the mouth, just like the face

of a theatrical clown.

Some very curious effects are produced by lines. A white face with a single broad black stripe from the forehead to the chin has a very remarkable appearance, and so has a face of which one side is painted longitudinally with black stripes on a white extent that a man's two fists could be placed ground, and the other half with transverse

stripes of tern is sor red. Perl is formed upon the v lating line the lines c sort of rip

So much of the wo Though p wiry, proft trouble th fantastic d selves with as far as po they twist i allowed to dom, like tl

Paint is e

though not seems to b and to this indebted fo by touch t Papuan ski ceremonious not allow th Pickering w means of as ness belong were only a viduals. The came to his pared by Eu rior to the p were only t color put on cordingly me pressed forw rubbed on th ing their ow infants to pa The nativ

tured in a s As at the largely impoi supplanting t tive manufac masi will so has been the Europeans ha therefore dev tion of its m:

already been

inner bark of

and soak then the inner bar outer, an oper the edge of a moved from t in water so as state of mois quantity is col ing it begins.

The natives

Masi is bea

ns also wear in shape and libbi which is lians, and has the Papuan can be made combine the as European gs' teeth, bats'

by the Fijian, pply of these them into ing them, like d under the n page 937th, of taxes, sevith these gar-

confined to is but little atterns being pron. When oo their finorder to make present food ome mothers, corner of the painful one, hat which is the pattern of a sharpy the edge of ugh the skin. e three prinite, and red. ntrive to proeir faces, that ncy displayed imes the face of the nose, s the face is ic shield, and nite, red, and rings. Some ace black and s paint their

ned pattern, ally paint his r will have a et ring round on the forea white face ts like those itute for the ch check and like the face

the nose, and

produced by single broad d to the chin ance, and so painted lonon a white th transverse

stripes of the same colors. A similar pat- tened on the upper surface, and so arranged tern is sometimes produced with black upon red. Perhaps the oddest of all the patterns is formed by painting the face white, and upon the white drawing a number of undu-lating lines from the forehead downward, the lines crossing each other so as to form a sort of rippling network over the face.

So much for the dress of the men. That of the women is different in every way. Though possessing the same kind of stiff, wiry, profuse hair as the men, they do not trouble themselves to weave it into such fantastic designs, but mostly content themselves with combing it out so as to project as far as possible on every side. Sometimes they twist it into a series of locks, which are allowed to fall on the head merely at random, like the thrums of a mop.

Paint is employed by them as by the men, though not with such profusion. Scarlet seems to be their favorite color in paint, and to this predilection Mr. Pickering was indebted for opportunities of ascertaining by touch the peculiar roughness of the Papuan skin. The Fijians, an essentially ceremonious and punctilious people, will not allow themselves to be handled, and Mr. Pickering was rather perplexed as to the means of ascertaining whether this roughness belonged to the race, or whether it were only a peculiarity belonging to indi-viduals. The love of scarlet paint here came to his assistance. The vermilion prepared by European art was so much superior to the pigments of Fiji, that the natives were only too glad to have so brilliant a color put on their faces and bodies. Accordingly men and women, old and young, pressed forward to have a little vermilion rubbed on them, and the mothers, after having their own faces painted, held out their infants to participate in the same benefit.

The native cloth, or masi, which has already been mentioned, is made from the inner bark of the malo tree, and is manufactured in a simple and ingenious manner. As at the present day English fabrics are

largely imported into Fiji, and are rapidly supplanting the delicate and becoming native manufactures, the art of making the masi will soon become extinct in Fiji, as has been the case in other islands where Europeans have gained a footing. I shall therefore devote a few lines to the description of its manufacture.

The natives cut off the bark in long strips, and soak them in water for some time, until the inner bark can be separated from the outer, an operation which is performed with the edge of a shell. After it has been removed from the coarse outer bark, it is kept in water so as to preserve it in the necessary state of moisture; and when a sufficient quantity is collected, the operation of beating it begins.

as to spring a little with the blows of the mallet. This tool does not resemble our mallet with a handle and a head, but is simply a piece of wood about fourteen inches in length and two in thickness, rounded at one end so as to form a handle, and squared for the remainder of its length. Three sides of this mallet, or iki, as it is called, are covered with longitudinal grooves, while the fourth side is left plain. Those specimens that I have seen have the sides not quite flat, but very slightly convex, perhaps by use, perhaps rounded intentionally. A masi maker has several of these mallets, some-times as many as six or seven, each having some difference in the fluting, and with them she contrives to produce a fabric that has all the effect of woven linens among ourselves, the pattern being incorporated with the material.

There are in my collection several specimens of masi, one of which is singularly beautiful. It is thin, snowy white, and soft as silk, and, even at a distance, must have looked very graceful when wrapped round the dark body of a Fijian warrior. But it is only on a closer examination that the real beauty of the fabric is displayed. Instead of merely beating the masi after the usual fashion, so as to impress upon it the longitudinal grooves of the mallet, the native manufacturer has contrived to change the position of her mallet at every blow, so as to produce a zigzag pattern on the fabric, very much like the well-known Greek pattern of European decorators. It is beautifully regular, and, when the fabric is held up to the

light, looks like the water mark in paper.

The plasticity of the malo bark is really wonderful. A strip of two inches in length can be beaten to the width of eighteen inches, its length being slightly reduced as the width increases. As the material is very thin and flimsy, a single piece being, when beaten out, no thicker than tissue paper, two or more pieces are usually laid on each other and beaten so as to form a single thickness, the natural gluten which this material contains being sufficient to unite them as if they had been one piece. Some specimens of their larger mantles, now in my collection, are as thick as stout brown paper, and very much tougher, appearing both to the eye and the touch as if made of leather.

When a large masi has to be made, many lengths of the bark are united to each other, the ends being soaked in arrowroot starch, laid carefully over each other, and then subjected to the mallet, which forces the two pieces of bark to unite as if they were one substance, and does not exhibit the least trace of the junction. As I have already mentioned, some of these masis are of very great length. Mr. Williams measured one which was for the use of the king on festival days, Masi is beaten upon a log of wood flat- and found its length to be five hundred and

forty feet. Many of the large, and at the same time thin masis, are used as mosquito curtains, and in that case are decorated with patterns of dusky red and black. The patterns generally commence at the centre, and are gradually extended toward the edges. The mode of making these patterns is well described by Mr. Williams:—

"Upon a convex board, several feet long,

"Upon a convex board, several feet long, are arranged parallel, at about a finger's width apart, thin straight strips of bamboo, a quarter of an inch wide; and by the side of these, curved pieces, formed of the mid-rib of cocoa-nut leaflets, are arranged. Over the board thus prepared the cloth is laid, and rubbed over with a dye obtained from the lauci (Aleurites triloba). The cloth, of course, takes the dye upon those parts which receive pressure, being supported by the strips beneath, and thus shows the same pattern in the color employed. A stronger preparation of the same dye, laid on with a sort of brush, is used to divide the squares into oblong compartments, with large round or radiated dots in the centre. The kesa, or dye, when good, dries bright.

"Blank borders, two or three feet wide, are still left on each side of the square, and to elaborate the ornamentation of these so as to excite applause is the pride of every Fijian lady. There is now an entire change of apparatus. The operator works on a plain board; the red dye gives place to a jet black; her pattern is now formed by a strip-of banana leaf placed on the upper surface of the cloth. Out of the leaf is cut the pattern, not more than an inch long, which she wishes to print upon the border, and holds by her first and middle finger, pressing it down with the thumb. Then, taking in her right hand a soft pad of cloth steeped in dye, she rubs it firmly over the stencil, and a fair, sharp figure is made.

"The practised fingers of the women move quickly, but it is after all a tedious process. In the work above described, the Lakemba women excel. On the island of Matuku very pretty curtains are made, but the pattern is large, and covers the entire square, while the spaces between the black lines are filled in with red and yellow."

We now pass to the liku, or fringed girdle of the women. This is made of various materials, and much trouble is usually ex-

pended in its manufacture. The ordinary likus are little more than a number of slight thougs fixed to a belt, and allowed to hang down for several inches. When worn, it is passed round the waist and tied, not behind, but on one side, and on festivals the bark cord by which it is fastened is allowed to hang so low that it often trails on the ground as the water walks along

as the wearer walks along.

The thongs are made of the bark of a species of hibiscus, called by the natives vau, and used for many purposes, of long flexible roots like that of the cascus grass, and of different grasses. One kind of liku which is rather fashionable, is made of a vegetable parasite, called by the natives valoa. The thongs of this liku are not thicker than packthread, and when fresh, are as flexible as silk. In process of time, however, they become brittle, and are apt to break. The color of this material is deep glossy black.

There are in my collection two specimens of the liku, one of them being made of the fashionable waloa. The other is the common liku. It is made of split grass, the blades of which are more than three feet in length. In order to make them into the garment they have been doubled, and the loops woven into a narrow plaited belt of the same material. The better kind of likus are, however, made with far greater care than is bestowed on this article. There is but little difference in the thongs, the chief labor being bestowed on the belt. In some cases the belt of the liku is four inches in width, and is plaited into elegant patterns, plaiting being an art in which the natives excel.

In general shape the liku never varies, being worn by girls and women alike. As long as a girl is unmarried, she wears a liku the fringe of which is not more than three inches in depth, and the whole article is so scanty that when tied round the waist the ends do not meet at the hips by several inches. As soon as the girl is married, she changes her liku in token of her new rank, and wears a garment with a fringe that reaches half-way to her knees, and which entirely surrounds the body. After she has become a mother, she wears an apron which quite reaches to the knees, and sometimes falls below them.

METHOD

THE TON

MATS of va women, and in mat-makin Mats are emp sails of the lof functing, we then sewed to case with our of the strips to their length On an average these strips is ordinary leng necessarily rather leaf of the

Then there is carpets in size according but twenty fermeasurement, with a border be often decorate any colored in Mats of a sim texture, are us which is called ture.

The native l better display string making, from several st of plait made f The fibre is ca The ordinary mber of slight owed to hang en worn, it is d, not behind, vals the bark is allowed to on the ground

bark of a spenatives vau, f long flexible grass, and of liku which is f a vegetable waloa. The thicker than re as flexible break. The lossy black. wo specimens

made of the is the comlit grass, the three feet in em into the bled, and the laited belt of kind of likus greater care le. There is ngs, the chief elt. In some our inches in ant patterns, the natives

never varies, n alike. As wears a liku than three article is so he waist the s by several married, she er new rank, i fringe that and which After she has apron which d sometimes

CHAPTER XCIV.

FIJI - Continued.

MANUFACTURES.

MAT MAKING - SAILS FOR THE CANOES - FLOOR MATS AND BEDDING - ROPE AND STRING - SINNET AT TO ITS VARIOUS USES - THE NETTING NEEDLE AND MESH - FANS AND SUNSHADES - THE ORATOR'S FLAPPER - BASKET WORK - FIJIAN POTTERY, AND NATIVE ART - POTTERY BESTRICTED TO THE WOMEN - THEIR SIMPLE TOOLS AND IMPERFECT MATERIALS - MODE OF "FIRING" THE VESSELS - GLAZING THE WATER VESSELS - FIJIAN FISHERMEN - VARIOUS KINDS OF NETS, AND MODES OF USING THEM - THE TURTLE FISHERY - A BOLD DIVER - CONTRACTORS FOR TURTLE - MODES OF CATCHING THE REPTILE - A "HEAD" OF TURTLE AND ITS VALUE - DANGERS OF This FISHERY - FLJIAN CANOES, AND MODE OF MANAGING THEM - BUILDING CANOES - INGENIOUS METHOD OF JOINING THE PLANES -- TONGA CARPENTERS -- THE FLJIANS INFERIOR SAILORS TO THE TONGANS - FIJIAN TRADERS.

women, and they display as much ingenuity in mat-making as in the manufacture of masi. Mats are employed for many purposes. The sails of the Fijian canoes are always made of matting, which is woven in lengths and then sewed together afterward, just as is the case with our own canvas sails. The width of the strips varies from two to four feet, and their length from three to a hundred yards. on an average, however, the usual length of these strips is twenty feet, that being the ordinary length of a sail. Sail mats are necessarily rather coarse, and are made from the leaf of the cocoa-nut palm.

Then there are floor-mats, which are used as carpets in the houses. These vary in size according to the dimensions of the house, but twenty feet by sixteen is a very ordinary measurement. They are generally adorned with a border or pattern round the edges, this border being about six inches wide, and often decorated with feathers and scraps of any colored material that can be procured. Mats of a similar character, but much finer texture, are used as bedding; the best kind, which is called ono, being of a very fine tex-

The native love of ornament is in no way better displayed than in their rope and string making. The best rope is formed from several strands of sinnet. This is a sort The fibre is carefully removed from the nut, | maux.

MATS of various kinds are made by the | baked, and combed out like wool. Cordage is made by twisting sinnet together, and some of the Fijian cords are nearly as thick as a cable, and possessed of extraordinary elasticity and strength. The sinnet is used in a great variety of offices, houses being built and the planks of the canoes tied together with this most useful material.

When made, the sinnet is made into great rolls, some of them being of gigantic dimensions. Mr. Williams saw one which was twelve feet long, and nearly seven feet in diameter. These rolls are differently shaped, and each shape is known by its own name, such as the double cone, the plain hank, the oval ball, the honeycomb ball, and the variegated roll. These rolls are given as presents, and offered to the chiefs as tribute, together with the presents. together with other property. In the large illustration on page 937, which represents a tax-paying scene, one or two of these rolls are shown.

Sinnet is the favorite material for net making, but as it is costly, nets are often constructed of the hibiscus bark. Another material is a sort of creeper named yaka, which is steeped in water to dissolve the green matter, then scraped to clean the fibres, and, lastly, twisted into strings. It is remarkable that the netting needle and mesh are exactly similar to those which are from several strands of sinnet. This is a sort employed by ourselves, and the same may of plait made from the fibre of the cocoa-nut. be said of the mesh and needle of the Esqui-

The same ingenuity in plaiting which is and then dried. When it is unwound from expended in the making and rolling of sinnet asserts itself in various other manufactures, such as basket and fan making. In the latter art the Fijian excels, and, as the fan is almost as important to the Fijian as to the Japanese, much play of fancy is exhibited in fan making. Dissimilar as are others sandy red, ju these fans in shape, there is always a sort of hair of the natives. character about them which denotes their

origin to a practised eye.

I have a specimen in my collection, which is a very good type of the Fijian fan. It is two feet in length, and rather more than a foot broad in the widest part. The handle is made of cocoa-nut wood, and extends nearly to the end of the fan, so as to form a support through its entire length. It is fas-tened to the fan by double bands of the finest and most beautifully plaited sinnet. The material of which the fan is composed is cocoanut leaf, divided into doubled strips about the third of an inch in width near the base of the fan, and gradually decreasing toward its tip. A strong band of the same material runs round the edges of the fan, and the two ends of this band are secured to the handle by the same sinnet as has been just mentioned.

Such a fan as this is employed rather as a sunshade or parasol than a fan, and is held over the head when the owner happens to be seated in the sunshine. It is very light, and is really a much more efficient implement than its appearance intimates.

The form of the fan is exceedingly variable. Sometimes they are triangular, with the handle projecting from one of the angles, and sometimes they are square, but with the handle passing diagonally across them. Various modifications of the battledoor are in much favor, and there is one form which almost exactly resembles that of the Japanese handscreen.

It is rather remarkable that the aborigines of tropical America, such as the Caribs, the Accowais, and the like, make fans of precisely similar material and structure, except that the handle is not separately made of wood, but is formed from the ends of the leaf-strips of which the implement is made.

There is another curious article of manufacture which is properly Fijian, but extends through several of the Polynesian group. It is the orator's flapper, which the native holds in his hand while he speaks in council. An engraving showing its form is given on the 949th page. The handle is carved into various patterns, and mostly, though not invariably, is terminated by a rude representation of a couple of human figures scated back to back. Sometimes the entire handle is covered with sinnet, plaited in the most delicate patterns, as none but a Fijian can plait. The tuft at the end is formed of eocoa-nut fibre, which has first been soaked one or two wooden scrapers, a round stone in water, next rolled round a small twig, to hold against the inside of the vessel, and

the stick, it has a crisp, wrinkled appearance, very like that of the Fijian's hair, and is probably intended to imitate it. In the specimens of my collection, some have sinnet-covered handles, and some carved handles, while some have the tuft black, and others sandy red, just as is the case with the

In their basket making, the Fijians are equally lavish of their artistic powers, weaving them in patterns of such elaborate intricacy as to put the best European makers to shame, and then, as if not satisfied with the amount of work bestowed upon them, covering all the edges with sinnet, braided into

really artistic patterns.

Indeed, the Fijians are born artists. Their work, although sometimes grotesque, is always artistic, because always appropriate. They carry this feeling of art into the material whose plasticity allows the greatest freedom of manipulation; namely, earthenware. Some of the vessels which are intended for cooking are quite plain, while others which are made for other purposes are of elegant shape, and covered with ornaments. Mr. Williams suggests, with much probability, that the cooking pots are made in imitation of the cells of a species of black bee which inhabits the Fiji group of islands. Several specimens of Fijian pottery are in

the British Museum. As examples of intuitive art they are far superior in outline and ornament to the generality of decorated earthenware in civilized countries. A conventional imitation of nature is the principle which is employed by the Fijian potters, who find their chief patterns in flowers, leaves, and fruits, thus obtaining the most graceful curves, joined to great certainty

and precision of outline.

Rude as is the manipulation of the potter. and coarse as is the material, the design of the vessel is sure to be bold and vigorous, putting to shame the feeble prettiness with which we are too familiar in this country. Going to nature for their models, the Fijian potters display a wonderful power, fertility, and originality of design. In any country, an artist who really studies nature is sure to produce works that are fresh and original; and in a country like Fiji, which is within the tropics, and in which the magnificent vegetation of the tropics springs up in luxuriant profusion, it is likely that an artist, however rude he may be, who studies in such a school, will produce works of genuine merit.

The art of pottery is confined to the women, and is practically restricted to the wives and daughters of fishermen. The material employed by them is a red or blue clay mixed with sand, and their implements are merely an annular cushion, a flat stone,

a sharp st yet, in spit trive to pr that few I cally acqua that they w

The shap very elegan the models are often of workma vessels, wit mon, and M as a hogshe openings fo emptying it examples ar being unite they touch, handles. In are hollow, so that the through the lately been

Considerii tic skill which that the nat rial and firin and the very to give to th imperishable properly pre After the

the decorativ a sharp stick close togethe and covered grass, reeds, pile is then li itself out the ished. Those rubbed, while resin which I the account o

As may be tion, the Fijia employ variou Nets, weighte floated at the wood, are muc the creel, and very remarkal of a net, calle long, flexible s a quantity of s make a fringe very great leng times measuri from one end t When compl

sea and throw being attached to a straight l small bay, acr smaller nets or unwound from nkled appearian's hair, and te it. In the ome have sine carved hanuft black, and case with the

ne Fijians are powers, weavlaboraté intrican makers to sfied with the n them, covert, braided into

artists. Their otesque, is alappropriate. into the matethe greatest mely, earthenwhich are inplain, while ther purposes red with ornats, with much oots are made ecies of black oup of islands. pottery are in nples of intuin outline and of decorated tries. A cons the principle ijian potters, s in flowers, ing the most eat certainty

of the potter, the design of and vigorous, rettiness with this country. els, the Fijian wer, fertility, any country, ature is sure and original; ich is within magnificent s up in luxuat an artist, o studies in ks of genuine

fined to the ermen. red or blue implements a flat stone, round stone e vessel, and

a sharp stick. They have no wheel: and not trouble themselves to return to the yet, in spite of such disadvantages, they contrive to produce vessels so true in outline, that few persons, unless they are practi-cally acquainted with pottery, could believe that they were merely rounded by the eye. The shapes of nearly all the vessels are very elegant, as is likely to be the case from the models employed by the maker. They

are often wonderfully elaborate specimens of workmanship. Permanently covered vessels, with a hole in the lid, are very common, and Mr. Williams saw one jar as large as a hogshead, that was furnished with four openings for the purpose of filling and emptying it rapidly. The most remarkable examples are the compound vessels, several being united together at the point where they touch, and further connected by arched handles. In some cases, even the handles are hollow, and have an opening at the top, so that the vessels can be filled or emptied through them. This compound form has lately been copied by Europeans.

Considering the amount of labor and artistic skill which is given to pottery, it is a pity that the natives are not better off for material and firing. The material is very coarse, and the very imperfect mode of baking fails to give to the vessels the hard and almost imperishable quality which distinguishes properly prepared earthenware. After the vessels have been shaped, and

the decorative patterns traced on them with a sharp stick, they are placed on the ground close together, but not touching each other, and covered with a quantity of dried leaves, grass, reeds, and similar materials. The pile is then lighted, and when it has burned itself out the baking is supposed to be fin-ished. Those pots that are to be glazed are rubbed, while still hot, with kawri, the same resin which has already been mentioned in the account of New Zealand.

As may be expected in an island population, the Fijians are expert fishermen, and employ various means of securing their prey. Nets, weighted at one edge with shells and floated at the other with pieces of light wood, are much used; and so are the hook, the creel, and the weir. In some places a very remarkable net, or rather an imitation of a net, called the rau, is used. To the long, flexible stems of creepers are fastened a quantity of split cocoa-nut leaves, so as to make a fringe of considerable depth and very great length, one of these raus some-times measuring nearly ten thousand feet from one end to the other.

When completed, the rau is taken out to sea and thrown into the water, the ends being attached to canoes, which stretch it small bay, across which the rau can be drawn, and then capture all the fish by smaller nets or spears. Sometimes they do

shore, but bring the net round in a circle, the fish being so afraid of the leafy fringe that they avoid it, and keep themselves in the middle of the toils.

the middle of the toils.

The principal use of the net is, however, in turtle fishing, a sport which may be almost called an art. The turtle fishers supply themselves with sinnet nets, some ten feet in width, and one or two hundred yards in length. While the turtle are feeding upon the shore, the fishermen carry out the net and shoot it to seaward, so that when the turtle returns to the sea after feeding, it the turtle returns to the sea after feeding, it is sure to be intercepted by the net, which has large meshes, in order to entangle the

flippers of the reptile.

When the fishermen feel that the turtle is fairly caught, they proceed to get it on board, a task of very great difficulty and some danger, inasmuch as the turtle is in its own clement, and the men are obliged to dive and conduct their operations under water. The most active diver tries to seize the end of one of the fore-flippers, and pulls it violently downward, knowing that the instinctive desire to rid itself of the inconvenience will cause the reptile to rise. course the diver can only retain his hold for a limited time, but as soon as he rises to the surface for breath another takes his place. Should the turtle be a vicious one, as is often the case, one of the divers grasps it across the head, fixing his finger and thumb in the sockets of the eyes, so as to prevent the creature from doing mischief.

Finding itself thus hampered, the turtle rises to the surface, when it is seized by the other fishermen who are in the canoe, hauled on board, and laid on its back, in which position it is utterly helpless. The successful fishermen then blow loud blasts of triumph on their conch-shell trumpets, and bring their prize to land.

In consequence of the number of men who are employed in this pursuit, the men almost invariably fish in parties, who are engaged by some individual. Sometimes they are the servants of a chief, and fish on his account, all the captured turtles belonging to him, but the fishermen always receive a present of some kind when they have been successful. Should the fishers be free men, they hire themselves, their nets, and canoe to some one who will pay the regular price, for which they are bound to make ten expeditions. Should they be entirely unsuccessful, they get nothing, but each time that they bring a turtle ashore they receive a present from the hirer, who is obliged, after the completion of the fishing, to give the men a handsome present. Sometimes several turtles are taken in a single day; but the

Some of the modes of catching the turtle

are very ingenious. When the men have 1, on the 924th page, he will be able to no net, they chase the reptile as they best understand the general appearance of this can, keeping the shadow of the sail just curious vessel. The two canoes are covered no net, they chase the reptile as they best can, keeping the shadow of the sail just behind it so as to frighten it, and keep it continually on the move. They will pursue it in this way for a long time, until the creature is so exhausted that it can be captured by a few divers without the aid of a net. When brought home, the turtles are kept in pens and killed as wanted.

Although the flesh of the turtle is highly esteemed, and the green fat is appreciated nearly as much as in England, the chief value of the turtle lies in its shell, the thir-teen plates of which are called a "head," and sold to the traders by weight. A "head" weighing three pounds is a fair one, a head that weighs four pounds is exceptionally good, while one that exceeds five pounds is hardly ever seen.

The dangers that beset the turtle fishery are many. Chief among them is the shark, which is very plentiful on these coasts, and which is equally fond of men and turtle, so that when it sees a turtle entangled in the net it makes an attack, and is as likely to take off the limb of one of the divers as to seize the reptile. Another fertile source of danger lies in the structure of the coral reefs, which form the principal shores of these islands. They are full of hollows and crannies, and it sometimes happens that a diver becomes entangled in them, and is not able to extricate himself in time to save his

As the canoes return home after turtle fishing, the women come down to the shore and meet them. Should the expedition be successful, the men return with songs and shouts of triumph, as if they were bringing home the bodies of slain foes, on which occasion, as we shall presently see, a scene of horrid rejoicing takes place. Should they be unsuccessful, they return in sad silence.

In the former case, the women welcome the successful fishermen with songs and dances, and sometimes become rather rough in the exuberance of their delight. Mr. Williams once witnessed an amusing scene, in which the women brought a quantity of bitter oranges down to the shore, and when the fishermen were about to land, pelted them so mercilessly that the men were in self-defence obliged to drive their aggressors off the beach.

As the canoe has so often been mentioned in connection with fishing, it will be now described. In principle it resembles the form which prevails among the great Polynesian group, though in detail it differs from many of the ordinary vessels. All the canoes possess modifications of the outrigger, but the best example is the double canoe, where two boats are placed side by side in such a manner that one of them acts as the outrigger and the other as the canoe.

over, so as to keep out the water, and are connected by a platform which projects over the outer edges of both boats. Hatchways are cut through the platform, so as to enable the sailors to pass into the interior of the canoes. In the illustration a man is seen emerging from the hatch of the outer canoe. Upon this platform is erected a sort of deck-house for the principal person on board, and on the top of the deck-house is a platform, on which stands the captain of the vessel, so that he may give his orders from this elevated position, like the captain of a steamboat on the paddle-box or bridge, This position also enables him to trace the

This position also enables inin to trace the course of the turtle, if they should be engaged in the profitable chase of that reptile.

The mode of managing the vessel is extremely ingenious. The short mast works on a pivot at the foot, and can be slacked over to either end of the vessel. When the canoe is about to get under way, the long yard is drawn up to the head of the mast, and the latter inclined, so that the mast, the yard, and the deck form a triangle. The halyards are then made fast, and act as stays. When the vessel is wanted to go about, the mast is slacked off to the other end, so that the stern becomes the bow, the tack and the sheet change places, and away goes the vessel on the other course.

It will be seen that such a canoe sails equally well in either direction, and, therefore, that it can be steered from either end. The rudder is a very large oar, some twenty feet in length, of which the blade occupies eight, and is sixteen inches wide. The leverage of such an oar is tremendous, and, in a stiff gale, several men are required to work it. In order to relieve them in some degree, rudder-bands are used; but even with this assistance the men have great difficulty in keeping the canoe to her course, and are nearly sure to receive some very sharp blows in the side from the handle of the steering oar. Sometimes a sudden gust of wind, or a large wave, will bring round the rudder with such violence that the handle strikes a man in the side and kills him. With all these drawbacks, canoe sailing is a favorite occupation with the Fijians, who are as merry as possible while on board, singing songs to encourage the steersman, watching the waves and giving notice of them, and adding to the joyous tumult by beating any drum that they may happen to have on board. Even when the wind fails, and the canoe has to be propelled by poling if she should be in shoal water, or by sculling if she should be too far out at sea for the poles, the crew do their work in gangs, which are relieved at regular intervals, those who are resting singing songs If the reader will refer to illustration No. and encouraging those who are at work.

Sculling rather hea worked fro the men with the As many employed canoe be a numerous. holes in the out fore an

The mo ingenious though wit description moderate and in the worthy of ship-builde great war

Here it canoe mak own, and always a m fession. T workmansh artists kno brated scul both the n respectful a The first

lay the keel of wood car upon it the quiring rib ingenious p together, w appearing o edge of ea downward when two p holes in the cord can be

When a p flange holes with a sort laid a strip covers the means of a thus prepare the vono is and very car holes exactly est sinnet is through the ble, and ther fore, that all vessel. In c more, a num under it in driven home

By this pro tightly toget comes to sme vill be able to earance of this oes are covered water, and are ch projects over ts. Hatchways , so as to enable interior of the on a man is s erected a sort cipal person on deck-house is a e captain of the is orders from he captain of a ox or bridge. im to trace the should be enof that reptile.

ie vessel is exort mast works can be slacked sel. When the way, the long ad of the mast, t the mast, the triangle. The st, and act as wanted to go ff to the other es the bow, the aces, and away course.

a canoe sails on, and, thereom either end. r, some twenty blade occupies ide. The levendous, and, in e required to them in some ed; but even n have great to her course, ive some very the handle of a sudden gust l bring round nce that the side and kills ks, canoe sailth the Fijians, ble while on acourage the

es and giving to the joyous hat they may ven when the be propelled shoal water, too far out at their work in regular interinging songs at work.

Sculling one of these large canoes is sel with his adze, he often has to look very rather heavy work, the great paddles being closely before he can see the line of juncworked from side to side in perfect unison, the men moving their feet in accordance with the rhythm of their comrades' song. As many as eight sculls are sometimes employed at the same time, should the canoe be a large one and the crew tolerably numerous. The sculling oars pass through holes in the deck, an equal number being out fore and aft.

The mode of building these canoes is so ingenious that I will try to describe it, though without a plentiful use of diagrams description is very difficult. Canoes of moderate size are cut out of single logs; and in these there is nothing particularly worthy of remark. But when the native ship-builder wishes to construct one of the great war canoes, he has to exercise all the skill of his craft.

Here it must be mentioned that the canoe makers form a sort of clan of their own, and have their own chief, who is always a man eminent for skill in his pro-fession. The experienced Fijians know the workmanship of these men as well as our artists know the touch and style of a celebrated sculptor or painter, and contemplate both the man and his workmanship with

respectful admiration.

The first process in canoe building is to lay the keel, which is made of several pieces of wood carefully "scarfed" together; and upon it the planking is fixed, without requiring ribs, as in our boats. The most ingenious part of boat building is the way that the planks are fastened, or rather tied together, without a vestige of the sinnet appearing on the outside. Along the inside edge of each plank runs a bold flange, through which a number of holes are bored downward at regular distances, so that when two planks are placed together, the holes in the flanges exactly coincide, and a cord can be run through them.

When a plank has been made, and all the flange holes bored, the edges are smeared with a sort of white pitch, upon which is laid a strip of fine masi. This of course covers the holes, which are reopened by means of a small fire-stick. The planks thus prepared are called "vonos." When the vono is ready, it is lifted to its place, and very carefully edited as that of the terms of the control of t and very carefully adjusted, so that all the holes exactly coincide. The best and strongest sinnet is next passed eight or ten times through the hole, drawn as tight as possi-ble, and then tied. It will be seen, therefore, that all the tying is done inside the vessel. In order to tighten the sinnet still more, a number of little wedges are inserted under it in different directions, and are driven home with the mallet.

By this process the planks are brought so tightly together that, when the carpenter comes to smooth off the outside of the ves- and other valued commodities.

closely before he can see the line of junction. Caulking is therefore needless, the white pitch and masi rendering the junction of the planks completely waterproof. The vonos are by no means equal in size, some being twenty feet in length, while others are barely thirty inches, but all are con-nected in exactly the same manner.

The gunwales, and other parts above the water mark, do not require so much care, and are fastened without flanges, a strip of wood or "bead" being laid upon the junction, and the sinnet bands passing over and over it and drawn tight with wedges, and the holes carefully caulked with fibre and pitch. When the canoe is completed, it is beautifully finished off, the whole of the outside being first carefully trimmed with the adze, and then polished with pumice stone, so that it looks as if it were made of

one piece of wood.

Ornament is freely used in the best canoes, especially in the two projecting ends, which are carved in patterns, and frequently inlaid with white shells belonging to the genus Ovulum or egg shells. This form of canoe has gradually super-seded the more clumsy forms that were once in use in Tonga and the neighboring islands. The Tongans often made voyages to Fiji, being better and bolder sailors, though their canoes were inferior; and, having been struck with the superiority of Fijian boat-building, have by degrees built their own vessels after Fijian models. Being also remarkably good carpenters, they have taken to boat building even in Fiji itself, and have in a great measure ousted the native builders, being able to work bet-ter and quicker, and for less pay.

In spite of their excellent canoes, and their skill in managing their vessels, the Fijians are not bold sailors, and, according to Mr. Williams, "none have yet taken their canoes beyond the boundaries of their own group." He knew one old man named Toalevu (Great Fowl) who had a fancy that he could make a profitable trading expedition westward, and who accordingly loaded his canoe with pottery and masi, and started off. After two or three days, however, he became frightened, and made the best of his way back again, only to become a standing warning to rash voyagers. Yet in waters which they know the Fijians are excellent sailors, and the women appear to be as bold and skilful as the men, assisting in steering, managing the sail, and even in the laborious task of sculling or poling.

Owing to their excellence in canoe building, the Fijians carry on a brisk trade with other islands, supplying them not only with the canoes, but with the masts, sails, sinnet, and other nautical appliances, receiving in exchange the whales' teeth, shells, weapon,

CHAPTER XCV.

FIJI - Continued.

GOVERNMENT AND SOCIAL LIFE.

A NATIVE LEGEND - THE RAT GOD, AND HIS MISHAPS ON A JOURNEY - EVASION OF A BUMILLATING CUSTOM - MODERN CHANGES OF GOVERNMENT - THE VARIOUS RANKS OF CHIEFS AND PROPLE-THE SYSTEM OF VASU, OR NEPOTISM EXTRAORDINARY - SINGULAR POWER OF THE VASU - THE SYSTEM A HINDRANCE TO INDUSTRY - THE VASU AS AN AMBASSADOR - PAYMENT OF TAXES -PRESENTATION OF THE CANOE-TRIBUTE PAID IN KIND AND IN LABOR-THE TENURE OF LAND — A SINGULAR CUSTOM — ATTACHMENT TO THE SOIL — THE DISAPPOINTED PURCHASER—THE FAMILY THE TYPE OF FIJIAN GOVERNMENT—CODE OF ETIQUETTE AMONG THE FIJIANS—THE COURT LANGUAGE -- THE "Tama," AND ITS MODIFICATIONS -- MEETING A SUPERIOR -- THE "BALE-MURI" CUSTOM - THE POLITE NATIVE WHO DID NOT GET A MUSKET - HOW GREAT CHIEFS VISIT EACH OTHER - ORATORY, AND MODES OF GREETING - STRICTNESS OF THE CODE OF ETI-QUETTE-THE YOUNG CHIEF AND THE GUANA'S TAIL-A FIJIAN FEAST-THE VAST OVENS, AND MODE OF MAKING THEM-PREPARATIONS FOR THE FEAST-ARRANGEMENTS FOR THE BANQUET - VARIETY OF DISHES - MODE OF DRINKING - HOW TO OPEN A COCOA-NUT - CANNI-BALISM — THE KING THAKOMBAU — PRESUMED ORIGIN OF CANNIBALISM — NATIVE LEGEND — THE CANNIBAL FORKS -- OPPORTUNITIES FOR HUMAN SACRIFICES -- "TAKING DOWN THE MAST" -- AN UNFORTUNATE MISTAKE.

OWING to the geographical nature of the off the bamboo and nearly drowned in the Fiji group, which consists of seven groups of islands, some of them very large and some very small, the mode of government has never been monarchical, the country being ruled by a number of chiefs of greater or less importance, according to the amount of territory over which their sway extended. The various islands had in former days but little connection with each other. At the present time, more intercourse takes place, and in one instance the visit involves a sin-

gular and ludicrous ceremonial.

One of the gods belonging to Somo-somo, named Ng-gurai, went to visit Mbau a spot on the eastern coast of Viti Lemi, one of the greater islands, and to pay his respects to the god of that place. He was accompanied by a Vuna god named Vatu-Mundre, who gave him a bamboo by way of a vessel, and undertook to guide him on his journey. Ng-gurai then entered into the body of a rat, seated himself on the bamboo, and set off on his journey. After they had sailed for some time, Ng-gurai lost his way on account of wanting to call at every island

From this fate he was rescued by a Mbau woman, who took him into the chief's house, and put him among the cooks on the hearth, where he sat shivering for four days. Meanwhile, Vatu-Mundre arrived at his destination, and was received in royal manner by the Mbau god, who tried in vain to induce him to become tributary to him.

After v proper interval, the Mbau god returned the visit of Vatu-Mundre, who had craftily greased the path, so that when his visitor became animated, his feet slipped, and he fell on his back. Vatu-Mundre then took advantage of his situation, and forced his visitor to become his tributary

In consequence of this affair, the Mbau people pay a homage to the natives of Vuna, but indemnify themselves by exacting a most humiliating homage from the men of Somosomo, though in fact Somo-somo is the acknowledged superior of Vuna.

Whenever a Somo-somo canoe goes to Mbau, the sail must be lowered at a certain account of wanting to call at every island distance from shore, and the crew must which he passed, and at last, just as he arrived on the Mbau shore, he was washed the sail or to paddle in the usual standing position w soon as th shore they reverential superior, as

Arrived enter a ho for four de obliged to about in a Tama in a tation of th four days houses and still oblige When a M crouching v in a jeerin somo man v The unforte place his ha to the groun is allowed h

Naturally humiliating somo have it by means of lowering seated was countries, a Mbau on bor still, English Of late yea

a feudal aspe

being considthem a num tributary to t and arms wh cording to M ranked unde come the kin of separate la come the ch the Mata-ni-v great chiefs. of professions turtle fishing any distingui The fifth rank and the sixth always captive

As is often polygamy is passes through sor of the king of a woman of

The oddest

omy is the sys system which carried to the Mr. Williams' very curious. orniece, but be case of the ma the extraordin whatever he ch or those under

position would cost them their lives, soon as they come within hearing of the shore they have to shout the Tama, i. c. the reverential salutation of an inferior to a superior, and to reiterate it at short intervals.

Arrived on shore, they are not allowed to enter a house, but are kept in the open air for four days, during which time they are obliged to wear their worst dresses, move about in a stooping attitude, and to say the Tama in a low and trembling voice, in imitation of the shivering rat-god. After the four days have expired, they may enter houses and dress in better clothes, but are still obliged to walk in a half-bent attitude. When a Mbau man meets one of these crouching visitors, he cries out, "Ho! Ho!" in a jeering manner, and asks the Somosomo man whether his god is yet at liberty. The unfortunate visitor is then obliged to place his hand on his heart, stoop half-way to allowed his library. is allowed his liberty.

Naturally disliking this oppressive and humiliating custom, the people of Somosome have of late years managed to evade it by means of foreign vessels. The custom nt by means of foreign vessels. The custom of lowering the sail and paddling while seated was not binding on people of other countries, and so they contrived to visit Mbau on board of Tongan canoes, or, better

still, English ship-boats.

A RUMILIATING

AND PROPLE -

THE VASU - THE

NT OF TAXES -

HE TENURE OF

RCHASER - THE

E FIJIANS - THE

R-THE "BALE-GREAT CHIEFS

E CODE OF ETI-E VAST OVENS,

ENTS FOR THE

A-NUT -- CANNI-

LEGEND -THE

HE MAST" -- AN

owned in the

ed by a Mbau chief's house,

n the hearth.

days. Mean-

t his destina-

manner by in to induce

e Mbau god

dre, who had

hat when his

feet slipped,

Mundre then

n, and forced

r, the Mbau

ives of Vuna,

acting a most ien of Somo-

omo is the

noe goes to

at a certain

crew must To keep up

ual standing

n.

ary.

Of late years the government has assumed a feudal aspect, the chiefs of large districts being considered as kings, and having under them a number of inferior chiefs who are tributary to them, and bound to furnish men and arms when the king declares war. According to Mr. Williams, the Fijians may be ranked under six distinct orders. First come the kings, and next to them the chiefs of separate large islands or districts. Then come the chiefs of towns, the priests, and the Mata-ni-vanuas, or aides-de-camp of the great chiefs. Next to them come the chiefs of professions, such as canoe building and turtle fishing, and with them are ranked any distinguished warriors of low birth. The fifth rank includes all the commonalty, and the sixth consists of the slaves, who are always captives.

As is often the case in countries where polygamy is practised, the law of descent passes through the female line, the successor of the king or chief being always the son of a woman of high rank.

The oddest part of Fijian political economy is the system of Vasu, or nephew — a system which may be described as nepotism carried to the greatest possible extreme. Mr. Williams's description of the Vasu is very curious. "The word means a nephew, orniece, but becomes a title of office in the case of the male, who in some localities has whatever he chooses belonging to his uncle, or those under his uncle's power.

"Vasus are of three kinds: the Vasutaukei, the Vasu-levu and the Vasu;—the last is a common name, belonging to any nephew whatever. Vasu-taukel is a term applied to any Vasu whose mother is a lady of the land in which he was born. The fact of Mbau being at the head of Fijian rank gives the Queen of Mbau a pre-eminence over all Fijian ladies, and her son a place nominally over all Vasus.

"No material difference exists between the power of a Vasu-taukei and a Vasu-levu, which latter title is given to every Vasu born of a woman of rank, and having a firstclass chief for his father. A Vasu-taukei can claim anything belonging to a native of his mother's land, excepting the wives, home, and land of a chief. Vasus cannot be considered apart from the civil polity of the group, forming, as they do, one of its integral parts, and supplying the high-pressure

power of Fijian despotism.

"In grasping at dominant influence, the chiefs have created a power, which ever and anon turns round and grips them with no gentle hand. However high a chief may rank, however powerful a king may be, if he has a nephew, he has a master, one who will not be content with the name, but who will exercise his prerogative to the full seizing whatever will take his fancy, regardless of its value or the owner's inconvenience in its loss. Resistance is not to be thought of, and objection is only offered in extreme cases. A striking instance of the power of the Vasu occurred in the case of Thokonauto, a Rewa chief, who, during a quarrel with an uncle, used the right of Vasu, and actually supplied himself with ammunition from his enemy's stores.

"Descending in the social scale, the Vasu is a hindrance to industry, few being willing to labor unrewarded for another's benefit One illustration will suffice. An industrious uncle builds a canoe in which he has not made half-a-dozen trips, when an idle nephew mounts the deck, sounds his trumpet-shell, and the blast announces to all within hearing that the canoe has that in-

stant changed masters.

The Vasu of a king is necessarily a personage of very great importance; and when he acts as delegate for the king, he is invested for the time with royal dignity. He is sent, for example, to other places to collect property, which is handed over to his king as tribute; and were it not for a check which the king has over him, he might be tempted to enrich himself by exacting more from the people than they ought to give. In this case, however, the Vasu is held amenable to the king, and should he exceed his proper powers, is heavily fined.

Taxes, to which reference is here made, the extraordinary privilege of appropriating are paid in a manner differing materially from the mode adopted in more civilized countries. In Europe, for example, no one

pays a raze if he can possibly escape from it, spectator in order to show the mode in and the visits of the tax-gatherer are looked

multitudes with their goods, such as rolls of sinnet, masi, whales' teeth, reeds, women's dresses — and often accompanied by their wearers - ornaments, weapons, and the like, and present themselves in turn before the king. Each man is clad in his very best raiment, is painted in the highest style of art, and displays the latest fashion in hair-dressing. With songs and dances the people approach their monarch, and lay their presents before him, returning to the banquet

which he has prepared for them.

It is hardly possible to imagine a more animated scene than that which occurs when the tribute from a distant place is taken to the king, especially if, as is often the case, a valuable article, such as a large war canoe, is presented as part of the tribute. A fleet of canoes, containing several hundred people and great quantities of property, makes its appearance off the coast, and is received with great hospitality, as well may be the case. The king having seated himself on a large masi carpet, the principal chief of the tribute bearers comes before him, accompanied by his men bringing the presents with them in proper ceremonial, the chief himself carrying, in the folds of his robe, a whale's tooth, which is considered as the symbol of the canoe which is about to be presented, and which is called by the same name as the cance which it represents.

Approaching the king with the prescribed gestures, the chief kneels before him, and first offers to his master all the property which has been deposited on the ground. He then takes from the folds of bis voluminous dress, which, as the reader may remember, is often several hundred feet in length, the whale's tooth, and makes an appropriate speech. He compliments the king on the prosperity which is enjoyed by all districts under his sway, acknowledging their entire submission, and hoping that they may be allowed to live in order to build canoes for him. As an earnest of this wish, he presents the king with a new canoe, and, so saying, he gives the king the symbolical whale's tooth, calling it by the name of the vessel. On receiving the tooth, the king graciously gives them his permission to live, whereupon all present clap their hands and shout, the cry of the receivers being different from that which is employed by the givers.

In the following illustration one of these animated scenes is represented.

Nearly in the centre is the king seated on

and the visits of the tax-gatherer are looked upon as periodical vexations. In Fiji the case is different. People take a pride in paying taxes, and the days of payment are days of high festival.

On the appointed day the king prepares a case of feast, and the people assemble in vast. In the distance is the flotilla of canoes, in the distance is t which the tax-paying party have come; and near the shore is the new war canoe, which forms the chief part of the offering.

In the foreground are seen the various articles of property which constitute taxes, such as yams, rolls of cloth and sinner, baskets, articles of dress, and young women, the last being dressed in the finest of likus, and being decorated, not only with their orand being decorated, not only with their or-dinary ornaments, but with wreaths and gar-lands of flowers. Behind the offering chief are his followers, also kneeling as a mark of respect for the king; and on the left hand are the spectators of the ceremony, in front of whom sit their chiefs and leading men.

Tribute is not only paid in property, but Tribute is not only paid in property, our in labor, those who accompany the tax-paying chief being required to give their labor for several weeks. They work in the fields, they thatch houses, they help in canoe building, they go on fishing expeditions, and at the end of the stipulated time they receive a present, and return to their homes.

Should the king take it into his head to go and fetch the taxes himself, his visit becomes terribly burdensome to those whom he honors with his presence. He will be accompanied by some twenty or thirty canoes, manned by a thousand men or so, and all those people have to be entertained by the chief whom he visits. It is true that he always makes a present when he concludes his visit, but the present is entirely inadequate to the cost of his entertainment.

The tenure of land is nearly as difficult a question in Fiji as in New Zealand. It is difficult enough when discussed between natives, but when the matter is complicated by a quarrel between natives and colonists, it becomes a very apple of discord. Neither party can quite understand the other. The European colonist who buys land from a native chief purchases, according to his ideas, a complete property in the land, and control over it. The native who sells it has never conceived such an idea as the total alienation of land, and, in consequence, if the purchaser should happen to leave any part of the land unoccupied, the natives will build their houses upon it, and till it as before. Then as in process of time the proprietor wants to use his ground for his own purposes, the natives refuse to be ejected, and there is a quarrel

The state of the case is very well put by Dr. Pritchard: "Every inch of land in Fiji has its owner. Every parcel or tract of ground has a name, and the boundaries are the masi carpet, having his back to the defined and well-known. The proprietorthe mode in great man are necls the chief who is in the the symbolical milar teeth lie of the present, a of canoes, in we come; and reamoe, which ering.

on the various astitute taxes, h and sinuet, young women, inest of likus, with their oreaths and garoffering chief g as a mark of the left hand mony, in front astitute taxes.

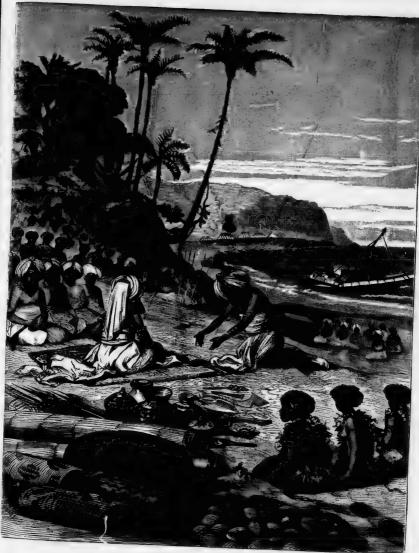
mony, in front ading men. property, but y the tax-payve their labor k in the fields, in canoe buildlitions, and at they receive a omes.

his head to go a visit becomes see whom he le will be acthirty canoes, or so, and all tained by the true that he he concludes sentirely inertainment.

y as difficult a cealand. It is seed between

ssed between as complicated and colonists, ord. Neither other. The land from a rding to his the land, and ho sells it has a as the total equence, if the ave any partives will build it as before the proprietor own purposes, and there is a

well put by of land in Fiji or tract of oundaries are e proprietor-



PRESENTATION OF THE CANOE. (See page 936.)

ship rests being the r member of taching to families as family are land maint "A chief the same te his persona pertaining to

the same te his persona pertaining t member of portion of head of his to the whole him. The i the head of "The fam In war they follow him

ply him with tribe attains all the lands all the lands parcel of lan whence the chief is druce to however large valid only by tribe, in the the heads of a land transact would be sim vineyard, for ineyard, for ineyard, for a land transact aby ha Another ca

a peculiar att to the soil. It is an under and seller that clusive right to none but he ground, or bu settlers who u natives have find that it an who are unacque often suffered and, when the own workmen purchased lamby armed part Mr. Pritchs

ecdote, which is principle. A some land accoon had been agree and the coloni longed to the franciar and agreed to the franciar and the franc

3. 17

ship rests in families, the heads of families | clubs and spears, and frightened him so much being the representatives of the title. Every member of the family can use the lands attaching to the family. Thus the heads of families are the nominal owners, the whole family are the actual occupiers. The family land maintains the whole family, and the members maintain the head of the family.

"A chief holds his lands under precisely the same tenure, as head of his family, and his personal rights attain only to the land pertaining to his family, in which right every member of his family shares so far as on any portion of the land. But the chief is also head of his tribe, and, as such, certain rights to the whole lands of the tribe appertain to him. The tribe is a family, and the chief is

the head of the family.

"The families of a tribe maintain the chief. In war they give him their services, and follow him to the fight. In peace they supply him with food. In this way, the whole tribe attains a certain collective interest in all the lands held by each family; and every parcel of land alienated contracts the source whence the collective tribal support of the chief is drawn. From this complicated tenure it is clear that the alienation of land, however large or small the tract, can be made valid only by the collective act of the whole tribe, in the persons of the ruling chief and the heads of families. Random and reckless land transactions under these circumstances would be simply another seizure of Naboth's vineyard, for which the price of blood would inevitably have to be paid."

Another cause of misunderstanding lies in a peculiar attachment which the Fijian has to the soil. When he sells a piece of land, it is an understood thing between the buyer and seller that the latter shall have the exclusive right of working on the ground, that none but he shall be employed to till the ground, or build houses upon it. The white settlers who understand the customs of the natives have accepted the condition, and find that it answers tolerably well. Those who are unacquainted with native ideas have often suffered severely for their ignorance, and, when they have brought a gang of their own workmen to put up a house on the newly purchased land, have been fairly driven out

by armed parties of natives.

Mr. Pritchard narrates an amusing anecdote, which illustrates the working of this principle. A missionary had purchased some land according to the code of laws which had been agreed upon by the native chiefs and the colonists; all the natives who be-longed to the family having been consulted, and agreed to the purchase. As a matter of course, they expected that the work of clearing the ground and building the house would be given to them. Being ignorant of this custom, the purchaser took some of his own

that he retreated to his boat, and made off. When he was well out of range, all those who had muskets fired them in the direction of the boat, as if to show that their intention was not to kill but merely to intimidate.

It will be seen from the foregoing passages, that the whole government of Fiji is a repetition of one principle, namely, that of the family. The head of a family is the nominal possessor of the land. All the members of the family use the land, and support their head, as a return for the use of the land. Districts again are considered as families, the chief being the head, and being supported by the district. The king, again, is considered as the father of all the chiefs, and the nominal owner of all the land in his dominions, and he is therefore entitled to be supported by the taxation which has been described. Practically, however, he has no more right to land than any other head of a family.

From the preceding observations the reader may see that a definite code of etiquette prevails among the Fiji islands. Indeed, there is no part of the world where etiquette is carried to a greater extent, or where it is more intimately interwoven with every action of ordinary life. If, for example, one man meets another on a path, both having, as usual, their clubs on their shoulders, as they approach each other they lower their clubs to their knees, as a token that they are at peace, and pass on. Retaining the club on the shoulder would be equiva-

lent to a challenge to fight.

The leading characteristic of this code of etiquette is the reverence for the chief, a reverence which is carried to such a pitch that in battle a chief sometimes comes out unhurt simply because his opponents were so much awe-stricken by his rank that they did not dare to strike him. Each superior therefore partakes of the chiefly character as far as his inferiors are concerned, and expects the appropriate acknowledgments

of rank.

This extraordinary reverence is carried so far that it has invented a language of etiquette, no one with any pretensions to good breeding speaking in ordinary language of a chief, of a chief's head or limbs, of a chief's dress, or indeed of any action performed by a chief, but supplying a paraphrastic and hyperbolical phraseology, of which our own court language is but a faint shadow. The Tama, which has before been mentioned, is the right of a chief, and is therefore uttered by men of inferior rank, not only when they meet the chief himself, but when they come within a certain distance of his village. So elaborate is this code of ceremony that, discourteous as it might be to omit the Tama when due, it would be thought doubly so to people, but was immediately surrounded by utter it on occasions when it was not due, a body of armed savages, who flourished their | For example, the Tama is not used toward

the close of the day, or when the chief is he spoke of a musket, the man replied, 'I either making a sail or watching a sail maker at work; and if the Tama were uttered on any such occasion, it would be resented as an insult.

Passing a superior on the wrong side, and sailing by his canoe on the outrigger side, are considered as solecisms in manners, while passing behind a chief is so deadly an insult that the man who dared do such a deed would run the risk of getting his brains knocked out on the spot, or, if he were a rich man, would have to pay a very heavy fine, or "soro," by way of compensa-tion. The reason of this rule is evident enough. The Fijian is apt to be treacherous, and when he attacks another always tries to take him unawares, and steals on him, if possible, from behind. It is therefore a rule, that any one passing behind a superior is looked upon as contemplating assassina-tion, and makes himself liable to the appropriate penalty.

If a man should meet a chief, the inferior withdraws from the path, lays his club on the ground, and crouches in a bent position until the great man has passed by. If, how-ever, the two men should be of tolerably equal rank, the inferior merely stands aside, bends his body slightly, and rubs the left arm with the right hand, or grasps his beard and keeps his eyes fixed on the

ground.

The act of giving anything to the chief, touching him or his dress, or anything above his head, or receiving anything from him, or hearing a gracious message from him, is accompanied by a gentle clapping of the hands. Standing in the presence of a chief is not permitted. Any one who addresses him must kneel; and if they move about, must either do so on their knees, or at least in a crouching attitude.

In some cases the code of etiquette is carried to an extreme which appears to us exceedingly ludicrous. If a superior fall, or in any other way makes himself look awkward, all his inferiors who are present immediately do the same thing, and expect a fee as recognition of their politeness.

Mr. Williams narrates an amusing anecdote of this branch of etiquette, which is called bale-muri (pronounced bahleh-mooree), i. e. follow in falling. "One day I came to a long bridge formed of a single cocoa-nut tree, which was thrown across a rapid stream, the opposite bank of which was two or three feet lower, so that the declivity was too steep to be comfortable. The pole was also wet and slippery: and hand, and not his face. thus my crossing safely was very doubtful.

"Just as I commenced the experiment, a

felt certain you would fall in attempting to go over, and I should have fallen after you (that is, appeared to be equally clumsy); and as the bridge is high, the water rapid, and you a gentleman, you would not have thought of giving me less than a musket." Ludicrous as this custom appears, it is based upon a true sense of courtesy, a desire to spare the feelings of others.

When one person of rank visits another, a number of ceremonies are performed in regular order. Should the visit be paid in a canoe, as is mostly the case, a herald is sent cando, as is inostly the case, a herata is sent a few days previously to give notice of his coming, so as to avoid taking the intended host by surprise. As soon as the canoe comes in sight, a herald is sent out to inquire the name and rank of the visitor, who is met on the shore by a deputation of petty chiefs, headed by one of the Matas, or aidesde-camp. If the visitor be a personage of very high rank, the Matas will go ten miles to meet him.

As soon as the visitor and his retinue have reached the house of their entertainer, they seat themselves, and the host, after clapping his hands gently in token of salutation, welcomes them in a set form of words, such as "Come with peace the chief from Mbau," or "Somo-somo," as the case may be.

A series of similar remarks is made by both parties, the main point being that Fijian oratory is the driest and dullest of performances, always broken up into short sentences, without any apparent connection between them, and further hindered by the attitude of courtesy which the speaker has to adopt. It is impossible for the finest orator in the world to make an effective speech if he has to deliver it in a kneeling position, with his body bent forward, his hands holding his beard, and his eyes directed to the ground. In some parts of Fiji etiquette requires that the orator's back should be toward the chief whom he is addressing. Nobody takes the trouble to listen to these speeches, or is expected to do so, the chiefs often talking over indifferent matters while the proper number of speeches are rehearsed.

The ceremonies on leave-taking are quite as long, as intricate, and as tedious; and, when the speeches are over, the two great men salute each other after the fashion of their country, by pressing their faces together, and drawing in the breath with a loud noise, as if smelling each other. A chief of inferior rank salutes his superior's

When the visitors start upon their return journey, the host accompanies them for a part of the way, the distance being regu-I shall have a musket.' I had, however, just then to heed my steps more than his words, and so succeeded in reaching the other side safely. When I asked him why his visitors when they a ashore.

As is the savage or civ rigidly enfo greatest chie haves in as commonest i be in his o may hold a and woman v to taste a m been offered chief did so, a So great w

by such a p offender wou one occasion He inadverte which had no insult so rank officers, who away from his who was at 1 place, the offe was running insulted office The man was sult could no apology for th to perform, h ter's brains w

A still more feeling is me young chief about to dine was provided ard which has passing by his man accidenta tail, which w brittle by cook gross an insul with his life.

Etiquette is when a king o banquet. As such a feast months previo expressly for kill pigs or ga not be a suffici

Just before preparations a to all the neig the chiefs, wh people. The t as soon as the Yams and oth ovens made, brought ready

These ovens is capable of co tles, and vast q an replied, 'I attempting to llen after you ally clumsy); water rapid. ould not have ars, it is based y, a desire to

risits another, performed in it be paid in a herald is sent notice of his the intended as the canoe ent out to ine visitor, who tation of petty latas, or aides personage of go ten miles

s retinue have ertainer, they after clapping of salutation, of words, such f from Mbau," may be.

s is made by at being that and dullest of up into short nt connection ndered by the speaker has or the finest an effective in a kneeling forward, his l his eyes die parts of Fiji orator's back whom he is ne trouble to xpected to do er indifferent

king are quite tedious; and, he two great he fashion of eir faces toreath with a ch other. A nis superior's

er of speeches

their return them for a being reguf they should etiquette is ogether with accompany his visitors to a certain distance from land, | all our skill in cooking, it is to be doubted when they all jump into the sea and swim

As is the case in all countries, whether savage or civilized, the code of etiquette is rigidly enforced at meal-times. Even the greatest chief, if present at a banquet, behaves in as deferential a manner as the commonest man present. Though he may be in his own dominions, and though he may hold absolute sway over every man and woman within sight, he will not venture to taste a morsel of food until it has first been offered to him. Many years ago one chief did so, and, in consequence, the Fijians have hated his very name ever since.

So great would be the breach of manners by such a proceeding, that the life of the offender would be endangered by it. one occasion it did cost the chief his life. He inadvertently ate a piece of cocoa-nut which had not been offered to him; and this insult so rankled in the mind of one of his officers, who was in attendance, that he ran away from his own chief, and joined another who was at war with him. A battle took place, the offending chief was worsted, and was running for his life, when he met the insulted officer, and asked for his assistance. The man was inclined to give it, but the insult could not be forgotten, and so, with an apology for the duty which he was called on to perform, he knocked out his former master's brains with his club.

A still more astonishing instance of this feeling is mentioned by Mr. Williams. A young chief and his father-in-law were about to dine together, and a baked guana was provided for each. The guana is a liz-ard which has a long and slender tail. In passing by his relative's guana, the young man accidentally broke off the end of its tail, which would necessarily be rendered brittle by cooking. This was held to be so gross an insult, that the offender paid for it with his life.

Etiquette is shown to its fullest extent when a king or principal chief gives a great banquet. As with the New Zealanders, such a feast is contemplated for many months previously; vegetables are planted expressly for it, and no one is allowed to kill pigs or gather fruit, lest there should

not be a sufficient quantity of provisions.

Just before the day of festival, the final preparations are made. Messages are sent to all the neighboring tribes, or rather to the chiefs, who communicate them to the people. The turtle fishers bestir themselves to get their nets and canoes in order, and, as soon as they are ready, start off to sea. Yams and other root crops are dug up, the

whether we are not excelled by the Fijians in the art of cooking large quantities of meat at a time. The ovens are simply holes dug in the ground, some ten feet in depth and fifteen feet or so in diameter.

The mode of cooking is very simple. A small fire is made at the bottom of the pit, which is then filled with firewood, and as soon as the wood is thoroughly on fire, large stones are placed on it. When the wood has all burned away, the pigs, turtles, and vegetables are laid on the hot stones, some of which are introduced into the interior of each animal, so that it may be the more thoroughly cooked. The oven is then filled up with boughs and green leaves, and upon the leaves is placed a thick covering of carth. The oven regulates its own time of cooking, for as soon as steam rises through the earthy covering, the contents of the oven are known to be properly cooked.

For the two or three days preceding the feast, all the people are full of activity. They take a pride in the liberality of their chief, and each man brings as many pigs, yams, turtles, and other kinds of food as he can manage to put together. The king himself takes the direction of affairs, his orders being communicated to the people by his Matas, or aides-de-camp. Day and night go on the preparations, the pigs squealing as they are chased before being killed, the men hard at work digging the ovens, some loosening the earth with long pointed sticks, others carrying off the loosened soil in baskets, while the flames that blaze from the completed ovens enable the workmen to continue their labors throughout the night.

On these occasions the Fijians dispense with their ordinary feelings respecting cooking. In Fiji, as in New Zealand, cooking is despised, and the word "cook" is used as a term of reproach and derision. In consequence of this feeling, all cooking is performed by the slaves. But on the eve of a great feast this feeling is laid aside, and every man helps to cook the food. Even the king himself assists in feeding the ovens with fuel, arranging the pigs, stirring the contents of the cooking pots, and perform-ing offices which, on the following day, none

but a slave will perform.

By the time that the cooking is completed, the various tribes have assembled and the ovens are then opened and the food taken out. It is then arranged in separate heaps, a layer of cocoa-nut leaves being placed on the ground by way of dish. On the leaves is placed a layer of cocoa-nuts, then come the yams and potatoes, then puddings, and at the top of all several pigs. ovens made, and the fuel chopped and brought ready for use.

The quantity of provisions thus brought together is enormous. Mr. Williams These ovens are of enormous size, as each capable of cooking a number of pigs, turges and year quantities of water of the cooking a number of pigs, turges and year quantities of water of the cooking a number of pigs, turges and year quantities of water of the cooking a number of pigs, turges and year quantities of water of the cooking a number of pigs, turges and year quantities of the cooking a number of pigs, turges and year of the cooking a number of pigs, turges a num is capable of cooking a number of pigs, tur-les, and vast quantities of vegetables. With

There were six heaps of food, and among | duce is by no means small. The variety of their contents were about fifty tons of cooked yams and potatoes, fifteen tons of pudding, seventy turtles, and about two hundred tons of uncooked yams. There was one pudding which measured twenty-one feet in circumference,

Profusion is the rule upon these occasions, and the more food that a chief produces, the more honor he receives. One chief gained the honorable name of High Pork, because he once provided such vast quanti-ties of food that before it could be finished decomposition had begun in the pork.

All being arranged, the distribution now begins, and is carried out with that precision of etiquette which pervades all society in Fiji. The various tribes and their chiefs being seated, the Tui-rara, or master of the ceremonies, orders the food to be divided into as many portions as there are tribes, regulating the amount by the importance of the tribe. He then takes the tribes in succession, and calls their names. As he calls each tribe, the people return their thanks, and a number of young men are sent to fetch the food. This goes on until the whole of the food has been given away, when a further distribution takes place among the tribes, each village first taking a share and then each family receiving its proper por-tion, which is handed to its head.

It is evident that the Tui-rara has no sinecure. He must possess the most intimate knowledge of all the tribes, and the ranks of their respective chiefs, and must at the same time be on the alert to distinguish any stranger that may make his appearance. Should he be a foreigner, he is considered a chief, and a chief's portion, i. e. a quantity sufficient for twenty Fijians or sixty Englishmen, is sent to him. Of course he gives the greater part away, but in so doing he acts the part of a chief. It is, in fact, the old story of Benjamin's mess translated into

Fijian.

The men always eat their food in the open air, but send the women's portion to the houses to be eaten within doors.

The first illustration on the next page will give an idea of a Fijian feast. On the left hand is seen the master of the ceremonies, calling the name of a tribe, and in the centre are seen the young men running to fetch the food. In the foreground is the portion of their tribe, consisting of pigs, yams, turtles, and so forth. In front of them are some of the curious drums, which will be presently described, and in the distance are seen the members of the different tribes, some eating, and others waiting for their portion. The curious building in the background is one of the Burés, or temples, which will be presently described.

From the preceding description it will be seen that the Fijians are not bad cooks, and

the dishes is, however, much greater than has been mentioned. They eat many kinds of fish, together with almost every living creature that they find in the coral reefs. Some of their preparations very much resemble those to which we are accustomed in England. For example, a sort of shrimp sandwich is made by putting a layer of shrimps between two taro leaves. Several kinds of bread are known, and nearly thirty kinds of puddings. Turtle soup is in great favor, and so are various other soups.

The Fijians even make sauces to be eaten with various kinds of food, the sweet juice of the sugar-cane being much used for this purpose. They also have a sort of an imitation of tea, infusing sundry leaves and grasses in boiling water, and drinking it when it becomes sufficiently cool. Most of their food is cooked; but, like ourselves, they prefer some food in an uncooked state. Small fish, for example, are eaten alive, just

as we eat oysters.

They mostly drink water, or the milk of the cocoa-nut. To drink water in native fashion is not very easy. They keep it in long bamboo tubes, so that when it is raised to the lips the greatest care is required lest it should suddenly deluge the face and

Cocoa-nuts are opened in rather a curious manner. A stout stick is sharpened at both ends, and one end driven firmly into the ground. Taking the nut in both hands, the native dashes it on the stick, which splits open the thick husk, and allows the nut to be extracted. With a stone, or even with another cocoa-nut in case a stone should not be at hand, the native hammers away round the pointed end, and contrives to knock off a small round lid, which is then removed, leaving a natural drinking-cup in his hand.

WE now come to the terrible subject of cannibalism, on which no more will be said than is necessary to illustrate the character

of the people.

The Fijians are even more devoted to cannibalism than the New Zealanders, and their records are still more appalling. A New Zealander has sometimes the grace to feel ashamed of mentioning the subject in the hearing of an European, whereas it is impossible to make a Fijian really feel that in eating human flesh he has committed an unworthy act. He sees, indeed, that the white men exhibit great disgust at cannibalism, but in his heart he despises them for

wasting such luxurious food as human flesh.

Even the Christianized natives have to be watched carefully lest they should be tempted by old habits, and revert to the cus-tom which they had promised to abjure. For example, Thakombau, the King of Mbau, that the number of dishes which they pro- became a Christian, or at least pretended to

The variety of greater than at many kinds to every living the coral reefs, ery much reaccustomed in ort of shrimp ag a layer of twes. Several i nearly thirty up is in great soups.

es to be eaten
ne sweet juice
n used for this
out of an imiy leaves and
d drinking it
cool. Most of
ike ourselves,
nooked state,
ten alive, just

the milk of ter in native ey keep it in en it is raised required lest the face and

rather a curisharpened at en firmly into in both hands, stick, which ad allows the stone, or even case a stone tive hammers and contrives which is then rinking-cup in

ble subject of e will be said the character

e devoted to alanders, and appalling. A sthe grace to he subject in whereas it is sally feel that committed an eed, that the ust at cannipies them for human flesh. Lives have to by should be ert to the cused to abjure. King of Mbau, pretended to



(1.) A FIJIAN FEAST. (See page 942.)



(2.) THE FATE OF THE BOASTER. (See page 952.)

stones to an E them, and for nine hundred

do so. H convert. nounced 1 in his war his sway. bly barbar great chie shouting to companied of living a dren of a and placed. The hopeful the offering th the offerin most to his

ing the exis find that it pean cotton cessfully to into Fiji, fo dence, that killed and e of food in and fish, f But the peo they could g tious motiv ferred huma

Many of in the numb have eaten. with great recannibalism of honor. To comparing pond in which were they of a name of he his consump tents of the accustomed suffering no his family w placing a stor had finished t

One man g people by an told his wife wood for hea boo knife. A her labors her her in the ov prepared, and times a man tim, bind him his arms and eyes. Indeed

nately vain, the matter how he among their p

do so. He was not a particularly creditable knows them thoroughly, expresses his won-convert. Some time after he had announced himself to be a Christian, he went in his war canoe to one of the districts under his sway. He was received with the horribly barbarous ceremonial by which a very great chief is honored, conch-shell trumpets blowing before him, and the people shouting their songs of welcome. Thus accompanied, he walked through a double row of living victims - men, women, and children of all ages - suspended by their feet, and placed there to give the king his choice. The hopeful convert was pleased to accept the offering, touching with his club as he

The natives are clever enough at concealing the existence of cannibalism when they find that it shocks the white men. An European cotton-grower, who had tried unsuccessfully to introduce the culture of cotton into Fiji, found, after a tolerably long residence, that four or five human beings were killed and eaten weekly. There was plenty of food in the place, pigs were numerous, and fish, fruit, and vegetables abundant. But the people ate human bodies as often as they could get them, not from any superstitious motive, but simply because they pre-

ferred human flesh to pork.

Many of the people actually take a pride in the number of human bodies which they have eaten. One chief was looked upon with great respect on account of his feats of cannibalism, and the people gave him a title of honor. They called him the Turtle-pond, comparing his insatiable stomach to the pond in which turtles are kept; and so proud were they of his deeds, that they even gave a name of honor to the bodies brought for his consumption, calling them the "Contents of the Turtle-pond." This man was accustomed to eat a human body himself. suffering no one to share it with him. After his family were grown up, he bethought himself of registering his unholy meals by placing a stone on the ground as soon as he had finished the body. His son showed these stones to an English clergyman, who counted them, and found that there were very nearly nine hundred.

One man gained a great name among his people by an act of peculiar atrocity. He told his wife to build an oven, to fetch firewood for heating it, and to prepare a bamboo knife. As soon as she had concluded her labors her husband killed her, and baked her in the oven which her own hands had prepared, and afterward ate her. Sometimes a man has been known to take a victim, bind him hand and foot, cut slices from his arms and legs, and eat them ! fore his eyes. Indeed, the Fijians are so inordinately vain, that they will do anything, no food. Educated people speak of it in the nately vain, that they will do anything, no matter how horrible, in order to gain a name

his own limbs.

Cannibalism is ingrained in the very nature of a Fijian, and extends through all classes of society. It is true that there are some persons who have never eaten flesh, but there is always a reason for it. Women, for example, are seldom permitted to eat "bakolo," as human flesh is termed, and there are a few men who have refrained from cannibalism through superstition. Every Fijian has his special god, who is supposed to have his residence in some animal. the offering, touching with his club as he passed along those victims which seemed already seen; another in a shark; and so on. The worshipper of that god never eats the animal in which his divinity resides; and as some gods are supposed to reside in human bodies, their worshippers never eat the flesh of man.

According to the accounts of some of the older chiefs, whom we may believe or not, as we like, there was once a time when cannibalism did not exist. Many years ago, some strangers from a distant land were blown upon the shores of Fiji, and received hospitably by the islanders, who incorporated them into their own tribes, and made much of them. But, in process of time, these people became too powerful, killed the Fijian chiefs, took their wives and property, and usurped their office.

In this emergency the people consulted the priests, who said that the Fijians had brought their misfortunes upon themselves. They had allowed strangers to live, whereas "Fiji for the Fijians" was the golden rule, and from that time every male stranger was to be killed and eaten, and every woman

taken as a wife.

Only one people was free from this law. The Tongans, instead of being killed and eaten, were always welcomed, and their visits encouraged, as they passed backward and forward in their canoes, and brought with them fine mats and other articles for barter. So much have these people intermingled, that in the eastern islands, which are nearest to those of Tonga, there is a decided mixture of Tongan blood. With this exception, however, the Fijians went on the same principle as the Ephesians of Shakespeare -

"If any Syracusan born Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies;"

save that, instead of merely putting to death those who came from one country, they only excepted one country from the universal law.

The reader may remember that a sort of court language, and, instead of using any among their people; and Dr. Pritchard, who vulgar term, such as a human body, they

employ the metaphorical language, and call | well-intentioned interference rather init the "long pig." As a general rule, the vessels in which human flesh is cooked are reserved expressly for that purpose, and both the vessel in which it is cooked and the dish from which it is eaten are held as

So highly is "bakolo" honored, that it is eaten, not with fingers, but with a fork, and the implement in question is handed down from father to son, like the merais and tikis of the New Zealander. These forks are quite unlike those which are used in England. They mostly have four prongs, but these prongs, instead of being set in a line, are generally arranged in a circle or triangle as the case may be. They are carved out of some very hard wood, and, when they have become venerable by reason of age or of the rank of their proprietor, they receive names of honor. For example, the cannibal chief who ate nearly nine hundred human bodies had a fork which was named "Undro-undro," the title signifying a small person carrying a great burden. The fork was a small object, but it had carried to the lips of its master the bodies of nearly nine hundred human beings.

As the Fijians set such a value on human flesh, it is to be expected that they will invent a variety of excuses for obtaining it. For example when a chief builds a house, he kills at least one human victim to celebrate the event. If he builds a large war canoe, a series of sacrifices takes place. man is killed, for example, when the keel is laid, and, if the chief be a very powerful one, he will kill a victim as each plank is fixed in its place. Even when it is finished the slaughter is not over, as, in the first place, the planks of the new vessel have to be washed with human blood, and, in the next, the launch must be commemorated in the same way as the building. One chief gained some notoriety by binding a number of men, and laying them side by side along the shore to act as rollers over which the canoe was taken from the land into the sea. The weight of the canoe killed the men. who were afterward baked and eaten.

Even after the canoe is launched, excuses are found for carrying on the system of human butchery. Whenever it touches at a place for the first time, a man must be sacrificed in honor of taking down the mast, this being done to show that the vessel means to make some stay at the place. If a chief should arrive in a new canoe, and keep up his mast, the people understand the signal, and bring on board a newly-slain victim, so that the mast may be taken

On one occasion, when a war canoe had been built at Somo-somo, the missionaries exerted themselves so successfully that the cance was launched without the sacrifice of a single life. Eventually, however, their

creased than diminished the number of victims. When the canoe arrived at Mbau, the chiefs were so vexed that it had reached them unhonored by human blood that they straightway attacked a village, killed some fourteen or fifteen men, and ate them in order to do honor to the ceremony of taking down the mast.

Sometimes, in order to secure a victim whenever one is wanted, the chiefs pick out secretly a certain number of men, and put them, so to speak, on the black list. Whenever a sacrifice is needed, all the executioners have to do is to find out how many victims are wanted, and then to go and kill the requisite number of the black-list men.

Whole towns are sometimes put on the black list, a curious example of which custom is given by Mr. Williams. "Vakam-bua, chief of Mbau, thus doomed Tavua, and gave a whale's tooth to a Nggara chief. that he might at a fitting time punish that place. Years passed away, and a reconcilia-tion took place between Mbau and Tavua, but, unhappily, the Mbau chief failed to neutralize the engagement made with the Nggara. A day came when human bodies were wanted, and the thoughts of those who held the tooth were turned toward Tavua. They invited the people of that place to a friendly exchange of food, and slew twenty-three of their unsuspecting victims.

"When the treacherous Nggarans had gratified their own appetites by pieces of the flesh cut off and roasted on the spot, the bodies were taken to Vakambua, who was greatly astonished, expressed much regret that such a slaughter should have grown out of his carelessness, and then shared the bodies to be eaten."

The Fijian can seldom resist meat, and that he should resist "bakolo" could not be expected of him. In Mrs. Smythe's "Ten Months in the Fiji Islands," an amusing instance of this predilection is recorded. "A white man had shot and carried off a pig belonging to a Fijian, who, being a convert, went to a native teacher named Obadiah, and asked him to go to the delinquent and remonstrate with him. The teacher and remonstrate with min. The total put on his black coat, went to the man's house, and with much earnestness pointed out to him the iniquity of the deed, asking the coat was the coat with the coat him how he would have liked it had a Fijian killed one of his own pigs. The man listened very respectfully, and allowed the error of his ways, acknowledging that the teacher had put the matter in a new light. 'But,' said he 'the pig is now dead, and we cannot bring it to life again. Shall we throw it out and let it go to waste, or, as it is just baked, and you have not breakfasted. shall we not sit down, and you will ask a blessing?

"Obadiah, taken by surprise by Q-

penitence. own clerica a little by t for roast po e rather innumber of vicived at Mbau, it had reached blood that they e, killed some mony of taking

ecure a victim chiefs pick out men, and put k list. Whenthe executionout how many to go and kill lack-list men. es put on the of which cus-ms. "Vakamoomed Tavua, Nggara chief, ne punish that nd a reconcilia-au and Tayua, chief failed to made with the human bodies ghts of those turned toward people of that of food, and unsuspecting

Nggarans had s by pieces of n the spot, the bua, who was much regret d have grown en shared the

sist meat, and "could not be smythe's "Ten " an amusing n is recorded. d carried off a o, being a con-er named Obathe delinquent The teacher to the man's stness pointed e deed, asking it had a Fijian The man lisallowed the

n a new light. v dead, and we in. Shall we waste, or, as it ot breakfasted, ou will ask a

e by Q-

penitence, and the compliment paid to his two set heartily to work on the pig." When own clerical functions, and swayed perhaps the teacher went to the missionary to report a little by the irresistible love of all Fijians for roast pork, bowed his head, and reverentially said a long prayer, after which the

CHAPTER XCVI.

FIJI - Continued.

WAR AND AMUSEMENTS.

WHAPONS OF THE FIJIANS -THE SLING, AND MODE OF USING IT -THE CLUB, AND ITS VARIOUS MODI-FIGATIONS - GRADUAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE CLUB INTO THE PADDLE - MODE OF MAKING THE CLUBS, AND PREPARATION OF THE TREES - ORNAMENTS OF THE CLUBS, AND THEIR NAMES -FIJIAN SPEARS - THEIR TERRIBLE BARBS - OBJECTS OF WAR - THE REVIEW - THE FATE OF THE BOASTER --- INGENIOUS ENGINEERING -- CRUELTY TOWARD PRISONERS -- "CONSECRATION" OF A WARRIOR, AND HIS NEW NAME - DOMESTIC LIFE - CEREMONIES AT BIRTH - TRAINING IN REVENGE -- AMUSEMENTS -- VARIOUS GAMES -- RIRIKI -- WOMEN AGAINST MEN -- DANCES AND SONGS - MARRIAGE FESTIVITIES - WEDDING OF A CHIEF'S DAUGHTER - DOMESTIC DISCIPLINE -THE KING'S STAFF - FESTIVITIES AT HOUSE BUILDING - MODE OF THATCHING AND DECORATING THE HOUSES - A PRACTICAL JOKE.

be described as it was before fire-arms were introduced, and had changed the ancient

style of warfare.

The original weapons of the Fijian are the club, the axe (which, by the way, is little more than a modification of the club), the bow, the sling, and the spear. In most of these weapons is exhibited the fancifully artistic nature of the manufacturers. The sling is perhaps the only weapon from which ornament is almost wholly absent. Like the corresponding weapon of the New Caledonians, it carries stones of tolerable weight and great hardness, and, when wielded by a skilful hand, becomes no inefficient weapon even against fire-arms themselves. A stone hurled from a Fijian sling has been known to render a musket useless, the stone having struck the barrel, and bent and indented it as much as would have been done by a bullet.

The chief weapon of the Fijian is the club, and upon this he lavishes all the artistic power at his command, covering nearly the whole of it with the most intricate and delicately executed carvings. Some clubs are straight, like thick cudgels, others are curved. Those which are knobbed at the end have an infinite variety in the knob, as we shall presently see. Some are more or less flattened, while there are some which are so flat and so broad that it is not easy at very awkward instrument, except perhaps first sight to determine whether they are that the broad blade might be utilized as a clubs or paddles. Some are so large that shield.

In accordance with the plan on which this they require the whole exertion of a muscu-work has been arranged, Fijian warfare will lar man to wield them, while others are so short that they are kept stuck in the girdle, and used as missiles, precisely as the short knob-kerries are used by the South Africans. A Fijian will often carry two or more of

these clubs in his girdle.

Some of the most characteristic forms of Fijian clubs are given on the following page, all being drawn from specimens in my collection. Fig. 1 represents a club, and is evidently modified from a gnarled and knotted branch, and by comparing a number of specimens together it is easy to trace the progress of manufacture. This form of club is also to be found among the Papuans of New Guinea, the natives of the Outanata district carrying it. With the exception of the deep transverse cuts, there is no attempt at ornament. It is tolerably heavy, though not very large, and requires two hands to be wielded properly.

Figure 2 represents one of the paddle-like clubs which have just been mentioned. The blade is not an inch in thickness in the middle, and it gradually slopes off to either side, so as to form a tolerably sharp edge. With the exception of the handle, it is entirely covered with carving; the dentated pattern, which seems common to nearly all savage art, being very conspicuous. It is extremely weighty, and, to an European, appears a

(1.) ORATOR'S FLAPPER. (2.) IDOL OF SOLOMON (See page 930.) ISLANDS. (See page 970.)

OF MAKING THE
THEIR NAMES—
THE FATE OF
NSECRATION "OF
I — TRAINING IN
I — DANCES AND
IC DISCIPLINE—
LND DECORATING

on of a muscuothers are so in the girdle, y as the short outh Africans.

ristic forms of ollowing page, ens in my colub, and is gnarled and aaring a nums easy to trace. This form of the Papuans the Outanata exception of its no attempt heavy, though yo hands to be

the paddle-like ntioned. The case in the midteess in the midto either side, p edge. With it is entirely tated pattern, rly all savage it is extremely an, appears a xcept perhaps a utilized as a

SPEAR. (See page 952.)

(i.) FIJIAN CLUBS. (See page 948.)

Fig. 3 is as a sort of two alread has a broa and not a ened by a centre. In which it is lower part section of the kind of club is always maround har end, sometimentioned nished with getting from assumes the indeed, muranticad.

magnified.
Another v
in fig. 4. As
tration, it is
carry it abou
It is covered
manufacture
even taken
patterns for

The pecul dently due to from which i being the bas in many spenumber — the great log of dently been two branches into slight tears a number A tolerably be of the club an this ridge are apparently fe bunches of fet the weapon.

The most of however, that in fig. 5. It is of the root of the world ther in a manner whas is the case tap-root deeply supported by which diverge it in its uprighed by the While the tr

While the tradown nearly he position, so as angles close it grown to the the top is cut off a ground. The toa point, and a to within an incomplete the control of the toa point, and a to within an incomplete the control of the toa point, and a to within an incomplete the control of the contr

Fig. 3 is a club, which may be considered as a sort of intermediate form between the two already mentioned. Like the last, it has a broad blade, but is evidently a club and not a paddle. The blade is strength-and by a hold ridge supplies along the end by a bold ridge running along the centre. In order to show the mode in which it is flattened, a side view of the lower part is shown at fig. a, and a cross section of the blade is given at fig. b. This kind of club is modified in various ways, but is always made on the same principle, i. e. a round handle and a flattened paddle-like end, sometimes nearly plain, as in the above mentioned specimens, and sometimes furnished with knobs, teeth, and spikes projecting from the sides. In some cases it assumes the shape of a crescent, and looks, indeed, much like a cheese knife very much magnified.

Another very characteristic shape is given in fig. 4. As may be imagined from the illustration, it is very weighty, so that even to carry it about must be rather troublesome. It is covered with carvings in the most layish manner, and such value has been set by the manufacturer upon the weapon, that he has even taken the trouble to invent different

patterns for the opposite sides.

The peculiar form of this club is evidently due to the structure of the branch from which it was cut, the projecting portion being the base of another branch. Although in many specimens—my own among the number—the club has been carved from a great log of solid wood, the form has evidently been borrowed from the junction of two branches. The edge of the club is cut the court sword of the present day, into slight teeth, and just within the edge

Some of the names given to the are a number of round holes, set in a line. A tolerably bold ridge runs along the head of the club and follows its curve, and through this ridge are also bored a number of holes, apparently for the purpose of attaching bunches of feathers, or other ornaments, to the weapon.

The most characteristic club of Fiji is, however, that of which an example is given in fig. 5. It is made from the stem and part of the root of a young tree. In this part of the world there are certain trees which grow in a manner which to us seems very peculiar. As is the case with many trees, it sends a tap-root deeply into the earth, and is further supported by a number of smaller roots which diverge from it on all sides, and retain it in its upright position, just as a mast is

upheld by the standing rigging.

position, so as to be bent nearly at right angles close to the earth. When it has

uable weapon, and the greatest care is taken in its manufacture. The spike at the end is scraped and rounded until it assumes a perfectly regular shape, and is then polished until it shines like a well-rubbed piece of mahogany. The radiating spikelets are each trimmed with the greatest nicety, so that, in whatever direction the weapon is viewed, they all radiate with exact regularity.

The handle is polished as carefully as the lower spike, and in most cases is adorned with elaborately carved patterns. In many clubs it is completely covered with black and white sinnet made expressly for this purpose, and plaited in patterns as elaborate as those which are carved. Some of the best clubs are further ornamented by having scarlet feathers worked in with sinnet. There are, indeed, scarcely any bounds to the decoration of clubs, many of which are inlaid with shell, or hogs' tusks, or whales' teeth, or even the teeth of men. These latter ornaments are chiefly reserved for the knobs of the small missile club.

Beside these, there is an infinite variety of forms, some of the clubs exactly resembling the steel maces of the days of chivalry, others being first squared and then cut into pyramidal form, while others look just like enormous mushrooms. Some of them have the handles completely covered with wickerwork; but, as a rule, these highly ornamental weapons are not for use but for show, like

Some of the names given to these clubs are highly suggestive. For example, one was called "Weeping urges me to action," others "Disperser," "Smasher," and so forth. Those which belong to well-known chiefs or distinguished warriors are used much as cards among ourselves. If, for example, a great chief desires to pay a visit, he will send his club as an intimation that the owner will follow. Or, if one chief asks another for aid in war, the ordinary mode of showing that the application is favorably received is for the latter to send his club by the ambassador who brought the message.

There is as great variety of spears as of clubs. Spears are almost invariably of great length, some measuring fourteen or fifteen feet in length. They are made from hard wood and are almost invariably armed with a series of barbs. In the manufacture and While the tree is very young, it is drawn down nearly horizontally, and fixed in that wonderful ingenuity. Mostly, they are not wonderful ingenuity. Mostly, they are not from the same piece of wood as the spear grown to the thickness of a man's wrist, the top is cut off and the roots dug out of the sting-ray is a favorite material, both for itself, but in many weapons they are made ground. The tap-root is then scraped down to point, and all the smaller roots are cut off because it is very hard, and so brittle that it to within an inch and a half of the tap-root, is nearly sure to break off in the wound.

Other barbs are made of a wood which has | the property of swelling up when moistened, and bursting in the wound, so that it can hardly be extracted. Such spears as this are called by a very ominous title, "The priest is too late." Some of the spears are not only carved in various patterns, but have the heads cut into a kind of bold open work pattern, which has a very elegant appearance, though it must detract greatly from the strength of the weapon. One of the ordinary Fijian spears is shown on page 949, and is taken from specimens in my collection. in which there are several others, but all of a similar character.

Many of the weapons have more than one point. In the specimens which I have, the points are rather more than a yard in length, and are made of separate pieces of wood, ingeniously dovetailed into the shaft of the spear, and held in their place by lashings of sinnet. In my specimen, the manufacturer has been so lavish of his labor, that he has not only woven the sinnet into elegant patterns, but has continued them along the whole of the shaft, covering it with a sort of mixture of the zigzag and the dentated patterns. There are also spears with several points, each point being barbed or deeply serrated on the inside cap. These are not for war, but for fishing purposes. As for the war in which these weapons are used, it it against a thousand. Mr. Williams visited

is hardly deserving of the name. When two chiefs have decided on going to war, messengers pass between them, and both sides beat up recruits for their armies and offer gifts to the gods. Whales' teeth and food form the chief part of these offer-ings, and the latter is often given in vast quantities. Independent chiefs often take advantage of war to increase their property. Such a chief, for example, though urged by both sides to join them, trims and hesitates. and bides his time. One party will then send him a bribe, and as soon as the other party hear of it, they send a larger bribe, in order to "press down" the former gift. The result usually is, that the recipient keeps both bribes, and eventually declines to fight on either side.

The forces are gathered by a series of reviews, held as the army marches. These reviews form the great charm of war, as any amount of boasting may be done without the slightest risk. Each warrior rushes up to the commanding chief, brandishes his weapons, and boasts of the great deeds which he is going to do; all the warriors being in their very best, with bodies covered with black powder, so as to contrast with the snow-white masi, and their faces painted as none but a Fijian can paint them, in order to look as martial as possible.

The chief often ridicules the pretensions of these men, insinuating that they will be to display their courage, and, by way of inducing them to fight well, large gifts are promised to those who distinguish themselves in battle.

Sometimes a warrior, carried away by the excitement of the moment, boasts that he will kill the enemy's chief, eat his flesh, and make a drinking-cup of his skull. This is generally a very feelish proceeding. The men-aced chief is sure to hear of it, and to promise a large reward if the boaster be taken

Should he be captured, his fate is certain. His hands are bound behind him, and a large bundle of dried cocoa-nut leaves is large bundle of dried cocon-nu-fastened tightly across his shoulders, pro-fastened tightly across his shoulders, pro-fastened tightly across his shoulders, proends of the leaves are then lighted, and the ends of the leaves are then lighted, and the poor wretch is left to die, the spectators laughing and jcering at him as he runs about, maddened by the torment. This punishment is called by a name which signifies carrying fuel. The artist has represented in the lower engraving, on the 943d this frightful fate of the heaster. page, this frightful fate of the boaster.

The party that are attacked usually retire into a native fort, the structure of which often shows great engineering skill. The Fijians are very apt at selecting a spot which is difficult of access, and fortifying it in such a manner that two or three men could hold one of these forts, and found that the approach to it was not without danger, even in time of peace. The only path to the fort led through thick and tangled vegetation, and terminated on the edge of a precipice. The entrance to the fort was on the face of the precipice, several yards from the end of the path, and there was no mode of getting to it except by crawling along the perpendicular rock by means of little holes in which the toes and fingers could be inserted.

When the natives cannot find a place of such natural strength, they have a way of defending the entrance by a series of gates with traverses between them, so that any enemies who forced the first gate were obliged to go for some distance through a narrow passage which was pierced with loopholes, through which spears could be thrust and arrows shot. Even if they succeeded in passing the second gate, a similar gauntlet had to be run before they could reach the third. Thorny trees are in great request for the outer defences of these forts, the bare-skinned natives greatly dreading the prickly walls, which every year grow more

dense and less penetrable. Knowing the strength of the forts, the natives do not care about assaulting them, and, as they advance to the walls, avail themselves of every cover. They then yell and shout derisive taunts at the enemy, more ready to run away than to fight; but challenging them to come out and fight this is only for the purpose of inciting them Sometimes the challenge is answered, a

number of and each se ever, as so challenge a as they can, his enemy stealthily be fight.

Should a dreadful, an greater nun reserved to favorite mo happy capti him into a h him back to the unfortur stores him with laughte spectators. foot and give lects on whic turing.

As these made in cano is seen from population as come the vidancing and honor of the then takes placescribed; the in the temple for some days preme.

In connexio

tioned a curi

name to men enemy during enemy be an fight, an unar stealth, a wom nifles nothing. enemy, and ha honor. Should takes the name his own chief h his flag, his consecration c name is given very excellent subject of cons

"The king as their seats in mats were bro upon these wer two whale's tee mat, and on it young chief nov ing in one hand in the other a c train of masi dr

"On his reac took the reed despatched a yo the temple of th , by way of in-large gifts are tinguish them-

ed away by the boasts that he t his flesh, and all. This is genng. The ment, and to prom-paster be taken

fate is certain. nd him, and a a-nut leaves is shoulders, proghted, and the the spectators m as he runs orment. This me which sigrtist has repreg, on the 943d boaster.

d usually retire ture of which ng skill. The ng a spot which fying it in such nen could hold Villiams visited nd that the apt danger, even ath to the fort ed vegetation, of a precipice. om the end of ode of getting g the perpen-little holes in s could be in-

ind a place of have a way of series of gates n, so that any st gate were nce through a reed with loopould be thrust y succeeded in nilar gauntlet ould reach the great request iese forts, the dreading the ar grow more

the forts, the aulting them, e walls, avail They then yell t the enemy, ut and fight. answered, a

number of warriors issuing from the fort ordered the young chief to stand upon the and each selecting an adversary; often, however, as soon as the besiegers see their challenge answered, they run away as fast as they can, the Fijian liking to come behind his enemy and knock him on the head stealthily better than to oppose him in open

Should a fort be taken, the slaughter is dreadful, and is nothing but a massacre, the greater number being killed, and the rest reserved to be put to death by torture. One favorite mode of torture is to stun the un-happy captive with a club, and to throw him into a heated oven by way of bringing him back to his senses. The struggles of the unfortunate man as the flerce heat restores him to consciousness are greeted with laughter and jeers by the delighted spectators. Others are bound hand and foot and given to the sons of chiefs as subjects on which they can try their skill at torturing.

As these expeditions are nearly always made in canoes, the return of the war party is seen from a great distance, and all the population assemble on the beach to welcome the victorious warriors, the women dancing and singing songs of triumph in honor of the conquerors. A horrible scene then takes place, too horrible indeed to be described; the bodies of the dead are offered in the temples, the ovens are prepared, and for some days unbridled license reigns supreme.

In connexion with warfare must be mentioned a curious custom of giving a new name to men who have killed any of the enemy during the campaign. Whether the enemy be an armed warrior slain in fair fight, an unarmed man knocked down by stealth, a woman, or even a little child, sig-nifies nothing. The warrior has clubbed an enemy, and has a right to his new name of honor. Should he have killed a chief, he takes the name of his victim, and sometimes his own chief honors him by calling the man his flag, his canoe, his comb, &c. Of the consecration ceremony, wherein the new name is given, Mr. Williams once saw a very excellent example at Somo-somo, the subject of consecration being a young chief.

"The king and leading men having taken their seats in the public square, fourteen mats were brought and spread out, and upon these were placed a bale of cloth and two whale's teeth. Near by was laid a sail mat, and on it several men's dresses. The young chief now made his appearance, bearing in one hand a large pine-apple club, and in the other a common reed, while his long train of masi dragged on the ground behind

"On his reaching the mats, an old man took the reed out of the hero's hand, and

bale of cloth; and while he obeyed, a number of women came into the square, bringing small dishes of turmeric mixed with oil, ing small dishes of turmeric mixed with oil, which they placed before the youth, and retired with a song. The masi was now removed by the chief himself, an attendant substituting one much larger in its stead. The king's Mata (aide-de-camp) next selected several dishes of the colored oil, and appointed the warrior from the revise of the anointed the warrior from the roots of the hair to his heels.

"At this stage of the proceedings one of the spectators stepped forward and exchanged clubs with the anointed, and soon another did the same. Then one left him a gun in place of the club, and many similar changes were effected, under a belief that the weapons thus passing through his hands derived some virtue.

"The mats were now removed, and a portion of them sent to the temple, some of the turmeric being sent after them. The king and old men, followed by the young man and two men sounding conehs, now proceeded to the seaside, where the anointed one passed through the ancients to the water's edge, returned, while the king and those with him counted one, two, three, four, five, and each then threw a stone into the sea. The whole company now went back to the town with blasts of the trumpet shells, and a peculiar hooting of the men.

"Custom requires that a hut should be built, in which the anointed man and his companions may pass the next three nights, during which time the newly named hero must not lie down, but sleep as he sits; he must not change his masi, or remove the turmeric, or enter a house in which there is a woman, until that period has elapsed. In the case now described, the hut had not been built, and the young chief was permit-ted to use the temple of the god of war in-

"During the three days he was on an incessant march, followed by half a score lads reddened like himself. After three weeks he paid me a visit, on the first day of his being permitted to enter a house in which there was a female. He informed me his new name was Kuila, or Flag.'

When a name of honor has thus been given to a man, the complimentary title of

Koroi, or consecrated, is prefixed to it.

The battles of the Fijians are not, as a rule, remarkable for the slaughter that takes place. They are, in fact, little but a series of single combats. When a man falls, his friends try to get him off the ground to save his life, if possible, or to be able to bury the body if he should die; while the enemy use their best endeavors to secure the wounded man in order to bake and eat him. No disdespatched a youth to deposit it carefully in the temple of the war god. The king then of his courage, for none but those who die honor is attached to the fact of a slain man

bravely in battle are eaten in the feast | walk alone in the evening. Mr. Williams which follows upon the victory, the bodies of slain cowards being contemptuously thrown into the bush.

WE now come to a more pleasing part of Fijian character, namely, the various incidents of domestic life.

As soon as the Fijian child comes into the world, it is taken from the mother, and given to another woman for three days, during which time she lies at her ease. first clothing which the child receives is a thick coating of turmeric oil, and the first food which it knows is either the juice of sugar-cane or of cocoa-nut. A name is given to the child as soon as possible after its birth. and these names are generally significant of some event that has happened either to the child itself or to some member of its fam-

Though the Fijian children spend the great part of their time in the open air, and are untrammelled by clothing, they are liable to a very unpleasant disease called the "thoko," which somewhat resembles the "yaws" of the negro tribes. The parents are rather glad than sorry to see their children afflicted with this disease, as they believe that it forms a necessary adjunct to infantile health, and that a child who escapes the thoko is sure to be sickly and feeble when

it grows up.

The Fijian child receives no training, unless encouragement of every bad passion may be called by that name. Revenge is impressed upon the child's mind from its earliest infancy, and most horrible are the means which are sometimes employed for this purpose. In riper years the duty of revenge is kept always before his eyes. Should one man insult another, the offended individual keeps himself constantly reminded of the offence by placing some object in his sight, and not removing it until he has avenged himself.

Sometimes he will effect the same purpose by depriving himself of some luxury until he has had his revenge. One man, for example, will plait his hair in a particular manner, another will hang some article of dress in his house, while another will re-fuse to dance, or to eat of some particular kind of food. One chief, for example, hung a roll of tobacco on the roof of his house. with the intention of refusing to smoke until he had killed his enemy and could smoke that tobacco over the dead body. refrained from speaking, and would only answer by whistling.

The knowledge of this custom makes the Fijians a most nervous race. Should a strange canoe appear off the coast, the inhabitants of the villages are all in a stir, some escaping to the woods, and others consome escaping to the woods, and others con-cealing their food and other valuables in tip projects over the water. The game con-

mentions that he has seen a whole company disperse at the lifting of a telescope, and, more than once, when he was visited by natives and the door suddenly slammed with the wind, the whole of his visitors rushed tumultuously out of the windows. On one occasion, a number of men were dragging a large canoe into the sea, when one of them espied a slight crack on one side. He whispered his discovery to the man next him, he to the next, and so on, and in a few minutes every man had run away from the boat, fearing lest the owner should charge him with having done the damage.

The amusements of the Fijians are rather more varied than is usually the case among savages. Some of them are identical with many of our own children's games, such as "hide and seck," "blind man's buff," and a sort of "hop, skip, and jump." A sort of "pitch and toss," is also in vogue, the substitute for pence being the flat, circular fruit

of a species of mimosa.

They have one game which bears some resemblance to that of the "kangaroo-rat" of Australia, which has been described on page 730. The players have a reed about four feet in length, at one end of which is an oval piece of hard and heavy wood some six inches in length. This instrument is held between the thumb and middle finger, the end of the forefinger being applied to its extremity. With a peculiar underhand jerk the player drives it horizontally, so that it glides over the ground for a considerable distance, the player who sends the missile farthest being the winner. In order that this favorite game may be constantly played, each village has attached to it a long strip of smooth sward, which is kept sedulously trimmed, so that the missile may skim along with as little resistance as possible.

Then there is the swing. This is made much like the New Zealand swing, but is used in a different manner. Instead of being held by the hands alone, the rope has a loop at the end, into which the swinger inserts his foot. Sometimes, it has a large knot, on which both feet can be supported. Drawing the rope to the top of a convenient bank, the swinger grasps it with his hands, leaps in the air, places his foot in the loop, and goes sweeping through an enormous arc, the radius of which often exceeds fifty feet. In some cases the swing is fixed by the water side, and the more daring of Another the performers loosen their grasp at the proper moment, and are hurled through the air into the water.

One favorite game, called Ririki, is played after the following fashion :- Close to the water's edge is fixed a stout post, and on this is laid the trunk of a tall cocoa-nut tree, 80 secret storehouses. They do not like to sists in running at full speed up this in-

clined tree, after the of peating the game, the n whole time, cession that the inclined people are ing been acc could walk, with as mue fond of swim join in vario to push each ing, and so fe

Some of i They have or resemblance missiles are b balls. In so each other by do so with su is caused whe skin.

Sometimes place. When the women su drive them a Rough as the dom retaliate, ants round th on the ground instance when dead with an a into a sad real where the m their wounds. On certain

played by the

ware vessel is

pended from

young men wi to break the long sticks. Music and among the Fij a new dance is by teaching it. are very poor, and trumpets. ments are nothi ders, through or cut about an inc are of two kinds pipe made of se tened together, strument is pla close to one no it while the other of the left hand conch-shells blo

The dances ar more resemble dances, the sim the martial array

side.

Mr. Williams whole company telescope, and, as visited by nay slammed with visitors rushed adows. On one were dragging a en one of them one side. He the man next on, and in a few away from the should charge amage.

jians are rather the case among identical with games, such as n's buff," and a ogue, the substiit, circular fruit

ich bears some

' kangaroo-rat" en described on e a reed about d of which is an wood some six trument is held ddle finger, the pplied to its exunderhand jerk tally, so that it a considerable nds the missile In order that nstantly played, it a long strip kept sedulously

sile may skim

e as possible. This is made d swing, but is Instead of be-, the rope has a the swinger init has a large be supported. p of a convensps it with his his his foot in the rough an enorh often exceeds swing is fixed nore daring of r grasp at the ed through the

Ririki, is played - Close to the ost, and on this coa-nut tree, so round, and the The game coned up this in-

clined tree, and jumping into the water one after the other, swimming ashore and re-peating the process. This is a very lively game, the natives shouting and laughing the whole time, and plunging so rapidly in succession that the water beneath the end of the inclined tree is white with foam. The people are admirable swimmers, and, having been accustomed to swim as soon as they could walk, disport themselves in the water with as much ease as on land. They are fond of swimming out to sea in parties, and join in various aquatic games, such as trying to push each other under water, diving, racing, and so forth.

Some of their sports are rather rough. They have one game which bears a certain resemblance to snow-balling, except that the missiles are bitter oranges instead of snowballs. In some places they jerk stones at each other by means of elastic bamboos, and do so with such force that considerable pain is caused when the missile strikes the bare skin.

Sometimes a sort of mock battle takes place. When food is brought to the men, the women suddenly rush upon them, try to drive them away, and to seize the food. Rough as the women may be, the men seldom retaliate, except by taking their assailants round the waists and throwing them on the ground. Mr. Williams mentions one instance when a woman actually shot a man dead with an arrow, turning the mock fight into a sad reality. Several cases are known where the men have been so severely handled that they have afterward died of their wounds.

On certain occasions an amusing game is played by the young men. A thin earthen-ware vessel is filled with water and suspended from a bough, and a number of young men with their eyes blindfolded, try to break the vessel by striking at it with long sticks.

Music and dancing are greatly studied among the Fijians, and any one who knows a new dance is sure to earn plenty of goods by teaching it. Their musical instruments are very poor, consisting of drums, pipes, and trumpets. The first-mentioned instruments are nothing more than wooden cylinders, through one side of which a groove is cut about an inch or so in width. The pipes are of two kinds; namely, a sort of pandean pipe made of several strips of bamboo fastened together, and the flute. This latter instrument is played by placing the aperture close to one nostril, and breathing through it while the other is stopped with the thumb of the left hand. The trumpets are merely conch-shells blown through a hole in the

The dances are very carefully got up, and more resemble military movements than dances, the similitude being increased by

dressed as if for war, their faces painted with scarlet, their bodies powdered with black and their best clubs or spears in their hands. They execute intricate manœuvres, marching in various figures, wheeling, halting, and stamping their feet in exact time to the rhythm of the song and the beat of the drum. Sometimes several hundred men are engaged in the dance, while the musicians are twenty or thirty in number.

The scene at one of these dances is very picturesque, but it wants the furious energy which gives such flery animation to the war dance of the New Zealanders, the movements, though correct in point of time, being comparatively dull and heavy. In order to enliven it a little more, a professional buffoon is usually introduced upon the scene, who performs sundry grotesque movements, and is usually applauded for his exertions.

Music and dancing are always used at the celebration of a marriage, and, as may be imagined from the punctilious nature of the Fijian, there is no lack of ceremony on the occasion.

Mostly, girls are betrothed when they are quite infants, no regard being paid to dis-parity of age between themselves and their intended husbands. The form of betrothal is rather curious, and consists in the mother of the child taking a small liku, or woman's girdle, and presenting it to the man, who from that moment takes her daughter under his protection until she is old enough to be married.

In those cases where a young man takes a liking to a young woman, he asks her of her father, making at the same time a small present as a matter of form. Should the application be successful, an interchange of presents then takes place between the friends of both parties, and in a few days follows the ceremony called "warming," which consists in conveying to the house of the bride some food prepared by the intended husband. In most parts of Fiji, the bride has a complete holiday for four days, sitting quietly at home, dressed in her finest appare, and painted with turmeric and oil. At the expiration of the four days, she is taken by a number of married women to the sea, where they all join in fishing, and afterward cook the fish that they have taken. The cooking being completed, the bridegroom is sent for, and the betrothed couple eat together, each giving the other a portion of food.

After this ceremony comes a period during which the bridegroom is employed in building a house for his intended wife, and the girl undergoes the painful tattooing which marks her as having taken her place among women. During this time, she remains within the house so as to shield her complexion from the sun. The house being the martial array of the dancers, who are all completed, all the friends of both families

are gathered together, and a great feast reminded him of a sister of hers, who had takes place, at which the givers make it a been taken to Mbau in years past." coint of honor to be as lavish as possible. At the end of this feast, the girl is formally handed over to her husband, and exchanges her narrow liku for the broader garment

befitting her new condition.

When the daughter of an important chief is married, her father always gives her a number of female attendants, sometimes as many as twelve or fifteen accompanying the bride to her home. They are placed under the charge of an elderly woman who acts as their superintendent, and are called by a name which signifies a pet servant. There is always a great scene at the departure of a bride to her home, all her relations and friends crowding round her, and kissing her until she is nearly smothered by their caresses.

An interesting description of the presentation of a bride is given by Mr. Williams, and the artist has reproduced the scene in the engraving No. 1, on the next page. "She was brought in at the principal entrance by the king's aunt and a few matrons, and then, led only by the old lady, approached the king. She was an interesting girl of fifteen, glistening with oil, wearing a new liku, and a necklace of curved ivory points, radiating from her neck, and turning upward. The king then received from his aunt the girl, with two whale's teeth, which she carried in her hand. When she was seated at his feet, his majesty repeated a list of their gods, and finished by praying that the girl might live, and bring forth male children.

"To her friends, two men who had come in at the back door, he gave a musket, begging them not to think hardly of his having taken their child, as the step was connected with the good of the land, in which their interests, as well as his own, were involved. The musket, which was about equivalent to the necklace, the men received with bent heads, muttering a short prayer, the close of which was exactly the same as they had offered for years, Death to Natawa. Tui-kilakila then took off the girl's necklace and kissed her. The gayest moment of her life, as far as dress was concerned, was past; and I felt that the untying of that polished ornament from her neck was the first downward step to a dreary future. Perhaps her forebodings were like mine, for she wept, and the tears which glanced off her bosom and rested in distinct drops on her oily legs were seen by the king, who said, 'Do not Are you going to leave your own land? You are but going a voyage, soon to return. Do not think it a hardship to go to Mbau. Here you have to work hard; there you will rest. Here you fare indifferently; there you will eat the best of food. Only do not weep to spoil yourself.' As he thus spoke, he played with her curly locks, com-

She had certainly reason for her tears, as the condition of Fijian wives is not a very enviable one. As is the case with most countries in which polygamy is practised, the wives are apt to be very jealous of each other, and to quarrel among themselves, Generally, their squabbles are treated with contemptuous it lifference by the husband as long as they do not annoy him personally; but if he should feel himself angered, he speedily checks the tumult by belaboring all parties alike with a very sufficient stick which he keeps for the purpose. One chief had a cudgel as thick as a broomstick, in which he seemed to take no little pride, having carved and inlaid it with ivory.

Women are not held in any great estimation, whether they be single or married, A rather ludicrovs example of the value set by Fijians upon women occurred in the course of traffic between Europeans and natives. A chief had bargained with the cap-tain of a ship for a musket, the price of which was to be two pigs. The chief went off with his musket, but could only find one pig. So he honorably kept his bargain by sending the one pig and a young woman in-

stead of the other.

In the description of the ceremonies attendant upon a wedding, mention was made of the custom of building a house for the bride. The form of Fijian houses varies according to locality. In some places they are sharp-ridged and gabled, like those which have already been described when treating of New Guinea. In others they are round, and in others conical. Some are built on posts, and others simply on the ground. As is the case throughout all Polynesia, the houses are made of a wooden framework lashed together, and covered with a thatch of reeds. Many of these houses are of great size, more than a hundred feet in length and about forty in width. A house that is meant to endure for any length of time is made of a wood called by the natives vesi, which is exactly similar to the greenheart of India, and a sort of sandal wood is also used for the same pur-

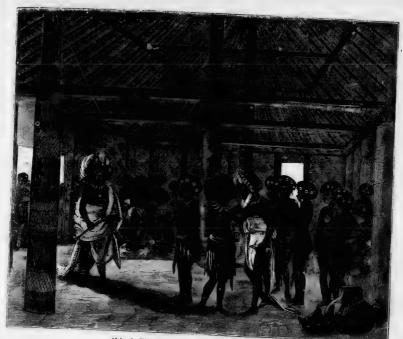
The walls are generally made of reeds arranged in three layers, the middle layer being horizontal and the outer and inner layers perpendicular. They are tied or sewed together with sinnet, and it is the Fijian architect's pride to weave the sinnet into elegant patterns. Some men are celebrated for their skill in inserting and executing these patterns, and go about from place to place as they are wanted. Even the posts that support the edifice are often covplimenting her on her face and figure. She induces a Kaffir to make so low an enhers, who had past."

r her tears, as a sign of a very ase with most as practised, the alous of each g themselves, e treated with y the husband y him person-nself angered, alt by belabor-very sufficient purpose. One a a broomstick, no little pride, ith ivory.

my great estigle or married, f the value set curred in the opeans and nalativity with the capthe chief went I only find one is bargain by ng woman in-

ceremonies attion was made house for the houses varies ne places they escribed when thers they are al. Some are simply on the shout all Polyof a wooden and covered lany of these e than a hunforty in width. endure for a wood called exactly similar and a sort of he same pur-

de of reeds armiddle layer er and inner are tied or and it is the twe the sinner men are celetting and execution and execution and execution and execution are often cover in the same r is always a me reason that to low an en-



(1.) A FIJIAN WEDDING. (See page 956.)



(2.) HOUSE THATCHIN (See page 959)

trance to h mies. The thatch sugar-cane le while in a fer used. The and sewed to about five or almost exact being laid on down by long firmly with ra House that mated scene. soon as the roc the thatchers way assemble varying in n the house, as times uniting Some bring bind and sew and others to Those who ac arrange thems outside and th that one can t it is pushed th rade, draw it The reader ma sented in a spir page.
The noise the during the prodeafening. N great genius for casions he fairly for more grass, rattans; others them. Those w needs shout as t every one throw by way of enco The most che house is the ridge top of the roof. a considerable buildings is we shape at the ext ends are mostly with large white cable made of g stalks is genera and in many case of tassels, and ne worked in sinnet Some, though openings by way closed by means like curtains. Win the centre, is the ground to a surrounded by a surrounded b

sugar-cane leaves, and sometimes of grass, while in a few of the best houses both are used. The leaves are doubled over reeds and sewed together, so as to form lengths of about five or six feet. Grass thatch is fixed almost exactly as straw is used in England being laid on the roof in bundles, and held down by long mangrove branches, and tied

firmly with rattan.

House thatching is one of the most animated scenes that can be imagined. As soon as the root is finished, notice is given that the thatchers are wanted, and then straightway assemble a gang of merry laborers, varying in number according to the size of the house, as many as three hundred sometimes uniting to thatch a very large house. Some bring the leaves and grass, others bind and sew them into the proper form, and others take them to the thatchers. Those who actually apply the reeds always arrange themselves in pairs on the roof, one outside and the other inside the building, so that one can take the end of the lashing as it is pushed through the thatch by his comrade, draw it tight, and return it to him. The reader may find house thatching represented in a spirited engraving, on the 957th

The noise that arises from a large house during the process of thatching is almost deafening. Naturally, the Fijian has a great genius for shouting, and on such occasions he fairly outdoes himself. Some call for more grass, leaves, mangrove rods and rattans; others from below shout in reply to them. Those who bring the materials must needs shout as they clamber to the roof, and every one throws in a few yells occasionally by way of encouragement to his compan-

The most characteristic part of a Fijian house is the ridge pole which runs along the top of the roof. It projects at either end for considerable distance, and in first-class buildings is worked into a trumpet-like shape at the extremities. These projecting ends are mostly blackened, and decorated with large white cowrie shells. A sort of cable made of grass and bound with vinestalks is generally laid on the ridge pole, and in many cases is finished off with a row of tassels, and nearly covered with patterns worked in sinnet.

Some, though not all, the houses have openings by way of windows, which can be osed by means of mats fastened over them like curtains. Within the house, and nearly n the centre, is the fireplace, which is sunk in the ground to a foot or so in depth, and surrounded by a sort of fender made of hard

trance to his hut; namely, fear of enemies.

The thatch is sometimes of cocoa-nut or T which cooking pots and similar utensils can be kept. There is no chimney, nor even a hole in the roof, so that all the smoke from the fireplace ascends to the roof, and finds its way out through the thatch as it best can, In nearly every case the doorway is fu nished with a projecting roof.

In connection with roof thatching, a characteristic joke is recorded of the Mbau peo-The short missile club is called ula, and the act of hurling it is called ulaula. The latter word, however, also signifies house thatching. By way of a practical joke, the people of Mbau sent to those of Tailevu, asking them to come and ulaula. The latter, taking the word in its ordinary sense, accepted the invitation, and came, expecting the usual scene of merriment when to their surprise, they were saluted by a volley of ulas hurled at them by their entertainers.

The furniture of a Fijian house is simple. At one end is a raised daïs, on which the master of the house sleeps by night and reclines by day. It is covered with mats, and over it are hung the sheets of thin masi which are used as mosquito curtains. On this dais are generally one or two pillows. These implements are not unlike those of the Kaffirs, being nothing more than cylindrical bars of wood supported on legs at either end. Some of them are from four to five feet in length. This form of pillow is used on account of the mop-like headdress of the natives, which would be pressed out of all shape were it laid on an ordinary pil-

On the hearth are several large earthenware cooking pots, oval in shape, and each set on three stones. As the quantity of food in them diminishes, they are gradually tilted, so that when they contain but very little food they lie quite on their sides. Near the hearth lies the thick concave board on which bread is kneaded, and close to the board are the smooth round stones by which the operation of kneading is conducted. The small hand nets used for fishing are kept near the fire, together with the knives and other implements used in preparing food. Several earthen water jars ar always placed near the fire. They may be distinguished by their glazed surfaces, and

aced carefully on a thick bed of grass. w bamboo vessels containing salt and fresh water, are generally placed near the larger jars. Row in the foot of the wall are ranged a series of bowls and jars, which contain the arrowroot and similar articles of

CHAPTER XCVII.

FIJI - Continued.

RELIGION AND FUNERAL RITES.

THE GODS AND THEM ABUDES - VISIT OF THE LAND CRAB - FIJIAN PRIESTS AND THEIR INSIGNIA—
CONSCITING THE DETTY - VARIOUS MODES OF DIVINATION - THE DIFFICULT PASSAGE TO HEAVEN
- NATIVE TEMPLES, THEIR STRUCTURE AND USES - FEASTS GIVEN TO THE GODS - BACRED
STONES - MURDER OF THE AGED AND SICK - A STRANGE MARK OF AFFECTION - PROVIDING THE
DEAD WITH ATTENDANTS - BURIAL OF A LIVING KING - A TERRIBLE SCENE - VOYAGE TO THE
CEMETERY, AND THE FUNERAL - SIMILARITY BETWEEN THE CUSTOMS OF FIJI AND INDIA - MODE
OF MOURNING - THE SUCCESSIVE RITES AFTER A FUNERAL - THE CUSTOM OF LOLOKU - TOME
OF A CHIEF'S WIFE.

THE religion, or rather the superstition, of the Fijians is much like that of other polytheists. The people acknowledge vast numbers of gods of greater or lesser power; most, if not all, of which are symbolized under some natural form, such as a hawk, a tree, or the like. Every Fijian considers himself under the protection of some especial god, and, as has been stated, will not get the animal which is his symbol.

eat the animal which is his symbol.

An amusing instance of the reverence paid to the symbols of the gods occurred at Tilioa. A very powerful god, who is worshipped at that place, resides in a land crab, but, as that crustacean is scarcely ever seen in the locality, there are but few opportunities of paying the proper worship. Whenever any one saw a land crab, he immediately ran to the priest, and forthwith the whole place was in a commotion. The people assembled to pay their respects to their deity, and a number of cocoa-nuts were gathered, strung together, and humbly presented to the crab deity in order to propitiate him, and to induce him to give them fair weather and a healthy season.

As to the particular doctrines of the Fijian religion, it is scarcely possible to learn much about them. In the first place, the people know nothing, and the priests, who know but little, dislike communicating their knowledge. Even the Christian converts can seldom be induced to speak on the subject with any degree of truth.

The priests are known by their official insignia, which consists of an oval frontlet of scarlet feathers, and a long-toothed comb made of separate pieces of wood ingeniously fastened together. Several of these combs are in my collection, and are excellent examples of the artistic capabilities of the makers. No two of them are alike, the delicate thread which fastens them together being woven in a singular variety of patterns. The threads are nearly as fine as hairs, and an additional beauty is given to the pattern by using alternately a deep black and a glittering yellow thread.

The priests communicate with their deties by throwing themselves into a sort of ecestatic state, technically called "shaking," in which the whole body is convulsed, and the utterances which come from the foaming lips are held to be the responses of the god. A vivid idea of this mode of consuling a deity is given by Mr. Williams in the valuable work to which reference has often been made.

"Nothing like regular worship or habitual reverence is found, and a principle of fear seems the only motive for religious observances; and this is fully practised on by the priests, through whom alone the people have access to the gods, when they wish to present petitions affecting their social or individual interest. When matters of importance are involved, the sore or offering consists of large quantities of food, together with

whales' teet club, mat, o covered wit meanest off occasion, who of the Somo war god a la a quantity o beside whale

"Part of set apart for feast of whice devoted to the by old men, tapu.

tapu.
"Stranger quantity of fit times only a is presented. for the trans. I have know a private hou in some part case.

"One who dresses and by a few other will suppose, of the intend sacred corne When the pa that his back which the go occupy the or principal per states the pur a hope that favor. Some the priest a d he anoints hi tooth, regard attention.

"Unbroken becomes absoo watch him wir a few minutes are seen in h ments in his violent muscu the whole franthe man shives some islands the murs and soblarged, and the quickened.
"The priest

and all his wor as no longer hi who has enter 'Koi au! Koi a air, and the go his approach. priest's eyes st frenzy; his voic his lips livid, his entire appearan man. The swe

whales' teeth. In smaller affairs a tooth, club, mat, or spear, is enough. Young nuts covered with turmeric powder formed the meanest offering I have known. On one occasion, when Tuikilakila asked the help of the Somo-somo gods in war, he built the war god a large new temple, and presented a quantity of cooked food, with sixty turtles, beside whales' teeth.

"Part of the offering - the sigana - is set apart for the deity, the rest forming a feast of which all may partake. The portion devoted to the god is eaten by his priest and by old men, but to youths and women it is

tapu.

"Strangers wishing to consult a god cut a quantity of fire wood for the temple. Sometimes only a dish of yams or a whale's tooth is presented. It is not absolutely necessary for the transaction to take place at a temple. I have known priests to become inspired in a private house or in the open air; indeed, in some parts of Fiji, the latter is usually the

"One who intends to consult the oracle dresses and oils himself, and, accompanied by a few others, goes to the pracet, who, we will suppose, has been previously informed of the intended visit, and is lying near the sacred corner getting ready his response. When the party arrives, he rises and sits so principal person presents a whale's tooth, states the purpose of his visit, and expresses a hope that the god will regard him with favor. Sometimes there is placed before the priest a dish of scented oil with which he anoints himself, and then receives the tooth, regarding it with deep and serious attention.

"Unbroken silence follows. The priest becomes absorbed in thought, and all eyes watch him with unblinking steadiness. In a few minutes he trembles; slight distortions are seen in his face, and twitching movements in his limbs. These increase to a violent muscular action, which spreads until the whole frame is strongly convulsed, and the man shivers as with a strong ague fit. In some islands this is accompanied with murmurs and sobs, the veins are greatly en-larged, and the circulation of the blood

quickened.

"The priest is now possessed by his god, and all his words and actions are considered as no longer his own, but those of the deity air, and the god is supposed thus to notify his approach. While giving the answer, the priest's eyes stand out and roll as if in a his lips livid, his breathing depressed, and his

tears start from his strained eyes; after which the symptoms gradually disappear. The priest looks round with a vacant stare, and as the god says 'I depart,' announces his actual departure by violently flinging himself down on the mat, or by suddenly striking the ground with a club, when those at a distance are informed by blasts on the conch, or the firing of a musket, that the deity has re-turned into the world of spirits."

In many cases it is evident that the priests enact deliberate impositions, but it is also certain that in many others they are completely under the dominion of frenzy, and that they do not recollect afterward the words which they uttered while in their delirious state. "My own mind," said one of them, "departs from me, and then, when it is truly gone, my god speaks by me.

Various modes of divination are employed by the Fijian priests. They have, for example, divination by the leaf, by the reed, by the nut, and by water. The leaf is tested by taking it between the front teeth and biting it. If it be completely severed, the omen is good; if it hang together, even by a single fibre, the omen is unfavorable, One priest had a very strange mode of divination by the leaf. He had two magic leaves, which he placed on the sides of the applicant, and then left them. If the leaf on the right side which the party arrives, he uses and sits so that his back is near to the white cloth by stung the skin, the omen was good; but if which the god visits him, while the others any plots or treacheries were hatched, the occupy the opposite side of the Buré. The warned him of the danger. Another mode of divination by the leaf is to bite it, and judge by the flavor whether the omen be adverse or the contrary.

The reed test is managed as follows. number of short reeds are cut, and laid in a row on the ground, a name being given to each. The priest then holds his right foot over each, and the response is given by the

trembling of the foot.

The water test is performed by holding the straightened arm slightly upward, and pouring a few drops of water on the wrist. If the water should run to the shoulder, the response is favorable; should it fall off at the elbow, the answer is adverse.

The next test is performed by laying a cocoa-nut on a small surface and spinning it. When it stops, the response is given by the direction in which the eye points.

According to Fijian notions, the passage to Buruto or heaven is a very difficult one, except for great chiefs, and the only plan by which a man of inferior rank can hope to obwho has entered into him. Shrill cries of Koi au! Koi au! (It is I! It is I!) fill the proclaiming himself a chief with so much apparent truthfulness that he is believed, and allowed to pass. Taking on his shoulder his war club and a whale's tooth, the Fijian frenzy; his voice is unnatural, his face pale, spirit goes to the end of the world, where his lips livid, his breathing depressed, and his entire appearance like that of a furious madit. Should he miss it, he can go no further; man. The sweat runs from every pore, and but if he hit it, he travels on to a spot where

the people have ey wish to presocial or indi-

THEIR INSIGNIA -

SSAGE TO HEAVEN

GODS - SACRED

- PROVIDING THE

- VOYAGE TO THE

ND INDIA - MODE

F LOLOKU -TOMB

y their official

in oval frontlet

g-toothed comb

ood ingeniously

of these combs

pabilities of the

e alike, the deli-

them together

variety of pat-

early as fine as

uty is given to

rnately a deep

with their dei-

s into a sort of

alled "shaking,"

convulsed, and

from the foam-

esponses of the

node of consult-

Williams in the

rence has often

ship or habitual

rinciple of fear eligious observ-

tised on by the

thread.

are excellent

rs of importance offering consists , together with

Escorted by them, he proceeds until he is met and opposed by a god called Ravuyalo, whom he fights with his club. Should he fail, he is killed and eaten by the god, and there is an end of him. Should he conquer, he proceeds until he finds a canoe, into which he gets, and is conveyed to the lofty spot where the chief god, Ndengei, lives. Over the precipice extends the long steering oar of the god's canoe. He is then asked his name and rank, when he replies with a circumstantial account of his grandeur and magnificence, of the countries over which he has ruled, of the deeds which he did in war, and of the devastation which he caused. He is then told to take his seat on the blade of the oar. Should his story have been believed, he is conveyed to Buruto; but should Ndengei disbelieve his story, the oar is tilted up, and he is hurled down the precipice into the water below whence he never emerges.

It has been mentioned that the spirit has to wait for the escort of his wives. This is in order to prove that he is a married man, bachelors having no hope of admission into Buruto. Should a wifeless man start on his journey, he is confronted by a goddess, called the Great Woman, who has a special hatred of bachelors, and, as soon as she sees one, flies at him and tries to tear him in pieces. Sometimes she misses him in her eagerness; but, even in such a case, he has to deal with another god, who hides himself in the spirit path, and, as the soul of the bachelor passes by, he springs on the wretched being, and dashes him to atoms against a stone.

The Burés or temples of the gods abound in Fiji, at least one Buré being found in every village, and some of the villages having many of these buildings. They are made of the same material as the houses, but with much more care. Instead of being merely set on the ground, they are placed on the top of a mound of earth, sometimes only slightly elevated, and sometimes twenty feet or more in height.

The natives think no labor too great for the decoration of a Buré, and it is in those buildings that their marvellous skill in plaiting sinnet is best shown. Every beam, post, and pillar is entirely covered with sinnet plaited into the most beautiful patterns, black and red being the favorite colors; and even the reeds which line the window frames, and fill up the interstices between the pillars, are hidden in the plaited sinnet with which they are covered. So lavish are the natives of their work, that they are not content with covering the pillars and reeds with sinnet work, but they make large plaited cords of the same material, and hang them in festoons from the eaves.

best houses have the ends of the ridge-poles and offered to those sacred stones, the god,

he awaits the arrival of the women who Buré are adorned with long strings of cowwere murdered at his death. ries that sometimes reach the ground. Ordinary laths are thought too common to be used in thatching temples, and the beautifully carved spears of warriors are employed insteau of simple wood. When the Buré is erected on a high mound, entrance is gained to it by means of a very thick plank cut into notched steps.

Although the Dures are cond, they are temples, and dedicated to the god, they are temples, and for secular nurposes. Visitors Although the Burés are considered as from a distance are generally quartered in them, and in many instances the principal men of the village make the Buré their sleeping-place. Councils are held in the Bures, and entertainments are given in them, of which the offerings to the god form a large part. Sometimes, as has been mentioned, a chief who wishes to propitiate some deity offers a great quantity of food in his temple, and this food is consumed in a general feast. A certain portion is dedicated to the god, and may only be eaten by the priests and the old men, but the remainder may be eaten by any one.

None of the food is left to perish, the Fijians having a convenient belief which combines piety with self-indulgence. The god is supposed to be a great eater, but only to consume the soul of the provisions, 80 that when food is cooked and offered, the god eats the soul and the people the body. The chief god, Ndengei, used to be both greedy and dainty in his demands for food. He sometimes ate two hundred hogs and a hundred turtles at a single feast, and was continually insisting on human sacrifices. In order to procure these, no respect was paid to persons, and so infatuated were the people that, to keep up Ndengei's supplies of human food, chiefs were known to kill their own wives.

No regular worship is ever offered in the Burés, which, indeed, are often left to fall into decay until some one desires to consult or propitiate the god, when the building is repaired and cleaned for the occasion. As may be expected, during the building of the Buré several human sacrifices are offered.

If the reader will refer to the drawing of the Buré on the following page, he will see that in front of it are two oddly-shaped objects. These are examples of the sacred stones, several of which are to be found in various parts of Fiji. They are considered as the dwelling-place of certain gods, and are held to be either male or female, according to the sex of the deity who inhabits them. Should the god be of the female sex, the fact is known by a woman's apron or liku being tied round the stone. One such god is a very useful one, because he hates mosquitoes, and keeps them away from the It has already been mentioned that the spot in which he dwells. Food is prepared decorated with cowries, but those of the as usual, eating the spirit of the food, and the

g strings of cowthe ground. Orco common to be, and the beautiiors are employed When the Buréis entrance is gained ick plank cut into

re considered as
the god, they are
proses. Visitors
rally quartered in
tees the principal
e Buré their sleepneld in the Burés,
riven in them, of
god form a large
been mentioned, a
vitinte some deity
bod in his temple,
in a general feast,
cated to the god,
y the priests and
nder may be eaten

eft to perish, the ont belief which indulgence. The at eater, but only he provisions, so I and offered, the people the body, used to be both lemands for food. Identified hogs and a le feast, and was auman sacrifices. In or respect was battated were the dengel's supplies known to kill

ver offered in the often left to fall desires to consultent the building is the occasion. As the building of the lees are offered, to the drawing of page, he will see two oddly-shaped less of the sacred re to be found in 2y are considered certain gods, and the or female, active who inhabits of the female sex, roman's apron or stone. One such because he hates mawny from the Food is prepared stones, the god, of the food, and the



(1.) A BURÉ, OR TEMPLE. (See page 962.)



(2.) CANOE HOUSE AT MAKIRA BAY. (See page 070.)

priest and form.

WE now
of Fiji, taki
the whole.
Among the
stition reign
infirm with
lived their

infirm with lived their arations are grained is thimself become to comply. To him that ought to resseems to imaffection, but showing their control of the co

They are of people. sob with over the people of the people

From a sin also strangle tendants of thim with the accustomed. rior, in order chief through land, and drivoppose the prictims go by laid at the bot painted and favorite club bin folds of the with their im

see how great:
All their prequiet and orde
attempting to
vying with e
accompanying
when a chief h
insisted on sha
the Fijians fe
fice that the cu
rier against O

that the inhab

WE now come to the funeral ceremonies of Fiji, taking those of the chiefs as types of the whole.

Among the Fijians a very singular superstition reigns. When men or women become infirm with age, they are considered to have lived their full time on earth, and preparations are made for their burial. So ingrained is this belief, that if a man finds himself becoming feeble with age or disease, he requests his sons to strangle him, and with this request they think themselves bound to comply. Indeed, if they think that he is too slow in making the request, they suggest to him that he has lived long enough, and ought to rest in the grave. Such conduct seems to imply that they are destitute of affection, but in reality it is their way of showing their love for their parent.

They are really a most affectionate race of people. A young chief has been seen to sob with overpowering emotion at parting from his father for a short time, and yet, were his parents to become ill or infirm, he would think it his duty to apply the fatal rope with his own hands. To be strangled by one's children, or to be buried alive by them, is considered the most honorable mode of death. The reason for this strange custom seems to be that the Fijians believe the condition of the spirit in the next world to be exactly the same as that of the individual when in life. Consequently, affectionate children are unwilling to allow their parents to pass into the next world in an infirm state of body, and therefore strangle them out of sheer kindness.

From a similar notion of kindness, they also strangle the favorite wives and attendants of the dead chief, so as to provide him with the followers to whom he has been accustomed. They also kill a powerful war-rior, in order that he may go before his chief through the passage into the spirit land, and drive away the evil spirits who oppose the progress of a new comer. These victims go by the name of "grass," and are laid at the bottom of the grave; the warrior painted and dressed for battle, with his favorite club by his side, the women arranged in folds of the finest masi, and the servants with their implements in their hands; so that the inhabitants of the spirit world may

see how great a chief has come among them. All their preparations are carried on in a quiet and orderly manner, the victims never attempting to escape from their fate, but vying with each other for the honor of accompanying their chief. In some cases, the Fijians feel the necessity for this sacri-

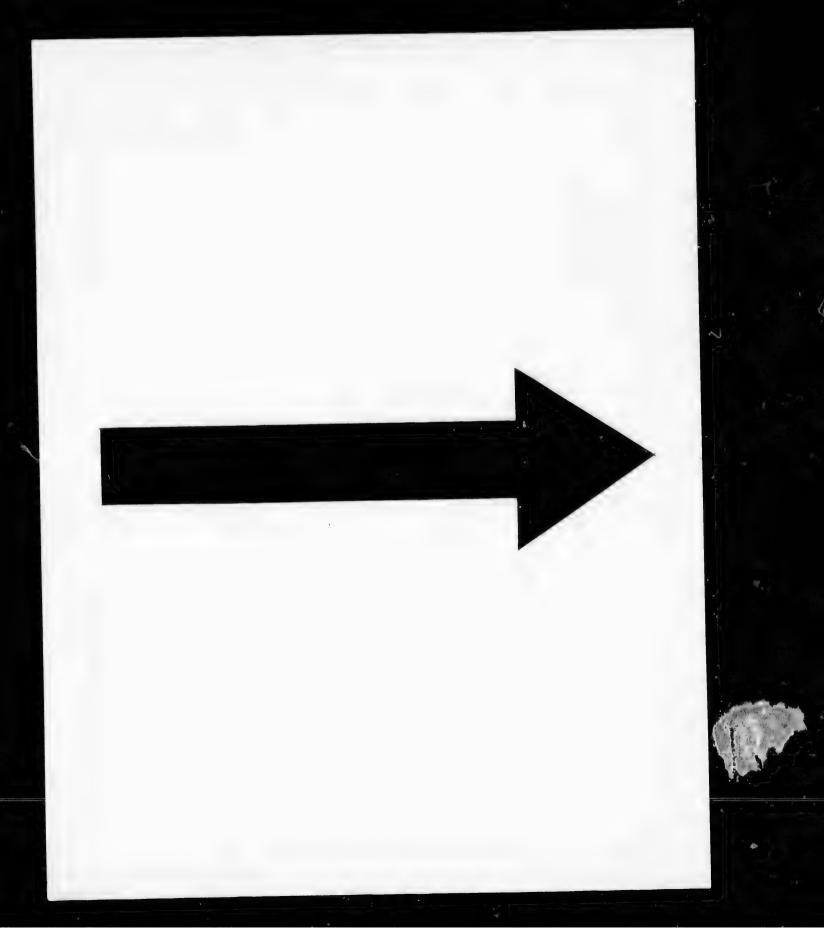
priest and officers consuming its outward balism or polygamy, and even those natives form. always uneasy on the subject. On one occasion a Christian chief was shot, and by the same volley a young man was killed. The Christian natives were delighted with the latter catastrophe, inasmuch as it provided an attendant for their slain chief.

The scene which takes place when a great chief is expected to die has been described by Mr. Williams with great power. The King of Somo-somo, a magnificent specimen of the savage, was becoming infirm through age, and toward the middle of August 1845 was unable to do more than walk about a

"I visited him on the 21st, and was surprised to find him much better than he had been two days before. On being told, therefore, on the 24th that the king was dead, and that preparations were being made for his interment, I could scarcely credit the report. The ominous word preparing urged me to hasten without delay to the scene of action, but my utmost speed failed to bring me to Nasima — the king's house — in time. The moment I entered it was evident that, as far as concerned two of the women, I was too late to save their lives. The effect of that scene was overwhelming. Scores of deliberate murderers in the very act surrounded me: yet there was no confusion, and, except a word from him who presided, no noise, only an unearthly, horrid stillness. Nature seemed to lend her aid and to deepen the dread effect; there was not a breath stirring in the air, and the half-subdued light in that hall of death showed every object with unusual distinctness.

"All was motionless as sculpture, and a strange feeling came upon me, as though I was myself becoming a statue. To speak was impossible; I was unconscious that I breathed; and involuntarily, or rather against my will, I sunk to the floor, assuming the cowering posture of those who were actually engaged in murder. My arrival was during a hush, just at the crisis of death, and to that strange silence must be attributed my emotions; and I was but too familiar with murders of this kind, neither was there anything novel in the apparatus employed. Occupying the centre of that large room were two groups, the business of whom could not be mistaken.

"All sat on the floor; the middle figure of each group being held in a sitting posture by several females, and hidden by a large veil. On either side of each veiled figure was a company of eight or ten strong men, one company hauling against the other on a accompanying their chief. In some cases, white cord which was passed twice round when a chief has died young, his mother has insisted on sharing his grave. So deeply do few minutes ceased to live. As my selfcommand was returning to me the group fice that the custom has been a greater bar-fice that the custom has been a greater bar-fier against Christianity even than canni-slackened their hold, and the attendant



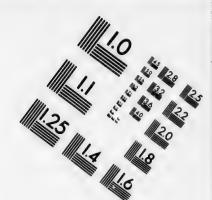
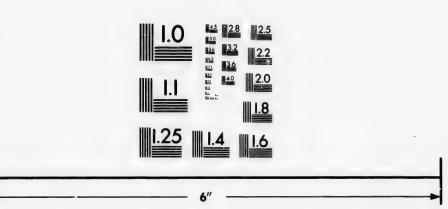


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

SIM SUM SECTION OF THE SECTION OF TH

women removed the large covering, making in the day but in the night also; the fire it into a couch for the victim.

"As that veil was lifted some of the men beheld the distorted features of a mother whom they had helped to murder, and smiled with satisfaction as the corpse was laid out for decoration. Convulsion strongly on the part of the poor creature near me showed that she still lived. She was a stout woman, and some of the executioners jocosely invited those who sat near to have pity and help them. At length a woman said, 'she is cold.' The fatal cord fell, and as the covering was raised I saw dead the oldest wife and unwearied attendant of the old king."

Leaving the house of murder, Mr. Williams went to the hut of the deceased king, determining to see his successor, and beg him to spare the lives of the intended victims.

To his horror and astonishment, he found that the king was still alive. He was lying on his couch, very feeble, but perfectly conscious, every now and then placing his hand to his side as he was racked by cough. The young king was full of grief. He embraced his visitor with much emotion, saying, "See, the father of us two is dead." It was useless to dispute the point. The poor old king certainly did move and speak and eat; but, according to the son's ideas, the movements were only mechanical, the spirit having left the body.

So the preparations for his funeral went on. His chief wife and an assistant employed themselves in covering his body with black powder, as if dressing him for the war dance, and fastening upon his arms and legs a number of long strips of white masi, tied in rosettes, with the ends streaming on the ground. They had already clad him in a new masi of immense size, the white folds of which were wrapped round his feet. In place of the usual masi turban, a scarlet handkerchief was bound on his hair with a circlet of white cowrie-shells, and strings of the same shells decorated his arms, while round his neck was an ivory necklace, made of long curved claw-like pieces of whale's teeth.

The reader may perhaps wonder that the chief wife of the king was suffered to live. The fact was that the young king would not allow her to be killed, because no executioner of sufficient rank could be found. She lamented her hard lot in being forbidden to accompany her husband to the spirit land, and begged to be strangled, but without success.

Presently the sound of two conch-shell trumpets was heard outside the house, this being the official intimation that the old king was dead, and the new king was then formally acknowledged by the chiefs who were present. He seemed overcome with grief, and, gazing on the body of his father's attendant, he exclaimed, "Alas, Moalevu!

in the day but in the night also; the fire consumed the fuel gathered by her hands. If we awoke in the still night, the sound of our feet reached her ears, and, if spoken to harshly, she continued to labor only. Moalevul Alas, Moalevul "

The bodies of the murdered women were then rolled up in mats, placed on a bier, and carried out of the door, but the old king was taken through a breach made in the wall of the house. The bodies were carried down to the seaside and placed in a canoe, the king being on the deck, attended by his wife and the Mata, who fanned him and kept off the insects.

When they arrived at Weilangi, the place of sepulture, they found the grave already dug, and lined with mats. The bodies of the women were laid side by side in the grave, and on them the dying king. The shell ornaments were then taken from him, and he was entirely enveloped in mats, after which the earth was filled in, and thus he was buried alive. The poor old man was even heard to cough after a quantity of earth had been heaped on him.

This final scene is represented in an illustration on the 980th page. In the foreground is seen the open grave, with the bodies of the murdered women lying in it as "grass." The still living king is being borne to the grave by the attendants, while his successor sits mournfully surveying a scene which he knows will be re-enacted in his own case, should he live to be old and infirm. Just above the grave are the rolls of fine mats with which the body of the king is to be covered before the earth is filled in; and in the background appears the mast of the canoe which brought the party to the burial-ground.

The reader cannot but notice the resemblance between this Fijian custom of strangling the wives and the well-known suttee of India. In both cases the women are the foremost to demand death, and for the same reason. Just as the Hindoo women arrange their own funeral pile, and light it with their own hands, the Fijian woman helps to dig her own grave, lines it with mats and then seats herself in it.

The fact is, that the woman has positively no choice in the matter; a wife who survives her husband is condemned to a life of neglect, suffering, and insult, so that the short agony of immediate death is preferable to such a fate, especially as by yielding to the national custom she believes that she shall secure a happy and honored life in the spirit land. Moreover, her relatives are bound by custom to insist upon her death, as, if they did not follow this custom, they would be accused of disrespect toward her husband and his family, and would run the risk of being clubbed in revenge.

attendant, he exclaimed, "Alas, Moalevul In consequence of this borrid custom, the There lies a woman truly wearied, not only population of Fiji has been greatly checked,

for not on but much of the much ildren that, what continual ism, the se bands, the few Fijian Williams children that all been mand these only saved sionaries.

After a are obser one eats u their head the women inserted in eaves of t nearly rela grief by r ind subst They ofter mat to lie grave of th tapu for a lowed to elapsed, ar under a si Various

tain days day the fri melancholy of maggoti progress o one of a d diate frien entertained tenth day t with whips every man to age or ra exemptfrom not allowed mud at the witnessed : ludicrous ca elderly mer sued by th switches. The last

some special dead. It m

ht also; the fire d by her hands, tht, the sound of and, if spoken to abor only. Mo-

red women were
ed on a bier, and
the old king was
de in the wall of
re carried down
in a canoe, the
ended by his wife
him and kept off

eilangi, the place te grave already The bodies of the side in the grave, king. The shell n from him, and in mats, after in, and thus he oor old man was quantity of earth

presented in an age. In the fore-grave, with the men lying in it as ing is being borne nts, while his surveying a scene macted in his own the rolls of fine f the king is to be filled in; and in mast of the cance to the burial-

notice the resemlijian custom of
the well-known
cases the women
d death, and for
as the Hindoo
funeral pile, and
ands, the Fijian
own grave, lines
herself in it.
an has positively
a wife who sur-

a wife who suremned to a life of sult, so that the death is preferaly as by yielding believes that she onored life in the her relatives are upon her death, this custom, they spect toward her and would run the

venge. orrid custom, the greatly checked, for not only is there the direct sacrifice of life, but much indirect loss is occasioned. Many of the murdered women are mothers, whose children die for want of maternal care, so that, what with the perpetual feuds and continual murders, the custom of cannibalism, the sacrifice of wives with their husbands, the strangling of the old or sick, and the death of children by neglect, very few Fijians die from natural causes. Mr. Williams mentions that in a class of nine children under his charge, the parents had all been murdered with the exception of two, and these had been condemned to death, and only saved through the exertions of the missionaries.

After a king is buried, sundry ceremonies are observed. For twenty days or so, no one eats until the evening, the people shave their heads either partially or entirely, and the women cut off their fingers, which are inserted in split reeds, and stuck along the eaves of the royal house. Those who are nearly related to the dead king show their grief by refusing to wear their usual dress, and substituting rude garments of leaves. They often deny themselves the luxury of a mat to lie upon, and pass their nights on the grave of their friend. The coast is rendered tapu for a certain distance, no one being allowed to fish until the proper time has elapsed, and the cocoa-nut trees are placed under a similar restriction.

Various strange rites take place on certain days after the funeral. On the fourth day the friends assemble, and celebrate the melancholy ceremony called the "jumping of maggots," in which they symbolize the progress of corruption. Next evening is one of a directly opposite character, called the "causing to laugh," in which the immediate friends and relatives of the dead are entertained with comic games. On the tenth day the women have an amusing ceremony of their own. Arming themselves with whips, switches, or cords, they fall upon every man whom they meet, without respect to age or rank, the greatest chiefs only being exempt from this persecution. The men are not allowed to retaliate, except by flinging mud at their assailants, and those who have witnessed the scene say that nothing more ludicrous can be imagined than to see grave, elderly men running in all directions, pursued by the women with their whips and switches.

The last ceremony is the completion of some special work begun in honor of the dead. It may be the erection of a house, the

making of a huge ball of sinnet, a great bale of cloth, and, in any case, it bears the name of the person in whose honor it was undertaken. Building large canoes is a favorite form of this custom, and, during the whole time that the work is in progress, the canoe is put to sleep at night by the beating of drums, and awakened every morning in a similar manner, when the carpenters come to their work.

A curious ceremony takes place in Fiji when one of the principal chiefs has died. It is called the loloku of the sail, and is a sort of a signal of honor. Whenever a canoe approaches the coast for the first time since the death of the chief, the vessel is obliged to show the loloku. This is generally a long strip of masi tied to the head of the mast, and as soon as the canoe touches the land, both the sail and masi are thrown into the water. Sometimes, when the owner of the canoe is tolerably rich, he adds to the simple loloku a whale's tooth, which is flung from the mast-head into the water, when the people dive and scramble for it.

Should the chief perish at sea, or be killed in a warlike expedition, and be eaten by his enemies, the loloku is shown as carefully as if he had been buried on shore, and his relatives try to compensate him for his adverse fate, by killing an unusual number of women as his attendants. Nearly twenty women have thus been sacrificed on the death of a young chief who was drowned at

The graves of chiefs and their wives are marked by tombs. These are sometimes nothing but stones at the head and foot of the grave, or large cairns of stones piled on the deceased. Sometimes they are roofs from three to six feet in height, decorated, after Fijian custom, with patterns worked in sinnet.

One tomb, that of a chief's wife, was a very remarkable one. Her husband had a large mound of earth thrown up, and faced with stones. On the top of the mound was a double cance, forty feet in length, held firmly in its place by being imbedded in earth. Fine shingle was strewn on the deck, and mats were spread on the shingle for the reception of the body. Sand was then heaped over the cance, and on the sand was laid the body of a litile child of whom the deceased woman had been very fond. Over all was then built r large roof, made of mahogany, and adorned with whits cowrie-shells.

CHAPTER XCVIII.

THE SOLOMON ISLANDS AND NEW HEBRIDES.

CHARACTER, DRESS, CUSTOMS.

POSITION OF THE SOLOMON ISLANDS - REASON FOR THE NAME OF THE GROUP - CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES - CANNIBALISM - DRESS AND ORNAMENTS - NEW IRELAND AND NEW BRITAIN - NOMAD CHARACTER OF THE NATIVES -- CAVE HOUSES -- THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS -- DISTINGUISHING MARKS OF THE CHIEFS, AND THEIR DOMINION OVER THE PEOPLE -- THE BOUKA ISLAND -- THE NEW HEBRIDES - MODE OF GOVERNMENT, AND DIVERSITY OF LANGUAGE - THE INHABITANTS OF VATE - CURIOUS DRESS OF THE WOMEN - ORNAMENTS OF THE HOUSES - TAUNA AND ERRUMANGA -TRADE IN SANDAL WOOD - ANEITEUM AND VANIKORO.

BETWEEN New Guinea and the Fiji group lie the Solomon (or Salomon) Islands. They were discovered, as far as we know, by Alvero de Mendana, who touched upon them in the year 1567. Being desirous of inducing his countrymen, who held in those days the chief place among sailors, to visit and colonize so fertile a land, he concocted a pious fraud, and called the group by the name of Solomon Islands, as being the Ophir from which Solomon's ships brought the vast quantities of gold with which he adorned the Temple and his own palace. His scheme failed, inasmuch as, when he again went in search of the islands, he

could not find them, the imperfect astro-nomical instruments of that day being far inferior to those of the present time, by means of which a competent observer can tell within a few yards his exact place on the earth.

The natives of the Solomon Islands are so fierce and treacherous, that comparatively little has as yet been learned about them. They have displayed a great genius for lulling voyagers into a fancied security, and then murdering and eating them; so that the Spaniards lost nothing by Mendana's inability to find the islands again. They contrived lately to entrap a gentleman who visited their islands in his yacht, and murdered him while he was on shore, shooting pigeons. They have committed so many murders on seamen, and even cap-tured so many vessels, that the greatest precautions are now taken by those who visit their shores.

Perhaps the reader may wonder that any one should take the trouble of visiting so inhospitable a place; but the fact is that the hawk's-bill turtle, so valued as supplying the tortoise-shell of commerce, is plentiful on the coasts, and captured by the retives who reserve the shell for bottom natives, who reserve the shell for barter

with European ships.

When ships anchor off the coast, the natives put off in canoes; but only a certain number are allowed to approach, the hammock nettings being triced up so as to prevent the natives from boarding the vessel, Only the principal chief is allowed to come on board, and through him the bargains are made. These are very tedious, as the natives will insist on haggling separately over each piece of tortoise-shell, instead of sell-ing the whole "head" at once, as is done at other places. The usual articles of merchandise are employed in the trade, such as glass bottles, beads, axes, cloth, knives, and similar objects.

The natives are very dark, and may even be called black, with thick and crisp hair. That they are cannibals has already been mentioned. They are such inordinate lovers of human flesh that, according to the accounts of some travellers, which may however have been exaggerated, they make it their customary diet. It is evident, however, that this statement must be somewhat overdrawn, as no people inhabiting a limited country could make human flesh the chief article of diet without gradual exter-mination. That they prefer it to all other food is likely enough, and in this they only follow the dana meni islands ser quarter of offence to eating it.

They do this horrib that, in vi human hea rafters, jus larder. T natives, be with other

The Solo

people, and their mode ate use of the and their f and patches ribly ghastl skin. They ornaments are perforat can wear in nine inches ornament is a large shel sufficient siz rare, and ar teeth amon people. Wa gle for the while, in co worthless. wear severa but they do their finery and that th

merely for the Solo clothing, the it is rather a sue the same white, or red it, that is pra Warlike as

variety of we ent kinds, s order to gua: sile weapons rushes, wove arrows and harmless.

That they from the fact diminutive s in a most in structed in a peculiar shap the islands of and stern the

follow the example of the Papuans. Men-| much raised. This structure is not only for dana mentions that the chief of one of the islands sent him a handsome present of a quarter of a boy, and that he gave great offence to the natives by burying instead of

They do certainly use great quantities of this horrible diet, and one traveller mentions that, in visiting their houses, he has seen human heads, legs, and arms hung from the rafters, just as joints of meat are hung in a larder. The houses bear token in other ways of the cannabalistic habits of the natives, being ornamented with skulls and similar relics of bygone feasts, together

with other ornaments.

The Solomon Islanders are not handsome people, and do not add to their beauty by their modes of adornment. Their inveter-ate use of the betel-nut blackens their teeth, and their faces are disfigured with streaks and patches of white paint, which has a horribly ghastly appearance against the black skin. They are fond of wearing numerous ornaments in their ears, the lobes of which are perforated, and so distended that they can wear in them circular blocks of wood nine inches in circumference. Their chief ornament is, however, an armlet made from a large shell found on the reefs. Shells of sufficient size for this purpose are extremely rare, and are prized even more than whales' teeth among the Fijians and neighboring people. Wars are often caused by a strug-gle for the possession of a single armlet; while, in comparison with so valuable an article, human life is looked upon as utterly worthless. Very great chiefs and warriors wear several of these rings on their arms; but they do so with the full knowledge that their finery is as perilous as it is valuable, and that they are likely to be murdered merely for the sake of their ornaments.

The Solomon Islanders care little for clothing, their whole dress being simply a piece of matting tied round the waist; and it is rather a remarkable fact that they pur-sue the same art of staining the hair yellow, white, or red, or discharging all color out of it, that is practised by the Fijians.

Warlike as well as fierce, they possess a variety of weapons; such as clubs of different kinds, spears, bows and arrows. In order to guard themselves against the missile weapons, they carry shields made of rushes, woven so thickly and tightly to-gether that they are able to resist the arrows and to render the spears almost harmless.

That they possess canoes may be inferred from the fact that they inhabit islands of such diminutive size. These canoes are made in a most ingenious manner, and are constructed in a mode that gives a clue to the peculiar shape which is so often seen among the islands of Polynesia. Both at the stem

ornament, though decoration is freely used in it, but is principally intended for defence. When the crew attack an enemy, or are attacked, they always take care to present the bow or stern of the canoe to the foe, and thus are in a great measure protected by the raised ends.

As is the case with most of these oceanic peoples, the inhabitants of the Solomon Islands profusely adorn the sides of their canoes with carvings, feathers, and inlayings. For the last-mentioned purpose white shells are liberally used, and tortoise-shell is also employed. Sometimes these portions of the canoe are carved so as to resemble the human face, the eyes being made of mother-of-pearl, the ears of tortoise-shell, and the chin furnished with a long beard.

In one of these canoes Captain Bouganville found a great quantity of weapons and implements, such as spears, bows and ar-rows, shields, and fishing nets. The shape of the shields was nearly oval, and the arrows were tipped with sharp fish bones. Various articles of food were also found in the boat, such as cocoa-nuts and other fruits, among which was the somewhat startling object of a human jaw-bone partially cooked.

Among the same group of islands are New Ireland and New Britain, both of which, by the way, seemed to have been named on the lucus a non lucendo principle, inasmuch as it is scarcely possible to find any part of the world less like Ireland or Britain in general than these little islands.

In their dress and ornaments the inhabitants differ but little from the Solomon Islanders, except that the chiefs wear circular ornaments of pearl almost exactly like the dibbi-dibbi of North Australia. Tortoiseshell is also used for the purpose.

These tribes seem to be continually on the move, the warriors being ordered by the chiefs from stations much like our own regiments at home, and being accompanied by their wives and families. In their various migrations the men are bound to look to the interests of their families; and if they neglect to do so, the case is brought before a council of chiefs, who investigate the matter. Should the accusation be proved, the delinquent is condemned to run the gauntlet, a punishment which is inflicted in exactly the same mode as has been employed in Europe.

All the inhabitants of the village, men, women, and children, are drawn up in a double line, and each is furnished with a bundle of twigs bound together like the birches of schools. The culprit is placed at one end of this line, and at a signal from the chief he is obliged to run through it a certain number of times, receiving a blow and stern the ends of the canoe are very from every one as he passes. Sharp and se-

TARACTER OF THE BRITAIN - NOMAD - DISTINGUISHING UKA ISLAND - THE E INHABITANTS OF AND ERRUMANGA

vonder that any e of visiting so the fact is that lued as supplynmerce, is plen-aptured by the shell for barter e coast, the nat only a certain

roach, the hamup so as to preallowed to come the bargains are ious, as the naseparately over instead of sellce, as is done at rticles of mere trade, such as oth, knives, and

, and may even and crisp hair. s already been inordinate lovccording to the rs, which may ated, they make is evident, howst be somewhat habiting a lim-uman flesh the gradual exter-r it to all other n this they only

vere as is this law, it shows no small amount; of the beautifully carved vessels, and is elabof political wisdom, and lifts the people in a degree from mere savage life. Among ordinary savages the man is everything and the women and children nothing, and that in these remote islands they should be placed under the protection of the government shows a considerable advance toward civili-zation. There is, moreover, an ingenious retributive justice in the mode of punishment. By deserting his family, the man throws the burden of their maintenance on the community, and it is, therefore, thought only fair that the punishment should also be left to the community.

The architecture of these people is good, and we shall presently see an example of it. and we shall presently see an example of it. When a new village is to be built a large space is cleared, in the middle of which is the council house, a large circular edifice, supported on red pillars, and distinguished by having on the roof a number of tall poles, each bearing on its point a human skull. The floor is carpeted with fine mats, colored with turmeric, and adorned with

birds' feathers woven into it.

The dwelling-houses are made in a very different manner. The native architect begins by digging a large square hole in the ground some five feet deep, and over this pit he erects the house, which is rather low, in consequence of the depth gained in the basement. The thatch is of weeds, and is covered with a thick coating of clay, which serves the double purpose of rendering the hut fire-proof and of keeping the interior

The weapons of the warriors are much the same as those of the other islands, but slings are also employed, and the spears are generally tipped with sharp flint. Like most of the Papuans, the victorious party

eat the enemies whom they kill in battle.

Owing to the character of these islanders, little is known of their religion. That they have some form of worship is evident from the fact that they make great wooden idols, sometimes ten or more feet in height, and plant them in different parts of the country. The illustration No. 2, on the 949th page, represents one of these idols. To these idols offerings of food are constantly made; and, as such offerings are never taken away, the odor of decomposing figs, fowls, and fruit betrays the presence of the idol at a great distance. In one of the islands, called Ysabel, the natives are said to worship snakes, toads, and various reptiles.

THE most eastward of this group, San Christoval, is about seventy miles long and twenty wide. In No. 2, on page 963, is given a view taken in Makira harbor, in order to show the ingenious houses which the natives build for the protection of their our presents. Canoes were immediately canoes. As may be seen, the house is capalaunched, many natives took to the water ble of accumulating a considerable number and swam, and in a short time there was

orately adorned, after the native fashion. with idols in images, human skulls, tufts of feathers, and similar ornaments.

THE extremest of the group are those which are known by the name of the Admi-

ralty Islands.

The natives of these islands make use of a sort of obsidian, which they split into fragments and use as we use steel. For example, they make razors of it, with which they shave every part of their bodies excepting the head, on which the hair is allowed to grow, and is tied up in a knot on the top of the head. The hair is often colored with red ochre and oil. They use the same material as heads to their spears, tying the head to the shaft with plaited string coated with gum. The clothing of the Admiralty Islanders is very simple, the women wearing a piece of matting tied round the waist, and the men nothing but a large white shell. They have bracelets and armlets made of plaited fibre, and a belt of similar material round the waist. Some of them make their bracelets of large sea-ear shells, grinding out the middle and rounding the edges; and ornaments of a similar character are hung in the ears, which are often dragged down to such an extent that the lower tips of the lobes almost rest on the shoulders. This enormous size is attained at the cost of much trouble, an elastic hoop being constantly kept in the aperture so as to keep it gradually distended. A few of the natives also have the septum of the nose pierced. and hang upon it a string, to the end of which are fastened teeth. The chiefs are distinguished by a double row of little shells on the forehead, and seem to exercise considerable authority over their inferiors.

When Captain D'Entrecasteaux visited the place, his boats approached the shore, whereon a number of natives were collected. and the captain made signs of peace. A chief, distinguished by the insignia of rank on his forehead, ordered one of the natives to swim to the boats with some cocoa-nuts. "The fear of approaching persons of whose intentions he was ignorant, made the islander, swimming and defenceless, hesitate a moment. But the chief, who doubtless was little accustomed to have his will disobeyed, did not allow him to reflect. Blows from a cudgel, which he held in his hand, immediately succeeded his order, and en-

forced instant obedience. . . .

"By way of comforting the poor fellow, our people gave him some bits of red stuff, a few nails, and a knife, with which he was greatly pleased. No sooner had he returned to the island, than curiosity collected all the

rest around him, every one wishing to see

a great were sur of the su them from " Ther by the sa

already r which he those to The car with a do the water equal dis are conne command and laid the sail i

where it projects a The padd are furnis made sepa lashed to The sai

thirteen f feet in hei pushed to diagonally above the tives desir few feet of canoe; and sail they c they like. fullest ext est sailing a canoe i extreme b The Adr

leaf, with keep in a l add the co to practise of the diffic terials.

ONE of t visited by The nativ quite nake flat, the no is large, an pluck all t allow that powdering white paint and their e large shells shoulders. cord which times, and binding the placing son

the arm and These pe when they exhibit a d seels, and is elabnative fashion an skulls, tufts of ents.

group are those me of the Admi-

ands make use of ey split into fragteel. For examwith which they bodies excepting air is allowed to not on the top of ten colored with use the same mapears, tying the ed string coated of the Admiralty e women wearing nd the waist, and arge white shell. armlets made of similar material them make their shells, grinding ng the edges; and naracter are hung en dragged down lower tips of the shoulders. This at the cost of hoop being con-

e so as to keep it w of the natives the nose pierced, g, to the end of The chiefs are ow of little shells to exercise coneir inferiors.

ecasteaux visited ached the shore. es were collected. ns of peace. A insignia of rank ne of the natives some cocoa-nuts. persons of whose nt, made the islenceless, hesitate f, who doubtless have his will diso reflect. Blows eld in his hand, s order, and en-

the poor fellow, bits of red stuff, a h which he was had he returned collected all the e wishing to see ere immediately ok to the water time there was

a great concourse round our boats. were surprised to see that neither the force of the surf nor of the breakers discouraged them from the attempt.

"There was another chief distinguished by the same ornaments as he who has been already mentioned, and also by the blows which he indicted with his cudgel upon those to whom he gave his orders.

The canoes of these people are furnished with a double outrigger, only one touching the water, and the other projecting at an anal distance on the opposite side. They are connected by a platform, on which the commander stands when the sail is lowered and laid on the second outrigger. When and and on the second outrigger. When the sail is hoisted, he stands on the place where it had been laid. Each outrigger projects about eight feet from the gunwale. The paddles are about six feet in length, and are furnished with a broad blade, which is made separately from the handle, and firmly lashed to it with cord.

The sail is made of matting, and about thirteen feet square. The must is twenty feet in height, and when the cause is to be pushed to its full speed, the sail is holsted diagonally, with one angle projecting a yard above the top of the mast. When the natives desire to go slowly, they only hoist a few feet of the sail, the rest of it lying in the

canoe; and by thus hoisting or lowering the sail they can regulate their speed much as they like. When the sail is hoisted to its they like. When the sail is noised to its fullest extent, the canoe can beat the swiftest sailing ships. The ordinary length of a canoe is about thirty-two feet, and the extreme breadth is only twenty-six inches.

The Admiralty Islanders chew the pepper leaf, with the addition of lime, which they keep in a little calabash, but do not seem to add the cocoa-nut. Only the chiefs appear to practise this habit, probably on account of the difficulty of obtaining the proper ma-

ONE of these islands, named BOUKA, was visited by Captain D'Entrecasteaux in 1792. The natives are black, tall, powerful, and quite naked. The face is rather broad and flat, the nose projects but little, the mouth is large, and the lips peculiarly thin. They pluck all the hair off the body, and only allow that of the head to grow, sometimes powdering it with red chalk. Red and white paint are freely used on their bodies, and their ears are pierced and loaded with large shells, which drag them nearly to the shoulders. Round the waist they wear a cord which passes round the body several times, and some of them have a custom of binding the upper arm in a similar manner, placing some flat pieces of wood between the arm and the ligature.

We expected among savages. Between every two paddlers on each side stands a warrior armed with bow and arrows, while intermediate parties of warriors stand with their faces toward the stern, so as to observe the enemy and light during a retreat. Two of the crew are told off to bale out the water, which beats continually over the side of the canoe when the wind blows freshly.

The bow is remarkable for having the string coated with a sort of resinous substance in order to preserve it, the middle of the cord being skilfully wrapped with bark to guard it against injury from the nock of the arrow. The arrows are made of two pieces, the head being shaped from a hard and heavy wood, and the shaft being a reed. The place where they are joined is strengthened by a ligature of bark. The butt of the arrow is wrapped in the same manner to prevent it from being split by the string. They use these weapons with much skill, and, as was proved by Captain D'Entrecas-teaux, are able to kill birds with them.

The natives were ready to part with their weapons in exchange for red stuff, biscuits, bottles, and other commodities, but were bow for a handkerchief, and, when they had got the handkerchief, pretending that the bargain was not made for a bow but for an arrow. The natives of Bouka Island, naked and savage as they are, have some sort of civilization among themselves, as is evident from the fact that they cultivate the cocoanut palm, large plantations of which useful tree extend to the water-side along a great portion of the coast.

FOLLOWING the line of the Solomon Islands in a south-easterly direction, we come upon another group of islands called the NEW HEBRIDES, extending for some four hundred miles, and containing a considerable number of islands of various sizes. They are perhaps best known from the fact that one of them, called Errumanga, was the place in which the celebrated missionary, John Williams, met with his death. These islands attained importance in a secular point of view from the fact that several of them produce sandal-wood, and therefore attract to them a great number of trading vessels of different countries, with whom a considerable commerce has been carried

The islands are mostly of a volcanic nature, and present the usual variations of such localities, some parts being rough, craggy, and bare, while others are fertile and pro-lific to a degree that can scarcely be conceived by those who have never seen tropical vegetation. As is often the case with islands of no great size and divided from These people are good canoe men, and, when they man their large war canoes, exhibit a discipline which is hardly to be

(L) MAN AND WOMAN OF NEW HEBRIDES (See page 972.)

(2.) WOMAN AND CHILD OF VANIHORC (See page 975.)

(3.) DAUGHTER OF TONGAN (See page 977.)

are in a chronic state of feud with each belt depends in front a square apron of no other. They are just far enough apart to great size, and behind is attached a broad have but rare and infrequent intercourse strip of the same plaited matting as that with each other, and so gradually diverge which faces the belt. It descends half-way with each other, and so gradually diverge into different customs, and they are not far enough apart to isolate them, and confer upon them a nationality.

We find this feeling in every one of the innumerable groups of islands which stud the Pacific, and, as we shall soon see, it pre-vails even among those groups which preserve the same language and customs. In fact, among the Polynesians there is that very feeling of local jealousy which prevails even in civilized countries, and which is, though necessarily more limited, far more rancorous than the feelings of enmity which prevail between mighty nations.

One of the largest of these islands is VATE. sometimes called Sandwich Island. latter term should not be used, as it tends to cause confusion between a single island of the New Hebrides and the great group of the Sandwich Islands, which are inhabited by a totally different race of men. strangers Vaté is very unhealthy, but the causes which produce malaria also produce a wonderful fertility of vegetation. This island is about seventy miles in circumference, and is remarkable for the thick growth of forests upon its lower limits, and of verdure upon the higher portions which are not so well fitted for trees. The natives seem to give some time and trouble to agriculture.

The inhabitants are black of skin, but tall and well-formed, and their dress in many points reminds the observer of the costume of several African tribes. That of the men consists of a broad belt or wrapper of matting wrought in patterns colored with red, white, and black. The hair is generally gathered up into a bunch at the top of the head, stained yellow, and adorned with a

plume of feathers.

As to ornaments, they are much like those which have already been mentioned as be-longing to the Solomon Islanders. The lobes of the ears are always much distended, from the habit of wearing in them heavy ornaments cut from white shells, or similar materials. The septum of the nose is mostly pierced, and the aperture filled with a white stone. Raised scars are made in the arms and chest, and arranged in definite patterns. Armlets made of shells are used by these islanders. Their figure and costume are well represented in the engraving No. 1, on the 973d page.

The women are equally well made with the men, and the general fashion of the dress is much the same. They wear, however, a curious addition to the dress, which is very much like that of the Ovambo women of much like that of the Ovambo women of nature, for they have a way of daubing their Africa. Passing round the waist is a belt sable countenances with black lead, and

down the leg, and is finished off with a fan-like fringe of plaited grass, some eighteen inches long, and of proportionate width. The women, as well as the men, practise the custom of making raised scars on their bodies. They differ from the men in the mode of dressing the hair, keeping it cut closely to the head instead of allowing it to grow to its full length and tving it up in a bunch.

The weapons of these islanders are remarkable for the beauty of their finish, the barbs of the arrows being neatly carved, and the junction of the head and shaft being neatly ornamented with plaited grass and feathers. Indeed, the arrows have a curious resemblance to those made by some of the

tribes of tropical America.

Like the Solomon Islanders, the inhabitants of the New Hebrides have large council chambers in their villages. Instead, however, of being circular, they are generally made of considerable length, sometimes measuring as much as a hundred feet from one end to the other. They are entirely open on one side. For some reason which seems rather obscure, they are adorned with bones of various animals, the particular species from which they are taken not seeming to be of any consequence. For example, in one of these houses may be seen bunches of bones taken indiscriminately from pigs, fowls, and fishes, while the shells of lobsters and other crustacea are mixed with them. It is believed that human bones are not used for this purpose.

A CURIOUS contrast to these tribes is presented by the inhabitants of another island called TANNA, who are certainly inferior to those of Vaté in stature and general appearance, and are thought to be so in point of intellect. They have a bad reputation, being said to be treacherous and cruel. That they are also reputed to be cannibals is no matter of wonder, inasmuch as they belong to the Papuan race. They are said to rival the Fans of Africa in one respect, and to dig up the bodies of the buried dead, in order to eat them.

The island is volcanic, and the subterranean fires seem to aid the already exuberant vegetation of the tropics, which in Tanna attains a development that is almost incredi-

The inhabitants of Tanna are as black as those of Vaté, but seem to have no other points of resemblance. The men appear to think that they are not black enough by some seven inches wide, made of plaited painting upon the black groundwork sundry fibre woven into neat patterns. From this patterns in red ochre. The hair is frizzed e aprou of no tached a broad atting as that cends half-way off with a fan-some eighteen tionate width, but, practise the cars on their allowing it cut allowing it to ying it up in a

anders are reheir finish, the tily carved, and id shaft being ited grass and have a curious by some of the

ers, the inhabave large counges. Instead, hey are genergth, sometimes dred feet from ay are entirely or reason which are adorned to the particular

y are adorned
to the particular
taken not seemFor example,
e seen bunches
tely from pigs,
nells of lobsters
ted with them.
bones are not

these tribes is to of another recertainly inature and genaght to be so in a bad reputarous and cruel to be cannibals smuch as they They are said n one respect, to buried dead,

e subterranean exuberant vegn in Tanna atalmost incredi-

have no other men appear to ck enough by f daubing their ack lead, and ndwork sundry hair is frizzed



out after the dyed a red

WE com kept up its with killing foot on thei afterward r his wife. 't the priests, an epidemi, among the siouaries fr people read wild with ti age, they m sons. The the people after the r buried, the overwhelmi

mourner be
The mure
as it may a
others to fo
generally t
cause only a
attempts ma
At one time

such dread t

to come on men permit carried on it carried to the surf, at could be all without sust therefore, the itants has showed itse that Europe for any time improvement tives.

THE north
ANEITEUM,
duce sandal
natural feron
has been ov
lishment an
which the se
tives, and fr
which find halways read
for the wood
cut into varicustomary p
artists of tha
factory show
with savages
children are

dealings wit kindness and for the differ

WE come now to Errumanga. It has kept up its traditional ferocity. Not content with killing the first missionary who set his foot on their shores, the people many years afterward murdered another missionary and his wife. This second murder was owing to the priests, who persuaded the people that an epidemic which had done much damage among the natives was caused by the mis-sionaries from a strange land. The ignorant people readily believed this statement, and, wild with the uncontrolled fury of the savage, they murdered both the accused persons. The deed was scarcely done before the people repented of it, and only the day after the murder, when the bodies were buried, the natives stood round the grave overwhelmed with grief, the most sincere mourner being the chief of the district.

The murder of these people, unfortunate as it may seem, really paved the way for others to follow in their footsteps; and, as is generally the case with persecution, the cause only gained additional strength by the attempts made to repress it by main force.

At one time the inhabitants were held in such dread that the natives were not allowed to come on board the ships, nor were the men permitted to land. A small trade was carried on in sandal-wood, which the natives carried to the boats by swimming through the surf, and being necessarily unarmed, could be allowed to make their bargains without suspicion of treachery. Although, therefore, the savage nature of the inhabitants has occasionally broken out and showed itself in bloodshed, the very fact that Europeans have been allowed to reside for any time on the island shows a great improvement in the character of the natives.

THE northernmost island of the group is ANEITEUM, one of the islands which produce sandal-wood in great plenty. The natural ferocity and suspicion of the natives has been overcome by the judicious estab-lishment and introduction of a factory, to which the sandal-wood is taken by the natives, and from which it is sold to the ships, which find here a store of this valuable wood always ready for them. The chief market for the wood is found in China, where it is cut into various articles of luxury with the customary patience which characterizes the artists of that country. The success of this factory shows that the best way of dealing with savages is to treat them precisely as children are treated, and to employ in all dealings with them an equal mixture of kindness and firmness, making allowances for the different constitution of their minds

out after the ordinary Papuan type which is and the influence of savage habits upon their dyed a reddish dun color by means of lime. | conduct; but at the same time to be firm almost to severity, and never to permit an encroachment. The safest maxim in dealing with savages is never to deceive and never to trunt.

> THE inhabitants of MALICOLO differ considerably from those of the islands which have been mentioned. While the natives of Vaté are tall and finely made, those of Errumanga scarcely inferior to them, and those of Tanna stout and powerful, though com-paratively short of stature, the inhabitants of Malicolo are small, ill-proportioned people, ugly of face, and disfiguring themselves by wearing a belt round the waist, drawn so tight that it gives them an hour-glass or waspish aspect.

THE reader may perhaps be aware that, in the year 1788, the vessels Boussole and Astrolabe, commanded by the celebrated voyager La Pérouse, disappeared, and nothing more was heard of them. He was last seen at Botany Bay, where he had arrived from Tonga.

In 1791 an expedition, consisting of two vessels, the Recherche and the Espérance, was fitted out under the command of Captain D'Entrecasteaux, and sent out in search of the missing vessels. The expedition failed in its immediate object, though in the course of the explorations some valuable discoveries were made.

In 1792 D'Entrecasteaux's vessels got among the New Hebrides, and found themamong the New Heorites, and found themselves in the midst of coral reefs and shoals of which they knew nothing, and which caused no small alarm. In consequence of the danger of these reefs, the captain did not touch at all the islands which were seen, but contented himself with naming them, and marking their places on a chart. As it turned out, one of these islands, VANIKORO, or Recherche Island, as D'Entrecasteaux named it, was the place on which La Pérouse was wrecked, so that the expedition actually passed within sight of the very spot which was the object of their voyage. Indeed, D'Entrecasteaux practically completed the voyage which La Pérouse began, and his narrative furnishes a necessary supplement to that of the voyager in search of whom he sailed. It was not until some forty years afterward that the relics were discovered which proved beyond a doubt that Vanikoro was the place in which La Pérouse and his companions perished. Vanikoro is some-times called Pitt's Island. An illustration is given on the 973d page, which represents a woman of Vanikoro, and her child, and is a type of the expression and features of these islanders.

CHAPTER XCIX.

TONGA.

GOVERNMENT AND GRADATIONS OF RANK.

FRIENDLY RELATIONS BETWEEN TONGA AND FIJI—THE ARMY OF OCCUPATION—GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE TONGANS—THEIR DRESS—THE GRATOO, AND MODE OF WEARING IT—MAKING THE GRATOO—BEATING, JOINING, AND PRINTING THE PIECES—THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN GRATOO AND TAPPA—ORNAMENTS WORN BY THE TONGANS—WHALE'S TEETH, AND THE VALUE SET ON THEM—FINOW AND THE TEETH—DISTINCTIONS OF RANK—SECULAR AND RELIGIOUS BANK—THE TOOI-TONGA, HIS ORIGIN AND PRIVILEGES—THE VEACHI—THE HOW, OR KING, OFFEN INFERIOR IN RANK TO MANY OF HIS CHIEFS—THE EGI, OR NOBLES—THE MATABOOLES, THEIR RANK AND DUTIES—THE MOOAS, OR COMMON PEOPLE—MATRIMONIAL ARRANGEMENTS BETWEEN PEOPLE OF DIPFERENT RANKS—TREATMENT OF WOMES.

Our readers may remember that, in the account of the Fiji Islands, it was mentioned that there was one nation which was held by the Fijians as free from their usual custom of killing and eating all visitors to their coast. These people are the inhabitants of the Tongan group, popularly known as the Friendly Islands. Owing to their courage in war and superior intellect, they have performed toward the Fijians the same part that has so often been played by more civilized people. On one or two occasions they found the Fijian chiefs hard pressed by rebellion, took the part of their hosts, crushed the rebel forces, and restored the chiefs to power.

A remarkable instance of this timely aid occurred as late as 1855. Thakombau, of whom we have already heard, was in danger of losing his life and throne together through a rebellion led by a chief named Mara. Fortunately, he had previously given a magnificent canoe to the Tongan king, who sailed over, according to custom, accompanied with a large fleet, in order to receive the royal present with due honor. He instantly led his forces against the rebels, stormed a fort called Kamba which was held by them, took it, and utterly dispersed the enemy, Mara himself only escaping by running over the sharp shells of the reef, thereby nearly cutting his feet to pieces, and swimming to a neighboring town on the

After this exploit, the Tongan chief followed up his blow by sailing to the island of Taviuni, where another rebellion was raging in consequence of the murder of the chief by his sons. He put an end to this rebellion also, inquired which of the murdered chiefs other sons had the best claim to his father's rank, and installed him formally. The vanquished rebels, finding that the Tongan leader was too strong for them, tried to entrap him in an ambuscade, but only succeeded in murdering one of his chiefs. The Tongans immediately landed on the island, and avenged the death of their friends in a most terrible manner. A large party of Tongan warriors was afterward left under the command of a chief named Maafu, a relation of the king, and by means of this force the rebels were effectuelly suppressed.

the rebels were effectually suppressed.

As might be expected, the Tongans took advantage of their situation, and enacted over again the fable of the deer, the horse, and the man. Some four hundred of them generally remain in Fiji, and domineer over the natives much like armies of occupation in other countries. A Tongan warrior has not the least scruple in going to a strange village, entering the house that pleases him best, and installing himself in the best place with the simple words: "This part of the house is mine." He takes the best of the food, and, if he builds a canoe, merely acts as foreman, making the Fijians do all the

hard worl gans do, I the native ing the br the fruit, by hand.

It is sa the Tonga quest of te experience fear which the Fljian tempt, if it cessful one own accou Tongans a who have them to th to struggle As may

As may lars, the T Fijian. T altogether. Papuan ra to the Poly sess the vethe Papuan in skin, the as that of n whole a sin the beauty is the case possessed e by the won ter of a To verify this a series of the ser

The dress lar materia The fabric "gnatoo," a Fijian mas the same t similar fash gan women of Fiji in t they beat o o mallets. T quality accomade, that o finest. In putting

as much div a Scotch pla arranged ser The most fa tised by the round the le folds allow f to pass the re broad belt, a in front of forms the be loosened at the head and when the we the night tin The gnate hard work. There is nothing that the Tongans do, however, which so much incenses the natives as their careless habit of shaking the bread-fruit trees in order to procure the fruit, which ought always to be gathered

It is said, and perhaps with reason, that the Tongans contemplate the complete conquest of the Fijian group; and from their experience, courage, and discipline, and the fear which they have contrived to instil into the Fijians, there is little doubt that the attempt, if it were to be made, would be a successful one. The Fijian warrior fights on his own account, each man separately, while the Tongans act in unison; so that the Fijians who have fought against them compare them to the gods, against whom it is useless to struggle.

As may be gathered from these particulars, the Tongans are a superior race to the Fijian. They are, indeed, a different people altogether; the Fijians belonging to the Papuan race, whereas the Tongans belong to the Polynesian race, which does not possess the very crisp hair and rough skin of the Papuans; and, as a rule, is much lighter inskin, the complexions being often as white as that of many Europeans. They are, on the whole a singularly handsome set of people, the beauty not being limited to the men, as is the case with so many savage tribes, but possessed equally, if not to a superior extent, by the women. The portrait of a daughter of a Tongan chief, on the 973d page, will verify this statement.

The dress of both sexes is made of similar materials, but is differently arranged. The fabric is called in the Tongan language gnatoo," and is almost identical with the Fijian masi. It is made from the bark of the same tree, and is beaten out in very similar fashion, except perhaps that the Tongan women are more particular than those of Fiji in the care and delicacy with which they beat out the bark with their grooved mallets. The gnatoo varies somewhat in quality according to the island in which it is made, that of Vavau being considered as the

In putting on the gnatoo, there is nearly as much diversity as in the arrangement of a Scotch plaid, and the mode in which it is arranged serves to denote difference of rank. The most fashionable mode, which is practised by the chiefs, is to wrap a portion of it round the loins in such a manner that the folds allow fair play to the limbs, and then to pass the remainder round the waist like a broad belt, and tuck the ends under the belt in front of the body. The portion which forms the belt is so arranged that it can be loosened at any moment and thrown over the head and shoulder. This is always done when the wearer is obliged to be abroad in the night time.

eight feet in length, by six in width. Under the gnatoo is a belt made of the same ma-terial. Women have a larger piece of gnatoo than the men, and strange it in folds which are as graceful as those of antique art, and seem as likely to fall off the person. This, however, is never the case, and, even if the gnatoo were by any accident to slip, the women wear under it a small mat or pettleoat about a foot in depth.

As this gnatoo plays so important a part in the clothing of the Polynesians, its manufacture will now be described, the account being taken from Mariner's valuable his-tory of the Tongans:—"A circular inci-sion being made round the tree near the root with a shell, deep enough to penetrate the bark, the tree is broken off at that point, which its slenderness readily admits of. When a number of them are thus laid on the ground, they are left in the sun a couple of days to become partially dry, so that the inner and outer bark may be stripped off together, without danger of leaving any of the fibres behind.

"The bark is then soaked in water for a day and a night, and scraped carefully with shells for the purpose of removing the outer bark or epidermis, which is thrown away. The inner bark is then rolled up lengthwise. and soaked in water for another day. It now swells, becomes tougher, and more capable of being beaten out into a fine tex-

"Being thus far prepared, the operation of too-too, or beating commences. This part of the work is performed by means of a mallet a foot long and two inches thick, in the form of a parallelopipedon, two opposite sides being grooved horizontally to the depth and breadth of about a line, with intervals of a quarter of an inch.

"The bark, which is from two to three feet

long, and one to three inches broad, is then laid on a beam of wood about six feet long and nine inches in breadth and thickness. which is supported about an inch from the ground by pieces of wood at each end, so as to allow of a certain degree of vibration. Two or three women generally sit at the same beam; each places her bark transversely upon the beam immediately before her, and while she beats with her right hand, with her left she moves it slowly to and fro, so that every part becomes beaten alike. The grooved side of the mallet is used first, and the smooth side afterward.

"They generally beat alternately, and early in the morning, when the air is calm and still, the beating of gnatoo in all the plantations has a very pleasing effect. Some sounds being near at hand, and others almost lost by the distance,—some a little more acute, and others more grave, and all with remarkable regularity, produce a remarkable effect that is very agree-The gnatoo of the men measures about able, and not a little heightened by the sing-

GENERAL APPEAR RING IT - MAKING INCTION BETWEEN H, AND THE VALUE AR AND RELIGIOUS E HOW, OR KING, THE MATABOOLES COMMON PEOPLE-ATMENT OF WOMEN.

ongan chief folg to the island of ellion was raging der of the chief to this rebellion murdered chief's im to his father's mally. The van-hat the Tongan or them, tried to de, but only sucf his chiefs. ed on the island, their friends in a large party of med Maafu, a reeans of this force suppressed. he Tongans took

deer, the horse, hundred of them nd domineer over ies of occupation ngan warrior has ing to a strange that pleases him in the best place This part of the the best of the noe, merely acts ijians do all the

on, and enacted

ing of the birds and the cheerful influence of the scene. When one hand is fatigued, the mallet is dexterously transferred to the other, without occasioning the smallest sen-sible delay.

"In the course of about half an hour, it is brought to a sufficient degree of thinness, being so much spread laterally as to be now nearly square when unfolded; for it must be observed that they double it several times during the process, by which means it spreads more equally and is prevented from breaking. The bark thus prepared is called fetagi, and is mostly put aside till they have a sufficient quantity to go on at a future time with the second part of the operation, which is called cocanga, or printing with

"When this is to be done, a number employ themselves in gathering the berries of the too, the pulp of which serves for paste (but the mucilaginous substance of the mahoá root is sometimes substituted for it); at the same time others are busy scraping off the soft bark of the cocoa tree and the toodi-tooi tree, either of which, when wrung out without water yields a reddish-brown juice,

to be used as a dye.

"The stamp is made of the dried leaves of the paoongo sewed together so as to be of a sufficient size, and afterward embroidered, according to various devices, with the wiry fibre of the cocoa-nut husk. Making these stamps is another employment of the women, and mostly women of rank. They are generally about two feet long, and a foot and a half broad. They are tied on to the convex side of half cylinders of wood, usually about six or eight feet long, to admit two or three similar operations to go on at the same time.

"The stamp being thus fixed, with the embroidered side uppermost, a piece of the prepared bark is laid on it, and smeared over with a folded piece of gnatoo dipped in one of the reddish-brown liquids before mentioned, so that the whole surface of the prepared bark becomes stained, but particularly those parts raised by the design in the stamp. Another piece of gnatoo is now laid upon it, but not quite so broad, which adheres by virtue of the mucilaginous quality in the dye, and this in like manner is smeared over; then a third in the same

"The substance is now three layers in thickness. Others are then added to increase it in length and breadth by pasting the edges of these over the first, but not so as there shall be in any place more than three folds, which is easily managed, as the margin of one layer falls short of the margin of the one

"During the whole process each layer is stamped separately, so that the pattern may be said to exist in the very substance of the others, met with the same fate as her hus-gnatoo; and when one portion is thus band. Many years afterward the missing

printed to the size of the stamp, the material being moved farther on, the next pertion, either in length or breadth, becomes stamped, the pattern beginning close to the spot where the other ended. Thus they go on printing and enlarging it to about six feet in breadth, and generally about forty or fifty yardsin length. It is then carefully folded up and baked under ground, which causes the dye to become rather dark, and more firmly fixed in the fibre; beside which it deprives it of a peculiar smoky smell which belongs to

"When it has been thus exposed to heat for a few hours, it is spread rut on a grass plat, or on the sand of the seashore, and the finishing operation of tooyi-hea commences, 6. s. staining it in certain places with the juice of the hea, which constitutes a brilliant red varnish. This is done in straight lines along those places where the edges of the printed portions join each other, and serves to conceal the little irregularities there; also in sundry other places, in the form of round spots, about an inch and a quarter in diameter. After this the gnatoo is exposed one night to the dew, and the next day, being dried in the sun, it is packed up in bales to be used when required. When gnatoo is not printed or stained, it is called

tappa."
Various ornaments are worn by both sexes among the Tongans, among which may be enumerated a kind of creeper, with flowers at intervals along the stem. This is passed round the neck or the waist, and has a singularly graceful and becoming appearance. The most valued ornament is, howance. The most valued ornament is, how-ever, that which is made of the ivory of the whale's teeth, so cut as to resemble in miniature the tooth itself. They are of different sizes, varying from one inch to four inches in length, and strung together by a cord passing through a hole bored in their

thick ends.

These teeth are even more valued in Tonga than in Fiji, and a common man would not dare to have one in his possession, knowing well that he would assuredly lose his life on the very first occasion that offered the slightest opportunity of an accusation. Once Finow, the King of Tonga, was told of a whale which had been stranded on a little island inhabited only by a man and his wife. When Finow reached the place he found that the teeth had been removed, and ordered the man and woman into custody on the charge of stealing them. Both denied that they had more than two teeth, which they gave up, whereupon the man was immediately killed with a club, and the woman threatened with a similar fate. Under fear of this threat she produced two more teeth which she had hidden, but, refusing to acknowledge that she knew of any

mp, the material
the next perreadth, becomes
ning close to the
Thus they go on
about six feet in
ut forty or fifty
arefully folded up
which causes the
and more firmly
hich it deprives
which belongs to

exposed to heat I rtt on a grass seashore, and the heat commences, places with the nstitutes a brildone in straight ere the edges of each other, and le irregularities laces, in the form ch and a quarter ne gnatoo is exw, and the next, it is packed up required. When the content of the conten

worn by both s, among which of creeper, with ne stem. This is ne waist, and has ecoming appearnament is, howthe ivory of the esemble in minney are of differne inch to four g together by a le bored in their

more valued in a common man ein his posseswould assuredly st occasion that tunity of an acbeing of Tonga, ad been stranded donly by a man ow reached the ath had been reman and woman of stealing them. I more than two a, whereupon the with a club, and the a similar fate, he produced two hidden, but, reshe knew of any fate as her husard the missing



(1.) INTERIOR OF A TONGAN HOUSE.

(See page 981.)



(2.) BURIAL OF A LIVING KING.

(See page 986.)

teeth wer buried the shows the held, the person to ing hersel her treasu A good

A good
gan woma
the illustry
which rep
house, and
In the
wooden pi

In the wooden pi throughou most consimatting, warrounding as they a seated the tude adopt simple and dress. The entloosenethe folds ready to sliever, perfect of the constant of the constant

Within clothing use when they wrap round The native their dress nute care, sin arrangit they alway alway alway fress made for the pugnatoo for So disrespamong the to undress buried, the is changed.

WE now rank in Ton Ranks may orders, nam We must ta among the 1 cedence of c By far the is the Tool-

is the Toornifes Chief
the man whi
Tongs, whi
group of isla
sent a name
being Fatag;
ward by le
man is the
no man ma
down in the
king is not e
should happ

testi were discovered, the woman having buried them in the ground. This anecdote shows the value in which whales' teeth are held, the king taking the trouble to go in person to claim them, and the woman allow-ing herself to be killed rather than part with

A good idea of the appearance of a Tonan woman of rank may be obtained from the illustration No. 1, on the preceding page, which represents the interior of a chief's

house, and part of his family.

In the foreground is one of the odd wooden pillows which are so much in vogue throughout Polynesia; while one of the most conspicuous objects is a roll of narrow most conspicuous objects is a roll of history matting, which is used for the purpose of surrounding men and women of high rank as they sit on the floor. Within it is seated the chief's wife, in the graceful attitude adopted by the Tongans, exhibiting the simple and really elegant folds of the gnatoo dress. The reader will observe the apparent looseness with which the dress is put on, the folds lying so loosely that they seem ready to slip every moment. They are, however, perfectly tight, and there is not the least danger of their slipping.

Within doors the children never wear any

clothing until they are two years old; but when they go out, their parents always wrap round them a piece of gnatoo or tappa. The natives are exceedingly fastidious about their dress, criticising every fold with minute care, and spending a considerable time in arranging them. Even when bathing, they always array themselves in a slight dress made for such occasions, going aside for the purpose of exchanging the usual gnatoo for an apron of leaves or matting. So disrespectful is utter nudity reckoned among the Tongans, that if a man be obliged to undress near the spot where a chief is buried, the leaf apron is worn while the dress

is changed.

WE now come to the various divisions of rank in Tonga, and the mode of government. Ranks may be divided into two distinct orders, namely, the religious and the civil. We must take them in this order, because among the Tongans religious takes the pre-

cedence of civil rank.

By far the greatest man in point of rank is the TOOI-TONGA. This word literally signifies Chief of Tongs, and is given because the man who bears it is the greatest man in Tonga, which is the chief of the whole group of islands. The word does not represent a name but a rank the family name. sent a name, but a rank, the family name sent a name, but a rank, the family name being Fatagehi, and the rank passes downward by legitimate descent. So great a man is the Tooi-tonga, that in his presence no man may stand, but is obliged to sit down in the attitude of respect. Even the king is not exempt from this law; and if he should happen to meet the Tooi-tonga, he

would have to squat down numbly until the great man had passed by.

The Tool-tonga stands alone in many particulars, and, according to our ideas, he has plenty of dignity, but very little comfort, leading a life somewhat like that of the spiritual Emperor of Japan. He has certainly one advantage over his fellows: he does not undergo the operation of tattooing, because there is no one of sufficiently high rank to draw the blood of so sacred a personage. He is married after a manner peculiar to himself, is buried in a peculiar manner, and is mourned in a peculiar manner. He is so sacred, that in speaking of him another language is used, many phrases being reserved expressly for the Tool-tonga. These are probably relics of an ancient and nearly lost language, as is the case with the incantations of the New Zealand priests.

The reason for this extraordinary venera-tion is, that the Tooi-tonga is supposed to be a direct descendant of a chief god who was accustomed to visit the islands; but whether his female ancestor was a goddess or a native of earth is an open question with the Tongans. In spite of all the veneration which is shown to him, the Tooi-tonga has very little real power, and in this respect is far surpassed by the king, and equalled by

many of the nobles.

There is another chief, the VEACHI, who is also supposed to have a divine origin, and is therefore held in higher veneration than any of the chiefs, but is inferior to the Tooitonga. It is true that in his presence the king has to sit on the ground in the attitude of humility, and that he is considered a being next in rank to the great Tool-tonga himself; but the other marks of veneration, such as a separate language, and different modes of marriage, burial, and mourning, are not paid to him; and in power he is equalled by many of the chiefs.

Next in rank, but at a very great distance, come the priests. These men receive

their name from their capability of being inspired by certain gods, and, except when actually inspired, have no special rank, and are paid no honor except such as may belong to them as private individuals. Marbeiong to them as private marvianas. Mariner remarks that he never knew a case in
which a priest was a chief. The king occasionally becomes inspired, because there is
one god who cannot speak except by the
royal mouth; but the king is not, in consequence, considered as a priest. Neither are the Tooi-tonga and Veachi considered as priests, nor is there any connexion between them and the priesthood.

among the spectators. Even the great Tooi-tonga himself acts in the same manuer, and, though the descendant of a god, he retires before the actual presence of a divinity. So much for the spiritual rank, and we

now pass to the temporal rank.

The highest man in a secular point of view is the How, or king, who is the most powerful of all the chiefs, and yet may be in point of rank inferior to the poorest of his nobles, or Eggs. Rank is measured in Tonga by relationship to the Tool-tonga or Veachi, the relatives of the former being held superior to those of the latter The consequence is, that the king may meet a poor man who has scarcely any power, and yet who is so high in rank above the king that the latter must sit down till his superior has passed. Should he not do so, or should he by any accident touch anything that belonged to his superior, the tapu would assume its sway, and he would not be permitted to feed himself with his own hands until he had gone to his superior, and saluted him by touching his feet.

In consequence of these customs, the king avoids associating with nobles who are his superior in rank, and they in their turn keep out of his way as far as possible, so as not to humiliate him by making him sit while they stand. Originally, the king was a descend-ant of the Tooi-tonga, and thus was equally high in spiritual and temporal rank. But when the throne was usurped by other fam-ilies, the king still retained the temporal power, though he yielded in spiritual rank

to others

Next to the king come the Egis, or no-bles. These are all relations of the Tooitonga, the Veachi, or the king, kinship to the king being held as conferring rank be-cause he holds the reins of power. Rank descends in Tonga, as in other Polynesian islands, through the female line, so that all the children of an Egi woman possess the rank of Egi, no matter who may be the

After the nobles come the MATABOOLES, or councillors, who are the companions and advisers of the chiefs, and take their rank from that of the chief to whom they are attached. They are always the heads of families, and are mostly men of mature age and experience, so that their advice is highly valued. The eldest son of a Mataboole is carefully trained to take his father's place when he dies, and is thoroughly versed in all the rites and ceremonies, the administration of laws, and the many points of etiquette about which the Tongans are so fas-tidious. He also learns all the traditionary records of his people, and by the time that he is thirty years old or so is perfectly ac-quainted with his profession. But until his father dies he has no rank, and is merely one of the ordinary gentry, who will now be described.

Last of all those who possess any rank are the gentry, or Mooas. All the sons of Matabooles are Mooas, and act as assistants of the Matabooles, aiding on great ceremenies in managing the dances, distributing food, and so forth. Like their superiors, they attach themselves to the service of some chief, and derive their relative consequence from his rank. As a rule, the Mooas all profess some art, such as canoe building. all profess some art, such as cance changing ivory carving, and superintending funral rites, in which three occupations the Matsbooles also take part. They also preside over the makers of stone coffins, the makers of nets, the fishermen, and the architects. and all these employments are hereditary.

Just as the children and brothers of Matabooles take the next lowest rank, that of Mooa, so do those of Mooas take the next lowest rank, and are considered as Tooas, or plebeians. In this case, however, the eldest son of a Mooa assumes the rank of his father after his death, and is therefore more respected than his brothers, who are regarded like younger sons among our-selves. The Tooas do all the menial work, and act as cooks, barbers, tattooers, club-carvers, and so forth. The two latter occapations, however, as requiring artistic skil, are also practised by Mooas.

It will be seen from this brief sketch how elaborate, and yet how intelligible, is this system of the Tongans, even when complicated with the double grades of spiritual and temporal rank. This respect for rank is carried even into the privacy of home. If, for example, an Egi woman marries a Mataboole, or a Mooa, she retains her original rank, which is shared by all her children, so that both she and her children are superior to the husband and father. He, on his part, has to play a double rôle. He is master in his own house, and his wife submits to him as implicitly as if he were of the same rank as herself. Yet he acknowledges the superior rank both of his wife and children, and, before he even ventures to feed himself with his own hands, he goes through the ceremony of touching the feet of his wife or either of his children, in order to free himself from the tapu.

When the case is reversed, and a man of high rank marries a woman of an inferior station, she does not rise to the rank of her husband, but retains her original station, which is inherited by her children, who, to gether with herself, have to touch the feet of the husband whenever they eat. They imagine that if they did not do so a terrible sickness would consume them. When Mariner lived among the Tongans, he did not trouble himself about the tapu, much to the horror of the natives, who expected that the offended gods would wreak their vengeance on him. Finding that he suffered no harm, they accounted for the phenomenon by the fact that he was a white man, and therefore had nothi Tongans.

In cons system, Fi lived amor annoyed is were brou order it to however, v both partie if, for exam been broug once have fashion.

Some ve custom pre For examp mother, ev alive, and l Generally l adopted so tween them ticular resp honored as than as his So elabor

plies a degr hardly expe nance with of women, and hard-we most savag women pos meanor and found amon merely the ago as 1777. women were than the m proportione ossess any rank All the sons of act as assistants n great ceremoces, distributing their superiors, the service of

r relative conserule, the Mooas s canoe building tending funeral tions the Mata ney also preside ffins, the makers the architects, are hereditary.

brothers of Matest rank, that of as take the next dered as TOOAS, e, however, the mes the rank of and is therefore rothers, who are ons among our the menial work, two latter occuing artistic skill,

brief sketch how telligible, is this en when compliades of spiritual respect for rank vacy of home. If, marries a Mataains her original all her children, hildren are supe-her. He, on his ôle. He is mashis wife submits he were of the he acknowledges his wife and chilventures to feed he goes through the feet of his lren, in order to

ed, and a man of an of an inferior the rank of her original station, hildren, who, toto touch the feet they eat. They em. When Margans, he did not apu, much to the expected that the their vengeance uffered no harm, nomenon by the n, and therefore

In consequence of the strictness of this system, Finow, who was king when Mariner lived among the Tongan islands, used to feel annoyed if even a child of superior rank were brought near him, and used angrily to order it to be taken away. Such conduct, however, would not be thought right unless both parties were nearly equal in rank; and if, for example, the Tooi-tonga's child had been brought near the king, he would at once have done homage after the customary

Some very curious modifications of this custom prevail throughout Tongan society. For example, any one may choose a foster-mother, even though his own mother be alive, and he may choose her from any rank. Generally her rank is inferior to that of her adopted son, but even this connection be-tween them does not earn for her any particular respect. She would be much more honored as an attendant of a young chief

than as his foster-mother.

So elaborate and yet simple a system implies a degree of refinement which we could hardly expect among savages. In consonance with this refinement is the treatment of women, who are by no means oppressed and hard-worked slaves, as is the case with most savage nations. Consequently the women possess a gentle freedom of de-meanor and grace of form which are never found among those people where women are merely the drudges of the men. So long ago as 1777, Captain Cook noticed that the women were much more delicately formed than the men, that they were beautifully proportioned, and that the hands were so

had nothing to do with the gods of the small and soft that they would compare Tongans. rope and America. Hard and constant labor, such as is usually the lot of savage women, deteriorates the form greatly, as in-deed we can see among ourselves, by comparing together a high-bred lady and a field laborer. The two hardly seem to belong to the same race, or scarcely to the same sex.

The Tongan women certainly do work, but they are not condemned to do it all, the men taking the hard labor on themselves, and leaving the women the lighter tasks, such as beating gnatoo, plaiting baskets, making crockery, and the like. At the great dances, the women are not only allowed to be present, but assist in them, taking as in them, taking as in the property as the second to the present, but assist in them, taking as in the present, but assist in them, taking as in the present in ing as important a share as the men, and infusing into the dance a really cultivated grace which would not exist without them.

The light-colored hue of the skin, which has already been mentioned, is much more common among the women than the men, for the reason that the better class of women take more care of themselves than the men; and, though all classes live for the most part in the open air, the wives and daughters of powerful and wealthy men are careful not to expose themselves to the sun more than is absolutely necessary, so that many of them, instead of being brown, are of a clear olive tint, the effect of which is singularly beautiful when contrasted with their dark clustering hair, their gnatoo garments, and the leaves and flowers with which they adorn themselves, changing them several times daily. Altogether, a Tongan chief looks, and is, a gentleman, and his wife a lady.

CHAPTER C.

TONGA - Continued.

WAR AND CEREMONIES.

MATURAL MILDNESS OF THE TONGANS - BOASTING DISCOURAGED -WAR APPARENTLY LEARNED FROM THE FIJIANS -- FINOW'S SPEECH TO HIS SOLDIERS, AND A NEW DISCIPLINE -- FATE OF THE VANQUISHED - THE DROWNED CHIEFS - CEREMONIES - KAVA-DRINKING - STRICT CODE OF ETI-QUETTE-PREPARATION OF THE KAVA-A GRACEFUL PERFORMANCE-DISTRIBUTION OF THE KAVA - POINTS OF CEREMONY - A TONGAN PLANTATION - SETTING THE YAMS - CEREMONY OF TWACHI-THE POLE BEARERS AND THEIR BURDEN-THE YAM PILLARS-LIFTING THE PIGS-DISTRIBUTION OF PROVISIONS, AND CONCLUSION OF THE CEREMONY-TOW-TOW, AND IN OBJECT-PRESENTATION OF THE OFFERING-A GRAND SCRAMBLE-BOXING AND WRESTLING MATCHES - GOOD-HUMORED COMBATANTS - FIGHTS WITH CLUBS -- THE SAMOAN AND TONGAN BUTUSIN.

hearted, and present a most curious mixture of mildness and courage. To judge by many traits of character, they might be stig-matized as effeminate, while by others they are shown to possess real courage, not merely the dashing and boastful bravery which is, when analyzed, merely bravado, and which is only maintained by the hope of gaining applause. The Tongan never boasts of his own courage, nor applauds that of another. When he has performed a deed of arms which would set a Fijian boasting for the rest of his life, he retires quietly into the background and says nothing about it. His king or chief may acknowledge it if they like, but he will be silent on the subject, and never refer to it.

For the same reason, he will not openly applaud a deed of arms done by one of his fellows. He will regard the man with great respect, and show by his demeanor the honor in which he holds him, but he will not speak openly on the subject. Mariner relates an instance in which a young warrior named Hali Api Api, who seems to have been the very model of a gentleman, per-formed a notable deed of arms, equally re-markable for courage and high-minded gen-

By nature the Tongans are gentle and kind-hearted, and present a most curious mixture he afterward refer either to his exploit or to the public recognition of it.

One warrior actually declared that he would go up to a loaded cannon and throw his spear into it. Hefulfilled his promise to the letter. He ran up within ten or twelve yards of the gun, and, as the match was applied, threw himself on the ground, so that the shot passed over him. He then sprang up, and, in spite of the enemy's weapons, hurled his spear at the cannon, and struck it in the muzzle. Having performed this feat, he quietly retired, and was never heard to refer to so distinguished an act of courage, though he was greatly re-

spected for it by his countrymen. We need not wonder that such men should establish a moral influence over the boastful but not warlike Fijians, and that the small colony established in the Fiji group should virtually be its masters. Two hundred years ago, the Tongan appears to have been ignorant of weapons and warfare, and to have borrowed his first knowledge of both from Fiji. Consequently, the Tongan weapons are practically those of Fiji, modified somewhat according to the taste of the makers but evidently derived from the erosity. During a council, the king called him out, and publicly thanked him for his conduct. The man blushed deeply, as if ashamed at this public recognition of his services, saluted the king, and retired to his

poetical ju Fijian's w his superio age, has whom he

Since th superiority even more idea of fig run away It is poss learned th

per and h Finow was neighboring riors and them that t been previous He told the treat accord repulse, but and, even if at his breas coward, but his own lif structed the onset of the of indulging ing them to as the enen unconcerned even if they But as soon they were to without rega may rememb tegy which v

It may ea opponents, a with whom 1 the place of parent weak come on in g easy conques raised the she selves sudden fury which th to meet, and and almost well realize tl

great Kaffir

Though to tives, the To unexpected fe of Finow's me of the enemy long to a pagreatly by har ting off the sta At first the

home and ma the chief of th would have all and proposed their heads ho poetical justice, the Tongan has turned the ropesal on the ground that they had no Fijian's weapons against himself, and, by knives, but another man, fertile in expedihis superior intellect and adventurous courage, has overcome the ferocious people of whom he was formerly in dread.

Since the introduction of fire-arms, the superiority of the Tongans has made itself even more manifest, the Fijians having no idea of fighting against men who did not run away when fired at, but rushed on in spite of the weapons opposed to them.

It is possible that the Tongans may have

learned this mode of fighting from Mariner and his companions. When the king Finow was about to make war upon a neighboring island, he assembled the warriors and made them an address, telling them that the system of warfare which had been previously employed was a false one. He told them no longer to advance or retreat according as they met with success or repulse, but to press forward at all risks; and, even if a man saw the point of a spear at his breast, he was not to flinch like a coward, but to press forward, and at risk of his own life to kill his foe. He also in-structed them in the art of receiving the onset of the enemy with calmness, instead of indulging in cries and gesticulations, telling them to seat themselves on the ground as the enemy approached, as if perfectly unconcerned, and not to stir until ordered, even if they threw spears or shot arrows. But as soon as they got the word to advance they were to leap to their feet, and charge without regard to consequences. The reader may remember that this is exactly the strategy which was employed in Africa by the great Kaffir chief Tchaka.

It may easily be imagined how such a course of conduct would disconcert their opponents, and the Fijians in particular, with whom boasting and challenging took the place of valor. Emboldened by the ap-parent weakness of the enemy, they would come on in great glee, expecting to make an easy conquest, and then, just when they raised the shout of victory, they found themselves suddenly attacked with a disciplined fury which they had never been accustomed to meet, and were consequently dispersed and almost annihilated before they could

well realize their position.

Though tolerably mild toward their capfives, the Tongans sometimes display an unexpected ferocity. On one occasion, some of Finow's men surprised and captured four of the enemy, whom they imagined to belong to a party who had annoyed them greatly by hanging on their track and cutting off the stragglers.

ents, picked up some oyster-shells that were lying about, and suggested that they would answer the purpose

It was in vain that the victims protested their innocence, and begged that at least they might be clubbed before their heads were cut off. The conquerors coolly took off their dresses to prevent them being stained with blood, and deliberately sawed off the heads of the captives with their oyster-shells; beginning at the back of the neck, and working their way gradually round. The reason for this course of action seemed to be twofold - first, that they thought they might spoil the heads by the club; and secondly, that as the heads must be cut off at all events, clubbing the captives before-hand was taking needless trouble.

Indeed, the character of the Tongan presents a curious mixture of mildness and cruelty, the latter being probably as much due to thoughtlessness as to ferocity. Once when eighteen rebels had been captured, Finow ordered them to be drowned. This punishment is inflicted by taking the pris-oners out to sea, bound hand and foot, and towing some worthless canoes. When they are far enough from land, the culprits are transferred to the canoes, which are then scuttled, and left to sink. Care is taken that the holes made in the canoes are small, so that they shall be as long as possible in: sinking.

On that occasion twelve of the prisoners begged to be clubbed instead of drowned, and their request was granted. The young men divided the prisoners among them-selves, being anxious to take a lesson in clubbing a human being, which would serve them when they came to make use of the club against an enemy. The twelve were, accordingly, despatched with the club, but the others, being tried warriors, scorned to ask a favor, and were drowned. The leading chief among them employed the short time which was left him in uttering maledictions against Finow and his chiefs, and even when the water came up to his mouth, he threw back his head for the purpose of uttering another curse.

WE will now pass to a more pleasant subject, namely, the various ceremonies in which the Tongan delights. Chief among these is the drinking of kava, which forms an important part of every public religious rite, and is often practised in private. Kava drinking is known throughout the greater part of Polynesia; but as the best and fullest ac-At first they wished to take the prisoners home and make an example of them, but the chief of the party suggested that they would have all the trouble of guarding them, would have all the trouble of guarding them, and proposed to decapitate them, and take their heads home. One of them objected to pepper tribe, and known by the name of

TLY LEARNED FROM INE - FATE OF THE TRICT CODE OF ETI-TRIBUTION OF THE MS - CEREMONY OF IFTING THE PIGS-TOW-TOW, AND ITS NG AND WRESTLING MOAN AND TONGAN

ord. Neither did to his exploit or declared that he

annon and throw lled his promise to within ten or and, as the match f on the ground, er him. He then of the enemy's car at the canmuzzle. Having uietly retired, and o so distinguished he was greatly rerymen.

that such men nfluence over the Fijians, and that shed in the Fiji its masters. Two ongan appears to pons and warfare, s first knowledge quently, the Tonding to the taste y derived from the k, who visited the hat the few clubs among the Tonacture, or at least . Yet by a sort of

Piper methysticum, i. e. the intoxicating pepper-tree. Disgusting as the preparation of the kava may be to Europeans, it is held in such high estimation by the Polynesians that it is never made or drunk without a complicated ceremony, which is the same whether the party be a large or a small one.

The people being assembled, the man of highest rank takes his place under the eaves of the house, sitting with his back to the house and his face toward the marly, or open space in front, and having a Mataboole on either side of him. Next to these Matabooles, who undertake the arrangement of the festival, sit the nobles or chiefs of highest rank, and next to them the lower chiefs, and so forth. They are not, however, very particular about the precise order in which they sit, distinctions of rank being marked by the order in which they are served.

This is the business of the presiding Matabooles, and as the distinctions of rank are most tenaciously observed, it is evident that the duties of a Mataboole are of a most difficult nature, and can only be learned by long and constant practice. If the men sat according to their rank, nothing would be easier than the task of serving them in order. But it often happens that, a man of high rank happens to come late, and, as he is too polite to disturb those of lower rank who have already taken their places, he sits below them, knowing that his rank will be

recognized at the proper time. It mostly happens, however, that when one of the presiding Matabooles sees a man occupying a place much below that to which his rank entitles him, he makes some one surrender his place to him, or even turns out altogether a man who is seated in a high place, and puts the chief into it. The people thus gradually extend themselves into a ring, sometimes single, but often several ranks deep when the party is a large one, every one of the members being a man of some recognized rank. Behind those who form the bottom of the ring opposite the presiding chief, sit the general public, who may be several thousand in number. It is a remarkable fact, illustrating the rigid code of etiquette which prevails among the Tongans, that no one can sit in the inner ring if a superior relative be also in it; and, no matter how high may be his rank, he must leave his place, and sit in the outer circle, if his father or any superior relative enters the inner ring.

This ring, which constitutes the essential kava party, is formed mostly of the sons of chiefs and Matabooles, and it often happens that their fathers, even if they be chiefs of the highest rank, will sit in the outer ring, rather than disturb its arrangements. Even the son of the king often adopts this plan, and assists in preparing the kava like any of the other young men.

Exactly opposite to the king is placed the kava bowl, and behind it sits the man who is to prepare the drink. On either side of him sits an assistant, one of whom carries a fan wherewith to drive away the flies, and another takes charge of the water, which is kept in cocoa-nut shells. The rank of the preparer is of no consequence. Sometimes he is a Mooa or gentleman, and sometimes a mere cook; but, whoever he may be, he is known to be able to perform his difficult task with sufficient strength and elegance.

All being ready, one of the presiding Matabooles sends for the kava root, which is then scraped quite clean and cut up into small pieces. These are handed to the young men or even to the young women present, who masticate the root, contriving in some ingenious way to keep it quite dry during the process. It is then wrapped in a leaf, and passed to the preparer, who places it in the bowl, carefully lining the interior with the balls of chewed root, so that the exact quantity can be seen.

exact quantity can be seen.

When all the kava has been chewed and deposited, the preparer tilts the bowl toward the presiding chief, who consults with his Matabooles, and if he thinks there is not enough, orders the bowl to be covered over, and sends for more kava, which is treated as before. Should he be satisfied, the preparer kneads all the kava together, and the Mataboole then calls for water, which is poured into the bowl until he orders the man to stop. Next comes the order to put in the fow. This is a bundle of very narrow strips of bark of a tree belonging to the genus hibiscus, and it has been compared to the willow shavings that are used in England to decorate fire-places in the summer time. The assistant takes a quantity of this material, and lays it on the water, spreading it carefully, so that it lies equally on the surface of the liquid. Now begins the important part of the proceeding which tests the power of the preparer.

"In the first place, he extends his left hand to the farther side of the bowl, with his fingers pointing downward and the palm toward himself; he sinks that hand carefully down the side of the bowl, carrying with it the edge of the fow; at the same time his right hand is performing a similar operation at the side next to him, the fingers pointing downward and the palm presenting outward. He does this slowly from side to side, gradually descending deeper and deeper till his fingers meet each other at the bottom, so that nearly the whole of the fibres of the root are by these means enclosed in the fow, forming as it were a roll of above two feet in length lying along the bottom from side to side, the edges of the fow meeting each other underneath.

"He now carefully rolls it over, so that the edges overlapping each other, or rather intermingling, come uppermost. He next ding is placed the sits the man who On either side of whom carries a way the flies, and the water, which is The rank of the ence. Sometimes, and sometimes a he may be, he is form his difficult than delegance. of the presiding kava root, which is and cut up into the handed to the he young women to root, contriving keep it quite dry then wrapped in a parer, who places ining the interior root, so that the

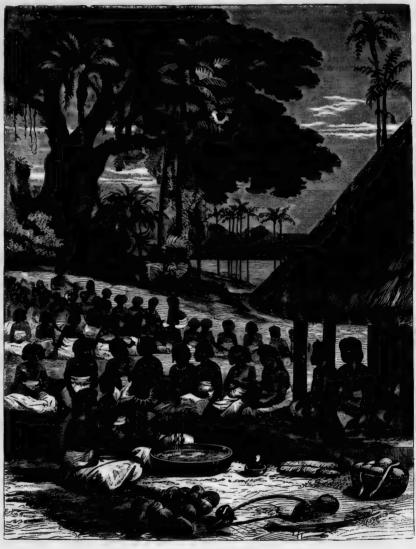
been chewed and to the bowl toward consults with his sinks there is not o be covered over, which is treated satisfied, the pretogether, and the water, which is till he orders the sthe order to put alle of very narrow belonging to the been compared to are used in Engees in the summer a quantity of this e water, spreading es equally on the Now begins the proceeding which

parer.

e extends his left of the bowl, with ward and the palm that hand carefully all, carrying with it the same time his a similar operation as fingers pointing resenting outward, side to side, gradrand deeper till her at the bottom, of the fibres of the inclosed in the fow, of above two feet bottom from side

ls it over, so that ch other, or rather ermost. He next

fow meeting each



THE KAVA PARTY.

(See page 989.)

doubles in fully over a narrowe brings it of firm hold hand (the and raisin considerab hand towa onward; a round towa hand partit which it he fow licone end be "The r brought un

brought ur remains in outwardly again seize fow. The curve outw left comes curve nead direction, extended a approaches twisting the principally is then retr wrist now instead of twisted, and left arm, w strained ho

"Thus t variety of descriptions and chest a into action, and uncom painter: for action can d muscles wit

"The deg when there and the de plishes the attention as Every tong upon him, was they descressential to Sometimes to crack with mass is seen more thin as the infusion decreasing q single drop."

The illust

represents (On the right chief seated with a Matand just beythe inner right)

doubles in the two ends and rolls it carefully over again, endeavoring to reduce it to a narrower and firmer compass. He now brings it cautiously out of the fluid, taking firm hold of it by the two ends, one in each hand (the back of his hands being upward), and raising it breast high with his arms considerably extended, he brings his right hand toward his breast, moving it gradually onward; and whilst his left hand is coming round, toward his right shoulder, his right hand partially twisting the fow, lays the end which it holds upon the left elbow, so that the fow lies thus extended upon that arm, one end being still grasped by the left hand.

one end being still grasped by the left hand.

"The right hand being at liberty is brought under the left fore-arm (which still remains in the same situation), and carried outwardly toward the left elbow, that it may again seize in that situation the end of the fow. The right hand then describes a boid curve outwardly from the chest, whilst the left comes across the chest, describing a curve nearer to him and in the opposite direction, till at length the left hand is extended from him and the right hand approaches to the left shoulder, gradually twisting the fow by the turn and flexures principally of that wrist: this double motion is then retraced, but in such a way (the left wrist now principally acting) that the fow, instead of being untwisted, is still more twisted, and is at length again placed on the left arm, while he takes a new and less constrained hold.

"Thus the hands and arms perform a variety of curves of the most graceful description: the muscles both of the arms and chest are seen rising as they are called into action, displaying what would be a fine and uncommon subject of study for the painter: for no combinations of animal action can develop the swell and play of the muscles with prove graces.

muscles with more grace and better effect.

"The degree of strength which he exerts when there is a large quantity is very great, and the dexterity with which he accomplishes the whole never fails to excite the attention and admiration of all present. Every tongue is mute, and every eye is upon him, watching each motion of his arms as they describe the various curvilinear lines essential to the success of the operation. Sometimes the fibres of the fow are heard to crack with the increasing tension, yet the mass is seen whole and entire, becoming more thin as it becomes more twisted, while the infusion drains from it in a regularly decreasing quantity till at length it denies a single drop."

The illustration on the preceding page represents this portion of the ceremony. On the right hand is seen the presiding chief seated under the eaves of the house, with a Mataboole on either side of him, and just beyond him extends a portion of the inner ring.

the performer, who is wringing out the kava, and is just about to change the grasp of his right hand, according to Mariner's description. On either side sit his assistants, both of whom are engaged in fanning away the flies.

Near them lie the cocoa-nut shells from which the water has been poured. Beyond the inner ring are seen the outer rings and the general population, who have come to witness the ceremony and get their chance of a stray cup of kaya or some food.

When the fow ceases to give out any more fluid, a second and third are used in the same manner, so that not a particle of the root remains in the liquid. Should more fow or water be wanted, an order is given, and twenty or thirty men rush off for it, going and returning at full speed, as if running for their lives; and anything else that may be wanted is fetched in the same manner.

While the operator is going through his task, those who are in the outer circle and cannot properly see him occupy themselves in making cups from which the kava can be drunk. These cups are made of the unexpanded leaves of the banana tree, cut up into squares of about nine inches across. The cups are made in a most ingenious manner by plaiting up the two ends and tying them with a fibre drawn from the stem of the leaf. The Mataboole then orders provisions to be served out, which is done in an orderly manner. To the general assembly this is the most interesting part of the ceremony, for they have but little chance of getting any kava, and it is very likely that they will have a share of food, as the regular kava drinkers never eat more than a morsel or two at these entertainments.

The operator having done his part, now comes the test of the Mataboole's efficiency. The kava is to be distributed in precisely the proper order, a slip in this respect being sure to give deep offence. Should a visitor of rank be present, he gets the first cup, the presiding Mataboole the second, and the presiding Chief the third. If, however, the kava be given by one of the guests, the donor always has the first cup, unless there should be a visitor of superior rank to himself, in which case the donor is ignored altogether, only having the kava according to his rank. No person is allowed to have two cups from the same bowl, but after all the inner circle and their relatives are served, the remainder is given out to the people as far as it will go, and a second bowl is prepared. It will be seen that, if the preparer be a man of low rank, he stands a chance of never tasting the liquid which he has so skilfully prepared.

with a Mataboole on either side of him, and just beyond him extends a portion of the inner ring. In front of the chief sits

TONGA.

ders; and, if a third or fourth bowl be find the advantage of having with them a ordered, they take the direction alternately.

When the second bowl is prepared, the cups is frequently armed with the barbed tail. are filled and handed round in exactly the same order as before, so that those of high rank get three or four cups, and those of lower rank only one, or perhaps none at all.

It is a point of etiquette that no chief ever visits the kava party of an inferior chief, as in that case the latter would be obliged to retire from the presidency and sit in the outer ring. When the Tool-tonga presides, no one presumes to sit within six feet of him; and if perchance an inspired priest be present, he takes the presidency, and the greatest chief, or even the king himself, is obliged to retire into the outer ring on such occasions. A priest always presides at religious ceremonies, and the kava party is held in front of the temple dedicated to the particular god which they are about to consult. But in some cases a god has no priest, and in those cases he is supposed to preside in person, though invisibly, the president's place being left vacant

The reader will see from the foregoing account that kava is a luxury practically confined to the higher classes. The great confined to the higher classes. chiefs and Matabooles drink it every day, either as presidents or members of the inner ring. Those of lower rank obtain it occasionally; while the Tooas seldom taste this luxury, except by taking the kava after it has been wrung by the operator, and pre-

paring it afresh.

As the reader will see, it is impossible to senarate the secular and religious life of the They are inextricably woven Tongans. together, and therefore must be described together. There are a vast number of ceremonies in which these two elements are united, one or two of which will be described, by way of sample of the rest. The first is the festival of Ináchi, a feast of firstfruits, a ceremony which in principle is found throughout the whole earth, though the details necessarily differ. In the present case, the offering is made to the Tool-tonga, as being at once the descendant and representative of the gods.

About the latter end of July the ordinary yams are planted in the ground; but those which are intended for the feast of Inachi are of a different kind, coming to maturity earlier, and are planted about a month sooner. In an illustration on the next page we may see how the yams are set in the ground, and may get a good idea of a Tongan plantation. In the centre of the Tongan plantation. In the centre of the foreground is the chief to whom the plantation belongs, accompanied by his little boy. As is usual with men of rank in Tonga, he bears in his hand a snort, many-barbed spear, which may either be used as a walking staff or as a weapon. The former is panied with plenty of conch blowing. The its normal use, but the chiefs sometimes prohibition of work is so imperative, that the

bone of the sting-ray. When Finow enp-tured by craft the rebel chief whose death by drowning has already been described, his chief difficulty was the bone-tipped spear which the chief always carried with him and of which he was temporarily deprived

by a stratagem.
One of his laborers is talking to him having in his hand the hoe with which he has been making holes in the ground for the reception of the yams. Behind him are more laborers, employed in cutting the yams in pieces, and planting them in the holes. Just beyond the yam plantation is a piece of ground stocked with sugar-canes; and beyond the sugar-canes is the house of the chief, known by the superiority of its architecture. The house is built near the sea-shore, and close to the beach a canoe is

seen hauled up on its support.

The greater part of the illustration is occupied with the ingenious spiked fence within which the storehouses and dwellings for the Tooas, or peasants, are placed. As may be seen, it has no doors, but at intervals the fence is only half the usual height and without spikes, and is crossed by means of stiles, two of which are given in the illustration, one to show the exterior and the other the interior of the fence. Close to the further stile is a young tree, surrounded with a fencing to the height of several feet, in order to guard it, while growing, from the attacks of pigs and children.

The open shed is one of the peasants' houses, under which are seated a number of women, employed in making mats; while some children are playing and fowls feeding by them. Toward the further end of the enclosure is shown one of the storehouses.

As soon as the yams are ripe, the king sends a message to the Tooi-tonga, asking him to fix a day for the ceremony, which is generally settled to be on the tenth day after the request is made, so that time may be given for notice to be sent to all the islands. The day before the ceremony of Inachi, the yams are dug up and ornamented with scarlet streamers made of the inner membrane of the pandanus leaf. These are in long and narrow strips, and are woven spirally the yams, first in one direction and then the other, so as to produce a neat checkered pattern, and having the ends hanging loose.

All through the night is heard the sound

of the conch shell, and until midnight the men and women answered each other in a g, the men singing, "Rest, doing no k," and the women responding, "Thou shalt not work." About midnight the song ceases; but it is resumed at daybreak, and continues until about eight A. M., accoming with them a point of the spear the barbed tailhen Finow capalef whose death en described, his me-tipped spear arried with him, porarily deprived

talking to him, be with which he the ground for its. Behind him d in cutting the ing them in the m plantation is a rith sugar-canes; s is the house of superiority of its is built near the beach a canoe is

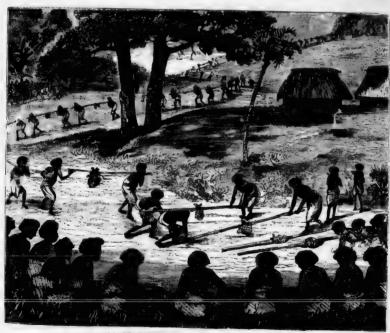
illustration is ocus spiked fence
es and dwellings,
are placed. As
s, but at intervals
usual height and
sed by means of
ven in the illusexterior and the
ce. Close to the
a surrounded with
several feet, in
rowing, from the

of the peasants' ated a number of ing mats; while and fowls feeding rther end of the he storehouses. The king col-tonga, asking remony, which is the tenth day after time may be to all the islands. By of Inachi, the ented with scalet ter membrane of are in long and wen spiritly over the state of the color of the colo

at checkered patlanging loose. In the sound til midnight the each other in a Rest, doing no sponding, "Thou idnight the song at daybreak, and the A. M., accomth blowing. The perative, that the



(1.) TONGAN PLANTATION. (See page 990.)



(2.) CEREMONY OF INACHI, (See page 093.)

people are houses, ex in the cere

At eigh really begiferent part the capital all directic their very while the spears an yams in ba or large of there laid the marly eight or ni in diamete the yams, middle of e

middle of a Meanwh booles have Tooi-tonga island, or, another isl answers the semicircle bowed and the process First company of the company of the middle of the process of

and advance and behind with the year men, one a sink at eve weight of that the ye bearers can of symbolic so fine a procome to the years on it before the between the Thir new the street of the stree

This parilower illusthe foregro Matabooles while the p winding also of them he poles before selves between the first while burdens on by them ar procession, conch-shell on the left seen the po

ground.
One of the sits between and makes thanks to the for a continuation Tool-tonga.

in the ceremony.

At eight A. M. the ceremony of Inachi really begins, the people crowding from dif-ferent parts of the Tooi-tonga's island toward the capital town, and canoes approaching in all directions from other islands. All are in their very best, with new clothes and ribbons; while the men carry their most beautiful spears and clubs. Each party carries the yams in baskets, which are taken to the marly, or large central space of the village, and there laid down with great ceremony. In the marly are ready laid a number of poles, eight or nine feet in length, and four inches in diameter, and upon them the men sling the yams, only one yam being hung to the middle of each pole.

Meanwhile the great chiefs and Matabooles have gone to the grave of the last Tooi-tonga, should it happen to be on the island, or, should he have been buried on another island, the grave of any of his family answers the purpose. They sit there in a semicircle before the grave, their heads bowed and their hands clasped, waiting for the procession, which presently arrives.

First come two boys blowing conch shells, and advancing with a slow and solemn step and behind them come a vast number of men with the yams. Each pole is carried by two men, one at each end, and, as they walk, they sink at every step, as if overcome with the weight of their burden. This is to signify that the yams are of such a size that the of symbolized thanksgiving to the gods for so fine a prospect of harvest. As the men come to the grave, they lay the poles and yams on it, and seat themselves in order before the grave, so that they form a line between the chiefs and the yams.

This part of the ceremony is shown in the lower illustration, on the 991st page. In the foreground are seated the chiefs and Matabooles, with their clubs and spears, while the procession of pole bearers is seen winding along from the far distance. Two of them have already laid their yams and poles before the grave, and have seated themselves between the grave and the circle of chiefs, while others are just depositing their burdens on the same sacred spot. Standing by them are the two boys who headed the procession, still blowing busily at their conch-shell trumpets. In the distance, and on the left hand of the illustration, may be seen the people seated in numbers on the ground.

One of the Tooi-tonga's Matabooles then sits between the pole bearers and the grave and makes an oration, in which he gives thanks to the gods for their bounty, and asks

people are not even allowed to leave their marching several times round the grave, houses, except for the purpose of assisting they return to the marly and again deposit their loads, this time untying the yams from the poles, but leaving the colored streamers

upon them.

Here the whole of the people seat them-selves in a large circle, at which the Tooi-tonga presides, even the king himself retiring, and sitting in the back ranks. Next the remainder of the offerings are brought forward, consisting of mats, gnatoo, dried fish, and various kinds of food. These are divided by one of the Tooi-tonga's Mata-booles into four equal parts. One of these goes to the gods, and is at once taken away by the servants of the different priests, and the remainder is shared by the Tooi-tonga and the king, the latter, although of inferior rank, getting the larger portion, because he has four times as many dependents to feed. The proceedings are wound up with the kava drinking, which always accompanies such ceremonies. While the infusion is being prepared, the presiding Mataboole makes a speech to the people, explaining the right that has just been concluded, and advising them to pay due honor to the gods and their representative the Tooi-tonga

WHEN this great potentate dies, there is a most extravagant feast, which often reduces the people to a state of semi-starvation for a long time, and sometimes threatens an actual famine. In such a case, the tapu is laid upon hogs, cocoa-nuts, and fowls for seven or eight months, or even longer, durbearers can hardly carry them, and is a sort ing which time none but the great chiefs are allowed to touch them. Two or three plantations are always exempted, so that there may be a supply for the great chiefs and for the various religious ceremonies. At the expiration of the stated period, if the crops look well, and the pigs and fowls have increased in due proportion, the tapu is taken off with very great ceremony.

One of these ceremonies was seen by

Mariner at the Hapai Islands, and a very strange rite it turned out to be. It was held on two marlies, one belonging to the Tooitonga and the other to the king. As if to compensate for the limited diet of the previous month, food was piled in abundance. On the Tooi-tonga's marly were erected four square hollow pillars, about four feet in diameter, and made of four poles connected with matting. These were about fifty or sixty feet in height, and each of them was

crowned with a baked hog.

The king's marly, which was about a quarter of a mile from the other, was equally well supplied with food, only in this case the yams were placed in wooden cars or sledges, and nearly four hundred half-baked hogs thanks to the gods for their bounty, and asks for a continuance of it to their offspring, the arrived, and the signal given for beginning Tool-tonga. He then retires to his former place, the men take up their poles, and after riors tried successively to lift the largest

hog, and at last, when all had failed, it was lifted by two men and taken to the other marly. "In the meantime the trial was going on with the second hog, which, being also found too heavy for one man, was carried away by two in like manner, and so on with the third, fourth, &c., the largest being carried away first, and the least last. "The second, third, fourth, &c., afforded

more sport than the others, as being a nearer counterbalance with a man's strength. Sometimes he had got it nearly upon his shoulder, when his greasy burden slipped through his arms, and, in his endeavor to save it, brought him down after it. It is an honor to attempt these things, and even the king sometimes puts his hand to it."

The next part of the proceedings was the carrying twenty of the largest hogs to the late Tooi-tonga's grave, and leaving them there, while the rest, together with the other provisions, were shared among the chiefs, who in their turn distributed them to their followers, until every man in the island gets a piece of pork and yam. The four great columns of yams were given, one to the king, another to the Tooi-tonga, the third to the Veachi and one or two of the very great chiefs, and the fourth to the gods. The Tooitonga also took the cars of yams as a matter of tacit though unacknowledged right. Kava drinking, dancing, and wrestling concluded the ceremony; and as soon as the circle broke up, the tapu was considered as an-

The twenty large hogs which were laid on the grave were left there for several days; but as soon as they showed signs of putridity, they were cut up, and divided among all who chose to apply for a share of the meat. By right they belonged to the chiefs, but as they were able to procure fresh pork for themselves, they preferred to forego their right, and divide the tainted meat among

the people. The ceremony of Mo'ee-mo'ee, or taking off the tapu contracted by touching a chief. has already been mentioned. The tapu is even contracted by eating in the presence of a superior relation; but there is a conventional way of getting rid of this tapu by simply turning the back upon the superior, who is then considered as not being ceremonially in the presence of the inferior. Should a man think that he may have contracted the tapu unwittingly, he will not dare to feed himself until he has gone to some chief, whose foot he takes and presses it against his stomach. This rite is called the Fota, or pressing. Any chief can take away the tapu contracted by touching an equal or inferior, but has no power over that of a superior. Consequently, no one but himself can take away the Tooi-tonga's tapu; and this proved so inconvenient that whenever the potentate went from his house, he left be-hind him a consecrated bowl as his repre-the least order in the scramble, and the

sentative, and this was held to be equally powerful in removing the tapu. The Veg. chi adopted a similar plan. It is a remarkable fact that kava is exempt from all tapu, so that if even the Tooi-tonga has touched a piece of kava root, the lowest cook may

THERE is a ceremony which in principle somewhat resembles that of Inachi, though it is conducted after a very different manner. Just as the Inachi is an offering to the gods in general through the Tooi-tonga, so is this ceremony, which is called the Towtow, a special thanksgiving to Alo-Alo, the god of weather. It is begun in the early part of November, when the yams are ripe, and is continued for some three months, at

intervals of eight or ten days.

All the islands of Tonga are divided into three distinct portions, namely, the northern division, or *Hahagi*, the southern division, or *Hahagi*, the southern division, or *Mooa*. Each of these divisions has orders to prepare a certain amount of food, such as yams, cocoa-nuts, and the like, and to bring them to the marly. The correct mode of doing so is to bring them on sticks, so that each stick has upon it seven or eight vams, or a bunch of plantains, or a quantity of bananas. If sugar-canes form part of the offering, they are tied in bundles of three or four in each: and all the offerings, no matter what they may be, are piled up in three great heaps, one being erected by the people of each district.

This being done, and a few preliminary matches of boxing and wrestling played, after about three hours a small procession appears, composed of eight or ten men sent by the priest of Alo-Alo, and accompanied by a young girl about eight or nine years old, who represents the god's wife. She is always the daughter of a chief, and generally of one of the highest chiefs, and, during the eighty days of the ceremony, she resides at the temple of Alo-Alo. She has nothing particular to do, except presiding at one or

two feasts and kava parties. The men are all dressed in mats, and have green leaves tied round their necks. This is the dress of humility and sorrow, and is employed in times of mourning for the dead and supplication for mercy. When they have arrived, they seat themselves in a line, having in front of them a great drum, which is kept for this special purpose. They then offer their prayers to Alo-Alo, begging for propitious weather and good crops, and after these prayers are concluded two of the piles of provisions are carried off by the chiefs, and the third is set aside for the gods. Suddenly the great drum is beaten, on which a general dash is made at the pile of food, every one scrambling for the provisions, and

scene is a torn from to pieces, up into fi vicariousl

The wo way durir watch the This is no The inhal selves in against th the highe cooks taki of persons himself, b tion, and l common p

Severe ducted wit no one dis injury wh knocked d his arm is and has it. plaining. the boxing the Tonga

In wrest not though lenge anot challenge, the bent el challenge b very leisure the gnatoo They grasp side, and en by lifting h him on his and retires without sho one case die ill-feeling a stance the r upon as an The victo

for a few s place, his fr singing, or tory. After offers anoth ted by seve one from th equally may consent; an ters a chief generally vi rank. This bat, not in t festival.

Boxing is of fair play. the middle stretched or and advanc every step.

ld to be equally tapu. The Vea-It is a remarkpt from all tapu, onga has touched lowest cook may

hich in principle of Inachi, though ry different manan offering to the he Tooi-tonga, so called the Towg to Alo-Alo, the gun in the early ne yams are ripe, three months, at VS.

are divided into nely, the northern outhern division, division, or Mooa. as orders to preood, such as yams, nd to bring them mode of doing so so that each stick yams, or a bunch y of bananas. If the offering, they e or four in each: natter what they ree great heaps, eople of each dis-

few preliminary wrestling played, small procession or ten men sent and accompanied nt or nine years od's wife. She is ief, and generally s, and, during the ny, she resides at She has nothing esiding at one or

in mats, and have neir necks. This d sorrow, and is ning for the dead cy. When they mselves in a line, When they reat drum, which Alo, begging for d crops, and after d two of the piles off by the chiefs, r the gods. Sudeaten, on which a the pile of food, ne provisions, and h. There is not ramble, and the

scene is a most exciting one, the yams being ted, both combatants wrap a piece of cord torn from the sticks, and the sticks smashed round their hands and proceed to blows, to pieces, while the sugar-canes are broken up into fragments. Thus the gods are fed

The women keep prudently out of the way during this struggle, and stand aside to watch the chief and concluding ceremony. This is nothing more than a general fight, The inhabitants of the island arrange them-selves in two divisions, one half fighting against the other. All engage in this battle, the highest chiefs as well as the lowest cooks taking part in it. There is no respect of persons, the king, or even the Tooi-tonga himself, being assaulted without compunction, and handled as roughly as any of the common people.

Severe as is the fighting, it is all conducted with the greatest good humor, and no one displays a sign of ill-temper at the injury which he receives. If a man is knocked down, he gets up with a smile; if his arm is broken, he retires from the battle and has it set, but he never thinks of complaining. The same system is observed in the boxing and wrestling matches of which

the Tongans are so fond.

In wrestling matches, for example, it is not thought polite for any one man to challenge another; he ought to give a general challenge, by striking with the right hand the bent elbow of the opposite arm. If the challenge be accepted, the antagonists meet very leisurely, and take care to fasten tightly the gnatoo belt that surrounds the waist. They grasp the belt with a hand on each side, and endeavor to throw their antagonist by lifting him from the ground and flinging him on his back. The vanquished man rises and retires to his place among the spectators without showing any displeasure. Only in one case did Mariner know a man display ill-feeling at being beaten, and in that instance the man, although a chief, was looked upon as an ill-bred fellow.

The victor seats himself on the ground for a few seconds, and then retires to his place, his friends belonging to his own side singing, or rather chanting, a song of victory. After a short time he again rises and offers another challenge, and if it be accepted by several antagonists, he may select one from them. If they find that they are equally matched, they leave off by mutual consent; and sometimes, if a man encounters a chief much superior to him, he will generally yield out of respect to the other's rank. This only takes place in single com-bat, not in the general fight of the Tow-tow

festival.

Boxing is conducted on similar principles of fair play. The challenger proceeds into the middle of the ring, holding one arm stretched out in front and the other behind,

which are given with great force and rapid-When one is vanquished, he retires with apparent unconcern to the ring, and sits to watch the combats of others, knowing that to be vanquished is not considered a disgrace. When the victor returns to his people, they welcome him, but do not sing the chant of victory unless he has knocked his antagonist down. Falling is on these occasions considered as equivalent to being killed in real battle, and, in consequence, the song of victory is not sung unless the antagonist has fallen to the ground. If a man be beaten in wrestling, he may not wrestle a second time in the same day, though he may box, and vice versû.
In the ceremony of Tow-tow, these

scrambling, boxing, and wrestling matches are carried on every tenth day, and are repeated eight times, so as to make up the eighty days of the festival. After each battle, those who have touched a superior chief come to be relieved of the tapu which they have contracted by touching him. Even the Tooi-tonga, whose nose has been flattened his teeth knocked out, and his face pounded to a jelly by a mere peasant, over whom he has supreme command of life and death, performs the needful ceremony with perfect

good humor.

The illustration No. 1, on the 999th page, represents the concluding scene of this ceremony. In the foreground are seen the two contending parties, one of which is be-ginning to get the victory over the other. In the centre of the illustration, and on the left, are the fragments of the food-piles, with a few men still scrambling for them, and in the distance the women are seated under the trees, watching the progress of the

Fighting is not confined to the men, but is practised also by the women, who on this occasion lay aside the ordinary gentleness and mildness for which they are remarkable. When Captain Cook visited Tonga, he was much surprised to see the girls step into the ring and box with as much spirit and determination as had been shown by the men. They do not, however, carry the combat to such extremes, and if one of them does not speedily yield, the combat-ants are parted by the elder women. Even the merest children box after a similar fashion, the little girls knocking each other about with hearty good-will as long as they are allowed to fight.

On one occasion, Finow ordered that all the women who were seated as spectators should engage in a general fight, after the manner of the men. They seemed nothing loth, and all the women who lived on the north of the island fought against those who and advances sideways, changing sides at lived on the south side. Nearly fifteen hun-every step. When the challenge is accepthem to desist, seeing that several ankles had been sprained and limbs broken.

Besides boxing and wrestling matches, the Tongans have club fights on great occasions. As with the other matches, the combatants are divided into two parties, one being seated opposite to the other, with a

opponent is bad manners. If the challenge rious in every one of them.

fought with the greatest courage for more be accepted, the combatants walk to the than an hour, both parties contending with such determination that neither could gain a foot of ground; and at last Finow ordered fight after the Tongan or Samoan manner. The former mode does not allow a man to strike an antagonist after he is knocked down, but only to flourish his club over him in token of victory. By the latter mode he is allowed to beat the fallen man as long as he shows signs of life. When the fight is over, the men on the side of the victor considerable space of ground between them.

When all is ready, a man jumps up, runs to the people of the opposite side, and sits down in front of them, asking if any of them will fight him. As in the boxing and wrestling matches, to challenge a particular research is hed wroners. If the challenge is no less than fourteen battles, and was victorious in every one of them.

> SACRIFICE O GODS -OF DE DRESS RELIG DECOY CAVE,

As might take place burial.

If any or off a joint to the god superior re that they n several tim stition, ther who has no the little fir The mod

simple enor of wood, an even a sha blow is give which blee the nature of smoke of f after bleedir and in a v trouble. T this operati be seen qua honor of ha Should th turn, instea

offered to th example, wh from which sinking, his the king's fr and offered crated house greatest con nts walk to the attended by his ether they shall Samoan manner. t allow a man to he is knocked is club over him e latter mode he man as long as hen the fight is le of the victor oh, and the conking, sits down espect, and then n party. On one ng prince fought s, and was victo-

CHAPTER CL

TONGA - Concluded.

SICKNESS -- BURIAL -- GAMES.

SACRIFICE OF THE FINGER, AND MODE OF OPERATING -SACRIFICE OF CHILDREN -CONSULTING THE gods — modes of inspiration — sacrifice of wives — finow's good sense — supposed causes OF DEATH - FINOW'S FUNERAL - CUTTING THE HEAD - OPENING AND CLOSING THE VAULT-DRESSING THE GRAVE - APPOINTMENT OF A SUCCESSOR - CONCLUDING CEREMONIES - IDEAS OF RELIGION - VARIOUS SPORTS AND GAMES - RAT SHOOTING AND BIRD CATCHING - FINOW AND THE DECOY BIRD-BALL PLAY-A DANGEROUS STAKE, AND HONORABLE PAYMENT-THE LOVER'S CAVE, AND A NATIVE LEGEND.

As might be expected, various ceremonies | tim, but think that it is right to sacrifice a

If any one is ill, the inferior relations cut off a joint of the little finger as an offering to the gods. Sometimes a whole joint is taken off at once, but those who have many superior relations remove only a portion, so that they may be able to offer the sacrifice several times. In consequence of this superstition, there is scarcely a person in Tonga who has not lost a considerable portion of the little finger of one or both hands.

The mode of amputating the finger is simple enough. It is laid upon a flat block of wood, and the edge of a knife or axe, or even a sharp stone, placed on it. A smart blow is given with a reallet and the same of the same o blow is given with a mallet, and the stump, which bleeds but little in consequence of the nature of the operation, is held over the smoke of fresh grass, so as to check any after bleeding. No application is made to it, and in a week or two it heals without trouble. The Tongans do not seem to fear this operation, and even little children may be seen quarrelling with each other for the honor of having it performed upon them.

Should the illness take an unfavorable turn, instead of a mere finger, a child is offered to the gods by being strangled. For example, when Finow fell till of the malady from which he died, and was apparently sinking, his eldest son took a young child of the high stranger of the sinking of the stranger the king's from its mother's lap, strangled it, and offered it to the gods at various conse-crated houses. The people look with the

take place with regard to sickness and little child who at present is useless to the community, and may not live to be of service, so that they may obtain in exchange the life of a chief who is needed by his people.

Such a sacrifice is sometimes made on other occasions, when the anger of some god is to be averted. In Tonga there are several sacred places, in which to spill blood is a sacrilege, so that they serve the purpose of cities of refuge. Once a chief named Palavali was pursuing some men, who ran for refuge to the nearest sacred spot. One of them was just getting over the fence, when Palavali, in the heat of the moment, struck him on the head, so that he fell dead within the enclosure. As soon as he had done the deed he was filled with fear, and reported what he had done to Finow, who consulted a priest. The priest, becoming inspired, said that a child must be sacrificed to the gods, and the chiefs, after holding a consultation, agreed that they should sacrifice a child of one of their own number by a female attendant. Such children are always selected, for two reasons; firstly, because the child of a chief is held to be a worthy sacrifice, and secondly, because, as its mother is of inferior rank, it could never live to be a chief.

The mother, knowing the custom, took alarm, and hid the child, but it was at last found by the men who were sent to search and offered it to the gods at various conse-crated houses. The people look with the greatest compassion on the poor little vic-but was held back by those about her. On

hearing its mother's voice it began to cry, bowl, and around him sit the Matabooles as but when it arrived at the fatal place of usual; but on this occasion the chiefs always execution, it was pleased and delighted with the band of gnatoo that was put round its neck, and, looking up in the face of the man who was about to destroy it, displayed in its beautiful countenance a smile of ineffable

"Such a sight inspired pity in the heart of every one; but adoration and fear of the gods was a sentiment superior to any other. and its destroyer could not help exclaiming, as he put on the fatal bandage, 'O yaooé chi vale!' ('Poor little innocent!') Two men then tightened the cord by pulling at each end, and the guiltless and unsuspecting victim was soon relieved of its painful struggles. The body was then placed upon a sort of hand-barrow, supported upon the shoulders of four men, and carried in a pro-cession of priests, chiefs, and Matabooles clothed in mats, with wreaths of green leaves round their necks.

"In this manner it was conveyed to various houses consecrated to different gods, before each of which it was placed on the ground, all the company sitting behind it, except one priest, who sat beside it, and prayed aloud to the god that he would be pleased to accept of this sacrifice as an atonement for the heinous sacrilege committed, and that punishment might accordingly be withheld from the people. After this was done before all the consecrated houses in the fortress, the body was given up to its relations, to be buried in the usual

manner.'

This particular case had a strange termination. Four or five days after the sacrifice, Palavali went on a foraging excursion at the head of a body of men who were not tried soldiers, and met with a smaller body of real warriors. In a very short time Palavali's men began to run, and it was in vain that he tried to rally them. At last, in boldly facing the enemy to set his men an example, he received four spears in his body, and fell. This sight angered his men so much that they charged the enemy, drove them back, and rescued their dying chief. They were proceeding to draw out the spears, but he told them that it would be useless, as the gods had doomed him for his sacrilege, and he must die. His prognostication was correct, for he died half an hour after the battle.

When a priest is consulted on any subject - say, on the sickness of any one - a carefully regulated ceremony is performed. On the previous night a hog is killed and prepared, and taken to the place where the priest lives, together with plantains, yams, and kava root. Next day they all go to the

mix with the people, or even sit behind them, thinking that such retiring and hum-ble behavior is pleasing to the gods. From the moment that all are seated, the

god is supposed to take possession of the priest, who sits silently with his hands clasped in front of him, his head bowed, and his eyes bent on the ground. The kaya being prepared, the required questions are put to him. Sometimes he answers them at once, but very often he remains in silence until all the provisions are eaten and the kava drunk. When he does speak, it is in a low, constrained voice, generally above its natural pitch, the words being supposed to be the utterances of the god through him without his volition. In some cases he is quite calm and quiet while delivering his answers, but at others his face becomes inflamed, his eyes seem ready to start from their sockets, tears pour from his eyes, and his words issue in broken sobs and gasps.

This paroxysm lasts for some time, and then gradually subsides. As it is passing away, he takes up a club which is placed near him for the purpose, gazes at it attentively, and then looks round, apparently without seeing the object at which he looks "his eyes are open, but their sense is shut." Suddenly he raises the club, and dashes it violently on the ground, at which instant the god is supposed to leave his votary, who immediately rises and leaves the place of honor, retiring to the back of the ring among the people. The man of highest rank present then takes the place of honor, and more kava is served.

When a priest is consulted on behalf of a sick person, the inspiration retains its hold as long as the patient is in his presence, and in some cases the inspiration lasts for several days. If one priest cannot find a cure, the patient is taken to another, and so on, until he either recovers or dies.

The illustration No. 2, on the next page, represents a consultation of the priest respecting a sick child. In the foreground are the provisions and the presents brought to the priest, and in the centre is the kaya bowl. On the right is the priest, seated in a state of inspiration, with crossed hands and bowed head, listening to the questions which are being put by the Mataboole. The mother of the child is seen with the infant in her arms, and around are members of her family, all wearing coarse mats instead of fine gnatoo, and having round their necks the leaves which denote humility.

Other persons beside chiefs become inspired, generally by the spirits of those whom they had known in life. The eldest patient's house, and there seat themselves in order, the priest taking his place just within the eaves, if the appointed spot be a house. Opposite to the priest is the kava ne Matabooles as the chiefs always even sit behind etiring and humthe gods.

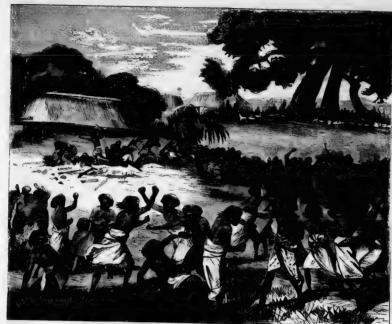
Ill are seated, the cossession of the with his hands head bowed, and dund. The kava red questions are answers them at mains in silence ee caten and the espeak, it is in a nerally above its eing supposed to god through him some cases he is le delivering his its face becomes ady to start from cm his eyes, and obs and gasps.

As it is passing which is placed gazes at it attenound, apparently t which he looks at their sense is es the club, and ground, at which sed to leave his rises and leaves g to the back of le. The man of takes the place of rved.

ed on behalf of a n retains its hold his presence, and tion lasts for sevannot find a cure, nother, and so on, dies.

n the next page, of the priest rethe foreground presents brought entre is the kava priest, seated in h crossed hands to the questions Mataboole. The n with the infant e members of her mats instead of ound their necks mility, hiefs become in-

spirits of those life. The eldest ard succeeded to pired by a great red by his father iner asked him



(1.) THE TOW-TOW. (See page 995.)



(2.) CONSULTING A PRIEST. (See page 998.)

(999)

what wer and he r comfortat and that own. Wo of the sp swered th intuitively While

a young became in fainted, an priest, wh before, an heaven. wished for would soon acknowled saying tha had suspectinspired hill and di the priest

ness.
Shortly lislands, a fice was pr When th was strang

buried in is the case the Tonga paratively Tooi-tonga this terribl there happ them ruled quence a sesible. In the daughthat if the daughter s to destroy cause her l double los happened, after the el

would not ceed; thus rank that v The Too sarily follo was abolis Mariner's curious ar have passe

succeeded out his fat

European Mariner Finow's da scribes it w costume of

what were his feelings on such occasions, and he replied that he felt restless and uncomfortable, and all over in a glow of heat, and that his mind did not seem to be his own. When asked how he knew the name of the spirit who then visited him, he answered that he could not tell — he knew it intuitively, but could give no explanation.

While Mariner was in the Tonga Islands,

a young chief, remarkable for his beauty, became inspired to such a degree that he fainted, and was taken to the house of a priest, who told him that the spirit was that of a young woman who had died two years before, and was now in Bolotoo the Tonga heaven. She inspired him because she wished for him as a husband in Bolotoo, and would soon take him there. The young chief acknowledged the truth of the exposition, saying that for several nights he had been visited in his sleep by a young woman, and had suspected that she was the person who inspired him. Two days after he was taken

Shortly before Mariner was at the Tonga Islands, a still graver form of human sacri fice was practised than that of a child.

When the Tooi-tonga died, his chief widow was strangled on the day of the funeral, and buried in the same grave with him, just as is the case in Fiji, whence in all probability, the Tongans borrowed the practice. Comparatively short as was Mariner's stay two Tooi-tongas died; but in neither case was this terrible rite observed. In the one case there happened to be no chief wife, all his wives being so equal in rank that neither of them ruled the household; and, in consequence a selection of a victim became impossible. In the second case the chief wife was the daughter of Finow, who said openly, that if the husband were to die first, his daughter should not be strangled, for that to destroy a young and beautiful woman be-cause her husband had died was inflicting a double loss upon the community. As it happened, the Tooi-tonga did not die until after the elder Finow was dead and had been succeeded by his son, who not only carried out his father's wishes on that subject, but would not allow another Tooi-tonga to succeed; thus abolishing the source of the only rank that was superior to him.

anointed with ecceanut oil scented with sandal-wood, and then arrayed in a vast number of the finest Samoan mats, which were wrapped round her in such quantities that her arms were stuck out almost horisontally from her body, and her legs were so much trammelled that she could not sit down, but had to rest in a bent attitude upon her attendants.

She was eighteen at the time. Had it not been for the good sense of Finow, Mariner would have seen within a very short time her wedding, her murder, and her burial. The technical name for the ceremony of strangling is Nawgia.

We now come naturally to the subject of funerals, and will take as a typical example the funeral of the elder Finow.

Almost immediately after the death and burial of his favorite daughter, a child about seven years of age, Finow fell ill, his malady having been increased by the exertions which he made during the long ceremony of ill and died. Mariner was present when the priest gave his explanation of the illcombat. On the evening of that day Finow retired to a small house that had just been built for him, and was seized with a violent illness, which almost deprived him of the power of speech, though not of intellect. He evidently knew that his end was at hand, and continually muttered "My country! my country!" evidently feeling that calamities might come on his land if he were suddenly taken away.

A child was offered on behalf of him, which had already been selected, but, by the time that the sacrificing party had come back to the house where the king lay, he had lost both his speech and his consciousness, and in a few minutes the great and wise Finow had departed this life. When his death was ascertained, a curious ceremony was performed. The body was carried to the Tooi-tonga's house, and placed on the hole in which the cooks were accustomed to light their fires. This was a symbolical ex-pression of humility and submission to the gods, the cooking place being so degraded a spot that only the lowest Tooas would condescend to touch it.

Not only the king himself, but all those in his confidence, fully believed that his death was caused by a god named Toobo Totai, to whom he had prayed in vain for his daughsarily follows that the ceremony of Inachi was abolished too, and but for the fact of Mariner's enforced residence in Tonga, this curious and interesting ceremony would have passed away without being known to European civilization. European civilization.

Mariner was present at the wedding of Finow's saudden death put a stop to this project, which was only known to one or two of his immediate friends. It is not unscribes it with some minuteness. It much resembled a Fijian wedding, except in the costume of the bride, who was first copiously saved himself by getting a dose of poison

administered to Finow at the funeral ban- | ness are at an end; your death has insured

Finow was right in his prognostications of trouble, for no sconer was his death known than a number of the principal chiefs of different islands began to assemble their forces, with the intention of seizing on the throne. His successor, however, inherited his father's wisdom, and took such precautions that the attempt of the conspir-

ators was quietly foiled.

After the royal corpse was brought back from the Tooi-tonga's dwelling, it was laid on bales of gnatoo in the large conical house, which was nearly filled with women, who kept up a continual lamentation, led by his daughter, a beautiful girl of fifteen. Even by night the lamentations went on, the house being lighted up with lamps made of cocoa-nut shells half filled with cocoa-nut oil, which is only used on such occasions: and on the following morning the people assembled on the marly to take part in the obsequies of their late king, whom they both loved and feared. Indeed, among sav-

mourners were scarcely recognizable, being swollen and disfigured by the repeated blows which they had inflicted on themselves as signs of sorrow. The chiefs and Matabooles who were especially attached to the person or household of the deceased king proceeded to inflict even severer injuries upon themselves, using the club, or shell, or a sharp stone; and running two or three at a time into the open space, while they cut their heads with the clubs and they cut their neads with the causs and shells se that the blood poured down their bodies in streams; as they did so, they ut-tered a sort of dirge, some specimens of which have been given by Mariner. The following is his translation of the death chant and accompanying proceedings.

"Finow, I know well your mind; you have departed to Bolotoo, and left your people, under suspicion that I or some of those about you are unfaitful; but where is the proof of infidelity? where is a single instance of disrespect?' Then inflicting violent blows and deep cuts in the head with a club, stone, or knife, would again exclaim at intervals. 'Is not this a proof of my fidelity? does this not evince loyalty and attachment to the memory of the departed warrior?' Then perhaps two or three would run on and endeavor to seize the same club, saying with a furious tone of voice, 'Behold, the land is torn with strife, it is smitten to pieces, it is split by revolts; how my blood boils; let us haste and die! I no longer wish to live: your death, Finow, shall be mine. But why did I wish hitherto to live? it was for you alone; it was in your service and defence only that I wish to breathe; but now, alas! ours: henceforth war and destruction alone

can prosper.'
"These speeches were accompanied with a wild and frantic agitation of the body, whilst the parties cut and bruised their heads every two or three words with the knife or club they held in their hands. Others, somewhat more calm and moderate in their grief, would parade up and down with rather a wild and agitated step, spinning and whirling the club about, striking themselves with the edge of it two or three times violently upon the top or back of the head, and then suddenly stopping and looking steadfastly at the instrument spattered with blood, exclaim, 'Alas' my club, who could have said that you would have done this kind office for me, and have enabled me thus to evince a testimony of my respect to Finow? Never, no, never, can you again tear open the brains of his enemies. Alas! what a great and mighty warrior has fallen! obsequies of their late king, whom they both loved and feared. Indeed, among savage nations, there is no love toward a chief who is not thoroughly feared.

By this time the faces of the principal fate of those numerous warriors who have fallen victims to your just revenge. But do not think, Finow, that I reproach you; no. I wish only to convince you of my inno-cence, for who that has thoughts of harming his chiefs shall grow white-headed like me (an expression used by some of the old men)? O cruel gods, to deprive us of our father, of our only hope, for whom alone we wished to live. We have indeed other chiefs, but they are only chiefs in rank, and not like you, alas! great and mighty in war." "

Such were their sentiments and conduct on this mournful occasion. Some, more violent than others, cut their heads to the skull with such strong and frequent blows, that they caused themselves to reel, producing afterward a temporary loss of reason. It is difficult to say to what length this extravagance would have been carried, particularly by one old man, if the prince had not ordered Mr. Mariner to go up and take away the club from him, as well as two others that were engaged at the same time. It is customary on such occasions, when a man takes a club from another, to use it himself in the same way about his own head; but Mr. Mariner, being a foreigner, was not expected to do this; he therefore went up, and, after some hesitation and struggle, secured the clubs one after another, and returned with them to his seat, when, after a while, they were taken by

others, who used them in like manner.

The next proceeding was to place the body of the dead king in the grave, which was at some distance from the place where those wild laments had been made. Having the country is ruined. Peace and happi- arrived at the spot, a small house was speedily put tog black gna assed ove from the e to conceal

Here at place, whi amilies b ground, bu long by a which for larger tha ience of re stone does lower, som tween ther

After di men came away the force of no on end. S grave. Tw for full for perfect; w buried nea few bones. with the g while in of the presidi

handed do the gnatoo was buried let down w cutting an next cerem for the dec The who

in single li proceeded t loudly to wa For any of great an ins lose his life. a similar p hide himsel ing on his fo cost him hi terly remen throne. As rived at the they all set of leaves, w and carried that they re filled up wit filled with neatly smoo Next cam

burning the in mats and eath has insured destruction alone

ecompanied with on of the body, ad bruised their words with the in their hands lm and moderate de up and down itated step, spinb about, striking f it two or three p or back of the pping and look. ument spattered l my club, who vould have done have enabled me of my respect to , can you again enemies. Alas! arrior has fallen! t my loyalty; be But what absurdappeared treachrriors who have evenge. But do proach you; no, ou of my innoghts of harming -headed like me ome of the old eprive us of our whom alone we e indeed other efs in rank, and and mighty in

nts and conduct Some, more eir heads to the frequent blows, s to reel, produloss of reason. length this excarried, partice prince had not to up and take as well as two the same time. casions, when a about his own ing a foreigner, is: he therefore hesitation and ubs one after them to his seat, were taken by ike manner. as to place the he grave, which

the place where made. Having louse was speed-

ily put together, the body was laid in it, and the whole house was covered with coarse cheek-bone, so as to raise a circular blister. black gnatoo, the sign of mourning, which hy pit together, the body was that in it, and the whole house was covered with coarse black gnatoo, the sign of mourning, which passed over the top of the house, and hung from the eaves to the ground, so as entirely to conceal it.

Here another set of lamentations took place, while a number of men were em-ployed in opening the grave. All great families bury their dead, not merely in the ground, but in a solid vault, about eight feet long by six wide, and eight deep. It is made of six enormous stones, the upper one, which forms the cover, being necessarily larger than the others. For the convenisnoe of raising it when required, the upper stone does not fit quite closely upon the lower, some smaller stones being placed between them at one end.

After digging some ten feet deep, the men came to the vault, and, having cleared away the earth, they passed a rope under the end of the stone cover, and by the united force of nearly two hundred men raised it on end. Several bodies were already in the grave. Two of them, which had been buried for full forty years, were dried and nearly perfect; while others, which had not been buried nearly so long, were reduced to a few bones. In some cases the vault is lined with the gnatoo on which the body rested, while in others it becomes the property of the presiding Mataboole.

All being ready, the body of Finow was handed down into the vault, still lying on the gnatoo, and the body of his daughter, at whose funeral he was seized with illness, was buried by his side. The stone was then let down with a great shout, and the headcutting and maiming began afresh. The next ceremony was that of collecting sand

for the decoration of the grave. The whole company formed themselves in single line, the women going first, and proceeded to the back of the island, singing loudly to warn stragglers of their presence. For any one not actually engaged in a funeral to be seen on the road is held as so great an insult that any ordinary man would lose his life. Even if the king himself saw a similar procession advancing, he would hide himself until it had passed. Remaining on his feet, though it might not actually cost him his life, would probably be so bit-terly remembered that he might lose his throne. As soon as the funeral party arrived at the place where the sand was found, they all set to work at making baskets out of leaves, which they suspended from sticks and carried on their shoulders. By the time that they reached the grave, it was nearly filled up with earth, and the remainder was filled with sand, which was carefully and

tringent berry, which causes the wound to bleed, and the blood is smeared over the cheeks. The friction is repeated daily for twenty days, so that an indelible scar is the natural result.

The day after the burial a ceremony took The day after the burial a ceremony took place by which the young prince was installed in his father's place, and invested with his father's name. Finow was the name of the reigning family; but, according to custom, no one but the actual king was allowed to bear it. Sometimes, as a mark of especial favor, he allowed it to be borne by a relation, but always in conjunction with some other name. The name by which the young prince had prayionally been called was young prince had previously been called was loegnagnongo.

The ceremony was begun by a kava party, at which the young prince presided. The two first cups having been filled and drunk, the third was due to the president. The Mataboole who directed the proceedings said, while all eyes were fixed on the prince,
"Give it to Fixow," thus acknowledging him
as the king of Tonga. The young king displayed not the least emotion on being called by the new name, as that would have been thought beneath his dignity, but took the cup as quietly as if he had been called by the name of Finow all his life.

Rites similar to those which have been described went on for nineteen days, and on the twentieth the concluding ceremony was performed. All the relations of the deceased king, together with those who had taken part in the funeral, went to the back of the island, and procured a great quantity of flat pebbles, mostly white, but having a few black among them. These they carried to the grave, and strewed completely over the grave in the form of an oval, each pebble being laid by the side of the other. The black pebbles were laid upon the white ones.

Dances, wrestling matches, and head-cut-ting then took place, in which latter rite the fishermen of the late king distinguished themselves in a very curious manner. Into each cheek they thrust three arrows, the points of which passed into the mouth. The shafts of the arrows were brought over the shouldness and to see the product of the same three t shoulders, and to each pair was tied another arrow across the shoulders, so as to make a triangle. Equipped in this extraordinary manner, they walked round the grave, and, not satisfied with this proof of their devotion to their late master, they cut their heads with their paddles, and pinched up the skin of their breasts, thrusting a spear through the fold. A grand wrestling match ended this complicated series of ceremonies.

neatly smoothed.

Next came a very curious custom, that of burning the cheeks. The mourners, clothed in mate and green leaves, set fire to little

As soon as the body had been lowered into the vault, one of the assassins, a man of exceptional strength and stature, advanced toward the grave, and, brandishing his club, avowed himself as the murderer, and chal-lenged any friend of the deceased chief to

fight him. The challenge was not accepted, and, al-though one of the wives of the murdered man did her best to arouse the family to vengeance, she could only succeed in inducing them to erect a strong fortress, in which they hoped to bid defiance to Finow. The king, however, was too wise to allow such a standing menace to remain, started off with four thousand warriors, and reduced the dis-affected chiefs to obedience. In storming the fort, the challenging chief distinguished himself by his deeds of arms. Though wounded in the breast with a five-barbed spear, he broke off the shaft, scaled alone the

enemy's fortress, knocked out a man's brains with his club, and made good his escape. As he retreated, however, he received another spear in his back, and died on the following day. It is remarkable that in this battle nearly all the assassins perished.

The religious system of the Tongans is tolerably simple. They believe that there are several orders of gods, just as there are several ranks of men. The principal gods are self-existent and eternal; but the second order of gods are the souls of deceased chiefs and Matabooles. All of noble blood have souls, and take rank in Bolotoo, or Paradise, not according to their moral merit. but according to the rank which they held in the world. Matabooles become ministers to the gods, just as they were ministers to the chiefs; but they are not powerful enough to inspire priests. There is also a class of mischievous gods, who are, fortunately, much less powerful than the benev-olent deities.

As to the Mooas, or middle class, the learned are rather doubtful whether they go to Bolotoo, or whether they have souls. But that the Tooas, or peasantry, have no souls, there is not the slightest doubt, and that they can go to Bolotoo is therefore im-

possible. With regard to Bolotoo, or Paradise, the

Tongans believe it to be an island somewhere to the north-west of Tonga. It is a most beautiful place, full of the choicest fruits and the most lovely flowers. Pigs are pleutiful, and never die unless they are killed to supply food for the gods, in which case another hog comes into existence to supply the place of the one that was killed. So, when a fruit or a flower is plucked, another immediately takes its place. These particulars are learned from some Tongan voyagers, who were returning from Fiji. but were driven out of their reckoning by a storm. At last they were blown to a lovely island, on which they succeeded in landing, hood, fleecing the people without mercy.

There was abundance of fruit, but their hands could not grasp it. They walked through the trunks of trees, and through the walls of houses as if they were mere shadows; while some of the inhabitants walked through their own bodies in a similar manner. Then they found they were at Bolotoo. The gods told them to go home at once, and promised them a favorable wind. They reached Tonga in safety, but all died soon afterward, the air of Bolotoo not suiting mere mortals.

It has already been mentioned that the religious and secular lives of the Tongans are so blended together that it is very difficult to separate them, and that even their amusements partake somewhat of the religious character. There are, however, one or two of their games which partake but slightly of this element, and which are yet characteristic of the natives. One of these sports is called Fanna-kalai, and is a very ingenious mode of bird catching by means of decovs.

In order to practise this amusement, the sportsman furnishes himself with a bow and arrows, goes into the woods, and there en-sconces himself within a large wicker cage covered with green leaves, so that the in-mate may not be seen, but having plenty of openings through which the arrows can be aimed. By his side he has a small cage, in which is kept a hen bird, and on the top of the large cage the cock bird is tied by the leg. When properly trained, these birds continue calling to each other, and thus attract numbers of their own species, which fall victims to the arrows.

Well-trained birds are exceedingly valuable, and one chief has been known to make war upon another for the sake of procuring an especially fine bird. Indeed, the Ton-gans look on these birds much as sportsmen of the olden times looked on their falcons. To each pair of birds there is a keeper, whose whole business it is to attend to and train them. He is careful to teach the cock bird to flap its wings as it calls to its mate, and to utter its notes loudly, so that they may be taken as a challenge to other birds to come and fight him. The bird keepers have almost unlimited powers, as nothing is allowed to interfere with the welfare of their charge. Even when a famine visits a district, the birds must not starve. The keeper forages for the birds, and if he sees a fine bunch of plantains, he is allowed to put the tapu on it by sticking a reed in the tree, after which the proprietor dares not touch the fruit which he has saved for himself and his family. He may starve, but the birds must be fed.

As may be imagined, the keepers attend to their own interests as well as those of the birds, and are great pests to the neighborNow and insolence them, in without a

In orde these bire the elder sessed a l and which Finow he missioner the chief owner de had he a had himse many wa lives had involved trusted th birds, ver present th The kir

was so d that he we bird which therefore ing to the almost inc whales' te production beads, a some axes from Euro vessel in v Seeing the the bird, a war if aga prize with As this s

sive one, it and very g being una another sp Matabooles shooting, a chiefs take intend to s liminaries, they mean on each sid day, they g previously with his bo These ar made of a

They are n being smoo care, and th guarded w is scarcely laid on wit credible. 1 slight coati over it, so s f fruit, but their it. They walked ees, and through they were mere the inhabitants bodies in a similar nd they were at hem to go home at a favorable and died afety, but all died a favorable wind. Bolotoo not suiting

entioned that the s of the Tongans at it is very dimnd that even their what of the religare, however, one nd which are yet ves. One of these ai, and is a very inching by means of

is amusement, the elf with a bow and ods, and there enlarge wicker cage es, so that the in-t having plenty of de arrows can be as a small cage, in and on the top of bird is tied by the ined, these birds other, and thus own species, which

exceedingly valuen known to make sake of procuring Indeed, the Tonnuch as sportsmen on their falcons, here is a keeper, s to attend to and l to teach the cock calls to its mate, udly, so that they The bird keepers wers, as nothing is the welfare of their amine visits a distarve. The keeper if he sees a fine allowed to put the reed in the tree, r dares not touch ed for himself and ve, but the birds

he keepers attend well as those of the s to the neighborle without mercy.

how and then they go a little too far in their | together, and to give it an uniform polish. insolence, and a complaint is laid against them, in which case the man seldom escapes without a severe beating.

In order to show the enormous value of these birds, Mariner tells a story respecting the elder Finow. The chief of Hihifo possessed a bird which he had himself trained. and which was the best that ever was known. Finow heard of this bird, and sent a commissioner to Hihifo in order to treat with the chief for the purchase of it. This the owner declined to do, saying that not only had he an affection for the bird, which he had himself trained, but he had sustained many wars made on him by neighboring chiefs who wanted to get the bird — many lives had been lost, and he felt his honor involved in keeping it. However, he in-trusted the ambassador with another pair of birds, very nearly as good, and asked him to present them to Finow.

The king tried the birds next day, and was so delighted with their performance that he was the more anxious to obtain the bird which was even superior to them. He therefore prepared a present, which according to the Tongan ideas of that day was of almost incalculable value, comprising, beside whales' teeth, gnatoo, kava, and other native productions, several iron bolts, a quantity of beads, a looking-glass, a grindstone, and some axes, all of which had been procured from Europe, and most of them from the vessel in which Mariner had been wrecked. Seeing that Finow was determined to have the bird, and that he would probably make war if again refused, the chief wisely ac-cepted the present, and sent the desired prize with a polite message.

As this sport is necessarily a very expensive one, it can only be practised by the king and very great chiefs, even the lesser chiefs being unable to bear the cost. There is another sport which is limited to chiefs and Matabooles. This is Fanna-gooma, or rat shooting, and is conducted as follows. Two chiefs take the command of two parties who intend to shoot rats, and arrange the preliminaries, i. e. settling the course which they mean to take, the number of shooters on each side, and so forth. On the appointed day, they go to some place which has been previously fixed upon, each being provided with his bow and two arrows.

These arrows are six feet in length, and made of a reed headed with hard wood. They are most beautifully made, the heads being smooth and polished with the greatest care, and the junction of the head and shaft guarded with plaited sinnet. In some of is scarcely broader than sewing silk, and is laid on with a perfection that is scarcely credible. After the sinnet is finished off, a

In some arrows there are several similar belts of plaited sinnet. No feather is needed, as they are never aimed at any distance, and their great length is requisite to allow them to go straight through the bushes among which the rats lurk.

The bow is about the same length as the arrows, and not very powerful, so that the aim may not be disturbed by the effect of drawing it.

When they are ready to start, a couple of attendants are sent forward, who take in their mouths some roasted cocoa-nut, which they chew, and spit the fragments on either side of the path. If they come to a cross-road, they plant in it an upright reed, by means of which a tapu is laid on the path, in order to prevent any one from passing along and disturbing the rats. No one ever disreand disturbing the rate. At one over distributions are the greatest chiefs come toward it, he will stop at a distance and sit down until the sportsmen have passed, while an inferior chief would to a certainty be clubbed for his insolence if he were to break the tapu.

When the party start, they arrange themselves in the following manner. They walk in Indian file along the path, the leading chief of one party going first, followed by the leading chief of the other side. Then come the men of next rank on either side, and so on alternately. Except the leading man, no one may shoot at a rat that is in front of him, though he may do so if it be on either side, or behind him. As soon as any one has shot his arrow, he changes places with the man behind him, no matter whether the shot be successful or not, so that each in turn has his chance of becoming the leading man, and so getting a double chance of a rat. Every sportsman has an attendant who follows the party, and, as soon as his master has discharged an arrow, picks it up and returns it to him.

In order to attract their game, the sportsmen imitate the squeaking of a rat, which often has the effect of bringing them out of their holes, and if a rat should run away instead of waiting to be shot, one or two of them, with a sharp percussion of the tongue, utter another sound, which has the effect of making the rat stop and sit up to listen. The party that shoots ten rats first wins the game. Birds of any kind are counted as

These two sports are necessarily restricted to chiefs, on account of the expense in one case and the power of the tapu in the other, but there is another which is played only by chiefs and Matabooles, being rethese weapons in my collection, the sinnet stricted to them by etiquette and not by necessity.

The two players sit opposite each other, credible. After the sinnet is finished off, a and one of them makes one of three slight coating of transparent varnish is laid movements with his right hand, i. c. preover it, so as to bind the plait more firmly senting the open palm, the closed fist or the extended forefinger. His antagonist endeavors to imitate the movements, but if he can succeed in making five without being imitated, he wins a point, and marks it by laying down a little piece of stick. Should the antagonist be successful, he asks of the other player what were the preceding movements, their order and the reason for each of them. If his opponent should fall to give the correct answer, he loses a point, but if he succeeds, the game is continued.

The skill lies not in seeing and imitating the various movements, which are made so rapidly that an inexperienced eye cannot detect one of them, but in remembering the movements made by the antagonist, and in giving a feigned explanation of each. This explanation must be made according to the laws of the game, and alters with every variation in the order of the movements, so that considerable readiness and ingenuity are needed in order to invent on the spur of the moment an explanation according to the laws of the game. The chiefs are exceedingly fond of this game, and, while playing it, work themselves up to a wonderful pitch of excitement. The lower orders play a game somewhat similar to this, except that no discussion about the moves is allowable, and the intellectual element is therefore

There are many other games that are common to all ranks. One of these is called Tolo. A piece of soft wood, nine inches in diameter, is fastened to the top of a post of harder wood about five or six feet high, and the game consists in throwing a heavy spear so that it shall stick in the soft wood. Six or eight persons play on each side, every player being allowed three throws. Another game with spears somewhat resembles the djerid, and consists in hurling blunted spears at each other.

The Tongans are singularly dexterous of hand. They excel in ball play, and have a game which consists in playing with five balls, which are thrown from one hand to the other, so as to keep four balls always in the air. They sing a song at the same time, each cadence coinciding with the transfer of the balls from one hand to the other, and for every verse that they can finish without a mistake they score one point. They have also a game very much resembling our cup and hall.

Another game in which dexterity of hand is needed is called Lafo. A mat is laid on the ground, and the players throw beans on it, each trying to knock off those of his antagonist. This game has a sort of celebrity from having been connected with one of the few acts of cannibalism attributed to the Tongans. During a severe famine, two daughters of a chief played a game of lafo with two young warriors. If the men won, they were to have half the yam, but if they lost, they were still to have half the yam,

but were obliged to go out, kill an enemy, and divide his body with the girls. They lost the game, ate their yam, and waited until night for the fulfilment of their promise. After dark they stole out, and hid themselves near the fortress of the enemy. As they had anticipated, in the early morning one of the men came out to fetch sais water, and passed near the spot where they lay in ambush. They struck him down with their clubs, and at the risk of their lives brought his body off to the spot where the girls lived. If in any of these games there should be a dispute, the men settle it by an extemporized wrestling match, and the women by spinning a cocae-nut.

women by spinning a cocoa-nut.

Being islanders, they are very familiar with the water, and practise the well-known sport of surf swimming. This sport will be described when we come to treat of the Sandwich Islands. They have another aquatic sport peculiar to themselves. Two posts are driven into the bed of the sea, about seventy yards apart, a spot being chosen where the water is about ten feet deep. Each player takes in his hands a large stone, jumps into the water by one post, and tries to carry it to the other post by running along the bottom. The chief difficulty is to pursue a straight course, as at such a distance the winning post is not visible through the water.

While Mr. Mariner was at the Tonga Islands, he took part in an amusement which derived its origin from a love legend. He accompanied Finow to a small island called Hoonga, and, on walking down to the sea-shore, he saw his companions bathing near a great rock, and was startled to find that they one after the other dived into the water and did not come up again. Just as the last was preparing to dive, he asked the meaning of this astonishing proceeding, and was told to follow, and he would be taken to a place where he had never been before, and where Finow and his Matabooles were then assembled.

He then dived into the water, and Mr. Mariner followed him, guided by the light reflected from his heels. Passing through an aperture in the base of the rock which has just been mentioned, he rose to the surface of the water and found himself in a cavern. At first he could see nothing, but he could distinguish the voices of Finow and his other friends; and after a while became so accustomed to the dim light that he could just manage to see that he was in a vast stalactitic cavern.

As the only light which entered it was reflected from the bottom of the water, and exceedingly dim, he dived out again, wrapped up his loaded pistol in a quantity of gnatoo, directed a servant to prepare a torch in the same manner, and dived back again. By means of the pistol he lighted the torch, and probably for the first time

since it w nated. I many hig galleries. tites hang they are was told this cave life.

Many v discovered diving aft the discov should fin in a plot a island, a position. tentions, a he was be and conde the whole that he ha the young whom he be betroth himself. When,

was to be s way to her fate which fered to sa sented, and side, where their way the girl of as the day He was no fection was being bett to avoid hi She ren months, di

She ren months, du brought he best food, a Tongan lu to spend a Vavaoo, leu peet him, take his wi live togeth Accordin

dinate chie to prepare accompanie This expertyrant shot started, one a Tongan do so, snyir way. They stall toward the shores wait while

t, kill an enemy, the girls. They yam, and waited at of their promle out, and hid as of the enemy. the early mornout to fetch salt spot where they truck him down the risk of their to the spot where y of these games the men settle it ng match, and the a-nut.

re very familiar e the well-known This sport will be to treat of the y have another hemselves. Two bed of the sea, rt, a spot being s about ten feet his hands a large by one post, and r post by running lef difficulty is to at such a distance sible through the

s at the Tonga an amusement om a love legend. to a small island king down to the panions bathing s startled to find er dived into the p again. Just as live, he asked the g proceeding, and would be taken to r been before, and booles were then

water, and Mr. ided by the light Passing through f the rock which e rose to the sur-himself in a cavnothing, but he es of Finow and r a while became ght that he could was in a vast sta-

entered it was reof the water, and ved out again, tol in a quantity ant to prepare a , and dived back pistol he lighted or the first time

since it was formed, the cavern was illumi-It was about forty feet wide and as many high, and ran off at one side into two galleries. Its roof was covered with stalactites hanging in the fantastic patterns which they are apt to assume. The story which was told him respecting the discovery of this cavern is quite a romance of savage

Many years ago a young chief of Vavaoo discovered the cavern by accident, while diving after turtles, but took care to keep the discovery to himself, as he thought he should find it useful in case he was detected in a plot against the principal chief of the island, a man of cruel and tyrannous disposition. Another chief had the same intentions, and was organizing a revolt, when he was betrayed by one of his own followers, and condemned to be drowned, together with the whole of his family. It so happened that he had a very beautiful daughter whom the young chief had long loved, but to whom he dared not speak, knowing her to be betrothed to a man of higher rank than

When, however, he found that her life was to be sacrificed, he contrived to make his way to her in the evening, told her of the fate which was in reserve for her, and offered to save her. The girl at once consented, and the two stole gently to the seaside, where a little canoe was drawn up. On their way to Hoonga the young chief told the girl of this place of retreat, and as soon as the day broke took her into the cavern. He was not long in finding out that the affection was mutual, but that the fact of her being betrothed to another had caused her to avoid him.

She remained in this cavern for two months, during which her young husband brought her the finest mats and gnatoo, the best food, and everything which constitutes Tongan luxury. He was, however, forced to spend a considerable part of his time at Vavaoo, lest the tyrannical chief should suspect him, and he was naturally anxious to take his wife to some place where they could live together in safety

Accordingly, he called together his subordinate chiefs and Matabooles, and told them to prepare for a voyage to the Fiji Islands, accompanied with their wives and families. This expedition was kept secret lest the tyrant should put a stop to it. Just as they started, one of the chiefs advised him to take a Tongan wife with him, but he declined to

do so, saying that he should find one by the way. They took his reply for a joke, and set sail toward Hoonga. When they neared the shores of the island, he told his men to wait while he was the shores of the stand of the shores of the stand.

wife, and, leaping into the sea from the side of the canoe which was farthest from the shore, he dived and disappeared.

After waiting for a while the people began to be seriously alarmed, thinking that he must have met with some accident, or that a shark had caught him. Suddenly, while they were debating as to the best course to be pursued, he appeared on the surface of the water, accompanied by a beautiful young female, whom he took into the canoe. At first his people were terribly frightened, thinking that she was a goddess; but, when they recognized her features, they took her for an apparition, believing that she had been drowned together with the rest of her family. The young chief arrived safely at the Fiji Islands, where he lived for two years; and at the expiration of that time, hearing that the tyrant of Vavaoo was dead, he returned to his native island, bringing with him his strangely rescued wife.

The facts of this story show that the cave must have some opening which admits the outer air, as otherwise no one could have lived in it so long. Even granting that the time of the girl's residence was exaggerated, Mr. Mariner found that the air was perfectly fresh and sweet after Fincw and his friends had remained in it for several hours, and a torch had been burned in it besides.

The island in which this extraordinary cavern is found is rather venerated by the Tongans as being the origin of their group of islands. Tongaloa, the god of arts and inventions, let down a fishing-line from the sky into the sea, when he suddenly felt his hook caught. He hauled up his line, thinking that from the resistance he had caught a very large fish. It turned out, however, that the hook had got itself fixed in the bed of the sea, and as the god continued to haul he drew up the Tonga islands. They would have been much larger, only the line broke, and the islands were left imperfect.

Mr. Mariner learned that the hook by which the Tonga islands had been drawn from the bed of the sea was kept in the custody of the Tooi-tonga, but had been burned, together with the house, about thirty years before. It was about six inches long, and from the description was one of the ordinary fishhooks of the country. Mariner asked why it did not break when hauling up so enormous a weight, and was told that it was a god's hook, and therefore could not break. Being asked how it happened that the line, which was also the property of a god, broke, his interlocutor declined to pursue the subject any further, saying that the shores of the island, he told his men to wait while he went into the sea to fetch a

CHAPTER CII.

SAMOA, OR THE NAVIGATORS' ISLANDS.

APPEARANCE - CHARACTER - DRESS - MANUFACTURES.

POSITION OF THE GROUP, AND DERIVATION OF THE NAME - GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE PROPLE THEIR CHARACTER FOR GENTLENESS, HOSPITALITY, HONESTY, AND COURTESY - CARRYING A MISSIONARY AND HIS FAMILY - AFFECTION FOR CHILDREN - DRESS OF THE SAMOANS - THE TATTOO A PARTIAL SUBSTITUTE FOR DRESS -- MODE OF TATTOOING -- TIME OCCUPIED IN COM-PLETING THE OPERATION - THE FINE MATS OF SAMOA - WIG MAKING - FEATHER HEADDRESSES - DRESS OF THE WOMEN - DANCING COSTUME - ADVICE TO FAA-SAMOA - MODE OF DRESSING THE HAIR -- TREATMENT OF WOMEN -- MODE OF MAKING CLOTH -- THE PROFESSIONAL AND HEREDITARY MANUFACTURER.

the eastward, lie the NAVIGATORS' ISLANDS, more properly called by their native name of SAMOA, or HAMOA. The former of these names was given to them by Bougainville, in consequence of the skilful seamanship of the natives. There are eight islands compreheuded in this group, the largest of which is

As is often the case among these island groups, no single king or head chief is recognized, each island having its own ruler; under whom are subordinate chiefs of different ranks. This mode of government is so similar to that of the Tongans that we need not

expend any time upon it.

The Samoans are a fine race of people, much exceeding the English in average stature, and peculiarly well made. Their skin is smooth, soft, and a warm reddish-brown in color, and the hair, though copious, possesses none of that woolliness which distinguishes the hair of the Papuan races, but is long, straight, and, in a few cases, possesses a slight wave. Naturally there is but little beard, and the Samoan takes a pride in extirpating every sign of a hair upon his chin. He is quiet, composed, and stately in manner, so that in all things he presents a bold contrast to the black, harsh-skinned Fijian, with his frizzed and woolly hair, his copious beard, and his quick, restless, suspicious manner.

Being savages, the Samoans have many of the imperfections which necessarily accompany savage life, but at the same time

North of the Tongan group, and a little to | of the poet than most races of men. They are hospitable, affectionate, honest, and courteous, and have well been described as a nation of gentlemen. Toward strangers they display a liberality which contrasts greatly with the cruel and bloodthirsty customs of the Papuan tribes. The Fijians, for example, do all in their power to repel strangers from their shores, either driving them off, or killing and eating them. The Samoans, on the contrary, welcome strangers, allot to them their best houses, give them the best food, and make them feel that they are honored guests.

They are singularly affectionate in their disposition, and as parents are rather too fond of their children. As a rule, a Samoan parent cannot bear to thwart a child, and allows it to do what it likes. In consequence of this absence of discipline, many a child dies through the mistaken kindness of its parents, who have allowed it to eat food that was unsuitable to it, or to engage in games for which it had not sufficient

strength.

The honesty of the Samoans is really wonderful. When a number of them were on board of an English vessel, they scrupu-lously refrained from stealing. Property which to them was equivalent to unbounded wealth lay within reach of their hands, but not even a nail or a needle was touched. In one instance, an European vessel went ashore on the rocks. The whole of its cargo was at the mercy of the Samoans, but not a they approach nearer to the "noble savage" man went on board of the vessel, and the

whole of rightful countrie ransacke the rock

Once: went on panied b everythi for noth to come did, brin mirrors, similar offered, rately, 1 thanks fo the who made a he thanl His brot been off basket, p he would happen t esting in

ple, who the novel of valuab and that was inde to eat o there ar sea, neith there.' 1 pany insi and in ab with then a large other ve chief pre the journs missionar table natu Courtes

as one of each other sidered as when one use a title his interlo ignorant c addresses,

The ear with the S perfect h graceful co upon then Barth vis ceived in t they went mention t chief addr

Once when a great chief, named Malietoa, went on board an English vessel, accompanied by a younger brother, he examined everything with great attention, but asked for nothing, only requesting the white men to come on shore and visit him. This they did, bringing with them a present of axes, mirrors, beads, knives, scissors, needles, and similar articles. When the present was offered, Malietoa took up each article separately, laid it on his head, and returned rately, and it on his head, and resulted thanks for it, and after he had gone through the whole of the present in detail, he made a complimentary speech, in which he thanked the donors for the entire gift. His brother, to whom a similar present had been offered, at first refused to take the happen to want.

At the close of this important and interesting interview, Malietoa informed his people, who had been gazing with wonder upon the novel proceedings, that a large quantity of valuable property had been given to him, and that the English chiefs, to whom he was indebted for it, would want something to eat on their return. 'For,' said he, 'there are no pigs running about upon the sea, neither is there any bread-fruit growing there.' Upon hearing this, the whole company instantly rose and scampered away; pany instantly rose and scampered away; and in about an hour they returned, bringing with them fifteen pigs of various sizes, with a large quantity of bread-fruit, yams, and other vegetables, the whole of which the chief presented to us." This extract, from the journal of Mr. Williams, the well-known the source of the hopeing sizes a road idea of the hopeing missionary, gives a good idea of the hospi-

table nature of the people.
Courtesy is, among the Samoans, reckoned as one of the duties of life. They address each other by titles of honor, and it is con-sidered as an essential point of etiquette that, when one man addresses another, he should use a title rather higher than that to which his interlocutor has any claim. Should he be ignorant of the rank of the person whom he addresses, he uses the term chief, as a safe

The earlier voyagers have all been struck with the Samoans, whose gentle demeanor, perfect honesty, scrupulous cleanliness, graceful costume, gigantic stature, and pol-ished manners, made a strong impression upon them. When Messrs. Williams and Barth visited these islands, they were re-

whole of the property was reserved for the rightful owners. There are many civilized countries where the vessel would have been ransacked within an hour of her striking on the rocks.

Once when a great chief round Melician hand under my body, another, thinned obtain so large a space, poking a finger against me; and thus, sprawling at full length upon their extended arms and hands, I was carried a distance of half a mile, and deposited safely in the presence of the chief and his principal wife."

Several children were on board, and were carried off by the natives in great glee. One or two of them were missing for several hours, causing their parents great anxiety. However, they were all brought back in safety, their absence being due merely to the exuberant hospitality of the Samoans. The natives were so delighted at their good fortune in having the charge of a white child that they could not make up their minds to restore it to its parents, but took it home, basket, priceless as were its contents, but basket, priceless as were its contents, but passed it on to his elder brother, saying that the child to the fullest extent, and then, have would take whatever his brother did not ing kept it as long as they dared, restored it the statement already made, that the Samoans are exceedingly fond of children.

Mr. Pritchard mentions that on one occasion, when he was witnessing a native dance, which is a performance requiring the greatest exertion, the chief's wife sat as a spectator, with two fine twin children in her lap. The chief, engaged as he was in the absorbing amusement of the dance, could not keep himself away from his children, but every now and then left the dance to caress them. The mothers nurse their children for several years, and a child of five or six years old may often be seen to pull away its younger brother or sister and take its place.

> THE dress of the Samoans varies considerably, according to the rank of the individual and the occasion on which it is assumed. The usual dress of the men is a sort of small apron, about a foot square, made of the green leaves of the Dracona tree, but on occasions of ceremony they generally wear a flowing robe called the lava-lava. This is made of bark cloth, and is beautifully fine and soft, the Samoans excelling in such manufactures, which will presently be described. This robe is gathered round the waist into folds, and reaches down to the ankles.

Small as may be the ordinary dress of the Samoan men, they always seem to be fully dressed, in consequence of the tattooing with which they are carefully decorated. Even to European eyes the tattooing conveys the same impression, and has been mistaken for a dress by some of the early ceived in the most hospitable manner. As they went on shore, the former happened to mention that he was tired, when a young chief addressed a few words to the people,

CE OF THE PROPLE ESY - CARRYING A E SAMOANS - THE OCCUPIED IN COM-HER HEADDRESSES ODE OF DRESSING ROFESSIONAL AND

te, honest, and een described as oward strangers which contrasts bloodthirsty cus-The Fijians, for power to repel s, either driving ting them. The welcome strangest houses, give

of men. They

ctionate in their are rather too a rule, a Samoan art a child, and In consequence ne, many a child kindness of its d not sufficient

ns is really wonf them were on el, they scrupunt to unbounded their hands, but le was touched. ean vessel went hole of its cargo noans, but not a vessel, and the

Zealanders tattoo no part of the body except the hips, and that even in that case a semblance of dress is produced. The Samoans tattoo the whole of the body from the hips to the knees, covering the skin so com-pletely with the pattern that it looks at a lit-tle distance exactly as if the man were wearing a tight pair of ornamental drawers.

Even European eyes become so accustomed to the tattoo that they are rather shocked at its absence; and, according to Mr. Pritchard, an untattooed Samoan does in truth look unmanly, looks even naked, by the side of one who is tattooed. So completely is this feeling realized by the natives that chiefs who have arrived at middle age frequently undergo the process of tattooing a second time, in order to renew the pat-terns, as they become dim and uncertain by lapse of years; for, though indelible, the tattoo does fade in the course of years, as I can testify from personal experience. When a very young boy, I read of the custom of tattooing, and must needs try it on my own arm. I did not do much of it, but the whole arm swelled up to the shoulder, and was useless for some time. At first the marks were bright blue, clear and well-defined, but now the blue is of dull indigo, and the outline very undecided.

The production of this elaborate decoration is a work of considerable time, the operation being, in the first place, too painful to be continued for any long time; and, in the second, it is apt to cause so much disturbance in the general system that the result would be fatal if the whole were exe-cuted at once. The operation is generally performed in company, a number of young men keeping company with the son of the chief. When, for example, a chief's son arrives at the proper age, i. c. about eighteen, all the lads of his tribe assemble to partake with him of the tattoo, which is to transform them from boys into men.

There is quite a ceremony, or rather a scries of ceremonies, for the occasion. The tattooer or Matai, is a man of great influence, and his services have to be requested in regular form, accompanied by a present of fine mats. His acceptance of the mats ratifies the bargain, though no regular charge is made. On the appointed day, the lads and their friends meet in a house set for such a badge of honor. apart for the ceremony, and more mats are presented to the Matai. Should the youth be wealthy, he sometimes gives a canoe. The friends of the lads are also bound to supply provisions as long as the operation

The tools are simple enough, being a set of five "combs" and a little mallet. The combs are made of human bone, and are an inch and a half in length, varying in width from the eighth of an inch to an inch,

The reader will remember that the New ealanders tattoo no part of the body except the hips, and that even in that case a seminate hips, and that even in that case a seminate hips, and that even in that case a seminate hips, and that even in that case a seminate hips, and that even in that case a seminate hips and that even in that case a seminate hips and that even in that case a seminate hips and that even in the transfer of the that the New with the edges cut into a number of teeth. is introduced into the wounds is made from the ashes of the cocoa-nut.

All being ready, the young chief lies on his face in front of the operator, and lays his head in the lap of his sister or some other female relation, while three or four young women hold his legs, and sing at the tops of their voices, in order to drown any groans or cries that he may utter. This is done out of consideration for his reputation, as it is thought unworthy of the state of manhood to utter a sound. Still the pain is so intense that the lads often do utter groans, and now and then actually yell with the pain. In one or two instances they have been so utterly overcome with the agony that, after they have been released they have not dared to submit themselves again to the operation, in which case they are despised for life as cowards.

Having traced out his pattern, the operator begins his work, driving the teeth of the comb through the skin by sharp and rapid taps of the mallet; there is an art even in holding this instrument, the handle of which passes under the thumb and over the fore-finger, and is used with wonderful rapidity and regularity. "The rapidity with which the Matai works his fingers," writes Mr. Pritchard, "the precision with which he moves the instrument and punctures exactly the right spot, and the regularity of tapping with the mallet, are astounding." By the side of the patient are placed several assistants, furnished with strips of white masi, whose duty it is to wipe away the blood as it flows from the punctures of the comb, and to leave the skin clear for the operator. Between every two or three strokes the toothed end of the comb is dipped into the pigment, which is mixed with water.

The pattern is in its main elements alike throughout all the Samoan Islands; but there are usually slight variations which denote the island in which the man lives, and others which mark the family to which he belongs. Sometimes, after a man has slain an enemy, he will make an addition which corresponds to a grant of arms among ourselves. The form of some animal is the ordinary pattern

About an hour is occupied in executing a patch of tattoo not quite three inches square, and when this is done, the lad rises and another takes his place. In a week or so, the turn of the first lad comes round again, and so the process is continued for three or four months, according to the number of the patients, not more than five being operated on in a single day. When the pattern is about half completed, the Matai has another present; but the great payment is only made and looking very much like little bone adzes when the last finishing touch is put to the

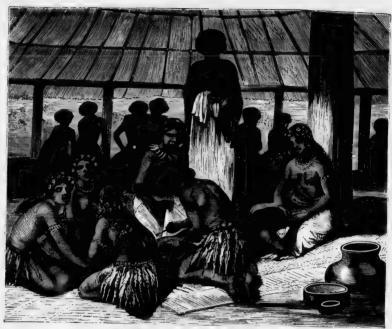
number of teeth, to handles about pigment which ads is made from

ang chief lies on cator, and lays his or or some other e or four young ing at the tops of rown any groans. This is done out putation, as it is tate of manhood pain is so intense groans, and now the the pain. In have been so utagony that, after by have not dared to the operation, spised for life as

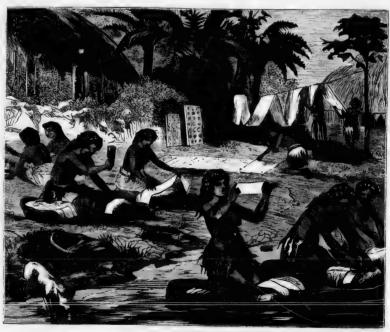
attern, the operaing the teeth of
in by sharp and
are is an art even
at, the handle of
unb and over the
with wonderful
The rapidity with
s fingers," writes
sion with which
and punctures exthe regularity of
are astounding."
re placed several
strips of white
outper away the
punctures of the
in clear for the
two or three
of the comb is
which is mixed

n elements alike slands; but there is which denote lives, and others hich he belongs. slain an enemy, nich corresponds ourselves. The ordinary pattern

d in executing a ee inches square, ee lad rises and a week or so, the round again, and for three or four number of the being operated the pattern is atai has another ent is only made ch is put to the



(1.) TATTOOING DAY IN SAMOA. (See page 1013.)



(2.) CLOTH MAKING. (See page 1015.)

(1012)

work.
with his
work, an
to be m
youths g
and mak

During the patie wounded displayin which ha hobble a tudes, far made of power to ever, com friends g little apre mentione freely dis among th for their glory of admiratio

An illu resents is centre is his sister panions, his groam are two cloths, an busily at The little Ranged r young m Painful at it is, invo erator, bu all the liggreatest never be show a co. Both me.

Both m the native these made autiful narrow state being about These are regularity very fine a material.

red feathe in their vasuccessive attached in been adort very importo that of had evide English copaper such These treatments.

work. Should the Matai feel dissatisfied to which they give a most ludicrous apwith his fees, he will not go on with the pearance.

work, and, as an unfinished tattoo is thought Samoan chiefs, when full dressed for war to be most disgraceful, the friends of the youths get together what property they can,

and make up the deficiency.

During the time engaged in the operation, the patients look most miserable beings, the wounded parts swollen and inflamed, and displaying as yet none of the elegant pattern which has been traced on them. The lads hobble about in all sorts of contorted attitudes, fanning away the flies with flappers made of white masi, and doing all in their power to alleviate the pain. At last, how-ever, comes the reward of all their sufferings. As soon as the wounds are healed, their friends get up a grand dance. As the costume of the male dancers is nothing but the little apron of leaves which has been already mentioned, the pattern of the tattooing is freely displayed; and the lads, now admitted among the men, think themselves well repaid for their former sufferings by the honor and glory of being ranked as men, and by the admiration of the opposite sex.

Imiration of the opposite sea.

An illustration on the preceding page represents the process of tattooing. In the centre is lying the patient with his head in his sister's lap, and his legs held by her companions, who are singing, in order to cover his groans, should he utter any. Near him are two assistants with their white masi cloths, and at his side kneels the operator, busily at work with his mallet and comb. The little vessel of pigment is by his side. Ranged round the wall of the house are the young men who are waiting their turn. Painful as is the operation, and expensive as it is, involving not only the fees to the operator, but a constant supply of provisions, all the lads look forward to it with the greatest anxiety, knowing that they will never be considered as men unless they can

show a complete tattoo.

Both men and women wear mats, called in the native language "je-tonga." One of these mats is in my collection, and is a beautiful piece of work. It is made of very narrow strips of leaf scraped thin, each strip being about the fifteenth of an inch in width. These are plaited together with beautiful regularity, and the whole is edged with a very fine and almost silken fringe of the same material.

Some of these mats are decorated with the red feathers of the parrot tribe, and increase in their value by age, being handed down to successive generations, and having legends attached to them. My own specimen has been adorned in a way which doubtless was very imposing to a Samoan eye, though not to that of an European. The native maker had evidently treasured up some scraps of English calico, and some blue and yellow paper such as is used for wrapping parcels. These treasures she has fastened to the mat,

Samoan chiefs, when full dressed for war or state, may be known at a great distance by the splendid headdress which they wear. In the first place, they increase the apparent size of their heads by enormous wigs made of their own hair, which is suffered to grow long for this express purpose. When it has attained sufficient length, it is cut off, and is stained red, and frizzed out, until it assumes as large dimensions as the woolly head of a Papuan. They also wear great plumes of feathers, sometimes towering to the height of nearly two feet above their heads; so that the height of a Samoan chief, measured from

the top of his plume, is not far from nine feet. One of these headdresses in my collection is made of a vast number of feathers, tied by the stems in little bundles, and carefully arranged so that they shall droop evenly. There are about ten feathers in each bundle. These tufts are arranged closely together in circles composed of leaf stems and cocoa-nut fibre, and there are four of these circlets placed one over the other, so that several hundred feather tufts are employed for this single dress. The maker has ingeniously, though ignorantly, copied the peacock, the egret, and other birds which are furnished with trains. In them, the tail feathers are short and stiff, so as to allow the long train of feathers to droop gracefully over them. In a similar manner, the Samoan artificer has employed the shortest and stiffest feathers in the lower-most circlet, while in the upper-most are placed the longest and most slender plumes. The headdress is really very handsome, and even when worn by an European gives a most martial aspect to the countenance, especially when the war mat is worn, and the huge Samoan club carried on the shoulder.

The dress of the women is made of the same material as that of the men, but differently arranged. Their work costume is a petticoat of Dracana leaves, but instead of being, like that of the men, a mere short apron, it is much longer, and completely surrounds the body. On occasions of state or ceremony, however, they wear lava-lavas of siapo like those of the men, only put on rather differently, and of much larger size. A woman of rank will often have this garment so long that it trails on the ground far behind her.

Captain Hood, in describing an entertainment given in honor of the white visitors, writes as follows. After the men had danced "a number of girls entered, who went through a somewhat similiar set of evolutions, with infinite exactness and grace. It may seem incredible to our fair sisters in England, that a young lady arranged in no other garment but a mat tied round her waist should look handsomely dressed; but could they see these Samoan belies enter the circle in their full evening costume, with their coronets of nautilus shell cut square at the bottom, much like the anand scarlet hibiscus, and their necklaces of admit that their appearance is highly im-

"Some wore beautifully plaited fine mats, which are so highly prized that they cost more than a rich silk or satin dress. Others had white shaggy dresses, made from the inner fibres of the hibiscus, the amplitude of which would satisfy the most extensive patronesses of crinoline, and indulged in trains equalling in length that worn by those dames of England in former days, while their car-riage and air plainly showed that, whatever we might think, they felt themselves superior beings." To judge from the photographed portraits of these Samoan beauties, Captain Hood is perfectly right; they not only look well dressed, but, if anything, over dressed.

That this opinion was not a rare one is evident from Mr. Williams's account of Samoa, which he visited more than thirty years before Captain Hood. The missionaries' wives had endeavored to persuade the Samoan women to wrap their abundant mantles over the whole of the body, but without success. On the contrary, the Samoan belles in their turn tried to convince the white visitors that it would be much better for them to faa Samoa, i. e. to do in Samoa as the Samoans do. Garments that covered the whole of the body might do well enough in the white woman's country, but when they came to Samoa they ought to dress themselves like the Samoans, tie a shaggy mat round the waist, coquettishly looped up on one side, and anoint them-selves with scented oil and color themselves with turmeric; wear a flower on the head instead of a bonnet, and a necklace of flowers by way of a bodice. Thus accoutred, they might faa-riaria, i. e. strut about in the consciousness of being well dressed, and certain of admiration. There is much to be said on both sides of the question.

The women wear their hair differently from the men, generally cutting it rather short, and combing it back. It is then powdered with fine lime made of burning coal, which has the effect of staining it of a red-dish purple hue, which is thought to be the most fashionable color. After this is done, a Samoan belle merely twists a wreath of scarlet hibiscus flowers among the hair. In both sexes great pains are taken about the hair, and in order to promote its growth in after years the head is kept shaved in childhood, the boys having a single lock of hair on one side, and the girls one on either side

There is a slight distinction of dressing the hair in the different islands of the Samoan group. In some of them the women separate the hair into multitudinous

cient Assyrian fashion. As if to carry out red and yellow flowers, I believe they would the resemblance still further, the men preserve their beards, and dress them almost exactly like those of the figures on the Nineveh marbles.

In bodily form the women are by no means equal to the men, the latter being truly magnificent specimens of humanity, while the former are rather short, and stoutly made, with features that are pleasing in expression, but have otherwise little beauty. They are as well treated as in Tonga, and are not expected to do hard work. In fact, the men seem to take a pride in assisting the weaker sex. Pritchard writes on this subject as follows: - "We saw several women sitting quietly in their canoe, whilst their cavaliers swam alongside, towing them through the surf. not because they are at all less at home in the water than their husbands and brothers. as we saw this afternoon, when a large number of girls were alongside, who were as often swimming about, laughing and talking, for about half-an-hour at a time in the water, or sitting in their boats, which they

are constantly upsetting. When the husband of a Samoan wife dies. his widow is not sacrificed at his funeral, but is usually taken by his brother, after the ancient Jewish custom. It is remarkable, by the way, that many of the Mosaic laws still exist in full force among the Samoans. In time of war no male captives are taken, all being killed. Their female relatives, whether wives or sisters, are considered as the property of the victors, and mostly become their wives. Thus it often happens that women are related to both sides, and, as they are by courtesy allowed to visit their relatives, all the designs of one side are speedily told to the other. So, whenever the principal chief prepares any plan of action, some of the women who have relations on the opposite side, immediately go off and tell them about the proposed movements. Still, the Samoans seem to make it a matter of honor not to take advantage of this knowledge, and to allow the enemy to execute his movements with-

The women seem quite at their ease in warfare, and mostly accompany their husbands to the wars, in order to supply them with necessaries, and to nurse them if they should be wounded. Mr. Pritchard says that he has seen them in the heat of action, carrying water to the wounded, and seeming to care less for the thickly flying bullets than the warriors themselves.

out interruption.

BEFORE passing to another subject, we ill complete our notices of dress. The will complete our notices of dress. reader may remember that on page 977 was given a full account of the various processes

by which berry is n employ t but are e ture of th throughou can be re

The wo and are w their wor cloth they not more old, and o ter. The steeping water, so to be rer inner bar which gar instance o from the this substa width and gold leaf, i extent.

As the twelve inc united by between th The united beaten, an become in of the jun When a

printing a The dves brown, and obtained f ever usefi make and dyes, that in these is strictly lim the case printing is ciple that i this countr tening the on a board and dry th and the d brush, so tl of the clotl pattern be description a quantity occa-nut fibre, and much like the an-As if to carry out her, the men preiress them almost cures on the Nine-

omen are by no the latter being ens of humanity. ather short, and es that are please otherwise little ell treated as in ected to do hard seem to take a reaker sex. ubject as follows: en sitting quietly ir cavaliers swam hrough the surf. ll less at home in nds and brothers. n, when a large side, who were as ughing and talkrat a time in the boats, which they

Samoan wife dies, ed at his funeral, his funeral, his brother, after in It is remarkany of the Mosaic among the Sammale captives are considered to the victors, and s. Thus it often related to both courtesy allowed the other. So,

the other. so, hief prepares any the women who site side, immedin about the prohe Samoans seem onor not to take lge, and to allow movements with-

at their ease in mpany their husper to supply them urse them if they Pritchard says the heat of action, unded, and seemkly flying bullets res.

ther subject, we of dress. The on page 977 was various processes by which the inner bark of the paper mulberry is made into garmen. The Samoans employ the same method as the Tongans, but are even more careful in the manufacture of the cloth, which is in great request throughout many parts of Polynesia, and can be recognized at once by a skilful eye.

The women are the sole manufacturers, and are wonderfully skilfr'l and patient over their work. In the first place, for the finest cloth they always employ very young trees, not more than fourteen to lifteen months old, and only two or three inches in diameter. They begin their work by cutting down the trees, peeling off the bark, and steeping it for eight and forty hours in water, so as to enable the rough outer bark to be removed from the thin and delicate inner bark. The well-known "bass," with which gardeners tie up flowers, is a familiar instance of "liber," or inner bark, procured from the lime tree. By constant beating, this substance becomes greatly increased in width and reduced in thlekness, and, like gold leaf, it can be beaten out to almost any extent.

As the strips of bark are only ten or twelve inches wide, a number of them are united by overlapping the edges and putting between them arrow-root dissolved in water. The united pieces, while still wet, are again beaten, and after a while the two pieces become incorporated into one, and all signs of the junction disappear.

When a piece of sufficient size is made, printing and staining are the next processes. The dyes are generally of three kinds, red, brown, and yellow. The two first tints are obtained from clays, and the third from the ever useful turmeric. The women who make and print the cloth do not prepare the dyes, that being a separate occupation, and in these islands the different professions are strictly limited to certain families, just as is the case with the castes in India. The printing is done on exactly the same principle that is employed in rubbing brasses in this country. The pattern is made by fastening the flexible ribs of the cocoa-nut leaf on a board. When the ribs are quite hard and dry the cloth is stretched over them, and the dye rubbed over it with a stiff brush, so that it only adheres to those parts of the cloth which press against the raised pattern below. For patterns of a larger description a softer bark is used, which holds a quantity of color.

There are in my collection several specimens of Samoan bark cloth; one is very fine, pure white, six feet long, by two wide, and crnamented with a fine fringe all round it. Another is thicker and stronger, being made of four layers of bark, one placed upon the other. In some places the junction has not been completed, and the different layers are quite distinct. It measures rather more than seven feet in length and three feet ten inches in width. It has a deep-colored border about eighteen inches in width, composed of a diamond pattern impressed upon a number of perpendicular parallel lines and dots. This border is a light red in color, and upon it are several circles of dark brown. Circles of a similar kind are scattered over the uncolored portion of the robe, which is of a creamy yellow hue.

The third specimen is still thicker, and larger. It is seven feet square, and has been completely covered on the outside with the clay pigment, which has been put on so thickly as to make the fabric comparatively stiff. Two broad bands of deep black are drawn across it so as to divide it into three equal portions, and in each division are four patterns also drawn in black, very much resembling the "broad arrow" used in the government mark of England.

In the second illustration on page 1012 are shown the successive processes of converting the bark into cloth. In the foreground and at the right hand are seen some women kneeling in the stream, engaged in scraping the liber to free it from every particle of the outer bark. One woman is examining a piece against the light, to see whether it is quite clean. Behind them, and toward the left centre of the illustration are more women, some of them beating and scraping the bark with the square mallets which have been already described when treating of Tonga, and another is busily employed in joining two pieces with arrow-root. Just above them is another woman engaged in the more skilful part of the manufacture, i. e. printing by rubbing dye over the cloth when laid on the pattern board, and one or two of the boards themselves are given, in order to show the cocoa-nut leaf pattern upon them. In the distance, the other women are seen hanging the still wet cloth up to dry.

CHAPTER CIII.

SAMOA, OR THE NAVIGATORS' ISLANDS - Continued.

LAUBLES OF WAR IN SAMOA -- THE MALO, AND STRUGGLES FOR ITS POSSESSION -- THE CHIEF'S VEN-GRANCE-FIRE-ARMS PREVENTIVE OF WAR-SAMOAN WEAPONS-THE CLUBS-PATTERNS OF CLUBS THROUGHOUT POLYNESIA - STRANGE MODE OF USING THE SPEAR THE SHARK-TOOTH GAUNTLETS - SUITS OF ARMOR - GETTING TOGETHER AN ARMY, AND MODE OF FIGHTING -- UN-PLEASANT POSITION OF NEUTRALS - THE SEA-FIGHT - DISTINGUISHING PENNANTS - THE DEFIANCE BEFORE BATTLE - TROPHIES OF WAR, AND ELATION OF THE VICTOR - DISPOSAL OF THE BODIES - THE HEAD PILE - SINGLE COMBAT BETWEEN CHIEFS - SAMOAN LAW - PUNISHMENT FOR MUR-DER AND LESSER OFFENCES - CANNIBALISM - NATIVE LAWYERS - THE PLAINTIFF DEFEATED WITH HIS OWN WEAPONS.

when captured in war become the absolute property of those who take them; we will therefore devote a short space to warfare among the Samoans, omitting those characteristics in which it resembles war among the other Polynesian tribes, which have already been described.

The causes of war may mostly be reduced to four; namely, the desire of political supremacy, disputed succession to chieftainship, revenge for the murder of a chief, and infringement of the strange marriage laws

of the Samoans.

The first of these causes is always rank-ling. Each island is divided into several districts, and when one begins to show signs of special prosperity, another is sure to take umbrage at it and go to war in order to secure the "Malo," or political supremacy. One example of such a war occurred only a few years ago in the island of Apolo.

Manono, one of the three districts into which it is divided, held the supremacy, and the chiefs felt indignant because another district, Aana, was prospering under the teaching of the missionaries. The chiefs of Manono therefore began to oppress Aana by making continual demands of property and food. Still, in spite of their exactions, the district would persist in flourishing; it made and sold more cocoa-nut oil, and sold it for more hatchets, calico, and other Euro-pean treasures, than the other districts. pean treasures, than the other districts. erty. Such cast-off wives mostly attach The Manono chiefs were naturally indig-

IT was mentioned on page 1014, that women | nant that when they went to a subject district they found it better cultivated and richer than their own, and construed the inferiority which they could not but feel into an intentional insult on the part of Anna. So they proclaimed the people of Anna to be rebels, and made war against them.

Such a cause of war, absurd as it may be, and subversive of all real progress, is intelligible, and to be explained by the petty jealousies of human nature, which is too prone to feel itself personally hurt at the prosperity of another. Vengeance for a murdered chief is intelligible, and so is a war for succession; but the last cause needs

some explanation.

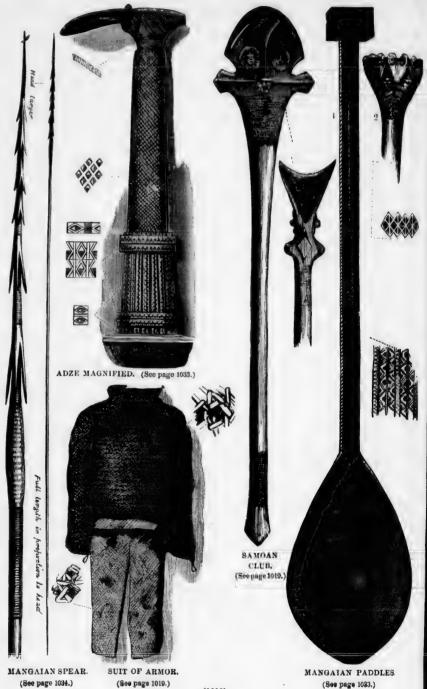
By the laws of Samoa, a woman once a wife is always a wife, even though she may be put away by her husband. The Samoan chiefs claim the right of marrying as many wives as they choose, and putting them away as often as they like. Indeed, a man often marries a girl merely for the sake of her dower of mats and other property. But even after he has put away a wife, he still considers her as his own chattel; and if any other chief takes her to his house, war is at once declared against him. It is a curious fact that the original husband cares nothing about the morality of the wife whom he has put away, but only for the in-sult offered to himself by taking his propinued.

THE CHIEF'S VEN-LUBS — PATTERNS OF THE SHARK-TOOTH E OF FIGHTING - UN-NITS — THE DEFIANCE OSAL OF THE BODIES NISHMENT FOR MUS-LAINTIFF DEFEATED

at to a subject disber cultivated and and construed the ould not but feel to on the part of and the people of made war against

osurd as it may be, I progress, is intelined by the petty ure, which is too omally hurt at the Vengeance for a gible, and so is a he last cause needs

, a woman once a charthough she may and. The Samoan marrying as many and putting them (s. Indeed, a man ely for the sake of the property. But way a wife, he still chattel; and if any his house, war is him. It is a curical husband cares ality of the wife out only for the interest that the property attachments of the control of the wife that the control of the wife that the control of the wife that the control of the control



(1018)

house, leado so w marry an follows th

Hefore principal and the cl objection fop, have take the petre" h say they, men. Th of the bu know chidresses m afford exc by chance have even their cha battle wo

The clu

for the expolish an carver lov them are a just like t alry. Oth ple which tled "Clul specimen the same of feather he scribed. I heavy, so man can u it has been head crack have there new.

As a rule definitely r commerce caused an as of peace distinct rac Tongan an which are equally used moa, the pa venient on island to th

The spea and are are tipped with In former d an enemy w from the grunable to d by several their spears air, and bore ing whether

(See page 1023.)

house, leading most immoral lives, and may do so without incurring any resentment from their former husband. But let them marry another, and vengeance immediately follows the insult.

Before the introduction of fire-arms, the principal weapons of Samoa were the spear and the club. The older chiefs have a rooted objection to the musket, and, like Hotspur's fop, have not been particularly willing to take the field since that "villanous saltpur's has come into vogue. Muskets, say they, are weapons for boys; clubs for men. They have some reason to complain of the bullets, which, as they say, do not know chiefs, because their towering head-dresses make them so conspicuous that they afford excellent marks to the enemy; and if by chance one of their opponents should have even a moderate notion of taking aim, their chance of coming safely out of the battle would be a very small one.

The clubs used in Samoa are remarkable

for the excellence of their make, and the polish and finish with which the native carver loves to ornament them. Some of them are short, used for one hand, and made just like the steel maces of European chivalry. Others are almost exactly like the club No. 1, figured on page 949. The example which is given in the illustration enti-tled "Club," on page 1018, is drawn from a specimen in my collection, and belonged to the same chief who owned the war mat and feather headdress which have been described. It is five feet in length, and very heavy, so that none but a very powerful man can use it. As it has seen much work, it has been battered about, the wood of the head cracked, and the carving defaced. I have therefore had it drawn as it was when

As a rule the clubs of Tonga, Samoa, Fiji, and other Polynesian groups can hardly be definitely referred to any one of them. The commerce which passes between them has caused an interchange of weapons as well as of peaceful commodities, so that the two distinct races which inhabit Fiji and the Tongan and Samoan group use weapons which are almost identical. Thus the serrated club which has just been mentioned is equally used in New Guinea, Fiji, and Samoa, the pattern having been found a convenient one, and so transmitted from one island to the other.

The spears, again, have a great similitude, and are armed with barbs, the best being tipped with the tail-bone of the sting-ray. In former days, when a warrior had pierced an enemy with his spear, he tried to lift him from the ground upon it; and if he were unable to do so, he was generally assisted by several of his comrades, who all thrust their spears into his body, lifted him in the air, and bore him aloft in triumph, not caring whether he were alive or dead.

One weapon, however, seems to be peculiar to Samoa, and has been mentioned by Mariner. It consists of a pair of gauntlets made of cocoa-nut fibre, on the inside of which are fixed several rows of sharks' teeth, set edgewise. In fact, this weapon is made exactly on the principle of the terrible "tiger-claw" of India, and is intended for the purpose of ripping up an adversary, the abdomen being the part that is always attacked, both by the Samoan and the Hindoo.

One chief, who was of gigantic dimensions, even for a Samoan, always fought with these terrible gauntlets. He used them, however, in a different manner, and disdained to tear open the body of his antagonist. As all the points of the teeth are directed backward, it is impossible for any one who is grasped by these gauntlets to tear himself away. The gigantic chief was accustomed to rush at one of the enemy, seize him with his gauntleted hand, fling him on his face, place one foot on the small of his back, grasp him by the head and bend him forcibly upward so as to break his spine. This was his mode of dealing with able-bodied men. If, however, he seized a small man, he merely threw the victim across his knee, broke his back, and flung his dying foe on the ground. The illustra-tion on page 1025 is taken from a beautiful specimen in the collection of the United Service Museum.

In order to guard themselves against these weapons, the Samoan warriors gird themselves with a very broad and thick belt, made of cocoa-nut fibre, wide enough to reach from the arm to the hip. It is not quite long enough to encircle the body, but is worn mostly on the left side, that being the side most exposed to the enemy.

One of these belts, in my collection, is two feet nine inches in length, so that when fastened round the waist it leaves a considerable portion of the right side exposed. It is made by taking a number of plaited cords, and passing them over two sticks, so that all the cords are parallel to each other. They are then bound firmly together by strings of twisted fibre, which pass under and over each alternately, and make a very strong armor, through which the dreaded sharks' teeth cannot make their way.

Sometimes the Samoan warrior seems to have been mistrustful of the efficacy of the belt, and to have feared the efficats of the shark's teeth on his naked arms and legs. There is in the collection of the United Service Museum a complete suit of armor, most ingeniously made out of fibre, and so formed as to cover the greater part of the body and limbs. It is in two portions, the upper being put on as a coat, and the lower as trousers. By the sides of the armor, on 1018, are two small sketches, showing on an enlarged scale the patterns of the plaiting.

N PADDLES.

There is no definite army among the Samoans, each man being considered as a soldier, and having his weapons always at hand. He is liable at any time to be called out by his chief, and, as a rule, he troubles himself very little about the cause of the war, only concerning himself to fight in the train of his chief. The Samoans are a brave race, and, if properly led and taught the veriest rudiments of discipline, would make good soldiers. As it is, however, no Samoan warrior fights with the knowledge that his movements are directed in accordance with a definite plan, or that he will be supported by others. He does not feel himself a simple unit among many, but has to look out for himself, to select his own adversary, to advance when he thinks he can do so with advantage, to run away when he feels himself getting into undue peril.

Whenever a few Samoans have put themselves under the guidance of a white man, they have always repelled their foes. In one such case, twenty men drove off a body of five hundred enemies, flushed with success and bloodshed. Both parties were armed with muskets, but the regular though insignificant volleys of the twenty men so completely disorganized the five hundred undisciplined foes, that the latter dared not attack the little stone wall, five feet high and twenty-five yards long, behind which

the defenders were lying.

Had the latter been left to their own devices, they would have fired all their pieces at once, and been left with unloaded muskets at the mercy of their foes. But being taught always to keep half their muskets loaded, they had always a volley ready for their enemics, who were utterly discomfited at their reception, and at last were only too glad to escape as they best could, with the loss of many men.

The position of a neutral is not at all a pleasant one in Samoa, as, in case either side should appear to be likely to win the day, those of the losing side who happen to be friendly with the unfortunate neutral make a point of stripping him of all his property, to prevent it from falling into the hands of the enemy. Those Europeans who know the native customs always erect barricades whenever war parties come near them, knowing that they stand in equal danger from friends or foes.

When a chief decides on going to war, he calls out all the warriors in his district. Though there is no real discipline of the soldiers, there is at all events some semblance of order in their arrangement. Each town has its definite place, and the inhabitants would resent any attempt on the part of another town to take the place which they consider as their own. The most honorable post is in front, and, though it is a post of danger, it is so honorable that if a man belonging to any town privileged to

There is no definite army among the amoans, each man being considered as a bidier, and having his weapons always at and. He is liable at any time to be called to by his chief, and, as a rule, he troubles imself very little about the cause of the ain of his chief. The Samoans are a brave and, if properly led and taught the cause of disc, and, if properly led and taught the samoan chiefs.

Though the vanguard is the post of danger as well as of honor, it is greatly coveted, for it is also the post of profit both in peace and war. The inhabitants of the privileged towns claim the largest share at the feasts, and generally rule the district in which they live. As all the Samoans dress much alike and speak the same language, they are obliged to wear a sort of uniform, by which they shall know friends from foes. In the case of warriors, the hair is dressed in some strange way, or a white shell is hung round the neck, or a strip of cloth tied round the arm, these symbols being changed every three or four days, in order to prevent the enemy from imitating them.

When canoes unite under one leader, they hang out symbols of a similar character, such as bunches of leaves, strips of matting, or even a sort of flag made of native matting, and having painted on it the rude figure of some animal, such as a pig, a dog, or a bird. True to the independent nature of Samoan warriors, the two men who respec-tively command the land and the sea forces never think of consulting together, and acting in concert together, but each does what he thinks best on the spur of the moment. In the case already mentioned. where twenty Aana men repulsed five hundred of the Savaiis, the latter might have been cut off to a man. While they were kept in check by the twenty disciplined warriors, a fleet of Aana canoes appeared off the shore; and, if the commander had only landed his men, a most thorough example would have been made of the invaders. But he had nothing to do with the land force. and so allowed the enemy to escape without even attempting to stop them.

The student of anthropology always finds that human nature is much the same in different parts of the earth, and that manners and customs wonderfully resemble each other in principle, though they may be modified in detail by the accident of time and place. It has already been mentioned that many of the Samoan laws are identical with those given by Moses, though there is no possibility that any geographical connection could ever have taken place between Polynesia and Sinai.

of another town to take the place which they consider as their own. The most homorable post is in front, and, though it is a post of danger, it is so honorable that if a man belonging to any town privileged to When two opposing bodies meet, the leaders

challenge at terms, eac depreciatit threatening to dishonor we find the challenge of the ch

Thus, in Ulysses flin almost exac

"Ah, wretch Thy dying of But hungry And hover prey."

Thus, the in words bei ening to bal drinking-cu war parties pause and d they proceed the Manon struggle whi exchanged . wonderfully Homeric was tical, though ferent. The shows these defiance with "You bar your throats

"Ye cocoa tongues was "Where is his death?" "Roast tha by my spear; These war

tunities of stu
of the Samoa
honor with th
dians, to go i
and decorated
be procured,
general accou
gazed in war
amples that or
The procee

battle are wel "After a fight, are paraded i chiefs and peo dividually than and daring pul citement of the as he passes be ing trophy, ca evolutions, wi d in the rear, he the enemy. sertion does take deserters and the tolerably well the ists. The idea of plan, keeping it nly acting on it, ered the mind of

the post of dan. is greatly coveted. rofft both in peace s of the privileged are at the feasts, trict in which they dress much alike nguage, they are uniform, by which rom foes. In the is dressed in some nell is hung round oth tied round the g changed every ler to prevent the

m. er one leader, they similar character, strips of matting, le of native maton it the rude figas a pig, a dog, or endent nature of men who respecand the sea forces ng together, and er, but each does the spur of the ready mentioned,

repulsed five hunlafter might have While they were wenty disciplined anoes appeared off mander had only horough example the invaders. But h the land force, to escape without iem.

ology always finds h the same in difand that manners y resemble each they may be modident of time and en mentioned that are identical with gh there is no pos-phical connection ce between Poly-

t the present day ures tell us it used ia, and as Homer ne plains of Troy. s meet, the leaders

challenge and abuse each other in good set terms, each boasting of his own prowess, catching it behind his back or between his terms, each boasting of his own prowess, depreciating that of the adversary, and depreciating after he has killed his enemy to dishonor his corpse in some way. Thus, we find that when David had accepted the challenge of Goliath, before they proceeded to action they reviled each other, Goliath threatening to give David's flesh unto the "fowls of the air and the beasts of the field," and David retorting in almost the same words, but adding that he would do the same by the bodies of the whole army.

Thus, in the old Homeric story, where Ulysses flings his spear at Socus, he uses almost exactly the same formula of words:-

"Ah, wretch! no father shall thy corpse compose, Thy dying eye no tender mother close; But hungry birds shall tear those balls away, And hovering vultures scream around their

Thus, the Fijian warrior defies his enemy in words before he proceeds to blows, threatening to bake and eat his body and make a drinking-cup of his scull. Thus, the Samoan war parties always think it necessary to pause and defy each other in words before they proceed to blows. For example, when the Manono and Aana men fought in the struggle which has just been described, they exchanged threats and injurious epithets wonderfully like the "winged words" of the Homeric warriors, the sentiment being identical, though the imagery is necessarily different. The illustration No. 1, on page 1027, shows these Samoan warriors exchanging defiance with their foes.

"You banana-eating Manono men, be your throats consumed by Moso."

"Ye cocoa-nut eating Aâna men, be your tongues wasted."

"Where is that Savii pig that comes to his death?" "Roast that Atua king who is about to die

by my spear;" and so on ad infinitum. These war parties afford excellent opportunities of studying the dress and ornaments of the Samoans. It is thought a point of honor with them, as with the American Indians, to go into action in the fullest dress and decorated with every ornament that can be procured, so that the headdress and general accoutrements of a chief when en-

gazed in war are sure to be the best examples that can be seen.

The proceedings that take place after a battle are well described by Mr. Pritchard. After a fight, the heads of the slain warriors are paraded in presence of the assembled chiefs and people, when the heroes are in-dividually thanked, and their general prowess and daring publicly acknowledged. The ex-citement of the successful warrior is intense,

legs; sometimes himself carrying his dead enemy's head, sometimes dancing round a comrade who carries it for him, all the while shouting in his loudest voice, 'Ou te mau tangata! ('I have my man, I have my man!')"

To a young Samoan this is the realization of his highest ambition, to be thus publicly thanked by the chief for slaying an enemy in mortal combat, as he careers before his comrades with the reeking head of his foe in one

hand, and his club in the other.

"Then, again, when the war is over, and he returns to his village, to hear his com-panions rehearse the exploit, and the girls pronounce him 'toa' i. e. brave; then it is you see in their very perfection the complacent dignity and latent pride that lurk within that brown-skinned islander. As he assumes an air of unconscious disregard of the praises his deeds evoke, you see the sublime and the ludicrous neatly blending, when he turns to the girls, and mildly exclaims, 'Funa mai si rului!' ('Woman, hand me a cigar.') This modest little order is at once pretty and pert, dignified and careless, when it falls from the lips of a hero or a beau. And proud is the girl who hands it to him; she has but one ambition then, to become his wife, even with the certainty of being cast off in less than a month for another.

"After the heads have been paraded before the chiefs, they are piled up in the malae, or open space in the centre of the town, the head of the greatest chief slain being placed uppermost. If among the visitors there are any relatives of the slain, they claim the heads and bury them, or send them back to the comrades of the deceased. The unclaimed heads are buried together in the malae. Any bodies that may be recognized are also buried by their friends, while those who have no relations among the visitors are left to rot and make food for the dogs.

"The relations are careful to bury the bodies they identify, lest their spirits should haunt them or wander about the field of battle, disconsolate and mournful, lamenting the fate which left their bodies to rot or to be eaten by the dogs. I have often heard the natives say, 'Hear that spirit moaning, I am cold! I am cold!' when a stormy night has thrown its darkness and poured its torrents of rain and gusts of wind over the battle-field. It was vain to tell them that the noise they heard was merely the creaking boughs or the pelting rain; to them it was nothing else than the spirit of the unburied dead enemy."

The feelings of vanity are so acute in a Samoan warrior that he will do almost anyas he passes before the chiefs with his bleed- thing to procure applause at these meetings ing tronhy, capering in the most fantastic after a battle. One man who had failed to evolutions, with blackened face and oiled kill an enemy was greatly annoyed with

which he had hoped to gain, and hit upon another mode of obtaining a sort of celebrity. He cut off the great toes of a dead enemy whose head had already been taken, and with these toes in his mouth paraded before the chiefs as if he had taken a head. Finding that this novel act excited admiration, he became so excited that he ate the toes, even without cooking them, in the presence of clan.

all the people.

Such an act as this might induce the reader to suppose that the Samoans, like many Polynesians, are cannibals. In the ordinary sense of the word, they are not so. After a battle they will sometimes cook and eat a human body, but this is done as an act of disgrace, and not as a gratification of the appetite. In one instance, a young woman whose father had been killed in battle obtained a scalp that had belonged to the enemy. She first burned it to ashes, then beat it to powder, and scattered the dust on the fire over which she cooked her pro-

After a decisive battle, the chiefs of the beaten side come humbly before their victorious antagonists, carrying firewood, stones and pieces of bamboo. They lay their burdens before the principal chief, and prostrate themselves on the ground, lying there in silence. Should, as is generally the case, the victors be willing to accept the submission, the prostrate chiefs are told to rise and return home; but if they should not be satisfied, the men are clubbed where they lie, while the people whom they represent suffer all the horrors of savage warfare.

The firewood, stones, and bamboo are considered as emblems of the utterly abject state to which the bearers have been reduced. The stones, being the material with which the native ovens are made, signify that those who deposit them at the feet of the victors give themselves up to be baked and eaten by the conquerors. The firewood represents the material with which the ovens are heated, and the bamboo serves as a double symbol. In the first place, the knives with which the Samoans cut up their food were always made of bamboo before the use of iron was introduced by Europeans; and in the second place, the instruments by which torture was inflicted on prisoners by cruel captors were made of the same material.

When the conquered party are pardoned, they enter the house of the chief, kiss his feet, and present him with fine mats, bark cloth, food, and similar property. This ceremony is called Ifonga, and is sometimes employed on other occasions. For example, during the war between Manono and Aana, two of the most influential chiefs of the latter party took umbrage at some slight, either real or fancied, and deserted to the enemy. Desertion of this nature is quite a common event in Samoan warfare, inas-

himself at having missed the public applause | much as the chiefs are almost entirely independent of each other, and are bound together by the slightest of ties. In fact, the condition of these islanders much resembles that of the Scottish Highlanders in the old times, when it was hardly possible to wage a regular war on account of the rival jealousies of the different chiefs, besides the internal dissensions among the members of each

> Besides, as in the old Scottish clans, there is no discipline by which even the men are bound together. Each man serves as long as he chooses, and no longer. If he thinks himself slighted, or if his crops at home have to be got in, he has no hesitation in shouldering his club, and going off to his own village; nor is there any law by which he can be punished for so doing. In the war to which we are now alluding, a vast number of the Savaii allies of Manono had gone off to their own plantations.

> In order to carry out the principle of obtaining the Malo, or sovereignty, it was necessary that the deserters should do homage to Manono, and be replaced in state in their homes, which they were supposed to hold under Manono as vassals in charge, If they could take possession without being attacked by the opposing party, they were supposed to have asserted their rights.

> Accordingly, a great ceremony was projected. The Manono chiefs recalled all the allies who had escaped from the war. ostensibly to look after their plantations, but in reality because they had a strong objection to bullets, and summoned them to bring the produce of their plantations to a great "fono," or discussion. Accordingly, they all came back, allured by the prospect of the feast which accompanies such a "fono." The two deserting chiefs were introduced to the assembly, and went through the ceremony of Ifonga as a matter of form. Next they had to be safely installed in their own villages. With one of them this was a comparatively easy matter, as the whole district was deserted. So the chief was taken there in triumph, escorted by thirty or forty canoes, and formally installed in his own domains, as vassal to Manono, and therefore acknowledging the right of Malo to belong to that district. He had no followers with him, and in a day or two he left the place and returned to Manono. Still, the transaction had been completed, the time during which he held his domain not being of any importance. The reader may be glad to know that this chief suffered the usual fate of renegades, being received at first with great ceremony, and made much of, and afterward sinking into utter obscurity.
> As to the other chief, there was a diffi-

culty respecting the installation. It so happened that, he having been one of the most influential leaders, all the united forces of

the two d camped in been take been attac probably : forces of much deli he should son, but th ing the cer be fixed un

Sometim instead of selves with dexterity i as striking spectators. they do a because in seriously in be the inev

COMPARA native laws institutions of late year reason of th islands. W travellers, e lived among that a tolera recognized. and his cour Murder, f

death; and

when one r all his fami trict, where It was neces accompany t tives of the vengeance u derer. Prac der resolved fugitive nece tations, his h which was se the whole of the house but tated, and a r that he migh lage. Gener punishment fine, part of feast to the e Damaging

crime deserv so was speak destroying a strangers. F ans had a cur is.ments. Sc a light one, t council, and to gent root. S toss and catch

nost entirely indend are bound toties. In fact, the landers in the old possible to wage of the rival jealousbesides the intermembers of each

cottish clans, there even the men are nan serves as long ger. If he thinks als crops at home s no hesitation in d going off to his any law by which so doing. In the w alluding, a vast ies of Manono had ntations.

the principle of overeignty, it was ers should do homeplaced in state in were supposed to vassals in charge. sion without being g party, they were their rights.

eremony was pro-lefs recalled all the from the war. their plantations, hey had a strong summoned them to ir plantations to a d by the prospect companies such a ing chiefs were inand went through as a matter of be safely installed With one of them y easy matter, as deserted. So the triumph, escorted s, and formally in-ains, as vassal to acknowledging the that district. He m, and in a day or d returned to Maon had been comwhich he held his importance. The now that this chief

there was a diffillation. It so hapn one of the most e united forces of

f renegades, being

eat ceremony, and

ward sinking into

the two districts, Aana and Atua, were en-camped in and about the place, and if he had been taken there he would not only have been attacked, but the invading party would probably have been repolled by the united forces of the other two districts. So, after much deliberation, it was determined that he should be installed at a convenient season, but that the precise time for performing the ceremony need not for the present be fixed upon.

Sometimes a couple of chiefs quarrel, and, instead of going to war, fight it out them-selves with their clubs. They display great dexterity in fencing and guarding, as well as striking, and are watched intently by the spectators. They are usually parted before they do any serious harm to each other, because in case either were killed, or even seriously injured, a war of vengeance would be the inevitable result.

COMPARATIVELY little is known of the native laws of Samoa, which, like all similar institutions, are always on the change, and of late years have been almost forgotten by reason of the presence of Europeans in the islands. We find, however, from several travellers, especially from those who have lived among the Samoans as missionaries, that a tolerably well-defined code of laws is recognized, and administered by the chief and his councillors.

Murder, for example, was punishable by death; and this was so well known that when one man murdered another, he and all his family generally fled to another district, where they were sure of protection. It was necessary that all the family should accompany the murderer, because the relatives of the slain man might wreak their vengeance upon any relation of the murderer. Practically, the punishment for mur-der resolved itself into a heavy fine. The fugitive necessarily left behind him his plantations, his house, and other property, all of which was seized by the chief. Sometimes the whole of the property was confiscated, the house burned down, the plantation devastated, and a message sent to the murderer that he might never return to his own village. Generally, however, this extreme punishment was commuted for a heavy fine, part of which consisted in giving a feast to the entire village.

Damaging a fruit tree was held to be a crime deserving of heavy punishment; and so was speaking disrespectfully to a chief, destroying a fence, or behaving rudely to strangers. For several offences the Samoans had a curiously graduated scale of punis ments. Sometimes, when the offence was a light one, the offender was sentenced to seat himself in front of the chief and his council, and take five bites of a cruelly pungent root. Sometimes he was obliged to

one of the prickly sea-urchins, which are covered with slender spikes, as sharp as needles and as brittle as glass. Sometimes he had to beat his head with sharp stones until his face was covered with blood.

These punishments were usually inflicted, but there was a severe set of penalties for graver offences. In some cases the offender was hung by the feet to the branch of a tree, or stripped of all his clothes, and set in the burning rays of the mid-day sun. One of the severest, as well as most degrading punishments consisted in taking a pole cut from a very prickly tree, tying together the culprit's feet and hands, slinging him on the pole as pigs are slung when they are being taken to the oven, and carrying him to the house or village against which he had offended.

The degrading part of this punishment consisted in likening the offender to a pig going to the oven. It is always held as a deep insult to a Samoan to compare him to a pig; while the very idea of being baked in the oven is most repulsive to the feelings of the people, who have the same contempt for any of the processes of cookery that prevails throughout New Zealand, Fiji, and Tonga. So utterly humiliating is this punishment, that when the culprit is laid helpless at the feet of those whom he has injured he is almost invariably released and forgiven, the extreme degradation being accepted as an atonement for almost any offence, no matter how heinous. This is the reason why the ceremony of Ifonga is considered as so degrading.

Indeed, it is in consequence of this feeling that cannibalism is occasionally practised, though, as has already been mentioned, it exists in a very modified form. Formerly, the women always attended upon the warriors for the sake of obtaining the bodies of the slain foes, which they dragged out of the field, and then cooked, by way of expressing the utmost contempt for them. The priests used also to accompany the warriors, and pray to the gods for success. They had good reason for wishing for victory, as their portion of the food was only the hands of the slain warriors, and as long as the struggle lasted they were not allowed to eat any other food except these hands. The priests of the losing side have sometimes been obliged to fast for several days in succession.

When the body of a chief was carried off to the oven, great rejoicings were made, and every one was expected to eat a piece of it, no matter how small. On such occa-sions, even the women and little children had a share, the question being frequently asked whether all have tasted. Sometimes, when a captive has been taken alive, the Samoans have been known to tie him up to a tree, dig a hole in front of him, line it with stones, heat it before his eyes, and loss and catch a certain number of times then throw him into it.

According to the accounts of the natives, wars were formerly much more common than is now the case, the musket having almost driven the club and spear out of the field, and rendering useless the strength and skill of the warriors, who prided themselves on their dexterity of handling their weapons. How well they fence with the club has already been described, and that they were equally efficient in the use of the spear is evident from an anecdote told by Mr. Williams.

A chief named Matetau had come on board an English vessel, and the captain, wishing to test the skill of his visitor, painted on the foresail a ring about four or five inches in diameter, and asked Matetau to throw his spear at it. The chief retired to the quarter-deck, about eighty feet from the mark, poised his spear for a moment, and sent it through the middle of the ring. Warriors thus skilful in the use of their weapons might well feel indignant at the introduction of fire-arms, which equalize the weak and the strong, and enable a mere boy only just tattooed to kill the greatest chief.

When cases are brought before the council for adjudication, both plaintiff and defendant exhibit the greatest ingenuity in tating their case, and are wonderfully fertile i. inventing new arguments. The Samoan litigant is as slippery as an eel, and no sooner has he found one post unterable than he has contrived to glide away from it and establish himself in another. Mr. Pritchard gives a very amusing instance of this characteristic of the Samoan.

The property of an English resident, who was popularly called "Monkey Jack," had been wantonly destroyed, and the injured man referred the case to the council. As at that time two ships of war arrived, the matter was by common consent referred to the senior officer, and the plaintiff, accompanied by his friends, proceeded to the spot. chiefs were convened, and, though they could not deny that the property had been destroyed, they put forward a series of ex-

joined the enemy, and that they were therefore entitled to wage war on him. This accusation being refuted, they shifted their ground from the man to his wife, saying that she was related to the enemy, and that her husband necessarily partook of the relationship. Fortunately, the woman happened to be related equally to both sides, so that the defendants had to abandon that

Their next count was, that the destruction of the property was accidental, and that therefore the owner had no claim on them. As their own previous admissions contradicted them, there was no difficulty in dis-

defence was a very ludicrous one, and showed that they were nearly brought to bay. It so happened that "Monkey Jack" was something of an armorer, and used to repair for the natives the muskets which their rough hands had damaged. opponents suddenly recollected this and turned it to account, saying that his charges for repairs were so much heavier to them than to the enemy, that in self-defence they had taken his property in compensation. Evidence was brought that his charges were always the same to any natives, no matter to which party they belonged, and so the defendants were again beaten.

Like wise men, however, they had reserved their weightiest argument to the last. It has already been mentioned that in time of war either party has no scruple in destroying or confiscating the property of a friend, on the plea that it is better for them to have the use of the property than for the enemy to take it. The defendants brought forward an argument based on this custom, saying that they only acted in accordance with national custom, and that they had destroyed the property of the plaintiff, in or-der to keep it out of the hands of the en-

This was by far the most formidable argument they could have employed, but "Monkey Jack" was as clever as his opponents, and replied with crushing effect, that for several weeks the opposite party had been able, if they had desired to do so, to destroy all his property, but had refrained from

touching it.

When the chiefs saw that they had met with men more skilful than themselves in argument, they were sadly perplexed, and some of the younger chiefs hit on a mode by which they thought that they might escape from paying the indemnity. They agreed quietly to surround the spot where the captain and the consul were sitting, and suddenly carry them off, and retain them as hostages until the indemnity should be given up. Fortunately, Mr. Pritchard decuses for refusing to pay any indemnity.

Firstly, they said that the plaintiff had to the boats, where he arranged a counter

> Before very long, the Samoans surrounded the place where the intended captives were sitting, and, just as they were about to seize them, Mr. Pritchard called out to them, and showed them that they were covered by the levelled muskets of the sailors and marines, who had accompanied the captain and the consul to the spot. Knowing that, unlike themselves, the English warriors had an inconvenient habit of hitting when they fired, the Samoan chiefs acknowledged themselves conquered, and agreed to pay the indemnity.

Another case, much more petty, was a posing of this allegation. Their next line of very ludicrous one, the Samoan absolutely of his oppo There w

granting h

who had t and had at rank of cl Paunga. (called, for which was Paunga's h plained to out success to steal, Pa insult a chi and so Toe shot by Par

The case tain of an] refused to Samoan chi dicrous one, and nearly brought to t "Monkey Jack" morer, and used to he muskets which damaged. His collected this and saying that his so much heavier emy, that in selfis property in combrought that his same to any na-ch party they be-

ver, they had reargument to the mentioned that in has no scruple in the property of a is better for them operty than for the efendants brought ed on this custom, ted in accordance that they had dethe plaintiff, in orhands of the en-

dants were again

ost formidable arve employed, but lever as his oppo-rushing effect, that pposite party had red to do so, to dehad refrained from that they had met

han themselves in lly perplexed, and iefs hit on a mode hat they might es-indemnity. They indemnity. They
nd the spot where
il were sitting, and and retain them as emnity should be Mr. Pritchard detrived to slip back rranged a counter

moans surrounded ded captives were were about to seize ed out to them, and ere covered by the ailors and marines, e captain and the owing that, unlike varriors had an inng when they fired, mowledged themreed to pay the in-

nore petty, was a Samoan absolutely

and had attained in a neighboring tribe the rank of chief, together with the name of Paunga. A native chief, named Toc-tangata (called, for brevity's sake, Toe), had a dog, which was in the habit of stealing from Paunga's house. The latter had often complained to the owner of the animal, but without success, and at last, as the dog continued to steal, Paunga shot it. Now in Samoa to

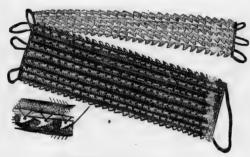
Samoan chief, and not under the jurisdiction

granting himself to be defeated by the logic of his opponent.

There was a certain West Indian negro, who had taken up his residence in Samoa, who had taken up that they might now see that he was a chief among the white people as well as among natives, and had his guard of honor, without which he would not have stirred out of the house.

Both being before the captain, Toe made his complaint, and was instantly crushed by Paunga's reply. He admitted that the property of a chief was identical with the owner. to steal, l'aunga snot it. Now in Samoa to insult a chief's dog is to insult the owner, and so Toe considered himself to have been shot by Paunga.

The case was at last referred to the captain of an English man-of-war, but Paunga shot Toe in the person of his dog, he only balanced the account, and neither party had grounds of complaint against the other.



SHARK-TOOTH GAUNTLET. (See page 1019.)

CHAPTER CIV.

SAMOA, OR THE NAVIGATORS' ISLANDS - Concluded,

AMUSEMENTS -- MARRIAGE -- ARCHITECTURE.

SAMOAN AMUSEMENTS - PIGEON CATCHING - THE DECOY BIRDS, AND MODE OF USING THEM - TRAIN-ING THE BIRDS - FISHING: THE NET AND THE LINE - DARING MODE OF SHARK CATCHING -A BOLD FISHERMAN - CURIOUS ACCIDENTS TO THE DIVERS: THE SHARK AND THE CORAL - THE BOAR HUNT - A DANGEROUS FOE - SAMOAN COOKERY - THE PALOLO - ITS CURIOUS APPEAR-ANCE, MODE IN CAPTURE, AND WAY OF COOKING IT - MARRIAGE IN SAMOA - CEREMONIES IN THE MARRIAGE OF A CHIEF-THE WEDDING FEAST AND DANCES-SAMOAN ARCHITECTURE-DIVISION OF THE HOUSE BY MOSQUITO CURTAINS.

many respects identical with those of other Polynesians, and therefore only those will be described wherein is anything characteristic of these islanders. One of the principal sports is pigeon shooting, which is carried on in certain parts of the wood expressly prepared for it. The principle on which the sport is followed much resembles winner to all his companions, and the kava that of the rat shooting practised by the is converted into drink. Tongans. Several chiefs agree to go off on a pigeon-catching expedition, and at the appointed time the fowling ground is cleared of bush, a large circle is marked out by stones, and just outside the circle are made a number of ambushes, formed from leaves and branches, which are cut fresh daily

The sport is preluded by a drink of kava, and when this indispensable preliminary is over, the chiefs repair to their stations, each having a net and a trained bird. The net is small, and is fixed to the end of a bamboo, thirty or even forty feet in length. The bird is perched on a stick near its master, and is attached to its perch by a string forty or

fifty yards in length. At a given signal, the birds are thrown into the air, and, following the instructions they have received, wheel round and round for some little time. The wild pigeons see them from a distance, and fancying from their movements that they are hovering over food, fly to join them. As they wheel to and fro with the decoy birds, the chiefs raise their nets and dexterously capture their sport. The latter quality is chiefy

THE amusements of the Samoans are in | them. He who takes the greatest number of pigeons wins the game, and receives from each of the other players a stake which has been previously fixed upon. Generally the stakes consist of food or kava roots, and in winner to all his companions, and the kava

> engraving on the next page illustrates this sport very accurately.

> The decoy birds are most carefully trained, the object of the trainer being to make them rise at the word of command, fly to the end of the string, wheel round in graceful circles for some time, and then return to the When a bird will remain on the perch. When a bird will remain on the wing for five minutes and return to its perch at its master's call, it is considered as having been highly trained, and is held in great estimation. The natives may be often seen engaged in training the birds in the open space in the centre of the village. The birds are encouraged in their flight by a

luded.

SING THEM — TRAIN-SHARK CATCHING— D THE CORAL — THE G CURIOUS APPEAR-DA — CEREMONIES IN AN ARCHITECTURE—

greatest number and receives from a stake which has n. Generally the tava roots, and in practically gains vinning the game, listributed by the ons, and the kava

ties last for a very etimes remaining Huts are consene open space on vn. The second ge illustrates this

carefully trained, ing to make them not, fly to the end in graceful circum return to the ll remain on the not return to its t is considered as ad, and is held in rives may be often the birds in the 'the village. The their flight by a ne string.

orite amusement splay a wonderful n of courage in quality is chiefly



(1.) SAMOAN WARRIORS EXCHANGING DEFIANCE. (See page 1021.)



(2.) PIGEON CATCHING BY SAMOANS. (See page 1026.)

(1027)

brought in completed great feas off in seas being one. The fisher being man who are standard a noose at offal.

Going to sharks lie men thro double put the sharks and when lazily stret under the self very with the rover the sharks soon a drag the saway until of the sea, A sudden where it is

sometim marine cavopening. 's not to dives down on the heef sannoy round, expedaring fishing it in a mom One you Pritchard, 's principal of the sannoy round's principal of the sannoy round's

this sport, used to go ping bait ov sharks, and their tails. but the bra both shark a among all scrambled i long and se ing his shari Sometime

ing. The fout in a can and bring to very long a bait; and we several men shark into shounce at then killed we Such a specific control of the state o

Such a sp tended with fisherman is water as the gerous game which a Span furious bull. brought into play when the natives are in both cases, but they are the exception, occupied in shark fishing. Whenever a and not the rule.

great feast is to be held, the fishermen go Another of their amusements which is off in search of sharks, the flesh of this fish being one of the principal dainties of Samoa. The fishermen go off in canoes, each canoe being manned by two or three fishermen, who are supplied with a strong rope, having a noose at one end and a quantity of animal

Going to the edge of the lagoon, where the sharks lie under shelter of the rocks, the men throw the offal overboard, for the double purpose of attracting and gorging the sharks. They then peer into the water. and when one of the fishermen sees a shark lazily stretching itself on the sand that lies under the overhanging rocks, he lets himself very quietly into the sea, dives down with the rope in his hand, slips the noose over the shark's tail, and rises to the surface. As soon as he gets into the boat, the men drag the shark out of his retreat, and haul away until the creature's tail is raised out of the sea, when it becomes nearly helpless. A sudden jerk brings it into the canoe, where it is instantly killed.

Sometimes the shark lies in a deep submarine cave, with only its head out of the opening. The Samoan fisherman, however, is not to be baffled by this attitude, but dives down to the shark, and taps it gently on the head. The fish replete, with food feels annoyed at the interruption, and turns round, exposing as it does so its tail to the daring fisherman, who slips the noose over

it in a moment.

One young man, mentioned by Mr. Pritchard, was celebrated for his daring in this sport. He disdained assistance, and used to go out alone in a little canoe, dropping bait overboard in order to attract the sharks, and throwing his noosed rope over their tails. On one occasion the rope broke, but the brave fellow had no idea of losing both shark and rope. He leaped overboard among all the sharks, seized the rope, scrambled into his canoe again, and, after a long and severe struggle, succeeded in killing his shark and towing it ashore.

Sometimes the hook is used in shark fishing. The fishermen bait a hook, carry it out in a canoe in twelve feet or so of water, and bring the line back to land. Before very long a shark is nearly sure to seize the bait; and when the fish is fairly hooked, several men haul at the rope and drag the shark into shallow water, where it is allowed to flounce about until it is exhausted, and is

then killed without difficulty.

Such a sport as this is necessarily attended with much danger, but the Samoan fisherman is nearly as much at home in the water as the shark itself, and treats his dan-

Another of their amusements which is dangerous is pig hunting. As the swine are allowed to run loose in the woods, they have reverted to their wild modes of life, and are sly, swift, active, and ferocious. It is thought a point of honor for a chief to challenge a wild boar, and to receive no assistance except in case of extreme need. The hunter is armed with his knife and tomahawk, or sometimes with a whale spade, which makes a very formidable weapon if the edges are kept sharp.

To kill one of the animals is no easy task. In the first place, a wild boar is so quick that nothing but the greatest activity can save the hunter from its tusks; and were save the hunter from its tusss; and were the fight to take place on an open plain instead of among trees, behind which the hunter can jump when hard pressed, the beast might probably get the better of the man. Then the boar is wonderfully tena-cious of life, and has a skin so tough that a sharp weapon and a strong arm are needed to infliet a mortal wound. Even when the animal has fallen, and is apparently dead, an experienced hunter always drives his knife into its throat, as boars have an awkward way of suddenly reviving, leaping on their legs, and dashing through their foes into the bush.

The sows are even more dangerous antagonists than the boars. They are, as a rule, lighter, thinner, and more active, and, although they have no long tusks wherewith to rip up their foes, they can bite as sharply and as quickly as wolves. Indeed, were it not for the dogs which are trained to boarhunting, and are wonderfully courageous and skilful, though very ugly and most unpromising to the eye, they would seldom be brought to bay.

Mr. Pritchard gives an account of an adventure of his own with a boar, which gives an excellent idea of the ferocity, cunning, and activity of the animals. The boar had actually received two rifle bullets in his left shoulder, inflicting wounds which would have disabled, if not killed, most animals, but seemed only to irritate the boar by the

pain.

"The fury of the beast was intense, with its two wounds and the worrying of the dogs. He stood grinding his teeth and frothing at the mouth, looking first at one and then at another of us, as if measuring an antagonist for fight. The chief suggested that one of us should tackle him, while the others looked on without interfering. Of course I had to claim the privilege to do so after such a challenge; though, in truth, this being the first boar I had ever encountered, I felt as if I had somewhat gerous game with the same easy indifference rashly undertaken the combat, for, even which a Spanish matador displays toward a with his two wounds, I fancied he might furious bull. Accidents certainly do happen possibly hold out longer than myself, and, if

I failed to kill him, the failure would be fine sport for my comrades, and not soon forgot-

ten in their jokes.

"However, I stepped out in front of the infuriated beast, and no sooner was I there then he was there too—quite promptly enough, I thought. He made a furious charge at me, which I received with the butt end of my rifle, trying to throw him over on his wounded side, but ineffectually. A second time he came at me, and a second time I checked him. As he drew up for the third charge, his long bristles standing on end, grinding his tusks and tossing the froth from his huge mouth, I drew my tomahawk. On he came, swifter than ever; the tomahawk fell deep into the thick part of his neck, and my boy Atamu did the rest with his long knife.

"It was rather hot work, for these boars have immense strength and no little dogged pluck, and their skins are so tough that often a spear will break short off without

leaving even a mark where it struck."

The same boar had previously forced the writer to employ rather a ludicrous manœuvre. He had fired at the shoulder of the animal, thinking that, if the bullet did not reach the heart, it would at all events disable him. But the boar made at him almost as it received the shot, and sprang on him so quickly that he was forced to jump over its head upon its back, and roll off toward the nearest tree. The smaller pigs are killed in a different manner. The dogs are trained to catch them by the ears, shoulders, and tail, and when the hunters come up they place a stick across the animal's throat, and press it down until the pig is dead.

As to the cookery of the Samoans, there is little to distinguish it from that of the Tongans and other Polynesians of the same race. They have a great abundance of dishes, being able to produce almost as great a variety in that respect as the Fijians, and many of their dishes are extremely palatable to an European. Vegetables form the staple of the Samcan's food, and of those he has abundant choice. Putting aside those vegetables which have been imported from Europe, he has yams, taro, bananas, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and plantains. Sometimes these are cooked separately and sometimes mixed, in order to produce a compound more palatable to native taste. As a rule, the simpler specimens of Samoan cookery please even the English palate, but when the native cooks dress compound dishes the natives are generally the only persons who can eat them.

For instance, there is nothing better in its way than the young cocoa-nut, which is entirely different from the hard, indigestible state in which we see it in England. But when the milk is poured out, its place is supplied with salt water, and the contents allowed to become putrid, the compound is dish by many of her visitors."

offensive to more senses than one. Some of their compounds are, however, excellent Such is a sort of pudding made by pour the juice of cocoa-nuts over bananas, and baking them together. Even the ven young kernel of the cocoa-nut makes a very rich dish when baked.

The strangest diet of the Samoans is the annelld called the Palolo (Palolo viridis).
Mr. Pritchard gives an excellent account of this curious being and the mode of cooking it.

It appears only in certain strictly defined and very limited localities in each group (i. e. in Fiji, Tonga, and Samoa); a month earlier, about the first week in November, in Samoa than in the two other groups. It rises directly from the bottom of the sea to the surface, appearing first about four o'clock in the morning, and continuing to increase in number, until about half an hour after sunrise, when it begins to dissolve, and gradually disappears. By eight o'clock not a trace of the palolo remains in the sea. They look just like so many worms, from an inch to a yard in length, showing every conceivable color as they wriggle about, and are soft to the touch.

"The time of their appearance is calculated by the old men of the various tribes, and is known by the sun, moon, and stars having a particular bearing to each other. A month before the great appearance, a few are found in each of the localities where they rise. Parties go out in their canoes to watch for this first appearance, for by it the calculation as to the second and great ap-

pearance is verified.

"When that time comes, whole villages, men, women, and children, crowd the scene; by two o'clock the sea is covered with canoes, the outriggers getting foul and breaking adrift without distracting the attention, as by four o'clock all are busied scooping up the palolos and pouring them into baskets made for the occasion. The noise and ex-citement from four to six o'clock is something astonishing, and the scrambling most amusing. And when, with canoes landed, the crowd disperses, the next thing is to prepare the ovens to cook the palolos, which are merely wrapped in bread-fruit leaves. They are sent round with much formality to friends at a distance, and sometimes kept three or four weeks by being occasionally warmed in an oven.

"I never could muster courage to do more than merely taste them, so repulsive is their very appearance as they roll and coil to-gether, though Englishmen and even English women there are who eat them, and professedly with a relish, for which I suppose one cannot but accept their word. One lady in particular there is, as described by Dr. Seeman, a 'strong-minded individual', who eats palolo with a remarkable gusto. I think she will not be deprived of her fancy

There the palol whether ing the w The ques and there in the " T ety," vol. The w

Nereids, plentiful about the sists of a entire spe delicate a with the g be discove sent to the head coul bottle full scientific covered. the joints furnished surface, b

tentacles, The nor: and it is re appearance placed on t regularly d ance, that of October the names Palolo, the which it ma

MARRIA much like t of islands Samoan cus low the dig for himself. dertaken by the most ui their powe When her c sends prope return fine 1 change bein

On the d anointed wit dressed in la is placed in centre of the friends, who ness of savag and nautilus also accompa have had cha praises and e this public as girl be wort Should the presented to and, amid th the house by an one. Some of wever, excellent made by pour ver bananas, and Even the ver nut makes a very

e Samoans is the (Palolo viridis), cellent account of ode of cooking it. n strictly defined s in each group Samoa); a month in November, in other groups. It ottom of the sea first about four nd continuing to bout half an hour s to dissolve, and eight o'clock not ains in the sea. y worms, from an owing every conriggle about, and

earance is calcue various tribes, moon, and stars g to each other. appearance, a few localities where n their canoes to ance, for by it the nd and great ap-

s, whole villages, crowd the scene; vered with canoes. ul and breaking the attention, as ied scooping up hem into baskets he noise and ex-o'clock is somescrambling most h canoes landed, next thing is to the palolos, which read-fruit leaves. nuch formality to sometimes kept eing occasionally

urage to do more repulsive is their roll and coil toand even Eng-o eat them, and for which I suptheir word. One as described by nded individual, arkable gusto. I ved of her fancy

There has been much discussion about the palolo, many persons having doubted whether it was ever an annelid, and believing the worms to be mere strings of spawn. The question has, however, been settled, and there is an elaborate paper on the palolo in the "Transactions of the Linnean Soci-

ety," vol. xxii. p. 237.

The worm is allied to the well-known Nereids, several species of which are so plentiful on our own shores. It is flattish, about the sixth of an inch in width, and consists of a vast number of segments. The entire specimen has never been secured, so delicate and fragile is the creature, and it is with the greatest difficulty that a head can be discovered. Among the specimens first sent to the British Museum, not a single head could be found, and among a large bottle full of palolo collected expressly for scientific purposes, only one head was discovered. The head is a little narrower than the joints which compose the neck, and is furnished with two little eyes on the upper surface, between which are placed three tentacles, of which the middle is the longest.

The normal color of the annelid is green and it is remarkable for the regularly dotted appearance of the back, one black dot being placed on the middle of each segment. So regularly does the palolo make its appearance, that among the Fiji group the months of October and November are known by the names of the Little Palolo and Great Palolo, the former being the month in which it is first seen, and the second that in

which it makes its grand appearance.

MARRIAGES in Samoa are conducted much like those of Tonga, the latter group of islands having borrowed many of the Samoan customs. It is thought rather below the dignity of a chief to court a wife for himself, and that office is generally undertaken by his friends, who praise him in the most unmeasured terms, and do all in their power to induce the girl to yield. When her consent has been given, the chief sends property to her father, and receives in return fine mats and other articles, this exchange being considered as the betrothal.

On the day of marriage, the bride, well anointed with oil, colored with turmeric, and dressed in large quantities of the finest mats, is placed in the malae, or open space in the centre of the village, attended by her young friends, who are arrayed in all the gorgeousness of savage finery, with wreaths of flowers and nautilus shells on their heads. She is also accompanied by the two duennas who have had charge of her, and who chant her praises and extol her virtue. The object of this public assembly is to prove whether the girl be worthy to be the wife of a chief. Should the verdict be in her favor, she is presented to the people as the chief's wife, and, amid their acclamations, is taken into

Should, as is very seldom the case, the verdict be adverse, all the male members of her family, even her fathers and brothers, rush on her with their clubs and kill her on the spot, in order to take away the disgrace which she has brought on her house.

After the bride has been led away there is a grand dance. This differs somewhat from the dances which are usually seen among the Polynesians. The spectators being seated in a circle round a cleared space, and keeping up a monotonous chant, the men first enter the circle, led by a young chief, and clothed merely in the little leaf apron, so as to show off the tattoo to the best advantage. Their leader goes through a vast number of steps, sometimes leaping high in the air, and sometimes executing movements of a slower and more graceful character, while every step is watched and criti-cised as it is danced by the leader and imitated by his followers. After the men have danced for some time they retire, and a number of girls enter, who go through evolutions of a similar character, and afterward both men and women dance together.

THE houses of the Samoans are all built on the same model. They are very conservative in some of their ideas, and follow implicitly the plan which was adopted by the chief who, according to their traditions, first built a dwelling. At a distance, the appearance of the house has been compared

to a large mushroom.

The first process is, to make a large platform of rough stones, covered with gravel, extending some twenty feet on every side beyond the walls of the house. In the centre are planted three posts, standing about twenty-five feet out of the ground. Upon these central posts are supported the ratters of the roof, one end of each rafter being fixed to them, and the other end to the tops of short posts about four feet high, which form, or rather which do duty for, the walls of the house. Real walls there are none, but at night the space between the posts is closed by blinds made of plaited cocoa-nut leaves. The whole framework of the roof is made in several sections, so that it can be removed.

The thatch is made of the leaves of the sugar-cane, nailed by the women to reeds with spikes made of the ribs of the cocoanut leaves. About four thousand leaves are are required for thatching a house, and they are lashed carefully with cocoa-nut fibre.

The floor of the house is strewn with very fine gravel and covered with mats. There are no separate chambers, but at night the house is divided into a number of sleeping places by means of the mosquito curtains which are attached to the central post, and let down when required. It is a point of eti-quette that all guests should be supplied with clean mats. The pillow used in Samoa is like that of Fiji, and is nothing more than the house by her duennas and attendants, a stick supported on a foot at each end.

CHAPTER CV.

HERVEY AND KINGSMILL ISLANDS.

APPEARANCE - WEAPONS - GOVERNMENT.

POSITION OF THE HERVEY ISLANDS—FIERCE AND TREACHEROUS NATURE OF CHE'INHABITANTS—
THE CHIEF MOUROOA, AND HIS VISIT TO THE SHIP—SKILL IN CARVING—THER BEAUTIFUL
FADDLES AND CANCES—THE MANGAIAN ADZE: ITS CARVED HANDLE AND STONE HEAD—THE
MANY-BARBED SPEAR—THE CLUB AND SLING—THE FOUR RANKS IN BATTLE—FEROCITY OF THE
WOMEN—FEUDS AND THEIR CONSEQUENCES—A MANGAIAN HOUSE—FOOD—PROCURING AND
COOKING IT—A RAT HUNT—IDOLS OF THE MANGAIANS—THE KINGSMILL ISLANDERS—LOCALITY
AND GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS—APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES—
ARCHITECTURE—DRESS AND TATTOOING—WARLIKE NATURE—THE TERRIBLE WEAPONS OF
THESE ISLANDS—THE SWORD AND SPEAR—MODE OF GOVERNMENT—BURIAL OF A DEAD CHIEF.

EASTWARD of Samoa, and rather southward, lie the Hervey, or Cook's Islands. The group includes seven islands, the principal of which is Rarotonga, an island between thirty and forty miles in circumference. This island is remarkable for the lofty mountains of the interior, and round it extends a large reef of coral. Some of the islands are entirely coral, and all of them are surrounded by the dangerous coral reefs, at which the coral "insects" are still working.

In general appearance the people bear much resemblance to the Samoans, but seem to be of a more warlike and ferocious character. Indeed, so quarrelsome and blood-thirsty are the natives of this group, that when Mr. Williams visited Hervey's Island he found that only sixty of the population survived, and a few years later they were reduced to five men, three women, and some children, and these were on the point of fighting along themselves, in order to ascertain which should be king.

One of the principal islands of this group, namely, Mangaia, was discovered by Captain Cook in March 1777. The natives were very unwilling to come on board the vessel, but at last two men put off in a canoe, their curiosity overcoming their terror. The name of one of them was Mourooa, and he was distinguishable by a large scar on his forehead, the result of a wound received in

"Mourooa," writes Captain Cook, "was lusty and well-made, but not very tall. His features were agreeable, and his disposition seemingly no less so, for he made several droll gesticulations, which indicated both good nature and a share of humor. He also made others which seemed of a serious kind, and repeated some words with a devout air before he ventured to lay hold of the rope at the ship's stern; which was probably to recommend himself to the protection of some divinity.

"His color was nearly of the same cast common to the most southern Europeans. The other man was not so handsome. Both of them had strong, straight hair, of a jet color, tied together on the crown of the head with a bit of cloth. They wore such girdles as we perceived about those on shore, and we found they wore a substance made from the Morus papyrifera, in the same maner as at the other islands of this ocean. It was glazed, like the sort used by the natives of the Friendly Islands, but the cloth on their heads was white, like that which is found at Otaheite.

"They had on a kind of sandal made of a grassy substance interwoven, which we also observed were worn by those who stood upon the beach, and, as we supposed, intended to defend their feet against the rough coral rock. Their beards were long; and the inside of their arms, from the shoulder to the elbow, and some other parts, were

punctured
the inhabi
in the So
was piere
length tha
and some
us; and th
pearl-shell
loosely twi
was the on
After so

board the at his posi overcome self in so gite curiosit objects wha, goat endemotion e seen so le know what he could go to the peop of the

a natural a

itants of M this respec and elabor handles of be their f paddle whi s drawn fr tion. It is the blade broadest pa as can be d oration of of the blade and perhap The square with carvin handle.

Another
ner, except
stead of squ
with a row
conventions
(see fig. 2),
dles are m
elastic; and
ased as a
characterist
Captain (

of these p pear to have ame in (we was not ab row, but bot fore-part hr projecting of getting in upright ster in New Zea stern-post we the canoe we

punctured or tattooed, after the manner of was black, and their paddles made of wood the inhabitants of almost all the other islands in the South Sea. The lobe of their ears was pierced, or rather slit, and to such a length that one of them stuck there a knife and some beads which he had received from us; and the same person had two polished pearl-shells and a bunch of human hair loosely twisted hanging about his neck, which was the only ornament we observed."

After some time, Mourooa ventured on board the ship, but seemed very uneasy at his position, his feelings of curiosity being overcome by those of alarm at finding himself in so gigantic a vessel. He showed little curiosity about the ship and the various objects which it contained, but the sight of a goat entirely drove out of his mind any emotion except wonder, he never having seen so large an animal. He wanted to know what bird it could be, and, as soon as he could get ashore, he was seen narrating to the people the wonders which he had seen on board the great canoe.

All the Hervey Islanders are gifted with a natural appreciation of art, and the inhabitants of Mangaia seem to be pre-eminent in this respect. They lavish the most minute and elaborate carving on various objects, the handles of tools and the paddles seeming to be their favorite subjects. The beautiful paddle which is shown on the 1018th page, s drawn from a specimen in my own collection. It is nearly four feet in length, and the blade is eleven inches wide in the broadest part. The pattern is given as well as can be done, considering the minute elab-oration of the original. The opposite face of the blade is even more carefully decorated, and perhaps with a more artistic design. The squared shaft of the paddle is covered with carving, as is also the peculiarly shaped handle.

Another paddle is made in a similar manner, except that the shaft is rounded instead of squared, and decorated at the handle with a row of ornaments which seem to be conventional imitations of the human face (see fig. 2). The wood of which these paddles are made is light, though strong and elastic; and, as the implement is sometimes ased as a club, both these last-mentioned

characteristics are needed.

Captain Cook noticed the peculiar shape of these paddles, though he does not appear to have handled them, or to have examined them carefully. "The canoe they came in (which was the only one we saw) was not above ten feet long and very narrow, but both strong and neatly made. The fore-part had a board fastened over it and projecting out, so as to prevent the sea from the canoe was of white wood, but the upper | pean tools among the natives.

of the same color, not above three feet long, broad at one end and blunted."

Another paddle was brought to England by the late Admiral Young, and presented to me by his daughter. It is not so large as the specimens which have been just described, but is the most delicately carved specimen I have ever seen. The wood of which it is made is a very rich dark brown, and takes a high polish as that the offect of and takes a high polish, so that the effect of the carving is peculiarly good. The blade is covered with a vast number of stars, wonderfully well carved, seeing that the native maker had no compasses by which to take his measurement, and that his only tools were sharks' teeth and bits of stone. The maker has spared no pains over this trophy of his skill, and, as if to show his own fertility of invention, he has not covered the whole of the shaft with the same pattern, as is the case with the two paddles that have just been described, but has changed the pattern every few inches. I have also a much smaller and shorter paddle, not quite three feet in length, which is made with equal care, but which is not intended so much for use in propelling boats as for ornament in

dancing.

The love of ornamentation is displayed in all their manufactures, which are decorated in a manner equally elaborate and artistic. Even their drinking cups, which are made from cocoa-nut shells, are covered with carved patterns of a nature similar to those

of the paddles.

The reader will remark that many Polynesians adorn with carving the handles of their tools and weapons, examples of which have been given in the preceding pages. The Hervey Islanders, however, leave no portion of the implement without carving, and in many instances sacrifice utility to ornament. This is generally the case with the adze handles, many of which are so extremely or-namental that it is not easy to see how they can be useful.

The specimen which is represented on page 1018 (adze magnified), is a good example of such an adze. The lower part of the handle is completely hollow, the native manufacturer having contrived to cut away the wood through the intervals between the upright pillars. As these intervals are not quite the third of an inch in width, the labor of removing the interior of the handle must have been very great, and the work exceedingly tedious. Even with European exceedingly tedious. Even with European tools it would be a difficult piece of workmanship, and its difficulty is greatly en-hanced by the fact that the native who carved it had nothing but a sharp stone or getting in on plunging . . . but it had an a shark's tooth lashed to a handle by way of upright stern about five feet high, like some a knife. This particular specimen has been in New Zealand, and the upper part of this in England for many years, and must have stern-post was forked. The lower part of been made before the introduction of Euro-

CHE INHABITANTS --THEIR BEAUTIFUL STONE HEAD-THE E - FEROCITY OF THE D-PROCURING AND LANDERS - LOCALITY OF THE NATIVES-RIBLE WEAPONS OF AL OF A DEAD CHIEF.

otain Cook, "was not very tall. His nd his disposition he made several h indicated both f humor. He also of a serious kind, with a devout air hold of the rope at s probably to recrotection of some

of the same cast thern Europeans. handsome. Both ght hair, of a jet he crown of the They wore such out those on shore, substance made , in the same manof this ocean. It sed by the natives but the cloth on se that which is

sandal made of a en, which we also those who stood we supposed, inagainst the rough s were long; and rom the shoulder other parts, were

The head of the adze is made of stone, | gether the weapon is as formidable as it is and is lashed to the handle in a way exactly like that which is employed by the New Zealanders, except that it is far more elaborate. As if desirous of giving himself as much trouble as possible, the maker has employed the finest plaited sinnet, not wider than packthread and quite flat, and has laid it on the tool in a manner so elaborate that to give a proper idea of it the artist must have occupied an entire page with his drawing. Suffice it to say that the illustration gives a good general idea of the mode in which the head is lashed to the handle. The sinnet is laid as regularly as if wound by machinery, and the native artist has contrived to produce the most extraordinary effects with it, throwing the various portions into a simulated perspective, and making the lashing look as if there were four distinct layers, one above another.

Between the stone of the adze head and the wood of the handle is placed a piece of very strong tappa cloth, which seems to have been laid on while wet, so that the bands of sinnet have pressed it well together, and aided in strengthening the junction. The end of this tappa is seen projecting on the upper part of the head, just where it is joined to the handle. That such an implement as this should have been intended for use seems most unlikely, and I believe that it has only been constructed as a sample of the maker's skill. Sometimes adzes of a similar character are made, the handles of which are from four to five feet long, and carved with a pierced pattern throughout their entire length, so that they could not have been intended for hard work. A similar elaborate ornamentation is

one of which is shown in the illustration this woman's fury entitled "Spear," on the 1018th page. The people are s The spear, which is in my collection, is rather more than ten feet in length, and beautifully made. The shaft is very straight, very slender, and highly polished, but with-out any carving; indeed, it is so slight that it could not bear any pattern to be carved upon it. The ornament is therefore confined to the many-barbed head, which is a beautiful specimen of savage art.

found upon the Hervey Islanders' spears,

By referring to the illustration, the reader will see that just below the first set of barbs the wood of the spear swells into a slightly oval form. This portion of the head is covered with carving, necessarily very shallow, but sufficient for ornament. Between the various sets of barbs the spear is wrapped with very narrow strips of some reed, which is highly polished and of a bright yellow color, so that the contrast between the dark wood of the barbs and the shining vellow of the wrapping is very striking. In spite of the large size of the head, the spear is well balanced, the length of the slender and elastic

elegant.

Their clubs are ornamented in a similar manner. Mr. Williams describes one of a very curious form. It was carved like the club, fig. 1, on page 949, but was bent nearly at right angles, rather beyond the junction of the handle with the head, and was ornamented with a great bunch of long and slender feathers. Slings of great length and power are used by these people.

According to the accounts of this missionary, the inhabitants of Mangaia can use their weapons with great skill and courage. They do not try to hide behind trees and bushes, and take their foes by surprise, but boldly meet them in the open field. When two parties meet, they form themselves into four lines. The warriors who compose the first row are armed with the long spears which have just been described, the second rank carry clubs, the third are furnished with slings, and the fourth rank is composed of the women, who carry additional weapons, in case the men should be disarmed, together with a supply of small stones for the slingers, This arrangement of forces is represented in the battle scene given on the opposite page.

Sometimes the women take an active part in the fray. One young chief told Mr. Williams that in one battle he was flercely assailed by the wife of his antagonist. He told her to desist, as he had not come to fight with women. However, she would not listen to him, and exclaiming, If you kill my husband, what shall I do?" flung a stone at him, which struck him to the ground, Had it not been for the prompt assistance of his own people, who came to the rescue, he would assuredly have lost his life through

The people are apt to be ferocious in battle, and Mr. Williams mentions that several of his converts forgot the maxims of Christianity in the excitement of battle, and killed their vanquished enemies in spite of their entreaties for mercy. In all probability, these people were carrying out some feeling of vengeance, according to the custom of these islands.

Throughout the greater part of Polynesia the friends or relatives of the murdered man are bound to avenge his death by killing the murderer, if they can secure him, or at all events by killing one of his family. The family of the victim then retaliate in their turn, so that when a man goes into battle he mostly has a number of feuds on his hands. Like the Corsican Vendetta, if such a feud cannot be carried out in a man's lifetime, he bequeaths it to his son, so that it may be carried on for any number of generations,

This savage custom has stood greatly in the way of the missionaries. They found no very great difficulty in persuading the people shaft acting as a counterpoise; and alto- that to harbor malice against another, who formidable as it is

ented in a similar lescribes one of a us carved like the us carved like the us was bent nearly youd the junction ad, and was ornanch of long and of great length less people. unts of this mis-

Mangaia can use skill and courage, behind trees and so by surprise, but pen field. When n themselves into who compose the the long spears cribed, the second rd are furnished rank is composed dittional weapons, lisarmed, together se for the slingers, see is represented on the opposite

chief told Mr.
te he was fiercely
antagonist. He
tad not come to
ever, she would
laiming, "If you
li I do?" flung a
tim to the ground,
mpt assistance of
to the rescue, he
his life through

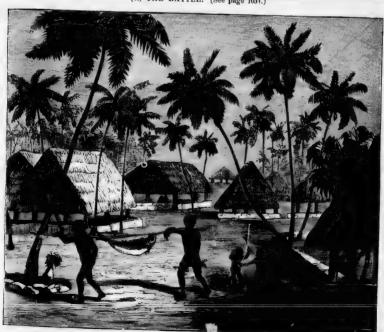
s that several of axims of Chrisbattle, and killed in spite of their all probability, q out some feel-

part of Polynesia the murdered man the by killing the re him, or at all ais family. The retaliate in their nees into battle he dds on his hands, a, if such a feud nan's lifetime, he that it may be of generations,

stood greatly in They found no ading the people at another, who



(1.) THE BATTLE. (See page 1034.)



(2.) VILLAGE IN THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS. (See page 1038.)

might be wrong, a feud. B was very abandon feuds ag eration. Intheir the same been me scribes a for him, a sixteen h "It was about one The large (eight in rafters w tastefully arations. "It is in them as to idea of the ingenuity These pos from twel when we the work vold nails, chisels, we and skill o tering the On the s be less ple and the in resort to v preserving have caugh they do not in wood sm among our method of The boatme supplied wi fastened to feet long. as to make to the water the same t According dart out of are easily ca Rats form Mangaia, th diet by comp the flesh of is generally catchers have ence the va by those wh that of the s by digging a ing bait into had entered

might be totally innocent, was exceedingly the mouth of it, and the inmates easily wrong, and that they ought to abandon the feud. But the new converts argued that it was very unfair to demand that they should abandon their feuds against others while the feuds against themselves were still in op-

In their architecture the Mangaians display the same love of carving which has already been mentioned. Mr. Williams thus describes a building which had been erected for him, and which was large enough to hold

sixteen hundred persons:—
"It was a fine building, of an oval shape, about one hundred and twenty feet in length. The large posts which supported the roof (eight in number), the ridge-pole, and the ratters were most beautifully carved, and tastefully colored with various native preparations.

"It is impossible, however, so to describe them as to enable the reader to form a correct idea of their appearance, or of the taste and ingenuity displayed in their execution. These posts were twenty-five feet high, and from twelve to eighteen inches square, and when we considered the tools with which the work was done, which were principally old nails, pieces of iron hoop, and a few chisels, we were amazed both at the patience and skill of the carvers. The effect on entering the place was very striking."

On the shores of this island dish appear to be less plentiful than is generally the case, and the inhabitants are obliged to have resort to various modes of procuring and preserving food. For example, when they have caught a large quantity of flying fish, they do not eat them at once, but dry them in wood smoke, much as herrings are cured among ourselves. They have an ingenious method of catching these fish by night. The boatmen go out in their double canoes, supplied with torches and large ring nets fastened to the end of handles ten or twelve feet long. They stamp on their canoes so as to make a noise, which is communicated to the water and alarms the fish, and at the same time wave their torches about. According to their instinct, the flying fish dart out of the water toward the light, and are easily captured in the nets.

Rats form a most valued portion of their diet. When the missionaries first visited Mangaia, the natives were so fond of this food that they measured all other kinds of diet by comparison with rats' flesh. Indeed, is generally supposed. Several English ratcatchers have learned by practical experiing bait into it. When a sufficient number

secured.

In RAROTONGA, another island of this group, the rats swarmed in such numbers that they were not only a nuisance, but an absolute pest; and, if it had not been for the pigs which were introduced by the Europeans, and allowed to run wild, the rats would probably have driven the natives out of their illages. At every meal one or two persons were detailed for the sole purpose of keeping the rats from the provisions. When the people sat down in their houses the rats ran over them, and when they lay down to rest the rats had made a settlement in their bed.

At last warfare was declared against the rats, and a number of baskets were made to contain the bodies of the slain, each basket being five or six feet in length. The inhabitants then armed themselves with sticks, and in an hour no less than thirty of these great baskets were filled with dead rats. Even then no diminution seemed to have taken place among these pests. Next, the missionaries tried the introduction of cats, and with some success, but the most fortunate introduction that was made was that of the pig. These animals were brought to Rarotonga for the purpose of supplying the sailors with meat which should supersede the flesh of the rat, and the pigs repaid their introducers by eating every rat which came across there.

When the natives were converted to Christianity, they consulted the missionaries, wishing to know whether the flesh of rats was unlawful food for Christians. They evidently asked this question because they saw that their teachers abstained from these animals. The missionaries returned a very judicious answer to this question, by saying that in their own country rats were not eaten, because the white man had a repugnance to them, but that there was nothing unlawful in eating them, and that the Mangaians might do as they pleased. The people were satisfied with this answer, and contented themselves with passing a law that all Christians should catch and cook their rats on Saturdays, so as to avoid working on the Sunday.

The idols of the Hervey Islanders are very odd-looking things, and would scarcely be recognized as objects of worship. It might naturally be imagined that if these the flesh of these animals is far better than people bestow such pains upon their weapons and implements, they would at least catchers have learned by practical experi-ence the value of rat's flesh, which is said the gods of the Hervey Islanders are the by those who have tried it to be equal to rudest possible specimens of native workthat of the squirrel and better than that of manship. They consist principally of a the rabbit. The Mangaians caught the rats staff about sixteen or seventeen feet in by digging a hole in the ground, and throw- length, the upper part of which is carved had entered the hole, a net was thrown over On the staff are laid a few red feathers and into a rude representation of a human head.

of the god. Round the staff and the beads every canoe, and whenever the natives are is wrapped a vast quantity of native cloth, out on a fishing excursion they always make so as to form a slightly conical roll about a offerings to this strange deity. vard in diameter, and ten feet in length.

a string of beads, which are called the soul | One of these idols is placed at the bow of

THE KINGSMILL ISLANDS.

NORTH-WEST of the Samoans is a group ing-house, and the lower entirely open. In known by the name of Kingsmill Islands, It consists of about fifteen islands, all of coral, and all lying very low, so that they might easily escape the attention of voyaging the asily escape the attention of voyaging the same of the houses wherein the chief. gers. As is always the case with coral islands, the navigation among them is very dangerous. They are mostly very long in proportion to their width, the largest of the group, called Taputeonea or Drummond Island, being nearly forty miles in length, and in many places not a mile in width.

The inhabitants of these islands have a character for ferocity which is not often to be found among this race of Polynesians, and are said to be lower in the human scale than any whom we have hitherto described. Those of one of the group, called Pitt Island, are said to be less liable to this charge than any other, being quiet, peaceable, and not so perpetually at war as is the case with the inhabitants of the other islands.

Their color is approaching nearer to black than that of the inhabitants of Tonga and Samoa, and the people are of more moderate stature than those of the latter group of islands. They are well made and slender, and have black and glossy though rather fine hair. The mouth is large, but has nothing of the negro character about it and the teeth are kept very white. The nose is mostly aquiline, and the hair of the beard and moustache black, and by no means coarse.

It is rather remarkable that the people of Pitt Island are not only more quiet and peaceable than their neighbors, but are also of a lighter hue, approaching in this respect the naturally peaceful though courageous inhabitants of Tonga. Their faces are oval and neatly rounded, and their features delicate. It may be that they have been modified by the mixture with the Samoans or Tongans, who have been blown out of their course by gales, landed on the island, and gradually became absorbed in the commu-

Architecture among the Kingsmill Islands is rather distinguished for strength and massiveness than for beauty, the natives preferring to employ their artistic powers on smaller objects, such as swords, spears, and similar articles. The houses vary much in size and form according to their uses. For example, the ordinary dwelling-house of the Kingsmill Islanders consists of two stories, the upper part being used as a sleep-

Some of the houses wherein the chiefs sit and talk among themselves and receive visitors are mere sheds, being nothing more than roofs supported on poles. As is usually the case in Polynesia, there is in every village a central council house, in which the people assemble on stated occasions. It is of enormous dimensions, having a lofty roof thatched with leaves and lined with matting. Several examples of their houses are illustrated on the 1035th page, and the reader will see that the lower part affords a complete and yet an airy refuge from the sun in the heat of the day, while the upper part, which is too hot to be comfortable during the daytime, forms comfortable sleeping - rooms at

Dress varies much according to the par-ticular island. Tattooing is practised by both sexes, but the women are far less decorated than the men, the lines being very fine and far apart. The men are tattooed at the age of twenty, the process being always left in the hands of professional tattooers, who, as in other islands of Polynesia, are paid according to the celebrity which they have attained, in some cases obtaining very large fees. They dress chiefly in mats made of the pandanus leaf cut into narrow strips, and dved brown and vellow. These strips are plaited together in a very ingenious fashion so as to form diamond or square patterns. A small cape, worn, in poncho fashion, with a slit in the middle, through which the head passes, is worn over the neck, and a conical cap of pandanus leaf is worn on the head.

The dress of the women consists of a petticoat of leaf-strips reaching from the waist to the knees, and fastened by a thin rope, sometimes five or six hundred feet in length, made of human hair. On the rope are strung at intervals beads made of cocoa - nut and shells, ground so as to fit closely together, and strung alternately so as to form a contrast between the white shell and the dark cocoa.-nut.

Ir has already been mentioned that the Kingsmill Islanders are a warlike people. War, indeed, seems to be their chief business, and indeed their whole thoughts appear to

be given amusem There is mill Isla large gro in a circi the com midst. many otl ably acco for exan sport, an Betting, Kingsmil utterly al require t

This be natural t formidabl actly suit people by contentin the Kings weapons so many l The spe on the 10

mens in

examples For war the name they are meant mo have often weapons ti with a sha ray, or eve they are fo ferocious is infer by lo side of eac shark's too partly to sh and partly by which it

On refer reader will sharply edg edges are that their cu Indeed, the have such a they must b tion. I have with them. handling the riosity. Although

blade of the the makers v own conver sented in fig into which t tightly. A and a corres of the sword ced at the bow of er the natives are they always make eity.

entirely open. In gsmill Islands are e to those of Nicescribed on page

erein the chiefs sit es and receive vising nothing more there is in every ouse, in which the occasions. It is naving a lofty roof ned with matting. houses are illusand the reader will ffords a complete om the sun in the upper part, which le during the dayleeping - rooms at

ording to the parare far less decolines being very en are tattooed at cess being always essional tattooers, of Polynesia, are ebrity which they es obtaining very efly in mats made nto narrow strips, ow. These strips wery ingenious worn, in poncho middle, through s worn over the pandanus leaf is

consists of a petng from the waist d by a thin rope, red feet in length, he rope are strung of cocoa - nut and closely together, as to form a conhell and the dark

entioned that the a warlike people. eir chief business, oughts appear to

be given to fighting. Even their principal amusement is of a combatant character. There is nothing which delights the Kingsmill Islanders so much as cock fighting, and in the property of the people way he formed the results of the people way he formed the results of the heard o in a circle, eagerly watching the progress of the combat which is taking place in the midst. Cock fighting is largely practised in many other countries, but is almost invariably accompanied by betting. The Malays, for example, are passionately fond of the sport, and wager whole fortunes upon it. Betting, however, has no charms for the Kingsmill Islander, whose martial soul is utterly absorbed in the fight, and does not require the additional excitement of bet-

This being the nature of the people, it is natural that their weapons should be of a formidable character. They are indeed exactly suitable to the fierce and bloodthirsty people by whom they are made. Instead of contenting himself with a club or a spear, the Kingsmill Islander must needs arm his weapons with sharks' teeth, which cut like

so many lancets.

The spears and swords which are shown on the 1041st page are drawn from specimens in my collection, and are admirable examples of these extraordinary weapons.

For want of a better word, we must use the name of sword for these weapons, as they are constructed with edges, and are meant more for striking than thrusting. I have often wondered that in none of these weapons that I have seen is the point tipped with a sharp bone, such as that of the sting-ray, or even with a shark's tooth. Perhaps they are formidable enough even for these ferocious islanders, as the reader may easily infer by looking at the illustration. By the side of each figure is a specimen of the shark's tooth drawn on an enlarged scale, partly to show the nature of the tooth itself, and partly to exhibit the principal methods by which it is fastened in its place.

On referring to these illustrations, the reader will see that the teeth are not merely sharply edged and pointed, but that their edges are finely and regularly serrated, so that their cutting power is greatly increased. Indeed, the weapons armed with these teeth have such a facility of inflicting wounds that they must be handled with the greatest caution. I have cut myself more than once with them, and visitors who insist upon handling them generally suffer for their cu-

Although these teeth are fastened to the blade of the weapon on the same principle, the makers vary the detail according to their own convenience. In the weapon represented in fig. 1. a slit runs along each edge, into which the bases of the teeth fit rather tightly. A hole is bored through the tooth, and a corresponding one through the edge of the sword, and each tooth is fixed in its

round the wrist, and a piece of the hard, ivory-like skate-skin holds it in its place.

The next, fig. 2, shows a much more elaborate weapon, which, instead of consisting of a single piece, has one central blade and three auxiliary blades. Moreover, as the reader may see by carefully examining the illustration, there are four rows of teeth instead of two on each blade, and the teeth are larger and more deeply serrated than those of the other weapon. In this case the maker has most ingeniously contrived to spare himself the trouble of making a fresh tie for every tooth, which, as upwards of two hundred teeth are employed, would have been a very tedious business.

Firstly, he has shaped the wooden blades

with four bold ridges, and cut a slight groove along each ridge, so as to keep the teeth straight. Instead of troubling himself to bore holes in the sword as well as in the tooth, he has laid along the edges of each groove a strip of elastic wood obtained from the rib of the palm leaf, which is as hard and elastic as whalebone. The sinnet has then been passed through the holes in the teeth, and over all them palm-leaf strips, so that one piece of sinnet serves to fasten four teeth. As in the other case, the sinnet is exceedingly fine, and is passed several times round the sword. It is observable that in this weapon the teeth have been most carefully selected and graduated, the largest and long-est being near the handle, and diminishing equally to the point, where they are comparatively small.

The auxiliary blades diverge more than is shown in the illustration, and it is hardly possible to imagine a more formidable weapon, especially when employed against the naked skin of a savage. In actual warfare the Kingsmill Islander has a mode of protecting himself, which will be presently men-tioned; but in a sudden skirmish or a quarrel the sword would be used with terrible effect. As may be inferred from its shape, it is not merely used as a striking weapon, but is driven violently backward and forward against the body of the antagonist, one or more of the blades being sure to

take effect somewhere.

The next sword, fig. 3, has the teeth fixed exactly in the same manner as those of the many-bladed sword, as may be seen by reference to the single tooth, where is seen not only the tooth but the strips of leaf stem between which it is placed, and the mode of fastening off the sinnet. The wooden blade of this weapon is quite unlike hat of the others, being marked with a rich black graining, to which the glittering white teeth form an admirable contrast.

The last of these swords, fig. 4, is remark-

able for the cross-guard. I cannot but think that the maker must have seen an European sword with a cross-guard, and made his own in imitation of it. Otherwise, without the least idea of the object of a guard, it is not easy to see why he should have armed the guard with teeth, especially in the centre, or where they come against the handle,

and must be quite ineffectual.

The Kingsmill Islanders do not restrict the sharks' teeth to the swords, but also use them as armature to their spears. One of these spears, also in my collection, is fifteen feet in length, and about as formidable a weapon as can well be imagined. It is made of a very light wood, so that it may be wielded more easily, and at the butt is nearly as thick as a man's wrist, tapering gradually to the point. The butt is unarmed, and rounded for about four feet, so as to act as a handle, but from this point to the tip it is rather flattened, like the sword blades, for the more convenient reception of the teeth, which are fixed along each edge nearly to the point of the weapon. The teeth are fastened by means of the leaf ribs. In order to render it a more dangerous weapon, it is furnished with three projections, also armed with teeth, and made exactly like the auxiliary blades of the sword, though much smaller.

This remarkable spear is shown in the illustration No. 2, on the next page, accompanied by sections and a portion drawn on a larger scale, so as to show the mode of its construction. Fig. a represents the method in which the teeth are fastened to the weapon by the sinnet passing through the hole in the teeth and bound down by the cross loop under the little strips of wood. At fig. b is a section of the spear, showing the oval shape of the weapon, and the mode in which the teeth are supported by the wooden strips at each side. It is worthy of notice, that if the jaw of a saw-fish were to be cut through the section would present a

wonderfully similar appearance.

In order to show more clearly the source whence the natives obtain such vast numbers of sharks' teeth, I have introduced a drawing of a shark's mouth on same page, taken from a specimen in my collection. The reader will see that the jaws are furnished with row after row of teeth, all lying upon each other, except the outer teeth, and constructed so that when one tooth is broken or falls out of the jaw, another takes its place.

In the jaw which is here figured, the teeth lie in five rows, and altogether there are three hundred of them - largest toward the middle of the jaw, and becoming gradually smaller toward the angles of the mouth. The native, therefore, has no difficulty either in procuring the requisite number of teeth, or in selecting them of the requisite shape

and dimensions.

That they may look more imposing in battle, the chiefs wear a cap made of the skin of the diodon, or porcupine fish, which, when inflated, is covered with sharp spikes projecting in every direction, and upon this cap is fixed a bunch of feathers. Both sexes fight in battle, and both are killed indiscriminately, women and children being slaughtered as well as the warriors.

The chiefs, of whom mention has just been made, are the principal persons in the islands. With one exception, there is no chief who is looked upon as a king, ruling over subordinate chiefs, each being independent of the other. Government is carried on by a council of chiefs, the eldest taking the first place, and the others being reckoned by seniority. To this council are referred crimes of great importance, while those of lesser moment are left to be punished by the offended person and the relatives. The solitary exception to the independence of the chiefs is in the three islands Apamama, Nanouki, and Koria, which are governed by the chief of Apamama.

Each chief has a mark peculiar to himself, and when a stranger arrives, and can place himself under the protection of a chief, he receives the mark of his protector. The symbol is a very simple one, and consists of a patch on the forehead, made of some colored paint, and a stripe drawn down the middle of the face as far as the chin. Next in rank to the chiefs come the land-holders, and the slaves form the third and last division of the

people.

In order to accommodate the council of chiefs and the people in their public assemblies, there is in every village a central town-house, called the Mariapa. It is built very much after the fashion of the Samoan houses, having an enormous arched roof, and the walls being composed of posts and matting. It might be thought from their warlike and ferocious character that the Kingsmill Islanders are cannibals. Such, however, is not the case. It is very true that in some instances portions of a human body have been eaten. For example, if a celebrated warrior is killed, the victors some-times cook the body, and each eats a small portion of it. This however is done, not from any predilection for human flesh, but from a feeling of revenge, and probably from some underlying notion that those who partake of such food also add to themselves a portion of the courage which once animated the body. Animated by the same spirit, they preserve the skulls of such warriors, and use them as drinking vessels.

The skulls of the dead are always preserved by their friends, provided that they have died natural deaths, or their bodies been recovered in battle. The body is first laid out on mats for eight days, being every day washed, oiled, and laid out in the sunshine at noon, while the friends mourn

(2.) SHAR

cap made of the upine fish, which, with sharp spikes on, and upon this thers. Both sexes are killed indischildren being

warriors.

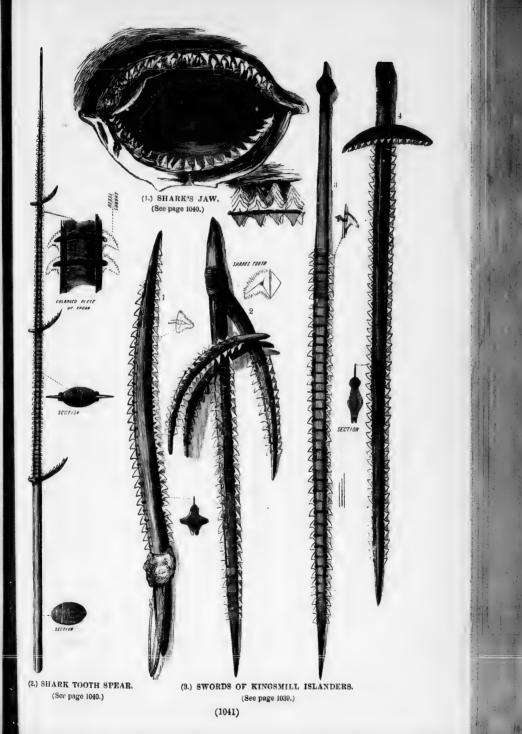
mention has just
pal persons in the
pation, there is no
as a king, ruling
each being indecovernment is carchiefs, the eldest
the others being
o this council are
importance, while
re left to be punson and the relation to the inden'the three islands
Korfa, which are

Apamama.

peculiar to himrarrives, and can
rotection of a chief,
is protector. The
te, and consists of a
de of some colored
down the middle
nin. Next in rank
ad-holders, and the
last division of the

date the council of heir public assemvillage a central lariapa. It is built ion of the Samoan mous arched roof, posed of posts and hought from their character that the cannibals. Such, e. It is very true or example, if a celethe victors some-each eats a small wever is done, not r human flesh, but ,and probably from that those who pardd to themselves a hich once animated y the same spirit, of such warriors, g vessels.

ad are always preprovided that they hs, or their bodies . The body is first it days, being every aid out in the sunthe friends mourn,



dance, and body is the the skull i stowed aw skulls of the bring them them with f When a fan take the skul In one p Pitt Island, extraordina The body is and wailed after the fir mat spread made of tor

dance, and sing praises of the dead. The body is then buried for a time, and astly, the skull is removed, cleaned, oiled, and stowed away. Each family preserve the skulls of their ancestors, and, occasionally, bring them out, oil them afresh, wreathe them with flowers and set food before them. them with flowers, and set food before them. When a family change their residence, they take the skulls with them.

In one portion of the Kingsmill group, Pitt Island, or Makin, there exists the most extraordinary funeral ceremony in the world. The body is washed, oiled, exposed to the sun, and wailed over, as already related. But, after the first wailing, it is laid on a new

the bearers relieving each other at intervals.

During this time a fire is kept burning in the house, and is never extinguished night or day.

After the two years have expired, the head is removed, and the skull cleaned and preserved, as has been already mentioned, and not until that time are the bones wrapped up in mats and buried. The place mat spread over a great oblong plate or tray made of tortoise-shell sewed together. A marked with three stones.

CHAPTER CVI.

THE MARQUESAS ISLANDS.

DRESS - AMUSEMENTS - WAR - BURIAL

ORIGIN OF THE NAME - APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES - THEIR DRESS - THE ELABORATE TATTOO OF THE MEN - DIFFERENCE IN STATURE BETWEEN THE SEXES - CABE OF COMPLEXION - A BLEACE-ING PROCESS-A MAN IN FULL DRESS-MODES OF WEARING THE HAIR-THE CHIEF'S NECK-LACE - CLOSE SHAVING - PECULIAR HEADDRESS - METHOD OF OBTAINING FEATHERS - ARCHI-TECTURE IN THE MARQUESAS - AMUSEMENTS - DANCING AND STILT-WALKING - THE AMPRI-THEATRE OR PAHOOA - WAR - TROPHIES OF VICTORY - MODE OF WARFARE - DESTRUCTION OF PROPERTY - ETIQUETTE OF WAR - REPLACING A PRISONER - CANOES AND FISHING - FLY-FISHING IN THE MARQUESAS - BURIAL CUSTOMS.

WE now come to that very interesting group of islands called the MARQUESAS, or MEN-DANA ISLANDS. Both these names derive their origin from the Spanish navigator Men-dana, who discovered them nearly two hundred years ago. The discoverer named them
Los Marquesas de Mendoça, in compliment
to the then Viceroy of Peru, and by many succeeding voyagers the islands have been called by the name of their discoverer.

The character of the islands is rather peculiar, and very picturesque. They are craggy, mountainous, and volcanic, having exceedingly lofty peaks in the centre, which look at a distance as if they were the ruins of vast buildings. Being situated near the equator, their temperature is warm, and, as at the same time they are well watered, the vegetation is peculiarly luxuriant. Like most of the Polynesian Islands, the Mar-quesas are surrounded with coral reefs; but these are not so large as is generally the case, so that, although the navigation among them is not so difficult as in many islands. the ships do not find that protection from storms which is afforded by the great coral reefs of other islands.

The inhabitants are splendid specimens of humanity, the men being remarkable for their gigantic size, great strength, and fine shape, which emulates those of the ancient Greek statues. One of the chiefs was

feet eight inches in height, and said that he knew another chief who was at least a foot taller than himself.

In general they wear but little raiment, a slight piece of bark cloth round the waist being the only garment which they think needful, the place of clothing being supplied by the tattoo. There are many nations where this decoration is worn; but there are no people on the face of the earth who carry it out so fully as do the Marquesans, every part of their bodies, even to the crown of the head and the fingers and toes, being covered with the pattern. The "Tattooed chiefs" on the opposite page illustrate the extent to which the Marquesans carry this custom. This extreme elaboration is only to be found in the men, the women contenting themselves with a bracelet or two tattooed on their arms, and a few similar ornaments here and there. A very interesting description of the tattooing of the Marquesans is given in Langsdorft's "Travels."

"Sometimes a rich islander will, either

from generosity, ostentation, or love to his wife, make a feast in honor of her when she has a bracelet tattooed round her arm, or perhaps her ear ornamented. A hog is then killed, and the friends of both sexes are invited to partake of it, the occasion of the feast being made known to them. It is expected that the same courtesy should be remeasured carefully, and was found to be six | turned in case of the wife of any of the guests ABORATE TATTOO OF LEXION — A BLEACH-THE CHIEF'S NECK-FEATHERS — ARCHI-RING — THE AMPHI-E — DESTRUCTION OF HING — FLY-FISHING

, and said that he as at least a foot

t little raiment, a round the waist which they think any being supplied to many nations orn; but there are to earth who carry larquesans, every to the crown of and toes, being The "Tattoed age illustrate the uesans carry this opration is only to comen contenting or two tattooed

milar ornaments interesting def the Marquesans Fravels, " nder will, either

nder will, either on, or love to his of her when she und her arm, or d. A hog is then ooth sexes are incocasion of the othem. It is exest should be reany of the guests



being pune casions on hog's flesh. "If, in a roots, and any one wh commonly distribute a certain t poor artists some stroke to come for brethren ar if in future

the others " The san several of what we co be given to called, even time of scar have been t absolute tro among each

"The fig propriate or ferent parts. partly of of reference to islands; and Friendly Isla an accurate monds, and guishable be resemble ver la Grecque.
"The mos

over the who monly ornan a shield; on somotimes by such directio very well pres and to be ac dimensions o

"Upon the begins at the vertebra. In figures which human face. leg is an oval good effect. much taste an tenderest par

example—are
As may be a
on the 1046th tooed with the stowed on the pattern, so the in a very tig Among the M nese, very long being punctured. This is one of the few oc- of rank, being a proof that the wearer is not casions on which women are allowed to eat hog's flesh.

"If, in a very dry year, bread-fruit, hogs, roots, and other provisions, become scarce, any one who has a good stock of them (which commonly happens to the chief), in order to distribute the stores, keeps open table for a certain time to an appointed number of poor artists, who are bound to give in return some strokes of the tattoo to all who choose to come for it. By virtue of a tapu, all these brethren are engaged to support each other. if in future some happen to be in need while the others are in affluence.

"The same person may be a member of several of these societies; but, according to what we could learn, a portion must always be given to the priest, or magician, as he is called, even if he be not a member. In a time of scarcity, also, many of the people who have been tattooed in this way unite as an absolute troop of banditti, and share equally among each other all that they can plun ler

"The figures with which the body is tattooed are chosen with great care, and ap-propriate ornaments are selected for the different parts. They consist partly of animals, partly of other objects which have some reference to the manners and customs of the islands; and every figure has here, as in the Friendly Islands, its particular name. Upon an accurate examination, curved lines, diamonds, and other designs are often distin-guishable between rows of punctures, which resemble very much the ornaments called à

"The most perfect symmetry is observed over the whole body. The head of a man is tattooed in every part; the breast is com-monly ornamented with a figure resembling a shield; on the arms and thighs are strips sometimes broader, sometimes narrower, a such directions that these people might be very well presumed to have studied anatomy. and to be acquainted with the course and dimensions of the muscles.

la Grecque.

"Upon the back is a large cross, which begins at the neck and ends with the last vertebra. In the front of the thigh are often figures which seem intended to represent the human face. On each side of the calf of the leg is an oval figure, which produces a very good effect. The whole, in fact, displays much taste and discrimination. Some of the tenderest parts of the body—the eyelids, for example—are the only parts not tattooed."

As may be seen by the illustration No. 2 on the 1046th page, even the hands are tattooed with the same minute care that is bestowed on the body. Each finger has its own pattern, so that the hand looks as if enclosed in a very tight-fitting glove. The reader will notice the great length of the nails. Among the Marquesans, as among the Chinese, very long nails are esteemed as a mark

obliged to do any hard work.

This elaborate ornamentation answers the purpose of dress, and is considered as such. Indeed, it would be useless to undergo so much pain, and to pay the operator such costly fees, if the tattooing were to be hidden by clothing. The men, therefore, wear nothing but a slight cloth round their waists, and the women of rank a similar garment, with the addition of a larger piece which they throw over their bodies to keep off the darkening rays of the sun.

Few phenomena struck the earlier travellers more than the difference in appearance and stature between the men and the women; and the same writer who has just been quoted remarks more than once that it was difficult to believe that the undersized, stumpy, awkward women could have been the parents of the magnificent, gigantic, and graceful men. There is, however, a great distinction between the women of rank and those of the lower orders. As was afterward discovered, the better class of women, who for some time kept themselves aloof from the strangers, being well developed, and of a fair complexion, about which they were very careful, enveloped themselves in their bark cloths, and never ventured into the sunshine without holding over their heads a bunch of leaves by way of parasol.

So careful are they of their complexions, that if they find themselves getting sunburnt they have a mode of bleaching themselves again, which they adopt before all great ceremonies, though at the cost of much time and trouble. They take the sap of three trees, with which they anoint the whole body. The immediate effect of the mixture is to dye the skin of a deep black. The pigment is allowed to remain on the skin for six days, during which time the woman remains within the house. At the expiration of that time she bathes, when all the black dye comes off, and the skin is left beautifully fair.

A woman who has just undergone this process, and who has dressed herself in all her native finery, is a very striking object, her body being gracefully enveloped in bark cloth, her hair adorned with flowers, and her fair skin almost without ornament except upon the feet, hands, and arms, which appear as if she were wearing boots, gloves, and bracelets.

The mode of tattooing is almost exactly like that of the Samoan islanders, except that the "comb" is made of the wing-bone of the tropic bird. The operation is always conducted in certain houses belonging to the professional tattooers, who lay on these buildings a tapu, which renders them unapproachable by women. As is the case in Samoa, the best tattooers are men of great importance, and are paid highly for their services, a Marquesan thinking that he is

bound to be liberal toward a man to whom he is indebted for the charms which he values so highly. These men gain their skill by practising on the lower orders, who are too poor to pay for being tattooed, and who would rather wear a bad tattoo than none at all. A considerable amount is generally exacted at each operation, which lasts from three to six months; and so elaborate is the process, that a really complete tattoo can hardly be finished until the man is thirty years old.

By the time that the last piece of tattoo is executed, the first generally begins to fade, and if the man is rich enough he has the pattern renewed. Some men have been tattooed three times, and, as the patterns cannot be made to coincide precisely with each other, the result is that the whole skin becomes nearly as dark as that of a negro. In this state it is greatly admired, not because the effect is agreeable to the eye, but because it is an indubitable mark of wealth. The pigment used in the tattooing is the well-known aleurita, or candle nut, burned to a fine charcoal and mixed with water.

The ornaments worn by the men are more imposing than those of the women. In the first place, they allow the hair to grow to a considerable length, and dispose of it in various ways. For a number of years it is tied in a bunch on the top of the head; but when the man is rich enough to be entirely tattooed, he shaves all the head with the exception of a patch at each side, in order to allow the pattern of the tattoo to be extended over his head. In such a case, the tuft of hair at each side is still suffered to grow long, but is twisted into a conical form, so as to make a son of horn projecting outward over each temple. Examples of this curious mode of wearing the hair may be seen in the illustration No. 1, on page 1046.

Sometimes a man may be seen wearing the whole of his hair in curled ringlets. Such men are cultivating a crop for sale, as the Marquesans are very fond of decorating with these ringlets the handles of their spears and clubs, and of making them into ornamental figures which are worn on the ankles. The most valued of these decorations are long white human beards, which are grown for the express purpose, and sold at a very high price. The purchaser uses them either as plumes for his head or as ornamental appendages to his conch-shell trumpet. One of these beards is now always reckoned as equivalent in value to a musket, and before fire-arms were intro-duced was estimated at an equally high

The ear ornaments of the Marquesan men are very curious. An univalve shell, of a dead-white color, is cut into a circular shape, and filled with a sort of cement made of the resin and wood of the bread-fruit tree. Into fixed a large plate of mother-o'-pearl, deco-

with figures in relief, so that the whole ornament looks like a very large white headed The stem is pushed through a hole in the lobe of the ear, so that the head of the nail projects forward, as seen in the right-hand figure of "tattooed chiefs" on page 1046. The name of the ornament is "taiana,"

Ornaments made of whales' teeth are as fashionable among the Marquesans as among the Polynesians, and are worn by the chiefs suspended round their necks. Wooden or-Wooden ornaments bleached white are also used, and others are cut from shells. One ornament of which they are very fond is made from wood, wax, and seeds. It is in the form of a horseshoe, the framework being made of wood, which is thickly covered with wax. Into this are pressed the pretty black and scarlet seeds of the Abrus precatorius, arranged in rows radiating to the circumference. One of these ornaments is shown in the illustration No. 3, on the same page and is drawn from a specimen in my collection. It measures eight inches in diameter, and is slightly concave on the outside, and convex on the inside. Very great pains have been taken in arranging the seeds; they are placed in a regular series of double rows, the black portion of each seed being pressed into the wax, so that only the brilliant scarlet portion is visible. Upward of eight hundred beads have been used in making this ornament, so that the trouble which is taken by the natives is very great.

Some of the chiefs wear a very curious ornament, which seems to take the place of the hair which they shave from their own heads, and is nothing more than a large bunch of hair cut from the head of a wife. As a rule, the Marquesan removes all hair from the body, except from the head, only one or two of the very old men allowing a few straggling hairs on the chin.

In Langsdorff's travels an amusing incident occurred, illustrative of that feeling. In those days close shaving was the custom in Europe, so that when the officers went on shore they were found to have conformed to the fashion of the islands. They were talking very amicably together, when suddenly a chief stared intently into the face of one of the officers, and, with horror depicted in his features, rushed forward, and grasped him tightly. The officer naturally thought that he was going to be murdered; but the fact was, that the Marquesan had actually discovered a hair on his face, and was going to pull it out with his shell tweezers

When they wish to be considered as wearing full dress, the better class of men wear a most elaborate cap, made of fibre, feathers, and shells. First, a broad fillet is plaited from cocoa-nut fibre, so as to pass round the forehead, after the manner of a cap without a crown. On the centre of this fillet is this cement is pressed an ivory stem, carved rated with carving. In the middle of this plate is fix plate of to that a still headdresse as is the c the Marqu

In the fil feathers, ei from that the fillet is ers will sta tropic bird who use th display gre Instead of the supply when they a out the two of time the supply is k because it respecting t among sava The house

peculiar, esp The native platform of being so en are required is from ten thirty feet lo is erected th back very n that the roo being perhapand the from naturally sm out stooping siderable po: As, however is so equable than otherwi

The interi two portions no covering other part is place, and tl The walls as Near the bac family bed. I about six fee the ground, a filled with d The sleepers back of their feet on the ot position, which for the purpo uncomfortable are hung the the owner, drums, slings The houses of so that they shade. The Marque

hat the whole orarge white headed through a hole in at the head of the een in the right-chiefs" on page ment is "taiana." nales' teeth are as quesans as among vorn by the chiefs cks. Wooden orre also used, and . One ornament

nd is made from It is in the framework being ckly covered with d the pretty black 1 brus precatorius, to the circumfernents is shown in he same page and in my collection. a diameter, and is tside, and convex pains have been seeds; they are of double rows, eed being pressed the brilliant scar-

ble which is taken ιt. ar a very curious take the place of e from their own ore than a large ne head of a wife, removes all hair

vard of eight hun-

ed in making this

m the head, only old men allowing he chin. an amusing inci-

of that feeling. g was the custom the officers went to have conformed nds. They were gether, when sudly into the face of th horror depicted vard, and grasped naturally thought nurdered; but the esan had actually ce, and was going

l tweezers. onsidered as wearclass of men wear of fibre, feathers d fillet is plaited to pass round the r of a cap without e of this fillet is her-o'-pearl, deco-

plate is fixed a smaller but similarly shaded late of tortoise-shell, and in the middle of that a still smaller disc of pearl shell. Some headdresses have three of these ornaments, as is the case with that which is figured in the Marquesan chief on the 1046th page.

In the fillet are also fastened a number of feathers, either from the tail of the cock or from that of the tropic bird, so that when the fillet is bound on the forehead the feathers will stand upright. The feathers of the tropic bird are greatly prized by the natives, who use them for various ornaments, and display great ingenuity in procuring them. Instead of killing the birds, and so stopping the supply of feathers, they steal upon them the supply or leadners, they stead upon them when they are asleep, and dexterously twitch out the two long tail-feathers. In process of time the feathers grow again, and so the supply is kept up. I mention the custom because it is contrary to the recklessness respecting the future which is usually found black and red. among savages.

The houses of the Marquesans are rather peculiar, especially those of the better kind. The native builder begins with making a nlatform of large stones, many of them being so enormous that ten or twelve men are required to move them. This platform is from ten to eleven feet high, and about thirty feet long by twelve wide. Upon this is erected the house, which is built with the back very much higher than the front, so that the roof slopes considerably, the back being perhaps twelve or more feet in height, and the front only five feet. The door is naturally small, and no one can enter without stooping. The walls at the end are no higher than that of the front, so that a considerable portion of each end is left open. As, however, the climate of the Marquesas is so equable, this is rather an advantage than otherwise.

The interior of the house is divided into two portions, one of which is left bare, with no covering to the stony floor, while the other part is considered as the dwellingplace, and the floor is covered with mats. The walls are also covered with matting. Near the back wall is the strangely made family bed. Two horizontal poles are placed about six feet apart, and a foot or so from the ground, and the space between them is filled with dry grass covered with mats. The sleepers lie on the mats, resting the back of their heads on one pole, and their feet on the other, and pass the night in this position, which seems to have been invented for the purpose of making the sleepers as uncomfortable as possible. Round the walls are hung the weapons and implements of the owner, such as spears, clubs, stilts, drums, slings, axes, and similar articles. The houses are always placed near trees, so that they may have the advantage of

erecting small and highly decorated buildings in honor of the children of great chiefs, These buildings are considered as acknowledgments of the legitimacy of the children; and if they were omitted, the parents would consider themselves insulted. They are protected by tapu, and after they are made are not repaired, but allowed to decay. Dr. Bennett, in his "Whaling Voyage round the Globe," thus describes those edifices:

"This compliment had been paid to Eutiti's daughter at Vaitahu a few weeks before our arrival. It consisted of two small huts, neatly built with peeled hibiscus rods, which were covered with white tappa (bark cloth) and stained cocoa-nut sinnet. The interior was occupied by many of the same rods ranged vertically, graduated in height, and entwined with bunches of herbs. The face of the building was ornamented by a few boards, painted with mystic figures in

'The white and delicate appearance of the hibiscus rods, the fluttering pennants of fine tappa, and the various gaudy hues employed, gave the entire edifice a fantastic and imposing appearance. A low stone wall enclosed the two huts, and within its precincts were several bundles of cocoa-nut leaves placed upright, and intended to represent the tutelary deities of the spot. striking edifice of the same description had been erected in honor of Eutiti's son at Anamaihai, the territory of his guardian. It differed from that dedicated to his sister in being placed on an elevated stone plat-form, as well as in having a long wicker basket placed at the entrance."

In every village there is a sort of amphi-theatre, in which the dancing and similar amusements are conducted. For this purpose the natives choose a sheltered and level spot, surrounded on all sides with rising banks. The middle of the amphitheatre is carefully smoothed and covered with mats, and the rising banks serve as seats for the spectators.

When a dance is to be performed, the mats are laid afresh, and a large amount of food is prepared. The spectators take the food with them, and, scated on the banks, remain there throughout the greater part of the day. The dances are not very graceful, consisting principally of jumping, without moving from the same spot. Various ornaments are used by the dancers, the most curious of which are the finger-rings, which are made of plaited fibre, adorned with the long tail-feathers of the tropic bird. When women dance they are not allowed to wear clothing of any description, and this for a curious reason. None dance except those whose husbands or brothers have been killed in war or taken prisoners, and the absence of clothing is accepted as an expression of sorrow on their part, and of ven-The Marquesans have a curious custom of geance on the part of the spectators.

They have several other amusements, which are conducted in this theatre, or pahooa, as it is called. The Marquesans are most accomplished stilt-walkers, and go through performances which would excite the envy of any professional acrobat. One of the games in which they most delight is a race on stilts, in which each performer tries, not only to distance his opponents, but to cross their course and upset them. They are such adepts at this pastime that they walk over the rough stones of the house platform with ease and security.

Is the reader will refer to the portrait of the Marquesan chief, he will see that the head is not only decorated with the feather fillet, but is also covered with a veil that falls on either side of the face. This is a mark of war, and is worn when chiefs go into battle. The Marquesans do not use the bow and arrow, but they throw spears, sling stones, and use clubs. The slings are made of plaited grass, and are very powerful, often exceeding five feet in length, and carrying stones of a considerable size. The spears are generally about ten feet long, and the clubs are carved out of hard wood, which is made harder by burying the weapons for a considerable time in the mud.

They are fierce in war, and are never satisfied until they have gained a trophy of victory. When a Marquesan kills an enemy, he cuts off the head of his fallen antagonist, tears open the skull, and eats the brain. He then cleans the skull very carefully, adorns it with tufts of bristles, and slings it by a cord to his girdle. When he goes to battle again he always carries this trophy with him, partly on account of the respect in which it is held by his comrades, and partly in order to strike awe into the enemy by the sight of so redoubtable a warrior.

According to most travellers, the Marquesans are a quarrelsome people among themselves, and much addicted to making raids in each other's districts. These districts are generally divided from each other by natural boundaries, such as mountain-spurs and ridges, many of which are of enormous height, and so steep and precipitous as to be almost inaccessible. The worst part of their mode of warfare is not the cruelty exercised on the vanquished warriors, but on the destruction to property, and the distress inflicted on non-combatants.

When one chief intends to make war upon another, he tries to steal by night into the district of his enemy, and silently damages all the bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees he can find. The former are stripped of their bark, and, though their vitality is so great that they are not absolutely killed by the injury, they bear no more fruit for five years, and thus the whole population are deprived of an essential article of dict, and for a long time are reduced to great straits for want of food.

The cocoa-nut trees are killed after a different manner. The destroyer walks up the tree after the mode employed by these islanders; namely, by applying the palms of his hands to either side of the trunk, and so ascending the tree in monkey fashion. He then bruises with a stone the central shoot, or "cabbage" of the palm, and descends the tree, knowing that it must soon die. The reason for the fatal nature of the injury is, that the tree is an endogenous one, and consequently the destruction of the central bud involves the death of the tree. Sometimes the tree is killed in another way, a sea-slug (bèche demer) being laid at the root of the cabbage," killing the tree as it decays.

Quarrelsome as they are and cruel to the persons and property of the vanquished, they have yet some slight etiquette in war, one rule of which is so curious that it must be given in the relator's own words:—

"June 18. — Captain Riggs of the General Gates, just arrived from the Marquesas, informs us that he has had a narrow escape of his life there. At the island of Nukahiva as he was attempting to go on shore, a native chief, assisted by a posse of dependants, seized and carried him off, stripped him of his clothing, and then presented him to the king, an infirm old man, who took him under his protection. That protection, however, could have little availed him, for the sovereign had not power to set the prisoner at liberty unless a suitable ransom were paid for him.

"The captors first demanded five muskets and five barrels of gunpowder, which being agreed to, they rose in their violent extertion, and required more; and this also being conceded, they still refused to liberate him unless their rapacity was still further gratified. The captain then resolutely stood out, and insisted on being set at liberty, at the same time having but small hopes of obtaining it, or any other issue of his captivity except to be killed and eaten by these cannibals, some of whom had conspired to spear him, but the king's authority restrained their violence.

"At length, however, the terms of ransom being settled, he was ordered to be released; but here an unexpected difficulty arose. The law of the land requires that whoever captures another on board of a boat must, when the prisoner is at liberty, carry him down to the water again, and reinstate him in the same situation as he was found. This the cowardly and treacherous chief, who had readily acted the part of kidnapper, was unwilling to do, lest he should be shot from the ship. The obligation, however, being indispensable, he obtained the captain's assurance that no harm should be attempted against him, and then performed the ungracious office. When Captain Riggs had reached his vessel, the natives on the shore gave three hideous howls,

which we of the cre Finding profitable to take th ity and d same ever ing to cut temerity. this kind wonderful rying with they faster water, the Fortunate. time to say been seen until the have drags

THE carnished with all Polyne vessels. Ta small sta which the sis under much turn purpose of ers, when a They are

They are both with a lent modes a when they times bait is side, and are country. I core, they e which bears except that sent an insc A very i

fish is made out of a m ing a long side to repre at the extr This is arme one end of a attached to planted in t hoisted, and waves at fi leaping and manner that tion of the rally takes th it, and is ca cover the im Net fishing

but the most sportsmanlik the fisherm under water

killed after a dif. royer walks up the oyed by these isling the palms of the trunk, and 80 nkey fashion. He the central shoot, and descends the st soon die. The e of the injury is, nous one, and conof the central bud tree. Sometimes er way, a sea-slug t the root of the

e as it decays. and cruel to the the vanquished. etiquette in war, rious that it must wn words: ggs of the General

he Marquesas, innarrow escape of and of Nukahiya go on shore, a nasse of dependants, ff, stripped him of sented him to the ho took him under tection, however, him, for the sovset the prisoner at ansom were paid

nded five muskets wder, which being eir violent extorand this also being ed to liberate him still further gratisolutely stood out, at liberty, at the all hopes of obtainof his captivity exby these cannibals, ired to spear him, restrained their

the terms of rans ordered to be rexpected difficulty and requires that er on board of a soner is at liberty, ter again, and reituation as he was y and treacherous ed the part of kiddo, lest he should The obligation, sable, he obtained

at no harm should m, and then per-ffice. When Cap-his yessel, the naree hideous howle,

which were returned by three hearty cheers | net and a stick about two feet in length,

Finding that their captive had been so profitable to them, the natives tried boldly to take the ship, and displayed equal ingenuity and daring in their attempt. On the same evening a native was detected in trying to cut the cable, and was shot for his temerity. Finding that an open assault of this kind was useless, the natives, who are wonderful divers, swam off to the ship, carrying with them a rope, one end of which they fastened to the rudder, well under the water, the other end being carried ashore. Fortunately this trick was discovered in time to save the ship, and, had not the rope been seen, the natives would have waited until the vessel weighed anchor, and then have dragged her ashore.

In the above narrative the Marquesans are described as cannibals. It is, however, very doubtful whether they can be justly charged with this revolting custom.

THE canoes of the Marquesans are furnished with outriggers, after the custom of all Polynesia, and are well-built and swift vessels. They have, besides the outrigger, a small stage projecting over the stem, on which the steersman stands when the vessel is under sail. The bow of the canoe is ers, when advancing against an enemy.

They are very skilful in the fishing art, both with line and net. They have different modes of using both these implements. When they fish with the line, they sometimes bait the hook, pass the line over the side, and angle in the mode adopted in this country. But when they fish for the alba-core, they employ a totally different method, which bears some resemblance to fly fishing, except that the bait is not made to represent an insect, but a fish.

A very ingenious imitation of a flying fish is made by cutting the shape of the fish out of a mother-of-pearl shell, and insert-ing a long tuft of hog's bristles at either side to represent the wing fins, and another at the extremity to do duty for the tail. This is armed with a hook, and fastened to one end of a line, the other end of which is attached to the top of a long bamboo rod planted in the stern of the canoe. Sail is hoisted, and the vessel is driven over the waves at full speed, the sham flying-fish leaping and bounding through the air in a manner that wonderfully resembles the ac-tion of the living fish. The albacore natu-rally takes the bait for a real fish, leaps at it, and is caught before it has time to discover the imposition.

Net fishing is carried on in several modes,

jumps into the water, and dives among the coral, holding his net over the nooks and crevices with one hand, while with the stick he drives the fish out of their hiding places into the net.

By this mode of fishing great numbers are captured, but the fisherman is always exposed to two dangers. In the first place, there is a chance that a shark may come up unobserved, and carry off a limb, even if it does not kill the man. The Marquesans are such excellent swimmers that they care little for a shark as long as they can see him, and it is only when the terrible fish darts unexpectedly out of a hiding place that they know any real fear.

Sometimes a rather strange circumstance occasions the death of the diver. It has already been mentioned that up to the time when a man can afford to have his head tattooed he wears his hair very long, and tied up in a knot on the crown of his head. Before going into the water, the natives untie the fillet, and allow the hair to float down their backs. It has occasionally happened that a diver, who has thus prepared himself, finds, when he tries to rise to the surface of the water, that his long floating hair has become entangled in the branching coral; and, much turned up in front, probably for the purpose of acting as a defence to the rowsometimes drowned before he has time to extricate himself.

When a Marquesan dies a natural death, his relatives make great preparation for his funeral, including the usual accompaniment of feasting. They send for a "tana," or priest, who makes a long oration over the corpse, which is then delivered to the relatives, who have a long and disagrecable task before them. They first wash the body thoroughly, and then rub it with cocoa-nut oil, laying it in the sun, and turning it continually. Several times daily the corpse is newly anointed, until at last the combined effects of the sun and oil reduce it to a mummy. Wrapped in cloth, it is laid on a

bier, and deposited in the cemetery. Each district has its cemetery, or "morai," which is adorned with gigantic human figures carved in wood, and similar decorations. It is surrounded by a wall, and held in great respect by the inhabitants of its district. Unfortunately, the inhabitants of other districts hold it in no respect at all, and, when war is declared, try to steal out of the morai the body of any man of rank. When. therefore, war seems to be imminent, the bodies are carried away and hidden, or sometimes buried. A similar custom pre-vails in many parts of Polynesia, and Mr. Williams mentions an instance where a man but the most curious and perhaps the most sportsmanlike plan is that which compels the fisherman to pursue his occupation under water. He takes with him a hand-safety.

CHAPTER CVII.

NIUE, OR SAVAGE ISLAND.

ORIGIN - COSTUME - LAWS - BURIAL.

REASON FOR THE NAME OF THE ISLAND - SINGULAR LEGEND - THE SAILOR AMONG THE SAVAGES -APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES - A SAVAGE WAR DANCE - MODE OF DRESSING THE HAIR - COS. TUME OF THE MEN - A CURIOUS WEAPON - PRESUMED ORIGIN OF THE SAVAGE ISLANDERS-DEFEAT OF THE TONGANS - CODE OF LAWS AND PUNISHMENTS - CANOE MAKING - SAILING -NIUAN ARCHITECTURE - DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD,

groups, there lies an island which was called by Captain Cook "SAVAGE ISLAND," on account of the behavior of the natives, who not only declined his overtures of peace, but attacked him "like so many wild The native name of the island is boars," Niue.

This ferocity of theirs is due to an ancient custom of putting to death all strangers who land on their shores, a fate from which even their own people do not escape, if they have been absent for any length of time. The history of this strange people has of late years become better known, owing to the exertions of the missionaries, who have discovered that fear rather than ferocity was the cause of this savage custom. They had an idea that their island was naturally free from disease, and that all ailments were brought by foreigners, and they in consequence had a law that all foreigners should be killed as soon as they could be captured.

On one occasion a native teacher narrowly escaped death in consequence of his absence. He was obliged to exert all his powers of eloquence to persuade his countrymen to spare him for a time, so that he might keep himself far away from their residence, and purify himself by the healthy air of Niue.

When Mr. Williams visited the island, he contrived to induce two lads to go off with him for the purpose of being instructed. They were at first very miserable on board, and howled incessantly for the first few

BETWEEN the Hervey and the Tongan off to be fattened and eaten. Finding, however, that the sailors were eating pork, and not human flesh, they became reconciled to their lot, and were even pleased at the prospect of seeing new lands. These lads were taken to Raietea, and, having been educated for their task, were sent home again. Unfortunately, soon after their arrival, an epidemic disease spread over the island, and the natives, naturally attributing it to the two travellers, killed them both.

> The first white man who landed there since the time of Cook met with a singular fate. A ship was lying off the island, and bartering with the natives. Just as the ship got under weigh, the master flung one of the sailors overboard among the savages, who took him on shore, and held a great debate as to the course to be pursued. Some were for keeping up the old custom, and killing him, but others argued that the man had not landed of his own free will, and that he ought not to be liable to the usual penalty, even though salt water was in his eye - this being the mark of a shipwreck.

After a vast amount of discussion they agreed to a compromise, put him into a canoe, gave him a quantity of bananas and cocoa-nuts, and sent him out to sea. The man contrived to slip on shore again without being seen, and, after hiding in caves for some days, he succeeded in getting on board a whaler that was passing near the island.

The appearance of the natives as they were before the missionaries came to them was anything but prepossessing. Mr. Williams days, thinking that the white sailors were gives a graphic account of an old chief who cannibals and that they were only carried was induced, after much trouble, to come on NG THE SAVAGES—
NG THE HAIR—COS.
AVAGE ISLANDERS—
MAKING—SAILING—

eating pork, and ame reconciled to eased at the pros-These lads were ng been educated to me again. Unir arrival, an epithe island, and the ing it to the two h.

who landed there et with a singular ff the island, and es. Just as the master flung one mong the savages, d held a great depursued. Some old custom, and used that the man wan free will, and lable to the usual water was in his of a shipwreck. If discussion they put him into a ty of bananas and cut to sea. The

put him into a cy of bananas and cut to sea. The shore again withr hiding in caves led in getting on passing near the

atives as they were ame to them was ag. Mr. Williams an old chief who couble, to come on



(1.) THE WAR DANCE OF THE NIUANS. (See page 1055.)



(2.) PRESENTING THE CLOTH, (See page 1000.)

(1054)

he was a tall, nis c and his c whole be hair and latter, pl from his wore no cloth rou passing a he might

"On remost fra about from most voci he saw. him were persuade ond. Ou by fasten tive cloth threw it exclaimed be encum

"He the men of a by poising to and it though po Then he do by extend and forcing sockets, bitton by grey bears with the the whole loud and page the a tration of Niuans.

These is though the bodies with bodies with board Euradorned wingreen pain novelty to willing to they look from some inspection partly due on their oil thudinous if The hair.

and someticase with grow to a cis a foot or off, and pla worn roun these ornar thinks that and are valued men do not

board. "His appearance was truly terrific. he was about sixty years of age, his person tall, his cheek-bones raised and prominent, and his countenance most forbidding. His whole body was smeared with charcoal, his hair and beard were long and gray, and the latter, plaited and twisted together, hung

"On reaching the deck the old man was most frantic in his gesticulations, leaping about from place to place, and using the most vociferous exclamations at everything he saw. All attempts at conversation with him were entirely useless, as we could not persuade him to stand still for a single second. Our natives attempted to clothe him, by fastening round his person a piece of na-tive cloth, but, tearing it off in a rage, he threw it upon deel, and, stamping upon it exclaimed, 'Am I a woman, that I should

be encumbered with that stuff?

"He then proceeded to give us a speci-men of a war dance, which he commenced by poising and quivering his spear, running to and fro, leaping and vociferating, as though possessed by the spirit of wildness. Then he distorted his features most horribly by extending his mouth, gnashing his teeth, and forcing his eyes almost out of their sockets. At length he concluded this exhi-bition by thrusting the whole of his long grey beard into his mouth, and gnawing it with the most savage vengeance. During the whole of the performance he kept up a loud and hideous howl. On the preceding page the artist has given the reader an illustration of this singular war dance of the Niuans.

These islanders do not use the tattoo. though they are fond of decorating their bodies with paint. Those who come on board European vessels are delighted to be adorned with streaks and spots of red and green paint, especially the latter, which is a novelty to them, and for which they are willing to pay highly. At a little distance, they look much as if they were suffering from some cutaneous disease, but a closer inspection shows that their appearance is partly due to the salt of the sea crystallizing on their oiled bodies, and partly to the multitudinous flies which settle upon them.

The hair is sometimes seen very short and sometimes very long, and this is the case with both sexes. They allow it to grow to a considerable length, and when it

suffer them to grow to a great length, plait them, and adorn them with pieces of oyster or clam shell. They know the art of color-ing the hair a yellowish red by the application of lime.

As to dress, the men think it quite need-less, and wear nothing but the belt round from his mouth like so many rat's tails. He wore no clothing except a narrow strip of cloth round his loins, for the purpose of passing a spear through, or any other article dight of ornament than of dress. They are of moderate stature, rather under than over the middle height, thus forming a strong contrast to the gigantic Marquesans and Samoans. The natural color of the skin is a clear brown, and their limbs are round and well shaped.

In weapons, they use the spear, the club, and the bow, all made well and neatly. They do not seem to invade other islands, and their warfare is therefore waged mostly among themselves. It seems rather strange that in an island only thirty miles in circumference war should exist, but in Niue, the usual Polynesian custom exists of dividing an island into several districts, among which

They use a very curious weapon. On their island are a number of caves in the coral limestone, similar in character to that which has been described in page 1006, though not approached in the same curious manner. From the roof hang vast numbers of stalactites, from which water continually drops. Indeed, the natives owe their fresh water almost entirely to these caves, and since the missionaries came to reside among them have learned to collect it by digging wells in the caves, into which the water flows, and so insure a certain instead of a precarious supply. The floor of the caves is covered with stalagnitic masses, and from these the natives nake oval balls about the size of cricket balls, which they hurl from the hand with wonderful force and accuracy, not using the sling, as is the case with so many Polynesian tribes. Specimens of these balls are in the Christy collection.

These caves are evidently due to the character of the island, which is partly coral and partly volcanic, the coral having been upheaved by volcanic force, leaving the surface fissured and broken by the sudden violence of the shock. The native legend respecting the origin of the island points to the same conclusion. They state that the island was raised to its present elevation by two of their ancestors, named Hananaki and Fao, who swam there from Tonga, and found the island only just above the waves. is a foot or eighteen inches long, they cut it off, and plait it into thin bands which are elevating the island to its present height, on, and plant it into him bands which are elevating the island to its present usigns, worn round the waist. The men prize these ornaments highly, and Captain Hood thinks that the love-locks are exchanged, and are valued accordingly. The younger men do not wear their beards, but the elders

was elevated suddenly from the sea, and among women being severely punished. So that the inhabitants are not aborigines, but great was their horror of this crime that emigrants from some other part of Poly- illegitimate children were always thrown emigrants from some other part of Polynesia, probably from Tonga. Though they believe themselves to be derived from this origin, they have been subject to invasion from the restless and daring Tongans, whom they repulsed by an ingentus stratagem. The Tongans, possessed of far better weapons and better disciplined than the Niue islanders, and being equally courageous, were rapidly completing the conquest of the island, when the natives took advantage of the peculiar formation of their country

The reader will remember that Niue is rocky, and covered with deep and narrow clefts, the result of the upheaval which elevated the island above the sea. Across one of these the Niuans laid small branches, which they covered with banana and cocoanut leaves, and then strewed over all a slight covering of earth, which they arranged so as to look exactly like the surrounding soil. They then executed a sham retreat, and slipped round to the further side of the chasm, so that the Tongans, flushed with victory, rushed on their retreating enemies with yells of triumph, and a great number of the foremost and best warriors were hurled down to the bottom of the cavern. Before the survivors could recover from their surprise, an attack was made upon them in overwhelming numbers, and of the whole Tongan expedition not a man escaped alive.

It was formerly thought that the Niuans were cannibals, but, as far as can be ascertained, the natives have never eaten human flesh. They do not even care for animal food of any kind; and, though at the present time they have pigs in abundance, they use them almost entirely for the market to European ships, contenting themselves with bananas, yams, taro, and fish. Strangely enough, they have not imported into Niue the custom of kava drinking, and they stand almost alone in their non-use of tobacco.

Polygamy is still practised among the inhabitants of Niue, though it is fast dying out under the influence of the missionaries. who have further conferred a vast boon on the people by their discouragement of infanticide, which at one time prevailed to a terrible extent. The mere check which they have placed on this custom has already raised the number of the population by more than three hundred - a considerable increase when the small size of the island is taken into consideration.

Even before the missionaries came, a tolerably comprehensive and just code of laws was in existence, so that the Niuans were in reality much less savage than many of their neighbors, and the missionaries had a better ground to work on than in other islands of more promising aspect. Their body is laid in a canoe, and sent adrift in the standard of morality was much higher than sea to go wherever the wind and tides may is usually the case among savages, infidelity carry it.

into the sea until the missionaries taught the people that, nough the parents might be liable to punishment, the innocent children ought not to suffer.

Their punishment consisted generally in deprivation of food. For example, for some offences, the criminal was tied to a post, and allowed no food except bitter and acrid fruits, while for more serious offences he is lashed hand and foot to a bamboo for a considerable length of time, only sufficient food being given to save him from actually dying of starvation. For these punishments the missionaries have induced the natives to substitute forced labor in well sinking, road

making, and other useful works.

The Niuans are good canoe-makers, constructing their vessels very neatly, and ornamenting them with devices in shells and mother-of-pearl. They manage these canoes well, and as a rule are excellent swimmers. There are, however, some families living in the interior of the island who, although they can be barely four miles from the sea, have never visited it, and are greatly despised by their neighbors because they can neither swim nor sail a canoe.

The native architecture is not particularly good, but it has been much improved by the instructions of the Samoan teachers, who have instructed the Niuans in their own mode of building houses, upon which the Niuans have engrafted their own mode of adornment, so that altogether the effect of a modern Niuan house is quaint, and at the same time artistic. The natives seem to be wonderfully quick at learning, and have even acquired the use of the pen, so that a Niuan can now be scarcely better pleased than by the gift of a pencil and a supply of white

Nothing shows the wonderful advance that these people have made more than the fact that they have not only utterly discarded their old habit of murdering foreigners, but that they display the greatest eagerness to be taken as sailors on board European ships. They contrive to smuggle themselves on board without the knowledge of the captain and crew; and whereas in former times it was scarcely possible to induce a Niuan to venture on board an European ship, the difficulty is now, to find a mode of keeping them out of the vessels.

The method of disposing of the dead is twofold. When one mode is followed, the body is laid on a bier and left in the woods until all the flesh has decayed, when the bones are removed to the family burying-place, which is usually a cave in the limestone rock. When the other method is employed, the DISCOVERY HEITE EFFEM THE 8 WOME

TSLANI MISSIO MAKIN TINCTI MENT AND M

This inter inally disco has derived from the l which, in Captain Co the transit are many known of w the word This island group which the Georgia Tahiti is

viewed fron mountainou filled with lo way of reac the courses rocks shoot peaks, some pendicular 1 in height; s angular like they are clei and sometir hollows like

Down the that fertilize is the temper is covered w geous flower well said, is ely punished. So f this crime that e always thrown issionaries taught he parents might the innocent chil-

isted generally in example, for some tied to a post, and bitter and acrid ous offences he is bamboo for a connly sufficient food om actually dying punishments the well sinking, road vorks.

anoe-makers, cony neatly, and ornanage these ca-e excellent swimer, some families he island who, aly four miles from ited it, and are eighbors because sail a canoe. is not particularly

improved by the in teachers, who ans in their own upon which the ther the effect of quaint, and at the atives seem to be ng, and have even , so that a Niuan pleased than by supply of white

nderful advance le more than the utterly discarded ng foreigners, but est eagerness to European ships. e themselves on ge of the captain former times it duce a Niuan to ean ship, the difof keeping them

f the dead is twollowed, the body the woods until when the bones y burying-place, e limestone rock. s employed, the sent adrift in the ad and tides may

CHAPTER CVIII.

THE SOCIETY ISLANDS.

APPEARANCE, DRESS, AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS.

DESCOVERY OF THE ISLANDS, AND REASONS FOR THEIR NAMES - THE ISLAND OF TARITI OR OTA-HEITE - CONFORMATION AND CLIMATE OF TAHITI-THEIR EFFECT UPON THE INHABITANTS-EFFEMINATE APPEARANCE OF THE MEN, AND BEAUTY OF THE WOMEN-SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE SEXES - GENERAL MODE OF LIFE IN TAHITI - SEPARATE TABLES FOR THE MEN AND WOMEN-POMARS'S CRUCIAL TEST, AND ITS RESULTS UPON IDOLATRY-DRESS OF THE SOCIETY ISLANDERS - MODES OF WEARING THE HAIR - TATTOOING IN TAHITI - MEANS EMPLOYED BY THE MISSIONARIES TO ABOLISH THE PRACTICE - HOSPITALITY OF THE TAHITANS - MODE OF MAKING PRESENTS - SOCIAL USE OF PRESENTS - THE BAKED PIG AND THE CLOTH - DIStinctions of rank — reasons for omal's failure—external indications of rank — deport-MENT OF TAHITANS TOWARD THEIR SOVEREIGN - AMUSEMENTS OF THE TAHITANS - THEIR SONGS AND MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS - SURF RIDING - BOXING AND WRESTLING MATCHES.

This interesting group of islands was orig- | business, however, lies not so much with the inally discovered in 1605 by De Quiros, and has derived the name of the Society Islands from the liberality of the Royal Society, which, in 1767, sent an expedition under Captain Cook for the purpose of observing the transit of Venus over the sun. There are many islands of this group, the best known of which is TAHITI, or OTAHEITE, as the word was given in Cook's Voyages. This island forms one of a portion of the group which is distinguished by the name of the Georgian Islands, in honor of George III.

Tahiti is singularly picturesque when viewed from the sea, in consequence of its mountainous character, the island being so filled with lofty peaks and crags that the only way of reaching the interior is by following the courses of the valleys. Sometimes the rocks shoot up into sharp and spire-like peaks, sometimes they run for miles in perpendicular precipices, several thousand feet in height; sometimes they are scarped and angular like gigantic fortresses, sometimes they are cleft into ravines of terrible depth, and sometimes they are scooped out into hollows like the craters of extinct volcanoes.

Down these craggy steeps dash torrents that fertilize the soil, and so equably genial is the temperature that every shelf and ledge

island as with its inhabitants - not the semicivilized people of the present day, but the uncivilized people of 1769, when Captain Cook visited them. In the following description, we will take Tahiti as the typical island of the Society group, merely introducing the lesser islands by way of illustration of the manners and customs which

pervaded the whole group.

In consequence of the superior fertility of Tahiti, and the consequent supply of food without the need of labor, the Tahitans are more plump and rounded of form than are the inhabitants of most other Polynesian islands. In the case of the en, the fair skin and plump rounded for give them an effeminate appearance, and the earlier voyagers have all noticed the strong contrast between the dark, nervous, and muscular frames of the Tongan men, and the fair, smooth limbs and bodies of the Tahitans. The men, too, wear their hair long, and, if it were not that they permit the beard to grow to some length, they would well deserve the epithet of effeminate.

Not only is this smoothness and fairness one of their distinguishing marks, but they also are characterized by a sort of languor in their movements and timidity in their is covered with luxuriant foliage and gorgeous flowers. Tahiti indeed, as has been well said, is the gem of the Pacific. Our "This observation," writes Captain Cook, ling, which may be called little better than the feeble efforts of children, if compared to the vigor with which those exercises are

performed at the Friendly Islands."

They are so careful of their complexion that when they think their skins are becoming darkened by exposure to the sun, they have a mode of bleaching themselves. Captain Cook merely mentions that they remain within doors for a month or two, wear great quantities of clothing, and eat nothing but bread-fruit, this diet being supposed by them to have a strong bleaching power. It is probable, however, that besides the diet and the confinement within the house, they also employ some preparation similar to that which is used by the Marquesan women under similar circumstances.

The Tahitans place such reliance on the effect of food on complexion, that they believe themselves to change the hue of their skins several times in the year, owing to the kind of food on which, owing to the change of season, they are obliged to live. They do not, however, like many nations, think that corpulence is a mark of rank and wealth.

That fairness of skin and roundness of form which detract from the manly beauty of the male sex only add to the feminine charms of the women, who are far more beautiful even than those of Tonga, while they infinitely surpass the short, thickset women of the Marquesans. A Tahitan woman would be reckoned beautiful even among Europeans, the skin being fairer than that of many a Spanish girl, and the large full eyes and rich hair hav-ing a fascination peculiar to themselves, a charm which many travellers have endeavored to describe, and all, according to their own statements, have failed to convey in words.

Yet the lot of the Tongan women is far superior to that of the Tahitan. As we have already seen, the woman of Tonga is by no means the mere slave of the despotic husband, but is often his true helpmeet and best adviser. Among the Tahitans, how-ever, we find that the effeminate, smoothlimbed, long-haired, fair-skinned man, who would not abide the charge of a Tongan boy, is a very tyrant at home, having no idea that women can be anything but chattels, and beating his wives, his dogs, or his pigs, with equal disregard of their feelings. The women are not allowed to eat of va-

The women are not allowed to eat of various kinds of food, as they would offend the gods by so doing, and it is a remarkable coincidence that the gods do not permit the women to eat exactly those articles of food which the man-likes best, such, for example, as turtle, and certain kinds of fish and plantain.

Neither are the women allowed to eat

"is fully verified in their boxing and wrest- a separate part of the house. This prohibition is the more galling because, in a wellto-do Tahitan's family, eating goes on all day with very short intervals. The family breakfast at eight, and have a first dinner or breaklast at eight, and have a mix diliner to luncheon at eleven. Thus invigorated, they are able to wait until two, when they take their first dinner. This is followed by a second dinner at five and supper at eight. after which they retire to rest. But as it is manifestly impossible to go without food for twelve hours, they awake at two, take another meal, or "rere-supper," and sleep again until daybreak.

As to the turtle, a certain sort of sanctity is attached to it. When one of these reptiles is caught, it is always sent to the king, who, however, does not cook so sacred a creature in his own house, but sends it to the temple, where it is offered to the idol. It is cooked in the marae, or sacred enclosure, and, after a portion has been taken by the priest for the idol, the remainder is sent back to the king. Unless this offering were made, the offender would immediately suffer

from the vengeance of the offended god.

This custom was exploded by Pomaré
about 1820. The king had long believed that the idols were nothing more than images, and that the gods were but human inventions, and determined to try the subject by a crucial test. He waited until his subjects had caught a turtle, and sent it to him according to the custom of the island. Instead of sending it to the marae, he had the turtle taken to his own kitchen and cooked there. It was then served up, and his whole household sat down with him to partake of it. No one, however, except the king, had the courage to eat a mouthful, and even Pomaré himself was in a state of nervous trepidation, and had very little appe-tite when he came to apply his test. However, he was a man of great moral courage, and though he could not eat much of the royal dainty, he ate enough to bring down upon him the wrath of the god.

Finding that no harm happened to him, he convened an assembly of the chiefs, and narrated the whole of the circumstances. telling them they were free to act as they liked, but that for his part he abjured idolatry from that time. The consequence was, that of their own accord the people voluntarily abandoned their idols, and either gave them to the missionaries, used them as seats, or put them in the fire with which food is cooked, the last proceeding being the very depth of degradation.

One of these raids on the idols was conducted after a very curious manner.

When the converts had reached the temple in which were deposited the idols that they had so long worshipped, their hearts failed them, and not a man dared to enter Neither are the women allowed to eat the house and lay his hands on the sacred with their husbands, but take their meals in images. They bethought themselves, however, of i which the ence of the to fire up the image about to them to they fired that no h boldly, ar gether wi A curio that of F

Rurutu. a public held, and people, a partake of cles of di Rurutu. party asse dence sele sacred to That any o delinquent but that gether on absolutely enormities

The feas

Bennett, "they said."

trespass on

earnestly, e len or falle they had lo saw no one and said, perhaps the kill them: "One m the wife of part of a h and said, 'a that no har

they became

having been

LIKE mai tans are of . made. Botl looking, and called beaut cloth, and th to entwine tl in an admi strange, by Eimeo, one to those of t of lower stat Captain Cool man were s have come fr

The men

e. This prohibiecause, in a wellting goes on all vals. The family e a first dinner or invigorated, they , when they take is followed by a supper at eight, est. But as it is without food for ke at two, take pper," and sleep

n sort of sanctity one of these repsent to the king, cook so sacred a e, but sends it to fered to the idol. , or sacred encloas been taken by remainder is sent this offering were mmediately suffer offended god.
oded by Pomaré
ad long believed

hing more than were but human I to try the sub-waited until his le, and sent it to om of the island. ne marae, he had own kitchen and n served up, and own with him to wever, except the t a mouthful, and in a state of nervery little appet moral courage, eat much of the h to bring down

god. appened to him, of the chiefs, and e circumstances, e to act as they he abjured idolconsequence was. ne people volun-, and either gave ed them as seats. th which food is being the very

e idols was conmanner. eached the temed the idols that ped, their hearts n dared to enter hemselves, how-

ever, of trying the effect of fire-arms, with her. All wear the primitive garment of which they were furnished, and, in the presence of the terrified population, made ready passed round the waist, then through the to fire upon the idols. After calling upon the images, warning them that they were about to be fired upon, and calling upon them to avenge themselves if they could, they fired a volley into the house. Finding that no harm ensued, they advanced more boldly, and burned down the temple together with its occupants.

A curious instance of courage similar to that of Pomaré occurred at the island of Rurutu. A native teacher recommended at a public assembly that a feast should be a public assenting that a lease should be held, and that the king, his chiefs, his people, and their wives should together partake of turtle and pork, both these arti-cles of diet being prohibited to women in Rurutu. The test was accepted, and the party assembled, having by a curious coincidence selected ignorantly a piece of ground sacred to Oro, the vengeful god of war. That any one should eat on so sacred a spot would have been sufficient to draw upon the delinquents the full terrors of Oro's anger; but that men and women should eat together on the spot, and that women should absolutely eat both turtle and pork, were enormities almost too great to be conceived.

The feast took place, and, as writes Mr. Bennett, "when the Rurutuans saw that, they said, 'No doubt they will die for this trespass on the sacred ground,' and looked earnestly, expecting some one to have swollen or fallen down dead suddenly; but after they had looked for a considerable time and saw no one come, they changed their minds, and said, 'Surely theirs is the truth; but perhaps the god will come in the night and kill them: we will wait and see.

"One man actually went in the night to the wife of the chief Auira, who also ate a part of a hog or turtle on the sacred spot, and said, 'Are you still alive?' When the morning arrived, and the Rurutuans found that no harm had happened to any of them, they became exceedingly disgusted at their having been deceived so long by the evil

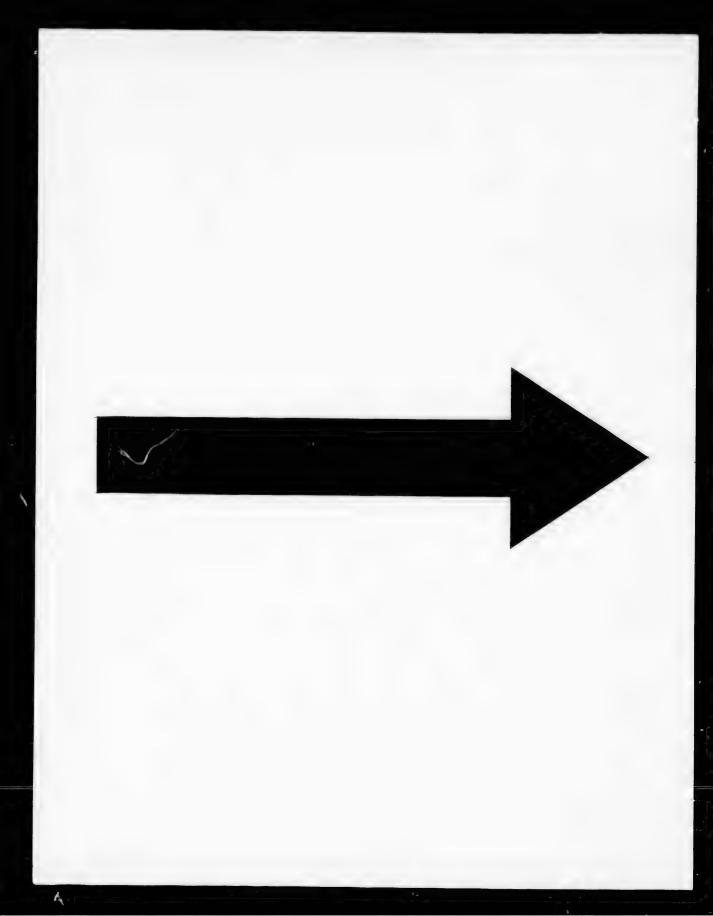
LIKE many other Polynesians, the Tahitans are of fair complexions, and very well made. Both men and women are goodlooking, and many of the latter may be called beautiful, their graceful robe of bark cloth, and the flowers with which they love to entwine their hair setting off their charms in an admirable manner. It is rather strange, by the way, that the women of Eimeo, one of this group, are very inferior to those of the other islands, being darker, of lower stature, and not so graceful, and, as Captain Cook remarked, if a handsome woman were seen at Eimeo, she was sure to have come from another island.

legs, and the end tucked into the girdle. Over this garment many wear a sort of mantle made of finer cloth, gathered neatly round the waist, and sometimes flowing over their shoulders; while others wear the tiputa, or tibuta, a garment made in poncho fashion, with a hole in the middle through which the head passes, and hanging down in front and behind, but open at the sides. This garment is found in a very great number of Polynesian islands, the material and the form varying according to the locality. The bark cloth is made exactly after the fashion employed in Tonga and Samoa.

Both sexes usually cut their hair short, and sometimes crop it so closely at the crown of the head that it looks as if shaven. They anoint their locks freely with scented cocoa-nut oil, or with a resinous gum, which gives it a moist and glossy appearance, and causes it to retain the shape into which it is twisted. Beside the flowers worn in the hair and ears, and the garlands twisted round the head, the women wear a very elegant and striking ornament. They take the very young stipe of the cocoa-nut palm, peel it into long strips, and dry it. When properly prepared, it is of a glossy, pure white, looking much like white satin ribbon, and is worn twisted into rosettes and similar ornaments. The normal color of the hair is mostly black, but in some cases it takes a lighter and reddish hue. In children it is often light, but assumes a dark hue in the course of a few years.

The Tahitans think that the shape of the head is much improved by being flattened at the back. Accordingly, the mothers have a way of supporting their children during infancy by the heels and back of the head, and, as they think that the shape of the nose can be improved by art, they continually squeeze and press it with the hand while it is tender and plastic.

Tattooing was once much esteemed, and the operation was performed by means of a comb and mallet, as has been described when treating of Samoa. Professional artists executed the tattoo, and were accustomed to travel about the islands, remaining for some months at each spot, and being paid highly for each lad whom they decorated. The face was almost invariably left untouched; the bust, legs, arms, and even hands being covered with the graceful patterns. The women also employed the same decoration, but in a less degree, wearing the tattoo mostly on the arms, ankles, and feet, the latter being tattooed nearly half-way to the knees, so that at a little distance the woman looked as if she were wearing boots or socks fitting tightly to the skin. The missionaries, however, discouraged the tattoo, The men dress in rather a variable man- which by degrees came to be accepted as a



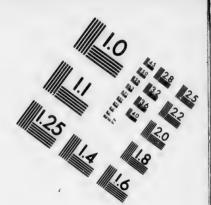
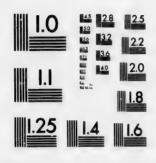


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



mark of a revolutionary spirit, and rendered the offender liable to punishment.

Mr. Bennett mentions two instances where old men were tattooed on the face as well as the body, one of them being a man who had been the high priest of the god Oro, the Polynesian Mars, who was worshipped with every accessory of bloodshed and cruelty. This deity, together with other objects of Tahitan worship, will be presently de-

The means that were employed to put an end to the practice of tattooing were of a very severe and rather despotic character. It was found that ordinary punishments were of little avail in checking a practice so much in consonance with the feelings and habits of the natives. Even after they had submitted themselves to the laws which the white colonists introduced, they could scarcely bring themselves to obey the edict which forbade the tattoo, and evaded it on every possible pretext. They would even voyage to another island, nominally on mercantile affairs, but in reality for the purpose of being tattooed while out of the reach of the white men and their laws.

As to the punishment which ensued, the delinquents cared little about it - the allotted task of road making or well digging was completed in time, whereas the decoration of the tattoo lasted throughout life. After trying to check the practice by various penal laws, the new legislators hit upon a plan described by themselves as merely disfiguring the pattern made by the tattoo. Dr. Bennett, however, uses more forcible terms. "The ancient practice of tattooing the skin is gradually declining amongst the Society Islanders generally. The missionaries have been much opposed to the custom, and among the laws framed for these islands was one which made tattooing criminal; but this has since been repealed, or continues in

tea, and Tahaa. "When viewed in connection with the habits of the natives, tattooing is not, certainly, so innocent a display of savage finery as most Europeans imagine it to be; nevertheless, we felt much regret, not unmingled with indignation, when we beheld, in the house of the royal chief of Raiatea, a native woman of naturally agreeable features, disfigured by an extensive patch of charcoal embedded in her cheek—a punishment in-flicted upon her by the judges for having slightly tattooed herself. While we were regarding this spectacle a second female showed us her hand, which afforded a similar instance of judicial severity."

force only in the islands of Huahine, Raia-

The various figures employed by the Tahitans have each a separate name, and these figures are imprinted not only upon the skin, but upon the bark cloth garments of

people, and have invented a complete code of ctiquette for making presents, the most curious of which is that which is employed in giving bark cloth. Captain Cook's description of this custom is very interesting. It is also illustrated on the 1054th page. "I went with Otoo to his father's hou where I found some people employed in dressing two girls with a prodigious quantity of fine cloth, after a very singular fash-The one end of each piece of cloth, of which there were a good many, was held up over the heads of the girls, while the re-mainder was wrapped round their bodies, under the arm-pits. Then the upper ends were let fall, and hung down in folds to the ground, one over the other, so as to bear some resemblance to a circular hoop-petti-

"Afterward, round the outside of all were wrapped several pieces of differently colored cloth, which considerably increased the size, so that it was not less than five or six yards in circuit, and the weight of this singular attire was as much as the poor girls could support. To each were hung two taames or breastplates, by way of enlivening the whole, and giving it a picturesque appearance. Thus equipped, they were conducted on board the ship, together with several hogs and a quantity of fruit, which, with the cloth, was a present to me from Otoo's father.

"Persons of either sex, dressed in this manner, are called atee, but I believe it is never practised except when large presents of cloth are to be made. At least, I never saw it practised on any other occasion; nor, indeed, had I ever such a present before; but both Captain Clarke and I had cloth given to us afterward, thus wrapped round the bearers.'

These cloths are mostly put on the bearers by laying the end of the cloth on the ground. The girl then lies down on the end of the piece, holds it tightly to her body, and rolls over and over, until she has wound herself up in all the cloth that she is intended to present. When the bearers are taken into the presence of the chief to whom the offering is made, they reverse the process, and unroll themselves, by revolving on the floor in the contrary direction.

Food is presented in another way. The donor sends his servants with the hogs, bread-fruit, and other provisions, to the house of the person to whom the present is made. They do not enter the house, but simply spread leaves on the ground, lay the provisions on them, and then return to their master. The donor then enters the house and calls upon his friend to come out and look at the present that has been brought for him. The latter signifies his acceptance by ordering his servants to carry the food within his house, but utters no thanks.

In most of these cases, it is expected that The Tahitans are naturally a hospitable a present of equal value should be returned, and, if th man, he w his retur valuable. Captain C provisions than when

In these practice o When a si crew is sel stay is pla the "apoa with his p other prov on shore, necessarie vided for h visitor den present; b where the some kind accept any pitality. One ver

who is sur whom all i There is but now be -which is ciple. Wh which he ca or a quanti sends it by of the place mention at owner. Al though the bind thems petitioner, in making

is by offeri

In this cas

they are al

Mr. Benn a man wani sent a pig a however, w would have the queen t ordered the house, there task of pro women who ashamed the perform the the house, a cloth.

Among th of rank are one can con in the posses Ignorance o cause of On are aware th who had eve d a complete code presents, the most hich is employed aptain Cook's des very interesting, the 1054th page, is father's house, ople employed in prodigious quan-very singular fashpiece of cloth, of nany, was held up irls, while the rethe upper ende wn in folds to the ner, so as to bear reular hoop-petti-

outside of all were differently colored increased the size. n five or six yards of this singular poor girls could ing two taames or vening the whole. sque appearance. re conducted on with several hogs ch, with the cloth, Otoo's father. , dressed in this

ut I believe it is en large presents At least, I never her occasion; nor, a present before; and I had cloth s wrapped round

out on the bearers th on the ground. n the end of the er body, and rolls as wound herself e is intended to rs are taken into whom the offerthe process, and ving on the floor

other way. The with the hogs, rovisions, to the m the present is r the house, but e ground, lay the en return to their enters the house, to come out and as been brought es his acceptance o carry the food no thanks.

is expected that ould be returned,

and, if the recipient should be a wealthy of Raieten, one of the Society Islands, and man, he would be thought rather shabby if his return present were not rather more valuable. In consequence of this theory, Captain Cook found that when he purchased provisions he got them much more cheaply than when they were presented to him.

In these islands is found the widely spread ractice of selecting friends from strangers. When a ship arrives, each of the officers and crew is selected by a native as his particular friend, and during the time of the vessel's stay is placed under his charge. Every day, the "apoa" or friend will come on board with his present of cooked bread-fruit and other provisions; and should his visitor go on shore, he takes care that all possible necessaries, and even luxuries, shall be provided for him. It is assumed that when the visitor departs he will in his turn make a present; but there have been many instances where the natives have been so grateful for some kindness that they have refused to accept anything in return for their hospitality.

One very graceful mode of giving presents is by offering them in the name of a child. In this case, whenever provisions are sent, they are always accompanied by the child, who is supposed to present them, and to

whom all returns are made.

There is a custom - once very prevalent but now become nearly if not wholly extinct -which is evidently based on the same principle. When a man is in want of something which he cannot obtain, such as a new house, or a quantity of cloth, he bakes a pig, and sends it by his friends to all the population of the place. The bearers offer the pig, and mention at the same time the needs of the owner. All those who partake of it, even though they eat but a mouthful, thereby bind themselves to share in assisting the petitioner, either in building the house or in making the cloth.

Mr. Bennett mentions one instance, where a man wanted thirty-six yards of cloth, and sent a pig after the usual fashion. No one, however, would touch it, and the poor man would have gone without his cloth had not the queen taken compassion on him. She ordered the bearers to leave the pig in her house, thereby assuming to herself alone the task of providing the cloth. A number of women who saw the proceeding, felt rather ashamed that the queen should be left to perform the task alone, so they went into the house, ate the pig, and made the desired

Among the Society Islands, the distinctions of rank are jealously insisted upon, and no one can command any respect unless he be in the possession of some acknowledged rank. gnorance of this characteristic was the real cause of Omai's failure. Most of my readers are aware that this man, the first Polynesian that he was brought to England for the purpose of being educated, so that he might act as a missionary both of Christianity and civilization in his native country.

In Captain Cook's third voyage, Omai was taken back again, after he had been loaded with presents of various kinds. It was found, however, that all that he really cared for was the possession of weapons, especially fire-arms, by means of which he might make himself master of the island. He had several muskets and pistols, together with ammunition, but Captain Cook remarked in his journal that he fancied Omai would be happier without the fire-arms than with them, and expresses a doubt whether he would not have been happier still if he had never been removed from his island.

The result justified these anticipations, No one, except the lower orders, would have anything to do with a man of no rank, and the nobles, who led public opinion, would not even look at him as he paraded up and down, clad in the suit of armor which had been presented to him with more generosity than prudence. In fact, they felt that his possession of all these treasures was a slight upon themselves, and the natural result was that Omat was soon fleeced of all his property, and speedily sank back again into his orig-

inal barbarism and idolatry.

Tenacious as they are of their rank, the Tahitan nobles show but few external marks of it. Even at the present day, although they have obtained considerable wealth from trade, and though implicit deference is paid to them by their own people, the chiefs, as a rule, dress and fare no better than the generality of their subjects. The fact is, that every person's rank is so well known, that there is no necessity for indicating it by outward show or luxurious habits, which

outward show or luxurious habits, which would only serve to bring upon them the contemptuous epithet of fahie, or conceited. In illustration of this principle, Mr. Benett remarks in his "Whaling Voyage round the Globe," that it was "usual to see the Queen Aimata clad in a loose cotton gown here headed and here footed. gown, bare-headed and bare-footed, mingling with natives of every class. Her meals, too, are equally unostentatious, the bread-fruit, poe, cocoa-nuts, and baked pig, intended for her food, being placed on a layer of fresh leaves spread on the ground; while the partaking party display, by the use of their fingers, a thorough contempt for the modern innovation of knives and forks, in the use of which, however, they are perfectly well versed." This visit to Tahiti was made in 1834.

Nothing, perhaps, shows the invate respect for rank more than the conduct of the Tahitans toward their queen. Personally she was not in the least respected, nor in deed did she deserve respect. Being the who had ever visited England, was a native only daughter of Pomaré IL, and deriving

from her birth the title of Pomare Vahine, by which she was better known than by the name of Aimata, she became queen in 1897, mouth-piece is a ring of soft wood, and by hame of Aimata, she became queen in 1827, on the death of her infant brother. Her conduct as queen was at first of the most unqueenly kind. She resisted to the utmost the attempts that were being made to improve the moral condition of the people, and did her best, both by precept and exam-ple, to bring back the state of unrestrained licentiousness which had reigned through the land. Yet, in spite of her conduct, the respect for her rank was in no way diminished, and, as has been seen, she could be on familiar terms with the lowest of her subjects without derogating from her dig-

THE amusements of the Tahitans are much like those of other Polynesians, and therefore need but little description. The Tahitans are fond of singing, and possess good voices and ears, so that they have been apt pupils in European music. As a rule, however, they prefer singing the air, or at most a first and second, the more elaborate most a first and second, the more elaborate movements of concerted music scarcely pleasing them. They excel in keeping time, and exhibit this capacity not only in their songs but in their dances. The native mode of singing is not pleasing to an English ear, being of a monotonous character, nasal in tone, and full of abrupt transitions from the highest to the lowest notes.

The native songs are mostly on two sub-jects, namely, love and war, the former pre-dominating, as is likely to be the case from the quiet and peaceable character of the people. Sometimes their songs assume a more patriotic cast, and set forth the praises of their island home, the beauty of its scenery, and the fertility of its soil. The singers are usually women, whose sweet voices render pleasing even the nasal intonations. The men sing but seldom, and when they do exert their voices, they almost invariably use the harsh native mode of vocalization.

Their musical instruments are but few. They have of course the drum, with which they accompany their songs and dances, not by beating it violently after the African etyle of drumming, but gently tapping it with the fingers. The drums are of differwith the ingers. The drums are of different sizes, and are all cylindrical, and very long in proportion to their diameter. Like many other uncivilized people, they display a great fondness for the Jews' harp, partly because it is easy to play, and partly because it reproduces to some extent the peculiar intervals of savage music.

The chief native instrument that is capable of producing different notes is a sort of flageolet or "hoe," which produces a low, deep tone, something like the "drone " of the bag-pipe. The native musician can tune his instrument in a very simple man-

pushing this forward, or driving it back, the performer can tune his instrument with some nicety, the former movement produc-

ing a sharp, and the latter a graver tone.

The hoe is seldom played alone, and is generally used as an accompaniment to the native dances. The performers, after tuning their instruments, sit in a circle, presse closely together, and, bending forward so that their heads are bowed over their knees, play in admirable time, though as much praise can scarcely be given to the meledy,

Following the instincts of the savage na-ture, the Tahitans are passionately fond of cock-fighting, and amusements of a similar character. Some of them are of a more harmless character. One of the most manly and graceful of these amusements closely resembles the surf swimming of the Sand-wich Islanders, and is thus described by Captain Cook:

"Neither were they strangers to the soothing effects produced by particular sorts of motion, which in some cases seem to allay any perturbation of mind with as much success as music. Of this I met with a remarkable instance. For on walking one day about Matavai Point, where our tents were erected, I saw a man paddling in a small cance so swiftly, and looking about with such eagerness on each side, as to command all my attention.

"At first I imagined that he had stolen something from one of the ships, and was pursued, but on waiting patiently saw him repeat his amusement. He went out from the shore till he was near the place where the swell begins to take its rise; and watching its first motion very attentively, paddled before it with great quickness till he found that it overtook him, and had acquired sufficient force to carry his canoe before it without passing underneath. He then sat motionless, and was carried along at the same swift rate as the wave, till it landed him upon the beach, when he started out, emptied his canoe, and went in search of another

"I could not help concluding that this man felt the most supreme pleasure while he was driven on so fast and so smoothly by the sea, especially as, though the tents and ships were so near, he did not seem in the least to envy, or even to take any notice of the crowds of his countrymen collected to view them as objects which were rare and curious.

"During my stay, two or three of the natives came up, who seemed to share his felicity, and always called out when there was an appearance of a favorable swell, as he sometimes missed it by his back being turned and looking about for it. By this I ner. The mouth-piece is split longitudi- understood that this exercise, which is called

chorooe, they hav much ple one of ou Like t

people ar

matches,

They do 1 the spiri more har doubt tha would sca ponent in Of thes much pref rather to apt to leav

ever, is r ducted af The inte temples o ings befor in the approceeded which had times cov with sand in diamete tors, and inhabitant side, and being read wearing n mostly ha and limbs challenge described 1 his own we

"The far usually spi those who priding th skill, were those they when a chi were any among the the party w to engage, "If this.

been the c they closed if no such wrestlers o champion, having the the breast, lently again the side, which was skill. The times so vi flesh, but to

vibrate like those of Surrounding the driving it back, the is instrument with movement producer a graver tone. layed alone, and is companiment to the ormers, after tuning n a circle, pressed ending forward so ed over their knees, , though as much ven to the melody. ts of the savage napassionately fond of ements of a similar em are of a more e of the most manly musements closely ming of the Sand-

strangers to the by particular sorts me cases seem to of mind with as Of this I met with For on walking one it, where our tents nan paddling in a and looking about ach side, as to com-

thus described by

that he had stolen the ships, and was patiently saw him He went out from ar the place where ts rise; and watchttentively, paddled had acquired suffinoe before it with-

He then sat moalong at the same till it landed him e started out, empn search of another

ncluding that this me pleasure while and so smoothly by ugh the tents and d not seem in the take any notice of ymen collected to ich were rare and

or three of the named to share his d out when there favorable swell, as by his back being for it. By this I oise, which is called choroce, was frequent amongst them, and they have probably more amusements of this sort, which afforded them at least as much pleasure as skating, which is the only one of ours with whose effects I could compare it."

Like the Tongans and Samoans, these people are fond of boxing and wrestling matches, not only as spectators, but actors. They do not, however, enter into them with the spirit and courage displayed by the more hardy islanders, and there is little doubt that a boxer or wrestler of Tonga would scarcely be able to find a worthy op-ponent in the Society Islands.

Of these two sports, the Society Islanders much prefer wrestling, boxing being thought rather too rough an amusement, and being apt to leave unpleasant marks on the face of the vanquished combatant. Wrestling, however, is much more common, and is conducted after the following manner.

The intending combatants first went to the temples of their special gods, and laid offerings before them, asking for their assistance in the approaching struggle. They then proceeded to the spot selected for the sports, which had always a smooth surface, sometimes covered with grass and sometimes with sand. A circle of thirty or forty feet in diameter was left clear for the competitors, and around it sat the spectators, the inhabitants of the island or district on one side, and the visitors on the other. All being ready, the combatants enter the arena, wearing nothing but the simple girdle, and mostly having well anointed their bodies and limbs with cocoa-nut oil. The mode of challenge and wrestling has been so well

"The fame of a celebrated wrestler was usually spread throughout the islands, and those who were considered good wrestlers, priding themselves on their strength or skill, were desirous of engaging only with those they regarded as their equals. Hence when a chief was expected in whose train were any distinguished wrestlers, those among the adherents of the chief by whom the party were to be entertained who wished to engage, were accustomed to send a chal-

lenge previous to their arrival. "If this, which was called tipaopao, had been the case, when they entered the ring they closed at once without ceremony. But if no such arrangement had been made, the wrestlers of one party, or perhaps their champion, walked round and across the ring, having the left arm bent with the hand on the breast, and, striking the right hand violently against the left, and the left against the side, produced a loud hollow sound, which was challenging any one to a trial of skill. The strokes on the arm were sometimes so violent as not only to bruise the bled." flesh, but to cause the blood to gush out.

"When the challenge was accepted the antagonists closed, and the most intense interest was manifested by the parties to which they respectively belonged. They grasped each other by the shoulders, and exerted all their strength and art each to throw his rival. This was all that was re-quisite; and although they generally grappled with each other, this was not necessary according to the rules of the game.

"Mape, a stout and rather active though not a large man, who was often in my house at Eimeo, was a famous wrestler. He was seen in the ring once with a remarkably tall heavy man, who was his antagonist; they had grappled and separated, when Mane walked carelessly toward his rival, and, on approaching him, instead of stretching out his arms as was expected, he ran the crown of his head with all his might against the temple of his antagonist, and laid him flat on

the earth.
"The most perfect silence was observed during the struggle, but as soon as one was thrown the scene was instantly changed; the vanquished was scarcely stretched on the sand when a shout of exultation arose from the victor's friends. Their drums struck up; the women and children danced in triumph over the fallen wrestler, and sung in derision of the opposite party. These were neither silent nor unmoved spectators, but immediately commenced a most deafening noise, partly in honor of their own clan or tribe, but chiefly to neutralize the triumph of the victors. It is not easy to imagine the scenes that must often have been presented at one of these wrestling matches, when not less than four or five thousand persons, dressed described by Mr. Ellis that I prefer to give in their best apparel, and exhibiting every variety of costume and brilliancy of color, were under the influence of excitement One party were drumming, dancing, and singing, in all the pride of victory and the menace of deflance; while, to increase the din and confusion, the other party were equally vociferous in reciting the achievements of the vanquished, or predicting the shortness of his rival's triumph. When the contest was at an end, victor and vanquished once more repaired to the idol temple, and renewed their offerings of young plantain rees

"Although wrestling was practised principally by the men, it was not confined to them. Often when they had done, the women contended, sometimes with each other, and occasionally with men. Persons of the highest rank often engaged in this sport; and the sister of the queen has been seen wearing nearly the same clothing the wrestlers wore, covered all over with sand, and wrestling with a young chief in the midst of the ring, round which thou-sands of the queen's subjects were assem-

CHAPTER CIX.

THE SOCIETY ISLANDS - Continued.

RELIGION.

RELIGION OF THE SOCIETY ISLANDS - THEIR IDOLS - PARALLEL BETWEEN THE IDOLATRY OF MODERN POLYNESIA AND ANCIENT SYRIA - ORO, THE GOD OF WAR - EXTENT OF HIS WORSHIP-LEGEND OF A SHELL-ORO'S MARAE, OR TEMPLE-THE HUMAN SACRIFICE-HIRO, THE GOD OF THIEVES — HIS WORSHIP AND APOTHEOSIS — TANE, THE CHIEF GOD OF HUAHINE — HIS MARAE AND HIS BED - DRESSING TANE - THE TREES AROUND HIS MARAE - HIS UNFORTUNATE TAIL-HIS HIGH PRIEST - AN INGENIOUS EVASION - TANE'S HALF-WAY HOUSE - TANE AVERSE TO BLOODSHED, BUT NEEDING THE SACRIFICE OF LIFE-TANE'S STONE CANOE-THE SHARK GOD, AND HE WATER TEMPLE - APOTHEOSIS OF A LIVING MAN - SINGULAR PERFORMANCE OF THE INSPIRED PRIESTS - MOVABLE SHRINES.

WE now come to the somewhat complicated subject of the religious belief of the Society Islanders. It is not an easy subject, involving, as it does, a great variety of na-tional customs, including the all-pervading tapu, the burial of the dead, and the human sacrifices which accompany a funeral or are offered on great occasions. We will begin with a brief account of the religious system of these islanders, as far as it is possible to reduce to a system a subject so obscure in itself, and so little understood by the first travellers, who alone would be likely to witness and gain information about the various religious ceremonies.

As might be expected from these islanders, their religion is pure idolatry, or rather, it consists in the worship of certain images which are conventionally accepted as visible representatives of the invisible deities. The idols are of two different kinds, the one being rude imitations of the human figure, and the other, certain combinations of cloth, sinnet, and feathers, rolled round sticks, not having the slightest similitude to the human form, or being recognizable as idols except by those who understand their signification. The human figures are held as being inferior to other idols, and are considered in much the same light as the Lares and Penates of the ancient Romans. They are called by the name of Tu, and are supposed to belong to some particular family which is taken under their protection.

The other gods are, in the ideas of the natives, possessed of far more extensive powers, sometimes being supposed to watch over particular districts, or even particular islands. There are gods of the valleys and gods of the hills, exactly as we read was the belief of the Syrians nearly three thousand years ago: when Ahab had repulsed Benhadad, "the servants of the king of Syria said unto him, their gods are gods of the hills, therefore they were stronger than we; but let us fight against

them in the plain, and surely we shall be stronger than they." (1 Kings xx. 23.) Fully believing in the protection which these deities are able to extend over their worshippers, it is no matter of wonder that the latter consider that they have a right to the good offices of their gods, and complain bitterly when anything goes wrong with them. So, if a god has been worshipped in some locality, and the ground becomes barren, or the cocoa-nut trees do not produce their full amount of fruit, or the district is devastated by war, the people think that their god is not doing his duty by them, and so they depose him, and take another in his place.

Although these gods are in a manner limited in their scope, many of them are acknowledged throughout the whole of the group of islands; and the chief, because the most dreaded, of them is Oro, the god of war.

(1064)

This te awe by h feared th His nam ities, and dreaded 1 of the p species o such fear touch it. toopeh), a be conver be entire Oro, who with a tu The su

rather pe its new fo in Raiate which fro top, prese platform. chised sp they had existence, roaches.

In Hual or sacred was a hu eighteen made of f their edge filled in w stone mea labor of cu such a dis enormous. On this erected, so

feet in wi were laid had been The templ House of eight feet yond this v priest stoo a higher at whereon t wearied. Small as scene of n

its erectio post havir through a tims, other occasions, ated by an as the pries island beca man tried so long wo struction. h chief, howe idol were might reviv

This terrible deity is held in the greatest its destruction. Besides the priest who we by his worshippers, and at one time was offered the sacrifice, Oro had another officer, awe by his worshippers, and at one time was feared throughout the whole of the islands. His name was associated with sundry localities, and with many objects, so that his dreaded name was continually in the mouth of the people. There was even a small species of scallop shell which was held in such fear that not a native would dare to touch it. It was called tupe (pronounced toopeh), and was said to be the special property of Oro. When a man died, and was to be converted into a spirit, the body had to be entirely consumed. This was done by Oro, who scraped the flesh from the bones with a tupe shell, and thus ate the body.

The subsequent career of the spirit was rather peculiar. After issuing from Oro in its new form, it betook itself to a great lake in Raiatea, round which is a belt of trees, which from some cause are quite flat at the top, presenting a level surface like a leafy platform. On this place the newly enfranchised spirits danced and feasted, and after they had passed through that stage of their existence, they were transformed into cock-

roaches

In Huahine there was an enormous marae, or sacred enclosure, dedicated to Oro. It was a hundred and fifty-six feet long by eighteen wide, and was built by a fence made of flat slabs of coral-rock placed on their edges, and the intervals between them filled in with earth. One of these blocks of stone measured nine feet by ten, so that the labor of cutting them and conveying them to such a distance from the sea must have been

On this platform a smaller one was erected, so as to leave a space of about four feet in width, and within this upper story were laid the bones of the many victims that had been slain in the worship of the god. The temple itself, called Fare no Oro, or the House of Oro, was quite a small building, eight feet long by six wide, and a little beyond this was the square stone on which the priest stood when about to offer a sacrifice, a higher stone behind it answering as a seat whereon the priest might rest himself when

wearied.

Small as was this house, it had been the scene of many human sacrifices, and even its erection cost a number of lives, every post having been driven into the ground through a human body. Besides these victims, others had been sacrificed on many occasions, fourteen of whom were enumerated by an old man who had once officiated as the priest of Oro. When the chief of the island became converted to Christianity, this man tried to conceal the idol which he had offered the sacrifice, oro had another officer, whose special duty it was to kill the victims. He was officially termed the Maubuna, or Pig-owner, a human body killed for sacrifice being named a "long pig." When the victim was pointed out to him, the Mau-buna, having a round stone concealed in his hand, found an opportunity, of catting behind him and with a single blow. getting behind him, and, with a single blow, struck him senseless to the ground, where the murder was completed. He then packed the body in a basket of cocoa-nut leaves, and delivered it to the priest.

Next to Oro was Hiro, the Polynesian Mercury, or god of thieves. He was origi-nally a man, but was elevated to the society of the gods in consequence of his wonderful deeds on earth, the chief of which seems to have been his daring in taking the image of Oro and flinging it to the ground with im-

punity.

The worship of Hiro extended through all ranks, from the highest chief to the lowest cook, and his votaries always asked for his help when they went on a plundering expedition, and promised him a share of the spoil. This promise they always performed, but as they were careful not to define the amount of booty which was to belong to the god, they contrived practically to have it all to themselves. For example, a thief would go out pig stealing, and promise Hiro a share of the stolen pork. Accordingly, if he had been successful, he would take home his illgotten booty, bake it, break off an inch of the tail, and go with it to the shrine of Hiro, where he would offer it with as much ceremony as if it had been half the pig, and at the same time beg the god not to divulge the theft of a votary who had kept his prom-

The natives are quite dexterous enough in the thieving way to be worthy of the protection of this god, having the most ingenious modes of stealing the goods of another. For example, if the objects are small, a hook is fastened to the end of a long bamboo, and the coveted article is slily withdrawn by the actual thief while a confederate directs the attention of the victim elsewhere. Sometimes the hook is tied to a line, and the thief literally angles for the

property:

The apotheosis of Hiro was a very remarkable one. After his life of theft, rapine, and murder, in which he did not spare even the temples of the gods, and had, as we have seen, the hardihood to fling Oro's image on the floor, and roll on it as if he had conquered Oro in wrestling, he was thought to have been so superhumanly wicked that he must have been a god. Accordingly, his skull was placed in a huge marae which he must have been a god. Accordingly, his struction, hid it in a hole in the rock. The chief, however, very rightly feared that if the hidd were allowed to remain its worship might revive, and accordingly insisted upon

DOLATRY OF MODERN OF HIS WORSHIP-- HIRO, THE GOD OF INE - HIS MARAE AND NATE TAIL-HIS HIGH RSE TO BLOODSHED, HARK GOD, AND HIS CE OF THE INSPIRED

the ideas of the naore extensive powupposed to watch or even particu-gods of the val-ills, exactly as we he Syrians nearly : when Ahab had e servants of the im, their gods are refore they were t us fight against surely we shall be Kings xx. 23.) protection which

extend over their ter of wonder that ey have a right to gods, and complain goes wrong with een worshipped in ound becomes bares do not produce , or the district is people think that duty by them, and ake another in his

in a manner limof them are acthe whole of the chief, because the s Oro, the god of

When Messrs. Bennett and Tyerman were at the Society Islands, this skull was still in existence, but it disappeared, together with the idols and other relies of the old relig-

lons.

The next god is Tane (pronounced tahneh), who was worshipped over a considerable range of country, and was in one or two islands considered as their supreme god. Such was the case with Huahine, in which Tane had a marae or malae of gigantic dimensions. I may here remark that in most Polynesian dislects the letters rand t are interchangeable, so that marae and malae are,

in fact, the same word.

This marae is a hundred and twenty-four feet in length by sixteen in breadth, and is composed, like the marae of Oro, of two stories, the last being nearly ten feet in height, and built of coral blocks, some of which are ten feet in width, and correspondingly long and thick, so that their weight is enormous. As the marae is about a hundred yards from the shore, a prodigious amount of labor must have been expended in getting these huge stones out of the sea and fixing them in their places. The upper story is barely a yard in height, and has at each end an upright stone six feet high.

In the middle of the principal part is the idol's bed, which he occupies once annually, and in which he ought to feel comfortable, as it is twenty-four feet long by thirteen wide. It is built, like the marae, of stone and earth, and is only eighteen inches high. This is a very ancient structure, as is shown by the trees that surround and spread their arms over it. Near the bed is a small house about twelve feet by six, in which rests the god Tane, together with lesser gods, each of whom is set over a dis-

trict.

Tane himself—burned in 1817—was carved out of a great block of wood, and was about as large as a tall man. He was not remarkable for an elegant shape, having no neck and no legs, the body terminating in a cone. The head was furnished with apologies for eyes, mouth, nose, and ears, and the whole was covered with sinnet.

Once in every year, Tane had a new dress, and was invested with great solemnity. He was brought out of his house by his priest and laid on his bed, having four lesser gods on either side of him. The chiefs of the district stood each in front of his own god, and the priests scood round Tane as being the great god of them all. The old garments were then removed, and examination made into the interior of the idol, which was hollow, and contained various objects, such as scarlet feathers, beads, bracelets, and other valuables. Those that began to look shabby were removed, and others inserted to take their place, and the idols were then invested in their new robes.

Meanwhile, a vast amount of kava was pre-

pared - the natives saying that it was equal in cubic measure to the marae - and a scene of drunken debauch took place, lasting for several days, even the priests being so intoxicated that they were unable to stand while performing their duties, but had to chant their incantations while lying on the ground. This stage of the idol-dressing is represented in the fine engraving on the opposite page. At the expiration of the three days a special god called Moorai was produced and stripped, and, as soon as his garments were removed, violent rain showers fell, as a signal for all the idols to be removed to their respective houses. The greatest care was taken that no woman should witness this ceremony, and if a female of any age had been detected coming within a certain distance of the marae, she would be at once killed, and even her father, husband. or brother, would have been among the firm to strike her down.

The trees which decorated this marae are the banyans (Ficus Indica), one of which is described by Mr. Bennett as being seventy feet in girth at the principal stem, and throwing out vast horizontal branches, each of which is supported by a root which looks more like the trunk than the root of a tree. "More than forty of these we counted, standing like a family of earth-born giants about their enormous parent. A circle drawn round all these auxiliary stems measured a hundred and thirty-two feet in circumference, while a circle embracing the utmost verge of their lateral ramification was not less than four hundred and twenty

feet.

"The upper stories (if such we may call them) of this multiform tree presented yet more singular combination of interesting and intertwisting boughs, like Gothic arches, circles, and colonnades, propped as by magic in mid-air. These were occasionally massy or light, and everywhere richly embellished with foliage, through which the flickering sunshine gleamed in long rays that lost themselves in the immensity of the interior labyrinth, or danced in bright spots upon the ground black with the shadows of hundreds of branches, rising tier above tier, and spreading range above range, aloft and around."

This tree was one of the places in which the bodies of human beings were offered, being packed in leaf baskets and hung to the branches. One branch, which was hugely thick and strong, and ran horizontally at a small height from the ground, was pointed out as the principal gibbet, on which human sacrifices, thousands in number, have been offered century after century.

Tane, all powerful though he was, labored under one disadvantage. He had a very long tail, and whenever he wished to leave his house, rise into the air, and dart through the sky on some errand of mischief, he was

g that it was equal e marae—and a took place, lasting a priests being so re unable to stand luttes, but had to wille lying on the localed Moorai was and, as soon as his violent rain show the idols to be reve houses. The tro woman should not if a female of I coming within a trac, she would be refather, husband, en among the first

ted this marae are a), one of which to tas being seventy, neipal stem, and tal branches, each a root which looks the root of a trea, the counted, earth-born giants arent. A circle tiliary stems measy-two feet in circle embracing the teral ramification ndred and twenty

such we may call the presented yet on of interesting ike Gothic arches, opped as by magic ccasionally massyrichly embellished ich the flickering rays that lost ity of the interior ight spots upon a shadows of hung tier above tier, e range, aloft and

e places in which
ngs were offered,
kets and hung to
unch, which was
and ran horizonrom the ground,
incipal gibbet, on
housands in numtury after century,
the was, labored
He had a very
we wished to leave

and dart through mischief, he was

SOCIETY ISLANDERS DRESSING THE IDOLS.
(See page 1006.)

restrained to become from that For exan has just if the mean the sever was twiste side of his which has of having

the sever was twisted of his which has of having This ide has evide and come gods passi a native so off his uppin honor o suggests to Tane is tion of son tail measulength.

So sacre which was might not There was to carry it, "Te amo a task was though it nearly as whom he w deprived his bearer was cocca-nut it ree would ascend it af his life was restriction, first place, it he honor, a be defiled in the control of th

were to tak
A celibat
tail such se
by the prom
the god-bea
the only b
islands. Bu
a man's wes
lated by the
the work of
their husbar
The house

The house small hut of high, and the except by cli god-bearer, climbing up wooden ima In the ille

In the illuwe see the cobearer—asconouse, with the back. A gu wafted Tane

restrained by his long tail, which was sure to become entangled in some object, which from that time became sacred to the god. For example, the magnificent tree which has just been described was several times the means of detaining Tane on earth, and the several branches round which his tail the several branches round which his tail was twisted became tapu at once. On one side of his house there was a large stone, which had become sacred in consequence of having arrested the flight of the god.

This idea of the long and streaming tail has evidently been derived from meteors and comets, which are supposed to be the gods passing through the air, and whenever a native saw one of them, he always threw of his upper garments, and raised a shout in honor of the passing god. Mr. Bennett suggests that the permanent tail attached to Tane is in all probability a commemoration of some very magnificent comet with a tail measuring eighty or ninety degrees in

So sacred was the idol that everything which was touched by it became tapu, and might not be touched by profane hands. There was only one man who was allowed to carry it, and he was called from his office, "Te amo attua," i. e. the god-bearer. His task was not an easy one, and his office, though it caused him to be viewed with nearly as much reverence as the god of whom he was the special servant, must have deprived him of many comforts. The god-bearer was not even allowed to climb a cocoa-nut tree, because, if he did so, the tree would be so sacred that no one might ascend it after him; indeed, every action of his life was fenced about with some similar restriction. He could not marry, as, in the first place, no woman could be deserving of the honor, and, in the second place, he would be defiled and unfitted for his office if he

were to take any woman to wife.

A celibate life does not seem to us to entail such self-denial as seems to be implied by the prominence given to the celibacy of the god-bearer, who appears to have been the only bachelor in the whole group of islands. But among most savage nations a man's wealth and consequence are regulated by the number of his wives, who do all the work of the household, and in fact keep

their husband in idleness.

The house in which the god lived was a small hut elevated on posts twenty feet high, and there were no means of access except by climbing one of these posts. The god-bearer, therefore, had no easy task in climbing up these posts with the great

wooden image fastened to his back. In the illustration on the 1084th page we see the chief priest of Tane—the god-

Sometimes Tane paid a visit to a marais at some distance, and when he did so, his bearer was naturally fatigued with the weight of his burden. It was, however, weight of his burden. It was, however, thought derogatory to the character of the god to say that his buarer could by any possibility be tired of carrying him, and so, by an ingenious evasion, the god himself was thought to be fatigued with the journey. and was laid to rest for a while on a flat stone about half a mile from the sacred tree. This stone was tapu to women, and if a woman had sat upon it, or even touched it with her finger, she would have been at once killed.

The stone was not a large one, being only four feet long, one foot broad, and nine inches thick. It is a singular fact that this sacred stone, which had so often been the witness of idolatrous rites, should also have witnessed the destruction of the idol to whom it was consecrated. After Christianwhom it was consecrated. After Christian-ity had been fairly established in the island, the chief men who adhered to the worship of Tane made war upon the Christians, who repelled them, so that they were obliged to bring out their idol and lay him on the sacred stone. The two bodies of warriors met face to face close to the idol, and the struggle was about to commence when the chief of the Christians made a speech to the enemy, laying before them the distinctions between idolatry and Christianity, and recommended peace instead of war.

His voice prevailed, and those who came to fight against the Christians renounced their idols, and, as a proof of their sincerity, they built a large fire on the spot, threw Tane into it, and then held a great feast, at which the men and women ate together. They then proceeded to Tane's house, burned it down, and dismantled his great

marae.

The feathers attached to these idols and placed within their hollow bodies are mostly the two long tail-feathers of the tropic bird, white and broad toward the base, and narrow and scarlet for the remainder of their length. When the gods are newly dressed, it is considered a meritorious act for any one to present fresh feathers in lieu of those which have been deteriorated by age. After the old garments are unrolled, the feathers are placed inside the image, and a corresponding number of old feathers taken out and presented to the devotee, who values them beyond all things, as partaking of the bearer—ascending the pole of the sacred house, with the unwieldy idol slung on his wasted Tane's long tail into the air, so that

and they are then laid before the idol, while the priest recites a prayer, in which he be-seeches the god to transfer his sanctity to these feathers, which from that moment be-

come minor gods.

The happy devotee has already provided himself with bamboo tubes, in each of which he places one of the feathers, and from which he never takes them except to pray to them. Sometimes he has a smaller idol made, and places the feathers within it; but in this case, he has to take the new idol to be laid before the original one, so that the transfer of sanctity may be guaranteed to them. This mode of honoring the sacred feathers is usually employed when the devotee has enjoyed some piece of good fortune after he has received them, and in most cases he not only encloses them in a new idol, but builds a small temple in which that idol lives.

Formerly, when animals were brought to be sacrificed to Tane, no blood was shed, but they were laid upon a stone and strangled by pressing their necks between two sticks. Food of all kinds was presented to him, part of which he was supposed to consume himself, part was taken by the priests, and the remainder was consumed by the worshippers. All first fruits went to Tane, a peasant being supposed to offer him two of the earliest fruits, while a raatira or gentle-man offered ten, and the chiefs still more, according to their rank and wealth.

Not very far from the sacred stone was a marae containing a very sacred object, no less, in fact, than a piece of Tane's own canoe. According to the people, it was a very miraculous canoe, for it was made of stone, and yet floated as well as if it were made of wood. In proof of this statement, they placed the fragment in water, where it floated, as it was likely to do, being nothing more than a piece of pumice stone. No one knew where the stone had been obtained. but they said that there were more pieces in

different parts of the island.

Besides the idol gods, there are gods which are symbolized by living creatures, of which the shark is the chief, being worshipped for the same reason that crocodiles and venomous serpents are worshipped in some parts of the world, viz. on account of its destruc-tive powers. Mr. Bennett saw a large marae which had been consecrated to a shark god on account of a miraculous event which was said to have happened some time previously. In one particular spot the ground begun to shake and tremble, and, as the people were flying in terror, the ground opened, and a luge shark forced his head through the cleft in the soil.

The formation of the maraes has already been mentioned. Some time before Mr. Bennett arrived at the place, a shark had con-

of the lagoon. The water flowed in with the of the ligoon. The water nowed in with the fish, and the natives, feeling delighted that their god had actually come to take possession of his temple, blocked up the passage by which he had entered, cleared out the marae, and kept the shark in it for the rest of his life, feeding him abundantly with fish and mark

Indeed, in one bay the sharks were regularly fed by the priests, and the consequence was that they became quite familiar, and would swim to the beach to be fed with fish and pork. They would also accompany the canoes, knowing well that the natives always threw overboard some of the fish which they had caught, for the sake of propitiating the shark gods. The latter, however, were so little sensible of the kindness bestowed upon them, that had one of their worshippers fallen overboard they would have eaten him, in spite of all his propitiatory offerings. Sometimes a living man has been elected

sometimes a fiving man has been elected to the rank of a god, and worshipped as such during his lifetime. This was done at Raiatea, the king, Tamatoa, having been reckoned among the gods by means of a series of ceremonies which might have been very appropriate in assigning him a place among the very worst and vilest of demons, but were singularly unsuitable to an apo-theosis. After this ceremony, the king was consulted as an oracle, prayers and sacrifices were offered to him, and he was treated as reverently as if he had been Tane himself.

It is a most remarkable fact that Tamatoa became a Christian in his later life, and afforded most valuable information respecting the religious belief of the Society Islanders. He corroborated, as having been an eye-witness, the accounts that have been given of the astonishing deeds done by the heathen priests while in a state of inspiration. They have been seen to dash their hands against the ground with such violence that they im-bedded the whole arm up to the shoulder. Captain Henry, the son of one of the missionaries, states that he has seen one of these priests plunge his arm into the solid earth as if it were water, and that he would perform the feat on any ground wherever he chanced to be.

"The infuriated priest, on that occasion, foamed at the mouth, distorted his eyeballs, convulsed his limbs, and uttered the most hideous shricks and howlings. After he had seemingly buried his arm like a spear stuck suddenly in the ground, he held it there for a considerable time; then, drawing it out uninjured, he rushed toward the shore, and, laying hold upon a large canoe, which ordinarily required three or four men to launch, he shoved it before him with apparent ease,

and sent it adrift.

"He afterward threw himself into the sea wallowed about in it, and kept his head trived to force its way through the sand into under water for a long time. When this the marae, which was situated on the shore act of the tragical pantomime was finished, prophecies mhiguous whatever n Portable used in the and rapid h nett, who w

he sat amo

practices, with the land on Michael London Michael In form roof, and is ported on there is a r flowed in with the r flowed in with the ling delighted that me to take posses, ked up the passage ed, cleared out the k in it for the rest bundantly with fish

sharks were regnd the consequence quite familiar, and to be fed with fish also accompany the t the natives always the fish which they of propitiating the however, were so ness bestowed upon their worshippers ald have eaten him,

tory offerings. n has been elected in has been elected and worshipped as This was done at atoa, having been atoa, having been going him a place of vilest of demons, nitchlated an analysis of the state of the s nitable to an apo-nony, the king was ayers and sacrifices he was treated as been Tane himself, fact that Tamatoa his later life, and rmation respecting Society Islanders. ng been an eye-wite been given of the the heathen priests ration. They have hands against the nce that they imp to the shoulder, of one of the mishas seen one of arm into the solid and that he would

on that occasion, orted his eyeballs, uttered the most
ngs. After he had
like a spear stuck
s held it there for lrawing it out uncanoe, which orith apparent ease,

round wherever he

mself into the sea, id kept his head time. When this name was finished,

In form it resembles a house, with sloping roof, and is about a yard in length. It is sup-peried on four short legs, and underneath there is a round hole through which the idol

he sat among the waves, and delivered his prophecies in very figurative and hyperbelieal language, at the same time sufficiently ambiguous to be fulfilled in one of two senses, whatever might happen."

Portable shrines of the gods were once used in the Society Islands, but so complete and rapid has been the demolition of everything connected with idolatry, that Mr. Bennett, who was eye-witness of many idolatrous practices, was only able to procure one specimen, which is now in the museum of the Lendon Missionary Society.

In form it resembles a house, with sloping roof, and is about a yard in length. It is supported on four short legs, and underneath is place of concealment and sold.

its place of concealment and sold.

CHAPTER CX.

THE SOCIETY ISLANDS - Continued.

HISTORY - WAR - FUNERALS - LEGENDS.

THE PRIESTS THE HISTORIANS OF THE SOCIETY ISLANDS - THE MARO, OR KING'S ROBE, AND IN HISTORICAL VALUE - THE HEREDITARY TITLE OF THE KING - THE KING'S BEARERS - ARCHI-TECTURE IN THE SOCIETY ISLANDS - TAHITAN WARFARE - RETENTIVE MEMORY, AND ITS DE IN WAR - BEHAVIOR OF THE VICTORS TOWARD THE VANQUISHED - NAVAL BATTLES AND MANŒUVRES - MILITARY ETIQUETTE - HUMAN SACRIFICE BEFORE BATTLES - CAPTAIN COOK'S ACCOUNT OF THE CEREMONY -- FUNERALS AMONG THE TAHITANS -- EMBALMING OF A CHIEF'S BODY - STRANGE DRESS OF THE CHIEF MOURNER - THE AREOI SOCIETY, AND THE INFLUENCE WHICH IT EXERTED ON THIS GROUP OF ISLANDS - LEGENDARY TALES OF THE AREOIS,

as well as of hierophants, every chief of consequence having in his household at least one of these men, who made it his business to chant on all great occasions the most important events which had happened in the country, and especially those which affected the family of his patron. Not only did he relate those events of which he had been a witness, but he also sang of the deeds of past days, the records of which had been transmitted to him by his predecessors.

The priests were, therefore, the only historians of the Society Islands; and, indeed, there was no other mode of delivering to each succeeding generation the traditions of the past. As, however, much of their accuracy depended on the memory of the historian, and as that memory was likely to fade by age, it naturally followed that the history of earlier times was considerably modified by each succeeding narrator. Tamatoa was himself a well-known chronicler, and could repeat a wonderful number of narratives, in which fact and fiction were mixed together in a manner that exactly resembled the semimythic history of ancient Greece and Rome.

These chroniclers, though they were unable to write, were not without some means whereby they could refresh their memories. Chief of these was the Maro, the sacred scarf of royalty. The word "Maro" signifies the simple girdle which the men wear by way of clothing, but that of the king is called, by

THE priests performed the office of historians | the crown of an emperor, is only worn when the kingly rank is conferred. When not in use, it is rolled up in native cloth so as to make a large bundle, and is only untied when it is wanted. When Captain Cook saw it he described it as being fifteen feet long. but when Mr. Bennett was in the Society Islands it measured twenty-one feet in length the additional measurement being due to the coronation of successive kings. It is only six inches in width, and when worn is rolled round the body, so that the end flows far behind on the ground. It is covered with the precious red feathers, and to it is attached the needle with which it is worked. So sacred is the maro thought to be, that, according to the ideas of the hatives, whenever a new stitch was taken the event was marked by peals of thunder.

The maro was never intended to be finished, but, according to the original projection, would receive an addition at the coronation of every new king, so that it would continue to increase in length as long as the kingly succession was kept up. In several respects it bears a great resemblance to the Bayeux tapestry. It is very long in proportion to its width, and the patterns described upon it are records of the time when the maro was woven, and act as aids to the memory of the professional historians, who celebrate in their songs the deeds of past

days.
The manufacture of the maro was stopped way of pre-eminence, THE MARO; and, like in a very curious manner. After Tamatos (1072)

became a the unspea that took maro that maro itself ing it, he s the idolat museum of I may her hereditary rach of Eg

All the chiefs, hav dignity, an African roy shoulders v to another sea they s There is a whose can whose hous No one is this idea is that a gre should trea The king language. Society Isl belong to tl words acco even strikes

The power it might b which he l those of his ever, more he has des clothed, and his subjects, the chiefs. manner and of his subje cause it has but in other The hous

which he do

indeed, little ported on p in height, th to the top, a sloping a litt ally covered the rafters bundles of c

WARFARE fers little fro in many othe fore does not Formerly, spear, the cla

to be very

became a Christian, he was so horrified at bloodshed, but the later introduction of fire-the unspeakable iniquity of the ceremonies arms has had its usual effect, and not only that took place at each lengthening of the mare that he determined to destroy the maro itself. Fortunately, instead of destroying it, he gave it up to his teachers, and it was sent, together with many specimens of the idolatrous arts of Polynesia, to the museum of the London Missionary Society. I may here mention that Tamatoa is the hereditary name of the king, like the Pha-

rach of Egypt and the Finow of Tonga.

All the kings, or rather the principal chiefs, have the greatest idea of their dignity, and are regarded by their subjects almost as demigods. Like some of the African royalties, they are carried on men's shoulders when they travel from one place saoulacis when they traver from one place to another by land, and when they go by sea they are said to fly and not to sail. There is a special language for the king, whose canoe is called the Rainbow, and whose house is termed the Cloud of Heaven. No one is allowed to stand above him: and this idea is so strongly impressed upon him that a great chief dislikes going into the cabin of an European ship, lest an inferior should tread on the deck over his head. The king even claims authority over the language. We speak in England familiarly of the king or queen's English. In the Society Islands the language really does belong to the king, who invents and alters words according to his own caprice, and even strikes out of the language those words which he does not happen to like.

The power of the king being so absolute, it might be imagined that the house in which he lived would be far superior to those of his subjects. His power is, how-ever, more real than apparent, and though he has despotic authority, he is lodged, clothed, and fed, scarcely better than any of his subjects, and not in the least better than the chiefs. His house is built in the same manner and of the same materials as those of his subjects. It is certainly larger, because it has to accommodate more persons; but in other respects it is in no way supe-

The houses of the Society Islands are, indeed, little more than thatched roofs supported on pillars about seven or eight feet in height, the pillars tapering from the base to the top, and not being quite upright, but sloping a little inward. The floor is gener-ally covered with grass and mats, while to the rafters of the roof are hung baskets, bundles of cloth, and other property.

WARFARE among the Society Islands differs little from the mode which is practised in many other parts of Polynesia, and therefore does not require a lengthened notice.

reduced the number of wars but the loss of life in battle.

Some of their spears were dreadful weapons, the worst of which seems to have been a sort of trident, something like an eel spear. The head of it was armed with three bones from the tail of the sting ray. They were not fastened to the head of the spear, but only slipped into sockets, just tightly enough to hold them. When an enemy was struck with either of these points, it became de-tached from the spear, and, in consequence of its peculiarly barbed edges, kept working its way deeper and deeper into the body, so that certain death was the result of a wound

with one of these spears.

The natives of the Society Islands also used the bone of the sting-ray for secret assassination. They watched the intended victim while he slept, and, by gently touching him with a feather, made him turn about until he was in a favorable position. The fatal dagger was then struck into the body, and the assassin made his escape, being sure that the wound must sooner or later be mortal.

The peculiar character of the people shows itself in other ways. They are most tenacious of memory in everything that has a personal interest to them, and are equally unwilling to forget an injury or a benefit. They will cherish a life-long vengeance against any one who has offended them, so that one man has been known to follow another from year to year, from one island to another, with the certainty and tenacity of the bloodhound, and never to cease from his quest until he has avenged himself upon his enemy. There is, however, a redeeming point in this trait of character, namely, that although it is mostly exercised for evil purposes, it sometimes takes the opposite course. Mr. Bennett mentions that on one occasion, after a battle, a chief of the victorious side knew that among the flying enemy was a man who had shown a kindness to him in a former war. Knowing the fate that would befall the man if he fell into the hands of the victors, he followed on the track of the fugitive, and after seeking his friend from cover to cover, and from bush to bush, he at last discovered him, took him to his own house, kept him there for a time, and then dismissed him in safety.

Cruelty toward the vanquished is one of the invariable accompaniments of savage warfare, and we cannot expect to find that the Society Islanders are more free from it than others. The only cannibalism of which they are guilty is in connection with war, and even on those occasions the victorious fore does not require a lengthened notice. Formerly, when their weapons were the spear, the club, and the sling, the wars used to be very protracted and caused much many of the Polynesians do.

onal historians, who is the deeds of past he maro was stopped er. After Tamatos

KING'S ROBE, AND IN

G'S BEARERS - ARCHI-

MEMORY, AND ITS USE

-NAVAL BATTLES AND

TLES - CAPTAIN COOK'S BALMING OF A CHIEF'S

F, AND THE INFLUENCE

r, is only worn when erred. When not in native cloth so as to

and is only untied

en Captain Cook saw

ing fifteen feet long.

was in the Society

nty-one feet in length

nent being due to the e kings. It is only

when worn is rolled t the end flows far

It is covered with

ners, and to it is at-

which it is worked.

ought to be, that, ac-

the hatives, whenaken the event was

ver intended to be

to the original pro-

n addition at the cor-

ing, so that it would

length as long as the

kept up. In several t resemblance to the

is very long in pro-

nd the patterns de-

rds of the time when

nd act as aids to the

ıder.

THE AREOIS.

They are, however, on some occasions very cruel to the captured or wounded enemies, absolutely tearing them to pleces by degrees, and taking care to avoid the vital parts, so as to prolong the agony of the sufferer as much as possible. Even Pomare, before he became a Christian, was guilty of many abominable atrocities. He has been known to take the children of vanquished chiefs, run sinnet cords through the backs of their necks, and drag them about until they died of the torture.

Even when the enemy was dead, the victors could not be content without insulting the senseless corpse. "When a combatant had slain a distinguished adversary," writes Mr. Bennett, "after the fray was over, the perishing carcass was left upon the field for a day or two. It was then dragged to the marae, when the victor and his friends would stand over it, and exult in the most savage manner over the corrupted mass.

"Each taking a fibrous wand of cocoa-nut leaf, tough as whalebone, in his hand, to employ as a drumstick, they would beat the body with these till they were weary; saying to it, 'Ahal we have you now; your tongue fills your mouth, your eyes stand out of your head, and your face is swollen; so would it have been with us, had you prevailed.' Then, after a pause, they would renew their impotent stripes and not less impotent taunts. 'Now you are dead, you will no more plague us. We are revenged upon you; and so you would have revenged yourself on us, if you had been the strongest in battle.' Again: 'Ahal you will drink no more kava; you will kill no more men; you will disembowel no more of our wives and daughters. As we use you, you would have used us; but we are the conquerors, and we have our vengeance.'

"When they had tired themselves, and beaten the flesh of the corpse to a mummy, they broke the arms above the elbows, placed flowers within the hands, and, fastening a rope about the neck, they suspended the mangled remains on a tree, and danced with flend-like exultation about it, laughing and shouting as the wind blew the dislocated limbs and the rent muscles to and fro."

The cance fights show some skill in maneouvres. The war cances are double, with a platform laid across the bars, forming a sort of stage, on which the warriors stand to fight. The movements of the cances are directed by one man, who tries to take the adversary at a disadvantage, and orders the vessel to advance or retreat as he thinks best, while the warriors are dancing on the platform, and exciting themselves to rage by frantic shouts, brandishing club and spear, and exchanging defances with the enemy when near enough. As soon as one of them can take the other favorably, the cances close, and the warriors from one try to board the other and kill its defenders.

The reserves receive and take care of the wounded, laying them in the bottom of the cance, where they are safe from the weapons of the enemy, and in their turn take the place of those who are disabled, so that a constant succession of fresh warriers is continually coming to the front. When at last one party gets the better of the other, those of the vanquished side who are able to use their limbs leap overboard and try to save themselves by swimming. They have, indeed, no other alternative, for no quarter is ever given or expected, and if the lives of the vanquished be spared at the time, it is only that the unfortunate men may be tortured to death part day.

tortured to death next day.

When Captain Cook visited the Seciety Islands, he found that all the decisive battles were fought by water, and that such a thing as a great battle on land was never thought of. Indeed, the chief strength of these insular people lies in their cances, and in a sea fight a great number of them were usually engaged. In such a sea fight, whenever one party found themselves being worsted, they immediately made for the beach, drew their cances ashore, jumped out, and made the best of their way to the hills, where they concealed themselves during the day, and at night slipped off to their own homes.

When a pitched battle of this kind is determined upon, it is fought out very fairly, and becomes a sort of general tournament. The two opposing chiefs arrange with each other as to the time and place for the battle. The whole of the day and night preceding the battle are occupied by both parties in feasting and dancing, evidently on the principle that, if they are to be killed on the morrow, they may as well enjoy themselves while they can. Before daybreak the canoes are launched and made ready for battle, and with the dawn the fight commences.

After the engagement is over, and the vanquished have run away, the victors go in great triumph to the maraes, where they return thanks to their gods, and offer to them the dead, the wounded, and the prisoners whom they have taken. The chief of the conquered party then opens negotiations with his successful opponent, and a treaty is arranged, in which peace is restored on certain conditions. These are often very hard, and force the vanquished to give up large tracts of land as well as to pay heavy fines in property. Sometimes a whole district changes masters, and, in one or two cases, an entire island has been added to the conquerors.

As human sacrifices have several time been mentioned, it will be as well to describe the circumstances under which they take place. We have already seen that in times of war the captured enemies are of fered to the idols. There is a sort of excuss

for this tives ha acrifice presump There which s the victi in cold principa project a acrifices speak hi these sac 1777. H der of th MANAPE the body was pres accompa

It app district, island of friend an ficed a m when the rae of doubted v tle Tahita fices, Cap company him to th embarked a miserat form part When they foun

tance.

"The of the priest plantain t Another a feathers, trut husk, king's feet companion." One of

facing tho

ready the

in and hal

the marae

halted abo

the rest of

began a lor sent down laid upon the a man, who held in his cloth. In found, was I may be a ark of the As soon as at the mar and sat do carrying w "Here the

and take care of the in the bottom of the safe from the weap-l in their turn take are disabled, so that of fresh warriors is the front. When at better of the other, side who are able to verboard and try to mming. They have, ative, for no quarter eted, and if the lives spared at the time, it tunate men may be

visited the Society all the decisive batter, and that such a e on land was never he chief strength of s in their canoes, and umber of them were ich a sea fight, when. d themselves being ately made for the noes ashore, jumped t of their way to the aled themselves durht slipped off to their

tle of this kind is deught out very fairly general tournament d place for the battle. and night preceding l by both parties in vidently on the prin-to be killed on the rell enjoy themselves daybreak the canoes ready for battle, and t commences.

ent is over, and the way, the victors go in araes, where they reds, and offer to them d, and the prisoners n. The chief of the opens negotiations ponent, and a treaty peace is restored on hese are often very inquished to give up well as to pay heavy netimes a whole disand, in one or two as been added to the

s have several times ill be as well to de es under which they already seen that in ured enemies are of ere is a sort of excuse

project a war against another, he generally sacrifices a man to his god in order to be-speak his aid against the enemy. One of One of these sacrifices was seen by Captain Cook in 1777. He did not witness the actual mur-der of the victim, who was killed, as usual, unawares, by a blow from a stone, but saw the body as it was prepared for offering, and was present at the curious ceremony which accompanied the sacrifice.

It appeared that Towha, the chief of his district, intended to make war against the island of Eimeo, and sent a message to his friend and relative Otoo that he had sacrificed a man, and wished for Otoo's presence when the body was offered at the great marae of Attahooroo. Having previously doubted whether the usually mild and gentle Tahitans would really offer human sacriflees. Captain Cook asked permission to accompany Otoo, and accordingly went with him to the marae. The party accordingly embarked in their canoes, taking with them a miserable, half-starved dog, which was to form part of the sacrifice.

When they arrived at the landing-place, they found the body of the slain man already there, lying in a canoe which was half in and half out of the water, just in front of the marae. Otoo, his visitors, and the chiefs

halted about ten yards from the body, while the rest of the people looked on from a distance.

"The ceremonies now began. One of the priests' attendants brought a young plantain tree, and laid it down before Otoo. Another approached with a small tuft of red feathers, twisted on some fibres of the cocoanut husk, with which he touched one of the king's feet, and then retired with it to his companions.

"One of the priests, seated at the marae, facing those that were upon the beach, now began a long prayer; and, at certain times, sent down young plantain trees, which were laid upon the sacrifice. During this prayer a man, who stood by the officiating priest, held in his hand two bundles, seemingly of cloth. In one of them, as we afterward found, was the royal maro; and the other, if I may be allowed the expression, was the ark of the Eatooa (i. e. the Atua, or god). As soon as the prayer was ended, the priests at the marae, with their attendants, went and sat down with those upon the beach, carrying with them the two bundles.

"Here they renewed their prayers; dur- upon one of the bundles.

for this act, the idea being that, as the captives had sought the lives of the worshippers of the gods, their own lives should be sacrificed to them as an atonement for their cocoa leaves and small branches. It was There are, however, other occasions on which such sacrifices are offered, and where the victim is selected by the chief and killed in cold blood. If, for example, the king or principal chief of an island or district should project a war against another he constitution. ten minutes. The dead body was now uncovered by removing the leaves and branches, and laid in a parallel direction by the sea-shore.

"One of the priests then, standing at the feet of it, pronounced a long prayer, in which he was at times joined by the others; each holding in his hand a tuft of red feathers. In the course of this prayer some hair was pulled off the head of the sacrifice, and the left eye taken out; both which were presented to Otoo, wrapped up in a green leaf. He did not, however, touch it, but gave to the man who presented it the tuft of feathers which he had received from Towha. This, with the hair and eye, was carried back to

the priests.
"Soon after, Otoo sent to them another
"Soon after, Otoo sent to them another me in piece of feathers, which he had given me in the morning to keep in my pocket. During some part of this last ceremony, a king-fisher making a noise in the trees, Otoo turned to me, saying, 'That is the Eatooa. and seemed to look upon it as a good omen.

"The body was then carried a little way with its head toward the marae, and laid under a tree, near which were fixed three broad thin pieces of wood, differently but rudely carved. The bundles of cloth were laid on a part of the marae; and the tufts of red feathers were placed at the feet of the sacrifice, round which the priests took their stations; and we were now allowed to go as near as we pleased.

"He who seemed to be the chief priest sat at a small distance, and spoke for a quarter of an hour, but with different tones and gestures; so that he seemed often to expostulate with the dead person—to whom he constantly addressed himself—and sometimes asked several questions, seemingly with respect to the propriety of his having been killed. At other times he made several demands, as if the deceased either now had power himself, or interest with the divinity, to engage him to comply with such requests. Amongst which, we understood, he asked him to deliver Eimeo, Maheine its chief, the hogs, women, and other things of the island, into their hands, — which was indeed the express intention of the sacrifice. He then chanted a prayer, which lasted near half an hour, in a whining, melancholy tone, accompanied by two other priests, and in which Potatau and some others joined. In the course of this prayer some more hair was plucked by a priest from the head of the corpse, and put

gave them to another, who prayed in like manner. Then all the tufts of feathers were laid upon the bundles of cloth; which closed

the ceremony at this place.

"The corpse was then carried up to the most conspicuous part of the marae, with the feathers, the two bundles of cloth, and the drums, the last of which beat slowly. feathers and bundles were laid against the pile of stones, and the corpse at the foot of them. The priests having again seated themselves round it, renewed their prayers, while some of the attendants dug a hole about two feet deep, into which they threw the unhappy victim, and covered it over with earth and stones. While they were putting him into the grave a boy squeaked aloud, and Omai said to me that it was the Eatooa.

"During this time, a fire having been made, the dog before mentioned was produced, and killed, by twisting his neck, and suffocating him. The hair was singed off, and the entrails taken out and thrown into the fire, where they were left to consume. But the heart, liver, and kidneys were only roasted, by being laid on hot stones for a few minutes; and the body of the dog, after being besmeared with the blood, which had been collected in a cocoa-nut shell, and dried over the fire, was with the liver, &c., carried and laid down before the priests, who sat praying round the grave.

"They continued their ejaculations over the dog for some time, while two men at intervals beat on two drums very loud, and a boy screamed as before in a loud shrill voice three different times. This, as we were told, was to invite the Eatooa to feast on the banquet that they had prepared for him. As soon as the priests had ended their prayers, the carcass of the dog with what belonged to it were laid on a whatta, or scaffold, about six feet high, that stood close by, on which lay the remains of two other dogs, and of two pigs, which had lately been sacrificed, and at this time emitted an intolerable stench. This kept us at a greater distance than would otherwise have been required of us; for after the victim was removed from the seaside toward the marae we were allowed to approach as near as we pleased. Indeed, after that, neither seriousness nor attention were much observed by the spectators. When the dog was put upon the whatta, the priests and attendants gave a kind of shout, which closed the ceremonies for the present."

The scene is well represented in illustration No. 1, on the opposite page. In the whole of the interior of the body, supplying foreground is the canoe, in which lies the its place with cloth soaked in cocoa-nut oil.

"After this, the chief priest prayed alone, holding in his hand the feathers which came house are two platforms, on the taller of from Towha. When he had finished, he gave them to another, who prayed in like ready been sacrificed, and on the lower lies the embalmed body of the late king, which is brought out for inspection. In front of the bier are the drummers performing on their elaborately carved instruments. A portion of the marae is seen on the left hand of the illustration, and on it lie the skulls of the human sacrifices that have been offered on various occasions.

Next day the ceremonies were resumed; more pigs were killed, some gifts were laid upon the movable house in which the Atua (or god) was carried about, and a young plantain tree was plucked up and laid at the feet of the king.

The mysterious bundles of cloth which had been laid on the marae were then unrolled. and out of one of them was taken the sacred maro, or royal girdle, which has already been described. It was remarkable for the fact that a portion of the scarlet feathers with which the maro is decorated were sewed upon an English pennant which had been hoisted by Captain Wallis when he landed on the island, and left flying when he left it, The second bundle contained the idol to whom the sacrifices were made.

Another hog was then killed, and the entrails inspected, exactly after the manner employed by the old Roman augurs; and the ceremony ended with rolling up the Atua, together with a number of scarlet feathers, in the bundle of cloth from which it had been taken.

At the funerals of very great men human sacrifices are often made, and near the large whattas, or platforms, on which the pigs and other provisions are offered, there are numbers of human skulls, each a relic of a human sacrifice. The only redeeming point about these sacrifices is, that the victim is quite unconscious of his fate. He is struck to the ground suddenly by an assassin who comes stealthily upon him, and never feels the real bitterness of death, namely, the dread of the coming fate.

The bodies of great chiefs undergo a process by which they are preserved for a considerable time. Captain Cook saw the corpse of a chief who had been dead for several months, and whose body had suffered scarcely any apparent change. There was a slight contraction of the muscles and sinking of the eyes, but the body was otherwise perfect; and when the attendants on the corpse unrolled the cloth in which it was enveloped, the limbs were found to be nearly as pliant as in life.

This result is obtained by removing the body of the slain victim, attended by two priests; while just above it on the shore is the same substance. The bodies are exposed the dog that is intended to furnish the second to public view for some time; but the emust in front of the on the tailer of the tailer on the left and on it lie the ces that have been 1s.

es were resumed; ne gifts were laid in which the Atua out, and a young up and laid at the

of cloth which had are then unrolled, so taken the sacred has already been kable for the fact let feathers with asted were sewed twhich had been when he left it, ained the idol to made.

killed, and the enafter the manner n augurs; and the ling up the Atua, of scarlet feathers, com which it had

great men human and near the large which the pigs and d, there are numh a relic of a huredeeming point that the victim is ate. He is struck y an assassin who n, and never feels eath, namely, the

efs undergo a proceserved for a concook saw the corpse dead for several d suffered scarcely here was a slight es and sinking of as otherwise perants on the corpse ich it was enveld to be nearly as

by removing the ne body, supplying I in cocoa-nut oil, dy repeatedly with odies are exposed time; but the em-



(1.) THE HUMAN SACRIFICE. (See page 1076.)



(2.) CORPSE AND CHIEF MOURNER. (See page 1079.)

and, soon work. A hours dai but by de and at las by reque!
There is pau, in wited when tolerably it, and witself. It pent-house anness as a series of the series and with the series and work and work and work and the series are series and the series and the series are series are

canoes, at let feather ments. I pau, who to the profeathers, provisions prevent in the palisa. The sec exhibits the

ordinary of tection of extraordin mourner. most inge shell, feat terials, and ance from ing white feathers w Several of been broug in differen

BEFORE
will be ne
nary insti
vailed amo
ety called
shippers of
formed a
all the Soci
its own me
Some wi
that of Fr
tions can b

tions can be of the Marthe one inso ther is based in universal, a one inculc being form throwing a possessed harmonist founds

first founds something Areois wh anity mana which they mysteries of the main p balming only postpones the process of decay, and, sooner or later, decomposition does its work. At first the body is exposed for several hours daily, provided that there be no rain; but by degrees it is only shown at intervals, and at last is scarcely ever exhibited, except

by request.

There is a special building, called a tupa-pau, in which the bodies of chiefs are exhibthed when lying in state. First, there is a tolerably large house, with a palisade around it, and within this house is the tupapau itself. It is made exactly like the little pent-houses that are built upon the larger canoes, and is profusely decorated with scarlet feathers, cloth, and other precious orna-ments. Two men are attached to the tupapau, who watch over it night and day, attend to the proper arrangement of the cloth and feathers, receive the offerings of fruit and provisions that are constantly made, and prevent intruders from venturing within the palisades.

The second illustration on the 1077th page exhibits the manner in which the bodies of ordinary chiefs are laid out under the protection of a covered shed, as well as the extraordinary dress worn by the chief mourner. The dress is composed in the most ingenious manner of mother-of-pearl shell, feathers, bark cloth, and similar ma-terials, and has a peculiarly startling appearance from the contrast between the glittering white of the pearl-shell and the dark feathers with which the shell is surrounded. Several of these extraordinary dresses have been brought to England, and may be seen

in different collections.

BEFORE leaving the Society Islands, it will be necessary to mention an extraordinary institution that in former times prevalled among them. It consisted of a society called the "Areois." They were worshippers of the god Oro; and though they formed a single confraternity throughout all the Society group, each island furnished its own members.

Some writers have likened the society to that of Freemasonry; but no two institu-tions can be more utterly opposed than those of the Masonic and the Areoi societies the one insisting on monotheism, while the other is based on idolatry; the one being an universal, and the other a local society; the one inculcating morality, and the other being formed for the express purpose of throwing aside the small relics of morality possessed by a native Polynesian.

It is not improbable, however, that on its first foundation the Areoi society possessed something of a religious nature. When Areois who had been converted to Christianity managed to shake off the dread with which they contemplated any reference to the

In the first place, the Arcois believed in the immortality of the soul, and in the ex-istence of a heaven suited to their own characters. Those who rose to high rank in the Areoi society were believed, after their death, to hold corresponding rank in their death, to hold corresponding rank in their heaven, which they called by the name of Rohutu-noa-noa, or Fragrant Paradise. All those who entered were restored to the vigor and bloom of youth, no matter what might be their age; and in almost every respect the resemblance between the Polynesian Rohutu and the Mohammedan Paradise is close and almost startling.

The method by which this Paradise was

to be gained was most extraordinary. natics of an ordinary turn of mind believe that everlasting happiness hereafter is to be gained by self-denial and mortification of be gained by self-denial and mortification of the body during the present life. The Are-ols, with an almost sublime audacity, held precisely the opposite view, and proclaimed both by words and deeds that a life of eter-nal enjoyment in the next world was to be obtained by leading a life of unbridled license in the present world.

In order to carry out this theory to the fullest extent, the Areois formed themselves into a society, and travelled about from one island to another, disseminating their peculiar opinions wherever they went, and gaining fresh recruits to their number in each islaud. On one occasion Captain Cook saw seventy canoes filled with Areois set off on an expedition to the different islands. Wherever they landed, they proceeded to the nearest marae, and offered a sacrifice of a sucking pig to the god who presided over it, this sacrifice being in the first place a thankoffering to the god for their safe landing, and in the next a notification that they wanted pigs for themselves.

Partly on account of the terror inspired by their numbers and unanimity, and partly on account of the spread of their very intelligible doctrines, the invitation always met with an immediate response, and great numbers of pigs, together with vegetable food, cloth, kava, and other luxuries were produced. A great feast was then held, during which the peculiar doctrines of the society were carried out to the full, and a cene ensued such as cannot be described.

Among the worst of their doctrines was that which declared them all to be celibates, because the god Oro was unmarried. Consequently, the existence of children among them could not be recognized, and as soon as a child was born, it was murdered, and the fact of its existence ignored. By a similarly convenient fiction, all Areois were presumed to be in the full vigor of human life. Consequently, the possibility of age and debility was ignored, and in order to prove the non-existence of either senility or mysteries of their society, they all agreed in sickness, any old or sick person was quietly the main points, though differing in details. buried alive. The victims were never apprized of their fate, as is the case in Fiji, but a grave was dug surreptitiously, the sick person was decoyed to it on some pretence or other, dropped into the grave, the earth flung on him, and stamped down almost before he had time for a remonstrance.

Sometimes, when provisions ran short, the Areois had a very strange method of supplying themselves. A party of them, led by some chief, whose rank was known by the marks tattooed on his body, would visit a house where they saw evidences of prosa house where they saw evidences or pros-perity, and look about until they came on a little boy—an easy matter enough in a country where polygamy is practised. They would then take the child, and go through various ceremonies, by which they repre-sented him as having been raised to kingly rank

They would then simulate the utmost deference to the new king, place him on an elevated seat, prostrate themselves before him, and appeal to him as though he really held the kingly rank. "We are come to the king's house, poor, naked, and hungry. We need raiment—give us that piece of cloth. We need food—give us that pig." Accordingly, the father of the child was forced to fall in with their humor, and, in return for the honor conferred upon his house, to give them whatever they demanded.

The only redeeming point of the Areois was their value in keeping up the old historical records of the islands. The food and clothing which they obtained from the various people were repaid by the dramatic performances and recitations which they gave, and which debased as they were by the licentious element which permeated every section of the society, performed toward their local history the same part which the ancient mysteries performed toward the Christian religion. The Polynesians being unable to read or write, and having no mode of recording historical events except by tradition, these performances rendered as it were history visible, and enacted before the eyes of the illiterate people the deeds of days long gone by.

Sometimes the story was that of a celebrated ancestor, much on a par with the semi-mythical legends of ancient European and Asiatic history, and sometimes it took a graver cast, and narrated the deeds and in the manner that seems him best.

powers of the native gods. For example, the legend of Taros, the father of gods and men, was somewhat as follows:

In ages long gone by, Taroa existed only in the form of a vast egg, and hung high in the firmament, inclosing in the shell the sun, moon, and stars. After floating in the star of the formation of the star of the following the star of sun, moon, and stars. After nothing in ether for ages, he thrust his hands through the shell, so that the light of the sun burst upon the universe and illumined the earth beneath him. And the earth was then small as it lay beneath him. Then Taroa saw the as it ay beneath him. Then Taroa saw the sands of the sea, and cried to them, "Sanda, come up to me, and be my companions." But the sands replied, "We belong to the earth and sea, O Taroa, and may not leave them. Come thou down to us." Then he saw the rocks and cliffs, and cried to them, "Rocks come up to me, and be my companions." But the rocks replied, "We are rooted in the earth, O Taroa, and may not leave it.

Then Taroa descended, and cast off his shell, which immediately added itself to the ground, and the earth was increased to its present dimensions, while the sun and moon shone above. Long did Taroa live on the earth which he peopled with men and women; and at last the time came when he should depart from it. He transformed himself into a large canoe, which was filled with islanders, when a great storm arose, and suddenly the cance was filled with blood. The islanders with their calabashes baled out the blood, which ran to the east and west of the sea; and ever after-ward the blood of Taroa is seen in the clouds which accompany the rising and setting sun, and, as of old tinges the waves with

When the canoe came to land, it was but the skeleton of Taroa, which was laid on the ground with its face downward, and from that time all the houses of the gods have been built on the model of Taroa's skeleton, the thatched roofs representing the backbone and the posts the ribs.

Legends such as these are often transmitted from one reciter to another, and recited verbatim, being merely illustrated and exemplified by such poetical digressions as the mind of the narrator may suggest With others, on the contrary, the orator has only the mere skeleton, and tells the story

LOCALITY THI

API

WE OCC ING --II CONSIDI

Society 1 so called Earl of sists of which a tain hun importar as the w It was or side of killed in of the le among th of this I kooa, an The ca

is not si Woahu, called H name of bishopric Islands i the worl trifling, a below th while on mometer ing, how these isla the year ature, by when the into the v winter.

11 .- 117/11/2.

ds. For example, father of gods and llowa: Taroa existed only

and hung high in in the shell the After floating in his hands through nt of the sun burst lumined the earth arth was then small hen Taroa saw the d to them, "Sands, my companions." We belong to the and may not leave to us." Then he and cried to them, nd be my compan-ed, "We are rooted d may not leave it.

I, and cast off his added itself to the s increased to its nile the sun and ng did Taroa live peopled with men rom it. He transarge canoe, which rs, when a great ly the cance was landers with their blood, which ran to ea; and ever afteroa is seen in the the rising and setges the waves with

to land, it was but ich was laid on the vnward, and from of the gods have f Taroa's skeleton, nting the backbone

are often transo another, and reely illustrated and ical digressions as tor may suggest, ary, the orator has nd tells the story him best.

CHAPTER CXI.

THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

CLIMATE - DRESS - ORNAMENTS - WOMEN.

LOCALITY OF THE GROUP-CONFORMATION AND CLIMATE OF HAWAII-APPEARANCE AND DRESS OF THE MEN - FEATHER MANTLES AND HELMETS - SINGULAR RESEMBLANCE TO CLASSIC MODELS -APPEARANCE OF THE WOMEN-A HAWAHAN BEAUTY-DRESS OF THE WOMEN-MODES OF WEARING THE HAIR - BRACELETS AND OTHER ORNAMENTS - FONDNESS FOR PIGS AND DOGS-OCCUPATIONS OF THE WOMEN - HOSPITALITY TO STRANGERS - FISH FONDS, AND MODE OF MAK-ING THEM -TREATMENT OF WOMEN - SEMI-AMPHIBIOUS NATURE OF THE SANDWICH ISLANDERS -INGENIOUS METHOD OF OBTAINING SOUNDINGS.

CONSIDERABLY to the northward of the Society Islands lie the SANDWICH ISLANDS. so called by Captain Cook, in honor of the Earl of Sandwich. The entire group consists of eight inhabited islands, and a few which are too barren and rocky to maintain human beings. The largest and most important of them is HAWAII, or Owhyhee, as the word is spelt in Cook's "Voyages." It was on the shore of a bay on the western side of this island that Captain Cook was killed in 1779. Owing to the interchange of the letters l and r, which is so prevalent among the Polynesian languages, the name of this bay is sometimes spelt as Karaka-kooa, and sometimes as Kealakekua.

The capital city of the Sandwich Islands is not situated in Hawaii, but in Oahu, or Woahu, one of the smaller islands, and is called Honolulu. It rightly deserves the name of a city, because it is the sent of a bishopric. The climate of the Sandwich Islands is said to be the most charming in the world. The variation is exceedingly trifling, as near the sea the temperature is below that of sultry English summer-time, while on the coldest winter's day the thermometer never sinks below 62° Fahr. Owing, however, to the mountainous nature of these islands, any one may live throughout the year in almost exactly the same temperature, by ascending into a cooler atmosphere when the weather is too hot, and descending when the weather is too hot, and descending into the warmer strata during the months of the slight girdle of cloth which has already winter.

Adhering to the principle which has been followed in this work, I shall say but little of the present Europeanized condition of the natives of these islands, and confine my-self as far as possible to the manners and customs of the people as they were before the white men had introduced their own mode of civilization. Even at the present day, however, the old savage character continually shows itself, and among the very people who seem to be most completely under the influence of civilization the original old heathenism exhibits itself when they are off their guard, or when they think themselves out of the ken of white men. It will be understood, therefore, that although the present tense may be used in the following pages, all descriptions apply to them as they were originally, and not to them as they are at the present day.

THE men are tall, active and powerful, and in color are of an olive brown, the precise depth of tint varying much according to the exposure to the sun, so that the skins of the chiefs are much lighter than those of the commonalty. The hair is jet black, and not in the least woolly, being sometimes quite straight, and sometimes wavy. The face is mostly wide, and is a very hand-some one, the only fault in it being a tendency to width across the nostrils.

been mentioned, and having this, they con-

The great chiefs have also mantles made of a sort of network, into each mesh of which are interwoven the feathers of varicus birds, the most precious of them being that which supplies the yellow feathers. This is a little bird called Melithreptes paci-Aca. It is one of the honey-birds, and under each wing there is a single yellow feather, one inch in length. The late king, feather, one inch in length. The late king, Kamehameha, had a cloak made of these feathers alone. It was four feet long, and eleven feet wide at the bottom. No less than nine successive kings died before this priceless mantle was finished.

The headdress of the chiefs is of so graceful and classical a form as absolutely to startle the spectator. It is a helmet made of wicker-work and covered with feathers, the shape being exactly that of the ancient Grecian helmet even to the elevated crest which runs over the top. One of these beautiful helmets is shown on the 1097th page. It is not intended as a protection for the head, the material being too fragile for such a purpose, but is simply a badge of rank and wealth. Mostly they are covered with scarlet and yellow feathers, disposed in bold bands or belts, and the wealth of the wearer may be known by the proportion which the yellow and scarlet feathers bear to each other.

Examples of these beautiful ornaments may be seen in several museums, where it is to be hoped that they will be kept from the destructive moths and beetles, inasmuch as they form the sole memorials of a time now

passed away.

The birds which furnish these feathers are eagerly sought by the Sandwich Islanders, who have the same love of scarlet that distinguishes not only all Polynesians but all savages and children. The birds are usually caught by means of a tenacious substance much resembling our birdlime, and used in a similar manner by being smeared on twigs and poles, to which the birds are attracted by means of baits.

The natural taste in color is as good as that which displays itself in form, and although the brightest and most boldly contrasting colors are used by the Sandwich Islanders, they are used with such admirable judgment that they do not rook gaudy, or even obtrusive.

The women, when young, are singularly beautiful, and retain their good looks longer than is usual among Polynesians. Like the other sex, however, they generally attain to great size in their latter years, those of the better sort being remarkable for their enor-

sider themselves dressed for all purposes of decency. They also have a tappa, or bark-cloth garment, which is twisted round the waist, and falls below the knees, while the better class wear also a sort of mantle, to shelter their skin from the darkening sunbeams.

I mous corpulence. This development is development is probably owing, like that of the Kaffir chiefs, to the great quantity of porridge which they are continually eating. When shelter their skin from the darkening sunbeams. of their own, and their forms being like those of the ancient Grecian statues. An American traveller, writing under the nom de plume of Hable, i. e. foreigner, gives a most animated description of a native girl, in his interesting work on the Sandwich Islands, showing that the partial civilization to which the natives have been subjected has not destanded their hearty of features now see stroyed their beauty of features nor symmetry of form.

"In truth to nature, it may be safely asserted that beauty is not confined merely to the saloon of the monarch, nor to the to the saioon of the monarch, nor to the tapestried chambers of the patrician. It is more frequently found amid the lowlier walks of life, on the desert, or the distant isle of the ocean. In this instance I wish to be understood as speaking of physical beauty only. On leaving the shore-road to ascend the mountains for Halawa, I met that walks a proglam as heacefter distance. just such a specimen as has often driven men mad, and whose possession has many a time paved the way to the subversion of empire on the part of monarchs. "She was rather above the medium size

of American women. Her finely chiselled chin, nose, and forchead were singularly Grecian. Her beautifully moulded neck and shoulders, looked as though they might have been borrowed from Juno. The development of her entire form was as perfect as nature could make it. She was arrayed in a single loose robe, beneath which a pretty little nude foot was just peeping out. Her hair and eyebrows were as glossy as a raven's wing. Around her head was care-lessly twined a wreath of the beautiful native ohelo flowers (Gualtheria penduliflorum). Her lips seemed fragrant with the odor of countless and untiring kisses. Her complexion was much fairer than the fairest of her countrywomen, and I was forced into the conclusion that she was the offshoot of some white father who had trampled on the seventh precept in the Decalogue, or taken to his embrace, by the marriage relation,

some good-looking Hawaiian woman.

"But her eyes! I never shall forget those eyes! They retained something that spoke of an affection so deep, a spiritual existence so intense, a dreamy enchantment so inexpressibly beautiful, that they reminded one of the beautiful Greek girl Myrrha, in Byron's tragedy of 'Sardanapalus,' whose love clung to the old monarch when the flame of the funeral pile formed their wind-

development is at of the Kaffr tity of porridge y eating. When exceedingly beau-a peculiar charm s being like those ues. An Amerider the nom dener, gives a most native girl, in his andwich Islands, illication to which ected has not desatures nor symmetry.

t may be safely t confined merely arch, nor to the patrician. It is mid the lowlier rt, or the distant instance I wish aking of physical the shore-road to Halawa, I met has often driven ssion has many a se subversion of trebs.

the medium size or finely chiselled were singularly were singularly moulded necknough they might funo. The develows as perfect as was arrayed in a which a pretty eping out. Her as glossy as a r head was careful theria penduliforagrant with the ring kisses. Her r than the fairest I was forced into as the offshoot of trampled on the calogue, or taken arriage relation, arriage relation,

un woman.
shall forget those
thing that spoke
piritual existence
untment so inexey reminded one
girl Myrrha, in
anapalus, whose
parch when the
rmed their wind-

of my life had I the presence of at, and in such a ras entirely fasci-





(See page

nated, ch my horse glance a stopped, smile par-set of tel-less perf-unsafe at elor; so passed of on othing have cop J gently the voca you."

The a other pla whom h Impresse because, people of than thou o dark Europe. The dr

is much l is much I sists esse passing r the knees end may many of separate mantle. ing at all.

The m somewhat cut it bellength on sometimes

sometime locks, and of tail abo These tai length, an the back. much value in the hasupplement their own of a redding done in F Sometimes hair on eit one crest of head to the crests of the Captain Islanders

sians in re that they ments in ments, so description made of l times, and or bone cu Necklaces

nated, charmed, spell-bound now. I stopped my horse; and there I sat, to take a fuller laces of dried flowers.

glance at the fair reality. And the girl stopped, and returned the glance, while a the women. Some of these ornaments are smile parted her lips, and partially revealed a set of teeth as white as snow, and of match-less perfection. I felt that smile to be an unsafe atmosphere for the nerves of a bachpassed on my way, feeling fully assured that nothing but the chisel of Praxiteles could have copied her exquisite charms. And as I gently moved past her, she exclaimed, in the vocabulary of her country 'Love to

The same writer mentions in several other places the beauty of the young girls whom he saw in Hawaii. There was no reason for the surmise that the girl who reason for the surinise tink the girl who impressed him so deeply was a half-caste, because, as has already been mentioned, people of the better class are much fairer than those of lower rank, and are scarcely so dark as the inhabitants of Southern Europe.

The dress of the Sandwich Islands women is much like that of the Tongans, and consists essentially of a wrapper of bark cloth passing round the waist and falling below the knees. It is often arranged so that the end may be thrown over the shoulders, and many of the better class of women have a separate piece of cloth which is used as a mantle. When young they wear no cloth-

mantle. When young they wear no cooming at all.

The methods of wearing the hair are somewhat various. The women generally cut it behind, but allow it to grow to its full. length on the rest of the head. The men sometimes divide the hair into a number of locks, and plait or twist each lock into a sort of tail about the thickness of a man's finger. These tails are allowed to grow to their full length, and stream for some distance down the back. The length of tail seems to be much valued among these people, who are in the habit of adding to their length by supplementary additions of hair weven into their own locks. The hair is often stained of a reddish color by the use of lime, as is done in Fiji and other parts of Polynesia. Sometimes the men shave the whole of the hair on either side of the head, leaving only one crest of long hair to run from the forehead to the nape of the neck, just like the crests of the feather helmets.

Bracelets of various kinds are valued by the women. Some of these ornaments are made of hog's teeth placed side by side, with the concave parts outward, and joined by a string running through the middle. Some of these bracelets are made entirely of the long curved tusks of boars, and are really handsome ornaments. Others are formed from pieces of black wood, fastened together in a similar manner, and being variegated by small pieces of hog's teeth let into them.

The men sometimes wear on their heads tufts of feathers tied to slight sticks. most valuable of these plumes are those which are made of the tail-feathers of the tropic bird. Others, which are not so valua-ble, are made of white dog's hair. The sticks are sometimes two feet in length.

Tattooing is but slightly practised among the Sandwich Islanders, though some of them have the arms and chest decorated with lines and figures tolerably well exe-

Like many of the Polynesians, the Sandwich Islanders have an absurd liking for wich islanders have an absurd liking for pigs and degs, carrying them about and feed-ing them when young, as if they had been children. Even when the animals attain their full growth, they are petted to no small extent. The "Haöle" narrates an amusing example of the extreme tenderness which the Hawaiian women evince for these animals, and the artist has represented the description in engraving No. 2, on the preceding page. He was travelling through the island, and noticed a group of women sitting under the shade of a pandanus tree, and surrounding something in which they seemed to be greatly interested. On coming closer, he found that the object of their attention

was an enormous hog.

The women were taking it to market, a task which usually devolves upon them, and had to drive the animal for a considerable distance over lofty mountains, a task which could not occupy them less than thirty-six hours. To produce the hog in good condi-tion was evidently their principal object, and they would therefore hurry it as little as possible, coax it along, rather than drive it, by day, and sleep by its side at night. It so happened that the day was a very warm one, Captain Cook remarks that the Captain Cook remarks that they have no idea of wearing ornaments in them. They are fond of ornaments, some of which are worth a brief description. They have a sort of necklace made of black cord, doubled forty or fifty nade of black cord, doubled forty or fifty end of black cord, doubled forty or fifty end of the continual fanning which the women kept up with leaves. and the hog, which was in very good condi-

market is near at hand, so that there is no are very ancient, and may be considered at danger the animal may get out of condiliatorical monuments, the coral blocks which tion, a much simpler plan is followed, the shut them off from the sea being of such danger the animal may get out of condi-tion, a much simpler plan is followed, the legs of the pig being tied together, and a pole run between them, which is lifted on the shoulders of two or four men, according

to the weight of the animal.

Although the Sandwich Islanders will eat dogs, pigs, and cats too, when they can afford themselves the luxury, they are so fond of them while living that a man will sooner resent an injury done to his dog or pig than to his child. When travelling, accompanied by their dogs, they treat the animals just like children, taking them in their arms, and carrying them over any rough or muddy places, lest perchance the poor animals should hurt or soil their feet. It is possible that this extraordinary predilection may arise from the fact that none of these animals are indigenous, but have been intro-

duced by Europeans.

It will be seen that the women do not spend their lives in idleness. Indeed, though they are not treated with the harshness that too often falls to the lot of women in uncivilized countries, they do a very fair share of the work. The cooking, for example, is entirely their business, and they are as great adepts at procuring as at cooking food. For example, if a stranger should call at the house of a native, the wife is sure to come out, pass her hand over him, and inquire whether he is hungry. Should he reply in the affirmative, she or another girl runs out to one of the fish ponds, launches a small canoe, and in a very short space of time she has caught some fish, broiled them, cooked some taro, and laid them on plantain leaves

before the guest.

These fish ponds are very common in Hawaii, and are mostly made by the women. They are formed by taking advantage of the coral beach, which has numerous small bays or inlets with comparatively narrow mouths. Across the mouths of these bays the natives pile pieces of coral rock so as to prevent any fish from escaping. They are deepened as occasion may require, and it is not an uncommon thing to see a number of women up to their waists in mud and water busily employed in cleaning out a fish pond, and evidently enjoying the work rather than thinking it a hardship. While they are thus at work on land, their husbands and brothers are equally hard at work on sea, catching the fish which are to be transferred to the pond.

The natives rely much for their supplies of food on these ponds, as fish forms a considerable portion of their diet, pork and fowls being too expensive to be considered anything but luxuries, and only to be eaten constantly by the rich. The ponds vary much in size, but are generally of considerable dimensions. Few of them cover less than an

enormous size as to tell of the time when the kings or principal chiefs were absolute, and could command any amount of human labor.

Even at the present time the natives rely much on their fish ponds for their supplies of food, and the size of the pond is an invariable test of the rank and wealth of the owner. They are watched as carefully as game preserves in our own country, and suffer as much from poachers, who, however,

seldom escape detection.

While, therefore, the women do their share of the work, their life is by no means a laborious one, because there is so little work to be done. The taro patch has to be prepared and cultivated, but this is not a very laborious task; the fish ponds have to be made and left in order, the cooking has to be done, and the bark cloth to be made. Of all these tasks the second is the hardest. and this is rather considered as an amusement than a labor, the men being so amphibious in their habits is at to spend half the day in mud and water is no hardship to them, as is seen by the merry talk and laughter that accompany the work.

Mr. Bennett mentions one instance in which a woman was badly treated by her husband. Being in a state of intoxication, he ordered her to carry him on her back up one of the precipices with which these islands abound. In spite of the almost perpendicular rocks, which are in that spot so steep that the white visitors could barely climb up them without any burden at all, the woman undertook the task, and succeeded in reach-

ing the summit in safety.

The semi-amphibious nature of the Sandwich Islanders has already been mentioned. The mode in which both sexes turn their aquatic powers into a means of amusement will be presently described, but we are now dealing with the work done by the women, and not with their amusements. There is a salt-water lake called Loki Nomilu, which was said by the natives to be the handiwork of the terrible fire-goddess Pele, who dug deep into the ground in search of fresh water, but was baffled by the sea finding a subterranean entrance, although the lake is many yards from the shore. Being angry with the sea for its misconduct she took her departure, and took up her abode in the crater of the great volcano of Hawaii, which is called by her name. There is little doubt that the lake in question is itself the crater of an extinct volcano. The "Haöle" went to visit this extraordinary lake, and gives the fol-lowing account of the mode by which its actual depth was ascertained:-

" Having been informed that this lake was fathomless, I felt only more solicitous to test acre of ground, while others are a hundred the mystery. There were no means, how-times as large. One or two of the largest ever, on the premises; and, two women ex-

serted, th serted. shore, but a heavy n heen ren as though tion. Th thithe. in coming, a anxious to that lake, of the me cursion.

"But or She propo a sounding prement. a measure sured us i formance, to have an procured a ingly light inches in carrying to under the the log of was deep e firmly und be considered as coral blocks which eas being of such the time when the vere absolute, and to fhuman labor, e the natives rely for their supplies he pond is an inand wealth of the d as carefully as own country, and eas, who, however,

men do their share y no means a lay no means a lay no means a lais so little work
ch has to be prechis is not a very
bonds have to be
e cooking has to
loth to be made.
Ind is the hardest,
ed as an amusemen being so amto to spend half
is no hardship to
merry talk and
the work.

one instance in ly treated by her ee of intoxication, in on her back up thich these islands lost perpendicular lost so steep that barely climb up at all, the woman ceeeded in reach

ture of the Sandbeen mentioned. sexes turn their ns of amusement , but we are now e by the women, ents. There is a ri Nomilu, which be the handiwork s Pele, who dug ch of fresh water, nding a subterrahe lake is many ng angry with the the crater of the hich is called by doubt that the e crater of an ex-e" went to visit d gives the folode by which its :d:-

that this lake was solicitous to test no means, howtwo women excepted, the little village was temporarily deserted. There were several cances on the shore, but the lake was much disturbed by a heavy north wind, so that they would have been rendered nearly useless. But I felt as though I could not abandon the expedition. The gentleman who accompanied me thithe, informed the women of my object in coming, and assured them I was extremely anxious to know the depth of the water in that lake, and that we would wait until some of the men returned from their fishing excursion.

"But one of them soon provided a remedy. She proposed swimming into the lake with a sounding-line to make the required measurement. Our remonstrance against such a measure was in vain, for she resolutely assured us it would be not only an easy performance, but afford her much satisfaction to have an opportunity of serving me. She procured a piece of wili-wili wood, exceedingly light, about six feet long, and as many inches in diameter. This she insisted on carrying to the north end of the lake, where, under the lee of the high hills, she launched the log of wood. After wading in until it was deep enough to swim, she placed the log firmly under her chest, keeping it there with

one hand, and retaining the sounding-line with the other. In this position she struck down the lake, stopping at short intervals to let down the line, which she knotted at the surface of the water every time she found the bottom. This done, she would gather up her line, replace her log, and resume her course. And she pursued this plan until her task was done.

"It would be superfluous to say that this feat excited our admiration, or that we compensated her for her pains. It was the most novel expedition I had ever seen; nor could I fully realize it until I remembered that in these islands, as in other parts of Polynesia, and in the Caribbean Sea, the women and girls are the best swimmers. The Hawailans are almost amphibious. Volumes might be written detafling their extraordinary feats in the water. It is owing to their frequent bathing that many of the women of Polynesia display such an exquisite contour."

The woman who performed the feat was the mother of nine children, all of whom were living—an extraordinary event in the life of an Hawaiian woman, so many children perishing either by neglect, disease, or

intentional violence.

CHAPTER CXII.

THE SANDWICH ISLANDS - Concluded.

WAR - SPORT - RELIGION.

WEAPONS OF THE SANDWICH ISLANDERS - KAMEHAMEHA AND THE SPEARS - TWO KINDS OF SLINGS -THE WOODEN DAGGER OR PARUA -- THE KNIFE FOR CUTTING UP THE BODIES OF SLAIN ENG-MIBS-THE WAR MAT AND ITS USES-THE TOOTH BREASTPLATE - SUPPOSED CANNIBALISM OF THE SANDWICH ISLANDERS - VARIOUS GAMES - SURF SWIMMING - CHILDREN AND THE WATER-MASKED PADDLERS-BALL PLAY-CUP AND BALL-THE HIDDEN STONE - A BOXING MATCH IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS—SLEDGING AND ITS DANGERS—RELIGION OF HAWAII—FEATHER AND

Islanders are rather curious.

In the first place they have the spear, which is made of a chestnut colored wood, which takes a high polish, and is usually barbed at the point and brought to a flat-tened point at the butt. They are exceedingly skilful in the use of this weapon, not only in throwing it, but in warding off the weapons that are flung at them. Kamehameha, the well-known king or chief, was celebrated for his skill with the spear. He used to stand with a spear in his right hand in front of six men, also armed with spears. At a given signal they flung their spears simultaneously at him, when he used to strike three aside with the spear in his right hand, and catch the other three in his left hand. Illustration No. 1, on the next page, shows the king performing this dangerous and remarkable feat.

These spears, which are intended to be thrown, are from six to eight feet in length, and are made to fly straight by being tapered gradually from the head to the butt. There is another kind of spear, which is used as a pike. This is from twelve to fifteen feet in length, and is not barbed.

The sling is another of the Sandwich weapons. It is of considerable length, and the receptacle for the stone is made of plaited matting. The stones are oval in shape, and are ground down for the express other's hands in their eagerness to inflict purpose, so that the slingers evidently possess much accuracy of aim. There is a modification of the sling, the use of which seems to be forgotten at the present day,

SOME of the weapons used by the Sandwich | and even in Captain Cook's time was far from universal. The stone is cut of an oval shape, with a groove round it, much like a lady's tatting-needle, and the cord is passed round the groove with a half-hitch, so that when the end of the sling is liberated the stone flies off. Some of these stones obtained by Captain Cook were made of hæmatite, or blood-stone, and were very heavy, weighing at least a pound. It was rather curious that, although there was little difficulty in purchasing the stones, which must have cost much trouble in making, it was not possible to persuade the natives to part with the cord

by which they were flung.

Another of their weapons is the dagger, or paháa, as the natives call it. The material of which it is made is a very hard wood, something like ebony, and it is shaped much like the ordinary steel dagger, except that it has no guard. It is about two feet in length, and is secured to the wrist by a cord passing through a hole at the end of the handle. Some of these daggers are still larger, and double-pointed, being held in the middle like the antelope-horn daggers of India. This weapon has a mournful interest from the fact that when Captain Cook was murdered his body was pierced with innumerable wounds mostly made by wooden daggers, though one of the natives had a dagger made of iron, which they snatched from each other's hands in their eagerness to inflict

(1.) KAMEHAMEHA AND THE SPEARS. (See page 1088.)



(2.) MASKED ROWERS. (See page 1095.)

(1089)

O KINDS OF SLINGS—
CODIES OF SLAIN ENECODIES OF S

ook's time was far ne is cut of an oval nd it, much like a the cord is passed half-hitch, so that ng is liberated the see stones obtained ade of hæmatite, or cy heavy, weighing rather curious that, ed difficulty in purth must have cost it was not possible part with the cord

ons is the dagger, all it. The mate-a very hard wood, it it is shaped much gger, except that it two feet in length, t by a cord passing and of the handle, es still larger, and in the middle like is of India. This interest from the ook was murdered with innumerable wooden daggers, res had a dagger matched from each gerness to inflict

Sandwich Islandh much resembles calanders. It is a

battledoor. shark's tee use is that cutting to slain in ba nally inten a weapon, that it is of ity. As fa is consider one object is never en As to c ing them in best, and u the purpose The defe anders is worn in ti strong to sa spear or the greatly dea When Ca who precipi war mat, ar with a dag the other, t him in self him in self but only to he fired a cl by the war unhurt, his tives to pr Captain Co was loaded mat would probable th deterred fro Cook migh voyage of d One of th fensive arms of teeth, so other just One of these United Serv similar fash and are hun Warfare Sandwich I: of the name of desultory gan by prace avoiding sp mentioned a the opposing clad in his vanced in fr armed, having fan, and ch their spears means of wor ing, and twis ons could no caught in the to escape wit

battledoor-shaped piece of wood, armed with shark's teeth round the edges. Its primary use is that of a knife, and it is employed in cutting to pieces the bodies of foes that are slain in battle. Still, though it was originally intended as an implement and not as a weapon, it is of so formidable a character that he should take no weapon into the field, he was at liberty to huri back at his adversaries any of the spears which he spears bring him to the ground, or should he be successful in killing an adversary, there was an immediate struggle for the possession of the dead body, which is looked is considered to be especially devoted to the one object of cutting up human bodies, and is never employed in any meaner work.

As to clubs, they are of various shapes, the natives having no special form, but carving them into any device that may suit them best, and using different kinds of wood for

the purpose.

The defensive armor of the Sandwich Islanders is generally a thick mat, which is worn in time of war, and is sufficiently strong to save the wearer from the thrust of a spear or the stroke of a dagger, and can even greatly deaden the blow of a sling stone.

When Captain Cook was killed, the man

who precipitated the attack was wearing his war mat, and, on threatening Captain Cook with a dagger in one hand and a stone in with a tagger in one hand and a stone in the other, the captain was obliged to fire at him in self-defence. Not wishing to kill, but only to wound and terrify his adversary, he fired a charge of shot, which was resisted by the war mat, so that the man escaped unhurt, his impunity encouraging the natives to proceed with their attack. Had Captain Cook fired the other barrel, which was loaded with ball, against which the war mat would have been no protection, it is probable that the natives would have been deterred from their attack, and that Captain Cook might have lived to complete the voyage of discovery.

One of the most curious examples of defensive armor is a breastplate made entirely of teeth, so arranged that they overlap each other just like the plates of scale armor. One of these curious breastplates is in the United Service Museum. Teeth hung in a Nothing coul similar fashion are employed as castanets,

and are hung to the legs of dancers.

Warfare as originally practised by the Sandwich Islanders was scarcely deserving the opposing parties met, one of the chiefs, clad in his feather helmet and cloak, advanced in front of his own men, totally unarmed, having nothing in his hand but a fan, and challenging the enemy to throw their spears at him. This they did, and by means of wonderful agility in leaping, stooping, and twisting his body, when the weap-ons could not be struck aside by the fan or caught in the left hand, he often contrived to escape with his life.

possession of the dead body, which is looked upon much as is a flag among ourselves, to be defended or captured at all risks, even of

This statement naturally brings us to the disposal of the bodies of the slain, and to the practice of cannibalism. That the latter practice existed to a certain degree cannot be denied, but it is equally certain that the practice was always exceptional, and that it was followed rather as a portion of military etiquette than as a means of indulging the appetite. As may be imagined, the higher the rank of a slain man the greater the desire to eat a portion, however small, of his flesh; and this theory will account for the fact that the remains of Captain Cook which were rescued from the natives bore evident marks of fire.

It has often happened that cannibalism has been thought to exist on the strength of native evidence, which has afterward been found to have been misunderstood. A remarkable instance of such an error occurs in the account of Captain Cook's voyages. In vol. ii. p. 209, there is an account of a native who was observed to carry with him a very small parcel carefully tied up with string. After resisting many solicitations, string. After resisting many solicitations, he allowed it to be opened, when there appeared a small piece of flesh about two inches long, "which to all appearance had been dried, but was now wet with salt water." On being further pressed on the subject, the man admitted that it was human these and pointing to his own stomach inches flesh, and, pointing to his own stomach, indicated the portion of the body from which

Nothing could be clearer than this ac-count, but in vol. iii. p. 133, the whole of this evidence is shown to be utterly untrustworthy. It seems that almost every Sandwich Islander was in the habit of carry-Sandwich Islanders was scarcely deserving of the name, being little more than a series of desultory skirmishes. They usually began by practising in earnest the skill in avoiding spears which has already been mentioned as exhibited in sport. When the same of the shield in the same of the shield in sport was accused by pointing to his stomach the man the avoiding spears when eating vegetable food. By pointing to his stomach the man the avoiding spears when eating vegetable food. By pointing to his stomach the man the avoiding spears when eating vegetable foods. merely used the conventional sign expressing the excellence of the food; and as to his statement that the flesh was that of a human being, he was so eagerly and closely questioned that, being a mere lad of sixteen or seventeen, he gave an affirmative answer to leading questions. As far as we can see, the Polynesian race is not given to cannibalism, while the Papuans are devoted to it.

WE now come to the various games with

which the Sandwich Islanders amuse them-|danger to encounter. selves. Chief among them is the sport of surf-swimming. This is practised in several of the islands of Polynesia, but in none is it carried out to such perfection as in the Sandwich group. The following spirited account of this sport is given in Captain Cook's Voy-

ages:—
"Swimming is not only a necessary art, in which both the men and women are more expert than any people we had hitherto seen, but a favorite diversion amongst them. One particular mode in which they sometimes amused themselves with this exercise in Karakakooa Bay, appeared to us most perilous and extraordinary, and well deserving a

distinct relation.

"The surf, which breaks on the coast round the bay, extends to the distance of about one hundred and fifty yards from the shore, within which space the surges of the - sea, accumulating from the shallowness of the water, are dashed against the beach with prodigious violence. Whenever from stormy weather, or any extraordinary swell at sea, the impetuosity of the surf is increased to its utmost height, they choose that time for this amusement, which is performed in the

following manner:

"Twenty or thirty of the natives, taking each a long narrow board, rounded at the ends, set out together from the shore. The first wave they meet they plunge under, and, suffering it to roll over them, rise again beyond it, and make the best of their way by swimming out into the sea. The second wave is encountered in the same manner with the first; the great difficulty consisting in seizing the proper moment of diving under it, which, if missed, the person is caught by the surf, and driven back again with great violence; and all his dexterity is then required to prevent himself from being dashed against the rocks. As soon as they have gained, by these repeated efforts, the smooth water beyond the surf, they lay themselves at length on their board, and prepare for their return. As the surf consists of a number of waves, of which every third is remarked to be always much larger than the others, and to flow higher on the shore, the rest breaking in the intermediate space, their first object is to place themselves on the summit of the largest surge, by which they are driven along with amazing rapidity toward the shore.
"If by mistake they should place them-

selves on one of the smaller waves, which breaks up before they reach the land, or should not be able to keep their plank in a proper direction on the top of the swell, they are left exposed to the fury of the next. and, to avoid it, are obliged again to dive and regain the place from which they set

"Those who succeed in their object of them. reaching the shore have still the greatest! They are equally skilful in managing

The coast being guarded by a chain of rocks, with here and there a small opening between them, they are obliged to steer their board through one of these, or, in case of failure, to quit it before they reach the rocks, and, plunging under the wave, make the best of their way back again. This is reckoned very disgrace-ful, and is also attended with the loss of the board, which I have often seen, with great terror, dashed to pieces at the very moment the islander quitted it. The boldness and address with which we saw them perform these difficult and dangerous manœuvres was altogether astonishing, and is scarcely to be credited."

These swimmers used often to pass nearly a mile seaward, in order to enjoy the rapid motion of their return as long as possible, Both sexes and all ranks unite in it, and even the very chiefs themselves, who have attained to the corpulency which they 80 much admire, join in the game of surf-swimming with the meanest of their subjects. Some of the performers attain to a wonderful degree of skill, and, not content with lying on the board, sit, kneel, and even stand on it as they are hurled shoreward by the giant waves. The boards are of various sizes, according to the age and stature of the owner. For adults they are about sir feet in length. They are slightly convex on both sides, and are kept very smooth-all surf-swimmers cherishing a pride in the condition of their boards, and taking care to keep them well polished and continually rubbed with cocoa-nut oil. The artist has finely represented on the following page the marvellous conquest of the sea by these islanders.

Such utter mastery of the waves can only be obtained by familiarity with the water from earliest childhood. A Sandwich Island child can swim as soon as it can walk, if not sooner, the mothers taking them from the breast, laying them on the surface of the water and encouraging them to kick about as if lying on their mats ashore. One writer mentions his encounter with an object which he took to be a very large frog, but which turned out to be a Kanaka (i. & Sandwich Island) baby, which was lying on its back and disporting itself quite at its

Indeed, in the mind of a Sandwich Islander there seems to be no connection between the ideas of water and danger, neither does it enter his imagination that any human being is unable to swim. Consequently, there have been several instances where white men have fallen into the water and have been almost drowned, though in the presence of the natives, simply because the idea that any one could be endangered by falling into the water never occurred to

rocks, with here and y between them, they eir board through one f failure, to quit it berocks, and, plunging the best of their way eckoned very disgraced with the loss of the often seen, with great es at the very moment. The boldness and we saw them perform langerous manceuvres shing, and is scarcely

ed often to pass nearly ler to enjoy the rapid on as long as possible, anks unite in it, and themselves, who have ulency which they so the game of surf-swimest of their subjects. The subjects are attain to a wonderend, not content with a kneel, and even standled shoreward by the coards are of various e age and stature of tat they are about six are slightly convex on ept very smooth—all hing a pride in the cds, and taking care to shed and continually to il. The artist has the following page the full the sea by these isl-

of the waves can only arity with the water I. A Sandwich Island as it can walk, if not king them from the n the surface of the g them to kick about mats ashore. One mocounter with an obbe a very large frog, to be a Kanaka (i. a. 7, which was lying on ag itself quite at its

d of a Sandwich Isbe no connection ber and danger, neither ination that any huse to swim. Conseen several instances fallen into the water drowned, though intives, simply because could be endangered in never occurred to

skilful in managing



SURF SWIMMING BY SANDWICH ISLANDERS.
(See page 1002.)

to the low of narrow beard. The tration No. They hav up his mind

their cand extracting number o ludicrous gourds, an cutting he the eyes at at all unlil the upper bunch of s a little dist

In every worn, the v laughing, of antics. masks were their adver of those wl that of me

theory seen Ball play Sandwich I finite varia can play w them from them are al extemporiz green leave string.

which very They take a a foot or eig some three or more p bring both of and the to the ball with one of the p versing the other end of keep up for ball once.

Another Two player having a st takes the ground, and up into fold posits the sto iar characte and wrinkle would be th were treated player careft oring to disc their canoes, and have a curious mode of stick. Should he hit it, he wins a large extracting amusement out of them. A stake from his opponent; but in the very number of men will sometimes paddle a likely event of missing it he forfeits a small extracting amusement out of them. A number of men will sometimes paddle a cance after dressing themselves up in a most ludicrous fashion. They take large empty gourds, and put them over their heads, after cutting holes in them corresponding with the eyes and nose, so that the effect is not such as bowls, spear throwing, stick darting, to the lower part are suspended a number of narrow strips of cloth, looking like a long beard. Their appearance is shown in illustration No. 2, on the 1089th page.

In every case where these masks were worn, the wearers seemed exceedingly jovial, laughing, shouting, and playing all kinds of antics. It was suggested that these masks were in fact helmets, used to protect the wearers against the stones slung by their adversaries; but the whole demeanor of those who wore them was so completely that of mere masqueraders that the helmet

theory seems quite untenable.

Ball play is a favorite sport with the Sandwich Islanders, and is carried on with infinite variations. Like the Tongans, they can play with five balls at once, throwing them from hand to hand, so that four of them are always in the air. The balls are extemporized on the spot, being made of green leaves rolled together, and bound with

They have a modification of this game, which very much resembles our cup and ball. They take a wooden stick, or handle, about a foot or eighteen inches long, and through one end of it they pass a peg of hard wood, some three inches in length, so that an inch or more projects on either side. bring both ends of the peg to a sharp point, and the toy is then ready. Throwing up the ball with the left hand, they catch it on one of the pointed ends of the peg, and then jerk it into the air, and catch it again, reversing the stick so us to catch it upon the other end of the peg. This game they will keep up for a very long time without missing ball once.

Another amusement is very popular. Two players sit opposite each other, one having a stone and a piece of bark cloth, and the other a stick. The first player takes the bark cloth, spreads it on the ground, and with his right hand crumples it up into folds, while with the other he deposits the stone under the cloth. The peculiar character of the cloth causes the folds and wrinkles to remain unaltered, just as would be the case if a piece of thin, paper were treated in the same way. The other player carefully examines the cloth, endeavoring to discover the spot under which the

stake to the adversary. Great interest is taken in the game by the spectators, and heavy bets are laid on the two players.

at all unlike that of a turnip lantern. To the upper part of the gourd is attached a bunch of slender green twigs, which look at a little distance like a plume of feathers, and other like a plume of feathers, and is not carried on with such fury and pertiis not carried on with such fury and perti-nacity as in Tonga, the victory being gained

"As we had not yet seen anything of their sports or athletic exercises, the natives, at the request of some of our officers, entertained us this evening with a boxing match. These games were much inferior, as well in point of solemnity and magnificence as in the skill and powers of the com-batants, to what we had seen exhibited at the Friendly Islands; yet, as they differed in some particulars it may not be improper to give a short account of them.

"We found a vast concourse of people assembled on a level spot of ground, at a little distance from our tents. A long space was left vacant in the midst of them, at the upper end of which sat the judges, under three standards, from which hung slips of cloth of various colors, the skins of two wild geese, a few small birds, and bunches of

feathers.

"When the sports were ready to begin, the signal was given by the judges, and immediately two combatants appeared. They came forward slowly, lifting up their feet very high behind, and drawing their hand along the soles. As they approached, they frequently eyed each other from head to foot in a contemptuous manner, casting several arch looks at the spectators, straining their muscles, and using a variety of affected gestures. Being advanced within reach of each other, they stood with both arms held out straight before their faces, at which part all their blows were aimed. They struck, in what appeared to our eyes an awk-ward manner, with a full swing of the arm; made no attempt to parry, but eluded their adversary's attack by an inclination of the body or by retreating.

"The battle was quickly decided; for if either of them was knocked down, or even fell by accident, he was considered as vanquished, and the victor expressed his triumph by a variety of gestures, which usually excited, as was intended, a loud laugh among the spectators. He then waited for a second antagonist, and, if again victorious, for a third, till he was at last in his turn

defeated.

"A singular rule observed in these combats is, that whilst any two are preparing to stone is concealed, and, when he has made ap his mind, strikes at the stone with his either of them for his antagonist, when the other is obliged to withdraw, Sometimes | and their crops. Husbands staked their three or four followed each other in this manner before the match was settled. When the combat proved longer than usual, or appeared too unequal, one of the chiefs stepped in, and ended it by putting a stick between the combatants. The same good humor was preserved throughout which we before so much admired in the Friendly Islanders. As these games were given at our desire we found it was universally expected that we should have borne our part in them; but our people, though much pressed by the natives, turned a deaf ear to their challenge, remembering full well the blows they got at the Friendly Islands."

A sport which was formerly in great vogue in the Sandwich Islands is sledging, the sloping sides of the mountain ranges being pressed into the service of the players. The game is called *holua*, and is played in the following manner:—

Each player is furnished with a sledge, made of two narrow runners, varying from seven to eighteen feet in length, three inches deep, and rounded off at one end, just like the steet runner of a skate. These are placed side by side, not parallel, but slightly diverging, the space between the runners being about two inches at the tips, and five inches at the other end. They are connected together with cross-pieces of wood, and mostly covered with strong matting. The native name for the sledge is papa. In order to prepare a path on which the sledge can travel, the natives cut a narrow and shallow trench from the top of the mountain to the base, and even carry it for a mile or more on level ground. Before the sport is begun, the trench is laid with grass so as to make the path easier.

When the players have assembled at the top of the mountain, one of them takes the sledge in his hands, holding it in front of him, retreats a few paces, and then runs forward with all his speed, flings himself head foremost into the trench, and glides down it at a terrific pace, resting on his sledge. The rapidity with which a well-managed sledge will dash down the trench, is absolutely fearful, the incline being often at an angle of forty-five degrees. The art of balancing the narrow sledge is a very difficult one, and if a player should chance to lean too much to one side, or should guide his sledge out of the trench, it is scarcely possible for him to escape with his life. The sledge flies to pieces in a moment, the rider is hurled high in the air, and goes rolling down the steep hill, without any means of guiding or stopping himself.

The winner in this game is the player who travels the farthest along the trench, The winner in this game is the player who travels the farthest along the trench, and so fascinating is the sport, that the natives have been known to stake the whole of their property on their skill. They staked

wives and children, and wives staked their wives and children, and wives staked themselves. And after they had lost all that they had, or were likely to have, they staked their very bones, to be used after death in making fish hooks and arrow heads.

THE religion of the Sandwich Islanders resembles so closely that of the Polynesipas that little need be said about it. What wor. ship they have is extorted by fear, and, in accordance with this principle, they make their idols as ugly as possible. There is a certain character about the idols of the Sandwich Islands which, like the carving of New Zealand, cannot be mistaken.

In order to show how completely this character is impressed upon the workmanship, I introduce upon the following page two specimens, one from the British Museum, and the other from my own collection. The former of these, No. 1, is made, like the feather helmets, of wicker-work, and is very much larger than any human head and neck. It is covered with the red and yellow feathers which have already been mentioned. and, from the mere price of the material, must have been, in the days in which it was made, a most costly and precious object.

The eyes are made of mother-of-pearl, and in the centre of each is set a black bead by way of pupil. The enormous teeth which beset the open mouth are simply the fangs, or canine teeth, of dogs. The top of the head is furnished with a crest, just like that of the feather helmet. In spite of the rudeness of form, the image possesses a certain force and vigor, which shows that the native who made it had some modicum of artistic power, which in this case ex-presses itself in outline, just as in the case of the feather cloak it is exemplified in

By way of contrast with this idol, we will now look at another specimen (No. 2, on same page), in which the artist has been obliged to renounce color, and trust entirely to outline; and it cannot be said that he has been unsuccessful. The head and body of this image are cut out of a white and very light wood, and have been covered with bark cloth. This cloth has been stained black, and the native artist has contrived to apply it with such perfection of manipulation that it fits closely to all the inequalities of the carving, and cannot even be seen until specially pointed out. The head and neck are separate from the

trunk, and carved out of a single piece of wood; and even the bold crest and its supof their property on their skill. They staked teeth of some large fish, and are sixteen in their houses, their lands, their fruit trees, number. They are flanked at each angle of

bands staked their wives staked themy had lost all that kely to have, they is, to be used after hooks and arrow

Sandwich Islanders to f the Polynesicas bout it. What worked by fear, and, in rinciple, they make cossible. There is a to the idols of the a, like the carving of a mistaken.

ow completely this upon the workmanthe following page in the British Musemy own collection. No. 1, is made, like wicker-work, and is any human head and he the red and yellow addy been mentioned, rice of the material, days in which it was precious object.

of mother-of-pearl, h is set a black bead normous teeth which are simply the fangs, ys. The top of the ha crest, just like het. In spite of the image possesses a r, which shows that had some modicument in this case exity is exemplified in

ith this idol, we will pecimen (No. 2, on the artist has been tor, and trust entirely at be said that he has the head and body of a white and very been covered with the has been stained that the contrived to fection of manipulational the inequalities nnot even be seen out.

re separate from the of a single piece of old crest and its suput of the same piece f the upper jaw are g; but those of the row of the palatine h, and are sixteen in tked at each angle of



(1097)

the mouth teeth have bark cloth in at the sent the grieces of m It is rat cloth which stained blue head, face, and of mu The skill with the cloth the head tretching over the vanose, eyes, closely as The neck worthy of than a large attached to sequence of of the head variety of e arrangemen The body

the mouth by a human tooth. After the teeth have been inserted into the wood, the bark cloth has been applied, and is turned in at the roots of the teeth, so as to represent the gums. The eyes are simply oval pieces of mother-of-pearl.

It is rather remarkable that the strip of cloth which runs over the crest has not been stained black, like that which covers the head, face, and neck, but is nearly white, and of much stronger and coarser texture. The skill with which the maker has applied The skin to the wood is result. He has evidently soaked it until it was quite soft and tender, and by means of careful stretching and pressing has "coaxed" it over the various irregularities—such as the over the various irregularities—such as the nose, eyes, and mouth—so that it fits as must be acknowledged that he has carried out his idea most vigorously. The long dress worn by this idea is not stained black, like that which covers the face, head, and without even a

over the various irregularities—such as the nose, eyes, and mouth—so that it fits as closely as if it were the real skin.

The neck is small, narrow, and scarcely worthy of the name, being in fact little more than a large peg, by which the head may be attached to the body when needed. In consequence of this arrangement, the position of the head can be altered at will, and the which the fact of any person, gained by so simple as variety of expression gained by so simple an arrangement is scarcely credible.

The body of the idol is made of the same

fits loosely. The arms are nothing more than bundles of rushes or reeds, tied with cloth; and each hand is furnished with six cloth; and each hand is furnished with six fingers, probably as a symbol of extraordinary power. The fingers are merely dogs' teeth, the whiteness of which presents a curious contrast with the black head and body. There are no legs, nor even any indication of legs, the body being little more than a block of wood, with a hole at the top for the insertion of the neck, and a smaller hole at each shoulder for the insertion of the arms. Whatever artistle power the maker pos-

pattern.

For this interesting specimen I am in-debted to E. Randell, Esq., who has furnished me with many of the objects which have been figured in this work.

CHAPTER CXIII.

THE CAROLINE ARCHIPELAGO.

DRESS - ARCHITECTURE - AMUSEMENTS - WAR.

DISCOVERY AND NAMING OF THE ISLANDS—THEIR GEOGRAPHICAL EXTENT—THE MARSHALL AND GILBERT GROUPS—INHABITANTS OF ROMANZOFF ISLAND—THE ISLAND OF BORNABI AND ITS INHABITANTS—TATTOOING AND HAIR DRESSING—A MAN OF FASHION IN HORNABI—ARCHITECTURE AND ANCIENT RURS—LOVE OF COAST—THE PELEW ISLANDS—BHIFWRECK OF CAPTAIN WILSON—COMPLEXION AND GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES—THE TATTOO—CURIOUS COMBINATION OF NAKEDNESS AND MODESTY—USE OF THE BETEL-NUT—THE RUPACKS AND THE BONE BRACELET—MODE OF INVESTITURE—SPEAR THROWING—MODE OF CONDUCTING SEA FIGHTS—ARCHITECTURE OF THE PELEW ISLANDS—MANUFACTURE OF DOMESTIC IMPLEMENTS—DANCE OF THE WARRIORS—IDEA OF RELIGION—A FUNERAL IN THE PELEW ISLANDS—STORY OF THE BOOK.

PASSING in a south-westerly direction from the Sandwich Islands we come to a very large group called the Caroline Archipelago. These islands were discovered — as far as is known —in 1526, by the Portuguese, who in those days were the most enterprising navigators in the world. About fifty years afterward they were visited by Drake, but they did not receive the name by which they are known until more than a hundred years after Drake's voyage, when they were named by the Spanish the Carolines, in honor of Charles the Second, the then king of Spain.

These islands extend over a very considerable geographical range, a space of some fifty degrees intervening between the most easterly and westerly of them. Owing to the extensive range of these islands, there is considerable difference between the manners and customs of these natives, and even between their form and complexion. We will therefore take as examples some of the easterly, central, and western islands.

THE most easterly of the group are those which are called the Marshall and Gilbert Islands, the former being those of the north and the latter those of the south. They are sometimes divided into the Eastern and Western Islands, the former being the Radick and the latter the Ralick chain, each group comprising about fifteen or sixteen islands.

These islands are all low in the water, being mostly of coralline structure, so that they are not visible from any great distance. In consequence of their lowness, they seem to have escaped the observation of voyages until 1788, when they were discovered by Marshall and Gilbert, after whom they were named. As is usual in coral islands, the soil is but shallow, having been formed by the decomposition of vegetable matter thrown on the coral reefs by the waves. The vegetation is therefore scanty, and is mostly confined to bananas, cocoa-nut trees, breadfruit—all of which thrive best on a low situation near water.

As a sample of the Marshall Islanders, I give a portrait of a man and woman of Romanzoff Island, on the next page. They are a rather fine race, taller than the generality of the Caroline Islanders, and possess tolerably good features. They use the tattoo with some profusion, both sexes appearing to be equally addicted to it. They are better clothed than many Polynesians, the men wearing a short mat round their waists, and the women being clad in a very fine and neatly-made mat, falling nearly to the fet. The hair is long, and naturally curling, and is worn long by both sexes. Earrings are in great request, and some of them, as may be seen by reference to the illustration, are enormously large.

From the structure of the island, it is evident that the present inhabitants are not

(1100)

THE MARSHALL AND OF BORNABI AND ITS BORNABI — ARCHITEC-PWERECK OF CATTAN HE TATTOO — CURIOUS HE RUPACKS AND THE OF CONDUCTING SEA IESTIC IMPLEMENTS—LEW ISLANDS — STORY LEW ISLANDS — STORY

low in the water, e structure, so that any great distance. lowness, they seem rvation of voyagers ere discovered by er whom they were oral islands, the soil een formed by the ble matter thrown waves. The vegnty, and is mostly bas-nut trees, breadive best on a low

arshall Islanders, I and woman of Ronext page. They aller than the genanders, and possess They use the tattoo the sexes appearing it. They are better ynesians, the mend their waists, and in a very fine and nearly to the feet. urally curling, and sees. Earrings are no of them, as may he illustration, are

the island, it is evinhabitants are pot



aborigine no very r presence ges from canoes a bread-fru BORNA

importan seventy n Instead these isla ing up to dle, and s In cons excellent place of

some par zone, and tour, the the comb wonderfu the highe water no while on delights in branches penetrate

The in stature, thinches hi shorter. tioned, an often the ized races Like th

themselve their blac oiled and of people of flowers. for turmer sian race profusely their natu repulsive The me

a Bornabi amount o not exhibi hair by m of cockle-bent doub aprons, or are made bleached

He must

made of h

aborigines, but came from other islands at | yellow. He must have his necklaces, his no very remote period. They have kept up the nautical spirit to which they owe their presence on the island, and make long voyages from one island to another. Their canoes are well made, and are built of bread-fruit wood.

BORNABI is one of the largest and most important of these islands, being about seventy miles in circumference, and having a sufficient variety of soil to be very fertile. Instead of being as low-lying as some of these islands, it is of volcanic origin, shooting up to a considerable height in the middle, and surrounded by flat coral reefs.

In consequence of this structure, it affords excellent harborage, and has become a great place of resort for whaling vessels. Like some parts of America within the same zone, and having a somewhat similar con-tour, the island is a very wet one, so that the combined heat and moisture produce a wonderful fertility of vegetation. Even on the higher parts of the island, the fresh water nourishes various trees and shrubs, while on the coast the mangrove, which delights in salt water, absolutely grows into the sea, and, by its interlacing roots and branches forms a barrier which cannot be penetrated except through the apertures made by the mouths of rivers and creeks.

The inhabitants are of a fair average stature, the men being about five feet eight inches high, while the women are much shorter. They are, however, well proportioned, and not stumpy or clumsy, as is too often the case with the women of uncivilized races.

Like the Romanzoff Islanders, they tattoo themselves liberally, and both sexes wear their black hair very long, keeping it well oiled and carefully dressed, and, in the case of people of rank, adorning it with wreaths of flowers. They have the same odd passion for turmeric which is found in the Polynesian races generally, anointing themselves profusely with it, and thereby converting their naturally pleasing copper color into a

repulsive yellow. The men dress themselves very carefully, a Bornabi man of fashion spending a vast amount of time on his costume. He must not exhibit a vestige of hair on his face, but must painfully pluck out each individual hair by means of forceps made of a couple of cockle-shells, or a piece of tortoise-shell bent double. He must wear at least six arons, one over the other. These aprons are made of strips of the cocoa-nut leaf bleached white and about two feet in length. He must have round his waist a belt or sash made of banana fibre, and dyed scarlet and head-band, and his scarlet tassels in his ears; and he finishes off his costume by a sort of parasol or sunshade made of leaves, which he ties round his head so as to preserve the face from the sun.

This elaborate toilet must be made several times daily, as every native bathes, oils, and paints his skin yellow at least three times every day. The dress of the women bears some resemblance to that of the men. except that, in lieu of the series of apron fringes they wear bark cloth fastened round the waist and reaching to the knee.

In architecture the people of Bornabi are superior to the generality of Polynesians. Like the Marquesans, they begin by building a platform of stones, some four or five feet in height, and upon this they erect the framework of the edifice. The spaces between the upright timbers are filled in with wicker-work, in which are left certain apertures that answer the purpose of windows. The floor is covered with the same kind of wicker-work, except a small space in the centre, in which the fireplace is made. The roof is thatched neatly with pandanus leaves. In all these particulars there is little distinction between the architecture of Bornabi and that of many other islands. The chief point of difference lies, however, in the fact that the timbers are squared, and that, instead of being merely lashed together, they are fastened by tenon and mortise.

It seems probable that the superiority of

their architecture, more especially in the squaring of beams and the use of the mortise, is due not so much to themselves as to the remembrance of buildings erected by white men several centuries ago. Near one of the harbors are some ruined buildings, which are evidently not of savage architecture. They are built of cut stones, which have been imported from some other country, and are arranged in streets, looking as if they had formed a portion of a fortifica-tion. It has been conjectured that these buildings were the work of the Spanish buccaneers, who used, some centuries ago. to range these seas, and would have found such a harbor and fort invaluable to them.

As far as is known, the inhabitants of Bornabi keep almost entirely to the coast, and never visit the interior. It is certain that the cultivated grounds only extend for a very little distance inland, and, as all the energy of these islanders naturally takes a seaward direction, it is very probable that the natives speak truth when they say that they have never even visited the centre of their island.

THE PELEW ISLANDS.

is known by the name of the Pelew or Pal-lou Islands. They were discovered, in 1543, by Villabolos, but have been made known to us principally by means of Captain H. Wilson, who was wrecked there in 1783. The group consists of about twenty small islands, which are surrounded by a reef.

The inhabitants are of a dark copper color, well made, tall, and remarkable for their stately gait. They employ the tattoo in rather a curious manner, pricking the pat-terns thickly on their legs from the ankles to a few inches above the knees, so that they look as if their legs were darker in color than the rest of their bodies. They are cleanly in their habits, bathing frequently, and rubbing themselves with cocoa-nut oil, so as to give a soft and glossy appearance to the skin.

The hair of the head is fine and black, and is worn long by both sexes, being rolled up in a peculiar fashion close to the back of the head. That of the face and chin is mostly removed, being plucked out by tweezers, only a few men, remarkable for the strength and thickness of their beards, allowing them to grow. The men wear no clothing, not even the king himself having the least vestige of raiment, the tattoo being supposed to answer the purpose of dress.

So unacquainted with real clothing were they when Captain Wilson visited them, that they were utterly perplexed at the gar-ments of the white men, lifting up the flaps of the coats, pinching the sleeves, and then comparing them with their own naked limbs, evidently fancying that these mysterious objects were the skin peculiar to the white man. They also took the blue veins on the seamen's wrists for lines of tattooing, and asked to be allowed to see the whole of the arm, in order to find out whether the blue lines were continued beyond the wrist.

In spite, however, of the absence of dress the deportment of the sexes toward each other is perfectly modest. For example, the men and women will not bathe at the same spot, nor even go near a bathing-place of the opposite sex unless it be deserted. If a man is forced to pass near a women's bathing-place, he is obliged, when he comes within a stipulated distance, to give a loud shout; and, if it be answered by a female voice, he must either pass by a circuitous route, or turn back and wait until the women have left the spot.

Their features are tolerably good, the nose rather prominent, and the mouth moderately large. They would look a tolerably handsome people but for their custom of from them. The king, or a Rupack ap-chewing the betel-nut, which stains the pointed by him, then takes the bracelet, and chewing the betel-nut, which stains the mouth red and the teeth black. The chiefs directs the candidate to throw a stone as far and all the principal men are so devoted to as he can. This is done in order to ascer-

THE westernmost group of the Carolines | the betel that they always carry with them a little basket containing the nuts, and a small bamboo vessel in which they keep the quicklime which is mixed with the betel when chewed.

Although they care nothing for dress, and comparatively little for ornament, the very great chiefs wear one decoration which is prized by them much as is the Garter in England, or the Golden Fleece in Spain. This is a bone bracelet, worn on the left wrist and denoting the very highest rank next to that of the king himself. Those who are privileged to wear it are called Rupacks, and, as will presently be seen, the rank is not necessarily hereditary, but is conferred at the pleasure of the king.

It seems strange to us that distinctions of rank should be thus sharply defined among a people like the Pelew Islanders, and that naked savages" should have their various gradations of social position. That a definite scale of rank should exist at all is an evidence of some civilization, and that so complete a system should be found among these islanders appears a perfect enigma to those who have been accustomed to associate clothing and civilization as inseparable con-Yet here we have the singular ditions. fact that there is a distinct division of ranks into king, nobles, gentry, and peasantry; and that, although these ranks are perfectly well defined and acknowledged, not a man. from the almost despotic king to the lowest subject, wears the slightest article of cloth-

Not only are these distinctions jealously are divided into several ranks, as is the case in civilized lands, and that the highest rank is denoted by a symbolical badge. This badge is conferred only by the sovereign himself, and the investiture with the Rupack's bone is conducted with a ceremonious solemnity that denotes the estimation in which it is held. So deeply are the Rupacks attached to this symbol of their rank, that a rebel Rupack, who had made war against the king, and was taken alive, resisted every attempt to deprive him of his bracelet, and did not part with it until he had sacrificed his life in its defence. In shape the bone bears a curious resemblance to the open jaws of a skate, and is probably made on that model.

The mode of investiture is a very ceremonious one, and is illustrated on the following page. The Rupacks are assembled together in a sort of chapter of their order, and the Rupack elect is seated at a little distance es carry with them ag the nuts, and a which they keep the led with the betel

thing for dress, and ornament, the very ecoration which is

ecoration which is a is the Garter in Fleece in Spain, worn on the left very highest rank timself. Those who are called Rupacks, a seen, the rank is y, but is conferred

g.
that distinctions of
ply defined among
Islanders, and that
have their various
on. That a definite
ist at all is an evi1, and that so comfound among these
ot enigma to those
omed to associate
as inseparable conhave the singular
t division of ranks
y, and peasantry;
ranks are perfectly
ledged, not a man,
king to the lowest
est article of cloth-

tinctions jealously to that the nolles anks, as is the case at the highest rank badge. This badge screigh himself, the Rupack's bone monious solemnity ion in which it is Rupacks attached rank, that a rebel war against the ve, resisted every f his bracelet, and he had sacrificed n shape the bone ance to the open probably made on

e is a very ceremoed on the following assembled together eir order, and the at a little distance or a Rupack aps the bracelet, and arow a stone as far in order to ascer-



(1.) INVESTITURE OF THE RUPACK. (See page 1:01.)



(2.) THE WARRIORS' DANCE. (See page 1108.)

be tarnis

tain whi

goes on man on A stri hand; the bracelet, plentiful principa the cand shoulder The kin gether t grees dra He then telling hi

with his Captain with the ceremony distinctio regions a and held "In th originally so, in eve

And whi garded th sions — ex promote v decoration from the viewing is impressed the badge round the dangling broidered arm."

He mig value of th with the I the bone of laurel or p rior, or th hero, are a remarkable

bone, so the tinguish his The Pele like people fore, simple of spears, other as a pay a very ing the obserab, or through the obserab, or through the consistent in Levi and the consistent in

feet in lengend. When spear, he plathrowing-st the elastic doubled. loosed, and

man on the right wrist,

A string is then tied to each finger of the hand; the strings are passed through the bracelet, which, together with the hand, is plentifully anointed with cocoa-nut oil. The principal Rupack then places himself behind the candidate, and holds him firmly by the shoulders, while another hauls at the strings. The king, in the meantime, squeezes together the fingers of the hand, and by degener the linguist of the makes a speech to the new Rupack, telling him to polish the bracelet daily, and

Captain Wilson, who was himself invested with the Rupack's bone, writes thus of the ceremony and its object: - "This mark of distinction is given and received in these regions as a reward of valor and fidelity,

and held out as the prize of merit.
"In this light such public honors were originally considered, and still ought to be so, in every state, from Pelew to Britain. And while they continue to be thus regarded they will operate on the human passions - excite emulation, inspire courage, promote virtue, and challenge respect. The decoration, indeed, derives all its splendor from the combined ideas of the mind whilst viewing it; and the imagination is equally impressed with the same sentiment, whether the badge of honor be a strip of velvet tied round the knee, a tuft of riband and a cross dangling at the button-hole, a star embroidered on the coat, or a bone upon the arm."

He might have added that the intrinsic value of the decoration bears no comparison with the honor which it denotes, and that the bone of the naked Pelew Islander, the laurel or parsley crown of the ancient war-rior, or the Victoria Cross of the modern hero, are alike valueless and priceless. It is remarkable that the king does not wear the bone, so that he has no external sign to distinguish him from the meanest peasant.

The Pelew Islanders are not a very warlike people, and their weapons are, there-fore, simple and few. They have two kinds of spears, one used as a missile, and the other as a pike. The missile spear is thrown by a very remarkable instrument, reminding the observer of the Australian wumme-

rah, or throw-stick.

It consists of a piece of wood about two feet in length, and having a notch at one end. When the warrior wishes to throw his spear, he places the butt in the notch of the throwing-stick, and with his left hand bends the elastic bamboo shaft until it is nearly doubled. The hold of the left hand is then canoe is the adze, or axe. In form the

tain which hand he habitually uses, so that if he be a right-handed man the bracelet ficity. To an European nothing can be goes on the left wrist, and if a left-handed the spear; but the Pelew Islanders can send the weapon to a considerable distance, and

aim it well besides.

Even without the aid of the throwingstick, they are no mean adepts at hurling the spear. When Lee Boo, the son of the king, was at Canton, some gentlemen who were skilled in spear throwing asked him to exhibit the manner in which his own people managed the weapon. He took the spear, and, not thinking that it was to be thrown, merely quivered and poised it according to the usual preliminaries. He was then rekeep it bright; never to suffer its honor to be tarnished, and never to part from it but bird painted on it. The cage was at such a distance that the gentlemen could seldom strike it. Lee Boo, however, took up the spear carelessly, poised it for a moment, hurled it, and not only hit the cage, but struck the bird through the head.

The Rupacks mostly carry swords and daggers. The former are made of a very heavy wood, and nearly three feet in length. They are inlaid with pieces of white shell, and are strong and heavy enough to kill a man with a single blow. The daggers are made of the tail-bone of the sting-ray, and, when not in use, are carried in a sheath made of a single joint of bamboo, just as is the case with the small knives of Borneo.

Land battles are seldom fought in these islands, the natives trusting chiefly to their canoes, which are of large size and well built. Their hulls are cut out of tree trunks, and then are carved, painted, and inlaid with the patient care which distinguishes savage art. When the king goes out in state, the canoes are further adorned with bunches of shells, strung on cords and hung to the bows and stern-posts. The out-rigger is used, and the sails are of the "latine" form. Despite, however, of the care bestowed upon their vessels, the Pelew Islanders are not good sailors, and seldom venture outside the chain of reefs which encircle their group of islands. Even within it when the sea ran at all high, they would not venture into their canoes.

In consequence of their mode of fighting, the capture of an enemy's canoe is thought of much more consequence than the slaughter of his soldiers, and is looked upon much in the same light as we consider the capture of an enemy's gun or flag. Therefore when one party finds that the battle is going against them, they turn their canoes landward, and drive them ashore with all their might, and, if possible, drag them so high on the beach that they cannot be floated without exposing the invaders to almost

certain death.

loosed, and the spear projects itself to a con- weapon is almost identical with the Polyne-

sian adzes which have been already described in this work. The blade is made of continually, so as to heat each part equally, the thick and strong shell of the giant clam, When Captain Wilson was at the Pelew the thick and strong shell of the giant clam, and the most curious point of the instru-ment is that the head revolves in a groove, so that it can be used as an adze or an axe at pleasure. The Dyak boat builder has a precisely similar instrument, as will be seen in the course of a few pages.

Their smaller tools and implements-such as stone knives, comb, and stringthey carry in the basket which holds their betel; and as they have no dress, and consequently no pockets, a man never walks to any distance from his home without carry-

ing the basket with him.
The architecture of the Pelew Islanders is very good. The houses are raised about three feet from the ground by means of stone posts, upon which are laid the beams which support the flooring and side-posts. The walls are made of thick matting, which extends from post to post, and the floors are generally of plank, having an inch or so of space between the boards. Sometimes they are made of split bamboos, which become polished and very slippery by the constant tread of naked feet.

Each house has in the centre its fireplace. sunk lower than the flooring, and formed of stones and earth. The fire is kept burning all night, not for the purpose of warmth, but that the smoke may fill the house, and drive away mosquitoes. When the house is a very large one, and employed for the general use, there are two fireplaces, one at each end. Along the sides of the house are arranged certain apertures which answer equally the purposes of windows or doors, and are furnished with sliding shutters, by which they can be closed at pleasure. Each of these apertures is furnished with stepping stones, by means of which the inhabitants can enter or leave the house without having to clamber from the ground to the raised floor. The large houses are employed for public uses, the councils being held in front of them, or the people assembling in them for social talk, in which the women bear their full share. Some of these houses are from sixty to eighty feet in length.

Being a cleanly people, the Pelew Islanders keep their houses neatly swept, the broom being a bundle of cocoa-nut husks tied together. The vessels which contain fresh water are simply joints of the bamboo, the open ends of which are furnished with a sort of spout or lip, by means of which the water can be poured without danger of

being spilt.

The cooking vessels are made of earthenware, and are mostly of an oval shape. They are not, however, very good potters, their pots and pans being rather fragile, and so after death. They had several superstibadly burnt that the natives dare not put tions, one of which was that the wood of a

Islands, the king had a vessel of which he was very proud. It was carved out of a block of wood, plentifully inlaid with pieces of white shell, and, when the cover was upon it, formed a tolerably fair representation of a bird. This vessel held about nine gallons, and on occasions of great cere-mony, was brought out and filled with sweet drink for the use of the king and his Rupacks.

Of the amusements of the Pelew Islanders Captain Wilson says little, and gives but a brief description of the very odd dance in which they delight. This description will be better understood by reference to the illustration on the 1105th page. "In the evening our people were entertained with a dance of the warriors, who were just then returned, which was performed in the fol-

lowing manner:

"The dancers have a quantity of plantain leaves brought to them, which they split and shiver into the form of ribands. These they twine and fix round their heads, wrists, waists, ankles, and knees; and the leaves being of a yellowish hue, so prepared, have not an inelegant effect when applied to their dark copper skin. They make also bunches or tassels of the same, which they hold in their hands.

"When drawn out, they form themselves into circles of two or three deep, one within another. In general, an elderly man amongst them begins in a very solemn tone something like a song, or long sentence— for our countrymen could not discriminate which it was - and when he comes to a pause, or what we should call the end of a stanza, a chorus is struck up, and the dancers all join in concert, still continuing

their figure.
"Their dancing does not so much consist in capering or agility as in a particular method they have of balancing themselves, and this frequently very low sideways, singing tegether all the while; during which they will flatten their circles, so as to bring themselves face to face to each other, lift-ing up the tassels they hold in their hands, and giving them a clashing or tremulous motion. After this there will be a sudden pause, and an exclamation from every one of 'Weel!' Then a new sentence or stanza is repeated, and danced to as before, and the same ceremony continued till every man who is engaged in the dance has in his turn had his repetition and chorus."

As far as was ascertained by Captain Wilson, the Pelew Islanders have some notions of religion, and certainly believed in a life after death. They had several superstithem at once on the fire, but set them certain tree was unlucky, and always brought first at a little distance, and, as they become harm wherever it was used. When Captain

Wilson some p may of him to plained any kin ship bu results, pected i shortly inserted side of t thus cor

Their and sim nessed 1 the prin scarcely wrapped on a bie attendin the bier, as they place of grave, a by the fo round, marking from the Next d

of the d and peri took two always ga red ochr stripes a painted n underton posed to 1 rer, turning them each part equally. was at the Pelew ressel of which he carved out of a inlaid with pieces en the cover was el held about nine s of great cered filled with sweet king and his Ru-

the Pelew Islandittle, and gives but very odd dance in is description will reference to the h page. "In the entertained with a no were just then ormed in the fol-

antity of plantain which they split of ribands. These their heads, wrists, s; and the leaves so prepared, have en applied to their make also bunches hich they hold in

y form themselves three deep, one ral, an elderly man very solemn tone long sentence en he comes to a call the end of a uck up, and the rt, still continuing

ot so much consist as in a particular ancing themselves, ow sideways, sing-ile; during which cles, so as to bring o each other, lift-ld in their hands, hing or tremulous will be a sudden on from every one sentence or stanza as before, and the ed till every man nce has in his turn orus."

ed by Captain Wilhave some notions believed in a life several superstithat the wood of a and always brought d. When Captain

Wilson was building his new vessel, he used | kind. A bundle of betel leaves was treated some planks of th's tree, much to the dismay of the king. abba Thulle, who begged him to remove them. Captain Wilson explained to him that as in his own country any kind of suitable wood was employed for any kind of statable wood was employed for ship building without producing disastrous results, the same impunity was to be ex-pected in the Pelew Islands. As it happened, shortly after the obnoxious planks had been inserted, one of the carpenters fell from the side of the vessel, and hurt himself severely, thus confirming the natives in their belief.

Their funeral ceremonies are very short and simple, and even in one instance witnessed by Captain Wilson, when the son of the principal chief was buried, there was scarcely any ceremony. The corpse was wrapped up in mats, and borne by four men on a bier, no men except the actual bearers attending. A number of women followed the bier, and poured out loud lamentations as they walked. When they arrived at the place of burial, the body was laid in the grave, and the earth immediately filled in by the four bearers, while the women knelt round, and renewed their lamentations, marking as if they would tear up the body from the ground.

Next day, however, Raa Kook, the father of the deceased, went to the burial-place, and performed a curious ceremony. took two old cocoa-nuts (young nuts being always gathered for consumption) and some red ochre, with which he drew transverse stripes across the nuts. He then laid the painted nuts by his side, and repeated, in an undertone, some words which were supposed to be an incantation or prayer of some pany.

in the same way, and the whole were then delivered to an old woman, who went with them toward the grave; but the precise termination of the ceremony was not ascertained.

On page 1107 mention was made of Lee Boo. As this young man was the first Pelew Islander who ever visited England, and was besides a very remarkable character, I will conclude this account with a short memoir of him,

He was the second son of the king, Abba Thulle, who was no common man, and well deserving of the power which he held. He possessed great energy, wonderful liberality of mind, and an innate nobility of disposition. The visit of the white men taught him their infinite superiority, and when Captain Wilson had built his new ship, and was about to start, Abba Thulle begged him to take Lee Boo to England, to have him instructed in the arts of civilization, and to send him back again so that he might be the teacher of his future people. The request was granted, and Lee Boo accompanied Captain Wilson to England, where he lived for five months, winning the esteem and affection of all whom he met, by his intelligent, modest, and affectionate nature. Unfortunately for his father's hopes, he was attacked with small-pox, of which he died, his last wish being that all presents that been given him should be sent to his father. He died on Dec. 27, 1784, and was buried in Rotherhithe Church, where a tomb was erected to his memory by the India Com-

CHAPTER CXIV.

BORNEO.

THE DYAKS, THEIR APPEARANCE AND DRESS.

SUPPOSED ORIGIN OF THE DYAKS-NUMBER OF TRIBES-THE SEA AND LAND DYAKS-GENERAL APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES -- TATTOOING MOST PREVALENT AMONG THE LEAST CIVILIZED TRIBES -- DRESS AND ORNAMENT -- EXTRAORDINARY EARRINGS -- FILING AND BLACKENING THE TEETH-A DYAK WARRIOR IN FULL DRESS-A DUSUM WARRIOR IN ORDINARY COSTUME-THE ILLINOAN PIRATES, THEIR ARMAMENTS AND FEROCITY - A SAGHAI DYAK AND HIS STRANGE HEADDRESS - STRENGTH AND ACTIVITY OF THE DYAKS - "BATANG" WALKING - AN OBLIGING DYAK - THEIR ABILITY TO PENETRATE JUNGLES - THE CHAWAT AND SARONG - A DYAK DANDY -DRESS OF THE WOMEN-THE BEDANG AND SLEEVELESS JACKET-THE BEAUTIFUL HAIR OF DYAK WOMEN-THE METALLIC BODICES-A SAIBAS GIRL IN FULL DRESS-DYAK BELLS-TREATMENT OF THE WOMEN.

WITH the exception of Australia, which may take rank as a continent, BORNEO is the largest island in the world. It is situated in the tropics, the equator passing nearly through the centre of it, and forms the centre of the Indian Archipelago.

Until late years, scarcely anything was known of Borneo; but since the late Sir James Brooke accomplished his wonderful series of exploits against the piratical tribes that infested the coast for more than a thousand miles, and destroyed all commerce, the country has been tolerably explored, and the manners and customs of its inhabitants investigated. Following the plan on which this work has been formed, we will only concern ourselves about the natives of Borneo who live to a degree the life of savages, and only possess that amount of civilization which is compatible with savage existence.

PUTTING aside the Malay Mahometans who have settled in Borneo, we may roughly divide the native tribes into the Land and Sea Dyaks. The former of these divisions seldom go to sea, either for piracy or trade, and in this respect are very different from the Sea Dyaks, whose existence is essentially a naval one.

Mr. Brooke believes that the Land Dyaks have emigrated from a country in which they would be brought in contact with Hindooism, inasmuch as they possess sundry relics of that religion. "The remains of

Hindooism found among them, such as stone-shaped bulls and other stone utensils. and the refusal among them to touch the nesh of cattle or deer — and so particular are they that they will fine a man for even spilling the blood of these animals on their premises; the name of their deity being Juwata - these testifying points support a fair conjecture that they must have gained a fair notion of Hindoo worship from people coming into the Kapuas River from the island of Java, which is only distant from some of the outstretching points of Borneo two hundred miles, and fair winds generally prevail between."

In confirmation of this opinion, Mr. Brooke mentions that the expression, "in the days of the Hindoos," was formerly employed when any ancient date was signified. There are about nine or ten branches of the Land Dyaks, each of which branches is divided into a considerable number of tribes. It is impossible to give the names and description of the individual tribes on account of their fluctuating character. The people are con-tinually shifting their place in search of new lands for cultivation, and the result is that they quarrel with each other, fight, are dispersed, and thus form new tribes in the spots on which they settle.

It is thought that their number does not exceed forty thousand, many tribes of which have never been near the sea.

Next come the Sea Dyaks, a fairer, a finer,

and a about t Dyaks, what th They a ing by extent hunting the cou They

seldom and mu of the La Sea Dy been co a hu develope very pr women : off the exhibit and shin

Their will be d we will their app and have

almost b however his uppe: proud, ai known v develope Tattoo tribes, ar civilizatio civilization

and those it having practice. covered . of other and armle arms. T the great the breas has the e them tatt look as if taches. more elab shall pres It is wo

an idea th very muc whose co allow the anchors, t entwined which a himself. verbal ski the Sea The tribes its greate

Sea Dyak

and a more interesting people. They are of the Malaccan division, such as the Kaabout three times as numerous as the Land nowits, who are mightily despised by the Dyaks, and are at the present day much what the old sea-kings were in days gone by They are essentially a nation of rovers, living by piracy, and carrying out to the fullest extent the abominable practice of head-hunting, of which we shall see something in

the course of a few pages.

They are taller than the Land Dyaks, who seldom exceed five feet six inches in height, and much fairer in complexion. The skin of the Land Dyak is brown, whereas that of the Sea Dyak is many shades lighter, and has been compared to the color of a new saddle -a hue which admirably suits the well-developed forms of these people. They are very proud of their complexion, and the women are fond of an excuse for throwing off the jackets which they wear, in order to exhibit their smooth satiny skins, polished and shining as if of new bronze.

Their various customs in peace and war will be described in their proper places, and we will content ourselves at present with their appearance and dress.

The Dyaks, as a rule, are nearly beardless, and have a cast of countenance which might almost be called effeminate. Occasionally, however, a man does possess a few hairs on his upper lip, of which he is inordinately proud, and one or two instances have been known where a man has possessed a welldeveloped beard.

Tattooing is practised among many of the tribes, and prevails in inverse ratio to their civilization, those who are furthest from civilization being most profusely tattooed, and those who are brought in contact with it having almost entirely abandoned the practice. The men of some tribes are nearly covered with tattooed patterns, while those of other tribes have stars on their breasts and armlets and bracelets on their legs and arms. The Kanowit Dyaks, who belong to the great Malanau tribe, are tattooed from the breast to the knees with a pattern that has the effect of scale armor, and many of them tattoo their chins and chests so as to look as if they had real beards and moustaches. The tattoo of the women is often more elaborate than that of the men, as we shall presently see.

It is worthy of notice that, as a rule, the Sea Dyaks do not use the tattoo. They have an idea that it is a sign of cowardice, and are very much surprised that English sailors, whose courage they can but respect, will allow themselves to be tattooed with the anchors, true lovers' knots, ships in full sail, entwined initials, and other figures with which a British sailor loves to disfigure himself. In consequence of this feeling many verbal skirmishes have been waged between the Sea Dyaks and the English seamen. The tribes among whom tattooing reaches its greatest development are mostly those

nowits, who are mightily despised by the regular Land and Sea Dyaks, and are only tolerated by them as being the means of affording a constant supply of heads.

The Dyaks are exceedingly fertile in their invention of ear ornaments. Most savages content themselves with making one hole in the lobe of the ear, and often enlarge it so that a man's hand could be passed through the orifice. But the Dyaks go much further in their ideas of adornment.

In common with other savages, they make an enormous hole in the lobe of the ear, increase it by inserting a series of gradually enlarged plugs, and drag it down as far as the shoulder by hanging leaden weights to it. But they also bore a series of holes all round the edge of the ear, and fill them with various ornaments. The favorite plan is, to have a series of brass rings, and to insert them in the holes of the ear, the smallest being at the top, and the lowest, which is large enough to be a bracelet, at the bottom. This decoration prevails chiefly among the Sea Dyaks, and there is a sort of proverb which warns the hearer to beware of a man

who wears many earrings. Often the Dyaks do not content themselves with wearing rings in their ears, but fill the apertures with such a miscellany of objects that they have been described as "châtelaines," rather than carrings. One young man, the son of a chief, wore only one large ring in each ear, but from this ring depended a number of brass chains, to which were suspended various ornaments. To one ear were thus hung two boar's tusks, one alligator's tooth, part of a hornbill's beak, three small brass rings, and two little

Many of the men wear one large earring in the lobe, and bore a hole in the top of the ear, through which is passed a canine tooth of the tiger-cat.

These ornaments are only worn when the Dyak puts on his dress of ceremony, and at other times the holes in the ears are kept from closing by plugs of wood. And, as the effect of the brass is always to cause ulcerating sores, the ordinary appearance of a Dyak's ears is not very pleasing. Some of them have a curious fashion of boring one hole at the top of the ear and another at the bottom, and tying to it a brass plate, to which are suspended the jingling ornaments of which these savages are so fond.

The Dyaks are so fully impressed with the idea that nature is meant to be improved by art, that they cannot even allow their teeth to retain their natural shape and color. As a general rule, the men file their front teeth into sharp points, while others im-prove upon nature still farther by scooping out the front face of each tooth and rendering it concave.

Having thus rendered the shape of the

g them, such as ier stone utensils, em to touch the d so particular are a man for even animals on their eir deity being Juints support a fair have gained a fair hip from people River from the

only distant from

points of Borneo

ir winds generally

DYARS - GENERAL

HE LEAST CIVILIZED

TD BLACKENING THE

VARY COSTUME - THE

K AND HIS STRANGE

KING - AN OBLIGING

- A DYAK DANDY-

BEAUTIFUL HAIR OF

ESS - DYAK BELLS -

oinion, Mr. Brooke sion, "in the days rmerly employed signified. There ches of the Land nches is divided er of tribes. It is es and description account of their e people are cone in search of new the result is that her, fight, are distribes in the spots

number does not ny tribes of which

s, a fairer, a finer,

tooth as unlike its natural form as possible, cotton cloth, and their spears are as simple the next process is evidently to change the color as completely as the shape, and to turn them from white to black. The habit of betel-eating has much to do with the darkening of the teeth, but besides, there is a mode by which the Dyaks deliberately stain their teeth black. The method by which the dye is produced and applied is well told by Mr. Boyle, in his "Adventures among the Dyaks"

"We made inquiries about the means employed for blackening the teeth, a custom which is universal in the far East. The old medicine man was finally persuaded to show us the process, and very curious it

"He produced from his stores a piece of dry wood of the kind called sinka: this was set on fire, and held over the blade of a parang (or sword), on which a few drops of water had been poured. As the stick blazed, a black sap cozed from it, and dropped upon the metal, where it mingled with the water, and in a few moments formed a pool of thick, jetty liquid. With this the teeth are stained in childhood, and one application, we are told, will suffice to preserve them black for ever, nor are there any means of removing the color.

The process seems peculiar, because the wood from which exuded the sap appears to be as dry as dust, and because the dye will not affect any substance except the teeth, not even bone or horn. This is the more curious since some of the Malays file the enamel carefully from their teeth before applying the sinks. Many, indeed, file them to a point as sharp as a needle, as do some of the Dyak tribes." The reader will remember that several of the West African tribes file their teeth in like manner.

Illustration No. 2, on the 1101st page, represents two Dyak warriors, one in full costume, and the other a Dusum Dyak in ordinary dress. The former of these men carries in his right hand the sumpitan, with its spear head, and the other rests on his wooden shield covered with tufts of human hair. His parang-ihlang or war sword is on his left side, with its tufts of human hair depending from the handle. His ankles, legs, and arms are covered with multitudes of brass rings, he wears a sort of jacket formed from the skin of the orang-outan, and on his head is a kind of coronal made from the feathers of the Argus pheasant. figure is taken from a photograph.

The next figure represents a man in ordinary costume. He belongs to the tribe of Dusums, who live on the northern coast of Borneo, and who wear less clothing than Borneo, and who wear less clothing than an air of barbaric splendor, which they are any of the tribes of the island, their whole dress consisting of the chawat and a num-in common with all Dyaks, the chawat or ber of large metal rings round their necks and hips. The Dusum warriors wear their themselves with short tunics made of tiger

as their clothing, being nothing more than a metal head lashed to a shaft of bamboo.

metal nead lastice to a shart of bamboo.

In order to show at a glance the appearance of various tribes of Borneans, two more Dyaks are represented in the engraving No. 1 on the following page. The left hand figure represents an Illinoan pirate. These men are found at Tampassook or Tampassook of the page Tampasuk as the name is sometimes spelt, a place on the north-western coast of Borneo, not very much above the island of Labuan.

The Illinoans possess many large and formidable war boats, which are armed in the bows with a very long gun, and have, after the fashion of Bornean boats, an upper deck, which serves as a platform for the deca, which serves as a photon for the combatants and a shelter for the rowers, who sit beneath. There is a small cabin astern for the captain, about the size of a dog kennel, but the boats have no other sleeping accommodation.

The paddles with which the rowers propel the vessel are shaped rather curiously, looking at a distance like mere sticks with flat discs of wood fastened to their ends. The boats are steered by an oar rudder at the starboard side of the stern, and each is furnished with a mast and huge sail, which can be raised in a few minutes, and struck in almost as many seconds. Although the Illinoans are wealthy tribes, and possess quantities of fire-arms, they are rather afraid to use these weapons, and trust in preference to the spear and parang.

The Illinoans were instrumental in the murder of two native chiefs who were friendly to the English, and who had been suspected of aiding the cession of Labuan, One of them, named Bud-ruddeen, a man of celebrity as a warrior, did not fall unavenged. When the encmy approached, he retired to his house, together with his favorite wife and his sister, neither of whom would leave him. By the aid of his followers, he fought desperately to the very last, until nearly all his men were killed, and he himself was dangerously wounded.

He then retired with his wife and sister into an inner chamber, while the enemy crowded into the house in search of him, and then, firing his pistol into a barrel of gunpowder which he had placed there in readiness, blew to pieces himself, his two relatives, and his enemies.

The other figure represents a Saghai

Dyak.
This tribe lives on the south-eastern coast of Borneo, and is remarkable for the superb costumes of the men, who have about them hair long, merely bound with a piece of or leopard skin, or rich and embroidered

(I.) ILLINOAN

PIRATE AND SAGHAI DYAK.

(See page

pears are as simple tothing more than a haft of bamboo.

giance the appearof Borneans, two
ted in the engravng page. The leftan Illinoan pirate,
at Tampassook or
is sometimes speit,
stern coast of Borpove the island of

nany large and form are armed in the run, and have, after a boats, an upper a platform for the ter for the rowers, re is a small cabin about the size of a bats have no other

h the rowers propel her curiously, lookere sticks with flat to their ends. The oar rudder at the stern, and each is d huge sail, which inutes, and struck dis. Although the ribes, and possess ey are rather afraid ad trust in preferang.

strumental in the chiefs who were and who had been tession of Labuan. -ruddeen, a man of not fall unavenged, ched, he retired to a his favorite wife whom would leave old the chief who is the fought set, until nearly all dhe himself was

his wife and sister while the enemy in search of him, into a barrel of placed there in a himself, his two s.

resents a Saghai

south-eastern coast able for the superb o have about them or, which they are laying. Wearing, ks, the chawat or oride in adorning dies made of tiger and embroidered





(1113)



cloth; while on their heads they wear .nag-| profound respect as a being of supernatural nificent caps made of monkey-skin, and decorated with the beautiful feathers of the Argus pheasant, two of the largest feathers being placed so that one droops over each ear. All these Dyaks have a very singular profile, in consequence of their habit of filing the teeth and so reducing their bulk, those who have concave teeth presenting the most curious outline.

Comparatively slight and feeble as the Dyaks look by the side of the stalwart and muscular European, their strength is really museum Education, the strength is tempt to perform tasks which the powerful white man could not by any possibility achieve. On a journey, when an European has fallen from sheer fatigue, a Dyak has taken the burden with which the fallen man was laden, and added it to his own, without seeming to display any particular sense of having increased his own labor; and when the stranger, in spite of the relief, has lain down in absolute inability to move, a little wiry Dyak has picked him up, put him on his back, and proceeded on his journey with perfect

The Dyaks are in the habit of crossing the swamps with which Borneo abounds by means of primitive bridges, called batangs. These are the very simplest form in which the principle of the bridge can be carried If the reader wishes to obtain a correct idea of a batang, he can do so easily enough. Two bamboo poles are driven into the ground so as to cross one another near the top, like an X with the lower limbs much developed. They are then lashed together at the intersection, just like the sup-ports between which a modern rope dancer stretches his cord. At about thirty feet distance, another pair of poles are fixed in a similar way, and a horizontal bamboo laid upon them.

In fact, the whole apparatus looks just like a rope dancer's apparatus, a bamboo taking the place of the rope. Beyond the second supports others are added and connected by horizontal bamboos as far as the marsh extends; and so fond are the natives of these very primitive bridges that they will make them a mile or more in length, and extend manner that is absolutely exasperating to them over gorges of terrible depth.

To tread these extraordinary bridges is a task that would tax the powers of a professional rope dancer, and yet a Dyak has been known to take a heavy white man on his back, and carry him a mile or more over these slippery batangs, when, in many places, a false step would be certain destruction for both. He does not seem at all fatiqued by this extraordinary feat of muscular power, but rather has a sort of boyish exultation in his strength, and a decided delight that he is able at all events in one respect to prove himself the superior of the

wisdom and power.

The Dyaks are able, in some astonishing manner, to penetrate with comparative ease through jungles which are absolutely impervious to Europeans. One of these men, while on the march with some English soldiers, exhibited his strength in a very unex-pected manner. The path was a terrible one, all up and down steep and slippery hills, so that the Chinese coolies who accompanied the party first threw away their rice. and lastly sat down and wept like children. The English sergeant, a veteran, accustomed to hard marching both in China and India. broke down at the first hill, and declared his inability to move another step under the load which he carried. Mr. Brooke, who was in command of the party, asked one of the Dyaks to carry the sergeant's burden, and promised him an additional piece of tobacco.

The man was delighted with the proposal, and accepted it. He was already carrying food for three weeks, his whole store of clothes, one twelve-pound shot, two twelvepound cartridges, a double-barrelled gun, a hundred rounds of ball cartridge, and his own heavy sword and spear. Such a load as this, which would be almost too great even for a man walking on good roads, seemed a mere trifle to the agile Dyak, who went lightly and easily up and down paths which the foreigners could hardly traverse even without having to carry anything except their own weight.

So little, indeed, was he incommoded, that he strapped the whole of the sergeant's kit on his back, and walked off as easily as if the whole load were but a feather weight. No one who has not actually traversed those paths can form an idea of the miseries attending the journey. The paths them-selves are bad enough, but, in addition to the terribly severe labor of walking, the traveller has to endure mosquitoes, sandflies, intense heat at mid-day, and intense cold at night, thirst, wet, and every imaginable discomfort.

the Europeans who accompany him. He is able to push his way through prickly thick-ets and morasses in a way which seems al-most impenetrable. Indeed, he says himself that it is impenetrable, and that he achieves these feats by means of certain charms which he carries about with him. On one occasion it happened that at the end of a hard five hours' journey, a number of sketching materials and other necessaries had been forgotten, and a Dyak was sent to the boats to fetch them, being promised a pocket-knife for his trouble. He started shout two PW and arrived with about two P.M. and arrived with the parwhite man, whom he regards with the most cels before sunset, having thus, in addition

cupied them five hours in the transit.

When questioned about the manner in which he performed the journey, he said that it was owing to the virtues of a charm which he carried, and which he produced. It was a small misshapen horn, which he said that he had cut from the head of an antelope, and that its fellow horn was brass. He further offered to sell it for fifteen dollars, averring that its powers were unfailing, and that even any one who borrowed it was able to traverse the country at the same speed which he had exhibited.

The ordinary dress of the men is simple enough, consisting merely of the "chawat," or slight strip of cloth, which is twisted round the loins in such a manner that one end falls in front and the other behind. The chawat is often very gaily colored. Sometimes the Dyak wears a sarong, or short petticoat of cotton cloth, which reaches from the waist to a little above the knees. It is simply a strip of cloth, with the two ends sewed together, and is almost large enough to encircle two ordinary men. When it is put on the wearer steps into it, draws it up to his waist, pulls it out in front as far as it will go and then doubles back the fold and turns the edges inward, in such a manner that it is held tight in its place, while the folds caused by its large diameter allow the limbs full play.

One of these chawats in my collection is woven in a sort of plaid pattern, the ground hue being a bright and rather peculiar red, and the cross-lines being nearly white. The texture is rather coarse, and the whole fabric has a stiffness which is characteristic of native fabrics made of this material.

Those young men who are proud of their personal appearance, and are able to afford the expense do not content themselves with the plain chawat, but adorn it with all kinds of strange decorations. One of these voung dandies is well described by Mr. Boyle: — "The young man did not dress in Malay trousers like his father, probably be-cause one pair alone of such articles existed in the house; but his chawat was parti-colored, and his ornaments numerous. was about five feet four inches in height. very fair complexioned, and his face, though Tartar like in character, had a pleasant expression. From the elbow to the knuckles, both his arms were covered with rings of brass, and above the joint were two broad armlets of snowy shells, which contrasted admirably with his yellow-brown skin.

"But the marvel and glory of his array hung behind. To the end of his chawat was attached a long network of agate beads and bugles, which jingled merrily whenever he moved. Round his neck were strings of bright beads, and his knees were encircled ticoat.

to his first journey with the travellers, and the heavy parcels which he had to carry, fluttered from the parang by his side; and in twice traversed the distance which had ocfluttered from the parang by his side; and in walking before us through the sunny glades of the jungle, his brazen gauntlet flashing in the light, and his beads of agate tinkling behind, he presented the very ideal of a barbaric dandy."

One chief, desirous of outdoing his fellows, had taken a gong and beaten it out into a belt of solid metal a foot in width. In consequence of the extraordinary value which the Dyaks set upon gongs, this belt was a mark of wealth which no one could venture to challenge. Beside the chawat, the well-to-do man wears a sort of shawl mantle, much like a Scotch plaid, and capable of being disposed after as many different fashions. They display great taste in the graceful folds which they give to it, and seem to take a pride in the variety which they can produce by the different modes of folding this simple garment.

THE women dress in a manner somewhat like that of the men; but, in lieu of the sarong, they mostly wear a rather longer petticoat, called a bedang. When obliged to go out in the sun, they also wear a jacket, without sleeves and open in front; but as this jacket hides the glossy brown skin on which they pride themselves, they generally lay it aside when in the house.

In youth they are remarkable for their slender and graceful forms; but, unfortunately, after a woman has passed the age of twenty, she begins to deteriorate, and at thirty is an old woman. The face is pleasing in expression, despite of the artificial means whereby the women do their best to make themselves hideous. The eves are black, clear, and expressive, and the lashes singularly long. The nose is rather dis-posed to turn upward than downward, and the mouth is terribly disfigured with the continual chewing of betel and the mode in which the teeth are filed and blackened.

The chief point in a Dyak woman's beauty is her hair, which is black, wonderfully thick, and shining, and so long that when allowed to flow over the back it nearly touches the ground. Of this ornament the women are inordinately vain, and, when engaged in conversation, are fond of flinging their shining tresses from side to side by coquettish tossings of the head. Unfortunately, the fever which is so prevalent in many parts of Borneo has the effect of bringing off all the hair, so that many a young girl is thus deprived of her chief ornament

The women belonging to some of the tribes wear a most singular bodice, conposed of bark and bamboo, and kept together by successive rings of brass wire, which form a strong and weighty bodice, to the lower part of which is attached the bedang, or pet-

Mr. B aversion lover at his swee flesh, he solid met dains tha available gauntlets from the her turn, responsiv self claspe little bit links, and reasons, Dyak lova habit.

"But, these braz and pretty girl, when turmeric, the spark! to this cor at night, lifetime, u More th

strange or wearer, th from a ca mous weig some parts tent with anklets, b throats wit a long piec spirally rou part of the the upper p causing the and having effect. The Kay

of a peculia looking as pieces of g terial had h will someting beads just strings are to form a s hip-lace (as has given pr of our mor several oth scarcely less inferior valu The Kay

great exten plan as the completely knees. The ment, and a at the side women bath quite suffici sion of dried scalps by his side; and in h the sunny glades gauntlet flashing in f agate tinkling bevery ideal of a bar-

f outdoing his feland beaten it out a foot in width. In ktraordinary value on gongs, this belt hich no one could Beside the chawat, rs a sort of shawl ch plaid, and capaer as many different great taste in the ey give to it, and the variety which different modes of en t.

manner somewhat but, in lieu of the ar a rather longer ng. When obliged ng. When obliged valso wear a jacket, n in front; but as ossy brown skin on lves, they generally house.

markable for their rms; but, unfortuas passed the age of deteriorate, and at The face is pleaste of the artificial en do their best to The eyes are us. ive, and the lashes ose is rather disan downward, and isfigured with the tel and the mode in and blackened. yak woman's beauty

black, wonderfully so long that when the back it nearly this ornament the vain, and, when enare fond of flinging om side to side by ne head. Unfortuis so prevalent in has the effect of ir, so that many a ed of her chief or-

g to some of the ular bodice, con. o, and kept together as wire, which form odice, to the lower the bedang or pet-

Mr. Boyle seems to have taken a strong tance they really look as if they were aversion to these bodices. "When a Dyak wearing short trousers. lover attempts to pass a tender arm round his sweetheart's waist, instead of the soft flesh, he finds himsels clasping a cuirass of solid metal. Nor is this all; for fashion ordains that the Dyak heiress shall invest her available means in the purchase of long gauntlets of twisted brass wire, reaching from the knuckles to the elbow; and if, in her turn, she encircles her lover's neck with a responsive arm, the wretched man finds himself clasped by a horrible fetter, which draws a little bit of his flesh between each of its links, and pinches him fearfully. For these reasons, caresses are not common among Dyak lovers; after all, perhaps, they are only a habit.

"But, apart from their inconvenience. these brazen ornaments are decidedly tasteful and pretty. The ordinary color of a Dyak girl, when she does not stain her body with turmeric, is a dull brownish yellow, and the sparkling brass rings are a great relief to this complexion. They are not removed at night, nor, in fact, during the wearer's lifetime, unless she outgrow them."

More than once the possession of these strange ornaments has proved fatal to the wearer, the woman having fallen overboard from a canoe, and drowned by the enormous weight of her brass ornaments. In some parts of Borneo the girls are not content with their brass bodices, bracelets, and anklets, but must needs encircle their throats with the same material. They take a long piece of stout brass wire, and twist it spirally round their necks, so that the lower part of the coil rests on the shoulders, and the upper part comes just under the chin, causing the wearer to hold her head upright, and having a most inelegant and awkward

The Kayan women are exceedingly fond of a peculiar bead which is of several colors, looking as if it were a black bead into which pieces of green, yellow, blue, and gray material had been carefully let. A rich woman will sometimes wear several strings of such beads just above the hips. The different strings are connected with each other so as to form a single ornament. For one such hip-lace (as Mr. St. John calls it) a woman has given property equal to thirty-five pounds of our money; and the same woman had several others for which she had given scarcely less, together with a great number of inferior value

The Kayan women carry the tattoo to a great extent, and follow exactly the same plan as the Samoan warriors, i. e. being

As has been already mentioned, the Sea Dyaks do not, as a rule, care for the tattoo, and in this respect the women follow the example of the men. They are, however, equally fond of ornament with their sisters of the land, and adorn themselves with most scrupulous care on festive occasions. Mr. Boyle gives an animated description of the gala-dress worn by the Saibas Dyak girls and women during a great feast given

by the chief.
"Meanwhile the female portion of the community had been preparing for their part in the proceedings. At this moment they came from the interior of the house, and the stately magnificence of their appear ance showed that time and labor had not been spared in arraying themselves for this great occasion. From the neck to the hips they were covered over with large agate beads; string of them was heaped on string, till many of the women were cuirassed an inch thick in solid stone before and behind.

"Upon their heads was placed a piece of bead-embroidered cloth, in which were arranged thin skewers of painted wood about five inches long: there were about twenty of these bits of wood disposed about their heads, and each was attached to the other by strings of brilliant glass beads. Five or six of these many-colored loops hung from each skewer, and they were entwined into a graceful network. The effect was very pretty, though barbarous, and the solemnity of the ceremonies was much enhanced by the stately uprightness which the women were compelled to observe in moving, on peril of disarrangement of this delicate structure."

They also wear conical hats, made of split rattan. These hats are very light, and last for a wonderful time. A specimen was presented to me by a lady who had worn it for four years, and had certainly not treated it with any consideration. Yet it is as strong and good as ever, and the colors are as fresh and bright as when the hat was first made. The rattan has been split into very narrow strips, and stained red, yellow, and black, while some of the strips have had the natural color discharged, so as to make them

nearly white.

The hat is fixed on the head by a broad loop of plaited palm leaf, which is fastened to the side. Hats made on this principle are prevalent throughout the whole Archipelago.

Among the ornaments which are worn by completely tattooed from the waist to the knees. They are very fond of this ornament, and are apt to wear their dress open at the side so as to exhibit it. When the women bathe, they think that the tattoo is quite sufficient dress, and at a little dissumption. the Dyaks are the little bells which have

little hollow spheres of brass or bronze about the size of a boy's playing marble, with a small metal ball in the interior by way of a clapper, and a moderately wide slit at the bottom. To some of the bells the remarkable beads are attached. These bells keep up a musical chime or jingle as the wearer walks, and are therefore used in dances and on great occasions.

The general treatment of the Dyak women is good. They certainly have to work hard, but so have their husbands, and, as we shall presently see, they are not the abject slaves such as are too often found among savage nations, but maintain their share of influence in the family, and are perfectly capable of assisting themselves when the occasion requires it. They are accustomed to work in the fields, and the universal chopping-knife or parang is seldom out of their hands. The constant use of this weapon hardens their hands and often deforms the fingers.

When they come home from their work in the field, they have the heaviest portion of their work before them, their evening task being the husking and winnowing of the rice for supper and for the meals of the following day. The rice is first pounded in large troughs by means of long and heavy wooden poles, which are held perpendicularly, lifted up, and then allowed to fall on the grain, and, as a rule each trough occupies three women, who work for about half an hour. This pounding separates the husk from the grain, and the next process is to winnow the rice by means of a shovel and a

The evening meal is then cooked and eaten, the children fed, the bronze dishes put away, and then the women can sit quietly in the veranda, and eat their betel in peace. Although this mode of life seems rather hard, and the husbands appear to be acting harshly toward their partners in letting them work in this manner while they and on her head is the complicated cap, sit in their houses, chew betel, and talk with its curious arrangement of wooden over the gossip of the day, there is really a spikes and glass beads.

very fair reciprocity of labor. While the wives have been working in the fields, the wives have been working in the neids, the husbands have been fishing, and in so doing have repeatedly exposed their lives to danger, the rollers being at certain seasons of the year exceedingly dangerous. At Mukah, as at other places, the wives insist upon being furnished with fish by their husbands, and, in case the men should come home uncreasful the women feature their day. successful, the women fasten their doors and bar them out. Indeed, so long as the marriage holds good, the relation of husband and wife seems to be conducted in a manner similar to that which is so graphically depicted by Scott in his "Antiquary,"

In order to show the appearance of the Dyak women in their ordinary and gala costumes, two figures are introduced into illustration No. 2 on page 1113. One represents a Dyak girl before arraying herself in the mass of ornaments with which she loves to decorate herself on festivals. She wears, as usual, the bedang, or petticoat, which, if she be of ordinary condition, is made of cotton, but if she be rich, of silk. It is twisted round the waist in the manner practised by the men, but, in addition is fastened to the brass belts which surround her waist. Her long glossy hair is flowing to the full extent, before the owner gathers up its massive tresses preparatory to adorning her head with the complicated decorations. of full dress.

The other figure represents her as she appears in all the glory of full gala costume. As far as absolute dress goes, she wears no more than she did before, the only alteration being that her bedang is the best which she has, and is sometimes beautifully em-broidered. On her arms are several thick rings of brass, and the singularly uncomfortable brass gauntlet extends from the wrist to the elbow. Her neck and bust are nearly covered with the heavy agate heads.

DVAK WEAT META

TTS E VARI BLOW AWK ADDE HIRIS. THE

WE now which for branch of aks belong are alway flercer, pe enterprisi understan war, we n I will take istic; nam

We hav we have have hith strument projected principle o cisely sim the propel ent and m sumpitan of boys, v an arrow i

This cur length, an task that wood beir the sumpi is not alw specimens ferent ma other of v equal thic generally | of labor. While the ing in the fields, the hing, and in so doing ed their lives to danat certain seasons of ngerous. At Mukah, e wives insist upon sh by their husbands, nould come home unfasten their doors deed, so long as the the relation of husto be conducted in a t which is so graphi-in his "Antiquary," e appearance of the r ordinary and gala are introduced into ge 1113. One reprere arraying herself in with which she loves estivals. She wears, or petticoat, which, if andition, is made of rich, of silk. It is to the manner practine addition in the manner practine addition addi , in addition, is fassy hair is flowing to the owner gathers up paratory to adorning

presents her as she of full gala costume. s goes, she wears no fore, the only alteraang is the best which imes beautifully emns are several thick e singularly uncomt extends from the er neck and bust are e heavy agate beads. he complicated cap, gement of wooden

CHAPTER CXV.

BORNEO - Continued.

WAR.

DYAK WEAPONS - THE SUMPITAN, OR BLOW GUN - CONSTRUCTION OF THE WEAPON - THE INLAID OR METAL BUTT - THE SPEAR HEAD, OR BAYONET - THE SUMPIT ARROW - THE UPAS POISON AND ITS EFFECTS - DESCRIPTION OF THE TREE - THE QUIVER - THE PARANG, OR SWORD, AND ITS VARIETIES - THE PARANG-LATOK, AND ITS CURIOUS HANDLE - POWER OF ITS BLOW - TWO BLOWS OF AN EXECUTIONER-THE PARANG-IHLANG: ITS CURIOUSLY FORMED BLADE-AN AWKWARD WEAPON -- POWER OF THE PARANG-IHLANG, AND ITS VALUE -- THE SHEATH AND ITS ADDITIONAL KNIFE -- DOUBLE-EDGED PARANG, WITH CHARMS -- A SINGULAR ORNAMENT -- THE KRIS AND ITS VARIETIES -- ITS WAVED AND LAMINATED BLADE -- EFFECT OF THE LIME JUICE --THE EXECUTIONER'S KRIS,

WE now come to the subject of Warfare, well as of a sumpitan, it is very strong and which forms perhaps the most important branch of Dyak history. Whether the Dyaks belong to the Land or Sea division, they are always warlike, though the latter are flercer, perhaps braver, and certainly more enterprising than the former. In order to understand the system by which they wage war, we must first examine their weapons. I will take that which is the most characteristic; namely, the sumpitan, or blow gun.

We have here a weapon, the like of which we have not seen in any country that we have hitherto investigated; namely, an in-strument by means of which missiles are projected by means of compressed air. The principle on which the sumpitan acts is precisely similar to that of fire-arms, though the propelling power is obtained in a different and more simple manner. In fact, the sumpitan is nothing but the "pea-shooter" of boys, very much enlarged, and carrying an arrow instead of a pea or clay ball.

This curious weapon is about eight feet in length, and not quite an inch in diameter, and is bored with the greatest accuracy, a task that occupies a very long time, the wood being very hard, and the interior of the sumpitan smooth and even polished. It is not always made of the same wood, the specimens in my own collection being of different material, one of very dark and the other of very light wood. The surface is of

One of these weapons, brought to England by the late Admiral Young, is of a beautiful colored wood, and is beautifully inlaid, both at the butt and the point, with metal. The last few inches of the butt are entirely made of metal, the weight of which causes the weapon to balance itself easily when held to the lips. The pattern of the inlaying may be seen in fig. 1, of the illustration entitled "Sumpitans," on the 1122nd

The other sumpitan, fig. 2, is of a very dark, almost black wood, which is brightly polished on the exterior as well as in the interior, and is not inlaid. The butt, however, is encased with brass for five inches, the brass being very thick and heavy at the end, and deeply ridged, so as to look at a little distance as if it were a spiral brass wire coiled round the butt of the sumpitan.

At the tip of this weapon is a spear head, very thick, broad, and strong, sharply edged and pointed, and decorated with engraved patterns after the manner employed by Dyak smiths. It is firmly bound to the sumpitan by brass wire or rattan, and is an exact analogue of the bayonet, the spear head being fastened to the side of the weapon, and not interfering with the flight of the missile. The bore of the weapon is other of very light wood. The surface is of very small, not quite hah an inch in diame-equal thickness from end to end, and, as it ter, and it is really wonderful that the maker generally has to enact the part of a spear as could contrive to hollow it with the perfect

precision which is necessary for the accurate | ful manner, in order to exclude the air. One flight of the arrow.

We next come to the missile which is projected through the sumpitan. This is a very tiny arrow, made of the thorn of the sago palm, about seven or eight inches long, equally thick from base to point, and not thicker than a large steel knitting-needle. In order to make it fit the bore so that it can be propelled by the breath, it is furnished at the butt, with a conical piece of with or soft word, so that it can be pith or soft wood, so that it exactly fits the bore. In some of the arrows, the cone is hollow, and a few of them are furnished with wing-like appendages along the shaft. As a rule, however, the solid cone is in most general use.

These arrows are so small that the wound which they inflict is in itself insignificant, and would not be sufficient to kill any animal larger than a rat. They are, however, converted into weapons of the most formi-dable character by being smeared at the tip with poison obtained from the upas-tree.

The reader is probably aware of the many tales that are told of this tree — how that it poisons the country for a mile round, and how that the deadly juice can only be obtained by means of condemned criminals, who earn their pardon in case they can bring off a bottle of the juice. Even in more recent days the upas-tree has not lost all its legends, and many persons still be-lieve that actual contact with the tree or its leaves produces a sensation of faintness. This, however, is not the case; neither is the actual juice of the tree so deadly as is

A wound made by an arrow poisoned with upas juice is sure to be fatal, provided that the poison be quite fresh; but it loses its power very rapidly, and after it has been exposed to the air for two hours it is use-less, and must be renewed. When fresh, it is fatal in a very short time, as was found by Mr. Johnson, who led an attack on the Kanowit Dyaks in 1859. He lost thirty men in the attack, every one of them being killed by the tiny sumpit arrow, and not one having a mark on him, except the little wound made by the arrow's point.

Should the poison have been exposed to the air, the wounded man has a chance of recovery; and it has been found that a large dose of spirits, sucking the wound, and keeping the sufferer continually in motion will generally overcome the virulence of the poison. Indeed, the sumpit arrow seems to have much the same effect as the bite of the cobra, and the treatment which is efficacious for the snake bite answers equally well for the arrow wound.

The juice of the upas-tree is procured simply by boring a hole in the trunk, from which the juice issues in a white, cream-like state. It is received in little flasks made of of these arrows in a peculiar-shaped quiver.

of these flasks in my possession is five inches in length, and about half an inch in diameter. One end is naturally closed by a knot, and the other is sealed with the most scrupulous care. First, a plug of soft wood has been inserted into the end, after the manner of a cork. Over the plug a lump of beeswax has been firmly kneaded, and over the wax a piece of membrane has been tied when wet. Although the upas juice is white when it first issues from the tree, it speedily becomes black when exposed to the air.

The upas-tree is called scientifically Antiq. ris toxicaria, and it belongs to the natural order Astocarpeæ, the best known species of which order is the well-known bread-fruit tree. All the plants of this order produce a white milky juice, which is always acrid and deleterious, and in many instances is ex-ceedingly poisonous. Yet those parts of the plant, such as the fruit, in which the milk is replaced by sugar in the process of ripening, are not only harmless, but even nutritious. The tree grows to a considerable size, and the bark of the trunk has a reddish hue.

The reader will at once understand how formidable is this weapon. It is greatly to be dreaded even when the Dyak warriors are met in open battle, and in naval engagements the showers of poisoned arrows that are continually shot through the port-holes render the gunners' task a most unpleasant one. But the sumpitan is much more to be dreaded by land than by sea; and when it is employed in bush warfare, the boldest soldier shrinks from the encounter. The Dyak who wields it lies hidden in the thick foliage, sure that, even in case of discovery, he can glide through the tangled thickets into a place of security. The sumpitan makes no report, and gives out no smoke as an indication of its position, but the deadly arrow flies silently on its errand, and the only inti-mation of the presence of an adversary is the slight tap with which the arrow strikes its mark.

The only disadvantage of the sumpitan is that its range is a short one, the light arrow being seldom used at a distance exceeding forty yards, though a man who is accustomed to its use can propel an arrow for seventy or eighty yards. At this distance, however, it is not to be dreaded, as its force is so expended that it can scarcely break the human skin. Some of these arrows have their heads made of the barbed bone of the sting-ray, which snaps off at a touch, and remains in the wound if the man tries to draw out the weapon. Others have separate heads made of wood, which become detached as soon as the shaft is pulled. The native name of the

head is jowing.

The Dyak generally carries thirty or forty bamboo, which are closed in the most care- It is made of the ever useful bamboo, and is

exclude the air. One y possession is five both half an inch in naturally closed by a sealed with the most be a plug of soft wood of the end, after the er the plug a lump of ly kneaded, and over mbrane has been tied the upas juice is white in the tree, it speedily toposed to the air. It is the control of t

best known species of ell-known bread-fluit this order produce a this always acrid and any instances is ex-Yet those parts of the fruit, in which the gar in the process of harmless, but even grows to a considert of the trunk has a

once understand how on. It is greatly to not the Dyak warriors and in naval engage-poisoned arrows that rough the port-holes ask a most unpleasant n is much more to be to y sea; and when it is fare, the boldest solncounter. The Dyak den in the thick foll-case of discovery, he tangled thickets into the sumpitan makes ut no smoke as an inbut the deadly arrownd, and the only intic of an adversary is of the arrow strikes

ce of the sumpitan is one, the light arrow a distance exceeding an who is accustomed arrow for seventy or distance, however, it as its force is so excely break the human ows have their heads one of the sting-ray, uch, and remains in tries to draw out the separate heads made a detached as soon as a native name of the

arries thirty orforty culiar-shaped quiver, seful bamboo, and is



furnished be stuck This appolashed to most bea closed by always se not be los highly po are almos Many of or lining to exclude of the arre-

of the arr When holds the the two fi with his heavy we well as a p

The we tance to sword, of The Dya their swo workmans good rease excellent cable not o but to sme

The com is the swe carried by woman. I as an axe, cutting thr the enemy peculiar, a No. 1, on t sents a spe

The blad pattern. I is in fact in nearly half quarters of to the point wider and two inches same amou hilt. It is forged into is then beat the point.

The illustration of the point is the point.

The illusthe sword is toward the ward as it is the princip the parang branches or jungle, it is of the blade common be when the olo on the grohandle, so t

(1122)

furnished with an appendage by which it can blade to be used with full force. It is the be stuck into the belt and carried at the side. habit of holding the parang by the squared This appendage is made of hard wood, and is This appears to the pulver by a broad belt of rattan, most beautifully plaited. The quiver is closed by a conical wooden cover, which is closed by a content wooden cover, which is always secured by a string so that it shall not be lost. Some of the Dyak quivers are highly polished, covered with carvings, and are almost to be ranked with works of art. Many of these quivers have an inner case or lining of dried skin or membrane, so as to exclude the air, and preserve the poison

of the arrow as long as possible.

When the Dyak uses the sumpitan, he holds the mouthpiece to his lips between the two first fingers of his left hand, while with his right he supports and aims the heavy weapon, which requires a strong as well as a practised man to direct it steadily.

THE weapon which comes next in importance to the sumpitan is the parang or sword, of which there are several varieties. The Dyaks pride themselves greatly on their swords, and the excellence of their workmanship is so great that they have good reason for pride. Their forges are of excellent quality, and some of the tribes are able not only to forge their own weapons but to smelt their own iron.

The commonest of all the Dyak weapons is the sword called parang-latok, which is carried by every man and nearly every woman. It is used not only as a sword, but as an axe, and is indifferently employed for cutting through the jungl or cutting down the enemy. The shape of this sword is very peculiar, as may be seen from illustration No. 1, on the preceding page, which repre-

sents a specimen in my collection.

The blade is formed after a very curious pattern. Toward the hilt it is squared, and is in fact nothing but a square bar of steel nearly half an inch in thickness, and three quarters of an inch in width. From the hilt to the point the blade becomes gradually wider and thinner, so that the broad point, two inches in width, contains just the same amount of metal as the half-inch square hilt. It is evident that the sword is first forged into a square bar of equable size, and is then beaten out flatter and flatter toward

The illustration shows that the blade of the sword is bent at a considerable angle toward the hilt. This curious shape, awkward as it is to an unaccustomed hand, forms the principal value of the sword. When the parang-latok is used for cutting down branches or chopping a path through the jungle, it is grasped at the squared portion of the blade, and is used just as we use the common bill-hook in this country. But when the object which is to be chopped lies habit of holding the parang by the squared portion of the blade, that disfigures and even deforms the fingers of the women, as has already been mentioned on page

The ordinary parangs have no attempt at ornament upon them, but those of better construction are covered with patterns engraved upon the blade, of which we shall see some examples.

In war, this sword is a most formidable weapon. It is so heavy, weighing on an average two pounds, that a blow from it is sufficient to crush the skull or break the limb of a man, and, even if it had no edge, it would equal in efficacy the meral of the New Zealander. But the parang-latok has a very sharp edge, which is kept in the best order, and, when a blow is delivered with it, the very form of the weapon causes it to make the terrible "drawing cut," the blade being drawn through the wound nearly from hilt to point. In consequence of this peculiarity, the wounds made by the parang-latok are very severe, and the natives pride themselves greatly on the depth of the wound which they can inflict.

One of the modes by which they try their skill is killing a pig with a single blow of a parang-latok, a good swordsman being able to sever the animal completely, and to drive the point of his weapon into the earth. If the reader has been accustomed to use the sword, he will see that to strike downward at an object so near the ground is by no

means an easy task.
When an English swordsman performs the feat of severing a sheep at a single blow he has several advantages which are denied to the Dyak. In the first place, the sheep is already dead, so that he can take his aim inquiet, whereas the pig is alive, so that the Dyak must aim his blow as he can. Then the sheep has been skinned and cleaned, so that the sword has not so much resistance to overcome. Lastly, the sheep is suspended, so that the swordsman can use the most effective blow, namely, "Cut 6," i. e. a sweeping, horizontal cut from left to right, which can be delivered with the full swing of the arm

Were it not for the peculiar form of the parang-latok the feat of severing a pig could not be accomplished, but the angular shape of the blade and its gradually increasing width combine the power of the drawing cut with the chopping force gained by the weight of the weapon.

The sheath of this parang is neatly made of two flat pieces of wood, neatly hollowed inside to receive the blade, and bound together in the most elaborate manner by a series of belts, twelve or fourteen in number. These belts are made of very narrow on the ground, the parang is held by the strips of dark rattan, and are twined into an handle, so that the angular shape allows the endless four-plait. In my own specimen,

SUMPITANS. page 1119.)

there are thirteen of these belts. Attached any parang is afraid to use it without a care-to the upper end of the sheath is the cord ful trial, lest he should make the wrong cut by which the weapon is hung to the side. with it, and so wound himself. This cord is doubled, is made of scarlet and yellow cotton platted square, and is or-namented at the ends with two large tassels, the strings of which are yellow tipped with scarlet tufts.

The parang-latok is more a Malayan than a Dyak weapon, but it is in favor with the Dyaks, and, as has been mentioned, has

come into general use.

The Malays use it in execution, and are able to decapitate a man at a single blow, the executioner standing at his side and a little behind him. On one occasion, an exe-cutioner, who was distinguished for the skill with which he wielded a very heavy parang which he possessed, stood between two criminals as they knelt on the ground, and with a right and left hand blow struck off both their heads. The same man, who was one of the police, being annoyed by the howling of some dogs in the street, rushed out with his parang, and with one blow cut in two the first animal which he met.

We now come to another weapon, the parang-ihlang, which is one of the most extraordinary swords in the world, and more troublesome and even dangerous to strangers than can well be conceived. This is a smaller, shorter, and lighter weapon than the parang-latok. From point to hilt it measures nineteen inches, and in extreme breadth of blade is rather under an inch and a half. It weighs rather less than one pound six ounces and altogether appears to be quite insignificant when compared with the parang-latok. We shall see, however, that in the hands of an experienced swordsman it is even superior to that weapon on account of a strange peculiarity in construction. The general shape of the blade of the parang-ihlang can be seen in illustration No. 3, on page 1122. It is very thick and heavy toward the hilt, where it is nearly squared, like the parang-latok, but becomes gradually thinner toward the point, which is finished off in a series of scooped patterns that look at a little distance as if the sword had been broken. The back is quite straight, and along it and on either side of the blade is a series of small patterns en-graved with much neatness and freedom of

But the most remarkable thing about the blade is, that instead of being nearly flat as are European sword blades, it is convex on one side, and concave on the other, as is shown at the section, fig. 5. Owing to this form, it can only be used for two cuts, one downward and one upward; and if used in the wrong direction, it flies off at an angle, and is nearly certain to inflict a wound on the man who wields it. These swords are made either

Small and insignificant as this weapon looks, it is capable of inflicting the most dreadful wounds, the peculiar concavity of the blade aiding it in a most remarkable manner. Like the parang-latok, it is used as a chopper as well as a sword, and in experienced hands is a most effective tool. One man, described by Mr. Brooke, was a celebrated swordsman, and has been known to sever at a single blow a log of tolerably hard wood as thick as a man's leg.

Even English officers have been so much impressed with the value of this weapon, that they have only carried the regulation sword for show, preferring the parang-ihlang for use. The Sea Dyaks, who have been a ready mentioned as essentially warriors, prefer this sword to any other weapon, though the real inventors and principal makers of it are the Kayans, who belong to the Malanau division of the Land Dyaka. As a rule, the ordinary Land Dyaks use the parang-ihlang but little, and when they do use it are apt to hurt themselves. Mr. Boyle mentions an instance where the eldest son of a chief had cut himself seriously on both shins through his incautious use of this weapon.

"The finest parangs," writes Mr. Boyle, "or those esteemed so, are found in the graves of Kayan warriors, which are consequently rifled by Dyaks and Malays on every possible occasion. I have one, purchased at Kennowit, which I was told had been obtained from a sepulchre, three hundred years old—a rather improbable assertion, though I believe the weapon was really found in a Kayan grave, for it was strangely stained and rusted when I bought

The Dyaks are very proud of the quality of their blades, and hold even the best European steel in utter contempt. It is said that their swords are made of old files, which are imported in large quantities; but, whatever may be the material, the temper of their blades is marvellously excellent. These parangs not only take a razor-like edge, but are exceedingly tough, and when used for bush-work beat the very best English implements. Mr. Boyle remarks, that whereas his own hunting-knives, which professed to be the finest steel possible, broke and gapped, the Dyak parangs were not in the least injured.

Such a blade as has been described is exceedingly valuable, even in its own country, and one of the best quality cannot be purchased under ten pounds sterling. It may be easily imagined that when a Dyak is fortunate enough to possess one of these valuable blades he will not be content with an for the right or left hand, so that a man who ordinary handle and sheath, but will lavish is not acquainted with the peculiarities of upon his weapon all the powers of his naare art. almple W boldly in right any further man hai deep recites. Th wire, and Dyaks, a pean ger s very a sufficient

The se with orn and sim latok, it rich, ma high poli really ar confined In the is a piece

of huma

awords r some das the edge between sheath guard as of the pa against the blad fingers, e sheath. are bour rattan ai most be known to

The be

to the w

very nar

three of gether t side of t the same tened, b sheath is lined wit ception o Dyaks. flg. 3, in page 1129 of the sa sheath is about ha teen inch pointed, This curi splitting long han

across the The na ing with t if a suffic endeavor

while the

use it without a care. make the wrong cut imself.

ant as this weapon inflicting the most peculiar concavity of a most remarkable ang-latok, it is used a sword, and in exmost effective tool, Mr. Brooke, was a and has been known wa log of tolerably man's leg.

s have been so much lue of this weapon, rried the regulation ng the parang-ihlang s, who have been alessentially warriors, any other weapon, ntors and principal syans, who belong to f the Land Dyaks. Land Dyaks use the and when they do t themselves. Mr. nstance where the cut himself seriously nis incautious use of

" writes Mr. Boyle, , are found in the rs, which are conse-ks and Malays on I have one, pur-hich I was told had pulchre, three hunher improbable as-ve the weapon was n grave, for it was sted when I bought

roud of the quality l even the best Euntempt. It is said made of old files, arge quantities; but, aterial, the temper vellously excellent. y take a razor-like ly tough, and when the very best Eng-Boyle remarks, that -knives, which prol possible, broke and gs were not in the

en described is exin its own country, lity cannot be purs sterling. It may when a Dyak is forone of these valube content with an ath, but will lavish powers of his nafurther ornamented by sundry tufts of hu-man hair, dyed of various colors, of which deep red, yellow, and green are the favor-ites. The hilt is generally bound with brass wire, and, for a small-handed race like the Dyaks, affords an excellent hold. An European generally finds that the narrow handle is very awkward and cramped, and is not sufficient for his grasp.

The scabbard of this weapon is covered

with ornaments. Instead of being a plain and simple sheath, like that of the paranglatok, it is made of a hard wood, of a dark, rich, mahogany color, which takes a very high polish. This is carved in elaborate and really artistic patterns, the carving being confined to the front of the scabbard.

In the middle, just under the carved part, is a piece of fur, and below the fur is a tuft of human hair dyed red. In most cases of swords made by uncivilized races, there is some danger to the hand in drawing them, the edge of the sword being apt to project between the two flat pieces of which the sheath is made. In order, however, to guard against such an accident, the maker of the parang-ihlang places a piece of rattan against each edge of the scabbard, so that the blade cannot by any possibility cut the fingers, even if the hand should grasp the sheath. The various parts of this sheath are bound together by six belts of plaited rattan and three belts of brass wire, plaited most beautifully, in that form which is known to sailors as the Turk's head.

The belt by which the sword is attached to the wearer is made of rattan, cut into very narrow strips and plaited into thongs. three of which thongs are again plaited to-gether to form the belt. On the opposite side of the scabbard is a second sheath, of the same length as that to which it is fas-tened, but small and cylindrical. This sheath is made of red and yellow cloth, is lined with bark, and is intended for the re-ception of a knife which is peculiar to the Dyaks. One of these knives may be seen at fig. 3, in the illustration of the parang on page 1129. The handle of this knife is made of the same hard wood as that of which the sheath is formed. It is nearly cylindrical, about half an inch in diameter, and fourteen inches in length, the blade being short, pointed, and barely two inches in length. This curious knife is used by the Dyaks for splitting rattan, and similar purposes, the long handle being held under the left arm, while the rattan is drawn with both hands across the edge of the blade.

The natives are singularly averse to part-ing with this knife. They will sell the sword, if a sufficient price be offered, but will always

hee art. The handle, instead of being of | knife, so that, out of many parange which simple wood, is of bone, carved deeply and have been brought to Europe, comparatively boldly into patterns, and is always bent at few have the knife attached to them. In one right angles to the line of the blade. It is specimen in my collection, the weanon specimen in my collection, the weapon appears to be quite perfect, but, on withdrawing the knife from its sheath, it is seen that the Dyak has cleverly substituted a bladeless handle for the real knife.

Both the weapons which have been described were presented to me by C. T. C. Grant, Esq.

There is also in my collection a third kind of parang, which at first sight looks almost exactly like the old Roman sword. It is thick, massive, weighty, and at first sight looks more like an ancient than a modern weapon. On a closer examination, however, the peculiar Dyak workmanship is evident. Though it is not like the preceding weapon, convex on one side, and concave on the other, the two sides are entirely distinct.
The blade is double-edged, very thick in the
middle, and sloped off rather abruptly to the edge on either side.

The handle is only made of wood, but is profusely decorated with human hair of different colors and considerable length, and it is bound with a broad belt of plaited rattan. The sheath for the knife is entirely made of bark, and the knife itself is shown at fig. 2. Like the scabbard of the parang-ihlang al-ready described, that of this weapon is richly carved, and adorned with fur and long tufts

of human hair.

The belt by which it is suspended is made of rattan split very fine, and plaited so as to form a strap nearly an inch in width, and the sixth of an inch in thickness. It is rounded at the edges, and at the upper part it is ingeniously separated into two portions, so as

to form a loop.

The chief peculiarity of this weapon lies in the number of charms which are attached to it. First come two teeth, and then there is a beautifully plaited little case, something like the cocoon of an insect, containing several little pieces of wood. Next comes a small bag of netted string, about an inch and a half in length, in which is a stone, and then come three little flattish baskets, with covers, which are empty. Fastened to the belt by several thongs is a curiously shaped piece of wood which I believe to be used for sharpening the edges of the sword, and to the end of the sheath is hung by a string of beads a feather, the quill of which has been carefully wrapped with red and black

This weapon is in all ways a most formidable one, and to European travellers is by far the best for practical purposes. The handle is rather larger than is the case with either of the preceding weapons; the blade has not that curvature which renders it so ing with this knife. They will sell the sword, perilous a weapon in unpractised hands; if a sufficient price be offered, but will always it is double-edged, and either edge can be endeavor surreptitiously to withdraw the used with equal facility; and lastly, it pos-

to his sword of which he was exceedingly proud. It was an enormous tuft of hair, being nothing more nor less than the pigtails of ten Chinese whom he had killed, and whose hair he had fastened to the scabbard of his sword. This ornament must have been singularly inconvenient to him. There is in my collection an average specimen of a Chinese pigtail. It weighs nine ounces, so that the weight of the ten must rather exceed tive pounds and a half, while the length is five feet, so that ten tufts of hair, each five feet in length, must have given the wearer an infinity of trouble as he walked.

THE reader will already have noticed how the various forms of sword are used alike by the Malays and the Dyak tribes. There is another weapon, which, though strictly a Malay invention, is used by the Dyaks, and indeed, with some variations, throughout the whole of the Malay Archipelago. It is called the kris, sometimes, but wrongly, spelt creese, and is so common that any ordinary collection of weapons is sure to contain several specimens of the kris. It is remarkable for three points. In the first place, the handle is not set in a line with the blade, as in ordinary daggers, but is bent at a right angle; next, the blade is almost always waved in form, like the flaming sword with which the old painters armed the angels who kept the gates of Paradise; and thirdly, the blade is never smooth, but dull, rough, and indented with curved grooves much resembling in form the marks on a "browned "gun-barrel. By referring to the illustration "Kris" on page 1129, the reader will better understand its peculiarities.

There are few weapons which vary more in value, or in which the price set upon them is so apparently excessive. A first-rate blade, even without the handle and sheath, will cost from eighteen to twenty pounds, and an ordinary one can scarcely be purchased under two pounds. They have by no means the appearance of being valuable weapons, the steel of the blade being not only rough and corroded, but looking as if it were composed of successive laminæ which are on the point of being separated. This effect is produced by steeping the blade in lime juice, thus causing a partial corrosion of the metal, which is made of small pieces of steel twisted and welded together in such a manner as to produce exceeding toughness.

One of these weapons in my collection is worn away almost to a mere ribbon of steel by the action of the acid, and, strange as it may seem, weapons of this kind, which look

sesses a point, which is not the case with the other forms of the sword.

One Dyak chief had an ornament attached to his sword of which he was exceedingly portion, and curling round in the wider part near the hilt, as if the whole of the blade had been forged out of steel wires laid parallel to each other and then welded

together.
The lime juice takes off from the edge that razor-like smoothness which is so much admired in European blades, and gives it a ragged, saw-like appearance that is peculiar to the instrument. This edge, however, is a terrible one for penetration into human flesh, and answers the purpose even better

than a plain and sharp edge could do.

The form of the kris is sufficient to tell
the reader the mode of handling it, the weapon being thrust forward just as a man points with his extended forefinger, and not grasped according to the conventional ideas of painters. Spaniards, who are proverbially expert in the use of their long knives, hold and use them in nearly the same manner, laying the extended forefinger along the blade as a guide, and thrusting forward instead of striking downward. The average length of a kris blade is about a foot, but some are nearly as long as ordinary swords, while others are only six or seven inches in length.

Very great pride is taken in an old family kris, the owner regarding it with a veneration that is almost superstitious. Generally, the handle is quite plain, but the more wealthy have it made of gold, and encrusted with precious stones. This weapon is seldom used in war. It is carried more as the symbol of a gentleman than as a weapon to be used in actual fight, and plays the part that the sword used to play in the last cen-

The kris is much used in executions, the weapon being one made expressly for the purpose, quite straight, thin, and narrow. In all cases it is used in the same manner, though there are some variations in detail. Generally, the man who is to suffer walks quietly and unbound to a chair, in which he seats himself, mostly solacing his last moments by chewing the betel-nut. His arms are then extended, and held by two men, while the executioner, standing behind him, places the point of the kris just above the left collar-bone, and strikes it downward into the heart, so that death is instantaneous.

In some places the execution kris is very narrow, thin, and sharp on both edges, like a lancet. The executioner takes a small tuft of cotton wool, and twists it lightly round the blade of the kris, just above the point. much as if they were mere pieces of rusty iron-hooping, are the most valued by connoisseurs. The length of grain in this as to keep the kris upright. After placing weapon is wonderful, the corrosion of the the point of the weapon on the right spot

shove the ward into the man wool bet draws ou drawn, p small wor weapon is drop of l is no dor as certain can be de to the gu guiring n traveller 1 fatal spot of the ord Some o for many

highly pr which to

One of th

n the most perfect oves can be traced plade to the other, m of the narrower und in the wider the whole of the out of steel wires er and then welded

off from the edge s which is so much ades, and gives it a nce that is peculiar edge, however, is ration into human urpose even better

lge could do.
is sufficient to tell
f handling it, the ward just as a man forefinger, and not conventional ideas who are prover-f their long knives, arly the same mand forefinger along thrusting forward ward. The averde is about a foot, long as ordinary only six or seven

en in an old family it with a veneraitious. Generally, n, but the more old, and encrusted his weapon is selrried more as the an as a weapon to nd plays the part ay in the last cen-

in executions, the expressly for the hin, and narrow. the same manner, riations in detail, is to suffer walks a chair, in which solacing his last betel-nut. His and held by two , standing behind e kris just above ikes it downward eath is instanta-

ition kris is very both edges, like a akes a small tuft it lightly round above the point. n wool between his left hand, so t. After placing n the right spot

the man is dead. Still holding the cotton wool between the finger and thumb, he draws out the kris, and, as the point is withdrawn, presses the cotton wool into the small wound which it has made, so that the weapon is quite clean and bright, and not a drop of blood is allowed to be seen. There is no doubt that this mode of execution is as certain, swift and merciful as any that can be devised. It is equal in these respects to the guillotine, and has the great advantage of being absolutely bloodless, and requiring no scaffold or visible apparatus. A traveller might pass within two yards of the

of the ordinary way was being done. Some of these weapons have been used for many successive generations, and are highly prized, some being valued at sums which to Europeans seem almost fabulous.

fital spot, and not know that anything out

above the left collar-bone, he drives it down- the Great Exhibition in London, but was ward into the heart with his right hand, and lost, together with many other weapons of great value.

The spear is a weapon much favored by many Dyak tribes, but little employed by others, the spear head at the end of the sumpitan answering every practical purpose. In fact it is used, like the club of the Fiji Islander, as a summons to battle, and serves the same purpose as the fiery cross of the Scotch Highlands. This symbol is instantaneously obeyed, and, as it runs through a country with almost magical speed, a chief can raise a large force within a very short time. On one occasion, during the rajahship of Sir James Brooke, an incipient rebellion was ingeniously stopped by finding the "calling-out spear" as it lay hidden in a canoe, and taking possession of

One of these execution krises was shown at rising instantly collapsed.

CHAPTER CXVI.

BORNEO - Continued.

WAR - Concluded.

THE BORNEAN SHIELD, ITS USUAL SHAPE AND DECORATIONS - MODE OF USING IT - A CURIOUS SHIELD IN MY COLLECTION - HEAD HUNTING AND ITS ACCOMPANYING HORRORS - OBJECTS OF SIR JAMES BROOKE'S MISSION - HIS MODE OF SUPPRESSING THE PRACTICE - "OPENING MOURNING" - THE FISH SPEARING AND THE FEAST - VALUE OF HEADS - TREACHERY AND CUNNING - THE BAFFLED HEAD HUNTERS - DYEING AND PRESERVING THE HEADS - THE HEAD HOUSES - COURAGE IN WAR - STORMING A NATIVE FORT - A NAVAL BATTLE - TRAPS AND PITFALLS - MAKING PEACE,

use the shield, which is made of wood, and is generally of an oblong form. Like the for any of them, unless, as is possible, a parang, it is decorated with various ornaments, the chief of which are hair, beads, and feathers. The hair is made into flat tufts, and fastened at regular intervals all over the shield, as is seen in an illustration at the foot of next page, which represents a fine specimen in the magnificent collection of the late Mr. Christy. In the centre of this shield there is a rude and evidently conventional representation of the human face, the eye being circular, of very great size, and painted white in the centre. At the top and bottom of the shield are similar figures, but of smaller size. Some shields, which are now very seldom seen, have the entire human form painted on them, the legs issuing from the chest, and the neck being entirely dispensed with. The tufts of hair on this shield are black.

The mode of using the shield and sword is shown in their sword dances, and Mr. Brooke, who had great experience in the Dyak weapons, gives the following opinion of their value: - Sword dances with shields were going on. Each tribe has a peculiar step and code of its own; but as an attack and defence in earnest they all seemed to be equally ridiculous.

"However, in the event of an opponent using a shield, I feel convinced that an European could not stand against them, as they are able to crouch their bodies entirely

By way of defensive weapons, the Dyaks | their balance. But without a shield a man with a rapier would be more than a match heavy Dyak weapon were to cut a light sword in two. This, however, no dexterous fencer would be likely to allow, and, after the first blow from a heavy weapon had fallen, the opponent would be at the mercy

of a light swordsman."
With due respect to the opinion of so competent an authority, I cannot but think that, even when furnished with this shield, the Dyak ought not to overcome a good fencer. The very fact that he is obliged to hold his shield before him, and consequently to stand either with his left side or at least his breast fronting his adversary, shows that he can have but a very short reach with his weapon, while his opponent, armed with a small sword, and using only the point, can remain entirely out of reach of the parang's edge, while he himself is within easy distance of the Dyak, and ready to bring in the fatal point of his weapon at the slightest opening made by his opponent.

The reader may remember that the parang described on page 1125 has attached to it, among other ornaments, a single feather. This feather has been taken from the rhi-noceros hornbill, a bird which the Dyaks hold in much respect, and which they will not eat, however hungry they may be. The not eat, however hungry they may be. quill feathers of the wing and tail are black, with a band of white, and by both Malays and Dyaks they are thought to possess certain virtues, and are used as talismans. The behind it, and can spring immediately from tain virtues, and are used as talismans. The such an attitude behind it without losing bird is considered to be an emblem of war,

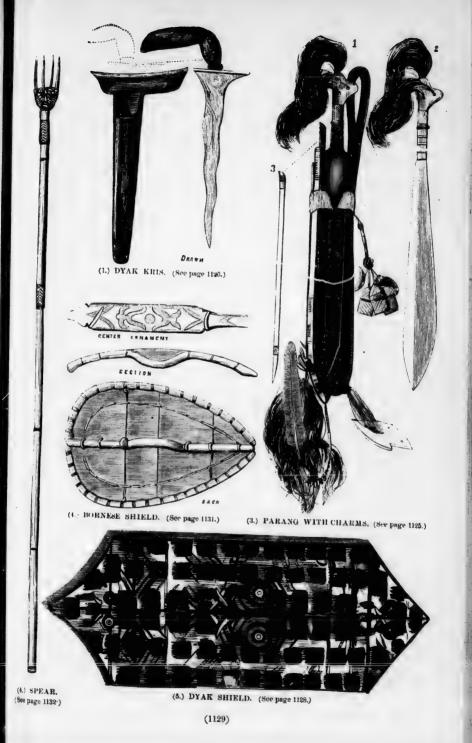
T—A CURIOUS SHIELD
OBJECTS OF SIR JAMES
NG MOURNING"—THE
NNING—THE BAFFLED
HOUSES—COURAGE IN
LLS—MAKING PEACE,

nout a shield a man more than a match s, as is possible, a ere to cut a light wever. no dexterous to allow, and, after heavy weapon had ld be at the mercy

the opinion of so I cannot but think ed with this shield, o overcome a good hat he is obliged to

hat he is obliged to him, and consevith his left side or ing his adversary, e but a very short while his opponent, rd, and using only utirely out of reach while he himself is the Dyak, and ready at of his weapon at de by his opponent in the particle has attached to ta, a single feather asken from the rhiwhich the Dyaks and which they will they may be. The y and tail are black, and by both Malays ght to possess cerl as talismans. The

an emblem of war,



it is bui whole, the rattan, be one piece If the The weight and a half. the front, as as to s the slight

and for shields, decorate horny b ished, an I inse shield in

mode of Borneau small shage of F forms a inches i width, an rate han shield by feature o

shows th that it is which ar are of a slightly s a separa whole ler Bornean

small for The fro lashed, or passing the these cro deep groo which has as to rece

groove, at tan at reg The shi upright pi front, and is lashed is lashed the corres strengther strain upo chosen wi Dyak use wooden pl shield is a yellowish it is edged The weight

ment. The per Dyak tribe tice of "h analogous of the Norhas sketche

and for this reason the sword sheaths, tom in a few nervous words, which will shields, and cloaks worn in war time are afterward be examined in detail. decorated with its feathers; and the huge great tribes of Sakarrang and Sariba horny beak of the bird is scraped thin, pol-

ished, and made into earrings.

I insert also on page 1129, a figure of a shield in my collection, which I believe to be of Bornean make, the materials and mode of employing them being evidently Bornean. In shape it exactly resembles the small shields used by horsemen in the early age of English history, and, small as it is, it forms a very efficient defence. It is twenty inches in length, and thirteen inches in width, and it is wielded by means of a separate handle, firmly lashed to the body of the shield by strips of rattan. The characteristic feature of the shield is the manner in which it is built up of a number of pieces, the whole, though merely bound together by rattan, being as firm as if it were cut out of one piece of wood.

If the reader will look at figure 2, which shows the back of the shield, he will see that it is made of four flat pieces of wood, which are laid side by side. These pieces are of a lightish colored wood, and are but slightly smoothed. The handle is cut from a separate piece of wood, which runs the whole length of the shield. As is usual with Bornean weapons, the handle is much too

small for the grasp of an European.

The front of the shield is made of a single flat piece of wood, to which the others are lashed, or rather sewed, by means of rattan passing through holes. In order to hold all these cross-pieces more firmly together, a deep groove has been cut in a thick rattan, which has been bound round the shield so as to receive the edges of the wood in the groove, and has been sewed to them by rat-

tan at regular intervals.

The shield is further strengthened by an upright piece of wood, which runs along the front, and to which the handle at the back is lashed by rattan, so that the handle and the corresponding piece in front actually strengthen the shield instead of being a strain upon it. The materials have been chosen with the eye for color which the Dyak usually possesses. The thin flat wooden plate which forms the front of the shield is nearly black, the central piece is yellowish white, and the rattans with which it is edged and sewed are of a bright yellow. The weight of the shield is exactly a pound so as to show the form of the handle, and the slight curvature of the whole imple-

great tribes of Sakarrang and Saribas have never been more than nominally subject to the Malays of Kuching or Bruni, and Sir James Brooke is the first master whom they have really obeyed. Every year a cloud of murderous pirates issued from their rivers ! swept the adjacent coasts. No man was

by reason of his poverty or insignifi-cance, for human heads were the booty sought by these rovers, and not wealth alone. Villages were attacked in the dead of the night, and every adult cut off; the women and grown girls were frequently slaugh-tered with the men, and children alone were preserved to be the slaves of the conquerors.

"Never was warfare so terrible as this. Head hunting, a fashion of comparatively modern growth, became a mania, which spread like a horrible disease over the whole land. No longer were the trophies regarded as proofs of individual valor; they became the indiscriminate property of the clan, and were valued for their number alone. Mur-der lurked in the jungle and on the river; the aged of the people were no longer safe among their own kindred, and corpses were secretly disinterred to increase the grisly

"Superstition soon added its ready impulse to the general movement. The aged warrior could not rest in his grave till his relations had taken a head in his name; the maiden disdained the weak-hearted suitor whose hand was not yet stained with some

cowardly murder.

"Bitterly did the Malay Pangerans of Kuching regret the folly which had disseminated this frenzy. They themselves had fostered the bloodthirsty superstition in furtherance of their political ends, but it had grown beyond their control, and the country was one red field of battle and murder. Pretexts for war were neither sought nor expected; the possession of a human head, no matter how obtained, was the sole happiness coveted throughout the land."

It was in order to stop this terrible custom that Sir James Brooke undertook his rule. The sultan of Bruni, in despair at the state of things, and utterly unable to check the increasing rage for head hunting, ceded the territory to him, hoping that the Englishman, with his small forces, would succeed where he himself with all his soldiers and a half. Besides the centre ornament on the front, a section of the shield is also given, had falled. Although these tribes were nominally his subjects, they never thought of obeying him, and the only sign of their subjection was a small tribute very irregularly paid. The sultan was right in his con-The perpetual feuds that rage among the jecture, and we know how the Englishman, bysk tribes are mostly caused by the practice of "head hunting," which is exactly analogous to the scalp hunting propensities of the North American tribes. Mr. Boyle has sketched the outlines of this horrid cus-

practice. For several years the Dyaks could not understand the prohibition, and practice. the English rajah and his officers were continually pestered with requests from Dyaks to be allowed to go and take heads. An old man, for example, had lost his wife, and begged piteously to be allowed to take just one head, so that she might rest quietly in her grave. Then a young man would come, who had been rejected by a Dyak damsel, lay his case before the authorities, and beseech them to permit him to take a head, and so to win the hand of the disdainful One man, after meeting with the usual refusal, proposed a compromise, and asked whether he might not go and take the head of a Pakarran, because Pakarrans really could not be considered as men. In fact, as Mr. Brooke well remarks, the Dyaks behaved just like children crying after sugar-plums. No plan could have been devised which was more effective than that which was carried out by the English rajah. Whenever a party of Dyaks started surreptitiously off on a head hunting expedition, a force was always despatched after them, in order to cut them off and bring them to justice, when they were fined heavily. If they succeeded in procuring heads, their trophies were taken away from them, and they were fixed still more heavily. Those who refused to submit to the punishment were declared to be enemies to the government, and their houses were burnt down. Dyak's of more peaceful tribes were always employed in such expeditions, as, owing to the feuds which had existed for so long, they had been exasperated by the numerous murders which had been perpetrated by the more warlike tribes. The English rule, unlike that of the Malay sultan, was irrespective of persons, and the highest chiefs were punished as swiftly and surely as the lowest of the people. On one occasion, a quarrel arose between two parties of Dyaks, one of which, commanded by a chief named Jannah, was entirely in the wrong, having first tres-passed on the property of the other party, and then got up a quarrel because they had hurt themselves against the spiked bamboos, which were planted by way of fences. In the fight that ensued Januah himself shot the other chief; but he gained little by his As soon as the facts were known, Mr. Brooke sent a large force against him, and he was fined nearly two hundred pounds. He and his party took to the bush, but they were soon starved out, and had to submit. The other chiefs were delighted at the result, and were accustomed ever afterward to check those who wished to go head hunting by telling them to remember Januah and his two hundred pounds. It is rather curious that this high-handed proceeding inspired Januah with the greatest respect and affection for Mr. Brooke, for whom he afterward entertained a sincere friendship. He remained when the spear reached me.

asserted that the three years subsequent to this episode in his life had been marked by very much better harvests than he had before obtained from his land, and attributed his prosperity to his friendship for the white

One ingenious portion of the system was, that a large share of the fines was distributed among chiefs who had abstained from headhunting. This plan had a double effect; it proved to the Dyaks that they were not fined for the benefit of the English, and it induced them to be always on the look-out for those who were going to hunt after

IT has been mentioned that the heads are wanted to "open the mourning" after the death of any person. This phrase requires some little explanation. When a chief loses a relative, he closes some stream during the time of mourning. This is done by driving spears into the bank, on either side, and fastening bamboos to them across the stream, No one is allowed to pass this obstruction until the mourning is over, an event which cannot take place, according to Dyak custom, until a head had been obtained.

When he has brought home the required trophy, he leaves it at the head house to be prepared, while he makes ready for the feast with which a new head is received. He takes some plants, the juice of which has a stupifying quality, pounds them, and throws them into the river. The fish come floating to the surface, and are then captured by means of barbed spears, which are flung at them from the bank. The spears are very light, their shafts being made of bamboo, so that they always float, and enable the thrower to recover both the spear and the fish which it has struck. The spears and poles which closed the stream are removed in order to allow the fishermen to use their weapons, and thus, by the arrival of the coveted head, the stream is again thrown

open. One of these fish spears is shown on page 1129. It is five feet in length, and the shaft, which is three-quarters of an inch in diameter, is made of hollow bamboo, and is exceedingly light. The four prongs are made of iron, and very slightly barbed. Owing to the manner in which they are lashed to the shaft, they are very elastic, so that their slight barbs are perfectly capable of retaining the fish. With the natural love of ornsment which distinguishes the Dyaks, the owner of this spear has decorated it with several broad belts of split rattan, plaited in a very artistic manner. One was placed just below the head of the spear, another was placed at the centre of gravity, so as to guide the hand at once to the "balance" of the weapon, and the third was near the butt. Of the three, however, only the central belt

Owin quantit requisit James . down th tical dis of a sta girl. A it belon

The 1 one hea pened 1 anatomy scarcely turned The pro indignar been pra origin o were ob but they was that infested and had One e

these tr being be that a I not place would bu One of t posing h ety to sec man had murderen hill the b his knife head, reg likely to As the of a Dyak

that the of force o

example Brooke (t "Five very few Still they gaining to chandise t tion with three mer to go to Sa some of been abse was broug headed by

"It hap crew of D together, s also seeki were leav boat follow river toge proceeded derous des ears subsequent to had been marked sts than he had bend, and attributed dship for the white

of the system was, nes was distributed stained from heada double effect; it nat they were not he English, and it ys on the look-out ing to hunt after

that the heads are ourning" after the his phrase requires When a chief loses stream during the is done by driving either side, and fasacross the stream, ss this obstruction er, an event which ng to Dyak custom,

home the required e head house to be ready for the feast l is received. He ice of which has a s them, and throws e fish come floating then captured by which are flung at he spears are very made of bamboo, at, and enable the the spear and the The spears and ream are removed ermen to use their the arrival of the n is again thrown

s is shown on page ngth, and the shaft, of an inch in diambamboo, and is exir prongs are made by barbed. Owing they are lashed to lastic, so that their capable of retainatural love of ornaes the Dyaks, the decorated it with it rattan, plaited in One was placed the spear, another of gravity, so as to the "balance" of was near the butt. aly the central belt reached me.

Owing to the enormous demand for heads. quantity rather than quality was the chief requisite, so that at the time when Sir James Brooke undertook the task of putting down the practice of head hunting, no practical distinction was made between the head of a stalwart warrior and that of a tender girl. A head was a head; the body to which it belonged was of no consequence.

The rage for heads was so great that in one head house an Englishman, who happened to know something of comparative anatomy, espied a head which seemed scarcely human, and which, on examination, turned out to be that of an orang-outan. The proprietors of the head house at first indignantly denied that any imposture had been practised, and adhered to the human origin of the head. At last, however, they were obliged to yield to a certain degree, but they only said that the head in question was that of an Antu or goblin, which had infested the village for a considerable time, and had at last been killed.

One exception was made in the value of these trophies, the head of a white man being beyond all price, and being so valued that a Dyak who had obtained one would not place it in the common head house, but would build a special house to contain it. One of these Dyak warriors was seen exposing himself to great danger in his anxiety to secure a white man's head. A boatman had been killed, and one of the Dyak main that been kined, and one of the Lyan murderers was observed dragging up the hill the body of the slain man, hacking with his knife at the neck so as to secure the head, regardless of the fact that he was likely to be shot in the endeavor.

As the possession of a head is the height of a Dyak's ambition, it is not extraordinary that the natives should use all their powers of force or craft to secure the trophy. One example of treachery is narrated by Mr. Brooke (the present Rajah).

"Five years ago the Saribas Malays were living at the mouth of their river, and, with very few exceptions, were hostile to us. Still they were on friendly terms so far as gaining trade, and making use of the mer-chandise they could only get by communication with Sarawak. A party of five people, three men and two women, left Sakarrang to go to Saribas for the purpose of meeting some of their relatives. After they had been absent a considerable time, the news was brought back that they had been beheaded by Dyaks in the river.

"It happened thus: They met a boat's crew of Dyaks while in Saribas, and spoke together, saying they were traders, and were also seeking for fish. When the Malays were leaving Saribas to return, the Dyak boat followed in their wake, entere this river together, and on the following day.

"In the morning they offered their swords for sale, and sold or exchanged one, suffering the Malays to make an exceedingly profitable bargain. They then proposed fishing with a hand net on the mud bank, and per-suaded a Malay named Limin (who was well known, and considered a brave man) to separate from the others and cast the net. This was done, and for some time they were successful in bagging fish, and were going further and further from the boats.

"At length the net fouled on a stump at the bottom, and one of the Dyaks immediately took off his sword and dived down, as poor Limin thought, to clear it, but, instead of doing so, the wily rascal twisted it firmly round and round, came up to take breath, and then again dived, and again twisted it in various ways round the stumps; he then rose, and said he could not clear it, but asked Limin to try. Limin unsuspectingly took off his sword, dived, and in approaching the surface breathless, the two Dyaks struck and decapitated him without a sound. They then took his nead and returned to their boat.

"A third Malay was persuaded to administer some cure to a Dyak's foot, which was bleeding slightly. While the Malay was leaning over and looking to the wound, one of them chopped off his head from behind. After this, the woman was decapitated. They lost one head, which tumbled into the water, but the other four, with all the property belonging to the Malay party, were taken and carried away to Sadok."

On another occasion, a party of Dyaks in a canoe met a boat containing a man, his wife, and their young daughter. They stopped the boat, and offered betel-nut for sale. As soon as they came within reach, they drew their swords, struck off the woman's head, and took the girl prisoner, but the father had just time to jump overboard and swim ashore.

This occurred in the Saribas River, and, strangely enough, the murderer, whose name was Sadji, nearly came in contact with Mr. Brooke, who had gone out expressly to check his head hunting propensities. Mr. Brooke passed him on the river, but, not being acquainted with him, did not arrest him. This, as was afterward learned, was fortunate for Sadji sat in the boat with his sword drawn, and if the captive girl had called for help or if the Taglish key called for help, or if the English had shown any signs of arresting him, he would have struck off her head, jumped with it into the river, swum ashore, and escaped together with his followers through the jungle.

The same author gives another example of head hunting, which is a curious mixture of the terrible and the ludicrous. A young boat followed in their wake, entere this river together, and on the following day Mr. Brooke in irons. He was only nine-teen years of age, and yet he had gray hair, the natural color having vanished in conse-

quence of his troubles. Some time previously, he had fallen in love with a young Dyak girl, who spurned all his advances because he had never taken a head, and so proved himself to be a warrior. She was evidently a girl of energy, for she proposed that he should go to the Saribas fort, and take the head of Bakir, the Dyak chief, or

of the Tuan Hassan, i. e. Mr. Watson.

Being thus pressed, Achang, with another lad of his own age, set off for the fort, and on the way suffered the usual drawbacks of bad birds, bad dreams, and missing the path, so that when they came within sight of the fort they thought they had better change their plans. They determined on going to a Chinaman's house under pretext of purchasing his goods, and taking his head while he was off his guard. When well cooked and dried, one head would do as well as another, and they thought that they would have no difficulty in passing off the Chinaman's head for that of the white

Accordingly, they went to a Chinaman's house, had their supper with him very amicably, and then retired to rest, after agreeing that at midnight they would strike the fatal blow. New it happened that Achang overslept himself, and his friend thought that he might as well take advantage of his drowsiness, and secure the head for himself. Accordingly, at midnight, hideous yells were heard from the Chinaman's house, and when the people rushed into the room, they found the unfortunate owner with his face gashed all down one side, the Dyak youth having missed his blow in his haste. The actual perpetrator escaped, but Achang was found still fast asleep, and was instantly put in irons.

Next day he was brought down to Sakarrang, with a chain round his waist, and on the way he was followed by a body of Dyaks, who were trying to bribe his keepers to let them take his head. They actually held an auction for his head as they went along, each bidding higher than the other, and the horrors of that twelve-mile march were such that the poor lad became gray before

the next morning.

After all, Achang was really a most gen-tle and innocent lad, and was only following the habits of his country in obeying the behests of his mistress. He was kept in irons for about a month, and then released, after which he attached himself to the service of the white men, worked in the garden, and, as the saying is, made himself generally useful.

The heads are subjected to a sort of drying process, called "cooking," which is tolerably effectual, but is far inferior to that which is employed by the New Zealanders, and, for a considerable time after the heads are cooked, they are very offensive to European nostrils, though Dyaks seem to be warriors at hand the Dyaks ensuquite unconscious of the evil odor. They security of their cherished trophies.

are always kept in the pangarangs, or head houses, which are very unlike the ordinary dwelling-houses of the Dyaks. A very good account of a head house is given by Mr. F.

S. Marryat: -

"We were escorted, through a crowd of wandering Dyaks, to a house in the centre of the village, which was very different in construction from the others. It was per-fectly round, and well ventilated by numerous port-holes in the roof, which was pointed. We ascended to the room above by means of a rough ladder, and when we entered, we were rather taken aback by finding that we were in the head house, as it is termed, and that the beams were lined with human heads, all hanging by a small line passed through the top of the skull.

"They were painted in the most fantastic and hideous manner. Pieces of wood painted to imitate the eyes were inserted in the sockets, and added not a little to their ghastly, grinning appearance. The strangest part of the story, and which added very much to the effect of the scene, was, that these skulls were perpetually moving to and fro, and knocking against each other. This, I presume, was occasioned by the different currents of air blowing in at the port-holes cut in the roof; but what with their continual motion, their nodding their chins when they hit each other, and their grinning teeth, they really appeared to be endowed with new life, and to be a very merry set of fellows.

"However, whatever might be the first impression occasioned by this very unusual sight, it very soon wore off, and we amused ourselves with their motions, which were not life, as Byron says; and in the course of the day we succeeded in making a very excel-lent dinner in company with these gentlemen, although we were none of us sufficiently Don Giovannistic to invite our friends above to supper."

These head houses are, as we have just seen, the places wherein guests are received, and we can therefore understand that the natives of any village would have a pride in showing to their visitors the trophies won by themselves. One of these houses scantily furnished with heads would be held as a scandal to the village, so that the three emotions of pride, love, and sorrow have all their effect in aiding the custom of head hunting.

In these head houses, the unmarried men of the village sleep. The reason for this custom is two-fold. In the first place, the bachelors are kept out of mischief; and in the next, they are always ready with their arms at hand to turn out in defence of the village should it be attacked. In such expeditions, the head house is always the central object of attack, and by having the young warriors at hand the Dyaks ensure the

custom a "Abo Natuna 1 transacti islands. cruising and had fisherme ard ever narrow in "The

Some

surprised seven, wi and one l a slow fir fellows di but defyi: stood tre was sent to his co there aga same way cient to c that direc " Partie

went awa

sion, taki

wrapped 1

they seaso

and palm when the thin as s "It is th causes the the Chine themselve have beer up to their of a few le to cut off to draw w down on a trading pr

well where

ashore; ar

and plund In war selves to relates tha of a hostile force of M by far the vanced to house, i. e. Sumpitan from the behind tree fire withou deadly dark boldly at th on which it ons with which had

and trying At last, o pangarangs, or head unlike the ordinary yaks. A very good is given by Mr. F.

hrough a crowd of house in the centre as very different in thers. It was per-ventilated by numef, which was pointed. om above by means when we entered, back by finding that use, as it is termed, e lined with human a small line passed

skull.

in the most fantastic eces of wood painted re inserted in the t a little to their rance. The strangd which added very he scene, was, that ually moving to and st each other. This. acd by the different in at the port-holes t with their continng their chins when and their grinning red to be endowed a very merry set of

might be the first y this very unusual off, and we amused ions, which were not in the course of the aking a very excel-with these gentlee none of us suffi-stic to invite our

re, as we have just guests are received, inderstand that the ould have a pride in the trophies won by ese houses scantily would be held as a that the three emond sorrow have all he custom of head

the unmarried men The reason for this the first place, the of mischief; and in ys ready with their t in defence of the ked. In such expealways the central having the young Dyaks ensure the ed trophies.

Some of the horrors of the head hunting | the house, and remained there for about five custom are well described by Mr. St. John: About thirteen years ago, I heard the Natuna people give an account of a horrible transaction that took place in one of their islands. A party of Saribas Dyaks were cruising about among the little isles near, and had destroyed several women and many fishermen, when they were observed, toward evening, creeping into a deep and narrow inlet to remain during the night.

"The islanders quietly assembled and surprised their enemies, killing all but seven, who were taken prisoners—six men and one lad. The former they roasted over a slow fire, and they declared that the bold follows died without uttering a cry of pain, but defying them to the last; the lad, who stood trembling by, uncertain of his fate, was sent back to the coast, with a message to his countrymen that, if ever they came there again, they would all be treated in the same way. This fearful warning was suffi-cient to deter their seeking heads again in that direction.

"Parties of two and three sometimes went away for months on an inland incursion, taking nothing with them but salt wrapped up in their waist-cloths, with which they seasoned the young shoots and leaves, and palm cabbages found in the forests; and when they returned home, they were as

thin as scare-crows

"It is this kind of cat-like warfare which causes them to be formidable enemies both to the Chinese and the Malays, who never felt themselves safe from a Dyak enemy. They have been known to keep watch in a well up to their chins in water, with a covering of a few leaves over their heads, to endeavor to cut off the first person who might come to draw water. At night they would drift down on a log, and cut the rattan cable of trading prahus, while others of their party would keep watch on the bank, knowing well where the stream would take the boat ashore; and when aground they kill the men

and plunder the goods,"

In war Dyaks have often proved themselves to be valiant soldiers. Mr. Brooke relates that when he was attacking the fort of a hostile chief having with him a mixed force of Malays and Dyaks, the latter were by far the better soldiers. The former advanced to thirty or forty yards of the house, i. e. just beyond the range of the Sumpitan arrows, which were being blown from the fort, and ensconced themselves behind trees and stumps, where they could fire without exposing themselves to the deadly darts. The Dyaks, however, dashed boldly at the house, clambering up the posts on which it was built, carrying their weap-

minutes, when he was obliged to retreat and slide to the ground down the post. After much fighting, the Dyaks managed to set fire to the building at both ends, thus forcing the inmates to rush out among their enemies. Scarcely any of them escaped, some per-ishing in the flames, others being badly wounded, and the rest being taken prisoners. The victorious Dyaks were mad with ex-

citement, and rushed about with furious shouts, carrying heads in their hands, and insensible to the wounds which many of them had received. One lad came yelling by, them had received. One had came young by, having a head in one hand, and with the other holding on one side of his face. An enemy's sword had nearly sliced off the whole of that side of his face, but he was almost unconscious of the fact, and his excitement prevented him from feeling any pain. In a few minutes however, he first. pain. In a few minutes, however, he fainted from loss of blood, and, in spite of the terrible wound which he had received, eventually recovered.

Sometimes the Dyaks are exceedingly cruel to their captives, not being content with merely taking their heads, but killing them slowly by torture. Generally, however, the competition for heads is so keen that a man who has overcome an enemy has no time for torturing him, and is obliged to content himself with getting off the head as fast as

Some of these forts are most perilous places to attack. The approaches are guarded with "ranjows," i. e. slips of bamboo sharpened at the end and stuck in the ground. Ranjows are troublesome enough on open ground, but when they are stuck among leaves, grass, and herbage, they become terrible weapons, and impede very effectually the advance of the attacking force.

Then the Dyaks set various ingenious traps. They place bent bows near the path, so constructed that as soon as a man comes opposite them, the string is liberated, and an arrow is tolerably sure to transfix both his legs. Sometimes they bend a young tree down, and lay a javelin, so that when the tree is freed, it strikes the end of the javelin and urges it onward with terrific violence, just like the mangonel of olden times. They dig numberless pitfalls of no very great size in depth, but each having a sharp bamboo stuck upright in the centre, so that any one who falls into the pit must inevitably be im-

The forts themselves have been much modified since the introduction of fire-arms. the stockades which surround them being made of the hardest wood, about two feet in thickness, and capable of resisting the fire of any small arms. In fact, nothing but arons with them, hacking at the breaches which had previously been made with shot, and trying to force their way into the fort.

Sally-port through which, when the place at trying to force their way into the fort. sally-port through which, when the place At last, one Dyak succeeded in getting into becomes untenable, the defenders quietly

escape, just as is done with the pals of New | menced. We sat in the broad veranda of a

The Sea Dyaks, as their name implies, are a maritime set of tribes, and fight chiefly in canoes. They have some ideas of tactics, and can arrange their canoes in regular array when they meet with an enemy. One of their favorite tactics is to conceal some of their larger boats, and then to send some small and badly-manned canoes forward to attack the enemy. They are, of course, soon repulsed, and obliged to retreat. The enemy. thinking himself victorious, follows them exultingly, and, as soon as he passes the spot where the larger canoes are hidden, he is attacked by them in the rear, while the smaller canoes, which have acted as decoys, turn and join in the onslaught. The rivers are almost invariably chosen for this kind of attack, the overhanging branches of trees and the dense foliage of the bank affording excellent hidingplaces for the canoes. An illustration of a

"Canoe fight" is given on page 1139.

When peace is declared, or when people desire to renew friendship to each other, they declare themselves friends by a ceremony which is identical in principle with that which is practised in many parts of Africa, each of the contracting parties partaking of the blood of the other. Sometimes the blood is actually drunk, but generally it is taken by mixing it with tobacco and smoking it. Mr. St. John, in his "Forests of the Far East," describes this ceremony with much force:—

"Singanding sent on board to request me to become his brother by going through the sacred custom of imbibing each other's blood. I say imbibing, because it is either mixed with water and drunk, or else it is placed within a native cigar, and drawn in with the smoke. I agreed to do so, and the following day was fixed for the ceremony, which is called Berbiang by the Kayans, Bersabibah

called Berbiang by the Kayans, Bersabibah by the Borneans. "I landed with our party of Malays, and after a preliminary talk, to give time for the population to assemble, the affair com-

menced. We sat in the broad veranda of a long house, surrounded by hundreds of men, women, and children, all looking eagerly at the white stranger who was about to enter their tribe. Stripping my left arm, Kum-Lia took a small piece of wood shaped like a knife-blade, and, slightly piercing the skin, brought the blood to the surface; this he carefully scraped off. Then one of my Malays drew blood in the same way from Siaganding, and a small cigarette being produced, the blood on the wooden blade was spread on the tobacco.

"A chief then arose, and, walking to an open place, looked forth upon the river, and invoked their god and all the spirits of good and evil to be witness of this tie of brother-hood. The cigarette was then lighted, and each of us took several puffs, and the ceremony was concluded. I was glad to find that they had chosen the form of inhaling the blood in smoke, as to have swallowed even a drop would have been unpleasant, though the disgust would only arise from the imagination.

"They sometimes vary the custom, though the variation may be confined to the Kiniahs, who live further up the river, and are intermarried with the Kayans. There a pig is brought and placed between the two who are to be joined in brotherhood. A chief offers an invocation to the gods, and marks with a lighted brand the pig's shoulder. The beast is then killed, and, after an exchange of jackets, a sword is thrust into the wound, and the two are marked with the blood of the pig."

The stranger thus admitted into membership with the Kayans is called Niau, of riend, and in some cases the experiment proves to be successful. Generally, however, the honor, such as it is, is greater than the profit, the Kayans assuming that their newly-admitted member ought to make plenty of rich presents to his tribe, in order to show his sense of the privileges that have been conferred upon him.

DIVOR SPORT: LIBRIU

MARRIAGE A

CURIO

WITH :

PASSING f

Dyaks.
In some a very simpling together and separation in any case divorce are rimony are ness.

The read the singula between cu life. Among

mode of co some parts falling into Dyak, when shows his p as helping home her 1 ing her such give. After he

for some tir ceed to a m night, when asleep, he qu door, steals t sleeping und gently awak him an abu sirih leaf, an broad veranda of a by hundreds of men. l looking eagerly at was about to enter my left arm, Kumf wood shaped like a y piercing the skin, he surface; this he Then one of my Masame way from Sincigarette being pro-wooden blade was

, and, walking to an upon the river, and ll the spirits of good f this tie of brotheras then lighted, and puffs, and the cere-I was glad to find ne form of inhaling to have swallowed ve been unpleasant, ald only arise from

y the custom, though fined to the Kiniahs, river, and are inter-ins. There a pig is tween the two who otherhood. A chief the gods, and marks pig's shoulder. The d, after an exchange rust into the wound d with the blood of

mitted into memberis called Niau, or ses the experiment l. Generally, howit is, is greater than assuming that their er ought to make to his tribe, in order privileges that have

CHAPTER CXVII.

BORNEO - Continued.

SOCIAL LIFE.

EARBLAGE AMONG THE DYAKS-COURTSHIP, ACCEPTANCE OR REJECTION-A SIBUTAN WEDDING-CURIOUS DOMESTIC ARRANGEMENTS - PRIDE OF BIRTH - STATE OF MORALITY - FACILITIES OF DIVORCE - JEALOUSY, AND ITS RESULTS - HOW TO TREAT A RIVAL - FORBIDDEN DEGREES -SPORTS AND GAMES - BEE HUNTING - THE BORNEAN SWING - TRIALS OF STRENGTH AND EQUI-LIBRIUM - TRICKS WITH STRING - COCK FIGHTING - THE SWORD DANCE - A DYAK WAR DANCE WITH HEADS - THE CAT-O'-NINE TAILS - DYAK FESTIVALS - STRANGE COOKERY - THE DURIAN FRUIT-THE NATIONAL DRINK, ITS ODOR AND TASTE-HABIT OF INTOXICATION-A DYAK CIRCE - STOUT DRINKERS AND STRONG HEADS - THE FORCE OF RIDIOULE.

In some parts of the country marriage is a very simple business, the two parties living together as long as they like each other, and separating if either feels dissatisfied. In any case, as we shall see, the facilities for divorce are extreme, and the bonds of mat-rimony are worn with marvellous loose-

The reader cannot but have remembered the singular coincidence that often exists between customs of savage and of civilized

Among the Sinambau Dyaks there is a mode of courtship which still prevails in some parts of Europe, though it is generally falling into disuse. A young Sinambau Dyak, when struck with the charms of a girl, shows his preference in various ways, such as helping her in her daily labor, carrying home her load of wood for her, and making her such presents as are in his power to

After he has carried on these attentions for some time, he thinks that he may proceed to a more explicit declaration. At night, when the family is supposed to be asleep, he quietly slides back the bolt of the door, steals to the spot where his beloved is sleeping under her mosquito curtains, and gently awakes her. He always brings with

Passing from war to peace, we will begin throughout the greater part of the night with marriage as practised among the It cannot be expected that the parents of the girl, who sleep in the same room, should be wholly ignorant of the proceeding, but they are conventionally supposed to be so, and if they approve of the young man they take no notice, while if they do not, they use their influence with the girl to induce her to dismiss him.

The mode of rejection is in keeping with the rest of the proceedings. Should the girl dislike the too adventurous suitor, she declines accepting the betel-nut, and merely asks him to blow up the fire or light the lamp, a request which is tantamount to instant dismissal.

When the marriage takes place a feast is made, and then the parties are made man and wife without any more ceremony. It is very seldom that the young couple begin housekeeping on their own account, and, as a general rule, the bridegroom enters the household of his father-in-law, or, at all events, of some of his wife's relations, and so becomes one of the family, laboring for the common stock, and taking his share when the head of the household dies. Occasionally this plan is reversed, and when the bride is one of a large family of brothers and sisters, or if the bridegroom is the sole support of his parents, she accompanies her husband, and becomes part of his house-

him an abundant supply of betel-nut and The coremony of marriage among the sinh leaf, and the two sit talking together Sibuyan Dyaks of Lundu is worthy of no-

representation of this unique ceremony on the following page. Two bars of iron are laid on the ground in the spot appointed for the ceremony, and the young couple are brought from opposite ends of the village. The first part of the ceremony consists in seating them on the bars of iron, as token that the blessings of their married life are to be as strong as iron. The priest gives to each of the pair a cigar and some betel-unt and sirih leaf, which they hold in their hand until the next part of the ceremony is completed. Taking two fowls in his hands, the priest waves them over the heads of the couple, and, in the course of a long address, invokes every blessing upon them. He then solemnly knocks their heads together times, after which the bridegroom places times, after which the bridegroom places for the Superiority of their morals when the betel-nut in the mouth of his bride, and for the superiority of their morals when the betel-nut in the mouth of his bride, she compared with the generality of the Dyaks of Sibuyan are remarkable. afterward doing the same by him, this ceremony being the public acknowledgment of accepting each other as husband and a girl becomes a mother before she is mar-

After they have thus declared their acceptance of each other, the fowls are killed, and their blood received in two cups, the color of the blood being carefully inspected by the priest, and its hue being held as an omen of the future well-being or misery of the newly deities. Nor do the delinquents always esmarried pair. One of the feasts which came the fine even after the sacrifice of the will presently be described closes the ceremonies.

It has already been mentioned that in most cases the bridegroom enters the family of his wife. But in any case he is bound to honor the father of his wife even above his own father. The young husband may never even pronounce the name of his father-inlaw, he may not eat from the same dish, drink from the same cup, or rest on the same

Among another tribe of Dyaks, the Balaus of Lingga, the ceremonies of marriage are rather different. By way of a propitiatory offering, the mother of the bridegroom gives to the relatives of the bride some domestic utensil, such as a plate or a basin, and three days afterward the very simple ceremony is

The bridegroom's mother takes a quantity of the areca-nut prepared for chewing, divides it into three portions, places them in a basket, and sets them on a sort of altar in front of the bride's house. The friends of both parties then assemble, and chew the nuts while they discuss the future prospects of the young couple, and they decide as to the amount of fine which the husband shall pay to his wife in case he separates from her after she is a mother, or when she is likely to be so. In fact, in their own roughand-ready way, these Dyaks have contrived to organize a tolerably complete code of marriage settlements, which, in consequence on their family, that the parents sacrifice a of the very easy system of divorce, is abso- pig to the higher powers, and wash the door

The artist has given an admirable lutely necessary for the protection of the women.

These Sea Dyaks of Lingga have, in common with all the sea tribes, the greatest pride of birth; and if a girl were to listen to the addresses of a man of much inferior rank, her parents would prohibit the match. In one such case the two lovers fled into the jungle, poisoned themselves with the juice of the tuba plant, and were found dead next morning in each other's arms. So full are they of their family pride, that they look upon any mixture of their noble blood as a dire disgrace, and this is carried to so great an extent that, although within their own degree their morals are of the laxest order, the men would scorn an intrigue with a

ried, she angers the deities of the tribe, who show their wrath by visitations upon the whole of the tribe. If, therefore, such a case be discovered, both the erring lovers are heavily fined, and a pig is sacrificed in order to avert the anger of the offended cape the fine even after the sacrifice of the pig, for every one who was smitten with sickness, or met with an accident, within a month of the sacrifice, has a claim on them for damages, as having been the cause of the misfortune, while, if any one has died, the survivors claim compensation for the loss of their relative.

The reader will remember that the young people of both sexes live with their parents, contributing their labor to the common stock, and being therefore incapable of possessing property of their own. In consequence of this arrangement, the fines which are levied upon the lovers practically fall upon the parents, who therefore take care to look after their daughters, while the young men are partly kept out of mischief by being obliged to sleep together at the head house.

The Dyaks of the Batang Lupar are more lax in their notion of morality than the Sibuyans, and it is seldom that a girl is married until she is likely to become a mother. When this is the case, the lover marries her as a matter of course, but in those cases where a man denies his complicity, and the girl is unable to prove it, she is so bitterly scorned and reproached by her kindred that she generally runs away from the village. Some such delinquents have been known to take poison in order to escape the contempt

ne protection of the

Lingga have, in comtribes, the greatest girl were to listen to in 'of much inferior I prohibit the match. I olovers fled into the elves with the juck were found dead next is arms. So full are oride, that they look heir noble blood as a s carried to so great the laxest order, an intrigue with a

yan are remarkable their morals when herality of the Dyak immorality is an ofr powers, and that, if r before she is marties of the tribe, who visitations upon the f, therefore, such a h the erring lovers in pig is sacrificed in ger of the offended the sacrifice of the

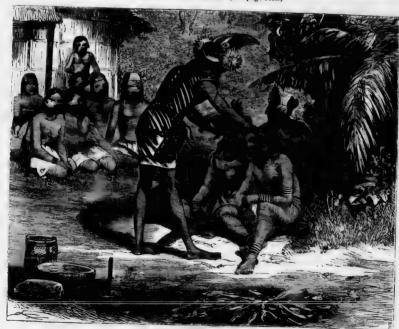
o was smitten with n accident, within a nas a claim on them been the cause of the ty one has died, the station for the loss of

mber that the young e with their parents, our to the common re incapable of poseir own. In consenent, the fines which overs practically fall herefore take care to ers, while the young out of mischief by together at the head

ang Lupar are more f morality than the m that a girl is mare become a mother. he lover marries her but in those cases complicity, and the it, she is so bitterly by her kindred that ay from the village have been known to escape the contempt equaintances. They ught such a disgrace e parents sacrifice as, and wash the door



(1.) A CANOE FIGHT. (See page 1136.)



(2.) A DYAK WEDDING. (See page 1138.)

of the ho pitiate th When invariable There is, it, inasm slightest night, su both part by mutua John mer are marri finally fix mean to s an exam divorce v states that Still, it part after the family from the i married p they hear such a cas perior pov then able It often ha and divorc ever, they made a m their matri mony or fr Mr. St. jealousy af The Pa girl, and pa ous sort of by the Dys practical p time, and t child, reput he did not liked to fol ever, the gi made her fa besides pay a penalty for Brunei, wh a slave. The told that th liked, and only just aff
According upon the Pa and ordered of the villag to him. The hid himself, employ the husband and The unfortu Orang-Kaya geran cut hi

it, inasmuch as they can be divorced on the slightest pretext. An evil omen in the night, such as a "bad bird," will frighten both parties so much that they will separate by mutual consent on the next day. Mr. St. John mentions that many men and women are married seven or eight times before they fieldly fix upon a partner with whom they mean to spend the rest of their lives, and as an example of the exceeding facility for divorce which exists among the Dyaks, states that he saw a young girl of seventeen who had already had three husbands.

Still, it is very seldom that married couples part after they are parents; and if they do so, the family of the women expect a heavy fine from the fickle husband. Now and then, a married pair are really so attached to each other that they do not like to part, even when they hear the voice of a "bad bird." In such a case they avert the anger of the superior powers by sacrificing a pig, and are then able to remain together without fear. It often happens that a man and wife quarrel, and divorce themselves. After a while, however, they begin to think that they have made a mistake, and are allowed to renew their matrimonial relations without any ceremony or fresh rites of marriage.

Mr. St. John mentions a curious case of jealousy after a divorce, and its consequences.

The Pangeran Mumein took a Murout family. tion a heavy weight of brass guns - a curitime, and then, after she had borne him a child, repudiated her, telling her father that he did not want her any more, unless she liked to follow him to Brunei. This, however, the girl refused to do, so the Pangeran made her father refund the brass guns, and besides pay a fine of double the amount, as a penalty for not allowing the girl to go to Brunei, where he meant to have sold her as a slave. The father paid the fine, and was told that the girl might then go where she liked, and marry whom she chose, as was only just after the previous event.

Accordingly, some little time afterward, she did marry one of her countrymen, whereupon the Pangeran flew into a fit of jealousy, and ordered the head man or Orang-Kaya of the village to seize them and bring them to him. The Orang-Kaya was afraid, and hid himself, so that the Pangeran had to employ the Bisayas, who captured the husband and brought him to their employer. The unfortunate man was then tied up to the Orang-Kaya's landing place, and the Pan-

of the house with its blood, in order to pro-pitiate the offended deities.

When the pair are married, they almost invariably remain faithful to each other.

There is, however, small credit to them for full of similar tales.

Jealousy is by no means confined to the men, the women being far more jealous of the men than they of their wives, and with good reason. There is a tacit law that, whenever a wife detects her husband in flirting. she may beat her rival to her heart's content. provided that she use nothing except a stick, and, if the woman be married, her husband may beat the disturber of his domestic peace, if he can. The usual result of discovery in such cases is, that the man goes off into the bush under the pretext of head hunting, and stays there until he thinks his wife's anger has cooled down. If he is fortunate enough to return with a head, his success as a warrior ensures a condonation for his short-

comings as a husband. The Dyaks have a code of forbidden degrees for marriages, differing slightly in the various tribes, but tolerably uniform on the whole. Marriage with first cousins is not permitted, they being looked upon as brother and sister; neither, as a general rule, is an uncle allowed to marry his niece. To this latter rule, however, there are exceptions. Marriage with a deceased wife's sister is almost universally permitted, and, in fact, encouraged, provided that the parents of the woman approve of the match, because in that case all the children belong to one

ous sort of currency which is much valued by the Dyaks, and perfectly useless for any practical purposes. He left her for some Or sport, as we understand the word, the are shown in the mode by which they supply themselves with honey. They do not keep hives in or near their houses, but seldom fail to see a bees' nest in a tree, though the unaccustomed eyes of an European can see nothing of the bees at the great height at which the nests are usually found.

Sometimes the stem of the tree rises for a hundred feet without a branch, and is from fifteen to twenty-five feet in circumference. The Dyaks, however, ascend such a tree with ease. They bore holes in the trunk of the tree as high as they can reach, and drive into them wooden pegs rather more than a foot in length. A stout rattan or a bamboo is then driven into the ground, and the ends of the wooden pegs are lashed to it so as to form a sort of ladder, of which the bamboo forms one side, and the trunk of the tree the other. On this slender ladder they ascend, drive in more pegs, and lash them to the bamboo, adding one bamboo after another

until the nest is reached.

Nothing looks more insecure than this geran cut him to pieces with his own hand, primitive ladder, which sways fearfully as the

man ascends, the rattan lashings cracking game which bears a close resemblance to our and creaking as if the whole structure were oming to pieces. It is, however, perfectly joining in the game; and there is another adapted for its purpose, and, armed with a flaming torch, the almost naked Dyak ascends, and fearlessly takes the nest, which he lowers down by means of a rattan.

The nest is generally attacked at night, the Dyaks saying the bees always fly after the sparks that fall from the torch, believing them to be the enemy that is disturbing the nest, the man himself escaping unburt. Some of the tribes have another plan, and before they ascend the tree light beneath it a large fire in which they throw a quantity of green branches. The smoke from these branches drives the bees out of their nest, and stupefies them for a time, so that the combs can be taken without danger.

Of garnes which are, in fact, an imita-tion of war, the Dyaks are equally ignorant, and, although so warlike a people, they do not wrestle, nor box, nor race. It would be expected that a people who trust so much to the sword would exercise with sham weapons, for the purpose of accustoming themselves to the proper management of the sword and shield. This, however, they never do, thinking that all such exercises are unlucky.

They have one game which somewhat resembles our swing, but which partakes in some degree of the nature of a religious ceremony. A strong derrick is erected some forty or fifty feet high, and to this is suspended a stout single rattan, which reaches within a few feet of the ground. The derrick is strengthened by rattan stays lashed to a neighboring tree. The end of the rattan is formed into a large loop.

At some distance from the derrick, just where the end of the rattan describes its circle, a slight bamboo stage is erected. One of the swingers mounts on the stage, draws the rattan to him by means of a string, places his food in the loop, and swings off with as much impetus as he can give himself. As he returns, another leaps on the swing, and sometimes two at a time will do so, until ten or twelve are all swinging away at the same time. Of course, they cannot all put their feet in the loop, but content themselves with clinging to the arms and legs of those who have done so. As they swing, they strike up a monotonous song, which sounds like a dirge. It is, however, merely an invocation to the deities for a plentiful harvest and a good fishing season. As may be imagined, they often get bad falls from those

The boys and youths have a game which is familiar to all gymnasts. The two competitors sit opposite each other on the ground, the soles of their feet being placed in contact. They then grasp a short stick, game, which is very much like the "cock fighting" of English school-boys. The players stand on one foot, holding the other foot in one hand and try to upset each other, or at least to make their antagonists put both feet to the ground.

In "cat's cradle" they are wonderful proficients. Mr. Wallace thought that he could instruct them in the game but found that they knew much more about it than he did. They were acquainted with all the mysteries of the English modification of the game, and produced a vast number of additional changes from the string. Indeed, the Dyaks can do almost anything with a piece of string, and they could well instruct our own conjurors in this branch of legerdemain.

Cock fighting is an ansusement of which the Dyaks are very fond, though they do not indulge in that amusement with the reckless enthusiasm of the Malays. Mr. St. John writes of the birds used for this purpose: "We did not see more than a few of these birds in Dyak houses, but since they are usually kept, when not in training or exercise, closely wrapped in linen bands and hung on nails in a dry place, they might easily escape our notice.

"Not having the fear of police magistrates and Humane Society prosecutions before our eyes, we assisted at one or two brief combats, evidently mere trial matches to assist the calculations of the 'bookmakers,' by testing each bird's pluck and skill. When this object was attained by a few minutes' struggle, held with much secreey in the veranda by the gray light of early morning, the cocks were picked up before any injury was inflicted, and carefully swathed in their bandages, from the midst of which they soothed their ruffled feelings

with an occasional crow of defiance.' Allusion has already been made to the feasts held by the Dyaks on several occasions, and it is only on such festivities that the men ever use their weapons in sham fight. Even in those cases, they do not so employ them by way of practising themselves, but merely because they form part of the movements of the dance. In one of these dances, described by Mr. Keppel, two swords are laid on a mat in the middle of the room, and two men advance toward them from opposite sides, waving their arms, revolving on their toes, and performing various manœuvres with their legs.

As soon as they come to the mat, they suddenly stoop, seize the swords, and go through the movements of actual combat, crossing swords, advancing, retiring, cutting at each other, kneeling at one moment as if to collect force, and then springing up with and each tries to pull the other on his face or renewed energy. Both dancers have pre-to raise him off the ground. There is also a viously studied and practised the various

movemen taneously Someti with the this dan graphic a be used. wished fo " Havii

affirmativ sisted of gong, whi like the and very Chinese. the latter. deep tone. by the D signals at them from music stru were, they time so ad inharmoni "A space of the hou

stepped in bans, long waists des bells were commence rajah, and ent, thereb explained i considered taken in it. an attack which we fi "This ce into the ce

scream, the they descri the same tir wings of a hands, clap with the m music becan were pierce present join Then the m dancers bec thing was we ment by whi "Suddenly

vaded the ro numbers it held our not the cause, w the warriors and suspende dancer a hu basket of ra taken in the were therefo were encased and were or stench was in e resemblance to our ty or thirty players ad there is another uch like the "cock school-boys. The t, holding the other to upset each other, antagonists put both

y are wonderful proought that he could e but found that they ut it than he did. ith all the mysteries ion of the game, and nber of additional Indeed, the Dyaks ith a piece of string, truct our own con-

legerdemain. nusement of which , though they do not nt with the reckless lays. Mr. St. John I for this purpose; han a few of these but since they are in training or ex-in linen bands and place, they might

of police magistrates prosecutions before t one or two brief e trial matches to f the 'bookmakers,' pluck and skill. attained by a few with much secrecy gray light of early e picked up before ted, and carefully heir ruffled feelings of defiance."

been made to the s on several occasuch festivities that weapons in sham uses, they do not so f practising themdance. In one of by Mr. Keppel, two at in the middle of n advance toward des, waving their toes, and performith their legs. e to the mat, they

of actual combat, g, retiring, cutting one moment as if springing up with dancers have prectised the various

movements, each of which they make simul- | covered upon after-examination, when they

Sometimes the sword dance is performed with the shield as well as the sword, and of this dance Mr. Marryat has written so graphic an account that his own words must be used. The guests were asked if they wished for a specimen of the war dance.

"Having expressed our wishes in the affirmative, the music struck up; it consisted of gongs and tom-toms. The Malay gong, which the Dyaks also make use of, is like the Javanese, thick with a broad rim, and very different from the gong of the Chinese. Instead of the clanging noise of the latter, it gives out a muffled sound of a deep tone. The gong and tom-tom are used by the Dyaks and Malays in war, and for signals at night, and the Dyaks procure them from the Malays. I said that the music struck up, for, rude as the instruments were, they modulate the sound, and keep time so admirably, that it was anything but inharmonious.

"A space was now cleared in the centre of the house, and two of the oldest warriors stepped into it. They were dressed in turbans, long loose jackets, sashes round their waists descending to their feet, and small bells were attached to their ankles. They commenced by first shaking hands with the mjah, and then with all the Europeans present, thereby giving us to understand, as was explained to us, that the dance was to be considered only as a spectacle, and not to be taken in its literal sense, as preparatory to an attack upon us, a view of the case in which we fully coincided with them.

"This ceremony being over, they rushed into the centre and gave a most unearthly scream, then poising themselves on one foot they described a circle with the other, at the same time extending their arms like the wings of a bird, and then meeting their hands, clapping them and keeping time with the music. After a little while the music became louder, and suddenly our ears were pierced with the whole of the natives present joining in the hideous war cry. Then the motions and the screams of the dancers became more violent, and everything was working up to a state of excitement by which even we were influenced.

"Suddenly a very unpleasant odor per-"Studenty a very unpeasant oner pervaded the room, already too warm from the numbers it contained. Involuntarily we held our noses, wondering what might be the cause, when we perceived that one of the warriors had stepped into the centre, and suspended round the shoulders of each dancer a human head in a wide-meshed dancer a human head in a wide-meshed basket of rattan. These heads had been aken in the late Sakarran business, and were therefore but a fortnight old. They were encased in a wide network of rattan, and were ornamented with beads. Their

were suspended against the wall, they had been partially baked, and were quite black. The teeth and hair were quite perfect, the features somewhat shrunk, and they were altogether very fair specimens of pickled heads; but our worthy friends required a lesson from the New Zealanders in the art

of preserving.
"The appearance of the heads was a sign for the music to play louder, for the war cry of the natives to be more energetic, and for the screams of the dancers to be more piercing. Their motions now became more rapid, and the excitement in proportion. Their eyes glistened with unwonted brightness, the perspiration dropped down their faces; and thus did yelling, daucing, gongs, and tom-toms become more rapid and more violent every minute, till the dancing warriors were ready to drop. A farewell yell, with emphasis, was given by the surrounding warriors; immediately the music ceased. the dancers disappeared, and the tumultu-ous excitement and noise were succeeded by a dead silence.

"Such was the excitement communicated, that when it was all over we ourselves remained for some time panting to recover our breath. Again we lighted our cheroots,

and smoked for awhile the pipe of peace.

"A quarter of an hour elapsed, and the preparations were made for another martial dance. This was performed by two of the Rajah's sons, the same young men I have previously made mention of. They came forward each having on his arm one of the large Dyak shields, and in the centre of the cleared space were two long swords lying on the floor. The ceremony of shaking hands, as described, preparatory to the former dance, was gone through; the music then struck up, and they entered the arena.

At first they confined themselves to evolutions of defence, springing from one side to the other with wonderful quickness, keep-ing their shields in front of them, falling on one knee, and performing various feats of agility. After a short time, they each seized a sword and then the display was very remarkable, and proved what ugly customers they must be in single conflict. Blows in every direction, feints of every description, were made by both, but invariably received upon the shield. Cumbrous as these shields were, no opening was left; retreating, pursuing, dodging, and striking, the body was never exposed.

"Occasionally, during this performance, the war cry was given by the surrounding warriors, but the combatants held their peace; in fact, they could not afford to open their mouths, lest an opening should be made. It was a most masterly performance, and we were delighted with it."

A rather curious dance was witnessed by steach was intolerable, although, as we dis- Mr. Royle at a feast of which an account will presently be given. First two chiefs each | had thrown a quantity of cloths, so as to altook a sword, and began a maniacal sort of dance, which was intended to be very imposing, but only succeeded in being very ludicrous, owing to the fact that both were too much intoxicated to preserve their balance, and, being of opposite tempers in their cups, one was merry and the other was sulky.

After this performance was over, a tall chief stepped forward with a whip, much like a cat-o'-nine-tails, another produced a human head, and the two began to chase each other round the veranda of the building. Presently, the chief with the head stopped, and with one foot in the air began to pirouette slowly, while he swung the head backward and forward, the chief with the whip lashing vigorously at the spectators, and laughing derisively at each cut.

After a while these performers became too tired to proceed without refreshment, and their place was taken by four or five others carrying blocks of wood having a feather at each end. The foreign guests took these objects to represent canoes, but were told that they were rhinoceros horn-bills, and were thought by all competent judges to be fine works of art. Suddenly a number of gongs were beaten, and over the mass of human beings arose swords, heads, rhinoceros hornbills, and cat-o'-nine-tails in profusion, the Dyaks being for the time half large as a cocoa-nut, slightly oval, and is mad with excitement.

It was remarkable that in this wild scene no harm was done, no blow was struck in anger, and no quarrel took place. De-corum was maintained throughout the whole of the festival, though not one of the revellers was sober, and then, as Mr. Boyle remarks, "a scene which, according to all precedent, should have been disgusting, turned out to loss of blood. be pleasantly amusing.

This feast was a very good example of a Dyak revel. It was given by the chief Gasing, who was gorgeously attired for the oc-casion in an old consular uniform coat, covered with gold lace, the top of a dragoon's helmet tied on his head with a handkerchief, a brass regimental breastplate on his forehead, and a plated tureen cover on his breast. This tureen cover, by the way, was the most valued of Gasing's possessions, and one which was madly envied by all the neighboring chiefs. Being a tall, thin man, the effect of his naked, lean, yellow legs, appearing from beneath all this splendor, was re:narkable.

He had prepared his long house carefully for the festival. He had erected a bamboo railing on the edge of the veranda, as a necessary precaution against accidents, for the veranda was at a considerable height from the ground, and the guests are all exlow the chiefs who sat under them to be sheltered from the rays of the sun.

For this festival Gasing had been making preparations for months past, half-starying himself in order to collect the requisite amount of provisions, and being likely to find himself rather deeply in debt before the preparations were completed. Unfortunately for the English guests, the smell of Dyak cookery is anything but agreeable. and one of their favorite articles of food, the fruit called the durian, exhales a most intolerable odor, so that, if they had not been furnished with plenty of tobacco, they would have been obliged to retire from the

The Dyaks roast fowls without removing the feathers, tear them joint from joint, and so eat them. They have a most extraordinary liking for viands in a nearly putrid state, such as fish or molluscs in a very advanced state of decomposition, eggs black from age, and rotten fruit, the chief being the durian, which smells like all the other dishes put together, but with a sort of peculiar fragrance of its own. Even foreigners have learned to like the durian, but they have not found that it acclimatizes them to the bad eggs, burnt feathers, and very high

This very remarkable fruit is about as covered with a thick, tough skin, armed with sharp, short, and stout spines, the bases of which touch each other. The skin is 80 strong, that even when it falls, as it always does when ripe, from a considerable height, it does not break, and the spines are so sharp and hard, that, if a durian falls on a man, it inflicts a very severe wound, and causes great

When possible it is eaten fresh, as it falls ripe from the tree, but it is often cooked while still green, and, when especially plentiful, is preserved in jars by means of salt. In this state its natural odor is very greatly increased, and the very opening of a jar of preserved durians is enough to drive a stranger to the country out of the room.

Mr. Wallace gives a very interesting account of the durian, mentioning that, although for some time the odor of the fruit completely deterred him from tasting it, he once found a ripe durian just fallen from the tree, overcame his repugnance to the fruit, tried it, ate it, and became from that moment a confirmed durian eater. The following passage contains his description of the peculiar flavor of the durian:

"The five cells are satiny white within, and are each filled with an oval mass of creamcolored pulp, embedded in which are two or from the ground, and the guests are all expected to be very unsteady on their feet, even if they can stand at all. From the top sistence and flavor are indescribable of the rail to the caves of the veranda he rich, butter-like custard, highly flavored

with alr it, but flavor tl sauce, b ties.

ness in sesses, b neither feels the for it is nausea you eat stop. I tion, wo Mr. V

of the acquaint only, wh would c which h fruits. Their worthily

color lik

forcibly negroes traveller. the stron liquid in vivid des taken in cocoa-nu in solutio sugar an the victin tion, as i starch an cavenne on the no but a ver Strang

retains t lions of h greater lu ing it wi kept in h about in a tinually e ished, so empty ves Even if

the festive they woul who seen make eve "No Deli power to one of the clined to e

"The p soon felt i absolutely the girls w of cloths, so as to alt under them to be of the sun.

sing had been makonths past, half-stary. collect the requisite and being likely to ply in debt before the mpleted. Unfortuguests, the smell of hing but agreeable, e articles of food, the exhales a most intol-they had not been y of tobacco, they

ed to retire from the

ls without removing joint from joint, and re a most extraordiin a nearly putrid olluscs in a very adposition, eggs black ruit, the chief being ls like all the other with a sort of peculn. Even foreigners he durian, but they acclimatizes them to thers, and very high

le fruit is about as slightly oval, and is ugh skin, armed with spines, the bases of er. The skin is so it falls, as it always considerable height, ie spines are so sharp ian falls on a man, it und, and causes great

eaten fresh, as it falls t it is often cooked when especially plenrs by means of salt. odor is very greatly opening of a jar of enough to drive a out of the room.

very interesting ac-iening that, although r of the fruit comm tasting it, he once ust fallen from the gnance to the fruit, ne from that moment . The following pasption of the peculiar

ny white within, and val mass of creamin which are two or size of chestnuts. le part, and its con-indescribable. ed, highly flavored

with almonds, gives the best general idea of infatuation of their victims, and I need it, but intermingled with it come wafts of scarcely say that the prettiest were the flavor that call to mind cream cheese, onion sauce, brown sherry, and other incongrui-

"Then there is a rich glutinous smooth-"Then there is a rich glutinous smoothness in the pulp which nothing else possesses, but which adds to its delicacy. It is neither acid, nor sweet, nor juicy, yet one feels the want of none of these qualities, for it is perfect as it is. It produces no nausea or other bad effect, and the more you eat of it the less you feel inclined to the last the last transfer the process. stop. In fact, to eat durians is a new sensation, worth a voyage to the East to experience.'

Mr. Wallace, in summing up the merits of the various fruits with which we are acquainted, says that if he had to fix on two only, which would represent the very per-fection of flavor and refreshing qualities, he would choose the durian and the orange, which he terms the king and queen of

Their national drink, called "tuak," is worthily matched with the viands. It is in color like thin milk, and its odor has been forcibly compared to that of five hundred negroes drunk in a slave-pen. The same traveller, having fortified his palate with the strongest tobacco, drank some of the liquid in honor of his host, and gives a very vivid description of its flavor. When first taken into the mouth, it gives the idea of cocoa-nut milk gone very sour, and holding in solution a considerable quantity of brown sugar and old cheese. When it is swallowed, the victim is conscious of a suffocating sensation, as if the liquid were thickened with starch and a great quantity of the strongest cayenne pepper, the general effect produced on the novice being comparable to nothing but a very bad attack of sea sickness.

Strange to say, this abominable liquid retains the strongest hold on three millions of human beings, who can conceive no sreater luxury than the privilege of drinking it without stint. At their feasts it is kept in huge bathing jars, and is handed about in all kinds of vessels, which are con-tinually emptied and sent back to be replenished, so that a continual stream of full and empty vessels passes from and to the large

Even if the warriors who are invited to the festival were to feel inclined to sobriety, they would be forced to drink by the women, who seem to think themselves bound to make every man completely intoxicated.
"No Delilah of Europe better knows her power to make a fool of a strong man than one of these Dyak syrens, nor is more inclined to exert her fascinations.

"The presence of the female element was soon felt in the noise and confusion, which Once, when Mr. St. John had travelled absolutely seemed to increase. Several of from the Sibuyan Dyaks to the Bukars, he

scarcely say that the prettiest were the most culpable. But ugly or beautiful, old or young, all instantly employed their most cunning arts in enticing the bravest and most famous warriors to drink and drink

again.
"We saw a little beauty seat herself lovingly beside a tall fellow with a simple face and honest eyes, whom she coaxed to toast her from a large jar which she offered to his lips, until he fairly fell backward upon the floor. This satisfactory conclusion attained, his tormentor, who, we heard, was affianced to him, ran screaming with laughter to bring seven other wretches as mischievous as herself to jeer at the vanquished lover. Raising her hopes to sport of a higher order, she shortly after brought her jar to the spot where we sat, in the hope, no doubt, of beguiling the white men into the same condition as her other admirers; but in Europe we are accustomed to run the gauntlet of more dangerous fascinations, and she relinquished the attempt in despair."

Mr. St. John mentions that the men are in no way behind the women in their efforts to seduce their guests to intoxication, and it is their greatest pride to have as much tuak drunk as possible, to drink their own share and remain comparatively sober, while all their guests are laid prostrate and insensible. In fact, if we substitute punch and port for tuak, and an open veranda for a closed dining-room, there is little difference between the hospitality of the present Dyak chief and that of the average English

squire of the last century.

A chief, for example, who prides himself on his strong head, will sit before a huge jar of tuak, and pledge every one around. For every one whom he serves he drinks one cup himself, and it is his ambition to keep his seat after all his companions are insensible. Of course, it is impossible that any man can drink an equal amount with ten or twelve others, and it is most likely that he forces the tuak on them so fast that they are soon rendered incapable of seeing whether their host drinks or not. They are very proud of being fresh on the following morning, and boast that although their guests, who belonged to another tribe, had severe headaches, they themselves suffered nothing at all.

It is partly by means of appealing to this pride that the girls are able to make the men drink to the except which has been mentioned, and they derive so much assusement from exercising their power that they lose no opportunity that falls in their way, and essay their blandishments even when

there is no definite feast.

the girls were so charming as to excuse the and his guides were received, as usual, in

the head house. While the English guests were making their tollet, two young Dyak girls came very gently up the ladder and slipped into the chamber. Now the head house is, as the reader may remember, the bachelors' hall, and consequently the girls had no business there. So, pretending not to see them, the white men proceeded with their toilets, and quietly watched their proceedings.

The two girls, after glancing cautiously at the strangers, and thinking themselves unobserved, made their way to the Dyak guides, each having in her hands a vast bowl of fresh tuak, which they offered to the visitors. The young men, knowing their object, declined to drink, and thereby drew on themselves a battery of mixed blandishments and reproaches. Above all, they were entreated not to inflict on the girls the shame of refusing their gift, and making them take it back, to be laughed at by all their friends.

Cajolery, honied words, and caresses having been resisted, they tried the effect of ridicule, and their taunts succeeded where their coaxings failed. "What!" said they, "are the Sibuyans so weak-headed as to be afraid of drinking Bukar tuak?" This touched the visitors on a very tender point. The Sibuyans specially pride themselves on the strength of their heads and of their tuak, and a refusal to drink was thus made tantamount to a confession of inferiority in both respects. So they raised the huge bowls to their lips and were allowed as

peace until they had drained the last drops, when their tempters ran away laughing, knowing that in a very short time their two victims would be senseless.

It is a most extraordinary thing that the Dyak women, most of whom do not drink at all, and very few drink even moderately, take such a delight in forcing the men into intoxication. The young girls are the most successful temptresses. They take advantage of their youth and beauty, and employ all their fascinations to inveigle the men into drinking. No man is see force the

into drinking. No man is safe from them. Their brothers, friends, and even their betrothed, fall, as we have seen, victims to their blandishments. They will make up to perfect strangers, get up a flirtation, and lavish all their enchantments upon them like Circe of old, until they have reduced their helpless admirers to a state little better than that of the mythological swine. Even after the men have sunk on the ground, and are incapable of raising the cup to their lips, the women think their task not quite completed, and pour the tuak down the throats of the helpless men. In the "Dyak Feast," which the artist has so finely drawn on the opposite page, the appeal and dresses of these Eastern syrens are illustrated.

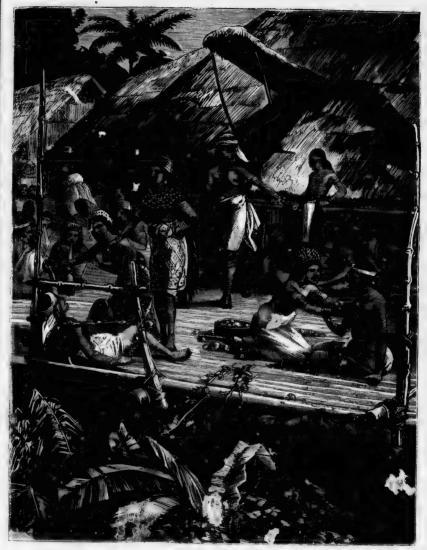
The Sibuyans specially pride themselves on the strength of their heads and of their tuak, and a refusal to drink was thus made tantamount to a confession of inferiority in both respects. So they raised the huge bowls to their lips, and were allowed no

ained the last drops, ran away laughing, short time their two

short time their two
sem.

Inary thing that the
hom do not drink at
k even moderately,
oreing the men into
ggirls are the most
They take advanbeauty, and employ
o inveigle the men
is safe from them.
ds, and even their
tve seen, victims to
hey will make up to
ap a flirtation, and
tments upon them
they have reduced
to a state little betnythological swine,
have sunk on the
le of raising the cup
think their task not
our the tuak down
bless men. In the
e artist has so finely
sage, the appeal and
syrens are illustra-

occasions they give r drunkenness, the and except at these y women, they are e betel-nut supplyxicating liquor,



A DYAK TEAST.
(See pages 1145, 1146.)

ARRIAL HOT TURE uses -OUS M MANU SMELT THE B THE archi represented In the fi on posts, height, and by climbing swers the dwelling in cally the v which is o One of the John, was thirty feet I five hundre Throught house runs room, which at the side at different fall enty such rone long he member entary occup tacit conser opposite the their intimating them. I long house is others, and it considered lesser chiefs

CHAPTER CXVIII.

BORNEO. - Continued.

ARCHITECTURE - MANUFACTURES.

ARRIAL HOUSES - THE LONG HOUSE AND ITS ARRANGEMENTS - THE ORANG-KAYA'S ROOM - STEUG-TURE OF THE FLOORING - REASONS FOR THE DYAK ARCHITECTURE - THE NIPA PALM AND ITS USES - THE ATAPS - SALT AND SUGAR MANUFACTURE - ERECTION OF THE FIRST POST - YARI-OUS MODES OF PROCURING FIRE - CONSTRUCTION OF THE DYAK BRIDGE - A NARROW ESCAPE -MANUFACTURES - THE ADZE AXE OF THE DYAKS -- ITS ANALOGY WITH THE BLAYAI AXE --SMELTING AND FORGING IRON—BASKET MAKING—THE DYAK MAT—SPLITTING THE RATTAN— THE BORNEAN KNIFE, AND MODE OF USING IT - THE SACRED JARS AND THEIR PROPERTIES.

represented on page 1153.

In the first place, the houses are all built on posts, some of them twenty feet in height, and the mode of access to them is by climbing up a notched pole, which an-swers the purpose of a ladder. The chief dwelling in every village, and indeed practi-cally the village itself, is the long house, which is of wonderfully large dimensions. One of these houses, measured by Mr. St. John, was more than five hundred and thirty feet long, and was inhabited by nearly five hundred people.

Throughout the entire length of the house runs the broad veranda or common room, which is open to all the members, and at the side are rooms partitioned off for the different families, as many as sixty or seventy such rooms being sometimes seen in one long house. Although the veranda is common ground to all the tribe, and in it the members go through their various sed-entary occupations, each family occupies by tacit consent the portion of the veranda opposite their own rooms.

These rooms are strictly private, and none except the members of the family, or their intimate friends, would think of entering them. The chief or Orang-kaya of the long house has a much larger room than the others, and the space in front of his room is

The architecture of the Dyaks is very peculiar. The reader may find a Dyak village most entirely by the old men and warriors of known courage.

One of the rooms inhabited by the Orangkaya was visited by Mr. Boyle, and was not an attractive apartment. On each side of the entrance there was a piece of furniture somewhat resembling an old English plate-rack, upon the lower shelf of which was placed a flat stone. In spite of the heat, which was terrific, a large fire was burning on the stone, and on the range above were wood, rice, pots, and other utensils. There was no chimney to the house, but a sort of flap in the roof was lifted up, and kept open by a notched stick. This flap answered both for window and chimney, and when it was closed the room was in total darkness, be-side being at once filled with smoke. The height of the chamber was barely

seven feet, and the space was rendered still more limited by the weapons, girdles, mats, mosquito curtains, strings of boars' tusks, aprons, and other property, that hung from the rafters. The sides were adorned with a quantity of English and Dutch crockery, each piece being in a separate rattan basket and suspended from the wall. The house being an old one, the smell was abominable; and the Orang-kaya's chamber was, on the whole, a singularly uncomfortable residence.

A number of fire-places, varying according to the population of the house, are arconsidered to be devoted to the use of the ranged along the veranda, and, as a general lesser chiefs and councillors, and, although rule, one of the primitive ladders already

mentioned is placed at either end, so that when a visitor enters the house, he sees throughout its entire length, the range of his eye being only interrupted by the posts, which after supporting the floor pass upward and serve also to support the roof. Outside this veranda extends another, called the outer veranda. It has no roof, and is exposed to the blazing sunbeams. It is used, not as a habitation, but as a kind of storehouse and drying ground.

As the flooring is made of bamboo, the Dyaks can easily, if they choose, keep the interior of their rooms clean. This, however, they seldom choose to do, limiting their cleanliness to the simple process of sweeping any offal through the floor so as to fall under the house. They never think of removing it after it has fallen, so that by degrees the heaps of refuse become higher and higher, and gradually diminish the distance between the floor of the house and the soil beneath. In some of the older houses, these heaps of rubbish have increased to such an extent that when the pigs are grubbing in them their backs touch the bamboo flooring of the house.

The reason for building the Dyak houses on piles are several, the chief being that such a house acts as a fort in case of attack. The custom of building on piles is universal, but only those tribes that are liable to invasion employ piles of the height which have been mentioned. This mode of architecture also protects the inhabitants from floods and from the intrusion of reptiles. The Dyaks do not use the bow and arrow, and before they learned the use of fire-arms, a house built on piles some twenty or thirty feet in height made a very secure fort, which could not be fired, and which exposed the storming party to certain and heavy loss. Even since the English have taken up their residence in Borneo, some of these houses, belonging to revolted chiefs, have given great trouble before they could be taken, artillery appearing to be the only weapon to which they at once succumb.

The piles are made of the hardest ironwood, and are very thick, much thicker than is needed for the support of the house. The reason for this strength and thickness is, that in case of attack, the assailing party dash under the house, protecting themselves from missiles by a canoe which they turn keel upward, and hold over their heads while they chop at the posts, so as to bring the house and its defenders down together. If the posts are but moderately stout, they will sometimes succeed; but if they are very thick and strong, the defenders can remove part of the floor, and throw on the attacking party weights sufficiently heavy to break through their roof and kill them.

It is probable that the custom of building

water. The Dyaks copied this plan, and became so used to it that when they built inland they still continued the practice. The same theory a counts for the habit already mentioned of throwing all kinds of offal through the open bamboo flooring. This custom was cleanly enough when the houses were built over the water, but became a source of utter pollution when they were erected on land, and the offal was allowed to accumulate below, undisturbed except by the

dogs and pigs.

Most of these houses are built rather high up the rivers, especially upon the tributary streams; and booms, composed of bamboos and rattans, are fastened across the stream below them, so as to hinder the advance of the enemy's canoes. The thatch, as well as a considerable portion of the material, is obtained from the nipa palm, a tree which to the Borneans is almost a necessity of existence, and supplies a vast number of their wants. It grows in large numbers at the water's edge; its huge leaves, fifteen or twenty feet in length, projecting like the fronds of vast ferns.

When dried, the leaves are woven into a sort of matted fabric called " ataps, " which is used sometimes as thatch, sometimes as the indispensable covering of boats, and sometimes even as walls of houses, the mats being fastened from post to post. By the use of these ataps certain portions of the roof can be raised on sticks in trap-door fashion, so as to answer the double purpose of admitting light and securing ventilation.

Various other mats are made of the nips palm leaf, and so are hats and similar articles. The entire leaf is often used in canoes as an extemporized sail, the leaf being fastened upright, and driving the boat onward at a very fair pace. Besides these uses the nipa leaves, when young, are dressed as vegetables, and are both agreeable and nutritious, and the fine inner leaves, when dried, are rolled round tobacco so as to form cigars.

From the root and stem a coarse sugar is made, which is used for all general purposes; for, although the sugar-cane grows magnificently in Borneo, the natives only consider it in the light of a sweetmeat. It seems rather strange that sugar and salt should be extracted from the same plant, but such is really the case, and salt-making is one of the principal occupations of some of the tribes.

They gather great quantities of the nips root, and burn them. The ashes are then swept together, and thrown into shallow pans half filled with water, so that the salt is dissolved and remains in the water, while the charcoal and woody particles float at the surface, and can be skimmed off. When the water is clear, the pans are placed over the fire and the water driven off by evaporation, houses on piles is partly derived from the after which the salt, which remains on the Malay fashion of erecting buildings over the bottom and sides of the pans, is scraped of

It is of acter, bu and ever ecuston from Sia their ow serving fish.

The n similar l and are t ascendin is always and deep

In the projected always ac precisely other par one of the had been ground, a reader n trunk of t can be for rattan la bottom of lashings drop into atoms. The san

the Quor

principle

the victim

builder w

house, and plan. Th was suspe human be the botton to death w These 1 bridges, w so apparer to sustain of so sligh seems to in these hous steep hill, the hill, a supported

considered One of illustration gives a g Near the f making fir upon anot Kaffirs and however, mode. In: stick to re use instead very dry w

to trees.

fastened a

pied this plan, and hat when they built ed the practice. The or the habit already g all kinds of offal aboo flooring. This ugh when the houses vater, but became a ion when they were e offal was allowed to sturbed except by the

are built rather high upon the tributary mposed of bamboos d across the stream nder the advance of he thatch, as well as f the material, is obalm, a tree which to a necessity of existast number of their rge numbers at the leaves, fifteen or projecting like the

es are woven into a lled " ataps, " which hatch, sometimes as ring of boats, and s of houses, the mats st to post. By the portions of the roof in trap-door fashion, ble purpose of adng ventilation. re made of the nipa

and similar articles. used in canoes as an leaf being fastened e boat onward at a these uses the nipa e dressed as vegeeable and nutritious. es, when dried, are as to form cigars.

em a coarse sugar or all general pursugar-cane grows of a sweetmeat. It nat sugar and salt the same plant, but and salt-making is pations of some of

ntities of the nipa The ashes are then rown into shallow ter, so that the salt in the water, while particles float at the ned off. When the re placed over the off by evaporation, ch remains on the pans, is scraped off.

It is of a coarse and decidedly bitter char- one side of it, and a small hole on the other, acter, but it is much liked by the natives, and even the European settlers soon become accustomed to it. Salt is imported largely from Siam, but the Borneans prefer that of their own manufacture for home use, reserving the Siamese salt for preserving fish.

The nipa and the mangrove grow in similar localities and on the same streams, and are useful to those who are engaged in ascending rivers, as they know that the water is always shallow where the mangrove grows, and deep near the nipa.

In the olden times, when a long house was projected, the erection of the first post was always accompanied by a human sacrifice, precisely as has been mentioned of several other parts of the world. Mr. St. John saw one of these houses where a human sacrifice had been made. A deep hole was dug in the ground, and the huge post, which, as the reader may remember, is cut from the trunk of the hardest and heaviest wood which can be found, was suspended over it by rattan lashings. A girl was laid at the bottom of the hole, and at a given signal the lashings were cut, permitting the post to drop into the hole, and crush the girl to atoms.

The same traveller saw a ceremony among the Quop Dyaks, which showed that the principle of sacrifice still remained, though the victim was of a different character. The builder wanted to raise a flag-staff near his house, and proceeded on exactly the same plan. The excavation was made, the pole was suspended by a rattan, but, instead of a human being, a fowl was bound and laid at the bottom of the hole, so as to be crushed to death when the lashings were cut.

These houses are often approached by bridges, which are very curious structures, so apparently fragile that they seem unable to sustain the weight of a human being, and of so slight a character that to traverse them seems to imply the skill of a rope dancer. As these houses are often built on the side of a steep hill, a pole is laid from the platform to the hill, and, if it be a tolerably long one, supported by several rattan ropes fastened to trees. A very slight bamboo handrail is fastened a little above it, and the bridge is considered as complete.

illustration No. 2, on the 1153d page, which gives a good idea of the height of the ouse and its general style of architecture. Near the foreground is a man engaged in making fire by means of twirling one stick upon another, precisely as is done by the Kaffirs and other savage tribes. There is, however, one improvement on the usual

bored down to the groove.

When the Dyak wishes to procure fire, he places the wooden slab on the ground with the groove undermost, and inserts his pointed stick in the little hole and twirls it rapidly between his hands. The revolution of the stick soon causes a current of air to pass through the groove, and in consequence the fire is rapidly blown up as soon as the wood is heated to the proper extent. In consequence of this arrangement, much labor is saved, as the firemaker is not obliged to stop at intervals to blow upon the just kindled dust which collects in the little hole around the firestick. Some tribes merely cut two cross grooves on the lower piece of wood, and insert the point of the firestick at their intersection.

The Saribas and Sakarrang Dyaks have a very remarkable instrument for obtaining fire, called by them "besi-api." It consists of a metal tube, about three inches in length, with a piston working nearly air-tight in it. A piece of dry stuff by way of tinder is introduced into the tube, the piston rod is slapped smartly down and withdrawn with a jerk, when the tinder is seen to be on fire. Europeans find that to manage the besi-api is as difficult a task as to procure fire by two sticks. The reader may remember that a machine of similar construction is sold at the philosophical instrument makers, and that a piece of German tinder is lighted by the sudden compression of the air.

Another form of the besi-api is thus described by Mr. Boyle: - " Among some of the Dyak tribes there is a manner of striking fire much more extraordinary. The instrument used is a slender cube of lead, which fits tightly in a case of bamboo. The top of the cube is hollowed into a cup, and when fire is required this cup is filled with tinder, the leaden piston is held upright in the left hand, the bamboo case is thrust sharply down over it, as quickly withdrawn, and the tinder is found to be lighted. The natives say that no metal but lead will produce the effect."

The same traveller gives an account of another mode of ob! ding fire: - "Another interesting phenomenon these natives showed us, which, though no doubt easily explained on scientific principles, appeared One of these sin ple bridges is shown in very remarkable. As we sat in the veranda my cheroot went out, and I asked one of the Dyaks squatted at our side to give me a

light.
"He took from his box of bamboo a piece of pitcher and a little tinder; put the lat-ter upon the pitcher and held it under his thumb, struck sharply against the bamboo, and instantly offered me the tinder lighted. mode. Instead of merely causing a pointed sick to revolve upon another, the Dyaks them obtain fire by this means, but failed use instead of the lower stick a thick slab of to make out a reasonable theory for the revery dry wood, with a deep groove cut on sult."

Even rivers are bridged over in the same like the hilts of the Dyak swords, is made simple, but really efficacious manner, as the of a soft and light wood, while the upper approaches to the houses. The mountain streams alternate greatly in depth and rapidity, and it is no uncommon occurrence for a heavy rain to raise a river some forty feet in its deep and rocky channel, and even after a single heavy shower the fords are rendered impassable. In consequence of this uncer-tainty, the Dyaks throw across the chasms such bridges as are described by Mr. St.

" How light and elegant do these suspension-bridges look! One, in particular, I will attempt to describe. It was a broad part of the stream, and two fine old trees hung over the water opposite to each other. Long bamboos lashed together formed the main portion, and were fastened by smaller ones to the branches above; railings on either side were added to give greater strength and security, yet the whole affair appeared so flimsy, and was so far above the stream, that when we saw a woman and child pass over it we drew our breath until they were safe on the other side. And yet we knew that

they were secure. "I have often passed over them myself; they are of the width of one bamboo, but the side railings give one confidence. Accidents do happen from carelessly allowing

the rattan lashings to rot. Once, when pressed for time, I was passing rapidly across with many men following close behind me, when it began to sway most unpleasantly, and crack! crack! was heard as several of the supports gave way. Most of my men were fortunately not near the centre, and relieved the bridge of their weight by clinging to the branches, otherwise those who were with me in the middle would have been precipitated on the rocks below. After that, we always passed singly over such neg-lected bridges."

THE domestic manufactures of the Dyaks are of a very high order, and display a wonderful amount of artistic taste. The mode of building canoes has already been mentioned, but the principal tool of the canoe maker is too curious to be passed over. The implement in question is singularly ingenious, combining within itself a number of qualifications. The general appearance of it can be seen by reference to the illustration, which is drawn from a specimen presented to me by C. T. C. Grant, Esq.

It is apparently a most insignificant tool, hardly worthy the hands of a child; and yet, when wielded by a Dyak, it produces the most remarkable results. The handle is only ten inches in length, and the blade measures barely an inch and a quarter across the widest part. The handle is made of two portions, united with a strong

part, which carries the head, is made of a hard, strong, and moderately elastic wood.



ADZE-AXE.

The head is made of iron, mostly imported, and is in all probability formed on the model of a stone implement that was formerly in use. As the reader may see, it is fastened to the wood by rattan, exactly as the stone heads of the Polynesian axes are held in their places by lashings of plaited sinnet.

But here the resemblance ends. The head of the Polynesian axe is immovable, whereas the essence of the Bornean axe is that the head can be shifted at will, by taking it out of the rattan lashing, reversing and replacing it, so that it forms an axe or an adze, as the user desires. The reader may remember that the Banyai tribe of Southern Africa have an axe made on a similar principle, though in their case the reversal is accomplished by cutting holes at right angles to each other, through which the shank of the iron head can be passed. (See p. 364, figs. 4, 5.)

With this tiny instrument the Dyaks not only shape their planks, but cut down the largest trees with a rapidity that an English workman could scarcely equal, in spite of the superiority of his axe. They have a very curious method of clearing away timber from a space of ground. They first cut away all the underwood with their parangs, or choppers, and then, with their little axes, cut the larger trees rather more than half through, leaving the largest to the last. This tree is then felled, and, as all the trees are bound together with rattans and other creepers, it brings down all the others in

Although the iron which the Dyaks use is lashing of rattan, backed up by cement, mostly imported, they are capable of smelt-The lower portion, which is curved exactly ing their own metal by a very simple procyak swords, is made d, while the upper head, is made of a rately clastic wood,



Lie

n, mostly imported, ormed on the model at was formerly in at was formerly in see, it is fastened tactly as the stone axes are held in figuration of plaited sinnet. It is that the amovable, whereas an axe is that the lil, by taking it out ersing and replacan axe or an adze, he reader may retribe of Southern lade on a similar rease the reversal ng holes at right trough which the n be passed. (See

ent the Dyaks not but cut down the ty that an English qual, in spite of the Phey have a very cing away timber l. They first cut vith their parangs, their little axes, or more than half st to the last. This s all the trees are ttans and other all the others in

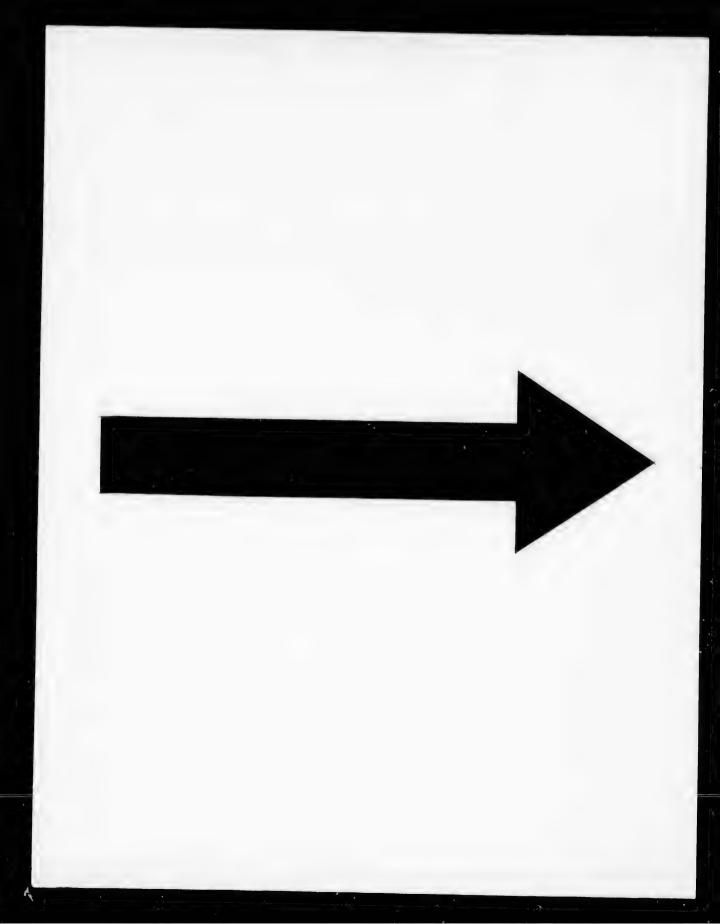
the Dyaks use is capable of smeltvery simple proc-



(1.) A DYAK VILLAGE. (See page 1149.)



(2.) A DYAK HOUSE. (See page 1151.)



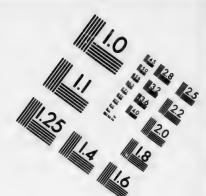
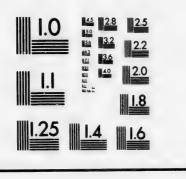


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

Will St.



small pit sides with air can in bellows. and there charcoal and means od in a short though a making ligenerally profession ing by blades, are of the vil The batter of the vil called tar cut into a inch widing here.

and red.
duce a country terms a square, the square.
Althous tambok is strips of a fastened of the botto

strips of dastened of fastened of fastened of the botto similar mait to star thicker strup the sic cross-strip the top of two similar edges. It elastic, strants the Tamboks are extens lays, and to Mats of

lays, and to Mats of ingenious is in my po of Dyak w wide, and narrow st those of the basket. To such skill s pattern. I by a numb in diamete extensions lioned.

Around ders, each whole is ed

ess. By way of a crucible, they dig a small pit in the ground, and perforate the sides with holes, through which currents of air can be passed by means of the native bellows. Charcoal is first placed in the pit, and then the ore, well broken, is laid on the brought over to England, and employed as a floor-cloth; and, although cut in one or two broadly and the proposed and the p and then the ore, well broken, is laid on the charcoal; and so the Dyak workmen proceed to fill the pit with alternate layers of charcoal and ore. A light is then introduced by coal and ore. A light is then introduced by means of a hole, the bellows are worked, and in a short time the metal is smelted. Although each man is generally capable of making his own tools on a pinch, there is generally a man in each village who is a professional blacksmith, and makes his living by forging spear heads and parang blades, as well as by keeping the weapons of the villagers in repair.

The basket work of the Dyaks is exceedingly good, color as well as form being studied in the manufacture. The basket called tambok is made of the nipa palm leaf, cut into strips not quite the twelfth of an inch wide, and stained alternately yellow and red. These are interwoven so as to produce a considerable variety of pattern, somewhat resembling that which is used in the sarongs and other woven fabrics. These patterns are nearly all combinations of the square, the zigzag, and the diamond; the last form, however, being nothing more than the square turned diagonally.

Although made in cylindrical form, the tambok is slightly squared by means of four strips of hard red wood, which are tightly fastened to the basket by rattan lashing. The bottor: of the basket is squared in a similar manner, so as to flatten it and enable it to stand upright, and is defended by thicker strips of wood than those which run up the sides. The lid is guarded by two cross-strips of wood, and both the lid and the top of the basket are strengthened by two similar strips bound firmly round their edges. This basket is exceedingly light, elastic, strong, easily carried, and fully warrants the estimation in which it is held. Tamboks are made of almost all sizes, and are extensively used by the Dyaks, the Ma-

lays, and the European colonists.

Mats of various kinds are made by this ingenious people. One of these mats, which is in my possession, is a wonderful specimen of Dyak work. It is nine feet long and five wide, and is made of rattan, cut into very narrow strips — not wider, indeed, than those of the enlarged patterns of the tambok largely used throughout the whole of this basket. These strips are interwoven with such skill as to form an intricate and artistic pattern. The centre of the mat is occupied by a number of spiral patterns, two inches in diameter, the spiral being produced by extensions of the zigzag already men-

places by chair-legs, is on the whole as firm as when it was made. As the rattan has not been dyed, the color of the mat is a pale yel-low; but the pattern comes out with wonderful distinctness, just as is the case with good English table linen.

Like all uncivilized people, the Dyaks never hurry themselves about their manu-factures. Time is no object to them; there is none of the competition which hurries European workmen through life. women, who make these beautiful mats, go about their work in a very leisurely way, interweaving the slender rattan atrips with infinite care, and certainly producing work

that is thorough and sound.

The rattan is split in rather a curious manner. On account of the direction and length of its fibre, it will split almost ad infinitum into perfectly straight strips of very great length, so that the only difficulty is to cut the slips of precisely the same width. The knives with which this task is performed are rather peculiar. One of them has already been described on page 1125, as an appendage to the Bornean sword; but there is another which is so remarkable that

it deserves a separate description.

The handle is bent at an angle like that of the parang-latok, described and figured on the page to which reference was just made. In order to produce this effect, the handle is made of two pieces of wood, the ends of which are bevelled off, so that when they are placed together they produce the angular form which is desired. The two pieces are fitted very neatly together, and the joint is strengthened by a thick coating of cement. The handle is further ornamented by having a long piece of brass wire coiled tightly round it, and is finished off at the end with the same kind of cement as that which is used at the joint.

Not only does the handle resemble that of the parang, but there is a great resemblance between the blades of the sword and the knife. The blade of this knife has been forged out of a square bar of steel, which has been first flattened, and then beaten out into the slightly curved form which is so

part of the world.

As is the case with the sword knife already described, this implement is used by putting the handle under the left arm and holding the blade firmly in front of the body, while both hands are at liberty to press the end of the rattan against the edge of the knife, and Around the spirals are three distinct borders, each with a definite pattern, and the In spite of the comparative roughness of the whole is edged by a sort of selvage, which manufacture, which dispenses with a finish

and polish, the knife can take a very fine edge; and my own specimen, after having suffered rather rough usage, is so sharp that I have just mended a pen with it, and cut a piece of note paper edgewise. The blade of this kuife is eleven inches in length.

In order to preserve the sharpness of the edge, the Dyak carries the knife in a sheath made simply of a small joint of bamboo, closed at the lower end of the natural knot, and carefully wrapped at each end with rat-tan to prevent it from splitting.

The cotton fabrics are entirely made by the women, from the preparation of the thread to the weaving of the stuff. They beat out the cotton with small sticks, and, by means of a rude sort of wheel, spin it out into thread very rapidly. They cannot compete with the English manufacturer in fineness of thread, but in durability there is no comparison between the two, the Dyak thread being stronger than that made in England, and the dye with which it is stained being so permanent that no fabric wears so well as that which is of native manufacture.

Although we can hardly rank the Dyak jars among native manufactures, they play so important a part in the domestic life of these tribes that they cannot be passed over

without some notice.

The Dyaks have no real currency, and can scarcely be made to understand it. They perfectly comprehend direct barter, but the secondary barter by means of a circulating medium is, as a rule, beyond an ordinary Dyak. He will take some goods to the market for the purpose of exchanging them for some article which he wants; but he has no idea of selling his goods for money, and buying with that money the needed article.

The reader may remember that brass guns have already been mentioned as a sort of currency. These are nothing more or less than cannon of various sizes, which are valued by weight, and form a sort of standard by which prices are measured, like the English pound or the French franc. They are bored to carry balls from one to two pounds weight, and, though regarded chiefly in the light of money, are serviceable weapons, and can throw a ball to a considerable distance. There is an advantage about this kind of currency. It is not easily stolen, and outside the chiefs' houses may be seen rows of brass guns lying on the ground unmounted and owing their safety to their weight.

There is also a second standard of value among the Dyaks. This is the Jar, an in- selves.

stitution which, I believe, is unique. These jars are of earthenware, and as far as can be judged by appearance, must have been of Chinese manufacture. They are of different descriptions, and vary greatly in value. The commonest jars, called Naga or Dragon jars, are worth about seven or eight pounds, and derive their name from figures of dragons rudely scrawled on them. They are about two feet in height. The Rusa jar, which is next higher in value, is worth from ten to fifteen pounds, according to its quality, and is known by the figures of the Rusa deer which are drawn upon it.

But the most costly is the Gusi, which is worth almost any sum that the owner chooses to demand forit. The Guei jar is neither large nor pretty. It is of a dark olive green color, and about two feet in height. These jars are very scarce, and are considered as being worth on an average about five hundred pounds. Seven or eight hundred pounds have been paid for a Gusi jar, and there have been one or two so valuable that many thousands pounds have been offered and refused

for them.

Mr. St. John mentions a jar of this kind belonging to the Sultan of Brunei, which derived its chief value from the fact that it spoke on certain great occasions. For example, the Sultan declared that on the night before his wife died the jar uttered hollow moaning sounds, and that it never failed to apprize him of any coming misfortune by wailing pitifully. This jar is kept in the women's apartments, and is always covered with gold brocade, except when wanted for consultation, or to exhibit its medicinal properties. Water poured into a Gusi jar is properties. Water poured into a Gusi jar is thought by the Dyaks and by the Malays to be the best possible medicine for all kinds of diseases, and, when sprinkled over the fields, to be a certain means of procuring a good crop. As the people are willing to pay highly for this medicated water, there is some reason for the enormous cost of these

One of them is said to possess a quality which belongs to itself. It increased everything that was put into it. If, for examp it were half filled with rice in the evening it would be nearly full in the morning; and if water was poured into it, a few hours would increase the depth of water by several inches. It is remarkable that the art of making these jars is lost. The Chinese, ad-mirable imitators as they are, have always failed when they have endeavored to pal off upon a Dyak a jar manufactured by them-

THE STATE aune AND AND

ING.

TUN

THE relig subject, a have an be rathe knowledg bly clear preme B names, a Dyaks, fo the land preme, by some ver such as T lower ani the Dyal holiness; death.

Besides numerable respond i satyrs of many nar ideas, the ple live as supernatu declare th chief dist they have nated in a assuming any anim heads, so nized.

The stor very stran a squirrel ve, is unique. These e, and as far as can be , and as har as can be, must have been of They are of different greatly in value. The Naga or Dragon jars, or eight pounds, and m figures of dragons em. They are about he Rusa jar, which is is worth from ten to ng to its quality, and es of the Rusa deer it.

is the Gusi, which is hat the owner chooses usi jar is neither large ark olive green color, height. These jars e considered as being about five hundred the hundred pounds isi jar, and there have able that many thoun offered and refused

ns a jar of this kind an of Brunei, which from the fact that it occasions. For exred that on the night e jar uttered hollow nat it never failed to ming misfortune by s jar is kept in the nd is always covered ept when wanted for hibit its medicinal red into a Gusi jar is and by the Malays to dicine for all kinds of sprinkled over the eans of procuring a eople are willing to icated water, there is ormous cost of these

to possess a quality . It increased everyit. If, for example, ice in the evening it n the morning; and nto it, a few hours h of water by several ble that the art of t. The Chinese, ad-ney are, have always endeavored to palm nufactured by them-

CHAPTER CXIX.

126 6 37 457

BORNEO. - Concluded.

RELIGION - OMENS - FUNERALS.

THE STATE OF RELIGION AMONG THE DYAKS - THEIR BELIEF IN A SUPREME BEING - THE VARIOUS SUBORDINATE GODS - THE ANTUS, AND THEIR FORMS - CATCHING A RUNAWAY SOUL - THE BUAU AND HIS NATURE - ORIGIN OF LAND LEECHES - CHARMS, AND THEIR VALUE - OMENS - THE GOOD AND EVIL BIRDS — A SIMPLE CAUSE OF DIVORCE — THE ENCHANTED LEAF — THE ORDEALS OF DIVing, boiling water, salt, and smalls — the enchanted water — a curious ceremony — dyak FUNERALS - THE OFFICE OF SEXTON.

THE religion of the Dyaks is a very difficult subject, as the people themselves seem to have an exceedingly vague idea of it, and to have an exceedingly vague idea of it, and to be rather unwilling to impart the little knowledge which they have. It is tolerably clear that they have an idea of a Supreme Being, whom they call by different tree was parti-colored, and instead of a head have an exceedingly vague idea of it, and to be rather unwilling to impart the little knowledge which they have. It is tolerably clear that they have an idea of a Supreme Being, whom they call by different names, according to their tribes; the Sea Dyaks, for example, calling him Batara, and the land Dyaks Tapa. Next to the Supreme, by whom mankind was created, were some vary powerful though inferior deities. some very powerful though inferior deities, such as Tenabi, who made the earth and the lower animals; Iang, who taught religion to the Dyaks, and still inspires them with holiness; and Jirong, the lord of life and death.

Besides those chief deities there are innumerable Antus or minor gods, which correspond in some degree to the fauns and satyrs of the ancients. They are called by many names, and as, according to Dyak ideas, there is scarcely a square rod of forset that does not contain its Antu, the peo-ple live as it were in a world peopled with supernatural beings. Some of them even declare that they have seen the Antus, the chief distinction of whom seems to be that they have no heads, the neck being terminated in a sharp point. They are capable of assuming the form of a human being or of any animal at will, but always without heads, so that they can be at once recognized

it had a pointed neck.

The Dyak ran off in terror, and was immediately smitten with a violent fever, his soul having been drawn from the body by soul naving been drawn from the body by the Antu, and about to journey toward the spirit world. The doctor, however, went off to the spot where the Antu appeared, cap-tured the fugitive soul, brought it back, and restored it to the body by means of the in-visible hole in the head through which the Antu had summoned it. Next morning the fever was gone and the rear was quite well

fever was gone, and the man was quite well. They tell another story of one of these inimical beings, who are supposed to be ghosts of persons killed in battle, and called Buaus.

A Buau pounced upon a woman named
Temunyan during her husband's absence,
carried her off, and by his magic arts fixed
her against a rock from which she could not move. When the husband returned, he went in search of his wife, and, having found her, concocted a scheme by which the Buau was induced to release her. By stratagem the husband contrived to destroy the Buau, and took his wife home.

heads, so that they can be at once recognized.

The story of one of these Antu-seers is a very strange one. He declared that he saw very strange one, threw a spear at it, and thousand pieces with his parang, and flung

it into the jungle, when each fragment took life, and assumed the blood-sucking character of the demon parent. And thus the Buau was the original parent of land-

In order to propitiate these beings, the Dyaks are in the habit of making offerings of food, drink, and flowers to them before they undertake any great task, mostly put-ting the food into dishes or baskets, and laying it in the jungle for the use of the Antus. Satisfied apparently with the multitude of

their deities, the Dyaks possess no idols, a fact which is really remarkable, as showing the character of their minds. Charms, however, they have in plenty, and place the greatest reliance on them. Some charms are credited as rendering the wearer invulnerable, and it is likely that those attached to the parang described on page 1125 are of that character.

Mr. St. John mentions an amusing example of the value set upon these charms. There was a chief of very high rank, who possessed some exceedingly potent charms, which had been in his family for many generations, and had been handed down from father to son. They consisted of two round pebbles, one flat pebble, a little stone which had been found in a bauana, and some sand. All these valuables were sewed up together and fastened to a string, by which they could be attached to the waist in times of

Unfortunately, the chief lent these charms to a man who lost them, and was sued by the aggrieved owner before the English court. He gained his case, but was nearly as much dissatisfied with the court as with the defendant, inasmuch as he estimated the value of the charms at a Rusa jar, i. e. about thirty dollars, or seven pounds, whereas the value set on them by the court, and paid by the defendant, was fivepence.

Allusion has been already made to the birds on which the Dyaks so much rely as omens. These are three in number, the Kushah, the Kariak, and the Katupung. When a Dyak is about to start on an expedition, he goes to the place near the village where the feasting sheds are built, and there waits until he hears the cry of one of these birds. Should either the kushah or the katupung cry in the front, or on either side, and not be answered, the omen is bad, and the man gives up his expedition. It is a good sign, however, if the bird should first cry on one side and then be answered on the other. The most important bird is the kariak. If the cry of the kariak be heard on the right, the omen is good; if on the left, it is doubtful. But if the cry be heard behind the diviner, the omen is as bad as it can be, and portends at least sickness, if not

The Dyaks scarcely engage in any under-

they believe to be half Dyaks, all birds having proceeded from the union of an Anta with a Dyak woman.

Mr. Brooke, in treating of this subject has the following forcible remarks: — "Some of our party of Dyaks had proceeded, but most were yet behind, and will be sweeping down for the next week or more. Many go through the forms of their forefathers in listening to the sounds of omens; but the ceremony is now very curtailed, compared with what it was a few years ago, when I have known a chief live in a hut for six weeks, partly waiting for the twittering of birds to be in a proper direction, and partly detained by his followers. Besides, the whole way in advancing, their dreams are religiously interpreted and adhered to; but, as in all such matters, interpretations are liable to a double construction. The finale is, that inclination, or often fear, is most powerful. A fearful heart produces a disagreeable dream, or a bad omen in imagined sounds from birds or deer, and this always makes a force return. But they often loiter about so long, that the enemy gains intelligence of their intended attack, and is on the alert.

"However absurdly these omens lead the human race, they steadily continue to fol-low and believe in such practices. Faith predominates, and hugs huge wonders, and tenaciously lives in the minds of the ignorant. Some of the Dyaks are somewhat shaken in the belief in hereditary omens, and a few follow the Malay custom of using a particular day, which has a strange effect on European imaginations. The white man who commands the force is supposed to have an express bird and lucky charm to guide him onward; and to these the Dyaks trust considerably. 'You are our bird, we follow you.' I well know the names, and can distinguish the sounds of their birds, and the different hands on which the good and bad omens are interpreted.

"The effect of these signs on myself was often very marked, and no Dyak could feel an adverse omen more than myself when away in the jungle, surrounded by these superstitious people. Still, I could sympathize with the multitude, and the difficulty lay in the question, whether any influence would be sufficient to counteract such phantoms. It must not be thought I ever attempted to lead the Dyaks to believe that I was the owner of charms and such absurdities, which could not have lasted above a season, and could never be successful for a length of time. A maias' (orang-outan's) head was hanging in my room, and this they thought to be my director to successful expeditions.

The cries of various animals are all interpreted by the Dyaks, those which have evil significations far outnumbering the good-The Dyaks scarcely engage in any under-omened cries. The worst of all omens is taking without consulting the birds, whom abandon no matte on it. On on

young g third day missiona surprised in it hard was a ver house is The miss he was de his wife, that he h the prec obliged t "But,"

"Very " What " Makir want for It seem ingrained whenever some Ant been the appeasal. found the culiar mai

had fallen The lear the Antu, leaf were the offend picked up within tw and inflam nearly a fo In conn mentioned often settl

was an of

but the fav The two d and wade i a given sig under wat very curio where the The daugh disgraced 1 young mar contradicte pute was b diving. Th the result v leave the vi by his follo to seek ano

Then the gant is prov cisely the s retains its s Dyaks, all birds havne union of an Anto

ting of this subject, ting of this subject, le remarks: — "Some is had proceeded, but and will be sweeping k or more. Many go their forefathers in s of omens; but the curtailed, compared w years ago, when I ive in a hut for six for the twittering of direction, and partly wers. Besides, the ng, their dreams are and adhered to; but, , interpretations are truction. The finale often fear, is most eart produces a disaad omen in imagined deer, and this always But they often loiter enemy gains intelli-attack, and is on the

these omens lead the dily continue to fol-ch practices. Faith s huge wonders, and minds of the ignoyaks are somewhat n hereditary omens, alay custom of using has a strange effect ons. The white man orce is supposed to and lucky charm to to these the Dyaks ou are our bird, we low the names, and ands of their birds, s on which the good

rpreted. signs on myself was no Dyak could feel than myself when ounded by these su-I, I could sympathize the difficulty lay in any influence would act such phantoms. I ever attempted to eve that I was the such absurdities, sted above a season ccessful for a length ng-outan's) head was d this they thought cessful expeditions." nimals are all interose which have evil mbering the goodorst of all omens is a will make a Dyak

abandon any project on which he is engaged, be the winner. There is also the boilingno matter how deeply his heart may be set water test, which is exactly the same as that

On one occasion, a Dyak had married a young girl for whom he had a very strong attachment, which was returned. On the third day after the marriage, the English missionary entered the head house and was surprised to see the young husband sitting in it hard at work on some brass wire. This was a very strong circumstance, as the head house is tenanted only by the bachelors. The missionary naturally asked him what he was doing there, and what had become of his wife, to which he answered sorrowfully

"What are you doing with the wire?"

"Making ornaments for the girl whom I want for my new wife."

It seems that the belief in the Antus is so ingrained in the minds of the Dyaks, that whenever any one meets with an accident, some Antu or other is presumed to have been the author of the injury, and to require appeasal. Mr. Brooke mentions that he once found the leaf of a palm tree folded in a peculiar manner, lying near his house. This was an offering to the Antu, because a man had fallen down there and injured himself.

The leaf was supposed to be possessed by the Antu, who would avenge himself if his leaf were disturbed by causing the arm of the offender to swell. However, Mr. Brooke picked up the leaf and threw it away, and within two days his arm became swollen and inflamed, and remained in that state for nearly a fortnight afterward.

In connection with this subject must be mentioned the ordeals by which disputes are often settled. These are of various kinds, but the favorite plan is the ordeal of diving. The two disputants are taken to the river and wade into the water up to the chin. At a given signal they plunge beneath the surface, and the one who can remain longest under water wins the case. There was a very curious instance of such an ordeal where the honor of a family was involved. The daughter of a chief was found to have disgraced herself, and laid the blame upon a young man of rank. He, however, utterly contradicted her story, and at last the dis-pute was brought to an end by the ordeal of contradicted her story, and at last the dis-pute was brought to an end by the ordeal of diving. The young chief won his cause, and the result was that the offending girl had to

be the winner. There is also the boiling-water test, which is exactly the same as that which was practised in England in former days, the hand being dipped into the hot liquid, and coming out uninjured if the ap-pellant be innocent. Lastly, there is the snail ordeal. Each party takes a snail and puts it on a plate, and lime juice is poured over them, when the snail that first moves is considered to have indicated that its owner is in the wrong. owner is in the wrong.

The reader may remember that the Dyaks are in the habit of purchasing water that has been poured into the sacred jars, and sprink-ling it over their fields by way of ensuring fertility. They believe that water which has touched the person of a white man will have that he had no wife, a deer having cried on the preceding night, so that they were obliged to dissolve the marriage at once.
"But," said his interrogator, "are you not sorry for this?"

"Yery sorry!"

"Yery sorry!" custom of seizing them, pulling off their shoes and stockings, and washing their feet, the water being preserved as an infallible charm for promoting the growth of their

> They carry this principle to an extent which to us seems exceedingly disgusting. Long bamboos filled with dressed rice are brought to the visitors, who are requested to spit in them. The rice thus medicated is distributed among the assembled crowd, who press eagerly round, each attempting to secure a portion of the health-giving food. Some of the more cunning among the people try to secure a second and some a third supply, and Mr. St. John mentions an instance when one horrid old woman managed to be helped six times.

The same traveller mentions that the blood of fowls is thought to be a very powerful charm, and the Dyaks have a ceremony connected with the shedding of blood which is almost identical with the Jewish Passover. (See Exod. xii. 22.) A festival had been given in honor of the visitors. Their feet had been washed, and the water put aside. Their rice had been duly medicated, and the Orang-kaya began some curious ceremonies, flinging rice out of the windows, and accompanying the act with a prayer for fertility to the fields and prosperity to the village. He was evidently repeating a well-learned lesson, and it was ascertained that the words which he used were not understood by himself, so that we find among the Dyaks the relics of an expired language, the few rem-

the result was that the offending girl had to leave the village, and her father was deserted by his followers, so that he was also obliged to seek another home.

Then there is the salt ordeal. Each litigant is provided with a lump of salt of precisely the same weight, and he whose salt retains its shape longest in water is hild to

back to where we sat. Then came another | offered him, and the air kept cool by constant pressure of the palm, a few more passes to draw virtue out of us, another yell, and off they went again — at one time there were at least a hundred dancing.

"For three nights we had had little sleep,

on account of these ceremonies, but at length, notwithstanding clash of gong and beat of drum, we sank back in our beds, and were soon fast asleep. In perhaps a couple of hours I awoke, my companion was still sleeping uneasily, the din was deafening, and I sat up to look around.

Unfortunate moment! I was instantly seized by the hands of two priests, and led up to the Orang-kaya, who was himself cut-ting a fowl's throat. He wanted Captain Brooke to perform the following ceremony, but I objected to his being awakened, and offered to do it for him. I was taken to the very end of the house, and the bleeding fowl put in my hands. Holding him by his legs I had to strike the lintel of the doors, sprinkling a little blood over each. When this was over, I had to wave the fowl over the heads of the women and wish them fertility; over the children, and wish them health; over all the people, and wish them prosperity; out of the window, and invoke good crops for them."

FUNERALS among the Dyaks differ slightly in the various tribes. The common people are buried or even burned with scarcely any ceremony, but the bodies of chiefs and their relatives are treated with a whole series of rites.

As soon as a chief dies, the corpse is dressed in his finest clothes, every ornament that he possessed is hung upon him, and his favorite swords and other weapons are laid by his side. The body is then placed on an elevated platform, and is watched and tended as if the dead man were still alive, food, drink, tobacco, and sirih being continually

fanning. The men assemble on one side of the corpse, and the women on the other, and romp with each other as if the occasion were of a joyful rather than a sorrowful character. These games are continued until the corpse is far gone in decomposition, when it is placed in a coffin made of a hollowed tree trunk, and buried in a grave which must not be more than five feet deep.

Knowing the customs of the people, the Malays are apt to rifle the graves of dead chiefs, for the sake of obtaining the swords and other valuables that are buried with them. Formerly, after the body was laid in the grave, the sword, a jar or two, clothes, ornaments, and a female slave were placed in a canoe, the woman being firmly chained to it. When the tide was ebbing the boat was sent adrift, and was supposed to supply the spirit of the departed with all the goods that were on board. This custom, however, has been long discontinued, as the Dyaks found that the canoe and its contents almost invariably fell into the hands of the Malays, who thus procured slaves without paying for them, and enriched themselves besides with

the swords, gold, and clothing.

The sexton's office is hereditary, and whenever the line fails the Dyaks have great difficulty in finding some one who will not only take the office upon himself, but must also entail it upon his descendants. The office, however, is a very lucrative one, varying from a rupee to two dollars, a sum of money which can procure for a Dyak all the necessaries and most of the luxuries of lite for several weeks.

The Kayan Dyaks do not bury their dead but place the body in a very stout coffin made of a hollowed tree, and elevate it on two stout carved posts, with woodwork projecting from each corner, like the roofs of Siamese houses.

POSITION OF ITS AN CERNI DRESS . -THE OF THE

FUEGIA

RESPEC

SMAI.L.

-GENI

AT the ext is a large is ands separa the sea. It which is in a ship to be points is exc sailed through that the so innumerable the country of Fire. Th lighted by th other of the the Fuegiar

The count one, and Tie the Esquima to be exactl beings could lated, and the this vast con the superior. others.

most bitter have been

Tierra del the South ? muntry, and place is so co kept cool by constant emble on one side of nen on the other, and of the occasion were sorrowful character. ued until the corpse position, when it is of a hollowed tree rave which must not

leep. as of the people, the the graves of dead obtaining the swords nat are buried with the body was laid in jar or two, clothes, e slave were placed being firmly chained vas ebbing the boat s supposed to supply d with all the goods his custom, however, nued, as the Dyaks d its contents almost hands of the Malays, es without paying for

othing.
is hereditary, and
ils the Dyaks have ing some one who office upon himself. pon his descendants. very lucrative one. two dollars, a sum of re for a Dyak all the the luxuries of lite

mselves besides with

not bury their dead, a very stout coffin with woodwork pro-er, like the roofs of

CHAPTER CXX.

TIERRA DEL FUEGO.

APPEARANCE - ARCHITECTURE - MANUFACTURES.

POSITION OF THE COUNTRY AND SIGNIFICATION OF THE NAME - CONFORMATION OF THE LAND AND ITS ANIMAL AND VEGETABLE LIFE - APPEARANCE OF THE FUEGIANS - ERRONEOUS IDEAS CON-CERNING THEM - COLOR, COSTUME, AND MODE OF WEARING THE HAIR - INDIFFERENCE TO DRESS - PAINT AND ORNAMENTS - FUEGIAN ARCHITECTURE - THE POINTED AND ROUNDED HUTS - THE SPEAR AND ITS HEAD - BOWS AND ARROWS - STONE THROWING - WONDERFUL STRENGTH OF THE FUEGIANS - SKILL WITH THE SLING - STUDY OF PARTICULAR WEAPONS - FOOD OF THE FUEGIANS - ANGLING WITHOUT HOOKS - THE DOGS, FISHERS AND BIRD CATCHERS - THE DOG RESPECTED BY THE FUEGIANS — CANNIBALISM — THE TREE FUNGUS — CANOES — THE LARGE AND SMAIL CANOES, AND THEIR USES - SHIFTING QUARTERS AND TRANSPORTING CANOES - COOKERY — GENERAL TEMPERAMENT OF THE FURGIANS — JRMMY BUTTON — FURGIAN GOVERNMENT.

is a large island, or rather a collection of islands separated by very narrow armlets of the sea. It is separated from the mainland by the strange tortuous Magellan's Strait, points is exceedingly narrow. As Magellan sailed through this channel by night, he saw that the southern shore was studded with innumerable fires, and he therefore called the country TIERRA DEL FUEGO, or Land of Fire. These fires were probably beacons lighted by the natives in order to warn each the other of the approach of strangers, to whom the Fuegians have at times evinced the most bitter hostility, while at others they have been kind and hospitable in their

The country is a singularly unpromising one, and Tierra del Fuego on the south and the Esquimaux country on the north seem to be exactly the lands in which human beings could not live. Yet both are populated, and the natives of both extremities of both extremities of the seement of t this vast continent are fully impressed with the superiority of their country over all

Tierra del Fuego is, as its proximity to the South Pole infers, a miserably cold country, and even in the summer time the

Ar the extreme southern point of America would seem to be quite a tropical island. In consequence of this extreme cold neither animal nor vegetable life can be luxuriant. The forests are small, and the trees short, by the strange tortuous Magellan's Strait, which is in no place wide enough to permit aship to be out of sight of land, and in some sea. There is a sort of evergreen beech (Fagus betuloides).

There is only one redeeming point in the climate of Tierra del Fuego. The mosquito that haunts alike the hottest and coldest countries, and equally a terror in tropical and Arctic America, cannot live in Tierra del Fuego, the damp, as well as the cold, being fatal to it. Indeed, there are very few insects in this strange land, and reptiles are altogether absent.

Absence of vegetable life naturally results in absence of animal life, the herbivorous animals being starved out for want of their proper food, and the carnivora being equally unable to live, as finding no animals on which to feed. Man being omnivorous, has a slightly better chance of living, but even he could not multiply and fill the country when food is so limited, provided he were limited to the land, but, as he is master of the waters as well as of the earth, he can draw his living from the sea and rivers when the land refuses to supply him with food. Such is the case with the Fuegians, who are place is so cold that in comparison England essentially people of the sea and its shore,

and who draw nearly the whole of their sub- | the men. About four feet and some inches sistence from its waters, as we shall see in a

Perhaps in consequence of the scantiness. the irregularity, and the quality of their food, the Fuegians are a very short race of men, often shorter than the average Bosiesman of Southern Africa, and even lower in the social scale. They ought not to be called dwarfs, as is too often the case, their bodies being tolerably proportioned, and their fig-ures not stunted, but simply smaller than the average of Europeans, while the muscular development of the upper part of the body is really wonderful. As a rule, the average height of the Fuegian men is about five feet, and that of the women four feet six inches. In some parts of the islands there are natives of much larger size, but these are evidently immigrants from the adjacent country of Patagonia, where the stature is as much above the average of Europeans as that of the Fuegians is below it.

The color of the natives is a dark coppery brown, the reddish hue being only perceptible in spots where they happen accidentally to be clean. The limbs are generally slight, so that the knees and elbows seem to be disproportionately large, and their heads are covered with masses of black hair, that possesses no curl, and falls in long, wild tangled locks over their shoulders. The men are almost entirely beardless.

An illustration on the opposite page of a Fuegian man and woman gives a correct representation of the ugliness of feature and want of intelligence which characterize this

people.

Both sexes allow their hair to run to its full length, except over the forehead, where it is roughly cut with a shell to prevent it from falling into the eyes. The people have a strange superstitious reverence for hair, and that portion which is cut off is deposited in a basket, and afterward carefully disposed of. Once, when the captain had snipped off a little hair from a Fuegian's head, he found that he had given great offence, and was obliged to restore the severed hair and put away the scissors before the angry feelings of the native could be smoothed. On another occasion, the only mode of pacifying the offended native was by restoring the lock of hair, together with a similar lock from the head of the white man. The cut hair is generally burned.
Captain King's account of the Fuegian women is not attractive.

"The hair of the women is longer, less coarse, and certainly cleaner than that of the like the men. It is combed with the jaw of a lt is porpoise, but neither plaited nor tied; and none is cut away, except from over their eyes. They are short, with bodies largely eyes. They are short, with bodies largely out of proportion to their height; their features, especially those of the old are scarcely description of clothes except a piece of seal less discreption. less disagreeable than the repulsive ones of or deer skin about eighteen inches square

is the stature of these she-Fuegians, by courtesy called women. They never walk upright; a stooping posture and awkward movement is their natural gait. They may be fit mates for such uncouth men; but to civilized people their appearance is disgusting. Very few exceptions were noticed.

"The color of the women is similar to

that of the men. As they are just as much exposed, and do harder work, this is a natural consequence. Besides, while children they run about quite naked, picking up shell-fish, carrying wood, or bringing water. In the color of the older people there is a tinge of yellow, which is not noticed in the middle-aged or young."

As is the case with many savage tribes, the teeth of the Fuegians are ground down to an almost flat surface. This is most conspicuous in the front teeth. There is little apparent distinction between the canine and the incisor teeth, both being ground down to such an extent that the only remains of the enamel are on the sides, and, as Captain King graphically remarks, "the front teeth are solid, and often flat-topped like those of a horse eight years old. . . . the interior substance of each tooth is then seen as plainly in proportion to its size as that of a horse.

The mouth is large, and very coarsely formed, and as there is not a vestige of beard its full ugliness is shown to the best

advantage.

One of the strangest phenomena connected with the Fuegians is their lack of clothing. In a climate so cold that in the middle of summer people have been frozen to death at no great elevation above the level of the sea, it might well be imagined that the natives would follow the same course as that adopted by the Esquimaux, and make for themselves garments out of the thickest and warmest furs that can be

They might do so if they chose. In some parts of their country they have the thick-woolled guanaco (probably an importation from the mainland), and in others are deer and foxes, not to mention the dogs which they keep in a domesticated state. Besides, there are few furs warmer than those of the seal, and seals of various kinds abound on the Fuegian coasts, some, such as the sea-lion, being of very large size. Then there are various water birds, whose skins would make dresses equally light and warm, such as the penguin, the duck, the albatross, and

It is evident, therefore, that if the Fue-gian is not warmly and thickly clothed, it is not from want of material, and that he is feet and some inches
se she-Fuegians, by
n. They never walk
osture and awkward
ural gait. They may
uncouth men; but to
appearance is disgustons were noticed,
women is similar to
hey are just as much
r work, this is a natustides.

women is similar to hey are just as much r work, this is a natusides, while children e naked, picking up od, or bringing water. der people there is a is not noticed in the

many savage tribes, ans are ground down e. This is most coneeth. There is little tween the canine and being ground down to conly remains of the ides, and, as Captain trks, "the front teeth topped like those of old.... the interior odd is then seen as o its size as that of a

e, and very coarsely is not a vestige of is shown to the best

est phenomena concians is their lack of e so cold that in the ple have been frozen elevation above the tht well be imagined di follow the same l by the Esquimaux, was garments out of lest furs that can be

they chose. In some they have the thick-bably an importation and in others are deer tion the dogs which cated state. Besides, ner than those of the ous kinds abound on me, such as the sesses size. Then there is, whose skins would ight and warm, such k, the albatross, and

ore, that if the Fuethickly clothed, it is erial, and that he is ity but choice. And her sex wearing any xcept a piece of seal hteen inches square



(1.) FUEGIANS. (See page 1102.)



(2.) PATAGONIANS. (See page 1173.)

is paddling he thinks

hung oving is well is shifted to the othe wind feetly income. example, but the li ward side shoulder, and her seeming During n

too much Though indifferen copper-co copper-co uses pain a white g drawing brick-red. duced to p are mostly of fishes of fishes Ornament upon the

the Fuegi savage jev Both se locks out of fillet mad guanaco, t this fillet; and feathe Red, on th these peop of color w entire wor seen so co coppery co the comple gro. This used on the

as their dr rude shelte make a Fu has only to sharpen the into the g eighths or the sticks to work of the and roof are among the u grass on the hut is comp grass throw The open in the dir-there is no

hung over one shoulder. No other covering is worn except this patch of skin, which is shifted about from one side of the body to the other according to the direction of the wind, the Fuegian appearing to be perfeetly indifferent to frost, rain, or snow. For example, a Fuegian mother has been seen with her child in her arms, wearing nothing but the little patch of seal-skin on the windward side, and yet standing unconcernedly in the snow, which not only fell on her naked shoulder, but was heaped between her child and her breast, neither mother nor infant seeming to be more than ordinarily cold. During mild weather, or when the Fuegian is paddling or otherwise engaged in work, he thinks that even the piece of seal-skin is too much for him, and throws it off.

Though careless about clothing, he is not indifferent to ornament, and decorates his copper-colored body in various ways. He copper-colored body in various ways. To uses paint in profusion, generally laying on a white ground made of a chalky clay, and drawing patterns upon it of black or dull brick-red. The black is simply charcoal reduced to powder. He likes necklaces, which are mostly white, and are made of the teeth of fishes and seals, or of pieces of bone. Ornaments of the same character are worn upon the wrists and ankles, so that, although the Fuegian has no clothes, he has plenty of

savage jewelry.

Both sexes keep their long, straggling locks out of their eyes by means of a small fillet made of sinews, or the hair of the guanaco, twined round the forehead. Feaguanaco, twined round the foreneau. Fea-thers and similar ornaments are stuck into this fillet; but if they be white, the specta-tor must be on his guard, for white down and feathers on the head are signs of war. Red, on the contrary, denotes peace; so that these people entirely reverse the symbolism of color which is accepted almost over the entire world. Sometimes a native may be seen so covered with black paint that the coppery color of the skin is entirely lost, and the complexion is as black as that of a negro. This is a sign of mourning, and is used on the death of a relation or friend.

The houses of the Fuegians are as simple as their dress, and practically are little but rude shelters from the wind. Any boy can make a Fuegian house in half an hour. He has only to cut a number of long branches, sharpen the thicker ends, and stick them into the ground, so as to occupy seven-eighths or so of a circle. Let him then tie the sticks together at the top, and the framework of the house is completed. The walls and roof are made by twisting smaller boughs among the uprights and throwing long coarse grass on them, and the entire furniture of the hut is comprised in a few armfuls of the same grass thrown on the ground.

fact, as has been said, the Fuegian's only idea of a house is a shelter from the wind, so that the natives have no idea of a home or even of a dwelling-place. This is the form of hut used by the Tekeenika tribes of south-eastern Fuegla. A Fuegian settlement, with houses and surrounding scenery, is well represented on the 1169th

page.

That which is generally employed in other parts of Fuegia is even more simple. It is barely half the height of the Tekeenika hut, and looks something like a large bee-hive. It seldom, if ever, exceeds five feet in height, but, as the earth is scraped away within, another foot in height is given to the in-terior. It is made simply by digging a circular hole a foot or so in depth, planting green boughs around the excavation, bendgreen boughs around the excavation, bending them over, and tying their tops together. Upon this rude framework are fastened bunches of grass, sheets of bark, and skins; so that, on the whole, a habitation is formed which is equal in point of accommodation to a gipsy's tent. These huts vary much in diameter, though not in height; for, while a number of huts are from four to five feet in height, their diameter will vary from six to twenty feet. from six to twenty feet.

The Fuegians are a quarrelsome people, and the different tribes are constantly at war with each other; and, although they can scarcely be divided into definite tribes, the spirit of local jealousy is sufficiently strong within them to keep the inhabitants of one district at perpetual feud with those of another. The conformation of the country aids this feeling of jealousy, the land being divided by numerous ravines, armlets of the sea, and precipitous mountains; but, fortunately for the Fuegians, this very structure prevents destruction in war, although it encourages the ill-feeling which leads to war; and the battles of the Fuegians are, at the best, nothing but detached skirmishes, without producing the least

political effect.

Their weapons are the bow and arrow, the spear, and the sling. These weapons are primarily intended for hunting, and are much more used for killing seals, guanacos, deer, fish, and birds than in slaying men. In the use of them the Fuegians are wonderfully expert. Capt. Parker Snow mentions a case where a number of Fuegians had assembled in their canoes round his vessel. A large fish happened to pass, whereupon the natives instantly speared it, and pitched it on board the ship.

The shafts of the spears sometimes reach the length of ten feet, and, instead of being rounded, as is mostly the case with spear shafts, are octagonal. The heads are made of bone, about seven inches in length, and The opening at the side is always made in the direction opposite the wind, and the direction opposite the wind, and the point. The Patagonians use a very there is no attempt at a door; so that, in

There is another kind of spear head, which | they thought themselves even beyond mushas a whole row of small barbs down one side. This weapon is used as a javelin, and is thrown with great force and accuracy, the native grasping it near the middle, poising for a moment, so as to look along it, and hen hurling it

The bow and arrow are mostly used for killing birds, the arrows being made of hard wood, about two feet long. They are headed with pieces of flint or obsidian, which are merely stuck in a notch at the end of the arrow, so that, when the shaft is with-drawn, the head remains in the wound. The bow is strung with twisted sinews. Birds are also killed by stones, some thrown by hand, and others with the sling, the wonderful strength of these strange people en-abling them to use their missiles with terri-

Although not tall, the Fuegians are very thick-set and enormously powerful. One of them, named by the sailors York Minster, was a match in point of muscular strength for any two of the men belonging to the ship. The women are as strong as the men. On one occasion, when three Fuegians, a man and two women, had treacherously attacked a white sailor, and were trying to beat out his brains with stones, they were interrupted, and the sailor rescued. The man was shot. One of the women tried to conceal herself under the bank, and the other was seized by the captain and his cox-swain, who tried to pinion her arms. She struggled and fought so stoutly that they could scarcely achieve their object, and had no idea that they were contending with a woman until they heard some one announce the sex of their captive. As to the other woman, who was the oldest of the party, she clung so tightly to the bank that two of the strongest sailors could scarcely remove her.

The fate of the man was very curious, and illustrates the reckless, not to say senseless, courage of these people. He was mortally wounded, and fell back for a moment, allowing the maltreated sailor to escape. However, he instantly recovered himself, and, snatching stones from the bed of the stream in which he was standing, began to hurl them with astounding force and quickness. He used both hands, and flung stones with such truth of aim that the first struck the master, smashed his powder-horn to pieces, and nearly knocked him down. The two next were hurled at the heads of the nearest seamen, who just escaped by stooping as the missiles were thrown. All this passed in a second or two, and with an attempt to hurl a fourth stone the man fell dead.

Some time before this event the sailors had been astonished at the stone-throwing powers of the Fuegians, who nearly struck ket shot. They generally carry a store of pebbles ready for use in the corner of their little skin mantles.

The sling is made of a cup of seal or guanaco skin, to which are attached two cords similar in material to the bow-strings, thus combining apparent delicacy with great strength. The cords of the sling are more than three feet in length. The skill which the Fuegians possess with this weapon is worthy of the reputation attained by the Balearic islanders. Captain King has seen them strike with a sling-stone a eap placed on a str .p at fifty or sixty yards' distance, and on one occasion he witnessed a really wonderful display of dexterity. He asked a Fuegian to show him the use of the weapon. The man immediately picked up a stone about as large as a pigeon's egg, placed it in the sling, and pointed to a canoe as his mark. He then turned his back, and flung the stone in exactly the opposite direction, so that it struck the trunk of a tree, and rebounded to the canoe. The men seem to think the sling a necessity of life, and it is very seldom that a Fuegian is seen without it either hung over his neck or tied round his waist.

It is rather a curious fact that the Fuegians always devote themselves to one particular weapon. One, for example, will be pre-eminent in the use of the bow, another will excel in throwing stones with the hand, and a third will give all his energies to the sling. Yet, although each man selects some particular arm in the use of which he excels, they all are tolerable masters of the other weapons, and it sometimes happens that a Fuegian crosses over to the Patagonian coast, procures the singular weapon called the "bolas," of which the reader will learn more presently, and becomes almost as expert in its use as the man from whom he obtained it.

As for the food of the Fuegians, it is, as I have already mentioned, chiefly drawn from the sea. He is an excellent fisherman, and manages to capture his prey without even a hook. He ties a bait on the end of the line, dangles it before the fish, and gradually coaxes it toward the surface of the water. He then allows it to bite, and, before it can detach its teeth from the bait, jerks it out of the water with his right hand, while with the left he catches or strikes it into the canoe. It is evident that by this manner of angling it is impossible to catch fish of any great size. As soon as he has caught the fish, the Fuegian opens it by the simple plan of biting a piece out of its under surface, cleans it, and hangs it on a stick.

Molluscs, especially the mussels and limpets which are found on the sea-shores, form a very considerable portion of the Fuegian's diet; and it is a curious fact that these nathem with stones thrown by hand when tives never throw the empty shells about,

but care especiall into the take was comrade Every v knocks t

There found on useful to as a knif simple n off the o brittle a it agains which is

By me Fuegian sea-otter shows hi of fish by little, fox utterly in hunting. gent in t most cur a shoal of swim out diving ur or into so ciently sl be used. the birds the birds them to t and all so not distur

These mingled them and ing the tr depended masters tl aquatic tr foraging required fish on th sharp no large, poin dark roug have the f ful and fi sight of a stranger, s

Althoug he has a g the animal sels and li tempestuo quence the of starvati having the themselves This, how reduced to ves even beyond muserally carry a store of in the corner of their

of a cup of seal or ich are attached two ial to the bow-strings, ent delicacy with great of the sling are more gth. The skill which with this weapon is ation attained by the aptain King has seen ng-stone a cap placed sixty yards' distance, he witnessed a really exterity. He asked a the use of the weapon. y picked up a stone eon's egg, placed it in to a canoe as his mark, ck, and flung the stone direction, so that it ree, and rebounded to seem to think the , and it is very seldom without it either hung

ound his waist. s fact that the Fueemselves to one parfor example, will be of the bow, another stones with the hand, I his energies to the ach man selects some se of which he excels, masters of the other imes happens that a to the Patagonian gular weapon called the reader will learn comes almost as exman from whom he

Fuegians, it is, as I l, chiefly drawn from ellent fisherman, and prey without even a on the end of the e fish, and gradually urface of the water. e, and, before it can e bait, jerks it out of ht hand, while with strikes it into the at by this manner of to catch fish of any s he has caught the it by the simple plan its under surface,

a a stick. e mussels and limthe sea-shores, form ion of the Fuegian's fact that these naempty shells about,

but carefully lay them in heaps. They are especially careful not to throw them back who, as they think, are worn out and can do into the sea, thinking that the molluscs would take warning by seeing the shells of their comrades, and would forsake the coast. Every woman is furnished with a short pointed stick of hard wood, with which she knocks the limpets off the rocks.

There is a very large species of mussel found on these shores, which is particularly useful to the Fuegian, who employs its shell as a knife. These tools are made in a very simple manner. The Fuegian first knocks off the original edge of the shell, which is brittle and rather fragile, and, by grinding it against the rocks, produces a new edge, which is sharp enough to cut wood and even

By means of the spear and arrows, the Fuegian contrives even to capture seals and sea-otters, but the pursuit in which he shows his greatest ingenuity is the capture of fish by means of dogs. These dogs are little, fox-like looking dogs, which appear utterly incapable of aiding their masters in Yet they are singularly intelligent in their own way, and have learned a most curious fashion of taking fish. When a shoal of fish approaches the land, the dogs swim out and enclose them, splashing and diving until they drive the shoal into a net, or into some creek when the water is sufficiently shallow for the spear and arrow to the birds while sleeping. They creep up to the birds quietly, pounce upon them, carry them to their masters, and return for more, and all so silently that the birds around are not disturbed.

These animals are regarded with very mingled feelings. The Fuegian neglects them and illtreats them, scarcely ever taking the trouble to feed them, so that if they depended on the food given them by their masters they would starve. However, their aquatic training gives them the power of adiate training gives them the power of foraging for themselves, and, when not required by their masters, they can catch fish on their own account. They are odd, sharp nosed, bushy tailed animals, with large, pointed, creet ears, and usually with dark rough hair, though a few among them have the fur nearly white. They are watchful and faithful to their masters, and the sight of a stranger, much more of a clothed stranger, sets them barking furiously

Although the Fuegian neglects his dog, he has a great respect and even affection for the animal. It often happens that the mus-sels and limpets fail, that the weather is too tempestuous for fishing, and that in consequence the people are reduced to the brink of starvation. It might be presumed that, having their dogs at hand, they would avail themselves of so obvious a source of food. This, however, they never do, except when no good, while the dogs, if suffered to live, will assist in catching fish and guanacos.

When they have determined on killing an old woman, they put a quantity of green wood on their fire, so as to cause a thick, suffocating smoke, and in this smoke they hold the poor creature's head until she is stifled. Unless there is very great distress, the women eat the upper part of the victim and the men the lower, the trunk being thrown into the sea.

Several species of echinus, or sea urchins, are eaten by the Fuegians, who dive for them and bring them to the surface, in spite of the sharp prickles with which the entire surface

is beset.

The Fuegian's great feast, however, takes place when a whale is stranded on the shore. All the people within reach flock to the spot, while fleets of canoes surround the stranded monster, and its body is covered with little copper-colored men carving away the blubber with their shell knives. Each cuts as much as he can get, and when he has torn and carved off a large piece of blubber, he makes a hole in the middle, puts his head through the aperture, and thus leaves his hands free to carry more of the dainty food. Besides this animal food, the Fuegian eats a remarkable kind of fungus, which is found ciently shallow for the spear and arrow to be used. The dogs are also taught to catch has already been mentioned. Mr. Webster

gives the following description of it:

"The antarctic beech is the common and prevailing tree. It is an elegant evergreen. It grows to the height of thirty or forty feet, with a girth of from three to five feet, and sometimes, doubling these dimensions, it forms a majestic tree. In December it puts forth a profusion of blossoms, with anthers of bright pink, large and pendent. This evergreen beech frequently has round the upper part of the trunk, or on some of the larger branches, large clusters of globular fungi of a bright orange color. Each fun-gus is about the size of a small apple, of a soft pulpy nature, with a smooth yellow skin. As it approaches maturity it becomes cellular and latticed on its surface, and when it drops from the tree, dries, and shrivels into a brown mass resembling a morel.

"The Fuegians eat this fungus with avidity. The gelatinous mass is pale, without taste or odor; at the part in contact with the tree are two germs or processes. From twenty to thirty of these fungi are clustered together, and encircle the tree. They form a very conspicuous object, and wherever they are attached they produce a hard knot, or woody tumor, of considerable density. did not observe them on any other tree than the evergreen beech."

This, however, they never do, except when reduced to the last extremity, and, instead of the Fuegian needs a boat of some kind, and,

debased as he is in many points, he is capable of constructing a vessel that answers every purpose he requires. There are several kinds of Fuegian canoes. The simplest form is made of the bark of a sort of birth, and is in fact formed much like the primitive capace of the Australians. It is a but to parish and cut down fresh sticks when tive canoes of the Australians. It is a single sheet of bark stripped from the tree, and tied firmly together at each end. Sev-eral sticks placed crosswise in the middle serve to keep it open; and if any part has a tendency to bulge in the opposite direction, a skin thong is passed across the boat and keeps it in shape. The ends of the canoe, as well as any cracks or holes in the bark, are caulked with dry rushes and a pitchy

resin procured from frees. Like the Australian, the Fuegian carries fire in these tiny canoes, placing a lump of clay in the bottom of the boat, building the fire on it, and so being able to remain at sea for a considerable time, cooking and eating the fish as fast as he catches them. Such a boat as this, however, is too frail to be taken far from land, or indeed to be used at all when the weather is tempestuous. Moreover, it only holds one or two persons, and is therefore unfitted for many purposes for which a Fuegian requires a canoe. A much larger and better kind of canoe is therefore made, which has the useful property of being made in separate parts, so that the cance can be taken to pieces, and the various portions carried overland to any spot where the canoe may be wanted. Such a vessel as this is about fifteen feet in length and a yard in width, and, being very buoyant, is capable of holding a whole family, together with their house, and weapons, and utensils. It is considerably raised both at the bow and the stern, and the various pieces of which it is made are sewed together with thongs of

The very character of a Fuegian's life shows that he must, to a certain degree, be a nomad. He never cultivates the soil, he never builds a real house, he never stores up food for the future, and so it necessarily follows that when he has eaten all the mussels, limpets, oysters, and fungi in one spot, he must move to another. And, the demands of hunger being imperious, he cannot wait, but, even if the weather be too stormy to the coast to another, he is still forced to go, and has therefore hit upon the ingenious plan of taking his canoe to pieces, and making the journey by land and not by sea. An illustration on the following page shows him shifting quarters

All he has to do in this case is to unlace the hide thongs that lash the canoe together, take it to pieces, and give each piece to some occurs to them, and when Europeans first member of the family to carry, the strongest taking the most cumbrous pieces, such as the side and bottom planks, while the smaller portions are borne by the children. When

hut to perish, and cut down fresh sticks when they arrive at the spot on which they mean to settle for a time.

The Fuegians are good fire makers, and do not go through the troublesome process of rubbing two sticks upon each other. They have learned the value of iron pyrites (the same mineral which was used in the "wheellock" fire-arm of Elizabeth's time), and obtain it from the mountains of their islands. The tinder is made either of a dried fungus or moss, and when the pyrites and a pebble are struck together by a skilful hand, a spark is produced of sufficient intensity to set fire to the tinder. As soon as the spark has taken hold of the tinder, the Fuegian blows it until it spreads, and then wraps it up in a ball of dry grass. He rapidly whirls the grass ball round his head, when the dry foliage bursts into flames, and the fire is com-

Still, the process of fire making is not a very easy one, and the Fuegians never use their pyrites except when forced to do so, preferring to keep a fire always lighted, and to carry a firestick with them when they travel. Fire is, indeed, a necessary of life to the Fuegians, not so much for cooking as for warming purposes. Those who have visited them say that the natives always look cold and shivering, as indeed they are likely to do, considering that they wear no clothes. and that even in their houses they can but obtain a very partial shelter from the elements.

Their cookery is of the rudest description, and generally consists in putting the food into the hot ashes, and allowing it to remain there until it is sufficiently done for their taste - or, in other words, until it is fairly warmed through. Cooking in vessels of any kind is unknown to them, and the first lessons given them in cooking mussels in a tin pan were scarcely more successful than those in sewing, when the women invariably made a hole in the stuff with the needle, pulled the thread out of the eye, and then insinuated it through the hole made by the needle. They were repeatedly taught the use of the eye in carrying the thread, but to little purpose, as they invariably returned to the old fashion which they had learned with a fish-bone and fibre of sinew.

Though so constantly in the water, the Fuegians have not the most distant idea of washing themselves. Such a notion never smaller cance is gen-, on which the heavier , sto the lnut, in some arry the upright rods often do not trouble burden, but leave the lown fresh sticks when on which they mean

od fire makers, and do
oublesome process of
on each other. They
so of iron pyrites (the
soused in the "wheelizabeth's time), and
attains of their islands,
her of a dried fungus
pyrites and a pebble
a skilful hand, a spark
hat intensity to set fire
on as the spark has
or, the Fuegian blows
then wraps it up in a
c rapidly whirls the
head, when the dry
es, and the fire is com-

fire making is not a Fuegians never use hen forced to do so, ee always lighted, and ith them when they it, a necessary of life to uch for cooking as for hose who have visited ves always look colded they are likely to hey wear no clothes, houses they can but helter from the ele-

ne rudest description, in putting the food allowing it to remain ently done for their ds, until it is fairly king in vessels of any them, and the first cooking mussels in a more successful than he women invariably fif with the needle, of the eye, and then he hole made by the ceatedly taught the gathet thread, but to avariably returned to help had learned with sinew.

7 in the water, the most distant idea of uch a notion never en Europeans first light of a man washthem so irresistibly rst into shouts of since of this utter



(1.) A FUEGIAN SETTLEMENT. (See page 1165.)



(2.) FUEGIANS SHIFTING QUARTERS, (See page 1168.)

neglect
daubing
they are
any one
ance wit
a singulthey swu
persist in
embraci
violentily
visitor p
skin sui
which ha
soon as l
Althour
posed tr
murdere
ker Sno
terms wi
ing them
entirely
to come e
in obtain
Jemmy
edwated
might ci
as mostl
soon strij
tain Sno
three ye
Button a
countryn
The m
knowledg
he had et
When fir
words ca
covered lis
manu
stepped o
bow in sa
captain, t
salors, w
lately nal
being as
The fa
gularly de
great diffition, and
eign land
eign land

neglect of cleanliness, and the habit of be- any sentence after hearing it once, though daubing themselves with grease and clay, they are very offensive to the nostrils, and any one who wishes to cultivate an acquaintance with them must make up his mind to and with them must make up his mind to a singular variety of evil odors. Moreover, they swarm with parasites, and, as they will persist in demonstrating friendly feelings by embracing their guest with a succession of violently affectionate hugs, the cautious visitor provides himself either with an oil-skin suit, or with some very old clothes, which he can give away to the natives as

soon as he regains his vessel.

Although the Fuegians are often ill-disposed toward strangers, and indeed have murdered many boats' crews, Captain Par-ker Snow contrived to be on very friendly terms with them, going on shore and visiting them in their huts, so as to place himself entirely in their power, and allowing them to come on board his ship. He was fortunate Jemmy Button, who had been partially educated in England, with the hope that he might civilize his countrymen. However, as mostly happened in such cases, he was soon stripped of all his goods; and when Captain Snow visited Tierra del Fuego, twentythree years afterward, he found Jemmy Button as naked and dirty as any of his

countrymen, as were his wife and daughter.
The man, however, retained much of his knowledge of English, a few words of which he had engrafted upon his native language. When first he arrived on board, the English when first he arrived on board, the English words came with difficulty; but he soon recovered his fluency, and had not forgotten his manners, touching his forehead as he stepped on the quarter-deck, and making his bow in sailor fashion when he addressed the captain, to the entire consternation of the sailors, who could not understand an absolutely naked savage speaking English, and being as well-mannered as themselves.

The faculty of acquiring language is singularly developed in the Fuegian. Generally, the inhabitants of one country find great difficulty in mastering the pronunciation, and especially the intonation, of a foreign land; but a Fuegian can repeat almost fellow countrymen.

of course he has not the slightest idea of its meaning.

A very absurd example of this curious facility of tongue occurred to some sailors who went ashore, and taught the natives to drink coffee. One of the Fuegians, after drinking his coffee, contrived to conceal the tin pot, with the intention of stealing it. The sailor demanded the restoration of his property, and was greatly annoyed that every word which he uttered was instantly repeated by the Fuegian. Thinking at last, that the man must be mocking him, and forgetting for the instant that he did not understand one word of English, the sailor assumed a menacing attitude, and bawled out, "You copper-colored rascal, where is my tin pot?" The Fuegian, nowise disconcerted, assumed precisely the same attitude, and exclaimed in exactly the same manner, "You copper-colored rascal, where is my tin pot?" As it turned out, "the copper-colored rascal" had the pot tucked under his arm.

The natives evidently seemed to think that their white visitors were very foolish for failing to comprehend their language, and tried to make them understand by bawling at the top of their voice. On one or two occasions, when a number of them came on board, they much annoyed Captain Snow by the noise which they made, until a bright thought struck him. He snatched up a speaking trumpet, and bellowed at his visitors through it with such a stunning effect that their voices dropped into respectful silence, and they began to laugh at the manner in which they had been outbawled by a single man.

As far as can be ascertained, the Fuegians have no form of government. They live in small communities, not worthy of the name of tribes, and having no particular leader, except that the oldest man among them, so long as he retains his strength, is looked up to as a sort of authority. Their ideas of religion appear to be as ill-defined as those of government, the only representative of religion being the conjuror, who, however, exercises but very slight influence upon his

CHAPTER CXXI.

THE PATAGONIANS.

APPEARANCE - WEAPONS - HORSEMANSHIP.

POSITION OF PATAGONIA - STATURE OF THE INHABITANTS - SIGNIFICATION OF THE NAME - HORRE FURNITURE - THE STIRRUP AND BOOT - AN INGENIOUS SPUR - THE GIRTH AND ITS CONSTRUC-TION - PRIMITIVE BUCKLES - THE BRIDLE AND ITS ACCOMPANYING WHIP - THE PATAGONIAN AND SPANISH BITS - SIZE AND STRENGTH OF THEIR HORSES - HORSE-RACING - THE BOLAS, THEIR CONSTRUCTION, AND DIFFERENT VARIETIES OF FORM-WAR IN PATAGONIA-THE SPARE HORSES AND THEIR USE - THE RETURN FROM BATTLE - A HUNTING EXPEDITION - CHASING THE GUANACO - A TERRIFIED HERD - THE DISADVANTAGE OF CURIOSITY - DECOY GUANACOS --PARTRIDGE CATCHING - THE POWER OF FASCINATION.

strait so narrow that in certain spots human beings might converse across the water, is the land called Patagonia.

It derives this now familiar title from a nickname given to the inhabitants by Magellan's sailors. As we shall presently see when treating of their costume, the Patagonians wear a sort of gaiter to protect their ankles against thorns. These gaiters are made of the furry skin of the guanaco, the long hair spreading out on either side of the foot. The sailors, ever ready to ridicule any custom new to them, remarked this conspicuous part of the dress, and nicknamed the natives Patagones, i. e. duck-feet, a name which has ever since adhered to them, and even been applied to their country

The narrow armlet of sea, to which reference has been made, divides two lands utterly opposed to each other, and inhabited by people totally distinct in appearance and habits. Tierra del Fuego has scarcely a level spot in it, but is composed of even set ravines clothed with trees, and precipitous, snowclad mountains. Patagonia, on the contrary, abounds in vast level plains, unfertile and

without a tree on them.

The human inhabitants of these countries are as different as the lands themselves, the Fuegians being below the average height, and the Patagonians above it. Yet, just as and the Patagonians above it. Yet, just as narrow between the eyes, but the nostrils the Fuegian is not such an absolute dwarf, as are broad and fleshy. The mouth is large,

SEPARATED from Tierra del Fuego by a such an absolute giant, a regiment of English Lifeguards being as tall as an equal number of Patagonians. It is true that if a Patagonian regiment of picked men were raised they would overtop even the Guardsmen, but the old tales about an average of seven or even eight feet are unworthy of credit. Some of the older voyagers even attribute to the Patagonians a much loftier stature, saying that some of them were twelve feet in height, and that when one of them stood with his legs apart, an ordinary man could walk between them without stooping. The color of the Patagonians is somewhat

like that of the Fuegians, being a dark copper brown, the reddish hue coming out well on any part of the skin that happens to be less dirty than others. The hair is coarse, long and black, and is allowed to hang loosely about their faces, being merely kept out of their eyes by a small fillet of guanaco hair. There is scarcely any eyebrow, a deficiency which always gives an unpleasant expression to the eyes, and indeed, even in the old men, the face is almost devoid of hair. The face is roundish, the width being increased by the great-projection of the cheek-bones, and the chin is rather broad and prominent. The small, restless eyes, are black, as is the hair, and rather hidden. under the prominent brows. The nose is has often been stated, the Patagonian is not and the lips rather thick, but altogether the

the 1168 woman the Fue The d

but suffic great Fuegian part of mantle n aco is, as of a deer coat, the only to t by whom It is v

nately fo guanaco : that sup dwelling. droves o it genera twenty o many foe it; and a skill is presently

The gu

and when by the ar when a mantle, w he preser Generally waist by chooses, h it, his han Under the Next co been alre they look knee dow

closely, th having on middle of and great tected. T the Patago the gaiter rup, which As the

horsemans would be ac horse accor in my pos four pieces with raw-h and back of sides depe pended to a very sim each end d short piece ameter is face is not a bad one. The illustration on the 1163d page, of a Patagonian man and woman furnishes a striking contrast with

woman furnishes a striking contrast with the Fuegians, their neighbors. The dress of the Patagonians is simple, but sufficient, and in this respect they form a great contrast to the absolutely naked Fuegians of the opposite shores. The chief part of the costume consists of a large mantle made of guanaco skins. The guan-aco is, as the reader may possibly be aware, one of the llama tribe, and is about the size of a deer. It is covered with a thick woolly coat, the long hair of which is valuable, not only to the Patagonians, but to Europeans, by whom it is made into various fabrics.

It is very plentiful in this country, fortunately for the Patagonians, to whom the guanaco is the very staff of life, the creature that supplies him with food, clothes, and dwelling. Sometimes it is seen in great droves of several hundreds in number, but it generally associates in smaller herds of twenty or thirty individuals. It is a shy animal, as well it may be, considering the animat, as well as always ready to fall upon it; and as it is swift as well as shy, great skill is required in capturing it, as will presently be seen.

The guanaco-skin mantle is very large, and when folded round the body and clasped by the arms, falls as low as the feet; and when a tall Patagonian is seen in this mantle, which adds apparently to his height, he presents a very imposing appearance. Generally, the mantle is confined round the waist by a belt, so that when the wearer chooses, he can throw off the upper part of it, his hands remaining at liberty for action. Under the mantle he wears a small apron.

Next come the curious gaiters, which have been already mentioned. At first sight they look like boots reaching from the knee downward, but when examined more closely, they are seen to be devoid of sole, having only a strap that passes under the middle of the foot, so that the heel and toes and great part of the sole are left unpro-tected. The reason of this structure is, that the Patagonian is nearly always on horseback, and the toe is made to project beyond the gaiter in order to be placed in the stirrup, which is very small and triangular.

As the Patagonians are so devoted to horsemanship no sketch of this people would be adequate without an account of their horse accountrements. I have a complete set in my possession. The saddle is made of four pieces of wood, firmly lashed together the article is complete.

As the space between the grooves is rather less than three inches, it necessarily follows that the Patagonian horseman can only insert his great toe in the stirrup. This, however, is sufficient hold for him, as

he is an admirable though careless looking rider, the greater part of his life, from child-hood upward, having been spent on horse-

The spur is as primitive as the stirrup, and exactly resembles in principle the prickspurs of the ancient knights. It consists of two pieces of stick, exactly like those employed for the stirrups, and two short straps of cowhide. A hole is made at each end of the strap, and the sticks are pushed through them, being held in their places, like those of the stirrups, by a groove cut half an inch from their ends, so that the two sticks are

To the upper ends of each stick a leathern thong is applied, and these thongs, being tied over the instep, hold the spur in its place. At the other ends of the sticks holes are bored, into each of which a sharp iron spike is inserted. In my own specimen, the maker has been economical of his iron, and

has only inserted spikes in one of the sticks, so that when the spurs are worn with the spiked stick inward, they are quite as effective as if both sticks were armed. Still, the hole for the reception of the spikes has been bored in all the sticks, and there is no doubt that the Patagonian who made the spurs would have inserted the spikes at some time

The spur is worn as follows: The armed sticks come on either side of the foot, the strap which is next to the spiked ends goes round the heel, the other strap passes under the hollow of the foot, and the hide thongs are tied over the instep. Such a spur as this is not only an effective but a cruel instrument, really as bad as the huge metal spurs, with reary as bad as the huge metal spurs, with rowels four inches in diameter, which the Guachos wear. It is impossible to see this simple form of spur without recalling the old story of "Sandford and Merton," and referring to the adventure of Tommy Merton, who, on being forbidden to use spurs, stuck pins into the heels of his boots, and was run away with in consequence.

The girth is a singularly ingenious piece of work. The strength of the girth itself is four pieces of wood, firmly lashed together with raw-hide thongs, and both the front and back of the saddle are alike. From the sides depend the stirrups, which are appended to leathern thongs, and are made in a very simple manner. A hole is made at each end of a stout leathern strap, and a short piece of stick about half an inch in dishort piece of stick about half an inch in dismade of two strands of raw hide, probably ametar is thrust through them, being reprodigious. At first sight it looks as if it were ameter is thrust through them, being re- that of guanaco, and looks as strong as ordi-

OF THE NAME-HORSE RTH AND ITS CONSTRUC-HIP-THE PATAGONIAN E-RACING -THE BOLAS. PATAGONIA - THE SPARE PEDITION -- CHASING THE Y- DECOY GUANACOS --

a regiment of English ll as an equal number true that if a Patagoted men were raised ven the Guardsmen, an average of seven unworthy of credit. agers even attribute much loftier stature. em were twelve feet ordinary man could hout stooping. gonians is somewhat

rians, being a dark lish hue coming out skin that happens to thers. The hair is nd is allowed to hang s, being merely kept nall fillet of guanaco any eyebrow, a degives an unpleasant and indeed, even in is almost devoid of lish, the width being t-projection of the hin is rather broad small, restless eyes, r, and rather hidden prows. The nose is res, but the nostrils. The mouth is large, , but altogether the

nary catgut. Buckles are unknown to the which is more celebrated for strength and

and fastening off the ends.

The bit and bridle are equally ingenious. It consists of a squared bar of iron four and a half inches long, the ends of which are passed through holes in doubled pieces of hide, and hammered when cold into a sort of rivet-like shape, so as to retain the leather in its place. To the lower part of the leathers are attached a couple of stout thongs, which are passed under the lower jaw of the horse, and then tied, so that they keep the bit in its place, and at the same time act as a sort of curb.

To the upper part of the leathers are fixed the long plaited thongs which are used as reins, and which seem strong enough to hold an elephant, much more a horse. The Patagonian uses no separate whip, but has a long double strap of stout hide, which is fixed to the junction of the reins, so that there is no danger of losing it.

This is the ordinary bit of a Patagonian hunter, but those who can obtain it like to use the cruel Spanish bit, which they fit up in their own way with thongs of plaited hide. One of these bits is shown in illustration No. 4 on the following page. The principal distinguishing point about these bits is the large iron ring, which passes over the horse's jaw, and gives to the rider a leverage so powerful that he could break the jaw of any horse without making any very great exer-tion. By the use of this bit, the horse is soon taught to stop almost suddenly, to wheel in a very limited area, and to perform the various evolutions which are needed in carrying out the pursuit in which the Patagonian depends for much of his liveli-

The reins which are attached to this bit are of enormous strength, and are plaited in a square form, so that no amount of pulling which any horse could accomplish would endanger them. The whip is attached to these reins like that of the last mentioned apparatus, but is more severe, thicker, and heavier, and is made of a long and broad belt of hide, cut into four strips, which are plaited together, flat and narrow strips about four inches long answering as the lash. It will be seen that the Patago-nian is by no means merciful to his beast, but that he uses a bit, spur, and whip which are, though so simple in appearance, more severe in practice than those which have a far more formidable aspect.

The horses which he rides are descended from those which were introduced by the Spaniards, and which have multiplied so rapidly as almost to deserve the name of indigenous animals. They are of no great size, being under fifteen hands high, and be-

Patagonian, who has invented in their stead a mode of tightening the girth by passing straps through holes, hauling upon them, carry so heavy a rider after creatures so fleet as the guanaco or the rhea.

The Patagonians are fond of racing, but never make their courses longer than a quarter of a mile. The reason for these The reason for these short races is, that their horses are not required to run for any length of time at full speed, but to make quick and sudden dashes, so as to enable the rider to reach his prey, and hurl the singular missiles with which

he is armed.

There is yet an article needed to complete the equipment of a Patagonian. This is the celebrated "bolas," a weapon which looks almost contemptible, but in practised hands is exceptionably formidable. It consists of two or sometimes three balls at the end of hide thongs. The form most in use is that which is represented in illustration No. 3 on the next page. The native name for the two-ball bolas is somai, and that for the three-ball weapon is achico.

The first point in making the bolas is to procure the proper balls, and the second to prepare the proper rope to which they are fastened. The ordinary balls are made of stone, and are nearly as large as cricket balls. They are made by the women, who pass much of their time in supplying the men with these necessaries of life. To cut and grind one of these stones is a good day's work, even for an accomplished workwoman.

A still more valuable ball is made of iron, which has the advantage of being so much heavier than stone that the ball is consider ably smaller, and therefore experiences less resistance from the air, a quality which is of the first consequence in a missile weapon. The most valuable are those which are made of copper, as is the case with the specimen from which the illustration is taken. Each of these balls weighs eighteen ounces, in spite of its small size, so that the weapon is a very formidable one.

The thong to which the balls are attached is nine feet in length, and is made in the following manner: two pairs of thongs of raw hide are cut, and, while they are still fresh and wet, each pair is twisted together so as to form a two-stranded rope. These ropes are again twisted into one, so that the aggregate strength of the four is enormous.

Round each of the balls is then laid a circular piece of guanaco hide, with holes bored all round the edge. The ends of the thougs being passed through the holes and laced tightly, the raw hide is drawn over the balls, and encloses them in a sort of pocket, as is seen by the enlarged figure in the illustration. This specimen is one of the three-ball weapons. In this case a third thong five feet six inches in length has been size, being under fifteen hands high, and be-longing to that well-known mustang breed other interlaced with the strands of the first

(2.) LASS (See page 11 ted for strength and pect, qualities which animal that has to after creatures so the rhea.

the rhea.

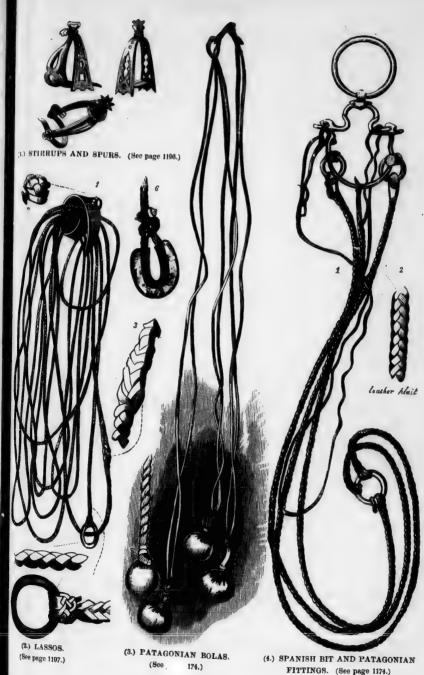
fond of racing, but rees longer than a che reason for these ir horses are not rength of time at full k and sudden dashes, re to reach his prey, missiles with which

e needed to complete agonian. This is the veapon which looks at in practised hands able. It consists of balls at the end of a most in use is that in illustration No. 3 anative name for the tic, and that for the tico.

aking the bolas is to s, and the second to be to which they are y balls are made of large as cricket balls. omen, who pass much og the men with these ocut and grind one od day's work, even rkwoman.

ball is made of iron, e of being so much the ball is consider ore experiences less a quality which is of a missile weapon. hose which are made with the specimen tion is taken. Each eighteen ounces, in that the weapon is

he balls are attached and is made in the opairs of thongs of while they are still is twisted together anded rope. These into one, so that the he four is enormous. Ils is then laid a circle of hide, with holes. The ends of the rough the holes and hide is drawn over them in a sort of enlarged figure in specimen is one of In this case a third in length has been det on a ball, and the estrands of the first



thong the thr such a grasped the ball

hand, s them. The kris is Austral to the maner. Patagor seems to ence.

days, th tassels of It is, such co loose wi fixed or ment th ting asic scarcely families, real war tles are

of skirm to do no they ma

for exfoot, who other, we number of whit as of discipown han Let the

would be could be are comp When either a

chase, or beast or from his point of into the and dash bolas rou ment of I

As 8001 tance, wh the streng ture of weapon does it le force cau fly round

exactly re street acr balls at th to clear th thong exactly at its centre. We have now the three-ball bolas, which is made in such a manner that, when the thongs are grasped at their points of junction, two of the balls hang at equal depths from the hand, and the third is just a foot below

The bolas is to the Patagonian what the kris is to the Malay, the boomerang to the Australian, the lasso to the Gaucho, the club to the Fijian, and the bow to the Andamaner. From early childhood upward no Patagonian is without this weapon, which seems to him an absolute necessity of existence. Generally he carries it twisted round his waist, like an officer's sash of the olden days, the balls dangling at the side like the

tassels of the sash.

It is, however, coiled on the body with such consummate skill that it can be cast loose with a turn of the hand, the eye being fixed on the object of attack, and in a moment the Patagonian is fully armed. Put-ting aside warfare, which in Patagonia is scarcely known, the tribes, or rather the families, not being strong enough to wage real war upon each other, the so-called battles are unworthy of any name except that of skirmishes, which among themselves seem to do no great harm, however formidable they may be to opponents who happen to be unacquainted with the mode of fighting practised by the Patagonians.

For example, a dozen trained riflemen, on foot, who could thoroughly depend on each other, would overmatch ten times their number of mounted Patagonians, who, every

Let the riflemen once allow the Patagonians to come within thirty yards, and they would be annihilated; but as long as the foe could be kept out of throwing distance, they

are comparatively harmless.

When a Patagonian intends to attack when a Fatagonian intends to attack either a human enemy, or some animal of chase, or even, as often happens, some wild beast or bird, he slips the ever-ready bolas from his waist, grasps the thongs at their point of union, drives his primitive spurs into the flanks of his rough-coated steed, and dashes off at full callon whirling the and dashes off at full gallop, whirling the bolas round his head by a dexterous movement of his flexible wrist.

As soon as he comes within throwing distance, which materially varies according to the strength of the thrower and the structure of the bolas, he hurls his singular weapon with unerring skill. No sooner does it leave his hand than the centrifugal force causes the balls to diverge, and they fly round and round in the air with a motion exactly resembling that which an English street acrobat imparts to a couple of padded balls at the ends of a string, when he wants to clear the ground.

Urged by the stalwart arm of the Patagonian, the bolas flies straight to its mark, and no sooner does it strike it, than the impetus communicated to the balls causes the thongs to twist round the unfortunate victim, and bring him at once to a halt. Indeed, should a man be struck by the bolas, he may con-gratulate himself if in three minutes afterwards he finds himself alive, neither having been strangled by the cords twisting round his neck, nor brained by the heavy balls coming in contact with his skull.

The skill which the Patagonians attain is really marvellous. At any distance short of fifty yards a victim marked is a victim slain. So terrific is the gripe of the bolas thong, that Europeans who have been struck with it have been found to suffer from weals as well marked as if they had been made by the stroke of a "cow-hide" whip upon the

bare flesh.

An excellent description of the various kinds of bolas is given by Captain King: "Sometimes two balls, each of which has a cord about a yard in length, are fastened to the thong of the larger set. This is to entangle the victim more effectually. They do not try to strike objects with these balls, but endeavor to throw them so that the thong shall hit a prominent part; and then, of course, the balls swing round in different directions, and the thongs become so 'laid up' (or twisted), that struggling only makes the captive more secure.

number of mounted Patagonians, who, every whit as brave as themselves, are ignorant of discipline, and fight every man for his suddenly—an inevitable consequence. "They can throw them so dexterously as suddenly—an inevitable consequence of these balls swinging round his legs while at full speed — a somai is thrown upon his neck. The two balls hang down, and perplex him so much by dangling about his fore-legs that his speed is much checked, and another set of balls or a lasso may be used to secure without throwing him down. The lasso is not much used, so adroit are

they with the balls.

"A formidable missile weapon is the single ball, called by the Spaniards 'bola perdida.' This is similar to the other in size and substance, but attached to a slighter rope about a yard long. Whirling this ball, about a pound in weight, with the utmost swiftness around their heads, they dash it at their adversary with almost the force of a shot. At close quarters it is used, with a shorter scope of cord, as an efficient headbreaker. Several of these original and not trifling offensive weapons are kept in readiness by each individual, and many a Spaniard, armed with steel and gunpowder, has acknowledged their effect."

The raids which are dignified by the name of warfare are more for plunder than con-quest, inasmuch as the Patagonian cares nothing for territory, of which he has enough and to spare, and almost nothing for military fame. Sometimes he wants plunder; sometimes he means to make a hunting expedition into a district held by another tribe; and sometimes he prepares a tress, and doing all in his power to attract the campaign against an inimical tribe in the same and the same against an inimical tribe in the same against an inimical tribe short campaign against an inimical tribe in revenge for a real or fancied insult.

When preparing for such an excursion, or while expecting the attack of another tribe, the Patagonians keep themselves in con-stant preparation for war. They put on three of their thickest mantles in order to deaden the blow of the bolas, or withstand the point of the spear and arrow. These mantles are not wrapped round them in the ordinary fashion of peace, but are worn like ponchos, the head being thrust through a hole in the middle. The innermost mantle is of guanaco skin, with the hairy side inward, while the others are simple leather, without hair, the place of which is taken by paint. Their heads are guarded by conical caps, made of hide, and often adorned by a tuft of feathers from the rhea.

Those who are wealthy enough purchase a sort of armor composed of a thick hide tunic, with a high collar and short sleeves, and a hat or helmet made of double bull's hide. This garment is very heavy and clumsy, but it will resist every weapon ex-cept bullets, and will make even the blow of the "bola perdida" fall harmless. Those who are too poor to possess a horse, and are obliged to fight on foot, carry shields made of several layers of hide sewed together.

Sometimes they come unexpectedly upon enemics, and a skirmish is the immediate result. In this case they mostly fling aside their cumbrous mantles, and fight without any clothing except the girdle and their spurs. When they make expeditions against inimical districts, they take spare horses with them, one of which is intended to bear the plunder as they return, and to take its share in carrying the warrior to battle. As soon as the Patagonian finds that his weight is beginning to tell upon the horse which he rides, he vaults upon the other without checking them in their gallop, and thus makes sure of a fresh and unwearied horse upon going into action. The second horse is afterward used for the conveyance of slaves, skins, weapons, and other booty.

As they return, they fling off the cumbrous armor of coats and mantles, and ride, according to their fashion, naked to the waist, the innermost mantle being retained in its place by a leathern thong, which acts as a belt. In some of these expeditions a whole troop of loose horses is driven in front of the warriors, and whe a man feels his on a horse becoming wearied, he rides alongand leaps on the fresh animal, not troubling himself about the saddle.

When the Patagonian goes out hunting,

the animals. Anything very strange is sure to attract them, just as it attracts cows, which are horribly afraid of the new object, but, victims of a sort of fascination, are led nearer and nearer by a spirit of curiosity, for which they pay with their lives. When a small herd—say six or eight—of guanacos is seen, they can generally be enticed within range of the bolas by a hunter on foot, who steals as near them as he can manage to do without alarming them, and then plays various antics, such as lying on his back and kicking his legs in the air, tying a strip of hide or a bunch of feathers to a stick, and waving it about. The inquisitive creatures seem unable to resist the promptings of their curiosity, and, though they are really afraid of the strange object, come closer and closer, until the hunter is able to hurl the terrible bolas at them.

When, however, the herd is a large one, the guanacos are much more timid, and, until the introduction of the horse, the Patagonians could seldom do much with them. Now, however, the possession of the horse, together with their knowledge of the guanaco's disposition, enables them to capture and kill great numbers of the animals.

In this mode of chase the Patagonians make use of two characteristics which belong to the guanaco. In the first place, it is a hill-loving animal, and when pursued, or even afraid of pursuit, leaves the plains and makes for some eminence. Like all gregarious animals, the guanacos invariably have sentinels posted on the most elevated points, and trust their safety to their watchfulness, the squeal of alarm being instantly followed by the flight of the herd. Knowing this peculiarity, the hunters are sure that if a herd of guanacos be in the plain, and a hill be near them, the animals will be almost certain to take to it.

The second characteristic is, that the guanacos, when thrown into confusion, entirely lose their presence of mind, running a few steps in one way and then a few steps in another, being quite unable to fix upon

any definite plan o scape.

A large party of hunters, sometimes nearly a hundred in number, arm themselves with their long, light, cane-shafted spears, called chuzos, summon their dogs, and set off toward the spot where a herd of guanacos is known to be. Having fixed upon some grassy hill, half of the hunters push forward and take up a position on the further side, while the others drive the guanacos gently toward their well-known grazing place.

As soon as the animals are fairly on the he carries no weapon except the bolas and a hill, the hunters spread out so as to enclose ensidered rather as a build he see a herd of ently toward them, so young one in disals power to attract as it attracts cows, d of the new object, fascination, are led pirit of curiosity, for heir lives. When a eight — of guanacos ly be enticed within hunter on foot, who had then plays variage on his back and air, tying a strip of ners to a stick and aquisitive creatures promptings of their ey are really afraid the closer and closer, to hurit the terrible

erd is a large one, more timid, and, of the horse, the off the horse, the om do much with the possession of the results of the animals, the results of th

istic is, that the into confusion, enof mind, running d then a few steps nable to fix upon

inters, sometimes imber, arm themlight, cane-shafted mmon their dogs, by where a herd of oe. Having fixed alf of the hunters a position on the others drive the their well-known

are fairly on the



PATAGONIANS HUNTING GAME. (See page 1181.)

them in a driving t band on t the shout lar mann rounding reach the roned by After t

After t guanacos running hindering hunters a spears the a very sho ber, that t and meat.

Althous occasions, being used tos, which like sheep possesses takes a lin the circle little chan of horsem on foot, ac guanaco be instantly a it to such move, and

move, and
On the
engraving
scenery, ar
pursuit of
the flying
are vividly
The you

mentioned solely inten merely for temployed frammals. To feeding ground then committee the captive to under the size of the captive to under the captive to under the size of the captive to the captive to under the size of the captive to under the captive to under the captive to the captive to under the captive to the ca

in the chase
This bird is
African osts
hunters wou
In the chase
employ the is
capturing the
the rhea shadency to bee
its moveme
taneously free

them in a semicircle, and then dash forward, driving the herd up the hill. The detached band on the other side, as soon as they hear the shouts, spread themselves out in a similar manner, the two bodies completely surrounding the hill, so that when the guanacos reach the summit they find themselves environed by enemies.

After the usual custom in such cases, the guanacos lose all presence of mind, some running one way, some another, mutually hindering each other's escape, so that the hunters are able to pierce with their long spears the finest animals, and thus secure in a very short space of time so great a num-ber, that they are amply supplied with skins

Although they carry the spear on these occasions, they are not without the bolas, it being used for capturing the young guanacos, which are kept in a domesticated state like sheep. Now and then a guanaco, which possesses more sense than its comrades, takes a line of its own, and dashes through the circle of its enemies. Still it has but little chance of escaping, for round the circle of horsemen there is another circle of men on foot, accompanied by dogs. As soon as a guanaco breaks through the first circle, it is instantly seized by the dogs, which terrify it to such an extent that it is unable to move, and neither tries to escape nor resist.

On the preceding page is a spirited engraving which represents Patagonian seenery, and the natives in their favorite pursuit of hunting game. The hot chase, the flying bolas, the bewildered guanacos are vividly pictured.

The young guanacos which have been mentioned as being domesticated are not solely intended to furnish food, or even bred merely for the sake of their skins. They are employed for the sake of decoying the adult animals. Taking the young guanaco to the feeding grounds, the hunter ties it to a bush, and then conceals himself behind it. By imitating the mother's cry, he induces the captive to utter the plaintive bleating sound by which a young one calls for its mother. This is a sound which the adult guanacos cannot resist, and as soon as they come within twenty yards or so of the bush, the bolas is launched, and the animal at which it is aimed falls to the ground, enveloped in the fatal coils.

The power of the bolas is eminently shown in the chase of the rhea, or American ostrich. This bird is as swift and wary as the true African ostrich, and, but for the bolas, the hunters would scarcely be able to secure it. In the chase of this bird the Patagonians employ the same device which is used in capturing the guanacos. They know that the rhea shares with the guanaco the tendency to become confused and uncertain in it into the air. its movements when it is pressed simul-

therefore try to surround the herd and converge upon it, or, at all events, two or three of them attack it from opposite quarters, driving it first one way and then another, so that the bird becomes so perplexed that it cannot make up its mind to run in one direction, and escape its foes by its superior speed, but allows them to come within range of the bolas, when its fate is sealed.

The hunters also know that, in common with all the ostrich tribe, and, indeed, with many wild animal of chase, the rhea always runs against the wind. It is therefore easy for them to ascertain the direction which the bird will take, and by sending two or three horsemen several miles windward the retreat of the bird is easily cut off. The Patagonian can even kill the little cavies with the bolas,

so accurate is his aim.

The reader may easily imagine that such a weapon as this would be serviceable in warfare. When the Patagonian uses it in battle, he does not always fling it, apparently because he does not like to deprive himself of his weapon. Sometimes he dashes alongside of a foe, and throws one of the balls at him, just as if he were throwing a stone, re-taining the other ball in his hand, so as to recover the weapon after the blow has sped. When the Patagonian carries the threeball bolas, which has already been described, he uses the third ball, which, as may be remembered, is attached to the longest thong, as an English robber uses his "life-pre-server," or an American his "slung-shot."

Another mode of procuring game is practised by the Patagonians, and is identical with that which is used by the North Africans in taking the partridge, the South Africans in killing the bustard, as well as by the inhabitants of other parts of the earth. There is a sort of partridge which is common on the plains, and is called the Pampas par-tridge. Its scientific name is Nothuria major. The weapon, or rather implement, required for this sport is a very simple one. It is nothing more than a light reed, some eight feet in length, at the end of which is a noose composed of a strip cut from the side of a long feather. This noose has sufficient pliability to be drawn tight when pulled and sufficient elasticity to keep itself

Furnished with this implement, the Pata-gonian looks out for a partridge on the ground and, when he finds one, begins riding round and round it in an ever decreasing circle. The bird is much perplexed by this conduct, and, instead of flying away, it simply crouches closely to the ground. By degrees, the young hunter—this sport being only practised by boys—comes so close to the bird that he slips the nose over its neck, and, before it can spread its wings for flight, jerks

An expert bird catcher will secure three or taneously from opposite directions. They four birds in an hour by this curious mode of hunting, which may be pursued on foot as it is necessary to keep the insect between well as on horseback. The only drawback themselves and the sun. to it lies in the very limited time during which it can be attempted. It has been found that, if the shadow of the hunter should fall upon the partridge, the bird seems to shake off the strange feeling which paralyzes its energies, and flies away before it can be captured. Consequently, the sport can only be pursued so long as the sun is toward the meridian; and as soon as the shadows lengthen sufficiently to throw them on the bird, the young hunter abandons his sport. All practical naturalists are aware of the alarm caused by a shadow falling on some animal which they are watching or trying to capture; and entomologists in particular

As to the strange sort of fascination which forces the bird to crouch instead of flying away, it exists in very many birds, of which the domestic poultry or any of the common cage-birds are familiar examples. Any one who is accustomed to deal with these birds can take one, stand it or lay it on a table, go away, and return after an absence of hours, knowing that the bird will not dare to move. During the time that I kept and bred canaries, I used to free them from the dreaded red mite by sprinkling insect powder under their feathers, laying them on a piece of pe-per covered with insect powder, and leaving them there for an hour or two, until the have learned that, to approach most insects, powder had destroyed all the parasites.

> PATAGON TIA --N

> > SLA ANI

WE will the Pata can be r no settle How n is descri

kept a pr had ever manners the house there wa young ch many feet hut, toget Presently the rest. within the come to a The chief that he wa having no man admi did not h he was a r the lady w steal hors plenty of These

temptuous himself to accept hin repeatedly of grease father to but was an tried to pa the young p the insect between

rt of fascination which ouch instead of flying many birds, of which or any of the common examples. Any one deal with these birds or lay it on a table, go an absence of hours. will not dare to move. I kept and bred cananem from the dreaded insect powder under hem on a piece of pat powder, and leaving our or two, until the l all the parasites.

CHAPTER CXXIII.

THE PATAGONIANS - Concluded.

DOMESTIC LIFE.

PATAGONIAN MARRIAGE — APPEAL OF A SUITOR — REJECTION OF THE OFFER, AND RESULT OF THE NEGO-TIATION — CURIOUS MODE OF SMOKING — PRESCRIPTION FOR A SICK CHILD — PATAGONIANS AT HOME -NATIVE COOKERY - PATAGONIAN ARCHITECTURE - TREATMENT OF WOMEN, CHILDREN, AND SLAVES — MODE OF GOVERNMENT — POWER OF THE CACIQUE — NOTIONS OF RELIGION — OFFERINGS AND LIBATIONS — FUNERALS IN PATAGONIA — SECLUSION OF WIDOWS — VISITS OF CONDOLENCE,

WE will now glance at the domestic life of catch plenty of horses, and become a great the Patagonians, if the word "domestic" can be rightly applied to people who have

no settled home or domus.

How marriage is conducted among them is described by Captain Bourne, who was there was a daughter—a widow, with a young child. One evening, the tramp of many feet was heard on the outside of the hut, together with the mutterings of voices. Presently, one voice was heard louder than the rest, evidently addressed to some one within the hut. It was the voice of a suitor come to ask the hand of the young widow. The chief scornfully refused the offer, saying that he was not worthy to be her husband, having no horses or other property. The man admitted that at the present time he did not happen to have any horses, but that he was a remarkably good thief, and that, if the lady would only accept him, he would steal horses, catch guanacos, and give her plenty of grease.

These overtures being rejected as contemptuously as the last, the suitor addressed himself to the lady, who was very willing to accept him, and entirely yielded when he repeatedly promised to bring home plenty of grease for her. She then besought her father to listen to the suitor's application,

chief.

This was too much for the old man. He jumped up in a towering passion, seized the cradle in which his little grandchild was lykept a prisoner for a considerable time, and had every opportunity of studying their manners and customs. It appeared that in the house of the chief to whom he belonged there was a daughter—a widow with the state of the chief to whom he belonged there was a daughter—a widow with the state of the chief to whom he belonged there was a daughter—a widow with the state of the chief to whom he belonged there was a daughter—a widow with the state of the chief to whom he belonged the control of the chief to whom he belonged the chief to whom he belonged the control of the chief to whom he belonged the chief to whom he can be control of the chief to whom he belonged the chief to whom he chief the dered her to follow her goods. This was exactly what she wanted; so, accompanied by her mother, she left the hut, and was joined by her intended husband.

A curious mode of smoking is practised among the Patagonians, which somewhat resembles that which is used by the Damaras, as recorded on a preceding page.

When one of these smoking parties is organized, the guests assemble together, sometimes in a hut, and sometimes in the open air. They gravely seat themselves in a cir-cle, round a vessel of water,—sometimes an ox-horn stuck in the ground, and sometimes a sort of basin made of raw hide. All being assembled, one of them takes a stone pipe, and fills it with a mixture of tobacco and the shavings of some yellow wood.

The pipe being prepared, all the company lie flat on their faces, with their mantles drawn up to the top of their heads. The pipe is then lighted and passed round, each drawing into his lungs as much smoke as he can swallow, and retains it as long as he can exist without breathing. As soon as but was angrily refused. Her mother then tried to pacify the angry father, saying that the young man might fulfil his promises, the smoke is expelled, the men begin a

away; and when quiet has been restored, | had gone, the child resumed its crying, but each takes a draught of water, sits silently for a space, and then slowly rises and moves

Captain Bourne is of opinion that this ceremony has in it something of a religious element. The groaning and grunting might be due to the tobacco, or the substance which is mixed with it, but the sounds seemed to him to be louder and more emphatic than they would have been if entirely involuntary; and the breathings, writhings, and other accompaniments, the profound gravity, and the abstinence from speech, all appeared to have some religious signification.

The same traveller gives a very amusing account of a visit paid by a Patagonian physician to the hut of a chief. The party were just preparing to shift their quarters, after the Patagonian fashion, when one of the daughters came in, carrying a child who was crying loudly, and who was supposed in consequence to be very ill. The journey was stopped, and a messenger despatched for the wise man, who soon came, and brought with him his magic medicines, rolled up in two pieces of skin.

These were laid on the ground, and the doctor squatted by the side of them, fixing a steady gaze on the child, who presently ceased crying. Encouraged by this success. the wise man ordered a clay plaster to be applied. This was done. Some yellow clay was brought, moistened until it was like paint, and with this substance the child was anointed from head to foot. The clay seemed to have but little good effect, for the child began to cry as badly as ever.

The two mysterious packages were now untied, and out of one the doctor took a bunch of rhea sinews, and from the other a The doctor then fingered all the sinews successively, muttering something in a very low tone of voice, and after he had muttered for some five minutes or so, he seized his rattle and shook it violently. He next sat in front of the patient, and stared at him as he had done before. After an interval of silent staring, he turned to the chief and asked whether he did not think that the child was better. A nod and a grunt expressed assent, and the mother on being asked the same question gave a similar response.

The same process was then repeatedthe silent stare, the painting with clay, the fingering of the sinews, the muttering of inaudible words, the shaking of the rattle, and the concluding stare. The treatment of the patient was then considered to be complete. The chief gave the doctor two pipefuls of tobacco by way of fee. This was received gratefully by the man of skill, who gave his rattle a final shake by way of as rude and simple as the hut where they

the parents were satisfied that it was better. and, as Captain Bourne testifies, it soon became quite composed, and throve well afterward.

The general mode of life among the Patagonians is not particularly alluring to persons of civilized habits, if we may judge from the graphic picture drawn by Captain Bourne:

"A few dry sticks and a bunch of dry grass were brought; mine host drew from a convenient repository a brass tinder-box with a stone and a piece of steel, and soon produced a blaze that brilliantly illuminated the scene. By its light I was enabled to survey the first specimen of Patagonian architecture that had blessed my vision. It was constructed in a 'pointed' style, though not very aspiring, consisting of a row of stakes about eight feet high, each terminating in a crutch or fork, with a pole laid across them; two parallel rows of stakes on either side about two feet high, with similar terminations and a similar horizontal fixture; and a covering composed of skins of the guanaco sewed together with the sinews of the ostrich, the only thread used by the people. This covering is thrown over the framework and fastened by stakes driven through it into the ground. For purposes of ventilation, some interstices are left; but these again are half closed by skins attached to the outside, so that the air from without and the smoke from within (in default of a chimney) must insinuate themselves through these apertures in great quantities.

"In truth, my first survey was rather hurried; the first cheerful gleam had scarcely set my eyes on the look-out, when I was fain to shut them against an intolerable smoke. In no long time I felt as bacon, if conscious, might be supposed to feel in the process of curing. No lapse of time was sufficient to reconcile the eyes, nostrils, and lungs to the nuisance. Often have I been more than half strangled by it, and compelled to lie with my face to the ground as the only endurable position. 'Talk that is worse than a smoky house' must be something out of date, or Shakespeare's imagination never comprehended anything so detestable as a Patagonian hut. The chief and his numerous household, however, seemed to enjoy immense satisfaction, and jabbered and grunted and played their antics and exchanged grimaces as complacently as if they breathed a highly exhilarating atmosphere.

" My meditations and observations were shortly interrupted by preparations for a meal. The chief's better-half—or rather expressing his appreciation of the chief's were carried on. And now my fancy began liberality, and went his way. As soon as he

eggs, men than s me a existed tion, w

one of the qu guana right a might eral p crotche sharpe forked drove near t smoke too fee was to appetit an ope quickly bits by the gro

and tos

with it

dinner place, b

such a

bringin

eyeing

served starved the grewith th sign of custome " The putting vou eat. -very "Seei knowing if I refu eat wha tions,' were an failed to

vided be and fear into my as offens lowed it This wa and a sai viands s now and

resisted

It is r was so re the guar way fasti most eve it be gu esumed its crying, but sfied that it was better, ne testifies, it soon beand throve well after-

of life among the Pataularly afluring to perbits, if we may judge ture drawn by Captain

and a bunch of dry nine host drew from a y a brass tinder-box iece of steel, and soon brilliantly illuminated ght I was enabled to cimen of Patagonian blessed my vision. It pointed 'style, though onsisting of a row of et high, each terminat-ork, with a pole laid allel rows of stakes on feet high, with similar similar horizontal fixcomposed of skins of gether with the sinews ly thread used by the g is thrown over the g is thrown over the ned by stakes driven round. For purposes attentices are left; but osed by skins attached the air from without within (in default of nsinuate themselves es in great quantities. urvey was rather hurl gleam had scarcely ook-out, when I was gainst an intolerable ime I felt as bacon, if pposed to feel in the o lapse of time was the eyes, nostrils, and Often have I been gled by it, and comface to the ground as sition. 'Talk that is louse' must be some-Shakespeare's imagihended anything so agonian hut. The agonian hut. The mmense satisfaction, nted and played their grimaces as compla-

hed a highly exhilad observations were preparations for a tter-half-or rather four wives - superinerations, which were the hut where they now my fancy began the beef, fowls, and

eggs, the promise of which had lured my repugnance to the flesh of dogs, though men from the boat, had proved stronger than suggestions of prudence, and had made me a prisoner. But these dainties, if they existed anywhere within the chief's jurisdic-

tion, were just at present reserved.
"The old hag threw down from the top of one of the stakes that supported the tent the quarter of some animal, whether dog or guanaco was past imagining. She slashed right and left with an old copper knife with right and lett with an old copper kille with might and main, till it was divided into sev-eral pieces. Then taking a number of crotched sticks about two feet long, and sharpened at the points, she inserted the forked ends into pieces of the meat, and forked ends into pieces of the meat, and drove the opposite points into the ground near the fire, which, though sufficient to smoke and comfortably warm the mess, was too feeble to roast it. At all events, time was too precious, or their unsophisticated appetites were too craving, to wait for such an operation, and the raw morsels were quickly snatched from the smoke, torn into bits by their dirty hands, and thrown upon

the ground before us.

"The Indians seized them with avidity, and tossed a bit to me; but what could I do with it? I should have no appetite for the dinner of an alderman at such a time and place, but as for tasting meat that came in such a questionable shape, there was no bringing my teeth or resolution to it. While eyeing it with ill-suppressed disgust, I observed the savages, like a horde of halfstarved dogs, devouring their portions with the greatest relish, seizing the fragment with their fine white teeth, giving every sign of enjoyment, except what one is ac-

sign or enjoyment, except what one is accustomed to see in human beings.

"The old chief remarked the slight I was putting upon his hospitality. 'Why don't you eat, man? This meat very good to eat—very good to eat. Eat, man, eat.'

"Seeing him so much excited, and not knowing what deeds might follow his words if I replied I thought it explaint to the

if I refused, I thought it expedient to try to eat what was set before me, asking no questions,'—thinking, moreover, that if there were any evil spirit in it that the fire had failed to expel, it could not possibly have resisted the smoke. So, being sorely di-vided between aversion to the strange flesh and fear of showing it, I forced a morsel into my mouth. Its taste was by no means as offensive as its appearance, and I swallowed it with less disgust than I had feared. This was my first meal with the savages, and a sample of many others, though better viands afterward varied their monotony now and then."

It is most probable that the meat which way fastidious as to their diet, and eat almost every animal which they kill, whether it be guanaco, rhea, or cavy. They have a This is the ordinary kind of dwelling, but

they cannot, like the Fuegians, be accused of eating the flesh of human beings rather than that of dogs.

Their chief dainty is the flesh of a young Their chief dainty is the nesh of a young mare, and it is rather curious that these strange people will not, if they can help themselves, eat that of a horse, unless it be disabled by an accident. They are fond of the fat of mares and rheas, separating it from the flesh by boiling, and pouring it into bladders, much as lard is treated in this country. Yet the fat obtained from the gua-naco is not stored like that of the mare

and rhea, but is eaten raw. As is the case with the Fuegians, the Patagonians obtain a considerable amount of food from the seashore, great quantities of limpets, mussels, and similar creatures being gathered by the women and children. Besides animal food, vegetables are con-

Besides animal food, vegetables are consumed, though rather sparingly, by the Patagonians. Two roots form part of their ordinary diet. One is called "tus," and looks something like a yam or potato. It is bulbous, and when cleaned and properly cooked bears a strong resemblance to a baked potato. The second root is called "chalas," and is a long, slender root, scarcely so thick as an ordinary pencil.

so thick as an ordinary pencil.

It is rather remarkable that the Patagonians do not seem to have invented any intoxicating drink. They soon learn to appreciate rum and other spirits, and will intoxicate themselves whenever they can procure the means, but they obtain all fermented and distilled liguous from the white mented and distilled liquors from the white traders, and not from their own manufac-ture. They have a sort of cooling drink made of the juice of barberries mixed with water, but it is drunk in its natural state, and is not fermented.

The dwellings of the Patagonians are worthy of a brief description, inasmuch as they show the distinction between the Patagonian and Fuegian ideas of architecture. The reader will remember that the principal portion of the Fuegian hut consists of sticks and branches, whereas the Patagonian only uses the sticks and poles by way of a framework whereupon he can spread his

tent of skins.

These huts, called by the Spanish "toldos," and by the Patagonians "cows," are of variable dimensions. Generally they are little more than sloping sheds, six or seven feet high in front, and only two feet high at the back. The length of each toldo is about twelve feet, and its width about nine feet. As east winds are hardly ever known in Patagonia, the opening of the hut is always to was so rapidly cooked and eaten was that of the guanaco. The Patagonians are in no A Patagonian village, showing the form of the east, the skin covering of this simple these huts, is represented on the 1197th

in some places a much larger description of wife live happily together, and the husband but is erected for the chief or the medicine thinks it a point of honor to take his wife's man. These houses are gabled, being eight feet or so in height in the middle, and slop-ing on either side to the wall, which is five feet or so in height. Huts of this kind are nearly square, their depth rather exceeding their length.

The sleeping accommodation of these habitations is very simple, and consists of skins, which are spread on the floor. Other skins rolled up are laid along the side of skins rolled up are laid along the said of the hut, and serve as pillows, the chil-dren lying in a corner by themselves, and the dogs sleeping at the feet of their owners. Those children who are unable to walk are laid in simple cradles made of square pieces of guanaco skin, hung hammockwise by four ends to the rafters of the

During the daytime the infants are kept, or rather packed, in cradles made of flat pieces of board, over which some pliable sticks are bent in a semicircular form. The child is placed between two pieces of guanaco skin, fastened in the cradle, and can then be carried about without trouble. Even when the family is shifting quarters, the cradle can be hung on the saddle-bow of the mother's horse, the little occupant being perfectly contented with its situation.

It might seem from this statement that children are treated with neglect. Such, however, is not the case, the Patagonians being remarkable for their parental affec-tion, and being much more inclined to spoil their children by over-indulgence than to behave unkindly toward them. Indeed, when a Patagonian chief wishes to change his quarters, and the people do not wish to part with him, they take one of his children, indulge it in every way, and declare that he must leave it behind him. The affectionate parent cannot bring himself either to leave his child, or to deprive it of the society of those who are kind to it, and in consequence

he remains with his people.

The condition of the women is a very tolerable one. They certainly have to work hard all their lives unless their husband be rich enough to purchase slaves, or be fortu-nate enough to procure them by a raid on some other tribe. Many such slaves are obtained from the Fuegians, who do not scruple even to sell their own relatives when they can procure a good price for them. Even the wives of the chief men are not exempt from labor unless their husbands happen to possess slaves.

Generally the wives are faithful to their husbands, but there are cases where the woman has thought herself ill-treated, and has betaken herself to another protector. Should he be an inferior, the aggrieved husshould he be an inferior, the aggreed hus-band makes him pay for his offence; but if pressed with the idea of some Being infia superior, he is obliged to put up with his nitely greater than themselves, who knows

thinks it a point of honor to take his wife's part if she should fall into a dispute, no matter whether she be right or wrong. will scold her severely in private, and even inflict corporal punishment on her, for involving him in such a dispute, but he will

make a point of upholding her in public.

The mode of punishment of the Patagonians is rather variable, but is generally a modification of the patriarchal system. The heads of families or tribes possess he-reditary rank, and take the lead in all important events of peace or war. Their power is, however, not very great, and they are not able to raise taxes, nor enforce compulsory labor without payment. These chiefs, or caciques, as they are termed, can, if they choose, refuse the rank, and many do so, preferring to become subjects of some other cacique to the trouble and responsibil.

tity which accompany the post.

According to Falkner, "the cacique has the power of protecting as many as apply to him; of composing or silencing any difference of the cacique has the power of protecting as many as apply to him; of composing or silencing any difference of the cacique and the cacique has the cacique h ence; or delivering over the offending party to be punished with death, without being accountable for it. In these respects his will is the law. He is generally too apt to take bribes, delivering up his vassals, and even his relations, when well paid for it.

"According to his orders the Indians encamp, march, or travel from one place to another to hunt or to make war. He frequently summons them to his tent, and harangues them upon their behavior, the exigencies of the time, the injuries they have received, the measures to be taken, &c. In these harangues he always extols his own prowess and personal merit. When eloquent he is greatly esteemed; and when a cacique is not endowed with that accomplishment, he generally has an orator who supplies his place."

The religion of the Patagonian is a polytheism, the natives believing that there are great numbers of deities, some good and some evil. Each family is under the guardianship of one of the good deities, and all the members of that family join him when they die. Beside these gods there are subordinate demons, good to their own friends, but bad toward all others, so that on the whole the bad predominates in them. They are called by the name of Valichu.

Yet among some of the Patagonian tribes there is even an approach to personal relig-ion. It has been thought that the Pata-gonians are totally destitute of such religion. This, however, is certainly not the case, as even our limited knowledge of these people, their language, and their habits shows that, even though they may not possess any defiloss. Generally, however, the husband and everything that they do. Thus they believe

ther, and the husband mor to take his wife's all into a dispute, no eright or wrong. He y in private, and even ment on her, for in a dispute, but he will ding her in public, ishment of the Pata-able, but is generally e patriarchal system, or tribes possess here the lead in all imeace or war. Their tvery great, and they takes, nor enforce out payment. These they are termed, can, the rank, and many do me subjects of some ouble and responsibiliher and responsibilih

he post.

ler, "the cacique has

g as many as apply to

silencing any differ
er the offending party

death, without being

these respects his will

erally too apt to take

his vassals, and even

ll paid for it.

rders the Indians enel from one place to
make war. He fren to his tent, and haeir behavior, the exine injuries they have
to be taken, &c. In
lways extols his own
I merit. When eloteemed; and when a
with that accomplisha an orator who sup-

Patagonian is a polylieving that there are tites, some good and ly is under the guarood deities, and all the y join him when they is there are subordiheir own friends, but so that on the whole in them. They are Valichu.

the Patagonian tribes and to personal religought that the Pataitute of such religion. A such a such religion, and the case, as edge of these people, ir habits shows that, not possess any defin, they are still imof some Being infimuselves, who knows. Thus they believe



(1.) PATAGONIAN VILLAGE. (See page 1185.)



(2.) PATAGONIAN BURIAL GROUND, (See page 1189.)

present seal, uprayer, the unsteller n gonnam touch t repeate The nians v lar trib in the When square feet in a square in a sit other p is then quantity next sac next sac one man the head removed on four four ho which i burned, closes the reader man

in an o this, li be, is y To thanks food ai acknow knows and is for exa having

in an omniscient Being; and such a belief as this, limited and imperfect though it may be, is yet a step toward true religion.

To this unknown Being they return thanks when they have obtained a supply of food after long famine, so that we find them acknowledging that the great Being, who knows all their deeds, watches over them, and is the Giver of all good things. When, for example, they have procured a seal after having been half-starved for months, they assemble round a fire, and the oldest man present cuts for each person a piece of the seal, uttering over each portion a sort of prayer, and looking upward in devotion to the unseen God, who had sent them meat in their need. Undisciplined as are the Patagomans, totally unaccustomed to self-denial, and mad with hunger, not one of them will touch the food until this invocation has been repeated.

The mode of burial among the Patagonians varies in detail according to the particular tribe, but there is a general resemblance in the ceremonies throughout the country. When a man dies, his body is wrapped in his best mantle, placed on his favorite horse, and conveyed to the place of burial, where a square pit has already been dug, some six feet in depth and two or three feet in width. In this pit the body of the deceased is placed in a sitting position, his bolas, spears, and other property laid beside him, and the pit is then covered with branches, on which a quantity of earth is thrown. The horse is quantity of earth is thrown. The horse is next sacrificed. It is held at the grave by one man, while another kills it by a blow on the head from the bolas, and the skin is then removed, stuffed, and supported at the grave on four posts. At the grave of a cacique four horses are sacrificed. The clothing which is not buried with the deceased is burned, and a feast on the body of the horse closes the proceedings. On page 1187 tho reader may find an engraving of a Patagonian burial ground.

The widows are obliged to remain in a state of the strictest privacy for an entire year, keeping themselves within their huts, never mixing in society, and not even showing themselves unless absolutely obliged to They must blacken themselves with soot, and not eat the flesh of the guanaco, the mare, or the rhea. Should a woman break the rule of seclusion, and be detected in an intrigue, she would at once lose her life at the hands of her dead husband's relations.

Among some of the tribes the tomb is periodically opened, and the skeleton of the deceased, which has been prepared with the greatest care, is washed and clothed in new robes. This office belongs to an old matron, who is specially selected for the task, which becomes in process of time a long and tedi-ous one, as the warriors are placed side by side in the grave, each year gradually adding to the number of those who have to be washed and clothed annually.

Among some of the tribes the skeletons are prepared by laying the bodies on platforms woven from canes and twigs, and dur-ing the time that is occupied in cleaning and bleaching the skeleton the platform is guarded by the friends of the dead man, draped in long mantles, and bearing spears or staves with which they strike the ground, while they sing mournful strains in order to while they sing mourning strains in order to drive away the Valichus or spirits, who may possibly be well disposed toward the dead man, but are more likely to be unfriendly. Should the deceased have been a wealthy

man, many visits of condolence are paid to the relatives, the mourners weeping loudly, and pricking their arms and legs with thorns in order to prove their affection by the effusion of their blood. For these tokens of respect they are rewarded with beads, brass ornaments, and other presents; and it need scarcely be said that the sorrow felt for the deceased and the sympathy excited for his friends depend very much on the amount of property at the disposal of the relatives.

CHAPTER CXXIV.

THE ARAUCANIANS.

DRESS - ETIQUETTE - GOVERNMENT.

DIVISION OF THE NATION INTO TRIBES - THE MAPUCHES - PECULIAR STRUCTURE OF THE HEAD - THE CHERIPA, PONCHO, AND BOOTS — MODE OF SHAVING — DRESSING THE HAIR — THE "PULLING HAIR" FIGHT - DRESS OF THE WOMEN - THE ENORMOUS BREASTFIN - SINGULAR USE OF THIMBLES -ELABORATE HEADDRESS - PAINT - EXHIBITION OF FEMALE VANITY - DRESS OF THE CHILDREN -ARCHITECTURE OF THE ARAUCANIANS - THE CHIEF'S HOUSE AND ITS FURNITURE - LONG HOUSE OF THE MAPUCHES - NUMBER OF FIRES - CODE OF ETIQUETTE - THE SPEECH OF CEREMONY - VALUE OF ORATORY — DEMAND OF TRIBUTE — MODE OF GOVERNMENT — THE GRAND TOQUI — THE COUNCILS OF PEACE AND WAR.

Passing northward from Patagonia, and which an Araucanian may almost invariably taking a westerly direction, we come to the ARAUCANIAN nation. This title was given to them by the Spaniards, just as was the name of Patagonians to their southern neighbors, and, although it is an incorrect one, it has been accepted for so many years that it cannot be conveniently exchanged

for the more correct designation.

The aborigines of Chili and a part of the territory now occupied by the Argentine Republic were formerly one great people, extending over a very considerable portion of the land, and necessarily modified in manners and customs by the influence of climate and geographical position. Their general title was Alapu-ché, or People of the Land, but they were separated into three great divisions, namely, Pehuen-ché, or People of the East; Mara-ché, or People of the West; and Huili-ché, or Far-off People, being those nearest to the Patagonians. Passing over the wars with the Spaniards as foreign to the object of this work, we will describe the Mapuchés, or People of the Country, as they call themselves.

THESE people are rather below the middle height, strong, thick-set, broad-chested, and much inferior in point of form to the North

be distinguished. The foot is as remarkable as the head. It is very short and broad, and rises straight from the toes to the ankle with scarcely any curve, so as to produce a very high but very clumsy looking in-

step.
The ordinary dress of the Mapuché men
The ordinary dress of two garments, namely, is mostly composed of two garments, namely, the "cheripa" (pronounced chereepah) and the poncho. The cheripa is a sort of compromise between a kilt and trousers. It is a piece of stuff, mostly cotton, which is fas-tened to the back of a girdle, passed be-tween the legs, drawn up in front there, and tucked then into the girdle. The poncho is nothing but a large circular piece of stuff, with a hole in the centre, through which the head passes. It is exactly similar in principle to the cloak of Polynesia, and is at once a primitive, efficient, and graceful robe, assuming with every change of attitude folds which delight the eye of an

Beside the poncho and cheripa, the Mapuché generally wears a pair of boots, similar to those of the Patagonians, and made of similar materials, the skin from the hind legs of a horse being drawn over the foot while still fresh, so that it moulds itself to American tribes. The head is narrow, and low in front, broad and high behind, and the back of the head falls in almost a direct line two first toes to pass through and grasp the with the nape of the neck, a peculiarity by small triangular stirrup. The elaborate

horse-t come i people. ets an positio Like Mapue they h fashion vidual

Smith operati where first sis the fac unshav blotche hand t the wh ance. engage "The

beard v

strume

name s

course to proc dandy o neck, a self by painted in defer are pre They merely

cheeks, lashes a the latt paint. evelash bee hur fond, ar greatly. allowed main or think th customs can. The l

top, but in order as the N lock on the ener scalp. Wher dispute

by blow by pulli you are tants to refused. to be we into the other to horse-accoutrements in which the Mapu- and the struggle begins. Each tries to twist

they have they eradicate after the usual they have they eradicate after the usual fashion of savages, plucking out the indi-vidual hairs instead of shaving, Mr. R. E. Smith had the opportunity of seeing the operation performed:— "At one house where we stopped I saw an Indian, who at first sight seemed to be a white man, from the fact that his beard was grown as though unshaven for a week. He looked red and blotched, and was continually raising his hand to some part of his face, wearing all the while an expression of patient endurance. A close scrutiny showed that he was

ance. A close scretch showed that he was engaged in shaving.

"These Indians pull out or nip off the beard with small steel tweezers. This instrument was originally, as the Mapuché name signifies, a clam shell, but, by interto procure a more elegant article. Every dandy carries his tweezers hanging from his neck, and at leisure moments amuses himself by smoothing his face to the taste of his painted mistress. The arguments they use in defence of their treatment of the beard are precisely those used by shavelings the world over."

They do not content themselves with merely removing the hair from the chin, cheeks, and upper lip, but pull out the eyelashes and eyebrows, substituting instead of the latter a slender curved line of black paint. They say that the presence of the eyelashes hinders them in the pursuit of bee hunting, a sport of which they are very fond, and on which they pride themselves greatly. Some of the younger warriors have allowed a very slight fringe of hair to re-main on the upper lip, but the older chiefs think that it is an innovation on the ancient customs, and discountenance it as far as they

The hair of the head is cut short at the top, but is allowed to grow long at the sides, in order that it may be easily grasped, just as the North American tribes leave one long lock on the crown of the head so as to assist the enemy who slays them in getting off the

When two lads quarrel, they settle the dispute with a fight, which is conducted, not by blows with the fist or with a weapon, but by pulling the hair. "Let us pull hair, if you are not afraid," cries one of the dispu-tants to the other. The challenge is never refused. Off goes the poncho, if they happen

horse-accourrements in which the Mappachés delight will be described when we
come to the manuers and customs of the
people. Men of rank wear weollen bracelets and anklets as marks of their superior
position.

Like most of the Araucanian tribes, the
Mapuchés have but little beard, and what
they have they availagte after the until the deads of the properties to twist
the back of the properties of the pr

they are good friends again.

The dress of the women is, like that of the men, composed of two garments, though they are differently put on. One is an enlarged cheripa, and made of the same material. It is first wrapped round the body close under the arms, and then pinned together over each shoulder, so that the arms are left bare. It is confined at the waist by a very broad belt, and falls nearly to the ankle. This alone is a very sufficient dress, but over it is thrown a second piece of stuff but over it is thrown a second piece of stuff which acts as a shawl or mantle, being fastened in front with a pin having a most enormously flat head, about the size of a cheese plate. Sometimes the head is globular, but the flat form is the favorite, and it is adorned with engraved figures. The cloth is mostly of native manufacture, and is

which hangs over each shoulder. The tails are wound round with spiral strings of blue beads, and their ends are connected by a string of twelve or fourteen brass thimbles, which hang side by side, like a peal of bells. Besides these ornaments, the women wear a sort of cap, made entirely of beads, and falling over the back of the head as far as the shoulders. Its lower edge is decorated with a row of brass thimbles, like that which connects the two queues of the hair. This elaborate headdress is only worn on great occasions, while ordinarily the queues are wound round the head, the two ends projecting in front like horns, a fillet, usually studded with beads, being employed to keep the hair in its place. These peculiarities of dress are shown in the illustration of a Mapuché family on page 1201.

Ornaments are worn according to the wealth of the owners. Strings of beads, silver dollars, and brass thimbles are hung in profusion round the neck, which is further decorated with a collar made of leather and inlaid with silver. Wide bracelets and anklets are also worn, similar to those of the men, but made of variously colored beads

instead of wool.

Paint is worn by both sexes, but chiefly by the women, and is anything but ornamental. It is invariably of two colors, red and black, which are mixed with grease, so that they can be applied and removed at pleasure. The usual plan is to have a broad red belt from ear to ear, taking in the to be wearing it, the cheripa is tucked tightly cheeks, eyelids, and nose, the lower edge of into the belt, the combatants allow each other to take a fair grasp of the long locks, loped with black. The eyelids and lashes

RE OF THE HEAD-THE THE " PULLING HAIR" R USE OF THIMBLES -SS OF THE CHILDREN-TURE - LONG HOUSE OF OF CEREMONY - VALUE TOQUI - THE COUNCILS

ay almost invariably oot is as remarkable short and broad, and toes to the ankle e, so as to produce clumsy looking inthe Mapuché men

o garments, namely, aced chereepah) and a is a sort of comand trousers. It is otton, which is fasgirdle, passed berdle. The poncho cular piece of stuff. tre, through which exactly similar in of Polynesia, and efficient, and grace-h every change of ight the eye of an

cheripa, the Maair of boots, similar ians, and made of in from the hind awn over the foot it moulds itself to s with the Patagoso as to allow the ugh and grasp the The elaborate

are also edged with black, and a thin line; on pegs without betraying any signs of life. of the same hue takes the place of the eyebrows, which are all removed except a very fine row of hairs in the centre. Some of the women further decorate their faces by spots of black paint. The women are exceedingly proud of these ornaments; and an amusing instance of their vanity is related by Mr. Smith:—"Our conversation turned upon female dress; and, without intending any disparagement to our fair entertainers, we compared them to the women whom we had seen at the house of Chancay. The women, who were at work near by, did not understand half-a-dozen words of Spanish; but, with that intuitive perception which belongs to the sex, they were not long in discovering that our conversation related to themselves and their dresses.

"Immediately they held a council of war; and, entering the house, they presently returned, each with a bag of trinkets. There were coverings for the head and breast, composed of strings of beads of all colors and designs, with brass thimbles and silver coins. There were rings and pendants for ears and nose; bracelets and anklets, collars and breastpins of colossal proportions. These were held up for our admiration; and that we might more fully realize their wealth, the ladies proceeded to deck them-selves with all their finery. They were at the same time jabbering at the top of their lungs, praising their own superiority to all other women, and appealing to us for a confirmation of their own good opinions.

"Finally, the belle of the lot, having ornamented her head, breast, and arms to their fullest capacity, stepped in advance of the others, and, raising her dress as high as the knee, displayed to our astonished gaze a semantable well remarked place of the hand remarkably well-rounded piece of flesh and blood. Patting the calf with honest pride, and turning it about for our inspection, she hung it round with beads, adjusted the manycolored anklets, and, snapping her fingers contemptuously, poured out a perfect tor-rent of Mapuché.

"Unfortunately, there was no one near to interpret this language; but from her action, and the frequent repetition of the name 'Chancay,' we gathered her meaning to be pretty much that, in whatever else the wives of Chancay might excel, she would defy them or any one else to produce a finer leg than the one in question."

The dress of the children is simple enough. As long as they are infants, and not able to walk, they are tightly rolled up in bandages, :so as to be unable to move. In this helpless condition they are put into bamboo cradles, and hung up on pegs driven into the walls of the house, or laid in baskets suspended from the roof, so that they can be swung about by a cord tied to the cradle. The in-fants are perfect models of behavior, never erying, and allowing themselves to be hung

except the movement of the eyes. As soon as they can walk, they are allowed to run about without the incumbrance of any clothing, which is not worn until they become boys and girls of seven or eight years

The architecture of the Araucanians is very simple, but differs slightly according to the district, and the position of the owner of the house. The ordinary house of a common man is a mere hut, built of wicker-work, about twelve feet by ten, carelessly made, and ill calculated to withstand the elements. On a wet day the rain pours into the hut on all sides, a circumstance which has its advantages to counterbalance its discomforts. On rainy days all cooking has to be done within the house, which would be absolutely un-bearable if the apertures which let the rainin did not let the smoke out. At night, moreover, these huts are overcrowded with sleepers.

In one of these huts there were three rude bedsteads, for the accommodation of two married couples and a pair of grown-up girls, while on the ground lay sixteen or seventeen young men and children, packed together like herrings in a barrel. Moreover, a whole troop of dogs came sneaking into the house as soon as the inmates closed their eyes; so that within this limited space some thirty living beings were contained during the night. It is evident that, if the hut had been weather-proof, the whole party would have been sufficient before the morning.

A better kind of habitation, visited by Mr. Smith, deserved the name of house. It was rectangular instead of rounded, and measured thirty feet in length by fifteen in breadth. In the middle of the roof was a hole, by way of chimney, the fire being made directly beneath it. There was no individual the best the large the state of the large th window, the hole and the door being the only apertures for the admission of light and air.

There was only one room, though a sort of loft was made in the roof. This was used as a storehouse, where sacks of beans and similar luxuries were kept. As might be supposed, the whole upper part of the house was thickly encrusted with soot. One of the corners was partitioned off with a sort of wicker-work wall, and served as a granary, in which the wheat was stored.

From the sooty, cobwebbed rafters hung bunches of maize, pumpkins, joints of meat, nets full of potatoes, strings of capsicum pods, and similar articles; while earthenware pots, dishes, and spears were scattered in profuthese articles hung two long lances, with their points toward the door; but, although their heads were protected by being stuck into lumps of fat, they were rusty, and had evidently been long out of use.

Two of the corners were occupied with the

ordinary frame wor stretchad hung the owner, n of solid breastpin thimbles, women. aswathed

the rafter The hor much larg been desc long ho houses, be looked at very long was about its length The mid all the int

titioned of each of w the propri In cases w one, each when the r is consider three of the six fireplac the roof. than a few can be kep as the asl where the every curre terior of su inces In conse

priating a s

is convention

the other. a man how permits any fires he bur cross-bar, be ass withou be an inma friend of the The Mapi curious mi gentleman t civilized peo code of etiqu irksome, on sumed in g malities. W essary that course of cor

unpardonabl R. Smith's a "If the gue by addressin brother,' or '

sion of which

very intimat

ing any signs of life. f the eyes. As soon are allowed to run neumbrance of any worn until they beeven or eight years

the Araucanians is slightly according to tion of the owner of y house of a common f wicker-work, about elessly made, and ill the elements. On a into the hut on all hich has its advan-its discomforts. On as to be done within d be absolutely unwhich let the rain in t. At night, moreovercrowded with

s there were three accommodation of a pair of grown-up und lay sixteen or nd children, packed n a barrel. More-Morescame sneaking into inmates closed their limited space some e contained during that, if the hut had whole party would ore the morning. tion, visited by Mr.

e of house. It was counded, and measngth by fifteen in of the roof was a ey, the fire being it. There was no ne door being the admission of light

om, though a sort acks of beans and pt. As might be er part of the house ith soot. One of ned off with a sort served as a granvas stored.

bbed rafters hung ins, joints of meat, s of capsicum pods, earthenware pots, scattered in profuthe middle of all long lances, with oor; but, although ed by being stuck re rusty, and had use.

occupied with the

ordinary bedstead of the country, i. e. a framework of cane, with a bull's hide stretched tightly over it; and near the beds host about himself, his health, and that of his hung the stock of finery belonging to the owner, namely, spurs, stirrups, and bits, all of solid silver, belonging to the men, and breastpins, necklaces, earrings, strings of thimbles, and other adornments of the women. The usual basket cradle, containing a swathed baby, was suspended from one of

The house of a cacique, or chief, is very much larger than either of those which have been described, and somewhat resembles the "long house" of Borneo. One of these houses, belonging to a cacique named Ayllal, looked at a distance something between a very long boat and a haystack. Its height was about fifteen feet, its width thirty, and its length about one hundred and forty.

The middle of the house was common to all the inhabitants, but the sides were partitioned off so as to form a series of chambers. each of which belonged to a married son of the proprietor, or to one of his own wives. In cases where the family is not a very large one, each wife has her own fireplace; but when the number of families under one roof is considerable, one fire is common to two or three of them. In Ayllal's house there were six fireplaces, and over each was a hole in the roof. The fireplaces are nothing more than a few stones, so arranged that the pots can be kept clear of the burning wood; and, as the ashes are allowed to accumulate where they fall, or to be blown about by every current of air, it is evident that the interior of such a house is not a model of cleanlineas.

In consequence of the custom of approriating a separate fire to each wife, the one s conventionally accepted as a metaphor for the other. It is not considered polite to ask aman how many wives he has, but etiquette permits any one to ask another how many fres he burns. In front of the door hangs a cross-bar, beyond which no one ventures to pass without a special invitation, unless he be an inmate of the house, or an intimate friend of the family.

The Mapuchés exhibit in perfection that curious mixture of the savage and the entleman that is so often found among uncivilized people. They have a most elaborate code of etiquette, which to a stranger is often irksome, on account of the time which is consumed in going through the requisite for-malities. When two persons meet, it is necessary that they should go through a set course of complimentary remarks, the omission of which, except between relatives or very intimate friends, would be held as an unpardonable offence. Let us take Mr. E. R. Smith's account of the ceremonial:

father, mother, wives, and children; about his lands, crops, cattle, and flocks: the chiefs of the district, the neighbors, their wives, children, crops, &c., are next inquired about; and whether there have been any disturbances, diseases, deaths, or accidents.

"If the responses given are favorable, the

questioner goes on to express his happiness, and moralizes to the effect that health. wealth, and friendship are great blessings, for which God should be thanked. If, on the contrary, the answers should convey bad news, he condoles with the afflicted, and philosophizes that misfortunes should be borne with equanimity, since men cannot always avoid evil. The guest having finished, the host commences in turn to ask all the same questions, making such comments

as the answers received may demand.
"This formality occupies ten or fifteen
minutes. The questions and answers are recited (by rote) in a low monotonous voice, with a sing-song tone, not unlike the say-ing of the resary or the chanting of friars, At the end of each sentence, if the last word end with a vowel, the voice is raised to a shout; but should the final letter be a consonant, it is rounded off with a nasal grunt. The listener expresses his satisfaction occasionally by a sound between a grunt and a groan, or indicates surprise by a long-drawn "Hue! With these exceptions, he never interrupts until the speaker has given notice, by a peculiar cadence of the voice, that he has said his say. During this palaver, the speakers often do not look at each other, and frequently even sit with their backs turned to one another."

As soon as etiquette has been satisfied by these formalities, the speakers assume their ordinary tone of voice, and converse freely on subjects respecting which they really take an interest.

Oratory is highly valued by the Mapu-ches, and should a young man have some power of speech, and train it into eloquence, he is on the high road to distinction, and will probably end by becoming a chief, though originally of inferior rank. Such young men are always eagerly sought by the chiefs as their messengers, inasmuch as etiquette requires that such messengers should not only possess a retentive memory, so as to insure the transmission of the message correctly, but should also be fluent of speech and choice of diction, the latter being a point in which the Mapuchés are exceedingly fastidious.

A young man who shows himself to be a proficient in these three requisites is sure to be taken into the service of an important "If the guest be a stranger, the host begins by addressing him with 'I do not know you, and addressing him with 'I do not know you, and arother,' or 'I have never seen you before.' messenger, he practically becomes a sort of chief, and indeed he knows his own value too

ambassador, on whom the reputation of his | no appeal from his decision. Yet he levies principal is reflected, and by associating with the chief men, and speaking at their assemblies, he soon gains for himself that importance which was formerly only accorded to his official capacity. Men of this stamp have frequently become the masters of those whom they formerly served, their abilities having raised them to their appropriate

To a stranger the eloquence of these men is utterly unintelligible. They deliver their message in a sort of monotone, varied with inflections, but without the least spirit or action. In fact, they very much resemble schoolboys reciting a piece of poetry which they have learned by rote without taking the trouble to understand it. Yet the Mapuchés are held entranced during the delivery of such a discourse by an accomplished orator. the purity of whose diction excites the respectful admiration of his hearers.

Etiquette is so highly valued among the Araucanians that on one occasion an English gentleman nearly lost his life by neglecting a ceremonial. It seems that every chief, no matter how petty may be his domain, expects that every stranger who passes through his territory shall pay him a tribute. The amount of the tribute is of little consequence, so that something is given as an acknowl-

edgment of rank.

Being new to the country, the gentleman in question was passing through the territory of a chief, when he was stopped and asked for tribute, a demand which he refused to pay, on the ground that he was only a traveller and not a trader. Thereupon a young man leaped into a cabin, brought out a trumpet made of a horn, and blew a blast upon it. The signal was answered in all directions, and from every side there poured in a number of mounted and armed warriors. The traveller was not daunted, in spite of the martial array, cocked his pistols, and awaited the attack, when his guide ran up to him, and begged him to give them something, if it were only a pocket-handkerchief.

The traveller saw at once, from the smallness of the suggested present, that it was a mere question of etiquette, and munificently presented the chief with a jack-knife. Enmity at once gave way to enthusiastic friendship. The old chief was quite over-come by the splendor of the gift, swore eternal friendship with the traveller, and sent a guard of honor to accompany him for

several miles on his way.

WE naturally come to the mode of government employed by the Araucanians.

The four great divisions are subdivided into provinces, and these into smaller districts, each of which is presided over by a sindeed was due to his acknowledged wischief, who exercises a kind of patriarchal authority over his clansmen. He is the time been averted. Yet he was not a rich judge and arbiter of the clan, and there is man, and in point of wealth the greater

no taxes, and cannot force even the lowest of his people to work for him. He can require the services of the men for war or for business of state, but there his authority ends. No land can be sold except by the chief, to whom it is by a sort of legal fiction supposed to belong, and even he cannot sell it to any except a native Araucanian, under penalty of death.

All these chiefs, or caciques, as they are often called, are considered to be equals in point of rank, and independent of each other, though one is chosen on account of his personal abilities to be the head chief of the district, but merely as primus inter pares. The office of chief is generally but not always hereditary. It mostly descends to the eldest son, but the actual holder of the office may bequeath it even to one who belongs to another family. Should a chief die without sons, brother, or a recognized successor, the people have the power of electing a chief for themselves, and it is on such occasions as these that the eloquent messengers lately

described find their opportunity of being raised to the rank of cacique.

Up to this point the details of the government are simple enough. We now have to consider a most singular arrangement, unlike that of any other known nation. From the head chiefs of the various districts one is chosen as the Toqui, or head of the province, and these Toquis form the supreme council by whom the affairs of the nation are managed. From among them one is selected as president of the council, and is called by a title which signifies the Grand Toqui. He is the highest personage in the state. He can summon councils whenever he sees occasion, he watches over the welfare of the state, lays before his colleagues any information that he considers important, and on special occasions he can act on his own authority.

When Mr. E. R. Smith travelled in Araucania, the Grand Toqui was an old chief named Mañin, who seems to have been worthy of the position which he held. Mañin Hueno (" the Grass of Heaven "), as he was called by his compatriots, or Mañin Bueno ("Mañin the Good"), as the Chilenos termed him, was a very old man, his age being estimated as falling little short of a centre of the control o tury, though his general bearing was such that he might have been taken for little more than sixty. His long black hair was but slightly sprinkled with silver, his eye retained its brightness, and his mien its up-rightness; and though his many years had diminished his strength, they had not affected his intellect.

He was held in the very highest respect,

than Ma wealth w ments pounds o was of th handkere most cost When the mem each othe

number

nointmen over, the sometime day, and suming th sufficient Now co cision. Yet he levies force even the lowest rk for him. He can f the men for war or out there his authority e sold except by the a sort of legal fiction nd even he cannot sell ive Araucanian, under

caciques, as they are dered to be equals in independent of each chosen on account of to be the head chief of y as primus inter pares. generally but not almostly descends to the ual holder of the office to one who belongs to ild a chief die without ognized successor, the er of electing a chief t is on such occasions ent messengers lately opportunity of being cacique.

details of the governgh. We now have to ar arrangement, unlike wn nation. From the arious districts one is r head of the province. the supreme council f the nation are manhem one is selected as cil, and is called by a the Grand Toqui. He age in the state. He whenever he sees ocer the welfare of the olleagues any informars important, and on an act on his own au-

ith travelled in Araujui was an old chief seems to have been which he held. Mañin 'Heaven''), as he was riots, or Mañin Bue-d''), as the Chilenos y old man, his age beg little short of a cen-eral bearing was such been taken for little s long black hair was with silver, his eye , and his mien its uphis many years had n, they had not affected

very highest respect, is acknowledged wisich war had many a Yet he was not a rich wealth the greater

number of the lesser chiefs were far richer inian government. than Mañin Hueno. His only marks of wealth were the solid silver horse accoutrements — but even these were not worth fifty pounds of our money; while his apparel was of the simplest kind, a red and yellow handkerchief tied round his head being the most costly article of his apparel.

When a council of Toquis is assembled, the members generally endeavor to outshine each other in the magnificence of their appointments; and after the day's labor is over, they join in a general debauch, which sometimes lasts for the whole of the next

Now comes the curious part of Arauca- its sway.

The Supreme Council treats only of the internal management of the nation, and is technically called the Council of Peace. As soon as war is declared, the Council of Peace falls into abeyance, and its place is taken by the Council of War. This is headed by the Toqui of War, who, as long as the war lasts, has unlimited power, except over life. He appoints the officers, settles the number of warriors required, orders a conscription to be set in operation in each district, and lays upon each cacique the duty of levying a certain sometimes lasts for the whole of the next day, and prevents the councillors from resuming their business until they have become suming their business until they have become office, and the Council of Peace reassumes

CHAPTER CXXV.

THE ARAUCANIANS - Continued.

DOMESTIC LIFE.

LOVE OF THE HORSE-THE STIRRUP, BIT, AND SPUR OF THE ARAUCANIANS-MODE OF FASTENING THE SPUR ON THE HEEL - TRAINING OF THE HORSES - VALUE OF THE HORSE ACCOUTREMENTS - HATRED OF SHAMS - LOVE FOR SILVER AND CARELESSNESS OF GOLD - HOW THE ARAUCANIANS RIDE - THE BOLAS OR LAQUI, AND THE LASSO - MODE OF MAKING AND THROWING THE LASSO - CAPTURE OF A SAVAGE BULL - COURAGE OF THE ARAUCANIANS - THEIR SUCCESSFUL STRUGGLE FOR LIBERTY -- CAREER OF A YOUNG HERO -- MARRIAGE AMONG THE ARAUCANIANS -- ABDUCTION OF THE BRIDE - RECONCILIATION WITH THE PARENTS - ARAUCANIAN COOKERY - PREPARING NACHI, CHICA, AND MUDAI - THRESHING CORN.

WE now come to the ordinary life of the pride themselves in having these articles of Araucanians.

Like the American tribes in general, they have become wonderful adepts in the use of the horse, the climate, the natives, and the horse seeming to agree with each other in a way which is really remarkable, considering that the animal is of comparatively late introduction into America. Unlike the Patagoniaus, they pride themselves on the massive solidity of the accoutrements with which they bedizen their horses; and, although they care little about the individual animals, and are rather hard masters to them, they bedeck the horses in the most lavish manner.

Their saddles are made very much after the fashion employed by the Patagonians. being little more than rude wooden frames. A few skins are laid on the back of the horse, the saddle is placed on them, a saddle cloth of thick leather is thrown over it, and the whole apparatus is complete. The bridle is made, like that of the Patagonians, of twisted hide, or sometimes of a number of strips of horse-skin plaited together, a few threads of silver being mingled with them. The bit is generally the ordinary Spanish bit, with its cruelly powerful arrangement of curb and ring.

The stirrups are generally nothing more than a piece of cane twisted into a triangular form, and hung to the saddle by leath-

solid silver. The shape of these stirrups varies in some degree, the usual form resembling that of the English stirrup, but very much larger and heavier, the sides being from one to two inches wide, and pierced in ornamental patterns, while the cross-bar on which the foot rests is fully two inches in width.

The form of stirrup to which they are most partial resembles the other, as far as the side pieces are concerned; but the footbar is developed into a large plate of silver, which comes over the front of the stirrup, and protects the toes and instep from the thorns which are plentiful in the country. The back of this plate projects behind in a sharp point, which is used as a spur.

About the spurs themselves the Araucanian is very fastidious. They are of enormous size, and armed with rowels measuring from two to three inches in diameter, and sometimes even exceeding that measurement. It may be imagined that spurs of this size, which are exceedingly weighty, must be buckled on the feet very tightly, 80 as to keep them in their places.

This, however, is not the case. On the contrary, the strap by which they are fast-ened is quite loose, so that when the wearer walks the rowels trail on the ground, and when he is mounted they hang nearly perpendicularly from his heels. The Araucaern cords; but the wealthy Araucanians nian cares little for the impediment in walk-

ing, as 1 help hir when h illustrat the 1175 The trained. verv si throw th dash off of their are your

if, in the which t were to be grea hang do they swi at any ti wearer brings th

The A contemp that has peasant, possibly scorn to metal, or good. They a they will

made abi

solid silv terns, the the work to their always ex the nativ ing it. A silver cu wealthy him a pai lars which It may a pair of a

portance in silence and exam attention. the metal. to judge v mixture o spurs and bridle, and saddles, an coutremen sometimes pounds, m the value

ornament their work out of ke cence of t cer makes the case of

The me

ing as he never walks twenty yards if he can help himself; while the position of the spurs when he is mounted is a real necessity. An illustration of stirrups and spurs is given on

the 1175th page.

The horses are never more than half trained. They are taught to wheel within a very small circle, to stop suddenly and throw themselves on their haunches, and to dash off at full gallop; but that is the extent of their accomplishments. Many of them are young, spirited, and nervous steeds, and if, in the course of the struggles for victory which they occasionally attempt, the spurs were to come against their sides, they would be greatly alarmed, and their struggles would only be increased. But as the spurs hang down almost below the rider's feet, they swing clear of the horse's flanks, while at any time, if they are needed for use, the wearer has only to bend his feet, which brings them into position.

The Araucanians have a very wholesome contempt for shams, and will have nothing that has any pretence about it. The poorest peasant, who can only afford an iron spur, or possibly not even a spur of any kind, would scorn to wear either spur or stirrups of plated metal, or of any imitation of silver, however

They are so fastidious in this matter that they will not use articles that have been made abroad; and even if a spur is made of solid silver in imitation of their own patterns, they will be nearly certain to reject it, the workmanship being sure to betray itself to their experienced eyes. A high polish always excites their suspicions, inasmuch as the native artificers are incapable of imparting it. All these articles are made from the silver currency of the country, and the wealthy Araucanian always carries with him a pair of balances, and a number of dollars which serve as standard weights.

It may be imagined that the purchase of a pair of spurs or stirrups is a matter of importance with these people. The buyer sits in silence on the ground, takes the spurs, and examines every part with the minutest attention, scrutinizing every joint, smelling the metal, tasting it, and ringing it, in order to judge whether it has been debased by the mixture of any inferior material. Not only spurs and stirrups, but pendants for the bridle, and ornaments for the headstalls and saddles, are made of silver; so that the accourrements of a wealthy Araucanian will sometimes be worth a hundred and fifty pounds, merely as silver, without regard to the value of the workmanship.

The men who make these highly prized

ornaments use the very rudest of tools, and their workshops are but rough hovels, quite out of keeping with the barbaric magnifi-cence of their wares. Sometimes the artifieer makes the ornaments for sale; but in quired article out of the bag of dollars with which it is accompanied.

It is remarkable that the Araucanians, fond as they are of silver, will have nothing to do with gold. Besides these horse accontrements, they wear earrings, breast-pins, and other ornaments of silver, but none of gold. Some travellers think that their reason for the rejection of gold is their wish to conceal its presence in the country from the knowledge of the foreigner, remembering that it was the cause of the disastrous war with the Spanish invader. The real cause is, probably, that it cannot be pro-cured in sufficient quantities without more labor than they choose to bestow, and that they have not learned to work gold as they do silver.

The Araucanians are admirable riders, though their seat would not please an European riding master. They depend entirely on balance for retaining their seat, and seem rather to hang on the horse's back than to hold by any grip of the knee. Indeed, a stranger to the country always thinks that an Araucanian rider is on the point of being thrown, so loose is his seat, whereas the very idea that he can by any possibility be thrown never enters his mind, He and his horse seem one being, actuated by one mind. A traveller once saw a horse take fright, and leap side ways from the object of terror. He thought that the rider must be flung by the suddenness of the movement; but, to all appearance, the man took fright and shied at the same moment with his horse.

The Araucanians use the bolas in common with their southern neighbors, the Patagonians, and are never seen without the agonans, and are never seen without the "laqui," as they term the weapon, hanging at their waists. Some of them have a way of leaving one of the balls without its covering of leather, saying that the covered bolas is used when they fight with friends, but the bare bolas when they fight with an

enemy.

They also use the lasso, that terrible weapon which extends over so vast a territory, and which supersedes the bolas as it

proceeds northward.

This terrible weapon is simple enough in principle, being nothing more than a leathern rope, forty feet in length, with a noose at the end. As, however, the construction is rather ingenious, I have given an illustration on the 1175th page, taken from specimens in my possession. Fig. 1 shows the lasso coiled through the strap by which it is attached to the saddle of the rider. It is made of a number of thongs of raw hide, plaited into a round rope, about three-eighths of an inch in diameter; so that, although it appears very slender, it really possesses the case of large articles, such as spurs or enormous strength, and an elephant could

NS - MODE OF FASTENING E HORSE ACCOUTREMENTS - HOW THE ARAUCANIANS ND THROWING THE LASSO EIR SUCCESSFUL STRUGGLE RAUCANIANS - ABDUCTION N. COOKERY - PREPARING

aving these articles of ape of these stirrups , the usual form resemglish stirrup, but very avier, the sides being es wide, and pierced in while the cross-bar on is fully two inches in

up to which they are es the other, as far as ncerned; but the foota large plate of silver, ne front of the stirrup, s and instep from the entiful in the country. e projects behind in a used as a spur. nemselves the Arauca-

s. They are of enorwith rowels measure inches in diameter, exceeding that mease imagined that spurs exceedingly weighty, ne feet very tightly, 80 eir places.

not the case. On the y which they are fast-that when the wearer il on the ground, and they hang nearly per-s heels. The Araucae impediment in walkshown at fig. 5.

For the last ten feet of its length the rope is much thicker, is composed of more strips of hide, and is plaited into a square form. At the extreme end the various strands are At the extreme end the various strands are plaited round an iron ring, as seen at fig. 4. Through this ring the lasso passes, so as to form a running noose. The change from the round to the square plait is seen at fig. 3, and fig. 2 shows the peculiar knot which keeps the lasso from slipping from the saddle.

Fig. 6 shows the end of another sort of lasso, made of the silk-grass fibre, i. e. the long fibres from the leaves of a species of agave. These fibres are wonderfully strong, and the lasso is remarkable, not only for its strength, but its elasticity. Instead of an iron ring being placed at the end, the rope is brought round so as to form a loop, the interior of which is lined with stout leather, and the exterior adorned with colored wools.

When the lasso is to be used, the thrower takes the ring in his left hand, and the lasso in the right, and separates his arms so as to make a running noose nearly six feet in length. Grasping the ring and the cord with his left hand, he slips his right hand along the rope so as to double it, and there holds it. When he throws it, he whirls it round his head until the noose becomes quite circular, and then hurls it at the object, throwing after it the remainder of the rope, which has hung in coils on his left arm. As it passes through the air, the lowing captive made a desperate plunge at noose becomes gradually smaller, so that the red cloth. A jerk on the tail stopped the thrower can always graduate the diameter of the noose to the object which it the poncho on the tip of the lance, tossed is intended to secure.

The skill with which they fling this noose is wonderful, as may be seen from Mr. Smith's account of a struggle with an in-

furiated bull:

"The capture of a particular animal from a herd, within a range of pasture utterly unbounded except by mountains and rivers, is often difficult, and gives rise to many ex-citing cases and ludicrous scenes. Even when taken, the captives are not easy of management, their attachment for old associates manifesting itself in frequent attempts

"One particular bull gave great trouble. He was a noble fellow, of spotless white. - such an one as bore the beautiful Europa through the waters of the Phœnician deep, or such an one as might be worshipped on

the shores of the Ganges.

"After a long time he was lassoed, and the horseman, who had literally taken the bull by the horns, started off complacently to lead him to the place of gathering. But his bullship did not take the going as a matter of course; for, with a mad bellow, he

scarcely break it. This part of the rope is | formidable pair of horns dashing toward him, started at full gallop, still holding fast the lasso, which he in vain tried to keep taut. The horse was jaded, and old Whitey was fast gaining. Another Indian bounder forward, and, dexterously throwing his lasso, caught the unoccupied horn, bring-

ing up the prisoner with a round turn.
"The bull was not yet conquered. After plunging, pawing, bellowing, and tossing for a while, he changed his tactics, Making a rush and a feint at one of his annovers. he wheeled about suddenly, and nearly succeeded in catching the other on his horns. Things were becoming more complicated than ever, when, as the infuriated animal stood head down, with his tail stuck out at an angle of fifty-five degrees, a third horseman came to the attack, and, whirling his lasso with a jerk, caught the caudal extremity in a running knot.

"Thus the two men at the sides were safe. provided that the man behind kept his lasso strained. But a question in the rule of three now arose. If three men catch abull, one by each horn, and one by the tail, and all pull in different directions, which way

can the bull go?

"No one seemed able to work out the answer; but Katrilas was a man ready for all emergencies, and, dismounting, he started to the assistance of his companions. armed with a long lance and an old poncho. Running before the bull, he threw the poncho on the ground, a few paces in front, the man behind slackened a little, and the belit several yards in advance. There was another slackening, another plunge, another jerk, and so on, until the 'critter' was brought to the desired spot.

"The next trouble was to loose the captive. Sundry scientific pulls brought him to the ground, and Katrilas, springing for-ward, stripped the lassos from his horns But another remained on the tail. That no one would venture to untie, for the bull had risen, and stood glaring frantically around An Indian, unsheathing his long knife, ran full tilt at the extended tail, and with one blow severed the greater part of that useful member from the body.

"The last was literally the 'unkindest cut of all.' The poor brute was fairly con-quered. He stood with head hanging, eyes glaring, the tongue lolling from his frothing mouth, his once spotless coat defiled with foam and dirt, while the drip, drip, drip, of the warm blood upon his heels rendered the abjectness of his misery complete."

That the Araucanians are a courageous race is evident from their struggles with the Spaniards. Though vanquished again charged upon his captor, who, seeing a very and again by the superior arms and disci-

pline of quered, gather i in the these w Lautaro the post the Ara Tucapel in the was att so territ were on taro das and led that the with the Concepc Valdivia that La former n axe and general.

> who was once to s Lautaro ward, ar sides of while the the sumn gan in th struction nians had Fancyi the Spai

Forese

wearied a fresh arm with the nearly tu Lautaro with orde attacked riously w were tak treat, Vil

When which the blocked w with warr had despa ginning o terrific, a escaped, forced his

Lautaro by pushin at Concep burned. to rebuild done than again. H of attackin derfully 8 place.

Here he

allop, still holding fast in vain tried to keep jaded, and old Whitey nother Indian bounded rously throwing his occupied horn, bringwith a round turn. yet conquered. After ellowing, and tossing one of his annoyers, denly, and nearly suc-e other on his horns, ing more complicated the infuriated animal ith his tail stuck out five degrees, a third e attack, and, whirling caught the caudal exknot.

horns dashing toward

at the sides were safe. n behind kept his lasso estion in the rule of three men catch a bull. l one by the tail, and directions, which way

able to work out the s was a man ready and, dismounting, he nce of his companions, ce and an old poncho. ull, he threw the ponfew paces in front, the a desperate plunge at k on the tail stopped Katrilas, picking up p of the lance, tossed advance. There was nother plunge, another til the 'critter' was

l spot. was to loose the capfic pulls brought him atrilas, springing forassos from his horns. on the tail. That no untie, for the bull had ing frantically around ng his long knife, ran ded tail, and with one ater part of that usebody

erally the 'unkindest brute was fairly conth head hanging, eyes lling from his frothing less coat defiled with the drip, drip, drip, of his heels rendered the ry complete."

ans are a courageous their struggles with igh vanquished again erior arms and discipline of the Spaniards, they were never con-quered, and when repulsed, only retired to tory of the Purumancians, who had become quered, and when repulsed, only retired to gather fresh forces. Toqui after Toqui fell in the struggle, the most remarkable of these warriors being a mere youth named Lautaro, who was unanimously elected to the post in consequence of his conduct when the Araucanians attacked the Spaniards at Tucapel. He was a captive and a servant in the family of Valdivia, when the place was attacked. The Spanish musketry told so terribly upon the Araucanians, that they were on the point of retreating, when Lautaro dashed forward, rallied his countrymen, and led them to the attack with such spirit that the whole Spanish force was destroyed with the exception of two, who escaped to Concepcion with the news of the defeat. Valdivia himself was captured, and it is said that Lautaro desired to save the life of his former master, when an old chief seized an axe and dashed out the brains of the captive general.

Foreseeing that General F. de Villa Gran. who was at Concepcion, would march at once to avenge the destruction of Tucapel, Lautaro assembled the troops, puched forward, and concealed half of them in the sides of a defile through which the road led, while the other half were also concealed at the summit of the mountain. The battle began in the defile, and, after causing great destruction among the enemy, the Arauca-

nians had to retire.

Fancying that the enemy were beaten, the Spaniards pressed on, and arriving wearied at the summit, found a second and fresh army opposed to them. They fought with the utmost courage, and their artillery nearly turned the day in their favor, when Lautaro told off one of his bravest officers with orders to capture the cannon, while he attacked Villa Gran on the flank. So furiously was the charge made, that the guns were taken, and the Spaniards had to retreat, Villa Gran barely escaping with his

When they entered the pass through which they had come, they found the outlet blocked with fallen trees, and the sides filled with warriors, whom the far-seeing Lautaro had despatched for that purpose at the be-ginning of the conflict. The slaughter was terrific, and only a few of the Spaniards escaped, led by Villa Gran, who at last forced his way through the barriers.

Lautaro showed his splendid generalship, by pushing on at once to the headquarters at Concepcion, which he took, pillaged, and burned. Orders were received from Lima to rebuild Concepcion, and no sooner was it done than Lautaro captured and burned it again. He then conceived the bold project of attacking Santiago itself, and in a wonderfully short time appeared before the

allies of the Spaniards, thinking them invincible. Lautaro should have remembered that the late defeats must have altered the opinions of the Purumancians, who could have been easily induced to act against their former allies. But his indignation at their treachery was so great, that he stopped to ravage their territory and destroy their

Villa Gran, who was then the governor of Santiago, knew his enemy well, and employed the time in fortifying the city, which would have fallen at once had Lautaro pushed on without stopping to punish his traitorous countrymen. Three times Villa Gran sent a force against the Araucanians. the last being commanded by his own son, but all were routed and driven back.

At last Villa Gran, stung by these repeated defeats, determined himself to coaduct an expedition against his foes, and with a mixed force of Spaniards and Purumancians came stealthily upon the Araucanian camp. Born general though he was, Lautaro did not know the use of outposts, and the consequence was, that Villa Gran surprised his camp, and as he rushed to the front to rally his followers, he was pierced by a dart flung by one of the Purtimancians, and fell

dead on the spot.

Thus fell Lautaro, a youth worthy to be named with the greatest heroes of antiquity. Chosen commander at the age of seventeen, he opposed for two years the best soldiers of Europe, armed with infinitely superior weapons, and accustomed to military disci-pline. Though a mere boy, he displayed a military skill and a fertility of resource worthy of the most accomplished generals, and by sheer force of intellect and courage won every battle except that in which he fell.

A nation which could produce men such as Lautaro, or the troops who fought and conquered under his command, is evidently capable of great things, and, at all events, worthy of the liberty which it won from the Spaniards, and which has never again been threatened:

MARRIAGE among the Araucanians is an odd mixture of ceremonies. Theoretically, the bridegroom is supposed to steal his wife against her own will and in opposition to the wishes of her parents; practically, he buys her from her parents, who have long looked upon their daughter as a valuable article, to be sold to the first purchaser who will give a sufficient price.

Sometimes the match is one of affection. the two young people understanding each other perfectly well. Music is the usual mode by which an Araucanian expresses his Here he committed his only error in genjews-harp. The Mapuché lover is never

seen without his jews-harp hanging from | day after the abduction, when they are suphis neck, tied upon a little block of wood to prevent it from being injured, and decorated with strings of many-colored beads. Furnished with this indispensable instrument, the lover seats himself at a little distance from the object of his choice, and produces a series of most dolorous sounds, his glances and gestures denoting the individual for whom they are meant.

After a little while, the lover thinks that he had better proceed to the marriage. Should he be a wealthy man, he has no trouble in the matter; but if not, he goes among his friends and asks contributions from them. One gives an ox, another a horse, another a pair of silver spurs, and so on. It is a point of honor to make these contributions, and equally so to return them at some time or other, even if the intending bridegroom has to wait until in his turn he can sell his eldest girl.

The next process is, that the friends of the young man assemble, all mounted on their best horses, and proceed in a body to the house of the girl's father. Five or six of the best speakers dismount and ask permission for the marriage, extolling to the utmost the merits of the bridegroom, and expatiating on the happiness of his daughter in being married to such a man. The father, treating the matter as gravely as if he had not done exactly the same thing himself, makes a speech in his turn.

All this ceremony is intended to give time to the young man to hunt for his intended bride, and, until he has found her, they will go on with their speeches. As soon as the young man discovers the girl, he seizes her and drags her to the door, while on her part she screams and shrieks for protection. At the sound of her voice all the women turn out, armed with sticks, stones, and any other weapons which come to hand, and rush to her help. The friends of the bridegroom in their turn run to help their friend, and for some time there is a furious combat, none of the men escaping without some sharp bruises, and the girl screaming at the top of her voice.

At last the bridegroom dashes at the girl, seizes her as he can, by the hand, the hair, or the heels, as the case may be, drags her to his horse, leaps on its back, pulls her up after him, and dashes off at full speed, followed by his friends. The relatives of the girl go off in pursuit, but are constantly checked by the friends of the bridegroom, who keep them back until he has dashed into the forest with his bride. They halt at the skirts of the forest, wait until the sounds of the girl's screams and the galloping of the horse have died away, and then disperse. This Araucanian ceremony of marriage is

represented on the following page.

The young couple are now left alone until

posed to be man and wife. That all the fighting and screaming are a mere farce is evident from the fact that, if a man should offer himself who is not acceptable to the parents of the girl, and should proceed to carry her off, one of her relatives blows the horn of alarm, as has already been men-tioned, and all the male relations turn out and drive off the intruder. Sometimes, however, he succeeds in gaining the bush before he is caught, and in that case the marriage holds good.

Some few days after the marriage, the friends call on the newly-married couple, and bring the contributions which they had promised. The whole party then proceed to the house of the girl's father, and offer him these goods, which are taken as if they were merely offerings, and not the price for which the girl was sold. Being satisfied with the presents, he expresses himself pleased with the marriage, and congratulates the young couple and their friends.

But the mother is not so easily to be satisfied. With her it is a point of honor that she is not satisfied, but, on the contrary, is highly outraged at the abduction of her child. 80 she will neither speak to nor look at the bridegroom, but sits down with her back turned to him.

Now comes a difficult point. She is bound, in accordance with the laws of hospitality, to entertain the guests, and as the offending son-in-law is the most important person, he must be consulted first. addresses the bride, "My daughter, ask your husband if he is hungry." The conversation thus begun is carried on in a similar manner, and ends with an entertainment on which the mother of the bride exhausts all her culinary knowledge. Sometimes the husband never addresses his mother-in-law for years, except with her back turned to him, or with a fence intervening between them. The reader may remember that a similar custom is followed by the Kaffir tribes of Southern Africa. See page 88.

THE cookery of the Araucanians is at first anything but agreeable to European taste. Mutton is largely consumed in the country, and is killed, dressed, and cooked in a speedy and simple manner. The sheep being hung by its hind legs to a tree, its throat is cut, and the blood is received into a bowl and mixed with salt, in which state it is thought to be a very great delicacy. The sheep is then opened, and the whole of the interior removed to be cleaned and cooked, this being held as the best part of the animal. The skin is then removed, the body is split along the spine from head to tail, and each half is transfixed with a stick,

and set over the fire. The greatest delicacy, however, that can they emerge from the wood on the second be placed before a guest is called "nachi."

n, when they are supd wife. That all the
g are a mere farce is
that, if a man should
not acceptable to the
ad should proceed to
er relatives blows the
s already been menale relations turn out
der. Sometimes, howaining the bush before
at case the marriage

ter the marriage, the newly-married couple, utions which they had a party then proceed to father, and offer him taken as if they were not the price for which the price for which himself pleased with he himself pleased with agratulates the young ds.

ot so easily to be satispoint of honor that she the contrary, is highly tion of her child. So k to nor look at the down with her back

deult point. She is with the laws of hoshe guests, and as the steen most important insulted first. So she My daughter, ask your gry." The conversarried on in a similar an entertainment on he bride exhausts all ge. Sometimes the ses his mother-in-law her back turned to intervening between ay remember that afforced by the Kaffir rica. See page 88.

Araucanians is at first e to European taste. onsumed in the counsed, and cooked in a nanner. The sheep ad legs to a tree, its alood is received into healt, in which state very great delicacy, and, and the whole of to be cleaned and d as the best part of

cy, however, that can est is called "nachi."

is then removed, the e spine from head to ansfixed with a stick,



(1.) ARAUCANIAN MARRIAGE. (See page 1200.)



(2.) MAPUCHE FAMILY. (See page 1191.)

(1201)

warm.

The mo am' a o whi h i A sh quantity in a boy so as to operato:

vein, cu ered wit so as to carry the tors, not want of and the mixture the nach slices an

There chica an is laid or downwar is empti round it they bea convert poured u
use. Th
pulp, and
all the pr
This d

and after ample, tw same tra time in running the dista glass of w mile of the came to some chice

nice,' process green, resould be that it was no adequa which has greenest sufficed for chica de m

our guide This des Here is a manufactu: cider is sor sour, but I with the a which mak Mudai is

The mode of preparing this dish is a good ex- exactly the kava of Polynesia, and is pream 'e of the total disregard of inflicting pain whi h is common to all uncivilized people.

A sheep is hung up by the fore-legs, a quantity of cayenne pepper and salt is mixed in a bowl, and the throat of the sheep is cut operator stuffs the salt and pepper as fast as he can. He then draws out the jugular vein, cuts it, and turns the end into the severed windpipe, down which the blood flows, so as to mix with the pepper and salt, and carry them into the lungs. The unfortunate sheep swells up and dies in horrible agony, which is totally disregarded by the spectators, not from intentional cruelty, but utter want of thought. The sheep is then opened, and the lungs are found distended with a

There are two national drinks, namely, chica and mudai. The former is a sort of cider, and prepared as follows. A sheepskin is laid on the ground, with the woolly side downward, and a ponchoful of green apples semptied on it. Two or three men sit they beat the apples, and in a short time convert them into a pulp. Water is next poured upon them, and the chica is ready for use. The men take up large handfuls of the pulp, and squeeze them into jars, this being all the preparation which the chica receives.

This drink is at first hated by foreigners, and afterward liked by them. See, for example, two extracts from the journal of the same traveller. "After riding for a long time in the hot sun without meeting any running stream, we spied a farmhouse in the distance, and, going to it asked for a

glass of water.

". There is not a drop of water within a mile of the house,' said an old woman who came to the door, 'but we can give you some chica de manzanos (cider) that is very nice, producing at the word a huge glass of a green, muddy liquid. To call it vinegar would be too high a compliment, and to add that it was flavored with gall would convey no adequate idea of this abominable stuff, which had been made from the very greenest of green apples. One mouthful other. sufficed for me, and my first impressions of

This description was written immediately after entering the country for the first time. Here is another description of the same cider is somewhat coffee colored, and rather sour, but I soon became fond of it, especially with the addition of a little toasted meal, which makes it much more palatable."

pared in the same manner, meal being substituted for the kava root. A bushel or so of wheat is slowly boiled for several hours, after which the decoction is strained off and in a bowl, and the throat of the sheep is cut so as to open the windpipe, down which the operator stuffs the salt and pepper as fast as open the windpipe, down which the operator stuffs the salt and pepper as fast as and when fermentation has fairly begun, the mudai is fit for use, and is strained off into jars. It has a muddy look, but possesses a pleasant and slightly acid flavor, which is very agreeable in a hot country if the mode

of preparation be not known.

Wheat is prepared in a rather peculiar, not to say poetical and romantic, manner. The sickle is not employed, but the ears are plucked by hand. The wheat gatherers sepmixture of salt, pepper, and blood. This is the nachi, which is served up by being cut in slices and handed to the guests while still and walking slowly through the cornfeld. As they pass along, they gather the ears, rubbing them on the back of their companion's hand, so that the ripe grains fall into the basket. They accompany the light toil with songs, which mostly treat of love, and as the tendency of each pair is naturally to diverge from the others, it happens that in round it armed with switches, with which this way is originated many a love-match, which afterward finds its issue in the marriage ceremonies above described.

This plan is, however, only employed when corn has to be gathered and threshed on a small scale. When a large quantity is prepared the horse is brought into requisition, the ears being thrown into a circular shallow pit, round and round which six or seven horsemen urge their steeds, shouting and yelling as if mad. When they think that the grain is sufficiently released from the ears, they leap out of the ring, and a number of women and children enter, who sweep up the corn and chaff to the edge of the ring with bunches of twigs which serve

as brooms.

This operation, however, is a very imperfect one, and before the corn can be taken to the mill a further husking has to be performed. This is done by placing the wheat in shallow wooden dishes, getting into them barefooted, and keeping up a sort of shuffling dance, throwing up the grain with each foot alternately, and rubbing it with the

chica de manzanos were not favorable; but dinging the wheat into the air, so that the our guide tossed it off with infinite relish." The winnowing is simply accomplished by grinding, it is exactly similar to that mode which is practised by the Kaffirs, the women placing the corn on the top of a flat, liquid. After describing the mode of its sloping stone, and rubbing it with another manufacture, he proceeds to say: "Such stone shaped like a rolling-pin. The mill being placed on a sheepskin, the meal falls upon the skin as it is ground. This is very hard work indeed, and even the skilled Araucanians are bathed in perspiration be-Mudai is a drink which resembles almost fore they have ground enough corn for a meal.

CHAPTER CXXVI.

THE ARAUCANIANS - Concluded.

GAMES AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS.

THE GAME OF PELICAN, AND ITS CLOSE RESEMBLANCE TO HOCKEY-AVAS, OB THE RIGHT BEAN GAME - MANUFACTURES - MAKING BROTHERHOOD, AND EXCHANGING NAMES - AN IRRUPTION (NEW RELATIVES - STATE OF THE HEALING ART - THE MACHIS OR DOCTORS - THEIR MODE (WORKING CURES -- A WEIRD-LIKE SCENE -- THE FEMALE DOCTOR AT HER INCANTATION -- FE OF ALLOWING THE NAME TO BE KNOWN - BELIEF IN OMENS - THE LUCKY BIRDS - HUTA SACRIFICE - FUNERAL OF A CHIEF.

THE games of the Araucanians are tolerably numerous, and one or two of them resemble some of our own games. There is one, for example, called Pelican, which is almost identical with the well-known game of hockey. An animated description of this game is given by Mr. E. R. Smith:

"Early in the morning we saw a number of boys engaged upon the fine lawn in front of the house in planting out twigs at short intervals, thus forming an alley about forty feet wide, and some three hundred long, They were preparing for a game of Pelican. Others were blowing a long horn (formed by the insertion of a cow's horn in a hollow cane), to the tones of which came back answering notes, as though a rival band were approaching over the hills. The night before, we had heard the same challenge to the neighboring youths, and the same echoing reply, but more faint and distant. At last the enemy were seen emerging from the woods; a shout of welcome arose; there were many salutations, a 'big talk,' and all put themselves in readiness for the great trial of skill.

"The game of Pelican . . . is played with a small wooden ball, propelled along the ground by sticks curved at the lower end. The two sides have their bases at opposite extremities of the alley. The ball is placed in a hole half-way between the bases, and over it two boys are stationed, while the other players are scattered along the alley, each armed with a stick. When all is ready, the mark on one side, and ten sticks, which two boys strike their sticks together in the used in reckoning the game. Spreading air, and commence a struggle for the ball, poncho on the ground, the players sit

each striving to knock it toward the oppo-

"The object of every one is to drive the ball through his opponent's base, or, in defence of his own, to knock it sideway beyond the bordering line of twigs, is which case the trial is put down as draw and recommences. Each game is duly notched on a stick, and the party first ally ing a certain number gains the victory. "There was much shouting and hum."

many a cracked shin and an occasion tumble, but the greatest goodwill reigne throughout. Some thirty players were a gaged in the game, mostly naked, with the exception of a poncho about the loins. was much disappointed with their physic development, which was not as I expects to see. They struck me as inferior to the laboring classes in Chili, both in muscle at symmetry, though possessing the same general features. Neither was their playing remarkable either for skill or activity; an if they were a fair sample, it would be a easy matter to select from many of o schools or colleges a party of young m more than a match for the same number of picked Araucanians, even at their ow

national game of Pelican.

When the sun is too high to allow the game to proceed, the players general abandon it in favor of another game calls Avas. This is purely a game of chance, is played with eight beans, each having

beans, sh them on falla with is scored

The in traordina talk to th breasts, s ploring t selves, ar and treat living cr all the p ponchos. and dolla hands wit vells of th game the article of it is not dressed s solately h naments, cheripa.

The fat on the tur the natio decide or point by the pelica trusted w of policy. The ma

but few. already be the bolas the lasso The nativ and are principal is indigo, which are obtained b from Euro Among

making bi inasmuch that whic practised Africa, as lowing ma One ind into which ceived, an then fetch

bowl, and Lacu, who and if he would grie he was to Fortuna

two pieces

The meat

etiquette t facit per al

opposite sides, and each in turn takes the cannot by any possibility consume half a beans, shakes them in his hands, and flings lamb, he is allowed to eat as much as he can them on the poncho. For each bean that falls with the marked side upward one point is scored, a hundred completing the game. The interest displayed in this game is ex-

traordinary. The players shout to the beans, talk to them, kiss them, press them to their breasts, and rub them on the ground, im-ploring them to send good luck to them-selves, and evil fortune to their antagonists, and treating them exactly as if they were living creatures. At this game they stake all the property that they can muster, and ponchos, bolas, lassos, knives, ornaments, and dollars when they can be got, change hands with great rapidity amid the excited yells of the players and spectators. At this game the Araucanians frequently lose every article of property which they possess, and it is not at all uncommon to see a welldressed and well-armed player go disconsolately home without his weapons, his ornaments, and his clothes, except a ragged cheripa.

The fate of prisoners of war often depends on the turn of a bean, and sometimes, when the national council have been unable to decide on a subject, they have settled the point by the result of a game at avas. Even the pelican game has sometimes been entrusted with the decision of a knotty point

of policy.

The manufactures of the Araucanians are but few. The art of the silversmith has already been described, as has also that of the bolas maker, while the manufacture of the lasso will be described in another place. The native cloths are made of cotton or wool, and are woven in very rude looms. The principal dye employed by the Araucanians is indigo, and the bright scarlet patterns which are introduced into the best cloths are obtained by interweaving threads unravelled from European manufactures.

Among their social customs, the mode of making brotherhood ought to be mentioned, inasmuch as it resembles in some respects that which has already been described as practised in the Malay Archipelago and in Africa, and in others. The ceremony is called Lacu, and is performed after the fol-

lowing manner.

One individual is selected from the family into which the honored guest is to be received, and to him a present is made. He then fetches a lamb, kills it, cuts it into two pieces, and boils one-half of the animal. The meat is then placed in a huge wooden bowl, and brought to the new brother in Lacu, who is supposed to eat the whole of it, and if he should leave a single mouthful would grievously insult the family into which he was to be received.

Fortunately, he is allowed by the laws of

manage and to distribute the remainder among the family, who are only too happy to take their share in fulfilling the required conditions. From that time the two Lacus exchange names

Mr. E. R. Smith went through the ceremony of Lacu, and became a member of the Mapuché tribe, under the name of Namculan, an abbreviation of Namcu-Lanquen, i. c. Eaglet of the Sea. Sometime afterward he found that his relations were strangely

numerous.

"After the usual meal, the usual distribution of presents was made, and as the family was small we were just congratulating ourselves on escaping cheaply, when in sauntered a neighbor, who was presented as my brother. He had hardly settled down to the enjoyment of his share of the booty, when in dropped a blear-eyed old woman, who proved to be my aunt. Next followed a stately dowager, fair, fat, and forty, radiant with paint and silver ornaments, looking as innocent as though she had dropped in by the merest accident in the world. She was my sister, and so it went on until we began to think that our host's relations were innumerable."

THE Araucanians know a little about medicine, and much more about surgery, though the mixture of superstition with practice lessens the former, and the absence of a written language hinders the latter. Their medicines are almost entirely vegetable, the chief of which is the well-known sarsaparilla root. Bleeding is performed by means of sharp flakes of obsidian, which are sharper than any knife of native manufacture, and blisters are in great favor.

The Mapuché mode of blistering is the very simple one of the actual cautery, and is performed by means of a moxa made of dried pith. This material is rolled up in little balls and applied to the skin, where it is allowed to remain until entirely consumed, being pressed down so as to ensure its full effect. This is horribly painful, but in spite of that drawback—perhaps in consequence of it—is very much in favor with the people.

Beside these material medicines they have others of a different character, which are employed when the disease is beyond the reach of their simple medicines. The wise men who practise this advanced system of healing are but few in number, and are called by the title of Machi, their mode of practice receiving the name of machilum.

foing on the principle that a disease which cannot be expelled by medicine must be caused by an evil spirit, the Machi proceeds to drive it out after his own fashion. The Fortunately, he is allowed by the laws of stiquette to take advantage of the adage, qui laid on his back in the middle of the floor. facit per se; and though he The Machi, having in the meanwhile re-

ans, even at their ow elican.

too high to allow th the players general of another game call ly a game of chance. It beans, each having nd ten sticks, which at the game. Spreading und, the players sit

AS, OR THE EIGHT BEAR

NAMES - AN IRRUPTION

DOCTORS - THEIR MODE

HER INCANTATION - FE

ME LUCKY BIRDS - HUR

ock it toward the oppo

very one is to drive the

ponent's base, or, in de to knock it sideway

ing line of twigs,

l is put down as drawn Each game is du

nd the party first tally r gains the victory. shouting and hum.

in and an occasion

eatest goodwill reigne

thirty players were en mostly naked, with the cho about the loins.

nted with their physics

was not as I expecte k me as inferior to th

chili, both in muscle at ossessing the same ge ther was their playing

or skill or activity; an

sample, it would be s

ect from many of o

a party of young me for the same number

moved nearly the whole of his clothes, and | ture for the sake of extracting a confession made himself as horrible as he can by paint, enters the dwelling, taking with him his magic drum, i. e. a wooden bowl with a cover of sheepskin strained tightly over it. After examining the patient, the Machi begins a long-drawn monotonous incantation, accompanied by continual beating of the drum, until he has worked himself up to a pitch of frenzy, and falls backward on the ground, with breast jerking convulsively, eyes rolling, and mouth foaming.

As soon as he falls, a number of young men, who have been waiting close to the hut, leap on their horses, and dash at full speed round the house, yelling defiantly, waving lighted torches over their heads, and brandishing their long lances by way of frightening the evil spirit, and warning him not to come near the place again. Like the Machi, they are all nearly naked, and painted in the most hideous fashion, so as to strike terror, not only into the spirit that has pos-session of the man, but into those who are hovering round the house, and trying to gain admission. In the first engraving on the next page the artist has furnished a strange, weird scene, illustrating the Mapuché mode of healing the sick.

After a while the Machi recovers from his trance, and then announces the seat and immediate cause of the malady. For the latter he carefully searches the patient, and after a time produces it in the shape of a spider, a toad, a stone, an arrow head, or similar object. Were he to do more than this, no harm would accrue, and if the patient should recover no harm is done.

But, should he die, the Machi is forced by public opinion to declare that the evil spirit has been sent to the dead man by means of witchcraft.

The body is opened, the gall removed, and placed in the wooden bowl of the magic drum, where it undergoes a series of incantations. After they are over, it is put into a closely covered pot and placed on the fire until it is dried up. The sign of witcheraft is a stone found at the bottom of the pot, and it is needless to say that such a stone is never wanting. By means of this proof of witcheraft, the Machi again throws himself into a trance, in the course of which he

No one ever disbelieves a Machi, and the relatives of the dead man seek out the accused and murder him. It naturally follows that the Machis are too prone to abuse this terrible power of their position by trusing persons against whom they have enmity, or whom they have been bribed to condemn. No counter proof is admitted in the face of a Machi's accusation; and if the alleged culprit should be in another district, the cacique is requested to deliver him up to justice. The unfortunate wretch is sure to suffer tor-

of his guilt, and, whether he confess or not he is sure to be killed; so that a wise man admits his guilt at once, and thereby escapes the tortures which he would otherwise have suffered.

Sometimes, though rarely, the Machi is woman. In this case she assumes the male dress, mimics as far as she can the masculine tone of voice and mode of walking, and is always a very disagreeable individual, being mostly crabbed, ill-tempered, petulant, and irritable.

As the Machi always operates at night, the scene is most wild and picturesque, a may be seen from the account of Mr. E. R. Smith, who witnessed (at a distance) the operations of a female Machi.

"One of the neighbors was dangerously ill, and during the night there was a grand machilun performed by the grand exorcist the medicine woman of Boroa herself. I wished to be present, but Sancho would not listen to the proposal, insisting that we might expose ourselves to violence by appearing to interfere with this witch, whose hatred of the whites and influence over the natives were alike unbounded

"The night was black and threatening well suited to her machinations. plainly hear the monotonous tap of the Indian drum, and the discordant song occasionally rising with the frenzy of the moment into a shrill scream, then sinking to a low, guttural cadence, while all else was hushed for very dread of the unhallowed rites. Suddenly the singing stopped, and there was a long silence, broken by the eruption of a troop of naked savages rushing round the house on horse and afoot, brandishing flercely lance, and sword, and burning fagot and blazing torch, and making night hideous with their demoniac cries The frightened dogs howled in dismal concert, and again all was still. The evil spirit had been cast out and driven away. It only remained for the sick man to recover or

The witch who presided over this extraordinary scene was a mestizo, i. e. a half-breed between the negro and the native She was a singularly unprepossessing personage, hideously ugly, and turning her ug designates the culprit who has caused the liness of features to account by her shrew-illness of the deceased. a necessary accompaniment of this particular caste. There is now before me a photograph of a young mestizo woman, whose features, although they partake somewhat of the negro character, are good and intelligent, her color is comparatively pale, and her hair retains the length and thickness of the Araucanian, together with a crispness which has been inherited from the negro race

Like many other uncivilized nations, the Araucanians have a great objection to allow

extracting a confession ther he confess or not ed; so that a wise man ce, and thereby escapes would otherwise have

rarely, the Machi is case she assumes the assumes the assumes the can the ice and mode of walk. very disagreeable indi-crabbed, ill-tempered, e.

vays operates at night, ild and picturesque, as e account of Mr. E. R.

ed (at a distance) the le Machi. hbors was dangerously light there was a grand by the grand exorcist, on of Boroa herself. I to but Sancho would not easily insisting that we west to violence by apwith this witch, whose and influence over the

and influence over the bounded. chinations. We could otonous tap of the In-discordant song occa-the frenzy of the moceam, then sinking to a ce, while all else was ead of the unhallowed

singing stopped, and ilence, broken by the of naked savages rushe on horse and afoot, le on horse and afoot, lance, and sword, and lazing torch, and makh their demoniac cries howled in dismal constitution. The evil spirit d driven away. It only the man to recover of

k man to recover or

esided over this extraa mestizo, i. e. a half-negro and the native unprepossessing per-y, and turning her ug-account by her shrewdgliness is not, however, niment of this particulow before me a photonestizo woman, whose ney partake somewhat or, are good and intelli-mparatively pale, and ength and thickness of other with a crispness orited from the negro

ncivilized nations, the reat objection to allow



(1.) MAPUCHÉ MEDICINE. (See page 1206.)



(2.) MAPUCHE FUNERAL. (See page 1210.)

a strange that by m ards may When the white the Araucany. The allow him likes, but tell, nor d the spur doubtless have been work. Their port the possess cal influer simulated This ter of books b is more into see a v

to see a very the languary the word mystery caprehension owner as e. In one cally inquisity in could at a book, really was book, vain was the language of the

really was book, vain blance bet which it signiformation pointed ou hand as if it a slight brook. The had bitten the white r and, what He said not wrapping h for several it.

In consectaveller date the is obligationally, and the very fatraveller betime, the permeter of the consectation of the consect

omens, and own fashion supposed to one occasion travelling w mules fell a sinister ome respondingly an omen so fears were d The reade

The reade

a stranger to learn their names, thinking | lad, and was called Namcu-lanquen, i. e. Eagthat by means of such knowledge the wizards may be able to practise upon them. When they are brought into contact with the white man, and are asked their names, the Araucanians flatly deny that they have any. They will take service under him, and allow him to call them by any name that he likes, but their own name they will never tell, nor do they like even to invent one on the spur of the moment. The reader will doubtless recall many similar instances that have been recorded in the course of this work. They have a similar objection to their portraits being taken, thinking that the possessor will be able to exercise magi-

This terror has been increased by the use of books by the white travellers. Nothing is more inexplicable to an Araucanian than to see a white man, evidently ignorant of the language, refer to a book and then say the word which he wants. How such a mystery can be achieved is beyond his comprehension, and he regards the book and its owner as equally supernatural beings.

In one case, an Indian of more than usually inquisitive mind pointed to various objects, in order to see whether his white vis-itor could find out their names by looking at a book. Being convinced that the feat really was performed, he peered into the book, vainly trying to detect some resemblance between the word and the object which it signified. As he did not gain much information from his eyes, his white friend pointed out the word, on which he laid his hand as if to feel it. Just at that moment, a slight breeze ruffled the leaves of the book. The man drew back as if a snake had bitten him. The mysterious voice of the white man's oracle had spoken to him, and, what was worse, upon his left hand. He said nothing, but silently withdrew, and, wrapping his poncho round his head, sat for several hours without speaking a word.

In consequence of this superstition, a traveller dares not use his note book openly. He is obliged to write his remarks surreptitiously, and, so great is the fear inspired by the very fact of writing, that even if the traveller be out of sight for any lengthened time, the people are nervous and suspicious.

The Araucanians have a firm belief in omens, and will address prayers after their own fashion to any of the creatures that are travelling with his native friends, one of the mules fell and broke its back. This was a sinister omen, and the Araucanians were correspondingly depressed at it. Fortunately, an omen so good followed it that their fears were dispelled and confidence restored. inflict
The reader may remember that Mr. Smith skull.

had just exchanged names with a Mapuché | As soon as he falls, the heart is torn from

let of the Sea. Just after the unlucky mule had injured itself, a sea eagle rose suddenly from its perch, circled around the party, and sailed off southward. This was indeed a fortunate omen. In the first place, the bird was the emblem of the white man who had recently become a Mapuché, and in the next, the eagle was on the right hand of the travellers.

The native guide Trauque put spurs to his horse, dashed forward at full gallop, shouting and yelling with excitement at the piece of good fortune that had befallen them. Presently he halted, and addressed a prayer to the eagle: "O Nameu! Great being! Look not upon us with thy left but with thy cal influence upon them by means of the simulated features.

Tight eye, for thou knowest that we are poor! Watch over our children and brothers; and grant us happiness, and allow us to return in safety from our journey.

Every circumstance combined to make the omen propitious. The Namcu is the being most venerated by the Araucanians, who think that it is a sort of heavenly messenger in direct communication with the Superior Being. The reader will doubtless be struck with the coincidence between the bird divinations of the Araucanians and those of the Dyaks of Borneo, as well as by their identity with the auguries of ancient Greece and Rome.

With the exception of the wise men above mentioned, the Araucanians have no priests, and as a necessary consequence they have no temples and no religious ceremonies. There is a general though vague belief in a good and evil principle, which may be manifested by a host of inferior deities or demons. They have not even an idol, nor is there any definite system of worship, the only prayers which a native makes being invocations such as that which has just been described as made to the eagle.

Sacrifices are made at their great national councils. An animal is killed, its blood is poured on the ground as a libation, and the heart, laid on a green branch, is borne round the assembly, accompanied with dances and songs. The flesh is then cooked and eaten, and the bones collected and thrown into the nearest river, so that they shall not be polluted by being eaten by the dogs.

Sometimes in war time, a prisoner is sacrificed. He is placed on a horse whose tail and ears have been cropped by way of deriding the rider, and is thus taken to the place of execution. Here he dismounts, and is supposed to have supernatural power. On forced to dig a hole, into which he throws a one occasion, when Mr. E. R. Smith was number of sticks, calling each after the name number of sticks, calling each after the name of some celebrated warrior of his tribe. He is then made to fill up the hole, thus symbolically burying the fame of his countrymen, and as soon as he has done so, his brains are dashed out with a club, care being taken to inflict as little damage as possible on the

the breast and handed to the Toqui, who deceased would be put off with a wooden sucks a few drops of the blood, and passes it horse to ride, were it not that the Mapuches to his officers, who follow his example. The large bones of the arms and legs are made into flutes, the head is placed on a spear and carried round in triumph, and the skull is made into a drinking-cup to be used at the principal feasts. Such a sacrifice, however, is not to be considered as an act of worship, but merely as a mode of propitiating the manes of deceased warriors.

the ancient Greeks and Romans and those of modern Araucanians has already been mentioned. There is another semi-religious practice which also recalls the customs of classic times, namely, the making of libations and offerings of food at every meal. When the Araucanian takes his broth or wine, he pours a few drops upon the ground as a thank offering to the higher powers, and with the same motive he scatters around a few morsels of

THE mode of burial differs slightly accord-

ing to the locality and the tribe.
When a Mapuché chief dies, the body is exposed on an open bier for several days, during which time the friends and neighbors pay their respects and offer their condolence to the family. On the day of the funeral a procession is formed, led by a company of young men on horseback, who dash forward at full speed to the place of interment. After them the body, borne by the principal relatives, and behind them come the women, who wail aloud and fill the air with their cries of sorrow. Last of all comes a woman who scatters ashes on the ground, so that the deceased may not return by the path along which he was borne. The illustration No. 2, on page 1207, represents this part of a Mapuché funeral.

The body is then bound with the knees to the breast, and lowered into the grave, with the face toward the west, the direction of the Mapuché spirit-land. The saddle, bit, spurs, and stirrups of the deceased are laid by his side, together with some provisions for the journey, a few beads, and a piece of money, and the grave is then filled up. As, however, the horse accoutrements of a chief are of silver, and exceedingly valuable, they are represented by wooden copies, which are supposed to serve the purposes of the deceased as well as the more costly articles, which become the property of his suc-

At the head of the grave is planted the dead man's lance, the steel head of which is replaced by a wooden imitation. It is also necessary that a horse should be provided for the dead chief, and this is done by sacrificing his favorite steed, and hanging its skin over the grave by means of a pole placed across two forked props. Mr. E. R. Smith as buried respectably unless the grave be shrewdly remarks that in all probability the decorated with a figure of the deceased.

are exceedingly fond of horseflesh, and take the opportunity of holding a great banquet on the flesh of the slaughtered animal, the skin and spirit going to the share of the dead

Such ceremonies as these are only for a chief, a common man not being supposed to need a horse, and consequently being buried with slight and simple ceremonies. For the The similitude between the bird omens of funerals of women the rites are of a similar character, the chief distinction being that, instead of the saddle and weapons, some cooking vessels, a distaff, and similar objects

are laid in the grave.

Some travellers have asserted that when a powerful chief dies, his favorite wife is also killed and placed in the tomb with him. This statement is, however, very doubtful, and was flatly contradicted by every one of whom Mr. Smith inquired. The Mapuchés seem to have a vague notion that the dead are able to return to earth and watch over the living; and when the dark thunderclouds lower over the distant Cordilleras, they imagine that the deceased warriors of their tribe are chasing away the invisible foes of their country, and utter loud shouts of encouragement to the supernatural warriors

In some parts of the Mapuché territory the graves are surrounded with a rude fence of upright boards, from the midst of which rises the long quivering lance with its slight pennon fluttering in the wind. (See back-

ground of illustration).

The Huilyiches, however, have a much more elaborate mode of decorating the graves of their chiefs, resembling in some degree that which is employed by the New Zealanders. Figures supposed to represent the deceased chief and his wives are set round the grave, just as the New Zealanders plant their "tikis" round the graves of their friends. (See page 861.)

One such memorial, seen by Mr. Smith, had a very singular, not to say ludicrous, appearance. Each figure was cut out of a huge log of wood, some ten or twelve feet in height. In the middle stood the chief himself, wearing no clothing, but having a hat on his head and a sword in his hand. Round him were stationed his wives, equally without clothing, the great object of the artist being to leave no doubt which is the chief and which are his wives, without troubling himself as to details of drapery. Rude as these figures are, only very few natives can carve them, and these sculptors make a large income by the exercise of their skill. Each figure is purchased with a fat ox, or even at a higher price, according to its size and the amount of labor bestowed

THE GRAN IN SO TANT SEXE MACA

-AT

ACTE

To the e and exten rivers, lies indetermi aries, call district is deserve a Not the

history is

preserved

despite th

Both the have, at di sitions in able to re western fi the great boundary, his freedo In the Reid: most with dian of the well-settle the dictat presenting But neithe tries think of the bou ment there

"He dar Chaco. F the two hold the or They gaze off with a wooden horseflesh, and take ling a great banquet aghtered animal, the the share of the dead

these are only for a ot being supposed to equently being buried ceremonies. For the rites are of a similar stinction being that, and weapons, some ff, and similar objects

asserted that when his favorite wife is n the tomb with him. vever, very doubtful, dicted by every one aquired. The Mapugue notion that the en the dark thunderdistant Cordilleras, deceased warriors of g away the invisible and utter loud shouts ne supernatural war-

e Mapuché territory ded with a rude fence the midst of which g lance with its slight ne wind. (See back-

vever, have a much of decorating the resembling in some s employed by the ef and his wives are just as the New Zea-cis "round the graves

page 861.) seen by Mr. Smith, not to say ludicrous, ure was cut out of a ne ten or twelve feet ddle stood the chief othing, but having a a sword in his hand. ned his wives, equally great object of the no doubt which is the his wives, without o details of drapery. re, only very few naand these sculptors by the exercise of e is purchased with a gher price, according

unt of labor bestowed e can be considered unless the grave be

of the deceased.

CHAPTER CXXVII.

THE GRAN CHACO.

APPEARANCE — WEAPONS — CHARACTER.

THE GRAN CHACO AND ITS INHABITANTS - THEIR LOVE OF FREEDOM - CONTRAST OF THE TWO RACES IN SOUTH AMERICA - THE VARIOUS TRIBES IN THE COUNTRY - APPEARANCE OF THE INHABI-TANTS - ERADICATION OF THE EYEBROWS AND EYELASHES - HAIR DRESSING - COSTUME OF THE SEXES - EQUESTRIAN HABITS - THE NAKED MAN ON THE NAKED HORSE - WEAPONS - THE MACANA CLUB, AND MODE OF USING IT - THE LONG SPEAR - CURIOUS ARMOR - THE FOOT-BOW -ATTACKING A VILLAGE - HUTS OF THE GRAN CHACO INDIANS - CROSSING A RIVER - CHAR-ACTER OF THE PROPER.

and extending to the Paraguay and Panama rivers, lies a tract of mountain country, of indeterminate northern and southern boundaries, called the Gran Chaco. This great district is inhabited by a series of tribes who deserve a short notice.

Not the least remarkable point in their history is the manner in which they have preserved the freedom of their own land, despite the attacks of various white nations. Both the Spaniards and the Portuguese have, at different times, seized on a few positions in the Gran Chaco, but have not been able to retain them except on the indefinite western frontier line. On the east, where the great Paraguay River forms the natural boundary, the native is left unmolested in his freedom.

In the eloquent words of Captain Mayne Reid: "On its eastern side, coinciding al-most with a meridian of longitude, the Indian of the Gran Chaco does not roam; the well-settled provinces of Corrientes, and the dictatorial government of Paraguay, presenting a firmer front of resistance. But neither does the colonist of these countries think of crossing to the western bank of the boundary river to form an establishment there.

"He dares not even set his foot upon the Chaco. For a thousand miles, up and down,

To the east of the Araucanian territory, from the portico of his well-built mansion, or perhaps from the street of his town—the other standing by his humble 'toldo,' or mat-covered tent, more probably on the back of his half-wild horse, reined up for a moment on some projecting promontory that commands a view of the river. And thus have these two races gazed at each other for three centuries, with little other intercourse passing between them than that of a deadly hostility."

As the territory of the Gran Chaco is very extensive, being about three times as large as that of Great Britain, and extends north and south through eleven degrees of lati-tude, it naturally follows that the tribes which inhabit it differ from each other in many details, those of the warm north and cold south being in many points strongly contrasted with each other. Still, there are many points of similarity, and these we will select in the following brief account of the Gran Chaco tribe, omitting, from want of space, those wherein they differ from each other.

In the first place, the aborigines of the Gran Chaco are of a much paler complexion than those of the more northern tribes, known from their color by the name of Red Men, and more nearly resemble the rich olive of the inhabitants of Southern Europe. Chaco. For a thousand miles, up and down, the two races, European and American, hold the opposite banks of this great stream.

The nose is rather aquiline, the mouth well formed, the cheek-bones high, and the eyes and hair jetty black. The latter is singu-They gaze across at each other - the one larly abundant, and though coarse and with-

out curl is smooth and glossy when properly rides upon an entirely naked horse. He dressed.

The men have but little beard, and the scanty hairs which grow upon the chin and face they completely eradicate, using for that purpose a pair of shells until they are rich enough to purchase iron tweezers. Even the eyebrows and lashes are pulled out, the natives saying that they only hinder the sight, and comparing those who wear them to the ostrich—i.e. the rhea, or American ostrich, which is plentiful in their country.

To an European, the loss of these appendages to the eyes has a very unsightly effect; but the native takes a very different view of the case, and looks upon a countenance wherein the eyebrows and lashes are permitted to grow much as a gentleman of George the Second's time would have regarded a head which was decorated by its own hair, and a face from which the beard and moustache had not been removed.

The masculine mode of dressing the hair has some resemblance to that which is practised by the warlike tribes of Northern America. The hair is shaved from the forehead, as well as from a band extending behind the head from one ear to the other. The remainder is allowed to grow to its full length, and carefully cherished and tended.

The Gran Chaco Indians only use paint upon great occasions, when they decorate themselves as fantastically as any savage tribe can ao; but, as a rule, their faces and bodies are allowed to retain their normal olive hue. Neither do the men use the tattoo, this being restricted to the women, who mark themselves with a variety of patterns upon their arms, cheeks, and breasts, each having a line of blue dots extending from the corner of each eye to the ears, and a pattern of some kind upon her forchead.

The dress of these people is very simple. L. warm and fine weather, it consists merely of a piece of cotton or woolen fabric, woven in the brightest hues of red, white, and blue. It is little more than a mere strip of cloth, and in this respect the dress of the women scarcely differs from that of the men. In cold and stormy weather, both sexes wear a warm cloak made of the skin of the jaguar, or, if so valnable a material cannot be obtained, of that of the nutria, or South American otter. Earrings are worn by both sexes; but the hideous ornaments which so many savage tribes wear in their lips and noses are utterly unknown to them.

The Gran Chaco Indian is essentially a horseman, and no inhabitants of America have made more use of the horse than he has. He differs, however, from those which have been already mentioned in one important particular. He utterly despises the costly spurs, stirrups, and headstalls which have been described in the account of the Araucanians, and, almost naked himself, he

rides upon an entirely naked horse. He uses no saddle, no stirrups, and no bit, guiding his steed by voice and touch, and not by the power of the iron curb. The only representative of a bridle is a slight rope of plaited hide passed round the lower jaw of the horse.

The weapons of the Gran Chaco Indian are very few. He carries the bolas and lasso, but cares little for them in war, preferring, as his most efficient weapon, his spear. This instrument is sometimes fifteen feet in length, and in the hands of a skilful rider, mounted upon a perfectly trained steed, is a most formidable instrument of war. The warrior uses his spear, not only for battle, but as a means for mounting his horse. He stands on the right hand of the animal, places the butt of the spear upon the ground, and, using the shaft as a leaping pole, swings himself upon the back of the horse with scarcely an effort.

A rather peculiar club is also used by these people. This weapon is called "macana," and exists throughout a very large portion of Southern America. It seldom exceeds two feet in length, and in form somewhat resembles a square dice box, being smaller in the middle, and increasing in diameter to each end. It is used both as a missile, and as a hand weapon, and when used is held by the middle. The young warriors pride themselves on the force and accuracy with which they hurl this instrument, and during their leisure time vie with each other in throwing it at a mark. The specimen which is shown in the illustration was presented to me by H. Bernau, Esq., together with several other weapons and implements of South America.



THE MACANA.

Som cylinda jects fr It is fa geniou branch club, th mers ir has bee lows it which stone, a will bro by any Anot tion is

ing onl of orna rather erly be from sic falling hardness their in tree fro of those wood, weight guaiacu a name

rate can

The states of the second of th

that whi harmi First made fro as to rer Over thi armor, n of the ta the helm terial, w stroke of It interfe agement ful whet sate for may have and there warrior a he would

ploys pair let and bl lutely hid When l by white

To add to

ely naked horse. He rups, and no bit, guidand touch, and not by curb. The only rep-e is a slight rope of ound the lower jaw of

Gran Chaco Indian arries the bolas and for them in war, preefficient weapon, his nt is sometimes fifteen the hands of a skilful perfectly trained steed. strument of war. The r, not only for battle. unting his horse. He hand of the animal, pear upon the ground, a leaping pole, swings ck of the horse with

club is also used by eapon is called " macoughout a very large America. It seldom length, and in form square dice box, being and increasing in di-It is used both as a d weapon, and when middle. The young lves on the force and hey hurl this instruleisure time vie with g it at a mark. The wh in the illustration y H. Bernau, Esq., to-ner weapons and imerica.

ANA.

Sometimes the macana is armed with a lous manner. Usually he fights exclusively plindrical piece of hard stone, which pro- on horseback, being so admirable a rider cylindrical piece of hard stone, which projects from one end like the blade of an axe. It is fastened into the wood by a very ingenious process. Having fixed upon a young branch which he thinks will make a good club, the Indian bores a hole in it, and hammers into the hole the stone cylinder which has been previously prepared. He then allows it to remain for two or three years, by which time the wood has grown over the

by any amount of violence.

Another of these weapons in my collection is remarkable for the slight but elaborate carvings with which it is covered, leaving only a small space in the centre devoid of ornament. The patt ns are scratched rather than cut, so that they cannot properly be seen unless the weapon is turned from side to side, so as o ensure the light falling properly upon it; but the extreme hardness of the wood makes them retain their integrity in spite of rough usage. The tree from which these clubs are made is one of those which are popularly called iron-wood, on account of the hardness and weight of the timber. It belongs to the guaiacums. The Spaniards call the tree by

a name which signifies "axe-breaker."

The strangest part of war as waged by these natives is, that when they fight with each other they adopt an elaborate system of defensive armor, while they discard everything of the kind when they match themselves against the fire-arms of the whites, knowing that the shield and costume which will guard them against the club and the spear are useless against a bullet.

The armor is of a most cumbersome description, and looks nearly as awkward as that which is worn by the soldiers of Beg-

harmi. (See page 638.)

First of all, the warrior puts on a coat made from the skin of the jaguar, dressed so as to remain soft even after being wetted. Over this dress he wears a complete suit of armor, made from the thick and hard hide of the tapir. Not only the body armor, but the helmet and shield are made of this material, which is capable of resisting the stroke of the lance or the point of the arrow. It interferes, however, with the right management of the horse, and it is very doubtful whether its defensive powers compensate for its exceeding clumsiness. Still, it may have a moral effect upon the enemy; and there is no denying that it gives the warrior a more formidable appearance than he would possess if he rode without armor. To add to the ferocity of his aspect, he employs paint on these occasions, and with scar-let and black pigment makes himself absolutely hideous.

When he goes to attack a village inhabited

that he can even stand on the withers of his horse when at full speed, and feeling himself out of his element when dismounted. But when he has to attack so formidable an enemy as the white man, he begins after a different fashion. He takes with him an enormous bow, far too strong to be drawn in the usual manner, and a number of long arrows. Dismounting at some distance from stone, and become so firmly imbedded that it will break to pieces rather than be loosened range of his arrows, and then prepares for action.

He begins by wrapping a quantity of cotton wool round the arrows just behind the head, and when he has treated them all in this way, he strikes a light and sets fire to the cotton wool on one of the arrows. Lying on his back, he holds the bow with the toes of both feet, and, laying the blazing arrow in its place, he is able to use both his hands to draw the powerful weapon. He shoots with a wonderfully good aim and great rapidity, so that when a number of Indians surround a village, and pour their flery missiles into it from all directions, the houses

are sure to take fire.

In the midst of the confusion caused by the flames that arise on all sides, the warriors leap on their horses, dash at the village, kill all whom they can reach, carry off as much plunder as possible, and then gallop back to their own districts, where no

one dares to follow.

Retaliation is never feared, as the Gran Chaco Indians have no fixed habitation, and nothing that can be called even a village. The hut or rather tent of these people is a very simple affair. Two upright posts are driven firmly into the earth, and another is laid horizontally across them. Over the horizontal pole is hung a large mat, the ends of which are pegged to the ground, and the tent is then complete. The mat is made of the epidermis of young palm leaves. In order to prevent water from flooding the tent in rainy weather, a trench is dug around it. The only furniture is the hammock in which the inhabitant sleeps, and in fine weather, this is much more often slung between two palm trees than between the upright posts of the tent. In fact, the only use of the tent is as a shelter in rainy weather, the whole of the life being passed in the open air.

As may be imagined from this mode of life, the Gran Chaco Indian is essentially a rover, passing from one part of the country to another when game begins to be scarce in that district which he temporarily in-habits. Illustration No. 1, on the 1218th page shows the manner in which a community of these natives cross rivers. Swimming with perfect ease themselves, they merely with one hand guide their horses in by white men, he does so in a very ingen-the water without caring to get on their

ARROWS AND ARROW-CAP. (See page 1229.)

backs, while with the other hand they paddle themselves across the stream, or hold the spear with its light burden of ornaments.

The children and household goods are conveyed easily enough. Square boats or tubs made of bull's hide are launched, and in them are placed the children, the puppies, of which there are always pienty, and the heavier goods, such as the kettles and cooking vessels. A rope is tied to the "pelota," as this primitive boat is called, and the cargo is towed across the stream either by being attached to the tail of a horse, or held in the mouth of a good swimmer. The lighter articles, such as dress and ornaments, are fastened to the head of the spear, which is held upright, so as to keep them out of the water.

The dogs which I ve just been mentioned are extremely useft to the Gran Chaco Indians, who employ them in the chase. They give but little trouble to their masters, living for the most part in holes which they scratch in the ground, and feeding contentedly on the offal and scraps of food, which in an uncivilized community are more than scanty. Without the dogs the hunter could scarcely bring to bay the jaguar, the pecary, and similar animals, which are so annoyed by the perpetual and noisy attacks of the little curs that they stop in their flight in order to revenge themselves, and so give the hunter time to come up with them.

Although so essentially a warrior, and living much upon the proceeds of his plunder, the Gran Chaco Indian is in one respect far superior to the North American tribes. He does not torture the prisoners whom he takes in war, and the women and children he treats kindly, and adopts into his own tribe.

POSITION TOO

> OF CIG/

> BAT

THE larg

Forme on the so River; I struggle moved oc ceded to portion o they hav European is sure t among the not extent the dark Munduru friendship.

The cocoppery and straighter as short, excito hang care good, tolerably contour contour they disfigure as sans, but The Mo

a curved of himself of angles. (whole boot tern, the nally in so One man, black pate her hand they pad-the stream, or hold at burden of orna-

ousehold goods are . Square boats or are launched, and in ildren, the pupples, ays plenty, and the ied to the "pelota," called, and the cargo am either by being a horse, or held in mmer. The lighter and ornaments, aro the spear, which is ep them out of the

ust been mentioned the Gran Chaco Inin the chase. They their masters, livn holes which they nd feeding contentraps of food, which nity are more than gs the hunter could he jaguar, the pec-nals, which are so I and noisy attacks they stop in their ge themselves, and e to come up with

lly a warrior, and oceeds of his plunan is in one respect h American tribes. prisoners whom he men and children lopts into his own

CHAPTER CXXVIII.

THE MUNDURUCÚS.

MANUFACTURES - SOCIAL CUSTOMS.

POSITION AND NUMBER OF THE MUNDUBUCU TRIBE - THEIR GENERAL APPEARANCE - MODE OF TAT-TOOING - SKILL IN FEATHER WORKING - FEATHER SCEPTRES AND APRONS - HEAD PRESERVING - THE TRIUMPHAL FEAST AND WARRIOR'S PRIDE - TRAINING OF THE WARRIOR - THE ORDEAL OF THE "GLOVES" -- INTELLIGENCE OF THE MUNDURUCUS -- THE HEALING ART -- ENCHANTED CIGARS -- COLLECTING SARSAPARILLA -- THE GUARANA TEA -- THE PARICA SNUFF AND ITS OPE-BATION - THE SNUFF TUBE - COOKERY AMONG THE MUNDURUOUS.

THE largest, most warlike, and most power- | ing the bottom of the nose and mouth, while known by the name of MUNDURUCU.

Formerly, they used to inhabit the country on the southern bank of the great Amazon River; but since their long and valiant struggle with the Portuguese, they have moved considerably southward, having conceded to their new allies the more northern portion of their territory. Since that time, they have been on very good terms with Europeans, and a white man of any nation is sure to find a welcome when he comes among the Mundurucus. This feeling does not extend to the negroes and mulattoes, the dark skin arousing the anger of the Mundurucú as a white skin excites his friendship.

The color of the Mundurucus is warm coppery brown; their hair is thick, black, and straight, and with the men is cut short, except a long fringe, which is allowed to hang over the forehead. Their features are good, the lips being thin, the forehead tolerably high and arched, and the general contour of the face oval. Unfortunately, they disfigure themselves by a tattoo which is just as elaborate as that of the Marquesans, but without its elegance.

a curved or scroll-like pattern, and contents himself with tracing straight lines and angles. One favorite plan is, to cover the whole body with a sort of trellis-like pattern, the lines crossing each other diago-

ful of the Amazonian tribes is that which is his body was decorated with a blue checkered pattern, and his arms and legs with stripes.

pattern, and his arms and legs with stripes.

At first it seems strange how the people can draw the lines with such regul rity. It is managed, however, easily enough by means of the peculiar form of the tattooing instrument. This, instead of being very small and made of bone, is of considerable size and is in fact a carm, reads of the state. size, and is in fact a comb made of the sharp thorns of the pupunha palm set side by side. With this instrument there is no difficulty in producing straight lines, as all that the operator has to do is to lay the points of the comb on the skin, tap it sharply until a row of little holes is made, and then rub into the

wounds the charcoal pigment.

Besides the tattoo, they use paint in profusion, and adorn themselves with lovely ornaments made of the feathers of the macaw, the toucan, and other native birds. There are other tribes which use similar decorations, specimens of which we shall presently see. They are perhaps the best savage feather workers in the world, displaying an amount of artistic taste which is really astonishing. Their feather sceptres are beautiful specimens of native art. They are ans, but without its elegance.

The Mundurucu seems to have no idea of in diameter, and are made by fastening on a wooden rod the beautiful white and yellow feathers from the breast of the toucan. At the top, the sceptre expands into a wide plume, composed of the long tail-feathers of the trogons, macaws, and other birds. In nally in some, and at right angles in others.

One man, seen by Mr. Bates, had a large beauty, they are kept in cylindrical bamboo black patch on the centre of his face, cover- cases until they are wanted. These decorations are only used on festival days, which orders for a feast, the proud owner of the are determined by the will of the Tushaua head arrrys himself in his most magnificent or chief of the tribe. On these occasions the women prepare great quantities of "tarobá," which is exactly the same as the mudai of the Araucanians, and they go on drinking, singing, and dancing until all the

liquor is exhausted.

The illustration No. 7 on page 1231, gives some idea of the mode of feather working, and the kind of pattern employed by the Amazonian aborigines, though the plain black and white can give no idea of the gorgeous coloring and artistic arrangement of the hues. For this reason, I have been obliged to limit the illustrations of the elaborate feather work of these natives, and only to give a few examples, where form, as well as color, is exemplified.

The body of this apron is made of cotton strings, plaited into a netting, so close that it resembles a woven fabric, while they are allowed at the upper part to be loose, and parallel to each other. Beginning at the bottom of the apron, we have first a row of jetty black feathers, upon which is a tolerably broad band of bright yellow. The ground-work of the rest of the apron as far as the base strings is made of scarlet feathers, crossed by two narrow yellow bands, and the curious double pattern in the middle is yellow above and blue below. The sides and top are edged by a belt of black monkey fur.

Among the upper edge of the base strings are a number of the elytra or wing cases of the gorgeous Buprestis beetle. They are loosely strung in a row by their bases, and not only look splendid when the light of the sun shines on them, but rattle at every movement, so as to keep time to the steps of the dancers, for whom such ornaments are chiefly made. These wing cases are used also for children's rattles.

LIKE many other warlike savages, the Mundurucus perpetuate the memory of valiant deeds by preserving a trophy of the slain enemy. Indeed, this is the only way in which it is possible to preserve he accounts of their valor, and the Mundurucus follow in this respect the example of the Dyaks, by cutting off and preserving the head of the dead man. When a Mundu-rucu has been fortunate enough to kill an enemy, he cuts off the head with his bamboo knife, removes the brain, soaks the whole head in a bitter vegetable oil, called "andiroba," and dries it over a fire or in the sun. When it is quite dry, he puts false eyes into the empty orbits, combs, parts, and plaits the hair, and decorates it with brilliant feathers, and lastly passes a string through the tongue, by means of which it can be suspended to the beams of the malocca or council-house, where it remains except on festival days. When, however, the chief gives

head arrrys himself in his most magnificent suit of feathers, fetches his prize from the malocca, fixes it upon the point of his spear, and parades himself before his companions

in all the glory of an acknowledged brave. One of these preserved heads is shown on page 203, drawn from a specimen in the possession of A. Franks, Esq., of the British Museum. In order to show the ordinary kind of feather headdress which is worn by the Mundurucús, a portrait of a chief is also given on the same page, so that the contrast between the living and preserved head is well marked.

The value which a Mundurucú attaches to this trophy is simply inestimable. As none except acknowleged warriors are allowed to contend against the enemy, the fact of pos-sessing a head proves that the owner has passed triumplantly through the dreadful ordeal of the gloves. It is very remarkable that we find two totally distinct races of men, the Malay and the Mongol, possessing exactly the same custom, and reckoning the possession of a head as the chief object in life.

It is quite impossible that the Dyak of Borneo and the Mundurucu of Central Southern America could have been geographically connected, and we must infer that the custom took its rise from the love of approbation inherent in human nature, In all countries, whether civilized or not, renown as a warrior is one of the chief objects of ambition. In civilized countries, where a literature exists, this renown is. spread and conserved by means of the pen; but in uncivilized lands, some tangible proof of success in war must be required. In this head the necessary proof is obtained, for its existence shows that the owner has killed some man or other, and the form or absence of the tattoo is a proof that the slain man was an enemy and not a friend.

The successful warriors are so proud of their heads that they will often remove them temporarily from the malocca, and place them on the fence which surrounds their crops, so that the women, who are working in the field, may be cheered by the sight of their relative's trophies. Of late years, either this custom has fallen into abeyance, or the people are unwilling to exhibit their trophies to a white man, for Mr. Bates, who spent so much time with them, never even saw a preserved head, or could hear of one being used.

Like many other natives, the Mundurucus have to pass through a horribly painful ordeal before they can be admitted into the rank of men. There is a strange, weirdlike character about the whole proceeding.

The reader must know that South America possesses a great number of ants, many of which sting most horribly. There is, for example, the muniri ant, a great black inproud owner of the his most magnificent is his prize from the he point of his spear, fore his companions throw the point of his pear, and heads is shown on a specimen in the Esq., of the British show the ordinary saw which is worn by rait of a chief is also, so that the contrast is preserved head is

undurucú attaches to estimable. As none rriors are allowed to my, the fact of poschat the owner has rough the dreadful is very remarkable ly distinct races of Mongol, possessing the the chief object in

that the Dyak of durucu of Central dd have been geoand we must infer rise from the love in human nature, the civilized or not, ne of the chief obcivilized countries, sts, this renown is. means of the pen; some tangible proof e required. In this f is obtained, for its e owner has killed the form or absence that the slain man friend.

rs are so proud of often remove them malocca, and place ch surrounds their it, who are working red by the sight of i. Of late years, llen into abeyance, ng to exhibit their for Mr. Bates, who them, never even could hear of one

as, the Mundurucús
A horribly painful
admitted into the
a strange, weirdrhole proceeding,
hat South America
of ants, many of
ly. There is, for
a great black in-



(1.) GRAN CHACO INDIANS ON THE MOVE. (See page 1213.)



(2.) THE GLOVE DANCE OF THE MUNDURUCUS. (See page 1219.) (1218)

sect, so ous a whose ing the These which On manh to the

friend age hi test. at one flerces tubes has th The dand th Acc

he is t execut

house, spite o agony his fra were d in fro his sor crowd but he gloves est stre This

glove d The gent ra Mr. Ba they di the car engrav called heard look at girl, de of blue their v

display whole not alle tures of and tig but the thing, of They re striking in their

women

monkey

sect, as large as a wasp and with as venomous a sting. Then there is the fire ant, whose bite is just like a redhot needle piercing the flesh, together with many others. These ants are made the instruments by which the courage of the lad is tested.

On the appointed day, the candidate for manhood and the privilege of a warrior, goes to the council-house, accompanied by his friends, who sing and beat drums to encour-age him. The old men then proceed to the test. They take two bamboo tubes, closed at one end and open at the other, and place in each tube or "glove" a number of the flercest ants of the country. Into these tubes the wretched lad thrusts his arms, and has them tied, so that they cannot fall off. The drummers and singers then strike up,

and the candidate joins in the song.

Accompanied by the band and his friends,
he is taken round the village, and made to execute a dance and a song in front of every house, the least symptom of suffering being fatal to his admission among the men. In spite of the agony which he endures - an agony which increases continually as the venom from the stings circulates through his frame - the lad sings and dances as if he were doing so from sheer joy, and so makes the round of the village. At last he comes in front of the chief's tent, where he sings his song for the last time, and is admitted by acclamation to be a man. His friends crowd round to offer their congratulations, but he dashes through them all, tears off the gloves of torture, and plunges into the near-est stream, to cool his throbbing arms. This fearful test of manhood, called "The

glove dance," is represented on page 1218.

The Mundurucus seem to be an intelligent race of savages, as may be seen from Mr. Bates's account of the interest which they displayed in a book of illustrations.

To amuse the Tushaua, I fetched from the canoe the two volumes of Knight's 'Pictorial Museum of Animated Nature.' The engravings quite took his fancy, and he called his wives, of whom, as I afterward heard from Aracu, he had three or four, to look at them: one of them was a handsome girl, decorated with necklace and bracelets of blue beads. In a short time others left their work, and I then had a crowd of women and children around me, who all displayed unusual curiosity for Indians.

"It was no light task to go through the whole of the illustrations, but they would not allow me to miss a page, making me turn back when I tried to skip. The pictures of the elephants, camels, orang-outangs, and tigers seemed most to astonish them, but they were interested in almost everything, down even to the shells and insects. They recognized the portraits of the most in their own country; the jaguar, howling monkey, parrots, trogons, and toucans.

"The elephant was settled to be a large kind of tapir; but they made but few remarks, and those in the Mundurucu language, of which I understood only two or three words. Their way of expressing surprise was a clicking sound made with the teeth, similar to the one we ourselves use, or a subdued exclamation, Hm! Hm!

"Before I finished, from fifty to sixty had assembled; there was no pushing, or rudeness, the grown-up women letting the young girls and children stand before them, and all behaved in the most quiet and orderly man-

ner possible."

LIKE other savage tribes the Mundurucia place great faith in their medicine men, or pajes," as they are termed. These men are supposed to exercise a power over evil spirits, especially those which cause sickness, and which take the visible form of a worm or some such creature.

When a Mundurucú is ill, he sends for the paje, who goes through the gesticula-tions common to all the tribe of medicine men, until he has fixed upon some spot wherein the evil spirit has located itself. He then makes a huge cigar, by wrapping tobacco in folds of tanari, i. c. the inner bark of a tree, which is separated into layers and then beaten out like the bark cloth of Polynesia. Several trees, especially the monkey-root tree (Lecythis ollaria), furnish the tanari, the best being able to furnish a hundred layers from one piece of bark.

The smoke from the cigar is blown for some time upon the seat of the malady, and after a while the paje applies his lips to the spot, and sucks violently, producing out of his mouth the worm which has done the mischief. On one occasion, when a paje had operated on a child for a headache, a white man contrived to get possession of the "worm," which turned out to be nothing but a long white air-root of some plant.

These people have, however, some genuine medicines. In the first place, they know the use of sarsaparilla root, and gather it in large quantities for the market. The root, or rather the rhizome, of a species of Smilax is the well-known sarsaparilla of commerce.

The natives collect it during the rainy season, when the roots can be easily torn out of the wet earth. After washing the roots carefully, the gatherers store them under shelter until they are quite dry, and then make them up into bundles of uniform size, for the convenience of packing. These bundles are rather more than three feet in length, and about five inches in diameter. They are tied up very tightly with the sipo, a kind of creeper, and sold to the traders

Another medicine known to them is the guarana. It is made from the seeds of a climbing plant belonging to the genus Paulstriking birds and mammals which are found linia. The seeds are roasted in their envelopes, and then taken out and pounded between two stones. The powder is mixed

with water so as to form a stiff paste, which | This instrument, however, is very rare, and is moulded into squares and left to dry. cannot easily be procured, the possessor When used, the vegetable brick is scraped into water, about a teaspoonful going to the pint, and the medicine is complete. It has a stimulating effect on the system. Like strong tea, it repels sleep, but is so valuable in the intermittent fever of the country that in the Brazilian settlements it obtains a very

high price.
There is another very remarkable medicine, which, though not used by the pure Munduruca tribe, is in great favor with the Cuparis, a sub-tribe of the same nation. This is a sort of snuff, called parica, which is prepared and used after the following manner. The seeds of a species of ingá (a plant belonging to the Leguminous Order) are dried in the sun, pounded in wooden mortars, and the dust put into bamboo tubes. When the people determine to have a

bout of snuff taking, they assemble together and drink various fermented liquors until they are half intoxicated. They then sepafilled with the paries such having a hollow reed filled with the paries suuff. After dancing about for some time, they blow the snuff into the nostrils of their partners so as to

make it produce its full effect.

The action of the paricá is very singular. Sometimes it is so violent, that the taker drops on the ground as if shot, and lies insensible for some time. On those who are more used to it the effect is different. It causes for a time the highest excitement, driving off the heaviness of intoxication, and imparting a lightness and exhilaration of spirits, causing the taker to dance and sing as if mad, which indeed he is for a time. The effect soon subsides, and the men drink themselves anew into intoxication.

The Muras, a quarrelsome and savage tribe, with whom the Mundurucús are at perpetual feud, are the most confirmed par-ica takers. The Mauhés, a neighboring The Mauhés, a neighboring tribe, use it as a means of repelling ague in the months between the wet and dry seasons, when miasma always abounds.

They keep the powder in the state of dried paste, and when they wish to use it, scrape it into a flat shell, spreading it very carefully with a little brush made from the hair of the great ant-eater. They then produce the snuff-taking apparatus. made of two eagle quills tied side by side for part of their length, and diverging at one end to such a distance from each other that the extremeties will go easily into the possessor's nostrils. The shape of the instrument is very much like that of the letter Y.

Inserting the diverging ends into his nostrils, the Mauhé places the other end on the powder, and draws it through the quills, the end travelling over the shell until every particle of the powder has been taken. cannot easily be procured, the possessor esteeming it to be a most valuable piece of property. It is remarkable that the parica under different names, is used in places

thousand miles apart.

THE cookery of the Mundurucus is very simple. They make cassava bread and tap-ioca, after a fashion which will be presently described, and feed on yams, plantains, and similar vegetables. Animal food is obtained by hunting, and chiefly consists of the mon-keys with which the South American forests abound. When a monkey is to be caten, it is cooked in one of two ways. Should there be time, a large fire is made and allowed to burn nearly down, so that there is little or no smoke. Over the red embers a number of green sticks are laid parallel to each other, just like the bars of a gridiron, and on these bars the monkey is placed just as it is killed, the skin never being removed, and the interior seldom cleaned,

There is even a simpler plan than this, which is employed when the Munduruei has no time to build a large fire. He makes up as large a fire as he can manage, impales the monkey on a stick sharpened at each end, and fixes the stick diagonally in the ground, so that the body of the monkey hangs over the fire, just as a soldier cooks or rather burns his rations by impaling the piece of meat on his ramrod. Very little cooking is required by these people, who are content if the skin is well calcined and the flesh not

quite raw.

The Mundurucu can also procure fruits that are capable of preservation, so that he need be in no fear as to suffering from lack of provisions. The chief fruits are the "nuts" of the Lecythis and the Bertholetia. The fruit of the former tree is popularly known as "monkey-cup," because the hard envelope which encloses the seeds has a movable lid, that falls off when the fruit is ripe, and enables the monkeys to draw the

seeds out of their case.

The fruit of the Bertholetia is familiarly known as the Brazil nut. A number of these nuts are enclosed within a very thick and hard pericarp, which has no lid, though there is a little hole at the top through which the seeds can be seen. When the fruit is ripe, it falls to the ground with such force that if it were to strike a man on the head it would instantly kill him. One of these fruits in my collection measures exactly a foot in circumference, and, though very dry, weighs nine ounces. The reader may imagine the force with which such a fruit would fall from the height of a hundred feet or so.

To guard themselves against accidents, the Mundurucus always wear thick wooden particle of the powder has been taken. Sometimes the snuff taker employs, instead of the quills, the bone of a plover's leg. be struck on the back or the nape of the neck.

IT is which great same than i ral th should founde selves those retain

ners a

want o

tinuall

This due to words tion w some r oursel pen to retaine vears from t have r people To t

guage as we toms : pass n Sir R. ever, is very rare, and cured, the possessor ost valuable piece of kable that the parica, i, is used in places a

Mundurucús is very assava bread and tapich will be presently yams, plantains, and simal food is obtained consists of the monuth American forests nkey is to be eaten, f two ways. Should fire is made and alown, so that there is ver the red embers a s are laid parallel to bars of a gridiron, nonkey is placed just never being removed, cleaned.

pler plan than this, hen the Mundurucu arge fire. He makes can manage, impales harpened at each end, onally in the ground, monkey hangs over dier cooks or rather npaling the piece of Very little cooking is ole, who are content ned and the flesh not

also procure fruits servation, so that he suffering from lack chief fruits are the and the Bertholetia. er tree is popularly p," because the hard les the seeds has a off when the fruit is onkeys to draw the

holetia is familiarly nut. A number of within a very thick h has no lid, though when the fruit is und with such force a man on the head him. One of these measures exactly a and, though very which such a fruit eight of a hundred

against accidents, wear thick wooden the Brazil nuts, and upright, so as not to the nape of the neck.

CHAPTER CXXIX.

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA.

WEAPONS.

CHANGES OF LANGUAGE -- INVERSION OF WORDS AND SENTENCES -- THE TALKING PARROT -- THE FIVE CHIEF TRIBES OF GUIANA -- PECULIABITY OF CLIMATE, AND CONSEQUENT EFFECT ON VEGETABLE AND ANIMAL LIFE - THE HAMMOCK OF GUIANA - THE WEAPONS PECULIAR TO THE COUNTRY-THE TWO KINDS OF BLOW GUN - THE ZARABATANA, AND MODE OF CONSTRUCTION - WEIGHT OF THE WEAPON - THE PUCUNA -- ITS DOUBLE TUBE -- THE OURAR AND SAMOURAH -- THE KURU-MANNI WAX -- THE INGENIOUS FORE AND BACK SIGHTS -- THE BLOW GUN ARROWS -- THEIR CON-STRUCTION - MODE OF SHARPENING - THE PIRAL FISH - INGENIOUS MODE OF PACKING THE ARROWS -- MODE OF PROPELLING THE ARROWS -- THE WINGED ARROW -- THE QUIVER AND COT-TON BASKET.

which inhabit the neighborhood of the great Amazon River are members of the same family, differing more in language than in appearance or habits. It is natural that families when they become large should separate themselves, and so become founders of fresh tribes, which spread themselves over the country, settling down in those spots which suit them best. They retain the general character of their manners and customs, but, owing to the total want of a literature, their language is con-

thin ally changing.

This alteration in their language is also due to the native fondness for inverting words and sentences during their conversation with each other, a custom which bears some resemblance to that of punning among ourselves. When these inverted words happen to please the people's fancy, they are retained in the language, so that in a few years after a family has separated itself from the parent tribe the two dialects will have receded so far from each other that the people can hardly understand each other.

To the philologist this fluctuation of language would be exceedingly interesting, but, as we are concerned with manners and cuspass northward and eastward to Guiana.
Sir R. Schomburgk mentions a fact which is ingenious tribe. They excel in the manu-

It is evident that the innumerable tribes | a singular corroboration of the rapidity with which language changes among these tribes. There was a parrot living in 1800, which spoke well, but many of whose words could not be understood, because it spoke the language of the Atures, a tribe which had passed entirely out of recollection after it had been mastered by the warlike Caribs.

This comparatively small country is especially interesting to ethnologists, in consequence of the perfect manner in which the natives have guarded their individuality. Evidently sprung from one source, they have settled down in different districts and, though alike in color and general conformation, are as widely different in lan-guage, and often in manners, as if they be-

guage, and often in manners, as if they belonged to separate quarters of the world.

Five principal nations inhabit Guiana, and are subdivided into a vast number of small tribes. These are the Macoushies, the Arawaks, the Acawaios, the Caribs, and the Waraus. The two first of these will be taken as representative of the will be taken as representatives of the tribes in Guiana, though the others will be mentioned in cases where they present any marks of difference.

Taking broadly the chief points of distinction between these tribes, we may simply

facture of the terrible wourali poison, which they exchange for canoes and other necessaries from other tribes. They also make the best blow guns. Their huts are closed, and conical like sugar loaves. Their number is somewhere about three thousand.

The Arawaks are rather taller than the Macoushies, being, on an average, five feet six inches in height. Their faces are marked with the tattoo, and, as they are much brought into contact with white men, they approach civilization nearer than do the

other tribes.

The Accawaios and Caribs wear no clothing except on occasions of ceremony. The former are distinguished by a wooden ornament in the cartilage of the nose, and the latter by wearing ornaments in the under lip, and by a lump of annatto fastened to the hair of the forehead. The Waraus are darker than the others, and are acknowledged to be the best canoe makers in Guiana. Some of their vessels will carry ninety or a hundred men, and they sell these canoes to the Macoushies for the excellent wourali poison for which that tribe is celebrated.

Owing to the peculiarities of the climate. all these tribes have many customs in com-mon. The climate is a very remarkable one, being exceedingly hot and exceedingly The heat is owing to the geographical position of Guiana, which is close to the equator, and the wet is due to the trade winds and the configuration of the country. Blowing across the Atlantic they absorb a vast quantity of moisture from the ocean, and discharge the greater portion of it before they can reach any distance inland, the moisture being condensed by the secondary mountain chains, which are from five to seven thousand feet in height.

In consequence of this perpetual heat acting on perpetual moisture, vegetation flourishes with a luxuriousness scarcely to be seen in any other part of the world; and so completely is the ground covered with tree and bush, that many trees are unable to find a habitation upon the ground, and are forced to live upon each other. Thus, upon a lofty mora tree a fig tree will grow, and upon the fig an enormous creeper will fasten itself, its long shoots dangling loosely from the enormous height at which they grow, or drooping in graceful and flower-clad festoons from one tree to another. Such a forest as this is often ankle-deep in water for miles together, and the vegetation is so thick that the only way of passing through the tangled mass of vegetation is to cut a path with the axe. And even then, after a week or two has elapsed, the path will have vanished, so rapid is the growth of vegetable life.

It follows from this description that the animals which inhabit Guiana must be chiefly of two kinds, those which inhabit the mon is the mode in which they destroy the

Accordingly, we find that the country is tenanted by a great variety of the monkey tribe, that the arboreal puma and jaguar take the place of the terrestrial lion and tiger, and that the aquatic capybara and tapir flourish where beasts of equal size would perish if they had to live on the land. Birds of the most lovely plumage abound in Guiana, which is also a very paradise of insects.

It is evident that any human beings that live in such a country as this must have many characteristics in common. They need no clothes, no houses, and the woods supply them with food without the trouble of cultivation, so that their chief incentives to labor are taken away. Consequently, they may be called an idle people, though the in-dolence is rather apparent than real. They will work as long as there is a necessity for it; but, as a man can support existence without doing a real day's work in his life, it is evident that the necessity for work does not

One habit which they have in common is that of sleeping in the hammock. This article is made by the natives from various vegetable fibres, and is woven in different ways, according to the character of the tribe which makes it. Some of these are made simply by laying a number of strings parallel to each other, and knotting others across at right angles; but the best have no knots at all, the strings interlacing with each other diagonally, so as to yield in every direction to the body of the occupier. When a native has made a particularly fine specimen, he adorns it with feathers, and other brilliantly colored objects.

These hammocks are of various sizes, some being small and used for children, and others large enough to contain an entire family. The specimen in my collection will hold two Guianan natives, but not two Englishmen. It is rather more than sixteen feet in length,

and six feet in width.

The hammock is exactly adapted to the wants of the native. It is so light that he can roll it up and tie it round his body, so as to carry it on a journey; so slight in texture as to keep him cool when lying in it; and so yielding in its structure that the bare cords do not hurt his naked skin. On a journey he always carries his hammock with him. and if he wants to rest, he does not sit down, but slings the hammock between two trees and lies in it. Several purposes are fulfilled by this arrangement. In the first place, the ground is usually wet, so that the man is kept dry in the hammock; in the next place, he is safe from the snakes and other unpleasant reptiles that swarm in the forests; and lastly, he would always rather lie down than sit.

Another point which they have in comtrees and those which live in the water. animals on which they live. The reader will

remembe so great. was wou so, or a b be lost in covery. successfu of destro stantaneo ble wours causing in the blood. poison wi present it the missilwhether 1 breath, ar

propelled instrumen In princip of Borneo, mode of co best specir perior to tl Of this s varieties, i 1225th page mens in m arabatana. ery large Guiana, wh nd improve It is made neach of w that whe ach other ierced with se nothing nimals by v he labor of very gremoothed, th nd bound k To the lov ened a larg pening like as to col alsion of the imposed of ixed with a veral trees, apon, whic rabatana is tonly a str steady. Ti hich is sever ounds twelve A far supe

indled, is n

rts of Guian be being th

shown on th

that the country is ariety of the monkey eal puma and jaguar terrestrial lion and aquatic capybara and beasts of equal size ad to live on the land, ly plumage abound in a very paradise of in-

ly human beings that y as this must have in common. They ouses, and the woods l without the trouble their chief incentives y. Consequently, they people, though the in-rent than real. They ere is a necessity for apport existence withwork in his life, it is sity for work does not

ey have in common is hammock. This artinatives from various is woven in different character of the tribe e of these are made ber of strings parallel tting others across at est have no knots at eing with each other ld in every direction pier. When a native ly fine specimen, he , and other brilliantly

of various sizes, some r children, and others in an entire family. llection will hold two not two Englishmen. ixteen feet in length,

actly adapted to the It is so light that he round his body, so as ; so slight in texture en lying in it; and so e that the bare cords skin. On a journey hammock with him, he does not sit down, ck between two trees purposes are fulfilled In the first place, the , so that the man is ck; in the next place, akes and other unwarm in the forests; vays rather lie down

h they have in comich they destroy the live. The reader will

remember that the density of the jungle is so great, that if an animal were able, after it was wounded, to run for a hundred yards or so, or a bird to fly the same distance, it would be lost in the bush without the chance of recovery. It is evident, therefore, that the successful hunter must possess some means of destroying motion, if not life, almost in-stantaneously, and this he finds in the terrible wourali poison, which has the effect of causing instant stupor when it mixes with the blood. The mode of manufacturing this poison will presently be described, and at present it is sufficient to say that nearly all the missiles used by the Guianan aborigines, whether propelled by the bow or by the breath, are armed with this poison.

WE will first take those missiles which are propelled by the breath, and examine the instrument through which they are sent. In principle this is exactly like the sumpitan of Borneo, described on page 1119, but the mode of construction is different, and in the best specimens the Guianan work is far suerior to that of Borneo.

Of this singular weapon there are several variefies, the two principal of which are shown over the title "Blow guns" on the 1225th page, both being taken from spec-mens in my possession. On the right is the anabatona. This is found throughout a rery large tract of country southward of fuiana, when it takes a somewhat modified

nd improved form. It is made of two separate pieces of wood, each of which is cut a semicircular groove, othat when they are placed in contact with ach other they form a long wooden rod, lerced with a circular bore. As the natives se nothing but the incisor teeth of rodent nimals by way of tools, it may be seen that le labor of making one of these instruments very great. The bore being carefully moothed, the two halves are laid together, nd bound by means of long, flat strips of citara wood wound spirally round them. To the lower end of the weapon is fas-ned a large mouthpiece, with a conical

pening like the mouthpiece of a trumpet, as to collect the breath for the pro-ulsion of the arrow. A quantity of cement, mposed of a black wax made by a wild bee ixed with a pitchy substance obtained from weral trees, is then rubbed over the whole capon, which is considered complete. The mbatana is exceedingly heavy, and requires tonly a strong but a practised arm to hold steady. The specimen in my collection, hich is several feet in length, weighs three ands twelve ounces.

A far superior weapon, called the "puna," larger, lighter, and more easily milled, is made by the natives of many rts of Guiana, that used by the Macoushie brought from Guiana by the late Mr. Waterton, who presented it to me shortly before the accident which caused his death,

The weapon in question (called pucuna) is double, being made of two portions, called ourah and samourah. The essential portion of the blow gun is the ourah. This is a singular reed (Arundinaria Schomburgkii), which, as far as is known only grows on the sandstone ridge of the Upper Orinoco between the rivers Ventuari, Paramu, and Mavaca. Like the bamboo. grows in clusters, and, though not exceeding half an inch in diameter, the first fourteen or sixteen feet are without a knot. From this point spread the long, slender branches, measuring from thirty to forty feet in length, and waving in graceful curves when moved by the wind

The portion used for the blowpipe is the first joint, which is uniform in diameter throughout, and is naturally polished within, But it is so thin, the walls being not twice the thickness of a playing card, that it would be too fragile to be used without some protection. Accordingly, the native has recourse to a sort of palm, called by him samourah, its

scientific title being Ireartia setigera.

This is chosen of a proper size, cut down, and steeped in water, for the purpose of extracting the pulp which fills the interior. When it is quite dry, the reed is inserted into this tube, the native gunmaker having a wonderful talent in getting the slender reed exactly in the centre of the palm-stem, and fixing it in its place with the black wax already mentioned. This wax is called kurumanni by the Macoushies, and is used by them as freely as is the "black-boy" wax by the Australian aborigines. The samourah is then scraped down to the proper thickness, well polished, and the weapon is ready for the accessories which complete it.

One end is chosen to serve as a mouthpiece, and is bound with a string made of silk-grass and the other is tipped with the half of the acuero nut, which is very hard and prevents the end of the weapon from being injured by accidental blows against a tree or the ground. This acuero seed acts as a fore-sight, by which the native hunter can direct his weapon; but, in order to secure a more certain aim, he adds a singularly in-genious back-sight. Taking a lump of kurumanni wax, he presses it on the blowpipe about eighteen inches from the mouthpiece, and by means of the wax fixes upon the tube the two lower incisor teeth of the acouchi, one of the cavies.

Figure 1 shows the weapon itself, and fig. 2 the front view of the tip, guarded with its ring of acuero seed, which forms the foresight. Fig. 3 gives an enlarged representa-tion of the back-sight, made of the teeth of be being the best. The specimen which be being the best. The specimen which be been to fit their place by the black kurumanni wax. Fig. 4 is a section taken through the middle of which the teeth project from the shaft. Fig. 5 is a front view of the butt, showing the way in which the ourah reed is enclosed

within the samourah palm.

Such a weapon as this is exceedingly light and easy to handle, presenting a strong contrast to the heavy and cumbrous zarabatana. The weight of the one in my collection barely exceeds a pound and a half, although it is exceeds a pound and a half, attrough it is eleven feet in length. It is held in rather a curious manner. The left hand is turned with the palm upward, and the elbow against the hip. The hand then grasps the blow gun within a hands-breadth of the mouthpiece, and the right hand seizes it, palm downward, in the space left by the other hand. In fact, this mode of holding the weapon is exactly similar in principle to that which is employed by riflemen. The blowpipe is then raised, not by the arms, but by bending back the body; and it is astonishing to see how steady it can be held for a lengthened time steadiness which can never be gained if it be held by stretching out the right arm and grasping it at some distance from the mouth.

The natives are most careful respecting the straightness of their blow guns, and never allow them to lean against anything lest they should be warped. When they go hunting, they carry the blow gun upright, like a soldier, "shouldering arms," and when they return to their huts, they suspend the weapon by a loop to the top of the house. Mr. Waterton repeatedly draws attention to this point in his "Wanderings," and when he presented me with the pucuna which he brought from Guiana, the gift was accompanied by a condition that it should never be allowed to lean against a wall, but should be either laid on the ground or sus-

pended by its loop.

WE now come to the arrows which are propelled through the pucuna. They very much resemble in shape and size those which are employed by the Dyaks, but, instead of being made to fit the bore of the pucuna by a piece of pith or soft wood at the butt, a small quantity of wild cotton, taken from the Bombax ceiba, is wound upon it, and fastened with a fibre of silk grass. Cultivated cotton is too heavy to serve the purpose, and nothing answers so well as the yellow, stout-fibred cotton of the Bombax. Very great art is required in put-ting on the cotton properly. It must exactly fit the bore, be perfectly regular, so as not to disturb the accuracy of the flight, and must taper gradually in front, so as to offer the least possible resistance to the air. See illustration No. 1, on the next page.

The shaft of the arrow is made of the leaf ribs of the concourite palm, a species of areca. It is about ten inches in length, no areca. It is about ten inches in length, no spokes of the wheel, and take them out with thicker than a crow quill, and at one end is out having to untie the bundle. See illustrought to a point as about as constitution of the spokes of the wheel, and take them out with the brought to a point as about as one end is brought to a point as sharp as a needle by tration No. 6.

the back-sight, so as to show the way in which the teeth project from the shaft. Fig. fish (Serrasalmus piraya). The teeth of this 5 is a front view of the butt, showing the fish are flat, pointed, and double-edged, much like those of the shark - and, indeed, the pirai is a veritable fresh-water shark, biting whole mouthfuls from the bodies of animals that enter the water, and even attacking the alligator itself-and when the arrow is drawn between them, delicate shavings are taken off, just as is the case with the double knife-sharpeners of the present day, One half of a piral jaw is always suspended to the quiver of a Macoushie.

Of the poison with which the arrow is armed we will presently treat: we are now only concerned with the manufacture of the weapon. In order to save space, the cotton is not put upon the arrows until just before they are wanted, six or seven finished arrows being left in the quiver for immediate use, and the rest tied in a bundle until needed. The formation of this bundle is singularly ingenious, the native being able to remove any of the arrows without untying it, and to add as many as he likes without disturbing those which already are tied

together.

The native takes a rod of hard wood, a little longer than the arrows, and at one end he fixes a little wheel, rather more than two inches in diameter. At two inches from the wheel, and the same distance from the end of the rod, two holes are bored, through each of which are passed two strings made of cotton. When the man wishes to tie up a number of arrows, he lays them successively between the strings, which he twists between each arrow. When the last arrow is laid in its place, the whole are kept firm by a couple of sliding knots, which can be slipped along the strings.

Illustration No. 7 on the following page, will explain the method of stringing the arrows better than can be done by words alone. Two of the arrows are shown as prepared for use, the cotton being on their butts and the poison on their tips. A number more are shown as they appear on the double strings, poisoned, but without the cotton. A hunter will sometimes have as many as five hundred arrows at once upon a

string.

In order to keep the weapons compact, so that they can be easily slipped into the quiver, they are rolled round the little rod, and bound firmly together in a cylindrical form, the poisoned points being directed to the wheel, of which the reader will now see the use. It serves as a sort of shield to the hand, so that when the hunter wishes to take the arrows out of the quiver, he can do so without the least danger; and when he desires to remove some arrows to be mounted with cotton, he can push them through the

the teeth of the piral tya). The teeth of this nd double-edged, much ark — and, indeed, the sh-water shark, biting the bodies of animals and even attacking the when the arrow is m, delicate shavings is the case with the ers of the present day, we is always suspended

coushie. h which the arrow is thy treat: we are now the manufacture of the save space, the cotton rrows until just before or seven finished arquiver for immediate ed in a bundle until tion of this bundle is the native being able arrows without untymany as he likes with-

which already are tied

red of hard wood, a litrrows, and at one end
, rather more than twe
At two inches from the
distance from the end
es are bored, through
assed two strings made
e man wishes to tie up
, the lays them succestrings, which he twists
When the last arrow
e whole are kept firm
g knots, which can be

on the following page, and of stringing the arm be done by words arrows are shown as a cotton being on their tips. A numas they appear on the oned, but without the rill sometimes have as a arrows at once upon a

ngs.

ne weapons compact, so casily slipped into the dround the little red gether in a cylindrical pints being directed to the reader will now see as sort of shield to the le hunter wishes to take e quiver, he can do so majer; and when he dearrows to be mounted push them through the hund take them out withthe bundle. See illustration of the second reader.



height is strike, the But the

When arrows force. force. them to not bein by colle-hold, an object w The force cheeks h an arrov the tube produced small bo little tim when fit cotton th Such invaluab devoted. exclusive keys, bot Now, as mous hei a hundr branch, i yond the so thick t one or tw

than a g the effect There pucuna p port of th within sou cally nois the birds, twenty or alarming t ularly use The feather the manufa and are m toucan has boughs of for the des tive could a Just befo

Just before gun, the hu piral-teeth round between through just to leave the head to monkey, on the arrow head snaps. In some genious for genious for the head to monkey, on the arrow head snaps.

When properly made and mounted, these being made to fit the bore by means of cot-rows can be propelled with wonderful ton tied on the butt, a flat piece of bark is arrows can be propelled with wonderful force. I have sent one for a distance of a hundred yards, and the natives can propel them to a still greater distance. There is a certain art in using the pucuna, the arrow not being urged by a lengthened breath, but by collecting all the air that the lungs will hold, and giving a short expiration, as if the object were to empty the lungs at one puff. The force comes entirely from the lungs, the cheeks having nothing to do with it. When an arrow is rightly propelled, it flies from the tube with a slight pop, like that which is produced by quickly drawing the cork of a small bottle. It is quite invisible for some little time, so rapid is the motion; and even when fitted with white instead of yellow cotton the eye can scarcely follow its course.

Such an instrument as this is simply invaluable for the purposes to which it is devoted. It is intended to be used almost exclusively for killing birds and small monkeys, both of which creatures live on trees. Now, as the trees of Guiana run to an enormous height, some of them attaining at least a hundred feet before they throw out a branch, it will be seen that the birds are beyond the reach of shot-guns. The foliage is one or two shots to reach the bird, and the height is so great that, even if they did strike, they would produce but little effect, But the pucuna can throw an arrow higher than a gun can propel a shot, and if the needle-like point enters any part of the bird the effect is fatal.

There is another advantage which the pucuna possesses over fire-arms. The report of the gun frightens away every bird within sound, whereas the pucuna is practi-cally noiscless. The slight "pop" with which the arrow is expelled does not alarm the birds, and an expert hunter can kill twenty or thirty birds from one tree without alarming the others. The pucuna is particularly useful in the chase of the toucan. The feathers of this bird are much used in the manufacture of the beautiful gala dresses which the natives wear on grand occasions, and are much prized by them. Now, the toucan has a way of sitting on the topmost boughs of the tallest trees, and were it not for the deadly arrow of his pucuna, the native could seldom obtain a specimen.

Just before the arrow is put into the blowgun, the hunter places it between two of the pirai-teeth already mentioned, and turns it round between his fingers. He thus cuts it through just above the poisoned portion, so as to leave a mere thread of wood attaching the head to the shaft. If, therefore, the bird or monkey, on feeling the smart, should seize the arrow and with raw it, the poisoned head snaps off and is left in the wound.

twisted round the arrow so as to cause it to terminate in a hollow cone. A larger piece of the same material is fixed along the shaft of the arrow, and slightly twisted so as to cause it to revolve when projected through the air. The arrow is tipped with a slight iron blade, instead of being merely sharpened wood. (See illustration No. 2.) This form of hollow base is admirably adapted for its purpose, and has been copied by Messrs. Lang, the well-known gunmakers of Cockspur Street, in their blow gun darts for kill-ing small birds and animals without noise.

Next comes the quiver in which the arrows are kept. This is shown in illustration No. 4, on page 1225. The framework of the quiver is made of the ittiritti-reed, and the bottom is closed by a circular plate of wood. In order to keep the poisoned arrows from the damp, which would effectually spoil them, the whole of the quiver is covered with a thick coat of kurumanni wax, which is pressed firmly into the interstices of the wicker-work, and into the junction between the bottom and the sides of the quiver.

Lest the rough basketwork should injure the delicate arrows, the quiver is lined with beautifully made mat-work, of much finer material, and quite smooth to the hand. The cover is made of a piece of skin, sometimes of the tapir, but mostly of the peccary. While fresh and wet it is moulded over a wooden block of the proper size, just as hatters mould their felt into its form. The hairy side is kept inward, and when it is pressed on the top of the quiver, and twisted with a turn of the hand, it holds itself firmly in its place. When the cover is on the quiver, no water can enter, and even if the hunter were to drop it into the river, the arrows would be preserved quite dry in their floating receptacle.

Before the kurumanni wax which covers the quiver is quite dry, a flat plaited belt made of silk grass is secured to it by means of a long string, which encircles the quiver several times. In this cincture is also secured by strings a coil of silk grass, from, which can be drawn the fibres by which the cotton is attached to the arrow, together with the half jaw-bone of the pirai, with which the arrows are sharpened. In my specimen this jaw-bone is two inches in length.

The last article which completes the equipment of the bird hunter is the basket of wild cotton. This, as may be seen from illustration No. 3, has a narrow neck, and bulg-ing body; so that the cotton does not fall out of the basket, though carried with the opening downward. The quantity which it will hold is astonishing. From one of them Mr. Waterton took handful after handful until a large heap was on the table, just as In some parts of the country a very in- a conjuror takes vast quantities genious form of arrow is used. Instead of out of an apparently empty hat. a conjuror takes vast quantities of feathers

CHAPTER CXXX.

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA - Continued.

WEAPONS - Concluded.

EFFECT OF THE WOURALI-DEATH OF THE AI - THE LARGER ARROWS - TUFTED ARROWS - A SINGU-LAR QUIVER - ARRANGEMENT OF THE MOVABLE HEAD - QUIVER FOR THE HEADS - FATE OF THE WOUNDED INDIAN - HOW THE ARROWS ARE FEATHERED - THE NATIVE BOW - TURTLE AR-ROWS - MANUFACTURE OF THE WOURALI - THE QUAKE AND ITS USES - THE WOURALI VINE, AND OTHER VEGETABLE CONSTITUENTS - THE HYARRI POISON, AND ITS USES - ANTS AND SNAKE FANGS - BOILING THE WOURALI - EFFECTS OF THE PROCESS ON THE MAKER - SELF-POISONED ARROWS - VARIOUS ARROW HEADS OF GUIANA - THE WHISTLING ARROW.

THE effect of the poison is instantaneous, provided that it be of good quality and kept dry. There are many varieties of the wourali, but the best, which is made by the Macoushies, is so powerful that one of the tiny arrows brought by Mr. Waterton from Guiana killed a hedgehog at once, though fifty years had elapsed since the poison was made. Death was not instantaneous, for the animal, which was very slightly wounded in the hind leg, breathed for some seconds; but the hedgehog was quite insensible, and, as soon as it had been pricked by the dart, it allowed me to lay it on its back, and place my finger on the ball of its eye, without shrinking.

Many experiments have been made in England with the wourali poison, most of which have tended to prove that its power has been exaggerated, and that a man could not be killed by the small quantity that could be conveyed into a wound on the point of an arrow. I feel certain, however, that in such cases either the poison has not been of good quality, or that it has been carelessly kept, and allowed to become damp, in which case it loses the greater part of its strength. It is very difficult to procure the strongest wourall poison from the natives, who are very unwilling to part with it, and will always try to substitute an with it, and will always try to substitute an inferior kind. The only mode of procuring the best wourali is to do as Mr. Waterton did, t. a. live among them, and induce them to part with the little wourali-pots from other gradually did the same. The fore-

which they have poisoned their own arrows. Moreover, he must imitate their example in keeping the poison in a perfectly dry place. The natives are so careful on this point that they frequently remove the covers of their poison pots and put them near the fire.

There is no mistake about the potency of such poison as this. Its effect upon a hedgehog has already been mentioned, but Mr. Waterton tried it on several animals. For example, he had an Ai sloth that he wanted to kill painlessly, and without damaging the skin. How he did it is best told in his own words:

"Of all animals, not even the toad and the tortoise excepted, this poor animal is the most tenacious of life. It exists long after it has received wounds which would have destroyed any other animal, and it may be said, on seeing a mortally wounded sloth, that life disputes with death every

inch of flesh in its body. "The Ai was wounded in the leg, and put down upon the floor, almost two feet from the table. It contrived to reach the leg of the table, and fastened itself upon it as if wishful to ascend. But this was its last advancing step; life was ebbing fast, though imperceptibly; nor could this singular production of nature, which has been formed

legs ha sloth s its hear adhered had affe but san tinguish motion; was wo would n ing. I froth or " The

any visi ing the wounde the min From th you wou overnow claimed

Dulcis et

The r agrees e In neith but in bo seemed animal, t in a mor Of cou

proportio tales tha ducing d It has be very larg the jagua going to stroyed, weapon, peculiar d They a being six

made of

strong re

runs to se In one er hard and because like rude like the s mer's egg ting, the some inch moner ki with this thread is as those e ers. Whe peculiarly in a most which wra tity of br those of t plentiful i

legs having now lost their strength, the smallest and softest feathers are used, and sich slowly doubled its body, and placed its head betwixt its hind-legs, which still adhered to the table; but when the poison had affected these also, it sank to the ground, but sank so gently that you could not dis-tinguish the movement from an ordinary motion; and had you been ignorant that it was wounded with a poisoned arrow, you would never have suspected that it was dying. Its mouth was shut, nor had any froth or saliva collected there.

"There was no subsultus tendinum, nor any visible alteration in its breathing. During the tenth minute from the time it was wounded it stirred, and that was all; and the minute after life's last spark went out. From the time the poison began to operate, you would have conjectured that sleep was overpowering it, and you would have ex-

claimed -

'Pressitque jacentem Dulcis et alta quies, placidæque simillima morti.'''

The reader will see that this account agrees exactly with my own experiment. In neither case was death instantaneous, but in both cases the power or wish to move seemed to be immediately taken from the animal, though wounded in a limb and not in a mortal spot.

Of course the quantity of poison must be proportioned to the size of the animal. The tales that are told of a mere scratch producing death are manifest exaggerations. It has been mentioned that in Guiana no very large animals are found, the tapir and the jaguar being the largest of the mammalia. For the purpose of killing these, or going to battle where man is to be destroyed, the natives employ a very different weapon, and use a bow and arrow of rather

peculiar construction.

They are extremely long, some of them being six feet in total length. The shaft is made of a cylindrical, hollow, and very strong reed (Gynecium saccharinum) which runs to some length without a knot or joint. In one end is fixed a long spike of a very hard and heavy wood, called letter wood, because it is covered with red marks like rude attempts at writing, very much like the scribbled marks on a yellow-ham-mer's egg. In order to guard it from splitting, the shaft of the arrow is bound for some inches with cotton thread. The comers. When the native wants to make a peculiarly beautiful arrow, he ornaments it in a most singular manner. Into the thread which wraps the shaft are inserted a quanthey are worked into the wrapping in a manner which produces the most artistic combinations of color.

The natives have a marvellous eye for color, most likely from having continually before their eyes the gorgeous insects and birds of their luxuriant country, and it is wonderful to see the boldness with which they achieve harmony from a number of hues that scarcely any one would dare to place in opposition with each other. Scarlet, yellow, pink, blue, green, and snowy white are all used in these arrows, and are arranged in a way that would do honor to the best European artist.

Sometimes a cap is made for the arrows, and decorated with feathers in the same brilliant style. Such arrows as these require much care on the part of the owner, who is not content with an ordinary quiver, wherein they might be jolted about and their lovely feathers spoiled, but constructs a special and peculiar quiver for their reception. takes a number of bamboos, about the thickness of a man's finger, and cuts them into pieces some eighteen inches in length. These he lashes firmly together, and then ties over them a bark cover, neatly wrapped

with cotton string.

Each of these tubes contains one arrow, which fits with moderate tightness, the downy feathers keeping it in its place. They are fixed so perfectly, that when the arrow is pushed into its tube the feathers are pressed tightly against the shaft, and when it is withdrawn, they spring out by their own elasticity, and form an elegant colored tuft. As the long arrow shafts are apt to vibrate by their own weight, and might damage the feather tufts in the tubes, a cap is usually slipped over them — in some cases plain, like the covering of the quiver, but in others gorgeously made of feathers These arrows are tipped with the barbed tail-bone of the sting-ray or are pointed with iron, and not with bone. These arrrows and one of the tubes are illustrated on p. 1214.

The heads of the arrows are made in various ways. Sometimes they are simply covered with a series of rather blunt barbs, but the generality of them are constructed after

a very elaborate fashion.

The barb of one kind of arrow reminds the observer of the weapon of the Bosjes-man, though the arrow is almost a spear in with this thread, but in the better sorts the thread is woven in patterns almost as neat as those employed by the Polynesian islanders. When the native wants the same as those employed by the Polynesian islanders. from it and pointing in the opposite direc-tion a curved iron spike is slightly lashed to the shaft with cotton.

A thick layer of wourali poison is laid on which wraps the shaft are inserted a quantity of brilliantly colored feathers, mostly those of the various parrots which are so plentiful in Southern America. Only the

FTED ARROWS - A SINGU-HE HEADS - FATE OF THE TIVE BOW - TURTLE AR-THE WOURALI VINE, AND USES - ANTS AND SNAKE MAKER -- SELF-POISONED

ned their own arrows. itate their example in a perfectly dry place. eful on this point that ve the covers of their em near the fire. about the potency of

ts effect upon a hedgementioned, but Mr. several animals. For i sloth that he wanted without damaging the s best told in his own

ot even the toad and , this poor animal is wounds which would other animal, and it g a mortally wounded es with death every

led in the leg, and put almost two feet from ed to reach the leg of d itself upon it as if it this was its last ads ebbing fast, though uld this singular proich has been formed death in a thousand d against the wourali. let go its hold, and alless by its side; the the same. The fore-

an animal, the poison dissolves, and allows the spike to escape into the wound, carrying with it a sufficient amount of the poison to cause death, even if in its struggles the animal should succeed in shaking out the arrow itself. If the reader will refer to illustration No. 4, on page 247, he will see in the illustration (fig. 4) the Bosjesman arrow, which is made on the same principle.

Some of these arrows appear to have been much prized by the owners who have covered them with an elaborate ornamentation of cotton thread for a considerable portion of their length — an example of which, drawn from one of my own specimens, may be seen in the illustration. Some of the arrows have long ends of cotton strings hanging from them in lieu of the feather tufts. These dangling cords are often used as ornaments by the natives, who decorate with them their clubs in such a manner that two or three blows must destroy the whole of the work. We shall presently see examples of

these clubs.

The arrow head which is most in vogue among the Macoushies, whom we take as the typical tribe of this part of the world, is made in a different fashion. A square groove, about an inch in depth, is cut in the extremity of the letter wood spike which terminates the arrow, and a slight sliver of bamboo is lashed so as to press against the opening along the side. A barbed spike of coucourite wood is then cut. It is about three inches in length, flat toward the point, and squared at the base, so as to slip easily into the groove at the head of the arrow, where it is slightly held by means of the little bamboo spring. This spring enables the head to remain in its place while the archer is fitting the arrow to his bow and taking aim; but as soon as the missile has struck its object, and the animal bounds forward, the poisoned head remains in the wound, and the shaft falls on the ground.

There is considerable art in putting the wourali on this kind of arrow head. It is done in several layers, one being allowed to dry before the other is applied, and being managed so as to cause an edge of the pitch-like wourali to run along each side of the head. In consequence of the movability of the head the native archer does not trouble himself to carry more than one or two shafts, though he has by him a store of ready-poisoned heads. These are kept in a little quiver made of a joint of bamboo fitted with a cover, in order to keep the poison from moisture, and with a cotton belt by which it can be slung over the shoulders.

One of these quivers in my collection, (see illustration No. 6, page 1231,) brought from Guiana by Sir. R. Schomburgk, is only seven inches long by an inch and a half wide, and is capable of containing twelve to fourteen poisoned heads. The native hunter

he rarely shoots without hitting, and when he has struck one animal large enough to require this kind of arrow, he seldom wants more than one specimen. In the course of this account of the Guiana natives the reader will notice the many trouble saving expedients employed by them.

Owing to the generous nature of the country, which supplies food without requiring labor, and the warm, moist character of the climate, the natives are very apathetic, and have the strongest objection to carrying one ounce more weight, or doing one stroke more work, than is absolutely needful. So, instead of carrying a large bundle of arrows, the hunter has one, or at the most two arrows and a quantity of small poisoned heads, the whole equipment being so light that a child just able to walk could carry the bow, arrows, and quiver without being much inconvenienced.

Knowing the power of this poison, the natives are exceedingly cautious in handling it, and never carry the arrow with its head bare. They always slip over the head a small tube of bamboo, just large enough to be held in its place by the cotton wrapping that passes round the junction of the head and the shaft. This is never removed except when the arrow is to be used, and it is scarcely possible to frighten a native more than by taking off the guard of an arrow and holding the point to him. It is of this kind of arrow that the following story is told in Mr. Waterton's "Wanderings."
"One day.... an Arawak Indian told an

affecting story of what happened to a comrade of his. He was present at his death. As it did not interest the Indian in any point to tell a falsehood, it is very probable that his account was a true one. If so, it appears that there is no certain antidote, or at least an antidote that could be resorted to in a case of urgent need; for the Indian gave up all thoughts of life as soon as he was wounded.

"The Arawak Indian said it was but four years ago that he and his companion were ranging in the forest in quest of game. His companion took a poisoned arrow, and sent it at a red monkey in a tree above him. It was nearly a perpendicular shot. The arrow missed the monkey, and in the descent struck him in the arm, a little above the elbow. He was convinced it was all over with him. 'I shall never,' said he to his companion, in a faltering voice, bend this bow again.' And having said that, he took off his little bamboo poison box which hung across his shoulder, and putting it, together with his bow and arrows, on the ground, he laid himself down close by them, bade his companion farewell, and never spoke more.'

Mr. Waterton then proceeds to mention the different antidotes, in none of which does he place the least reliance, and in another does not require more than this number, as place remarks that if the natives knew of

> (4.) AF From Chi

ut hitting, and when mal large enough to cow, he seldom wants en. In the course of Guiana natives the many trouble saving y them.

is nature of the counindicate the county of the county apathetic, and ction to carrying one oing one stroke more also bundle of arrows, the most two arrows, poisoned heads, the so light that a child a carry the bow, art being much incon-

of this poison, the cautious in handling arrow with its head a power the head a just large enough to the cotton wrapping unction of the head ever removed except be used, and it is hern a native more tard of an arrow and at it is of this kind wing story is told in erings."

rawak Indian told an ppened to a comrade at his death. As it lian in any point to y probable that his e. If so, it appears antidote, or at least be resorted to in a the Indian gave up as he was wounded. said it was but four is companion were quest of game. His ied arrow, and sent ree above him. It ar shot. The arrow and in the descent , a little above the ed it was all over er,' said he to his g voice, 'bend this g said that, he took on box which hung putting it, together s, on the ground, ose by them, bade and never spoke

oceeds to mention none of which does ce, and in another ne natives knew of



(4.) ARROW HEADS. (See page 1235.) (6.) QUIVER. (5.) TURTLE ARROW. (7.) FEATHER APRON. From Christy Collection. From my Collection. (See p. 1280.) (See page 1233.) (See page 1216.)

most eye Most o feather, a weapon. the third

any rem be with a Before dreaded of the ar

The ve sufficing flight. to long r rendered does not more tha get much ranges, t hunter to of vegeta

and, there putting mention. accustom in the G These ar feathers of shaft the municate as it flies has two c he wishe a bird, an say, the s right and portion of in length,

See illustr The fea cotton th they woul hand whe split by th reed shaft of letter w of the arro The box and is of

being, as quired. M Guianan b most in Lecythis. grass which

Besides bows and another, w any remedy for the poison, they would never |

Before passing to the manufacture of this dreaded poison, we will finish the description

of the arrows.

The very long arrows, with their plumed shafts, need no feathers, their great length sufficing to keep them straight during their flight. Were the Guianan native to attempt a "long shot," he would fail. He is not used to long ranges, which for the most part are rendered needless by the conformation of the swaptry and the density of the foliage. country and the density of the foliage. He does not expect to shoot at an object distant more than thirty or forty yards, and likes to get much closer if possible. At these short ranges, the great length of the arrow keeps it straight, and is effectual in enabling the hunter to strike an animal, such as a tapir, acapybara, or a monkey, through the masses of vegetation by which it is concealed from most eyes except those of a native.

Most of the arrows, however, are feathered. and there is such ingenuity in the way of putting on the feathers that it deserves mention. In the arrows to which we are accustomed there are three feathers, but in the Guianan arrow there are only two. feathers of the opposite wings of the bird, so that when they are fixed on the end of the shaft they curve in different directions, like two blades of a steamer's screw, and so communicate a revolving motion to the arrow as it flies through the air. So, if a native has two or three arrows before him to which he wishes to add the feathers, he procures a bird, and for the first arrow takes, we will say, the second primary feather from the right and left wings of the bird, cuts off a portion of the upper part, about three inches feather, and fastens the remainder on the weapon. The next arrow is feathered from the third primary of each wing, and 'so on. See illustration No. 1, page 1231.

The feathers are lashed to the arrow with

cotton thread, and so rudely put on, that they would sadly cut an English archer's hand when the arrow was shot. In order to preserve the nock of the arrow from being split by the bow-string, it is not made in the reed shaft of the arrow itself, but in a piece of letter wood, which is lashed to the butt of the arrow.

The bow is often shorter than the arrows, and is of no great strength, a long range being, as has already been stated, not required. Many kinds of wood furnish the Guianan bow, but those weapons which are most in favor are made of a species of Lecythis. They are strung with the silk grass which has been already mentioned.

Besides the ordinary mode of using their bows and arrows, the Guianan natives have another, which exactly resembles that sport

was laid on the ground, and the archers, standing in a circle round it, shot their arrows high into the air, so that they should fall into the garland. It sometimes happens that a turtle is lying in the water in such a manner that an arrow, shot at it in the usual manner, would only glance off its hard cont without doing any injury. The hunter, therefore, shoots upward, calculating the course of the descending missile so accurately that it falls upon the turtle's back, and penetrates the shell.

These arrows are heavier than the ordinary kinds, and are furnished with a sharp iron point, made in a very ingenious manner. As may be seen by reference to illustration No. 5, page 1231, the iron point is doubly barbed. Its neck, at first flat, is soon divided into two portions, which diverge from each other, and have their ends sharply pointed, so as to constitute a secondary pair of barbs. A stout double string of silk grass is then fixed to the neck, and cotton cord, strengthened with kurumanni wax, is coiled round the diverging points, so as to form a tube. The end of the piece of hard wood which terminates the arrow is scraped down in the Guianan arrow there are only two to a conical point, so that it can easily be These are taken from the corresponding slipped into the tube. Lastly, the double cord fastened to the head is carried for a foot or so along the arrow, and made fast by a couple of belts of silk grass.

As soon as this arrow strikes the turtle, it dashes off, shaking the shaft out of the tube, and so preventing the arrow from being worked out of the wound by dragging the upright shaft through the water. Whenever the reptile comes near the surface, the light reed shaft of the arrow rises so as to indicate its presence, and, aided by this mark, the hunter is soon able to secure the n length, strips away the inner half of the reptile. The arrow, a part of which is feather, and fastens the remainder on the shown in the illustration, is rather more than five feet in length. It is represented with the shaft separated from the tube. The iron point is thick and solid, and as the hardwood spike is fourteen inches in length, the front part of the missile is comparatively heavy, causing it to descend with great force.

> WE now come to the manufacture of the dreaded poison which produces such fatal effects. The natives are very chary of giving information on the subject, and it is very difficult to learn the precise ingredients, the proportionate quantities, or the mode of pre-paring them. The following account is ob-tained partly from Mr. Waterton's book, partly from information given by himself, and partly from the words and works of other travellers in the country.

A good many articles are employed, or said to be employed, but I believe that only two are really needed. The native who is about to make wourali sets about his task in a very deliberate manner. He sets off into of the old English archers, when a garland the woods alone, taking on his back a pecul-

iar kind of basket called a "quake" or the bulbous plants probably supplying the habbah." This is a very ingenious kind glutinous matter needed to make it adhere of basket, combining the two requisites of to the point of the weapon. But the poison of basket, combining the two requisites of lightness and strength. It is generally used when the native wants to carry objects that are not very heavy, and are large enough not to slip through the interstices.

It is made from the ittiritti reed, split into slips about the third of an inch in width. As when filled it swells out toward the bottom and is narrow at the mouth, the objects that are placed in it have no tendency to fall out, which might easily be the case with an ordinary basket, as the bearer is obliged to clamber over fallen trees, to force his way through the dense underwood of a tropical forest, and to subject the quake to such rough treatment that its qualities of form and elasticity are continually brought into of the country. These fangs are kept in operation.

The quake will hold a wonderful amount of goods, being as dilatable as an English their poison fangs. Carpet-bag. My own specimen (see illustration No. 3, p. 1231,) measures twenty inches in width, and this is the usual average.

The first thing to be sought is the wourali vine (strychnos toxifera). It is closely allied to the tree which furnishes the well-known strychnine, in its coarser stages of preparation called nux vomica, or ratsbane. upas tree, which furnishes the poison for the Dyak sumpitan arrows, belongs to the same genus. The wourali (spelt sometimes "oorara" or "curari"), though not very rare, is very local, and not easily discovered. It has a vine-like appearance, with a woody stem about three inches in diameter, covered with rough gray bark. The leaves are dark green, placed opposite each other, and
of an oval form. The fruit is nearly as
large as an apple, round, and smooth, with
seeds imbedded in a bitter gummy pulp.
When the poison maker has found the

wourali, he looks after two bulbous plants, containing a green and glutinous juice, and puts some of their stems into the quake. The third vegetable is a bitter root, which I believe to be the hyarri, a papilionaceous plant, which is largely used by the natives in poisoning the water when catching fish on a large scale. All parts of the hyarri are poisonous, but the root is the most powerful part of it. The natives take some of the root in their canoes, bale water over it, and pound it with their clubs. After allowing the water time to mix with the expressed juice, the fisherman throws it overboard, and in a few minutes every fish within a considerable distance comes floating to the surface perfectly helpless. One cubic foot of the hyarri will poison an acre of water, even among rapids, while a much less quantity is needed for creeks and still water. poison has no effect on the flesh of the fish, which is perfectly wholesome.

maker is not content with vegetable substances, but presses the animal kingdominto his service.

He procures two kinds of ant, one the muniri (Ponera grandis), a huge, black creature, sometimes an inch in length, with a sting so venomous that it often produces a fever. One of these ants is in my collection, and its very look is venomous enough to warn any one against it. The other is the fire-ant (Myrmica savissima), a tiny red in-sect, whose sting is just like the thrust of a redhot needle. Besides these he takes the poison fangs of the labarri and counacouchi snakes, two of the most venomous sernenia store, as the native always kills these reptiles whenever he sees them, and extracts

That these latter ingredients can have no effect in increasing the power of the poison I never doubted, and some years ago I ex-pressed my opinion that they were not used at all, but merely collected as a blind, to prevent the secret of the poison being known. This opinion is corroborated by the re-searches of Dr. Herman Beigel, who analyzed some wourali poison taken from the same arrow with which the hedgehog was killed, and who ascertained that there was not a particle of bony or animal matter in the poison, but that it was wholly of a vegetable character. Moreover, there was no trace of red pepper, which is said to be one of the ingredients.

As far as the sense of taste goes, my own experience coincides with that of Dr. Beigel. I have tasted the poison, which is innocuous unless mixed directly with the blood, and found it to be intensely bitter, and rather aromatic. These two qualities are doubtless due to the strychnine of the wourali and to the hyarri. There was not the least flavor of red pepper.

All these ingredients being procured, the poison maker sets to work in a very systematic manner. He will not prepare the wourali in, or even near, his own house, but makes his preparations in the depth of the forest, where he builds a little hut especially for the purpose. His first care is to build a fire, and while it is burning up, he scrapes into a perfectly new pot a sufficient quantity of the wourali wood, adding to it the hyarri in proper proportion, and placing them in a sort of colander. Holding the colander and its contents over the pot, the Indian pours boiling water over them, and allows the decoction to drain into the vessel, when it looks something like coffee. When a suffcient quantity has been obtained, the bulbous roots are bruised and their juice squeezed into the pot, and, lastly, the snakes' fangs and The wourali and the hyarri are, in my into the pot, and, lastly, the snakes' fangs and opinion, the essential parts of the poison, ants are pounded and thrown into the pot

The v la kept contenta more we waste by during with a le the poise syrup, al cording red pepp preparat tive thin he throw per, which He then little lor which p and he i seed rem as a pr plete.

The Ir them in upon sor with the earthenw the mout leaves, so ture, espe which are nearly sp ordinary The abo rali poiso

natives, b keeping t cannot b there is a ture is ev coushie po and stron tured by Guianan 1 from the 1 It is no make this edge is res

it in their father to serve thei make the houses, bu manufactu to oblitera have been They ha ence for th

which is gi that it is pe and may no is better to lege that d hou, or evil seize upon mysteries, bably supplying the d to make it adhere pon. But the poison with vegetable subanimal kingdom into

inds of ant, one the ch in length, with a it often produces a its is in my collection, venomous enough to ssima), a tiny red in-it like the thrust of a s these he takes the arri and counacouchi t venomous serpents e fangs are kept in ways kills these rep-them, and extracts

redients can have no power of the poison ome years ago I ext they were not used ted as a blind, to preooison being known. borated by the rean Beigel, who anaison taken from the the hedgehog was ined that there was or animal matter in vas wholly of a vegeover, there was no ch is said to be one

taste goes, my own th that of Dr. Beigel. , which is innocuous with the blood, and ly bitter, and rather the wourali and to not the least flavor

being procured, the vork in a very sysill not prepare the , his own house, but in the depth of the little hut especially st care is to build a ning up, he scrapes a sufficient quantity ing to it the hyarri d placing them in a ng the colander and t, the Indian pours , and allows the dethe vessel, when it fee. When a suffibtained, the bulbous neir juice squeezed ne snakes' fangs and own into the pot.

The vessel is now placed on the fire, which effectually prevent their proceedings from kept up very gently, so as to allow the being watched. The vessel is now placed on the fire, which is kept up very gently, so as to allow the contents to simmer, rather than boil, and more wourali juice is added to supply the waste by ovaporation. A soum is thrown up during the process, and carefully skimmed with a leaf, the boiling being continued until the reison is reduced to a thick dark brown. the poison is reduced to a thick dark brown syrup, about the consistence of treacle. According to some accounts, the seeds of the red pepper are used, not as adding to the red pepper are used, not as adding to the strength of the poison, but as a test of its preparation being complete. When the native thinks that the poison is nearly ready, he throws into it a single seed of red pepper, which immediately begins to revolve. he then allows the boiling to proceed a little longer, and throws in another seed, which perhaps revolves, but more slowly; and he repeats this experiment until the seed remains stationary, which is accepted as a proof that the preparation is com-

The Indian then takes a few arrows, dips them in the poison, and tries their effect upon some animal or bird, and, if satisfied with the effect, pours the poison into a new earthenware pot, ties a couple of leaves over the mouth, and a piece of wet hide over the leaves, so as to exclude both air and mois-ture, especially the latter. The little pots which are used for holding the wourali are

The above account of preparing the wou-rali poison is that which is furnished by the natives, but, as they have a definite object in keeping the mode of preparation secret, it cannot be absolutely relied upon. That there is a secret connected with its manufacture is evident from the fact that the Macoushie poison is acknowledged to be better and stronger than that which is manufac-tured by any other tribe, and that all the Guianan tribes are glad to purchase wourali from the Macoushies

It is not every native who knows how to make this wonderful poison. The knowledge is restricted to the conjurers, who keep it in their families and hand it down from father to son. They are so careful to preserve their secret, that not only do they make the wourali at a distance from their houses, but when they have completed the manufacture they burn down the huts, so as to obliterate every trace of the means which

have been employed.

They have a sort of superstitious reverence for the wourali. The ostensible reason which is given for burning down the hut is, that it is polluted by the fumes of the poison, and may never again be inhabited, so that it is better to burn it down at once. They allege that during its preparation the Yabahou, or evil spirit, is hovering over, ready to selize upon those who are uninitiated in the England.

"After several rounds from each man and mysteries, and so by the aid of superstition"

In order to carry out this fear of the wourall to its full extent, the professors of poisonmanufacture will refuse to make it except when they please, alleging any excuse that may suggest itself. Mr. Waterton narrates an instauce where a man who had promised to make some wourall poison declined to do so at the last moment, on the ground that he expected an increase to his family. The maker is always pleased to consider himself ill after he has completed his work, which, in spite of the repeated washing of his face and hands, renders him sufficiently liable to the attacks of the invisible Yabahou to cause indisposition. The manufacturer is not altogether an impostor in this case, but acts from a sort of belief in the mysterious Rets from a sort of benefin the mysterious gloom which always surrounds the wourali. Nothing, for example, would induce him to eat while the poison is being prepared, and, however hungry he may be, he will fast until the completed wourali has been poured into its receptacle.

Although the chief poison in Guiana, the wourali is not the only one, the natives having discovered a sort of wood which is sufficiently poisonous in itself to need no other appliance. The wood is that of some endogenous tree, of a pale yellow color. From this wood the natives cut long blade-shaped nearly spherical, and about as large as an heads, much resembling those of the Kaffir assagais in form. The peculiar shape of the head may be seen in figures 4 and 5 of illustration No. 4, on page 1231, which represents two views of the same arrow head. Some-times the head is left quite plain, but in some specimens a pattern is rudely scribbled on the outer surface of the blade. Annatto is the coloring matter used, leaving a dusky red dye behind it. I possess specimens of these arrows, both plain and colored. These flat heads are lashed to the hard-

wood spike that terminates the arrow by a complicated arrangement of cotton threads, which, though they do not possess the artistic elegance of the Polynesian wrapping, yet are crossed and recrossed so as to produce a series of diamond shaped patterns. Mr. Waterton first called my attention to the venomous properties of this arrow head.

The young men practise diligently with these weapons. The largest, which are intended for the slaughter of tapirs, jaguars, and such like animals, are tested by being shot perpendicularly into the air, each archer trying to send his arrow above that of his competitor.

Mr. Brett, in his "Indian Tribes of Guiana," gives an interesting account of the skill of the natives as marksmen, and relates one little episode of the shooting, which shows that the "inevitable dog" accompa-

boy, the archery contest closed by a simul- | wood arrow just described. Another is not taneous discharge of arrows from every bow. More than two hundred shafts flying through the air together presented a novel spectacle. and in an instant demolished the target amid loud shouts from all. A dog which, unheeded, had wandered behind it, was surrounded by the crop of arrows which suddenly stuck in the sand, some even beneath him. He was a lucky dog, however, for with marvellous fortune he escaped unhurt, though bewildered by the adventure and the roar of applause which followed his somewhat hasty retirement, with deprecating look and drooping tail."

Spears are also used by some of the tribes. The same writer describes the mode in which a Warau had practised with the spear. weapon was made of the same material as the arrow, but of greater size, the shaft being of reed, and the head of hard wood. The young spearman had fixed a mark on the soft stem of a plantain tree. As the missile struck the mark, the hard-wood head remained sticking in the tree, while the elastic shaft bounded back toward the

thrower.

The lad said that this javelin was used for killing sundry large fishes, which are induced to rise to the surface of the water by means of scattering seeds and other food of which they are fond, and are then killed by means of this weapon.

Some of the arrows are unpoisoned, and, as an example of the great variety assumed, of the arrow heads of the different tribes three more specimens are given in the three left-hand figures of illustration No. 4, on page 1231, taken from the "Christy" collec-These heads are something of the same form as those which have just been described, but, instead of being flat, they are The reader may remember that a curved. similar form of arrow prevails in New Guinea. The reason is simple enough. The bamboo is covered with a coating of pure flint, which forms a natural edge so sharp, that when the bamboo is split, it can be used as a knife.

Indeed, until the introduction of iron, the bamboo furnished the knife in ordinary use throughout all Polynesia and many other countries where it grew. It is evident, therefore, that an arrow head merely made from a hollow bamboo stem, and retaining the hollow shape, must be a most formidable weapon, and inflict a very dangerous wound. It is brittle, fragile, and would shiver to pieces against a shield or defensive armor of even moderate strength, but against the naked bodies of the Indians it is a most ef-

fective weapon.

Great pains have been taken with these arrows, all of which have been ornamented arrows, all of which have been ornamented in some peculiar manner. One of them is covered on the convex side with colored undergo the rough usage of actual warpatterns, just as is the case with the poison- fare.

only ornamented, but cut into barbs. The third, which is plain, is distinguished by a hollow ball, placed just below the head. The ball is pierced with a hole, so that when the arrow is sent from the bow a whistling sound will be produced. The Chinese use whistling arrows at the present time, and so did our archers in the days when the longbow was the pride of England. In all these cases, the whistle could be used for amusement in time of peace, but for signals in time of war.

As the thoughtful reader might gather from the elaborate care exercised in ornamenting these weapons, the natives would rather exhibit than use them. It is almost invariably found to be the case, that really warlike people keep their weapons in the highest state of efficiency, but trouble them-selves comparatively little about ornament ing them, whereas those who want a reputation for valor, without the trouble and danger of earning it, try to gain their end by having their weapons covered with ornament, and themselves assuming as martial an aspect as possible. If the reader will remember the various peoples that have been described in the course of this work, he will see how completely this rule holds good.

Take, by way of example, the Fijian and the Tongan. The one is celebrated throughout the world for the variety, the beauty, the finish, and the artistic ornamentation of his weapons. He always moves armed, feeling himself at a loss without his club on his shoulder; he bedizens himself in the most extravagant manner for the war dance, and before joining in actual battle he consumes a vast amount of time in boasting of his prowess, and of the use to which he will put

the body of his foe.

But the Tongan, who never thinks of boasting before or after battle, whose wea-pons are simple and unadorned, is so completely the superior of the Fijian that he could, if he chose, make himself the master of the whole Fiji territory. We see the same characteristic in several Eastern lands, in which the men arc walking arsenals of weapons inlaid with gold, silver, and precious stones, and yet will take the first opportunity of running away when there is a probability that their ornamental weapons will be used in earnest,

So the experienced anthropologist, as soon as he sees these beautifully carved arms, decorated with the most delicate plumage, and painted with all the colors which native art can supply, at once makes up his mind that such weapons are more for show than use, and that the makers would not

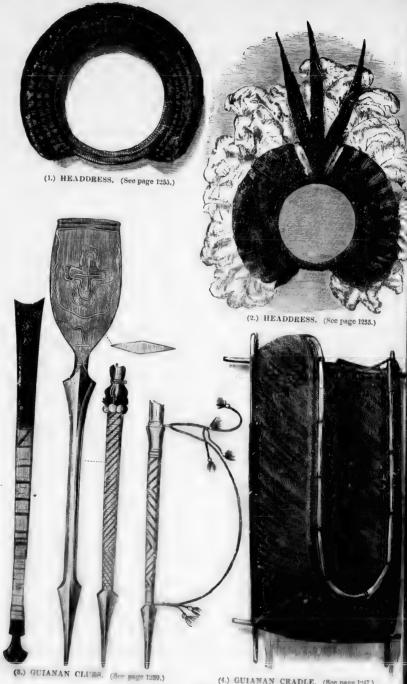
bed. Another is not but into barbs. The statinguished by a below the head. The ble, so that when the bow a whistling d. The Chinese use present time, and so days when the longingland. In all these be used for amuse, but for signals in

eader might gather exercised in ornas, the natives would them. It is almost the case, that really neir weapons in the ty, but trouble themselve who want a reput the trouble and ry to gain their end s covered with ornassuming as martial If the reader will peoples that have course of this work, etely this rule holds

nple, the Fijian and celebrated throughvariety, the beauty, ic ornamentation of smoves armed, feel-hout his club on his himself in the most the war dance, and battle he consumes in boasting of his to which he will put

no never thinks of battle, whose weaadorned, is so comthe Fijian that he
himself the master
ttory. We see the
veral Eastern lands,
walking arsenals of
old, silver, and preill take the first opway when there is
rnamental weapons

anthropologist, as beautifully carved by most delicate plusall the colors which once makes up his are more for show makers would not time and trouble intended them to use of actual war-



(4.) GUIANAN CRADLE. (800 page 1247.)

(1238)

GUIANAN C ITS C RESU INGE END

WE will r as well as characteri them are The specia from exan

Those o kind of clu are made which the are so lar strong ma land mera middle, an side, so tha can well be In order

is covered very neatl with feath the heads alike, I hav most high brilliant gr feathers a s ton-wool. string is wo these wear much resen described, e and cottonfibre.





(See page 1247.)

CHAPTER CXXXI.

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA - Continued.

WAR - SUPERSTITION.

SWIANAN CLUBS - THE SAPAKANA AND POTU - WARFARE - CANNIBALISM - THE SHELL MOUND AND ITS CONTENTS - RISE AND FALL OF THE CARIB TRIBE - BLOOD FEUDS - THE KANAIMA AND ITS RESULTS -- A STRANGE SUPERSTITION -- THE GUIANAN VAMPIRE -- WAR WITH THE ARAWAKS --INGENIOUS STRATEGY - THE AMBUSH - THE FORT AND THE BOOM - CAPTURE OF THE CHIEF AND END OF THE WAR.

WE will now pass to their clubs, in which, as well as in the arrows, can be read the characteristics of their makers: some of them are wonderful examples of savage art. The specimens which are shown in an illustration on the preceding page are all drawn from examples in the "Christy" collection.

Those on the right are examples of the kind of club which is called Sapakana. They are made of the heaviest and hardest wood which the native can find, and some of them are so large and heavy that they require a strong man to wield them. The blade is formed something like that of the New Zealand merai, being slightly convex in the middle, and coming to an edge on either side, so that it is as formidable a weapon as can well be imagined.

In order to give a firm grasp, the handle is covered with cotton string wound upon it very neatly, afterward being ornamented with feathers and similar decorations. As the heads of these clubs are very much alike, I have only given one entire, and the left-hand specimen. handles of two others. The central is the most highly ornamented, having tufts of brilliant green feathers just at the junction of the head and the handle, and below the feathers a series of white balls made of cotton-wool. The reader will doubtless admire the elaborate pattern in which the cotton string is wound upon the handle. One of these weapons in my own collection very much resembles that which has been already described, except that, instead of the feathers and cetton-wool balls, it is ornamented with

At the present time the use of these beautiful clubs is practically abandoned, the mus-ket having superseded the native weapons, so that the clubs, although they are still man-

ufactured, are made for sale, and not for use. Next comes a club which is used by the Caribs. It carries out fully the principle which has just been mentioned respecting the ratio between the ornament of the weapon and the warlike spirit of the user. This club is comparatively plain, being meant for use and not for show. The makers call it by the name of Potu, and it is evidently a modification of the "macana" club of the Gran Chaco Indians. To the eye it seems no very powerful weapon, but its weight, form, and balance render it capable of dashing out the brains of a man with a single There is generally a wrapping of blow. cotton string round the middle, so as to afford a firm grip, and a loop made of the same material, which passes over the wrist. A modification of the potu is shown in the

The very shape of the potus proves that they are meant to be used by a courageous and warlike people. As a rule the instinct of a really courageous people is to "get at" the adversary, while that of an unwarlike people is to keep the foe at a distance.

As to warfare and the mode of conducting it, there is considerable variation in the different tribes, some being peaceable and quiet, while others are just the reverse. The most warlike tribe among them is undoubtedly the Carib, of which Raleigh wrote that a series of long trailing tufts made of cotton they were a naked people, but as valiant as any under the sky.

important of the Guianan tribes, having earned their prominence by their weapons. If they quarrelled with another tribe, they were accustomed to make an expedition into the enemy's land by night, surround in succession their scattered villages, kill all the men, and take the women and children prisoners. Some of these captives were employed as slaves among themselves, and by degrees became incorporated with the tribe of their captors, while others were reserved for sale. They did not, however, restrict themselves to this kind of secret expedition, but openly made war with other tribes, and boasted that they would paddle their canoes against the stream, so that the enemy might hear them coming and not be taken by sur-

There seems to be little doubt that the Caribs were at one time cannibals, though at the present day there is great difficulty in getting them to acknowledge the fact. former cannibalism of these tribes was easily confirmed by some discoveries which were made in a large mound situated on a sand reef, some ten or twelve miles from the sea.

Thinking that this mound might be a kitchen midden similar to those which are found in many parts of the Old World, Mr. Brett instituted a search, and found that, like these mounds, the heap consisted chiefly of shells, mostly those of mussels and peri-winkles, together with the claws, and shells of crabs, and some bones of fishes and land vertebrates. At no very great depth from the surface, the excavators came upon a vast quantity of human bones, the skulls shattered to pieces, and the bones of the arms and legs split longitudinally.

To an experienced eye this state of the bones told its own story. The bones were not laid regularly, as they would have been if they had been the remains of bodies regularly interred, but were tossed about in confusion, the fragments of skulls, vertebræ, and limbs being scattered here and there without the least order. The story which these remains tell is simple enough. They are the bones of human beings who have been eaten by their fellow-men, which, after being cracked for the sake of the marrow, have been flung aside, together with the shells of molluses and other refuse. this horrid custom was common to all the tribes at one time seems very probable, but the Caribs are the last to whom cannibalism has been attributed.

Like the Mundurucus, the Caribs had an ordeal consisting in enduring the bites of ants. They had no hereditary chief, though the son of a chief would succeed his father if he were considered to possess sufficient ability and courage. Even in such a case, the candidate for chieftainship had to prove his superiority over his fellows by his capa-

The Caribs were at that time the most ture. He was required to show that he was acquainted with all the stratagems of war, that he could endure long fasting, that he was of unflinching courage, and that he could resist even the terrible ordeal of the ants, and not until he had satisfactorily passed through all those trials did the tribe lay their weapons at his feet in token of their submission to him.

We may naturally feel some surprise that a people who exhibit such an indomitable spirit, and such a love of freedom, who have overrun vast tracts of territory and succe % fully resisted even the well-armed and disciplined troops of Europe, should not have advanced in the scale of civilization, but have remained as savage at the present day as we know them to have been three hundred years ago. Mr. Brett, whose personal knowledge of them enables him to speak with anthority, gives his solution of the question as follows:

"There arose among them no master spirit, who, combining the wisdom of the legislator with the bravery of the warrior. might have established humane and civilizing institutions among his people, and permanently united their scattered hordes. In great emergencies the necessity for united action led them accordingly to follow, and implicitly obey, some one of their chiefs, invested by themselves with superior authority, like a dictator of ancient Rome. But at other times each petty head of a clan or family moved and acted in a great measure as he pleased, there being no actual power nor hereditary authority sufficiently respected to command the obedience of all.

"Having thus no permanent band of cohesion, their wild hordes could only fight overrun, oppress, and destroy, and in their highest prosperity were incapable of accomplishing any great and useful work which might have remained as their memorial to future ages."

In consequence of the want of leadership, the Carib tribe, once the greatest, and per-haps the origin of all the Guianan tribes, is steadily decreasing, and, valiant as they may be, they are no longer the terror of the other tribes, as they used to be. Indeed, during their feud with the Acawaios, in which they have been engaged for a long time, the Caribs have by no means been the win-They have even been obliged to quit their own district, and settle themselves near the missionary stations for protection.

The same author who has just been queted mentions several inscances which show the failing power of the Caribs. On one occasion a Carib chief came to live at the mission station because he had found that a party of Acawaios, painted and equipped for war, were lurking near his home in the forest. Even in his place of refuge he was his superiority over his fellows by his capa-bility of bearing privations as well as tor-the village was disturbed by loud outcres, and it we chief had in his ha a blow v wandered house, wh behind hi the enem but the m ground, as had cause

The wh

fusion an it turned quence of man. Tv agassinat naturally attempt t drew upo: waios, wh they could him. He Pomeroon by the m procure e estates, v likely to Sometin

son dies, the death has used away his doomed 1 deceased rying out be posses Kanaima. the deed During th has to st mere wis acts as an office.

nerstitiou

The mo the Kana one. He was the mentione within rea a blow on is not me enough t The Kana mouth, ar fangs of a immediat prevent t ing, and end his said to st poisonous nurpose,

the wing-

of this p

from fath

I to show that he was e stratagems of war. long fasting, that he ourage, and that he terrible ordeal of the d satisfactorily passed als did the tribe lay eet in token of their

el some surprise that such an indomitable of freedom, who have territory and succe w well-armed and discie, should not have adcivilization, but have the present day as we been three hundred vhose personal knowlnim to speak with au-

ng them no master the wisdom of the avery of the warrior. humane and civilizing people, and perma-tered hordes. In great ssity for united action follow, and implicitly ir chiefs, invested by ior authority, like a Rome. But at other of a clan or family great measure as he no actual power nor fficiently respected to e of all.

rmanent band of codes could only fight, destroy, and in their e incapable of accoml useful work which as their memorial to

ne want of leadership, he greatest, and per-he Guianan tribes, is l, valiant as they may er the terror of the used to be. Indeed, h the Acawaios, in ngaged for a long time, means been the winn been obliged to quit settle themselves near

for protection. o has just been quoinscances which show he Caribs. On one came to live at the e he had found that ainted and equipped near his home in the lace of refuge he was emies. One evening ped by loud outcries,

and it was found that a son-in-law of the chief had been seriously hurt, and was lying in his hammock, writhing with the pain of a blow which he had received. He had wandered to some little distance from the house, when he caught sight of an Acawaio behind him. He turned round, sprang upon the enemy, and threw his arms round him; but the man was too strong, hurled him to the ground, and, as he fell, struck the blow which had caused him to take to his hammock.

The whole Carib party was in great confusion and terror for some time, but at last it turned out that the attack was in consequence of a personal feud with the wounded naturally used his bow and arrows in a vain attempt to save his father's life. This act drew upon him the vengeance of the Acawaios, who marked him for death whenever they could find an opportunity of killing him. He had fled from the Essequibo to Pomeroon, but uselessly, and was advised by the missionary to go to the coast and procure employment on one of the sugar estates, where his enemies would not be likely to follow.

Sometimes a blood feud is caused by a superstitious practice called Kanaima. A person dies, and the medicine man decides that the death has been caused by some one who has used sorcery for the purpose of taking away his life. The supposed wizard is then doomed to die, and a near relative of the deceased is set apart for the purpose of carrying out the sentence. He is supposed to be possessed by a wandering spirit called Kanaima, and is called by that name until the deed of vengcance is accomplished. During the time of possession, the Kanaima has to suffer many privations, so that the mere wish to be restored to his ordinary life acts as an incentive to the fulfilment of his

The mode of killing a victim according to the Kanaima superstition is a very cruel one. He is approached from behind (as was the case with the young Carib above-mentioned); and if the slayer can come within reach, the victim is struck down with a blow on the back of his neck. This blow is not meant to be fatal, and is only hard enough to cause insensibility for a time. The Kanaima then forces open his victim's mouth, and presses through his tongue the fangs of a venomous serpent. The tongue immediately swells to such an extent as to prevent the unfortunate wrate. from speaking, and in the course of a day or two to end his life. Sometimes the Kanaima said to substitute for the serpent's fangs a from father to son.

The task of the Kanaima is not yet ended. Three days after the burial of the victim, the murderer must visit the grave and go through some ceremony, before the Kana-ima spirit departs and allows the man to return to his friends. The natives are very chary of their knowledge on this subject, but, as far as can be ascerthined, the Kanaboty, as far as can be ascertained, the Kana-ima presses a pointed stick through the body, tastes the blood, and by that act is re-lieved from the spirit of murder. The friends of the victim, therefore, al-

ways endeavor to conceal the place of burial, and it is the duty of the murderer to hover about the place so that they shall not man. Two years before, his father had been be able to inter the body without his knowlessassinated by the Acawaios, and he very edge. Should the friends be successful, the vengeance is reversed, for the unfortunate Kanaima is obliged to wander through the woods until he is afflicted with madness, or some other form of vengeance whereby the spirit of murder punishes those who have not carried out his wishes.

Mr. Brett witnessed several instances of this dreadful mode of punishment, and in one case had little doubt that he had come upon a Kanaima who had been unable to find the body of his victim. "An Indian, reduced almost to a skeleton, and in a dreadful state of exhaustion, was picked up in the forest by some Arawak, and brought to the Pomeroon mission. He had lost a portion of his scalp, and had his lower lip torn down at each corner. This he said had been done by a small 'tiger,' which had sprung on him while lying in the forest. . .

"The Acawaios at the mission, whose language he spoke, took much care of him at first, but afterward judged, from his refusing certain kinds of food and other signs, that he was a devotee and victim of unappeased Kanaima, and the murderer of a man killed some time before. From this, and his savage, ungrateful demeanor (though Mr. M'Clintock aided by myself, cleansed and dressed his sores to encourage them), we had some difficulty in getting him nursed till his strength had returned, as they feared lest they should become his future victims.

If the friends of the murdered man fear that they will not be able to conceal the body effectually, they remove the liver, and put in its place a redhot axe-head, under the belief that when the Karaima tastes the blood of his victim, the head which was in the axe-head will pass into his he in and consume

Putting aside private feud, the Caribs have of late been beaten by the other tribes in open war. They had been partially successful against the Arawaks, who had been driven into the swampy district near the poisonous powder, made for the express Waini. Here, however, the fugitives made surpose, and kept in a little tube made of a stand, and placed themselves under the the wing-bone of a bird. The preparation supreme command of a well-known and tried of this powder is a secret, handed down warrior. Expecting that the Caribs would soon follow them into their place of refuge,

their leader placed his men in ambush among | volley on the invaders, being supplied by the islands, and awaited the coming of the the women and boys with arrows as fast as

On came the Caribs in their great war canoes, following each other in single file through the narrow creeks which separate the "wet savannah" into islands. They the "wet savannah" into islands. They were allowed to pass unhurt, until they rounded one of the islands, when a deadly shower of arrows from both banks disabled or killed avery man on heart. or killed every man on board. The second cance pushed on, only to meet the same fate, while the others, not being able to see the carnage that was taking place, hurried on-ward toward the spot whence the cries proceeded, and were in their turn overwhelmed with the deadly shower. The victorious Arawaks then jumped into the water, seized the canoes, and killed every one of the war-riors with the exception of two. These were sent home by the victors on the promise of a large ransom, to be paid in the cotton hammocks for the manufacture of which the Caribs are so famous; and an insulting message was also sent by them, requesting the Caribs to send another expedition.

On land the Caribs fared as badly against the same foes as they had done by sea. Being determined to resist the continual attacks of the Caribs, the Arawaks made up their minds to fly no more to the swamps for safety, but to boldly face their enemies. They therefore built a large house on the banks of a rivulet, surrounded it with trees laid with their branches outward—in fact, the abattis of modern engineering—and stored the house with as many arrows as they could make. Moreover, they made broad wooden shields, which were used on this occasion for the first and probably for

As had been anticipated, the Caribs were not very long in making their attack. Seeing a small party of men among the trees, they gave chase and pursued them as far as the house, which they immediately attacked. The defenders did not return the fire of the Caribs, but contented themselves with receiving on their shields the arrows of the enemy. When they judged that the arrows of the fee were nearly exhausted, they made use of their own stores, and poured volley after

volley on the invaders, being supplied by the women and boys with arrows as fast as they could shoot. The Caribs were unable to withstand such an attack, and were obliged to beat a retreat, during which they lost many more of their number by the pursuing Arawaks.

The two last decisive battles between these great tribes ended again in favor of the Arawâks. The latter established themselves on the banks of a branch of the river Moruca, a stream which is thickly wooded on both sides. The name of this branch is Haimara-Cabura. Across this stream the Arawâks sank a tree trunk at such a depth that it would allow small canoes to pass over it, while the large and heavily-laden warcanoes must inevitably strike upon it.

The invaders came, as had been expected, but found nothing except empty houses. They then descended the Moruca, looking about for their prey, and at last caught sight of several canoes and gave chase. The fugitive canoes, on reaching the mouth of the Haimara-Cabura, darted into it as if for shelter, and were followed by the invaders, yelling and shouting with excitement. Suddenly, their canoes struck violently against the sunken boom, jerked the paddles from their places, became entangled with each other, and caused inextricable confusion. In the midst of their perplexity, showers of arrows were hurled upon them, and very few of the invading force escaped.

Among them, however, was the Carlb chief Manarrawa, who was incensed at the repulse with which he had met, returned to the Orinoco, organized another force, and again attacked the Arawaks. This time he was less fortunate, being wounded and taken prisoner. On being brought before the council of chiefs, Manarrawa promised that, if his life was spared, he would cause his people to cease from further attacks. The Arawaks, more lenient than the Carlbs, granted his request, gave him a cance, and sent him home. He, on his part, performed his promise, and from that time there has been no regular war between the Carlbs and Arawaks, although there have been private blood feuds of the kind described.

th arrows as fast as Caribs were unable attack, and were t, during which they number by the pur-

pattles between these ain in favor of the tablished themselves ranch of the river h is thickly wooded ne of this branch is oss this stream the unk at such a depth I canoes to pass over heavily-laden warstrike upon it.

coss this stream the unk at such a depth I cances to pass over heavily-laden warstrike upon it. I have been expected, cept empty houses. The Moruca, looking and at last caught mud gave chase. The ching the mouth of arted into it as if for yed by the invaders, the excitement. Sudick violently against the paddles from thangled with each attricable confusion. The property of them, and very e escaped.

on them, and very e e escaped.

e escaped.

e escaped.

to as the Carlb vas incensed at the ad met, returned to another force, and vaks. This time he wounded and taken frought before the rawa promised that, he would cause his rither attacks. The t than the Caribs, e him a cance, and his part, performed that time there has ween the Caribs and o have been private described.



(1.) LAKE DWELLERS OF THE ORINOCO. (See page 1269.)



(2.) A WARAU HOUSE. (See pages 1245, 1251, 1268.) (1244)

ABOHITE TH ISE GUI

> MA TIP

WE will the Guis Their cording mate is needed, roof about is a sart of I posts an goods of clubs, bi ilar articross-be gular ca describe the precedent of the process of the precedent of the pre

one abov a passen of then rather

As the



CHAPTER CXXXII.

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA - Continued.

ARCHITECTURE AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS.

ABCHITECTURE - THE ORDINARY GUIANAN HOUSE -- THE MACOUSHIE AND INLAND HUTS -- CHOICE OF THE SITE - MATRIMONIAL ARRANGEMENTS - POLYGAMY AND ITS RESULTS - A BREACH OF PROM-ISE CASE - JEALOUSY AND ITS RESULTS - FORBIDDEN DEGREES AMONG THE ARAWAKS - THE GUIANAN MOTHER AND CHILD-A SINGULAR CUSTOM-POLYANDRY-MAKING CASSAVA-THE MANIOC TREE AND ITS ALLIES -- THE GRATER, THE BOWL, AND THE COLANDER -- THE PRESS, OR TIPITI - USE MADE OF THE POISONOUS JUICE - MAKING SUGAR - PIWARBI DRINKING - THE MAQUARRI DANCE -- CONSTRUCTION OF THE WHIPS -- ENDURANCE OF PAIN.

the Guianan natives.

Their architecture differs considerably according to the district. As a rule, the climate is so warm that houses are but little mate is so warm that nouses are but notice meeded, all that is required being a simple roof above the head. The ordinary kind of but is nothing more than a mere shed, a sort of barn without the walls, supported on posts and thatched with leaves. From the posts and rafters are hung the personal goods of the natives, such as fans, paddles, clubs, blow guns, bows and arrows, and similar articles, while from one or two of the cross-beams is sure to be hanging the singular cassava press, which will be presently described. Such a house is represented on the preceding page.

Between the upright posts, and sometimes from the transverse beams, are suspended the hammocks, some of which are almost invariably occupied, as the master has a natural genius for lying in his hammock when he is not absolutely obliged to be on his feet. The number of hammocks under a single roof is almost incredible. They are hung in tiers, one above another, like the berths on board a passenger ship, and when thirty or forty of them are occupied at once, it seems rather wonderful that the building should be able to withstand such a strain.

As the inhabitants move about, or get into and out of their hammocks while re-

WE will now examine the domestic life of the only defence against the mosquitoes and other winged pests, the whole building rocks, the joints creak, and the house seems on the point of coming down. But the junctions of the beams and posts are so firmly tied that they are far stronger than they look, and however fragile the shed may seem, it is quite equal to any strain they may have to endure.

In the interior, however, the huts are more of a complicated character, and have walls as well as a roof. Their form is invariably round, and their roofs pointed in the centre. Some are shaped almost exactly like single-poled tents, having a circular upright wall, some five or six feet in height, and from that wall a tolerably high conical re ending in a sharp point. Their gen-eral shape much resembles that of the Makololo house, seen on page 329. The roof, however, is neater, and the central pole, by The roof, which it is supported, rises to some height above the top, looking like the ornamental spikes with which English builders are fond of decorating some of their villas.

Other houses, though built on the same principle, are not quite conical. They have no distinction between the wall and roof. and, instead of being circular, are octagonal. They may be very well imitated by cutting out eight isosceles triangles from cardboard. As the inhabitants move about, or get into and out of their hammocks while replenishing the nightly fires, whose smoke is tre will act as a support, and look very much | carried out to such an excess as is the case like the centre pole of the edifice.

These huts are used by the Macoushies, the makers of the very long blow guns which have already been described, and from projections in the upright poles the weapons are suspended when not in use. It need scarcely be said that the task of house building belongs to the women, mas-much as it pertains to the category of heavy work, which is beneath the character of a man to undertake. Indeed, with these people, as with many other uncivilized nations, the rooted disinclination of the men to labor, and the consequent falling of all the work upon the women, is one of the most serious obstacles to their progress in civilization; and even polygamy is not so much a drawback as the inferior condition of the Women.

Treating of the native houses, Mr. Brett remarks that the builders, simple as may be the house itself, carefully select a site which must combine several requirements. In the first place, it must be near a stream, so that the women may not have more trouble than needful in fetching water for the use of the household, and that the canoe may be within easy reach of the house when the owner wishes to set out upon one of the frequent migrations which take place among these

It must be a spot which is rather out of the way. The native Guianan likes peace and quietness, and has a strong objection to being disturbed, the apathy of his nature being supplemented by an inveterate shy-ness, which makes him keep aloof from strangers. It must also be a spot where the ground is light and sandy, and where the very slight cultivation needed in this land can be easily carried on.

The house being built, the next business is to prepare a field for the cultivation of yams and cassava, and this is the only hard work which the men will condescend to do. The ground is already occupied by trees, but this is of no consequence to the native agriculturist. Having selected a convenient spot, he cuts down the trees, ingeniously contriving that the fall of one shall bring down several others. This is done at the beginning of the hot season, i. e. somewhere in August. The tropical sun soon dries the fallen trees, and when they are sufficiently parched for the purpose, the Indian sets them on fire, a process which rapidly consumes all but the trunks and the largest branches. He has now done his share of the work, and leaves the rest to the women, who have to clear away the débris as far as they can, and to do all the digging, planting, and weeding that is needed.

with many other peoples, inasmuch as one chief was looked upon with the greatest respect because he had the unusual number of nine wives. This chief, a Warau, was very jealous of his establishment, and was said to have shot one of his wives, and severely wounded another with his cutlass. As a rule, however, a man has one wife only, the exceptions being rarer in proportion to the number of wives.

The Caribs appear to carry out the principle of proprietorship in their women to the fullest degree, as is exemplified by an amusing anecdote related by Mr. Brett. It must be premised that, as is usual among nearly all uncivilized natives, the wife is purchased from her father or oldest male relative, who has absolute power over and can sell her as he would sell his bow, and with as much regard for the feelings of one article of property as the other.

"A high-spirited Caribi girl, indignant at being given in marriage to an elderly man, who had already other wives (one being her own sister), ran away from him, and be-stowed her hand on one of the Essequibo Caribs, a younger man whom she liked better. After a while, the old man visited that quarter - not, however, to exercise his undoubted right to bring her back and beat her, but to claim compensation for her services. It was willingly allowed, and for a gun, a barrel of salt, or some article of like value, the woman was left with the man of her choice, who perhaps thought himself secure, and the business ended.

"But the next year the old man, who well knew what he was doing, paid them another visit, still, as he said, in quest of compensation. On being reminded by the husband that he had already been paid for the woman, he replied, 'Yes — for the woman; but she has since borne you a child—you must now pay me for that. The unwritten law of Caribi usage was decidedly in the old man's favor, and he received compensation for that child. For each succeeding birth he could, if he chose, reappear, like an unquiet spirit, make a similar demand, and be supported therein by the custom of his nation,"

Sometimes the second wife is purchased while still a child, and brought up together with the family of the first wife, and a prudent chief will thus provide himself with a succession of wives, each attaining mar-riageable years as her predecessors become too old to suit the taste of their proprietor. Now and then, the first wife successfully resists the introduction of a sharer of her household. In one such case, the first wife, Among these people polygamy, though not always the rule, is often the case, and a man's greatness is partly estimated by the number of his wives. It is not, however, eldest sin friends, grown y her unav onslaugh two siste looking that the friends, a disturbed The A

worthy

Their tr

families, and being is allowe the same this prine ous man As the line, her dren of h as hersel sons, who spective

tenacious

tion of it As is t tions, the of the eve woman o Mr. Brett hours afte hammock newly be another. it is laid gains a lit dle is prov

The bo

ever-useft

slips abou and then basket, op The edge flexible w cradle is b frameworl sticks. T rower tha the child length of 1238, is e at the bac the openi cradle is v light - thi article. V her child, belt, the passes it o the cradle

her forehe The par dren, and chastise thanger, T excess as is the case es, inasmuch as one with the greatest the unusual number hief, a Warau, was of his wives, and ner with his cutlass. an has one wife only, rer in proportion to

carry out the princitheir women to the nplified by an amus-Mr. Brett. It must usual among nearly he wife is purchased t male relative, who and can sell her as and with as much s of one article of

bi girl, indignant at to an elderly man, vives (one being her from him, and be-e of the Essequibo hom she liked betold man visited that to exercise his unher back and beat sation for her serallowed, and for a some article of like ft with the man of s thought himself ended.

e old man, who well paid them another juest of compensaed by the husband oaid for the woman, e woman; but she ld-you must now unwritten law of y in the old man's compensation for cceeding birth he ar, like an unquiet mand, and be sup-ustom of his na-

wife is purchased ought up together t wife, and a prude himself with a h attaining maredecessors become their proprietor. wife successfully f a sharer of her ase, the first wife, uicide, and being sensible course. f three sisters, all e husbands at one husband of the

eldest sister, having been on a visit to some friends, brought home another wife, a full-grown young woman. The first wife, after her unavailing attempt at suicide, made an daughter sto their parents of either sex is osslaught upon the intruder, aided by her two sisters, whose husbands stood quietly looking on. The end of the business was, that the woman was sent back to her friends, and the first wife was left in the undisturbed rule of her household.

The Arawaks have a curious and praiseworthy regulation concerning marriage. Their tribe is divided into a number of families, each descending in the female line, and being known by its own name. No one is allowed to marry into the family bearing the same name as himself or herself, and this principle is carried out in a rather curi-

As the succession falls in the woman's line, her sons and daughters, and the children of her daughters, bear the same name as herself, but not so the children of her sons, who will take the names of their respective mothers. The Arawaks are very tenacious of this rule, and think an infraction of it to be a great crime.

As is the case with most uncivilized nations, the Guianan mothers think but little of the event which lays a civilized European woman on the bed of sickness for weeks. Mr. Brett saw one Warau woman, only two hours after the birth of her child, tie up her hammock, and carry it, together with her newly born infant, from one house to another. When the child is very young, it is laid in a small hammock, but when it gains a little strength, a rather curious cradle is provided for it.

The body of the cradle is made of the ever-useful itirritti reed, which is split into slips about the tenth of an inch in width, and then woven so as to make a kind of basket, open at one end and down one side. The edges are strengthened by a rod of flexible wood lashed firmly to them, and the cradle is brought into shape by means of a at the back thirteen inches, while that of the opening is only seven inches. This cradle is very strong, very elastic, and very light—three great requisites in such an article. When the mother wishes to carry her child, she only takes a broad plaited belt, the two ends of which are united, passes it over the crossbars at the top of the cradle, and then brings the belt across her forehead.

The parents are very kind to their chil-

worthy of all praise

Connected with this subject, the Guianan natives have a very singular custom, which, according to our ideas at the present day, entirely reverses the order of things. With us, when a wife expects to be a mother, she often thinks it necessary to abstain from certain articles of food, and from too much exertion. With the Guianan Indians, the wife cats exactly what she chooses, and works as hard as ever, while the husband thinks himself bound to abstain and to rest. For example, the Acawaios and Caribs will not eat the flesh of the agouti, lest the future offspring should be thin and meagre; the haimara fish, lest it should be dim-sighted; or the maroudi, lest it should be still-born, the cry of this bird being held as an omen of death. The reader may remember that a Macoushie excused himself from making wourali by reference to this custom. This custom does not stop with the child's birth, out extends to several weeks afterward.

As soon as her child is born, the Indian wife washes the baby, rolls it in the cradle hammock, and goes about her business as usual. But the Indian husband is pleased to consider himself very ill, and straightway takes to his hammock, where he is waited upon by the women with the most solicitous attention. In some districts the sick husband has not a very pleasant part to play being obliged to take nauseous drinks, and to go through a course of very unpleasant medicine. Generally, however, he does nothing but lie in his hammock for a week or two, during which time he is kept amply supplied with the daintiest food, and petted as if he were recovering from a dangerous

This custom has gradually expired in the vicinity of the mission stations, but it occasionally revives. Mr. Brett mentions an instance where a large influx of strangers reintroduced it into the station. It so happened that a young Christian Indian sticks. The opening in front is much narrower than the body of the cradle, so that the child can be easily secured in it. The child can be easily secured in it. The portuned by his female relatives to take to portune by his female relatives to take to have the control of the portune by his female relatives to take to have the control of the portune by his female relatives to take to have the control of the c He resisted for some time, but was so persecuted that he fairly ran away, and went to work at a distance for three weeks, at the expiration of which time he thought he might be considered as convalescent. Strange as this custom may seem to be, it is one which has prevailed through a very considerable portion of the globe, and even in Europe has not been extinct until comparatively late years.

The parents are very kind to their children, and can seldom bring themselves to chastise them, except in a sudden fit of anger. The natural consequence of this conseq

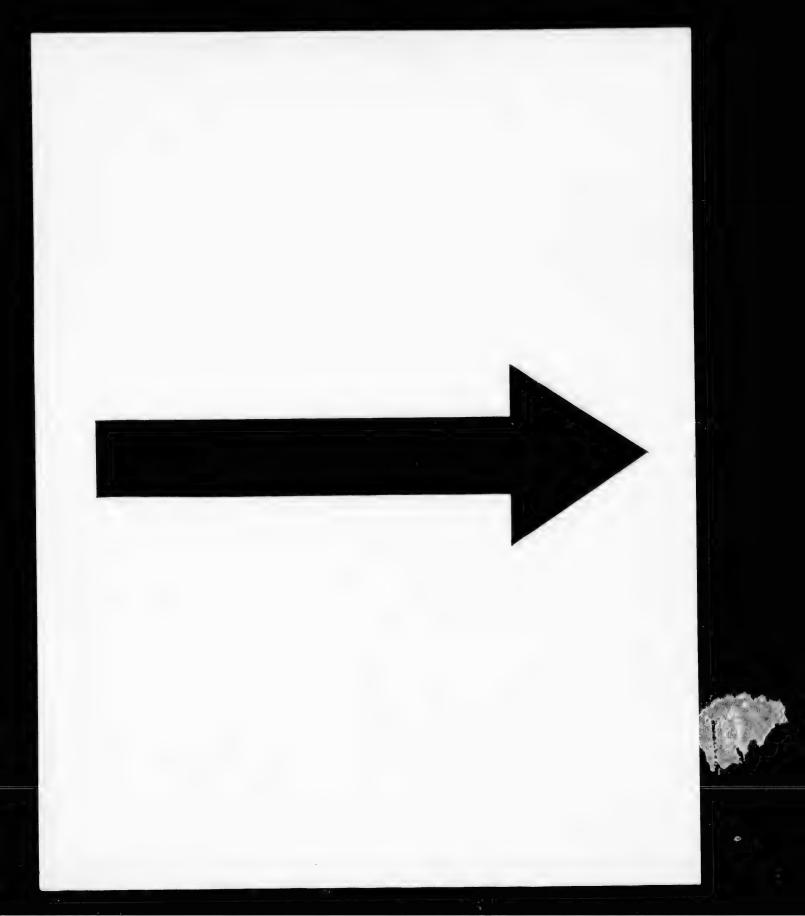
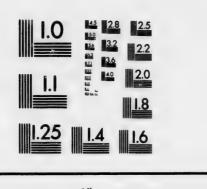


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



the practice of polygamy, he used an argu- of vegetable glue obtained from the juice of mentum ad hominem, and with the bad re- a tree. sults that usually follow such an argument. Finding that he could not prove to his in-terlocutor that a man ought not to have two wives, the missionary asked how it would be liked by the men if one wife were to have two husbands. To his astonishment, the man replied that the plan answered very well, and that he knew a woman who at that time had three husbands.

IT has been already mentioned that the natives of Guiana depend chiefly for their food upon the beasts, birds, and fishes which they capture. Vegetable food is not so important to them as it is generally to inhabitants of warmer climates, probably because the almost perpetual moisture of the country forces the inhabitants to partake of a com-

paratively generous diet.

The staple vegetable food is the cassava, which is prepared in rather a curious manner. Strange to say, it is obtained from a plant belonging to the natural order Euphorbiaces, plants which are celebrated for con-

taining most poisonous juices

Some of them are trees of the largest size, while others are little herbs that only exist for a few weeks. All of them, however, secrete an acrid juice, more or less poisonous. A familiar example of these plants may be found in the common spurge, or wart-wort of our gardens (Euphorbia helioscopa), the white, acrid, milky juice of which is employed in destroying warts. Several of these Euphorbiaces produce, beside the poisonous juice, a farinaceous substance, from which the poison can be separated, and which is then useful as human food.

The chief plant which produces the cassava is the Jatropha manihot, though there are others from which the farina can be obtained. The juice of this plant is so poisonous that a very small dose will produce death. Fortunately, the venomous principle is exceedingly volatile, and can be driven off by heat, so that the very substance which in its raw state is a deadly poison becomes, when cooked, a wholesome

article of food.

The mode of preparing the cassava is as follows: Taking on her back the quake, which has already been described, the Guianan woman digs up a quantity of the cassava root, puts it into the quake, and brings it to her hut. She next peels it by tearing off the outer covering with her teeth, and then proceeds to scrape it into very fine shavings. This is done by means of the native grater, which, rude as it looks, is a very effective machine. It consists of a thick board about a yard in length and half as much in width. Into the upper sur-face of this board are driven in regular rows a number of fragments of sharp stones, which

By being drawn over this surface, the cassava roots are soon reduced to thin shavings, much like those of the horse radish which are collected into a basket. One of these baskets is shown in fig. 2, on page 1231, It is made much like the cradle already mentioned, but is of closer texture, and the strips of cane are wider. It is about two feet in diameter, and is capable of containing a considerable quantity of the grated root.

When the native cassava maker does not

possess one of these graters, she uses as a substitute the acrid root of a species of Ireartia palm, which is covered with hard protuberances, and answers the purpose tolerably well, though it does not work so smoothly or neatly as the regular grater.

Sometimes a further process of grinding is employed, though not always. In such cases, the grated root is placed on a flat, sloping stone, and rubbed with another, just as is

done by the Araucanians. See page 1203.

The next process is to rid it of its poisonous juices, and in this part of the operation there is also considerable variation. Among some tribes, the scraped cassava is taken out of the dish and pressed tightly into a sieve or colander. This instrument is very ingeniously made. It is of basket work, but instead of being made of flat strips of cane or reed, round twigs are used, about as thick as ordinary drawing pencils. The natives have an ingenious mode in which the shape of the vessel is preserved while the interstices are not allowed to diminish or increase in size. This is done by beginning with a comparatively few twigs at the apex of the colander, and inserting fresh twigs at regular intervals as the vessel increases in size.

Into this colander the cassava is pressed and kneaded with water, until a considerable amount of the juice is expressed. It is then left in the sieve to undergo a partial drying, and is soon ready for another process, that of the press; and it is remarkable that, though presses of various descriptions have been sent from Europe, none of them seem to answer so well as the native Guianan press called the "tipiti." This press is a long, cylindrical basket, from six to seven feet in length, and about four inches in diameter, made of the bark of the Jacitara palm, a species of Desmoneus. The lower part of the tipiti is closed, and brought nearly to a point, while the upper part is left open, each end terminating in a very strong loop. Owing to the mode in which the tipiti is made, the central portion is highly elastic, while the mouth and tip are comparatively stiff. One of these is represented on the following page.

Several of these tipities generally hang to the roof or the cross-beam of the hut, so as to be ready for use when wanted. One of a number of fragments of sharp stones, which are further secured in their places by a sort is thrust into the clastic tube as tightly as

ained from the juice of

over this surface, the nose of the horse radish, into a basket. One of n in fig. 2, on page 1231. the cradle already mentexture, and the strips It is about two feet in ole of containing a conthe grated root.

assava maker does not graters, she uses as ?, root of a species of is covered with hard swers the purpose tol-it does not work so the regular grater.

the regular grater.

process of grinding is
always. In such cases,
aced on a flat, sloping

h another, just as is

ans. See page 1203, s to rid it of its poi-this part of the opeonsiderable variation, he scraped cassava is ad pressed tightly into his instrument is very is of basket work, but of flat strips of cane or used, about as thick as ils. The natives have which the shape of the ile the interstices are h or increase in size. inning with a com-

resh twigs at regular increases in size. he cassava is pressed r, until a considerable expressed. It is then ergo a partial drying, is remarkable that,

ous descriptions have , none of them seem native Guianan press his press is a long, six to seven feet in inches in diameter, the Jacitara palm, a The lower part of the ght nearly to a point, left open, each end strong loop. Owing ne tipiti is made, the hly elastic, while the tratively stiff. One of the following page. es generally hang to am of the hut, so as en wanted. One of rated cassava, which

c tube as tightly as



possismuch midd an er Vess the country tration spotter arry are redence potter with it

potter
with
page
A I
botton
elong
the co
juice
while
means
the lo
shorte
uprigl
weigh
to the
duce a
compn
Wh

duce a compr Wh the casto that the lecradle of the Which plates.

which
plates,
girdl
Althor
its pro
der the
more
to a co
Notl
away.

away.
matter
depriv
shall r
be rene
to drin
terstice
die in g
ing th
and the
uid, wl
of cas
sauce.

sauce.
pot " or
natives
pepper
white s

possible, so as to cause it to become very much shorter, and very much thicker in the middle. Underneath the tipiti is placed an earthenware bowl to receive the juice. Vessels such as these are made by the natives, and although they are very fragile, as the clay is never thoroughly kneaded, and the baking is insufficient, they can endure the fire well enough for cooking purposes. The vessel which is represented in the illus-

Besides these soft and fragile bowls, the natives make bottles for the purpose of carrying water. Some of these clay bottles carrying water. Some of these cay bottles are really elegant in form, and show evidences of artistic feeling on the part of the potter. A figure of a double water bottle, with its earthenware stoppers, is given on

page 1249.

A heavy weight is then fastened to the bottom of the tipiti, which is consequently while a still stronger pressure is obtained by means of the lever. A pole is passed through the loop at the bottom of the tipiti, and the shorter end of it is lashed to one of the upright posts of the house. The heavy weight—usually a large stone—is then hung to the longer end of the pole, so as to produce a powerful leverage on the tipiti, and compress the cassava still further.

When the process has arrived at this state. the cassava maker often adds her own weight to that of the stone, by sitting on the end of the lever, and with her baby slung in its cradle on her back, occupies herself in some of the lighter feminine occupations.

The cassava is now fit for baking, for which purpose it is placed on circular iron plates, which are laid over the fire like the "girdles" on which out cakes are baked. Although little known in this country under its proper name, cassava is largely used under the name of semolina, which is nothing more than the the cassava roughly ground

to a coarse sort of grain.

Nothing of this useful plant is thrown away. We have seen that the farinaceous matter can be rendered wholesome by being deprived of its poisonous juice, and we shall now see that even this juice itself can be rendered useful. If man or beast were to drink it as it pours from between the interstices of the tipiti, they would swell, and die in great agony. But by means of boiling the poisonous principle is driven off and the juice changes to a deep brown liquid, which is well known under the name of cassareep, and extensively used as a sauce. It is the foundation of the "pepperpot" of the West Indies, and when used by sareep sauce, the mouth of the stranger is excoriated by the quantity of capsicum.

If the reader will refer to the illustration If the reader will refer to the illustration representing a Warau house, on page 1244, he will see the various processes of cassavamaking. On the right hand is seen a woman kneeling before the grater, and scraping the cassava into the dish or basket. Hanging to the cross-beams of the hut are two of the The vessel which is represented in the illustration is of a deep brown color, striped and and the lever, and the other stretched spotted with black.

**The vessel which is represented in the illustration is of a deep brown color, striped and the lever, and the other stretched nearly to its full extent. A woman is sitting on the lever, and so expressing the last drops from the cassava into the bowl. The baking of the cassava cake is shown in the background on the right hand

A few little episodes of Guianan life are shown in the same illustration. On the left hand is seen a man armed with his bow and long arrows, and having slung on his shoul-ders the little bag which serves as a pocket. bottom of the tipiti, which is consequently another man is lying asleep in his hamelongated and narrowed, so as to compress
the contents forcibly, and squeeze out the
mock, and nearly in the middle is shown a
mother with her two children, one of them
while a still stranger pressure is obtained by The spiders of this country are sometimes as large as a man's outspread hand, and, unpleasant playfellows as they appear to us, they are used in this light by the children,

as was seen by Mr. Bates.

The natives can also make sugar, though of a rather coarse character. Some of the tribes employ a machine with small wooden rollers, for the purpose of crushing the sugar-cane and expressing the juice, but the plan followed by the Caribs is the most simple, and at the same time the most remarkable. They carve the upper part of a stout post into the rude semblance of a human bust, the post being as nearly as possible as large as a man. The part that answers to the collar-bone projects considerably, and a hole is bored through the middle of the neck under the chin.

When the Caribs wish to make their sugar, they put one end of a long and stout lever, into the hole in the neck, and lay the cane horizontally upon the collar-bones. One man then takes the end of the lever, and by pressing it down crushes the cane so that the juice flows down the breast of the image into the vessel, while another man shifts the cane so as to bring every

portion successively under the lever.

As for drink, the Guianan natives have from time immemorial made an intoxicating liquor called piwarri, which is almost exactly like the mudai of the Araucanians. A number of cakes of cassava bread are toasted brown, thrown into a large vessel, and boiling water poured over them. remainder of the cakes are masticated and mixed with the others in the vessel. Ferpot" of the West Indies, and when used by mentation then takes place very rapidly, and in a short time the liquor is fit to drink. The natives are immoderately fond of this white stranger with cassava bread and casand drink great quantities at a time. A cance is no uncommon vessel to be filled with piwarri, and every one who joins in the revel is presumed to become intoxicated as soon as possible. Mr. Brett mentions an amusical large and reverse of retive feeting as the subject to the property of the property o

ing instance of native feeling on this subject. The Arawaks of the Mahaiconi district having begged that a missionary might be sent to them, the bishop determined on visiting them personally. In honor of his arrival, the Arawaks had got up a great festival, including a canoe full of piwarri, and the curious Maquarri dance, of which we shall presently learn. Most of them were intoxicated, but they apologized to the bishop for their shortcomings in politeness, and said that if they had known sconer of his visit, they would have had two canoes full of piwarri instead of one.

Piwarri feasts vary in detail according to the tribe which holds them. They are, however, always accompanied by a dance, and by some ceremonies practised by the piaman or conjurer. An interesting account of a piwarri feast is given by Messrs. Spix and Martius, in their "Travels in Bra-

"By degrees, those residing at a greater distance arrived in single troops, each with his whole family, and with bag and baggage, as if they were going to migrate; the men who had not yet secreted their bows and arrows in the neighboring woods hid them here; the women put down their baskets, took the children on their shoulders, and looked for the drinking-cup (cuja). Without conversing with each other, each member of the family examined the surrounding company with an unsteady look; the men approached each other, and saluted their neighbors, at most, by pouting out their line and a secretary and in the president

approached each conter, and sanded their neighbors, at most, by pouting out their lips, and a scarcely audible nasal tone.

"In the middle of the assembly, and nearest to the pot, stood the chief, who, by his strength, cunning, and courage, had obtained some command over them, and had received the title of captain. In his right hand he held the maracá, the above-mentioned castanet, which they call gringcrina, and rattled with it, beating time with his right foot. We did not find any traces among the Indians of the oracles of the maracá, mentioned in the accounts of earlier travellers. Rather walking than dancing, he advanced slowly, with his body bent forward, round the pot, toward which his eyes were constantly turned. The dance, the measure of which was in triple time, was accompanied by him with a low monotonous singing, which was more strongly marked when he stamped with his foot. The oftener the song was repeated, the more solemn and animated was the expression of his voice and features. All the rest stood motionless round the pot, stared at him without speaking, and only now and then, when the words of the dancer, which seemed to be extempore

moved them, they broke out into immoder-

ate cries.

"After this measured circular dance, by which, probably, it was intended to conjure and keep off evil spirits, the leader approached the pot, took from the hand of his neighbor the drinking-vessel which he held ready, gravely dipped it into the pot, and took a sip. The rattling of the gringcrina and the monotonous music became general, and more and more noisy the longer the cup went round. We, too, had a full cuja presented to us, and though filled with disgust, we were obliged to follow the advice of our guide to empty it, in order not to give the Indians any reasons for distrust.

Indians any reasons for distrust.

"The beverage resembles in taste our malt liquor, and when taken in a large quantity is intoxicating, an effect which was but too manifest toward the end of the feast, by their leaping and noisy singing of, 'Hi' ha! ha!' Hopes had been given us that we should see on this occasion the dances of the Coroados; but toward evening, after their stomachs and heads were full, one party slipped away after the other, as if by previous agreement."

The same authors give an account of a melancholy sort of dance performed by another tribe of natives, the Puris:—

"When they had been made familiar, and treated with plentiful draughts of brandy, of which, like all Indians, they are passionately fond, they began their dance by night, on an open spot not far from the fazenda of Guidoweld. If the compact low stature, the brown-red color, the jet-black hair hanging down in disorder, the disagreeable form of their broad angular countenances, the small, oblique, unsteady, blinking eyes, and, lastly, the tripping, short, light step of these sav-ages had excited in us the most sorrowful feelings at the debasement of humanity in them, these were further increased by the melancholy expression of their festivity in the darkness of the night. The men placed themselves close together in a line, and behind them the women, also in a line. The male children, sometimes two or three, took hold of each other and of the fathers round the waist, as the female children did their mothers. In this position they begin their melancholy ' $H\acute{a}u-jo-h\acute{a}-ha-ha\acute{a}$ ' It is remarkable that the melodies which Lery noted above two hundred years ago among the Indians in the neighborhood of Rio Janeiro very much resemble those observed

which was in triple time, was accompanied by him with a low monotonous singing, which was more strongly marked when he stamped with his foot. The oftener the song was repeated, the more solemn and an imated was the expression of his voice and features. All the rest stood motionless round the pot, stared at him without speak-ing, and only now and then, when the words of the dancer, which seemed to be extempore,

In the natel was constituted as if daugh After same peate amon sung subjecto pludown. scene priate. The

is tha from 1 cipal . the of ceivin of this form t fibre, elastic by bei cane namei from wool a and th ually t the las a mos capabl knife, the wo is scar

inches.
The followide boys, description work with the dar quarri utterint tended Pres

though

when ered w gives : The le

and da space k a while on one remain illustra His

may be aim at then less to his ke out into immoder-

ed circular dance, by a intended to conjure irits, the leader apfrom the hand of his vessel which he held into the pot, and took the gringerina and became general, and the longer the cup had a full cuja presh filled with disgust, ow the advice of our rder not to give the distrust.

embles in taste our naken in a large it, an effect which was I the end of the feast, loisy singing of, 'Hile een given us that we ion the dances of the evening, after their were full, one party other, as if by pre-

rive an account of a ance performed by , the Puris:—

n made familiar, and raughts of brandy, of they are passionately lance by night, on an the fazenda of Guidct low stature, the t-black hair hanging disagreeable form of ntenances, the small, ing eyes, and, lastly, t step of these sav-the most sorrowful nent of humanity in er increased by the of their festivity in it. The men placed er in a line, and bealso in a line. The es two or three, took of the fathers round e children did their ion they begin their $-h\acute{a}-ha-h\acute{a}$. It nelodies which Lery ed years ago among eighborhood of Rio

lance were repeated o rows moved slowly triple time. In the the left foot forward, t the first and third a the left foot, and ght; in the following ed the right foot at g on the right side.

mble those observed

In this manner they advanced a little alternately, in short steps. As soon as the song was concluded, they ran back in disorder, as if in flight—first the women with their daughters, and then the men with their sons. After this they placed themselves in the same order as before, and the scene was repeated. A negro, who had lived a long time among the Puris, explained to us the words sung to this dance as a lamentation, the subject of which was, that they had attempted to pluck a flower from a tree, but had fallen down. No interpretation of this melancholy seene could have appeared to us more appropriate than that of the loss of Paradise.

The most curious of all the Guianan dances is that which is called the Maquarri dance, from the implement which forms its principal element. The Maquarri is a whip, and the object of the dance is giving and re-ceiving blows from the maquarri. The form of this whip varies in different districts. The form usually employed, is made of silk grass fibre, bound together so as to form a stiff and clastic whip. The handle is strengthened by being bound strongly with a strip of dark one wound spirally around it, and is or-namented by a tuft of fibres, which hang from the butt. Several tufts of white cotton wool adorn the transition between the handle and the lash, the latter of which tapers grad-ually to a point. The whole whip including the lash, is nearly five feet in length, and is a most formidable instrument of torture, capable of cutting into the bare skin like a knife, and causing the blood to spirt from the wound which it makes. The other form is scarcely so terrible a whip to the eye, though it may inflict quite as much pain when skilfully handled. It is entirely covered with cane, and, as it is swung about, it gives a crackling sound with every curve. The length of this whip is three feet four

The maquarri dance is conducted in the following manner. The young men and boys, decorated with all the fantastic feather work which native art can supply, range themselves in two rows opposite each other, the dancers being all armed with their maquarri whips, which they wave in the air, uttering at the same time cries which are intended to imitate the notes of birds.

Presently two of the dancers from opposite sides challenge each other, leave the ranks, and dance opposite each other in the open space between the ranks. After dancing for a while, one of them stops, and stands firmly on one leg, thrusting the other forward, and remaining perfectly firm and steady. See illustration on page 1280.

His opponent, or partner, whichever he may be called, stoops down, takes deliberate aim at some part of the projecting leg, and then leaping into the air, in order to give force to his stroke, delivers a blow with all his strength. A practised maquarri dancer is

sure to cut deeply into the skin and to draw blood by the stroke; but the receiver does not shrink from the blow, gives no sign of pain, and only smiles contemptuously as he executes the dance. Presently his opponent holds out his leg in turn to be struck, and after a few lashes have been exchanged, they retire to the piwarri vessel, drink some of its contents, and return to their places in the ranks.

The greatest good humor prevails during this strange contest, though when a couple of powerful and experienced dancers have met, they have often scarcely been able to walk from the severity of the blows which they have received. Sometimes, after a hard day's dancing and drinking, when their legs are stiff and sore from the blows which they have received, and their heads are aching from the liquid they have drunk, they declare that they will abandon the dance for ever. But, as soon as their legs get well and their heads are clear again, they forget all their promises, and join in the next maquarri dance with unabated zest.

During one of these dances, which was performed in Mr. Brett's presence, a stout little Warau came to the encampment, when the dance was nearly over, evidently with the idea of getting some piwarri without undergoing the previous salutation of the maquarri whip. The young men at once divined his intention, and quietly passed the word among themselves to frustrate his design. Accordingly, he was challenged in rapid succession by the young men, and subjected to more than ordinary castigation before he obtained any piwarri. However, he bore his punishment manfully, and did his best to look pleasant, although he soon perceived the trap into which he had fallen.

On that occasion the dance was given in honor of a woman who had been buried in the house. A broad plank lay upon her grave, and on it, among other articles, was a bundle of silk grass being the remainder of the material from which the maquarri whips had been made, these articles having somewhat of the sacred character about them. After going through a few ceremonies, two or three men, armed with long knives, dashed in among the dancers, snatched the whips from them, cut off the lashes, and flung them into the grave. The owners of the whips pretended to be very savage at surrendering the whips, leaping, throwing somersaults, and going through all kinds of evolutions, so that it was great matter of surprise that any of them escaped injury.

On another occasion, when the maquarri dance had been got up in honor of the bishop, all the dancers, before they went into the large house, laid their whips on a board which had been placed there expressly for their reception.

With regard to this dance, Mr. Brett was

much struck with the apparent indifference to pain manifested by the natives, and asked them how they could endure such tortures without seeming to feel them. The Indians replied that their insensibility to pain was partly produced by the piwarri, and was partly owing to the presence of the women, who would scoff at any one who showed the least symptom of suffering.

Giving both these reasons their full value, there are two others of much greater impor-tance. One is the natural apathy of the native, who requires a very strong stimulus for exertion. This apathy extends to the nerves of sensation as well as to those of volition, and the real fact is, that a blow which would cause the most horrible agony to a white man is scarcely felt by the native Guianan. The other is the effect of exposure and perfect health of body. All those who have gone into training for any athletic contest will remember how different is the painbearing capacity of the trained and untrained man, the former scarcely seeming to be aware of an injury which would have prostrated him for weeks had he been untrained. Now these natives are always in the state of body to which the civilized athlete occa-sionally brings himself, and the result is, that external injuries have but little effect

Another and a rather picture sque dance is described by Mr. Brett. This is an Arawak dance, and is performed in the following manner:—Twelve young men step forward, and arrange themselves in parallel rows; but jeering expressions."

instead of carrying maquarri whips, they bear siender rods, about twelve feet in length, decorated with strips of silk grass stained red, and having at the tips little gourds with stones in them. They dance backward and forward, striking the ends of their rods against the ground, and keeping time with the measure. From time to time the young women go up to the dancers, seize their arms, and dance with them, and then, as the men clash the rattling ornaments of beetles' wing cases with which their wrists and legs are decorated, the women loose their hold. and run back to their companions like frightened deer.

A Warau dance is described by the same missionary who witnessed the maquarri dance. "It was little more than a measured series of steps, accompanied with stamping, while the persons advanced or receded, sometimes in single rank, sometimes in two ranks facing each other, throwing their right arms over their right-hand neighbor's shoulders, and their left arms round their left-hand neighbor's waist, swaying their bodies to and fro. Occasionally the women would run, and, inserting themselves between the men, join in the dance.

"The effect was somewhat heightened by a monotonous chant sung in unison, and by the clatter of beads and anklets made of hard seeds and the wings of beetles. The dance was intended to represent the antics of a herd of kairounies, or bush hogs, and the chant was a succession of mocking or

PRATERES. THE

SPA TNG WE

DURING their bes headdres foundation thin darl (fig. 2) is fully shad and bein scarlet fe The gen dress is downy fe This spe

The c Arok, an of color, which ch part of t ust on e bands of men are The re

portions made of This prin African t leather, a of Polyne example Tropical instead or of this ap depth one feathers, in the n

aquarri whips, they welve feet in length, f silk grass stained ps little gourds with lance backward and ends of their rods keeping time with ne to time the young dancers, seize their em, and then, as the rnaments of beetles' heir wrists and legs en loose their hold. ir companions like

scribed by the same ssed the maquarri more than a measmpanied with stampdvanced or receded, k, sometimes in two er, throwing their ght-hand neighbor's t arms round their aist, swaying their sionally the women ing themselves behe dance.

what heightened by g in unison, and by nd anklets made of gs of beetles. The epresent the antics , or bush hogs, and sion of mocking or

CHAPTER CXXXIII.

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA - Continued.

DRESS - AMUSEMENTS.

FRATHER HEADDRESSES AND THEIR STRUCTURE - THE FEATHER APRON - DRESS OF THE WOMEN -THE KIMISA AND QUEYU - MODE OF MANUFACTURE - HARMONY OF COLOR - MR. BAINES' THEORY -A SINGULAR PURCHASE - THE SAPURU OR GARTER OF THE CARIBS - PAINT AND TATTOO - THE SPATHE CAP AND APRON - PETS AMONG THE NATIVES - SKILL IN FISHING AND CAYMAN CATCH-ING-MR. WATERTON'S ADVENTURE-THE INGENIOUS HOOK-GAMES AND SPORTS-SHIELD WEESTLING - CANOE MAKING - NAVIGATING THE FALLS.

DURING their dances the natives display all their best feather ornaments. Two of their best feather ornaments. Two of their fastened on the string that binds the apron on the waist by doubling over the quill, and foundation of these is a circlet made of thin dark cane, cut into strips. One of them (fig. 2) is made of parrots' feathers, beautifully shaded from dark blue to brilliant green, and being topped with three long straight scarlet feathers from the tail of the macaw. The general effect of this beautiful headdress is heightened by a row of white downy feathers by which it is surrounded. This specimen was made by the Macoushie

The other headdress (fig. 1) is called Arok, and, though very handsome in point of color, does not possess the beauty of form which characterizes the other. The greater part of the headdress is bright yellow, but just on either side of the top are two broad bands of scarlet. The feathers in this speci-men are arranged four deep.

The reader may remember that, in many made of thongs depending from the waist. This principle is carried out by many of the African tribes, who use thongs or strips of parts, and carefully put away until the next leather, as well as in several of the islands white visitor comes. of Polynesia, where vegetable materials are

tying the doubled end over the string.

It is on such occasions as the Arawak and Warau dances, of which a description was given in the last chapter, that the women produce their best apparel. Generally, as long as none but their own people are in sight, they are not particular about wearing clothes of any kind, but since they have mixed with the white neonle they have have mixed with the white people they have learned to be more fastidious. When a white stranger comes to a native settlement, the men and women are mostly independent of clothing, but the latter, as soon as they distinguish the color of their visitor, run off to their homes to put on their dresses.

Those settlements that are tolerably near civilization usually employ the "kimisa," i.e. a sort of petticoat passing round the waist, and suspended by a string over one shoulder. These dresses are considered merely portions of the uncivilized world, aprons are a concession to the peculiar notions of the white man, and, though worn while he is present, are taken off as soon as he de-

we have at fig. 4, on page 1249, an the little apron called the queyu, or keu. Tropical America, feathers being employed instead of skin, grass, or bark. The length simply of cotton, decorated with shells, because instead of skin, grass, or bark. The length simply of cotton, decorated with shells, because in the state of the same feathers and similar or naments. Several of this apron is one foot nine inches, and its depth one foot three inches. It is made of feathers, blue at the base and tip, and scarlet tion. The best and most elaborate of them in the middle. As may be seen by the is that which is represented at fig. 5, on

(1288)

eight inches in length and four in depth, in-cluding the large beads that serve as a fringe. It is made entirely of "seed" beads, fringe. It is made entirely of "seed" beads, threaded on silk grass in such a manner that the thread is scarcely visible. The principle on which the maker has gone is, that she has woven a sort of framework of perpendicular threads or strings, set exactly wide enough apart to allow two beads to be

"diamond," as it is more familiarly termed. First, three diamonds have been worked in yellow beads, a line of green beads running down the centre of the yellow, and a rather broad line of carmine beads passing along the inner and outer edge of each diamond.

The dark pattern in the centre of each diamond is made of blue beads, and the square patterns in each angle of the diamond are made of chalk-white beads with a centre of vermilion. The entire apron is edged with the chalk-white beads. The fringe at the bottom is made of a treble row of much larger beads, one of which is repre-sented of the full size, and at either end of each bead is a small scarlet cylinder, like coral.

On looking at the form of the apron, the reader will notice that it is much wider at the bottom than at the top. This is intentional. The thick perpendicular strings only extend as far as the upper corners, the others being thin threads. The conse-quence of this structure is, that when the apron is held up by two loops, the middle of interval between it is nearly flat, while the two ends fall into of the framework.

page 1240, and was presented to me by H. is invariably displayed in the aprens. He Bernau, Esq.

This beautiful specimen of native art is tives unconsciously imitated the coloring on the wings of the gorgeous butterflies which are so plentiful in that land, and, from spec-imens in his collection, showed that the very collocation of hus which produced harmony of coloring in the bead apron was also to be found in the wings of Guianan butterflies. Perhaps the spiendid plumage of many Guianan birds may also afford hints for the native artist.

wide enough apart to allow two beads to be placed between them. By this plan she has regulated the arrangement of the beads requisite to form the pattern, while the beads themselves are strung upon fine silk-grass threads that run at right angles to the others.

The colors are blue, yellow, green, and carmine, in transparent beads, and chalk-white and vermillon in opaque beads, not counting the larger beads used to form the fringe. The principle of the pattern is that of the square standing on an angle, or the "diamond" as it is more familiarly termed. In shape the two aprons are identical, but In shape the two aprons are identical, but the latter is very much smaller in size, being only four inches in length and two in

depth.

The third specimen of the queyu in my collection is much larger, being made of large beads, and really may take rank as an article of dress and not a mere ornament. It is thirteen inches in length by nine in depth, and, though not possessing the brillant colors of the two queyus which have been described, is yet a handsome article of costume. The white beads of which the costume. The white beads of which the groundwork of this apron is made are as large as ordinary peas, so that the whole work is of a much coarser character than that which distinguishes the two other aprons. Those which form the pattern are deep garnet color, so dark that except in particular lights it looks black. The woman who made this apron has ingeniously selected the heads of such a size that two of lected the beads of such a size that two of the garnet beads occupy exactly the same space as one white bead, and exactly fill the interval between the perpendicular strings

heavy folds.

There is a positively startling boldness about the coloring of this apron; such, for example, as the placing green-beads next to the yellow. Still, the whole arrangement of the colors is so admirable, that in spite of the brightest possible blue, yellow, carmine, and vermillion, they are so well harmonized, that in no case does one hue seem to predominate over another, or to interfere with another.

The most remarkable point in this apron is the pattern, which is found on old patterns, and which has come into modern use under the name of the Greek fret. I have seen several queyus of different sizes and colors made with this pattern. The lower edge of the apron is made of six rows of topaz colored beads, as large as the white beads, and it is further decorated with a fringe made of tufts of cotton strings, one such tuft being fixed to every alternate bead.

As may be imagined from the description,

Some few years ago, I was discussing the coloring of this very apron with Mr. T. Baines, the celebrated traveller, and asking the beads employed in making the apron are to the had any theory by which he could account for the artistic harmony of color which case the owner has good reason for not

wearing Owing are mac beauties spectato One o friend o

they ar than dr

the civil wearing stopped the apro chase it. him. H mon pr flags of he offere queyu. The W

temptati handker example new idea then and to the pu the kercl and then of the be The st in Guian or garter

belle, bot While th tan is b another a ornamen with a re ments of form of th mere spi each end. There photogra it is scar more hid

beauty, o

the sapur of extens as it can, obliged t tively nar If the r curate id ankle to t him take inches in

middle of let him w cheese wi with a nur a very go which is thought that the na-tated the coloring on ous butterflies which land, and, from spec-showed that the very ch produced harmony apron was also to be Guianan butterflies, plumage of many o afford hints for the

y collection is made d on the same princilifferent pattern. In s evidently possessed e chalk-white beads, of the red, blue, and s accordingly made of the white beads, wo patterns, of red, and much like those e of the diamond in been just described. ns are identical, but smaller in size, being length and two in

of the queyu in my ger, being made of may take rank as an t a mere ornament. I length by nine in possessing the bril-queyus which have handsome article of beads of which the pron is made are as arser character than hes the two other orm the pattern are dark that except in black. The woman has ingeniously sech a size that two of py exactly the same i, and exactly fill the erpendicular strings

point in this apron patterns, and which use under the name have seen several es and colors made lower edge of the hite beads, and it is a fringe made of one such tuft being bead.

from the description, naking the apron are le article weighing half, so that in this good reason for not wearing it except on occasions of ceremony.
Owing to the material of which these aprons are made, none of them put forth their full beauties unless they are held between the spectator and the light.

One of these aprons was procured by a friend of mine in a manner which shows that they are considered rather as ornaments than dress. He happened to be in one of the civilized coast towns, and met a woman wearing a queyu of remarkable beauty. He stopped her and tried to induce her to sell the apron; but all his exertions were in vain, and for no amount of money could he pur-chase it. At last a brilliant thought struck him. He had in his pocket one of the com-mon printed handkerchiefs containing the flags of all nations, and, as a last resource, he offered the kerchief in exchange for the

The woman could not withstand such a temptation. The gorgeous patterns on the handkerchief were far superior to the best examples of native art, and might afford new ideas for the future. Accordingly, she then and there took off the queyu, hauded it to the purchaser, and received in exchange the kerchief, which she tied round her head, and then pursued her walk in all the dignity of the best-dressed woman in Guiana.

The strangest article of dress to be found in Guiana is undoubtedly the Carib sapuru, or garter, an ornament which can compete with the compressed foot of a Chinese beauty, or the wasp-like waist of an European belle, both for inconvenience and ugliness. While the Carib girl is young a band of rat-tan is bound tightly under the knee and another above the ankle. To give them an ornamental appearance they are stained with a red dye, but in fact they are instruments of torture, which entirely alter the form of the human limb and convert it into a mere spindle thicker in the middle than at

so it can, and the consequence is, that it is obliged to develop itself in the compara-tively narrow space between the two band-

If the reader should wish to obtain an accurate idea of a Carib belle's leg from the ankle to the knee, he can easily do so. Let him take an ordinary broomstick, eighteen inches in length, and push it through the middle of a rather small Stiltou cheese; then let him wrap the stick above and below the cheese with a red bandage, adorn the cheese with a number of blue spots, and he will have a very good idea of the extraordinary shape which is assumed by the leg of a Carib fe-

The women are inordinately fond of the sapuru, and are as scornful respecting those of their own sex who do not wear it as are the Chinese women respecting those who

the Chinese women respecting those will do not wear the "golden Illies."

These women have a variety of orna-ments, but little clothes. Necklaces of va-rious kinds are highly esteemed among them, especially when they are made of the teeth of the jaguar and alligator, inasmuch as such ornaments indicate the prowess of their admirers. The appearance of a Carib woman in full dress is not very attractive. These people are short, thick necked, and awkward looking, and in those respects the women are much worse than the men. Of the ten portraits there is not one that can bear comparison with the female inhabitants of Southern Africa, such as have been figured in the first part of this work. Their short necks are cumbered with row upon row of necklaces, their only dress is a narrow strip of blue cloth, and they have done their best to make themselves entirely hideous by the abominable sapuru.

Then, by way of adding to their attractions, they perforate the under lip, and wear in it one or several pins, the heads being within the mouth and the points projecting outward. Some of the women smear their whole bodies and limbs with the annatto dye, which gives them the appearance as if blood were exuding from every pore; and the reader may well imagine the appearance of such women, with pins sticking through their lips, their bosoms covered with row upon row of necklaces, their reddened limbs variegated with blue spots, and their legs swollen and distorted by the effects of the

sapuru.

The Carib men wear an article of dress which is almost exactly like that which is worn by the inhabitants of the Nicobar Islands. It is a narrow but very long scarf, woven from cotton fibre. After passing round the waist and between the legs, it is tucked into the givide and then is so long. There are now before me a number of photographic portraits of Carib women, and it is scarcely possible to imagine anything more hideously ludicrous than the effect of the sapuru. Deprived of its natural powers of extension, the limb has to expand itself sait on and the asset of extension, the limb has to expand itself sait on and the corresquence is that it is similar arrangements. similar ornaments.

Of all the Guianan tribes, the Waraus are least careful respecting dress. Even the women wear nothing but a triangular piece of bark, or a similarly shaped article of apparel formed from the spathe of the young palm leaf. This spathe is also used for a head dress by several tribes. In order to understand the structure of this article the reader must remember that the palm tree is an endogenous plant, and that all the leaves spring from a central shoet. From this same spot there also starts a conical shoot, which contains the flowers. In its earlier stages of development this shoot is covered with a membranous envelope, called a

spathe, which bursts in order to allow the unclosed flower-stalk to develop itself. Besinclosed nower-state to the companient, the fore it has attained its full development, the spathe is drawn off the flower-stalk and soaked in water for a time, until all the green substance becomes decomposed, and can be washed away from the fibrous framework. The well-known skeleton leaves are

work. The woll-known skeleton leaves are propered in exactly the same manner.

When decomposition is complete, the spathe is carefully washed in running water, so that the whole of the green matter is removed and nothing is left but the tougher fibres. These are tangled together in a very remarkable manner, so as to be very elastic, and to allow the fabric to be stretched in different directions without causing any interstices to appear between them.

In this state the spathe is conical, of a yel-

low-brown color, and extraordinarily light. A specimen in my possession, though measuring twenty-seven inches in length, weighs

barely half an ounce.

When the native wishes to convert the when the native wistes to convert the spathe into a cap, he doubles the open end twice, and then makes a deep fold within eight or nine inches of the tip, thus causing it to assume the shape which is seen in the illustration on page 1240. Slight as is the texture of this odd cap, it forms an excellent defence account the second of the control of the second of the defence against the rays of the sun, which is the only object of the headdress in such

a climate.

The reader will see that the shape, as well as the lightness of the spathe, conduces to its usefulness as an apron as well as a headdress. Such at all events is the only dress for which the Waraus care; and whether on account of the perpetual exposure of their skins, or whether from other causes, the short, stout, sturdy Waraus are much darker than the other tribes—so dark, indeed that they have hear said to approach. indeed, that they have been said to approach the blackness of the negro. Mr. Brett thinks their want of cleanliness is one cause of this deeper hue. They are the best native laborers that can be found, and, when they can be induced to shake off their national apathy and fairly begin work, they will do more than any other tribe. Neither do they want so much wages as are required by the other natives, preferring liberal ra-tions of rum to actual wages.

Living as do the Guianan natives in the

forests, amid all the wealth of animal life which is found in them, and depending chiefly for their subsistence on their success in hunting, they attain an intimate knowledge of the habits of the various animals, and display considerable skill in taking them. They capture birds, monkeys, and other creatures, not for the sake of killing them, but of domesticating them as pets, and almost every hut has a parrot or two, a monkey, or some such pet attached to it.

The women are especially fond of the

their heads, so that at a little distance they look as if they were wearing a red or a black headdress, according to the species and color of the monkey. They carry their fondness for their animals to such an extent that they treat them in every respect as if they were their children, even allowing them to suck at their breasts in turn with their own offspring.

Dreading the venomous snakes most thoroughly, they have no fear of the non-pol-sonous kinds, and capture them without difficulty. Mr. Brett saw one of them catch a young coulacanara snake by dropping a a young countains a same of a forked noose over its head by means of a forked stick, and then hauling it out and allowing it to coll round his arm. Although a very young specimen, only five feet or so in length, the reptile was so strong that the man was soon obliged to ask some one to release his arm.

Sometimes this snake grows to a great length, and, as it is extremely thick-bodied, is a very dangerous reptile to deal with. Mr. Waterton succeeded in taking a coulscanara fourteen feet long, after a fiere struggle, which is amusingly told in his "Wanderings." I have seen the skin of this snake in the collection which then adorned Walton Hall.

The skill of these natives is well shown by their success in capturing a cayman with a hook. Mr. Waterton had tried to catch the reptile with a shark hook, but his efforts were unavailing, the reptile declining to swallow the bait, and at last contriving to get it off the hook, though it was tied on with string. After more than one failure, he showed the hook to a native, who shook his head at it, and said that it would not answer the purpose, but that he would make a hook that would hold the cayman.

Accordingly, on the following day he re-turned with a very remarkable hook. It consisted of four pieces of hard wood about a foot in length, curved, and sharpened at the ends, which were slightly barbed. These barbs, if we may so call them, were tied back to back round the lower end of a rope, a knot in the rope preventing it from dropping through the barbs, which were forced ping through the parus, which is four pegs to diverge from each other by four pegs to diverge from each other by four pegs driven between them and the rope. The so-called hook, indeed, was very like a fourpronged Fijian spear, supposing the shaft to be cut off below the prongs, a hole bored through the centre of the cut shaft, and a rope passed through the hole and knotted below the prongs. It is evident that if such an instrument as this were taken into a cay-man's throat, the diverging prongs would prevent it from coming out again, and as long as they remained unbroken, so long would the cayman be held.

This curious hook was then taken to the little monkeys, and generally carry them on river side, and baited with an agouti. The a little distance they wearing a red or a ording to the species cay. They carry their mais to such an extent in every respect as if in every respect as if it is not a transition of the carry of the carry in the carry of the ca

oous snakes most thoro fear of the non-polapture them without
saw one of them catch
snake by dropping a
by means of a forked
g it out and allowing
rm. Although a very
y five feet or so in
se so strong that the
i to ask some one to

ake grows to a great ktremely thick-bodied, reptile to deal with ded in taking a coulsiong, after a fierce musingly told in his we seen the skin of ollection which then

natives is well shown turing a cayman with on had tried to catch he hook, but his efforts reptile declining to ad at last contriving to, though it was tied for more than one he hook to a native, at it, and said that the purpose, but that k that would hold the

following day he reremarkable hook. It is of hard wood about and, sharpened at alightly barbed. These call them, were tied a lower end of a rope, venting it from drop-os, which were forced other by four pegs and the rope. The supposing the shaft to prongs, a hole bored the cut shaft, and a he hole and knotted is evident that if such were taken into a cay-erging prongs would ag out again, and as d unbroken, so long held.

neld.
as then taken to the
with an agouti. The



(1.) THE MAQUARRI DANCE. (See page 1253.)



(2.) SHIELD WRESTLING OF THE WARAUS. (See page 1201.)

(1200)

end of the barb from the driven in the empty several bit the capus at with water, ar while the caused the into the the water

the water
How th
water, an
its should
fore-paws
matter of
disbelieve
small amo
true one,
died away
men, who
lad, was,
one of m
word of th

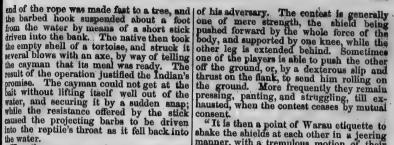
As mig apathy an have but fits and strength wing to the bracing circumstant, who as the store trial of st

as the storm this game "There trial of st at their of the antage shield, (see of the light equal lengual lengual lengual lengual lengual three what less outward. "The fr

"The frevarious colvice, according to generally colored tassers made of quarri whils has altance,"

ance.

"Each che shield firml rious feints nent off his aprings for



the water.

How the cayman was dragged out of the water, and how Mr. Waterton jumped upon its shoulders, and disabled it by seizing its fore-naws and twisting them on its back, is matter of history. The tale was generally disbelieved at the time, and gave wise to no small amount of banter; but it is a perfectly true one, and the objections to it have long died away. Indeed, one of Mr. Waterton's men, who was then little more than a mere led was, as an old man in the service of lad, was, as an old man, in the service of one of my friends, and corroborated every word of the story.

As might be inferred from the natural spathy and indolence of the natives, they have but few games. They only work by fits and starts, and spend a very large proportion of their time in their haimnocks, caring little for those contests of skill and strength which are so absorbingly interesting to the inhabitions of scalar and more ing to the inhabitants of cooler and more bracing climates. There is, however, one such game which is played by the Warass, who have already been mentioned as the stoutest and strongest of the tribes. This game is well described by Mr. Brett:—

"There is also a kind of wrestling, or trial of strength, practised by the Waraus at their drinking-bouts, in which each of the antagonists is furnished with a sort of the antagonists is furnished with a sort of shield, (see illustration on page 1260), made of the light branches of the its, cut into squal lengths, and firmly lashed across a frame three or four feet in height, some-what less in width, and slightly bending

"The front of each shield is painted in various colors, and with some peculiar de-vice, according to the fancy of the owner. From its upper edge arise elastic stems, generally three in number, adorned with colored tassels, and surmounted with streamers made of the same material as the maquarri whips, and not much unlike them. It has altogether a picturesque appear-

"Each champion grasps the edges of his shield firmly with both hands, and, after va-dous feints and grimaces to throw his oppo-

pushed forward by the whole force of the body, and supported by one knee, while the other leg is extended behind. Sometimes one of the players is able to push the other off the ground, or, by a dexterous slip and thrust on the flank, to send him rolling on the ground. More frequently they remain pressing, panting, and struggling, till exhausted, when the contest ceases by mutual consent. consent.

"It is then a point of Warau etiquette to shake the shields at each other in a jeering manner, with a tremulous motion of their elastic ornaments, and to utter a very peculiar and ridiculously defying sound, something like the whinnying of a young horse. This is generally followed by a hearty, good-humored laugh, in which the bystanders ichin Australia and the control of join. Another couple then step forward to

The its palm, of which the Warau shields are made, will be briefly described when we come to that singular branch of the Warau tribe which lives in dwellings raised above the surface of the water. It has already been mentioned that the Waraus are celebrated for the excellence of their canoes. They are universally recognized as the chief canoe builders of the whole country, and to them the other tribes resort from considerable distances. Some of these cances are large enough to hold fifty men, so that very considerable skill is needed in building them without the instruments and measures by which our own boat builders ensure the

regularity of their craft.

There are several forms of these canoes. The most important is that which has just been mentioned. It is hollowed out of the trunk of a tree, and is forced into the proper shape partly by means of fire, and partly by wedges and cross planks. The largest of the canoes have the sides made higher by a narrow plank of soft wood, which is laced upon the gunwale, and the seam well caulked. The canoe is alike at both ends, the stem and stern being pointed, curved, and rising well out of the water. There is no keel, and it draws but a few inches of water. This formation would be very awkward in our own rivers; but in those of Guiana, such as the Essequibo, there are so many falls and rapids, that the canoe must be especially adapted for them. This kind of canoe is called a curial, or corial.

The perils of the rapids have been well told by Mr. Brett: — "Advantage is taken of the eddies which are found at the base of the huge rocks that interrupt the stream. The Indians pass from rock to rock by wading, leaping, or swimming, and by means of a hawser haul the boat through the rushing rious feints and grimaces to throw his opponent off his guard, a clash is heard, as one steersman meantime keeping his seat, and springs forward, and his shield strikes that

large paddle to guide in some degree her course. The waters dashing and foaming amidst the surreunding rocks render this operation as exciting as it is difficult. Still more exciting and dangerous is the task of descending these rapids. The safety of all then depends on the perfect steadiness of those in the cance, and on the bowman and steersman acting in concert and with instant decision.

"The cance is kept in the very centre of the current, one of her best hands kneeling, with quick eye and ready paddle, in the bow, and the rest of the men exerting their strength to give her headway. Darting swiftly along, she arrives at the edge of the fall, and, pointing downward, shoots into the surf below it, dashing it up on either side, and leaving her crew alone visible. If all be well, rising above the fall, she obeys the guiding paddles in stem and stern, and dances over the tumbling waves, while her excited crew with a triumphant cry exult at their success."

Sometimes even the skill of the native fails to overcome all the difficulties, and the canoe is upset, the crew barely escaping with their lives. It was in descending one of these falls that Mr. Waterton's canoe was upset, and flung into the Essequibo the precious store of materials from which the wourali is made.

The simplest kind of boat, called by the colonists a "woodskin," is nothing more than the flexible bark of the purple-hear trees stripped off in one piece, forced open in the middle, tied together at the ends, and so left until dry. In order to prevent these bark canoes from taking in water at the ends, a large lump of clay is pressed firmly into the end, so as to make a barrier against the water. This mode of caulking is necessarily but temporary, and the "back-dam," as it is called by the colonists, is sure to be washed away sooner or later, according to the state of the river. The reader will remember that a similar appliance of clay is found among the Australian savages.

BELIEF IN - TH DRIV

> OF T WARA

WE will

anan tribe ligion.

As far a as they we with those the Guian Deity, and ties, mostli to be caus hahu, and row.

As it is

should be

feared, a b are set ap tween the world. In the task, t through si the charge the art. Tary hut, a several day his body a Yauhahu. For this boiled, and ant to priof this dos:

ened body, state of fasupposed to commission undergoes as dead, an view. he skill of the natives the difficulties, and the crew barely escaping was in descending one r. Waterton's cance was the Essequibo the pre-erials from which the

l of boat, called by the kin," is nothing more one piece, forced open ogether at the ends, and order to prevent these ing in water at the ends. s pressed firmly into the a barrier against the f caulking is necessarily the "back-dam," m it is ts, is sure to be washed , according to the state der will remember that of clay is found among

CHAPTER CXXXIV.

7 11 130

the second of th

THE TRIBES OF GUIANA - Concluded.

RELIGION -BURIAL

BLEF IN ONE CHIEF DEITY AND MANY DENI-GODS -- THE SORGERER OR PIAI-MAN, AND HIS TRAINING -THE SACRED RATTLE - DUTIES AND PRIVILEGES OF THE PIAI-MAN - CURING DISEASE AND DRIVING OUT THE EVIL SPIRIT -- MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS -- THE WATER-MAMMA -- THE ORIGIN OF THE CARIB BACE -- A WILD LEGEND -- DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD -- THE LAKE-DWELLING WARAUS -- THE ITÁ PALM AND ITS USES -- AN ABRIAL HOUSE -- THE LAKE-DWELLERS OF

WE will conclude this history of the Guiman tribes with a few remarks on their re-

:

As far as is known of their religious ideas as they were before they became intermixed with those taught to them by the white man, the Guianan natives believe in one supreme Deity, and a vast number of inferior divinities, mostly of the evil kind. All pain is said to be caused by an evil spirit called Yauhahu, and is said to be the Yauhahu's ar-

As it is necessary that these evil beings should be propitiated when any calamity is feared, a body of sorcerers, called plai men, are set apart in order to communicate beween their fellow men and the unseen world. In order to qualify themselves for the task, the piai men are obliged to go through sundry strange ceremonies, under the charge of some venerable professor of the art. The neophyte is taken to a soli-tary hut, and there compelled to fast for several days before his spirit is fit to leave his body and receive the commands of the

For this purpose a quantity of tobacco is boiled, and the infusion drunk by the aspirant to priestly honors. The natural effect of this dose is to exhaust the already weakstate of fainting, during which his spirit is supposed to leave his body, and receive a commission from the Yauhahu. Indeed, he undergoes a civil death, he is proclaimed as dead, and his corpse is exposed to public view.

Chiefly is he needed in times of sickness, when, by virtue of his rattle, he is supposed to be capable of driving away the evil spirit whose curse has caused the malady. When

He recovers very slowly from the terrible state of prostration into which he has been thrown, and when at last he leaves his hut, he is worn almost to a skeleton. As a mark of office, he is solemnly presented with the marakka, or sacred rattle. This is nothing more than a hollow calabash, some eight inches in diameter, having a stick run through it, and a few white stones within it, through it, and a few white stones within it, so as to make a rattling sound when shaken. The calabash is painted red, and a few feathers are generally hung to the sticks. It is two feet in length, and adorned with scarlet and blue feathers. These rattles are held in the greatest veneration by the uninitiated, who will not venture to touch them, and are chary even of entering a house in which a marakka is hung. In consequence of the value set upon these instruments, the natives can scarcely be induced to part with them, and the few which have been sent to England have in nearly every case been procured from sorcerers who have been converted to Christianity, and, as a proof of their sincerity, have given up the emblems of their order.

The piai man is called in on almost every occasion of life, so that his magic rattle has but little rest. He is present at every piwarri feast, when he decorates himself with feather plumes, the skins of snakes, and similar dinaments, and shakes his rattle over the bowl before the contents are drunk.

a piai man is called to a case of sickness, he always, malicious, and, when she is in a bad sends all the women away, and even keeps the men at a respectful distance. His exercises then begin, and are continued for hours, chants to the evil spirit being accompanied with sundry rattlings, until in the depth of night the Yauhahu manifests himself to the sorcerer, and tells him how to extract the "arrow" which he has aimed at the sick man. Of course it is incumbent on the sorcerer to produce the arrow in ques-tion, which is done by sucking the affected part, and producing from the mouth a little spot until the waters subsided. pebble, a bird's claw, a snake's fang, or some-thing of the kind.

If the reader will refer to illustration No. 5, on page 1265, he will see a very complicated and rather elegantly formed rattle. The hollow gourd forms part of the rattle, but it is very small, and depends from . series of three hoops, which are strung with beetle wings.

The noise which this simple instrument which it had fallen. Looking down through makes is really wonderful, and the slightest movement of the string by which it is held sets all the wings clattering against each other. This interesting object was brought from Guiana by H. Bernau, Esq.

Even accepting the maraka and the beetle wing rattle as musical instruments, we find that the Guiana natives have but little variety in music. The only instruments which are really worthy of the name are pipes or flutes made of different materials. One of these instruments is in my collection, It is made of the ever-useful bamboo, and includes one internode, i. c. the space between two knots.

The mouthpiece is narrow and oblong, and the maker has possessed sufficient knowledge of sound to cut out a large scooped piece from the middle of the instrument. owner seems to have prized this flute exceedingly, as he has covered it with elaborate patterns. It is blown like our own flute. and the sound which it produces is loud, full, but, if musical, is melancholy also, and much resembles the wailing sound produced by blowing into the mouth of a soda-water bottle. The length of this flute is fourteen inches.

The natives also make a flute of the leg bone of the jaguar, which is very much prized, the spoils of the jaguar having a very high value among them. One of these is shown on the next page. The Caribs once used human bones for this purpose, but at the present time are content with jaguar bones, as equally indicative of courage and skill.

To return to the superstition of the Guianan natives. One of the beings which they most dread is the water manna, or Orelus. This is an unfortunate being who the spell was broken, and the spirit of the inhabits the water, and occasionally shows lake pounced on the offending maiden and herself, though in different forms, sometimes carried her off. After a while he allowed even assuming that of the horse, but often her to rejoin her friends, but the indignation taking that of the manati. The Orehu is a of her brothers was very great when they female spirit, and is generally, though not found that their sister was about to become

temper, is apt to rise close to the canoes, and drag them and their crews under water.

The legends told by the various tribes respecting their origin are very curious, as showing a great similarity with those of other parts of the world with whom there could have been no geographical connexion. For example, the legend of the earth submerged under water, through the disobe-dience of some of its inhabitants, and re-peopled by a few who were placed in a safe

One of the strangest of their legends is told by Mr. Brett. It concerns the origin of the Warau and Carib tribes.

Originally the Waraus lived in a country above the sky, where they had all they could the aperture, he saw another world opened out beneath him, and was seized with curiosity to visit it. Accordingly, he made himself a sort of ladder of rattan, which grows abundantly in the upper world where he lived, and descended to the world below.

Here he remained for some time, revelling on the flesh of animals hitherto unknown to him. After a while, he climbed up the ladder with great trouble, and told his friends the wonders which he had seen. Struck with surprise at his narrative, and eager to partake of the luxuries which he described, the whole of his friends determined on paying a visit to these wondrous regions. Accordingly, they descended the ladder in safety, except the last of their number, a very fat man, who, in trying to squeeze himself through the aperture, became fixed in it, and could not escape, thus shutting of all communication between the two worlds.

Nothing was left for them but to make the best of a bad business, and first of all to beseech the Great Spirit to send them some water. He listened to their entreaties, created the Essequibo, the Demerara, and other rivers, and made for the special use of the Waraus a small lake of the purest water, of which they were to drink, but in which they were forbidden to bathe.

Now it happened that there was a Warau family of four brothers and two sisters, the latter beautiful, but wilful maidens. They rebelled against the prohibition, plunged into the lake, swam to a pole that was planted in its midst, and shook it. The presiding genius of the lake was a male spirit, who was kept prisoner as long as the pole was untouched, but as soon as it was shaken

and, when she is in a bad se close to the canoes, and r crews under water. Ly the various tribes re-

gin are very curious, as similarity with those of world with whom there geographical connexion egend of the earth subter, through the disobe-its inhabitants, and re-ho were placed in a safe rs subsided.

ngest of their legends is It concerns the origin

Carib tribes. araus lived in a country

re they had all they could young hunter shot an and when he came to Looking down through w another world opened nd was seized with curi-Accordingly, he made ler of rattan, which grows upper world where he d to the world below.

ed for some time, revel-

nimals hitherto unknown hile, he climbed up the trouble, and told his rs which he had seen se at his narrative, and f the luxuries which he le of his friends deter-visit to these wondrous gly, they descended the ept the last of their numwho, in trying to squeeze aperture, became fixed escape, thus shutting off between the two worlds. for them but to make usiness, and first of all to Spirit to send them some I to their entreaties, creo, the Demerara, and ade for the special use of lake of the purest water, e to drink, but in which

that there was a Warau hers and two sisters, the t wilful maidens. They ne prohibition, plunged am to a pole that was , and shook it. The pre-e lake was a male spirit, oner as long as the pole as soon as it was shaken en, and the spirit of the ne offending maiden and fter a while he allowed ends, but the indignation as very great when they ster was about to become

n to bathe.



(See page 1264.)

(See page 1282.)

(See page 1264.)

(1265)

a mother child who actly like allowed Thoug girl could went off born, but body wen parts we The motion of the could be c ance of I woods as covered with thei attention grew to held a co it, transfi to make a "The lected the kept con and guar and guar long water The vege show sign arose an l rible appe liant red, hand, and stant batt great fath with com wrongs si Neither I race whon fore him. like deer, women as the father himself. himself.
happy Wa
swampy si
those please
had occup
heaven."
The Wa
with regar is worthy of it attribute men to a W of Aboré. very ill-co. Wowta, wh frog, but w. for the pur little boy c woman she Aboré's mo the child use alone v stretched hours. hours he g done in sev pudiated hi

a mother, and they determined to kill the child when it was born. However, it was exactly like any other Warau child, and so they

allowed it to live.

allowed it to live.

Though living among her own friends, the girl could not forget her strange lover, and went off again to him. A second child was born, but this time the upper parts of the body were those of a child, and the lower parts were developed into a water snake. The mother, though terrified at the appearance of her offenning carried it off into the ance of her offspring, carried it off into the woods and cherished it, but it was dis-covered by her brothers, who pierced it with their arrows, and left it for dead. Her attention, however, restored it to life, and it grew to a formidable size. The brothers held a consultation, and at last surrounded it, transfixed it with showers of arrows, and, to make sure of its death cut it to pieces.

"The unhappy Korobona carefully col-lected the remains into a heap, which she kept continually covered with fresh leaves, and guarded with tender assiduity. After long watching, her patience was rewarded. The vegetable covering began to heave and show signs of life. From it there slowly arose an Indian warrior of majestic and terrible appearance. His color was of a brilliant red, he held bow and arrows in his hand, and was otherwise equipped for in-

stant battle.

"That warrior was the first CARIB, the great father of a powerful race. He forth-with commenced the task of revenge for the race whom they summoned, could stand before him. He drove them hither and thither like deer, took possession of such of their women as pleased him, and by them became the father of brave and terrible warriors like himself. From their presence the un-happy Waraus retired, till they reached the swampy shores of the Atlantic, forsaking those pleasant hunting grounds which they had occupied on their first descent from

The Waraus are wonderfully inventive with regard to legends; and have one which is worthy of notice, if only for the fact that it attributes all the learning of the white men to a Warau origin. This is the legend of Aboré. "Once upon a time," there was a very ill-conditioned female spirit, named Wowts, who usually preferred the form of a frog, but who changed herself into a woman for the purpose of stealing a very beautiful little boy called Aboré. In the form of a woman she obtained access to the house of Aboré's mother, whom she induced to leave the child under her care. No sooner was the alone with Aboré than she pulled and pudiated him on her return.

As he grew to manhood, Aboré became the slave of his captor, whom he thought to be his mother, until he was undeceived by a friendly spirit who met him in the forest. friendly spirit who met him in the forest. After trying several plans for escape, and failing in them all, he hit upon the design of making a cance of wax. He was aided in this task by the fondness of Wowta for honey, in search of which the unfortunate Aboré passed nearly the whole of his time. Wowta received the combs with croaks of delight, and as she threw them away after eating the honey. Aboré laid the wax aside. cating the honey, Aboré laid the wax aside, until he had enough for a canoe. As soon as he had collected a sufficiency

of wax, Aboré called his mistress to look at a hollow tree filled with bee-comb. She crept into the tree to regale herself on the honey, and was imprisoned by the crafty Abore, who fastened up the aperture so that the sorceress could not escape, loaded his canoe with provisions, and set off for a land of refuge. He sailed far away until he came white, naked, uncducated, and utterly bar-barous. He taught them the elements of civilization, showed them how to forge iron, and initiated them into the arts and sciences. for which the white man was now so distinguished.

In that far land he still lives, and, remembering the wants of his fellow countrymen, he continually sends them shiploads of the things which they most need. But in conse-quence of the bad faith of those to whom they wrongs suffered in his former existence. Neither his uncles, nor the whole Warau to pay for everything that he sends. The moral which is derived from this legend is, that all the white men who visit the Waraus ought to make up for the dishonesty of their countrymen, and give them as many beads,

knives, and guns as they can procure. When Mr. Brett first heard this tale, he thought that it was simply an ingenious invention framed for the purpose of unlimited begging, especially as the narrator asked for a shirt as soon as he had finished the story, and then proceeded to request a whole series of other articles. He found, however, by questioning different natives, that the legend was really a national one, and not a mere invention of an ingenious native.

There is evidently a distinction to be drawn between the two portions of the legend. The first part, containing the adventures of Aboré, is evidently ancient, while the second part is as evidently modern, and has been introduced since the coming of white

men into Guiana.

In the disposal of the dead there is some little variation. The mode which was most prevalent before the missionaries introduced Christian burial among them was as follows: hours he grew as much as he would have done in several years, so that his mother required him on her return. and other voracious fish. If the dead man

were a person of distinction, the skeleton | the wet season is forty or fifty feet under was then removed from the water, dried, painted red, and suspended under the roof of the house.

In the fifth book of Herodotus, chap. xv., occurs the following passage, which was long thought to be a mere invention on the part of the historian. After enumeration of the various nations that Megabazes subdued, he mentions that the Persian monarch also endeavored to conquer "those who live upon the Lake Prasias in dwellings contrived after

"Planks fitted on lofty piles are placed in the middle of the lake, with a narrow en-trance from the mainland by a single bridge. These piles that support the planks all the citizens anciently placed there at the common charge; but afterward they established a law to the following effect: Whenever a man marries, for each wife he sinks three piles, bringing wood from a mountain called Orbe-

lus, but every man has several wives.
"They live in the following manner. Every man has a hut on the planks, in which he dwells, with a trap-door closely fitted in the planks, and leading down to the lake. They tie the young children with a cord round the feet, fearing lest they should fall into the lake beneath. To their horses and beasts of burden they give fish for fodder, of which there is such abundance, that when a man has opened his trap-door he lets down an empty basket by a cord into the lake, and, after waiting a short time, draws it up full of fish."

In these words the old historian describes with curious exactitude the mode of life adopted by some branches of the Waraus and Caribs. These have been described at and Caribs. These have been described at some length by Humboldt, in his "Personal Narrative." The large tract of land which forms the delta of the Orinoco possesses some very remarkable characteristics. It is always wet, but during several months in the year it is completely inundated, the river that the characteristics are extended to the constitution of the con rising to an astonishing height, and covering with water a tract nearly half as large as England. This seems to be as unpropitious a spot as could be adopted for human habitations, and yet the Waraus (or Guarános, as Humboldt spells the word) have established themselves there, and prefer it to any other locality, probably because their strange mode of life enables them to pass an existence of freedom.

Varying much in the height to which it rises, in some places exceeding fifty feet, the Orinoco has the quality of rising year after year to the same height in the same place, so that when a mark is made to designate the height to which the water rose in one year, the same mark will answer year after year with scarcely the slightest deviation. It is water, only a very peculiar vegetation can live. This is the Its (pronounced Eeth) palm, belonging to the genus Maurita, a plant which, like the mangrove of Africa requires plenty of heat and moisture to en-able it to develop itself fully. The native name for this tree is Murichi.

A brief description of the its palm must be given before we proceed further, or the reader will not understand the peculiar conditions under which these water dwellers live. When full grown, it resembles a tall, cylindrical pillar, with a fan of ten or twelve vast leaves spreading from its extreme top. Each leaf is some ten feet in width, and is supported upon a huge stem about twelve feet in length, looking more like a branch than a leaf-stem. Indeed, a complete leaf is a heavy load for a man. At regular intervals the whole fan of leaves falls off, and is re-placed by another, the tree adding to its height at every change of leaf, until the stem is nearly a hundred feet high, and fifteen in circumference.

Myriads upon myriads of these marvellous trees rise amid the waters of the Orinoco delta, sometimes clustered into solid masses of vegetation, sometimes scattered, and sometimes drawn up in devious avenues, according to the windings of the muddy channels that even in the dry seasons traverse the country. Whether grouped or scattered, the its flourishes in this delta to such an extent that only the experienced canoe men of the place can navigate their barks among the tall stems, the narrow and winding chan-nels which form the natural paths being completely obliterated by the waste of water. Any stranger who tried to thread this aquatic forest without the aid of a native guide would soon lose himself among the armies of itá palm, and perish miserably of hunger. Yet this very tree supplies to the Waraus of the Orinoco not only all the necessaries, but the luxuries of life, and were the whole tribe to be cut off from the mainland, they could support themselves without the least difficulty, the itá palm supplying house, food, drink, clothing, and furniture.

First, as to the house. The Warau re-

quires for a house nothing but a floor and a roof. In the example seen on page 1244, the floor is supplied by the earth, but it is evident that in a house built in a locality where the ground is for many months together thirty or forty feet beneath the surface of the water, an artificial flooring is needed. The Warau architect, therefore, proceeds to construct his house in the following manner.

Selecting four its trees that grow near each other in the form of a square, and, cutting away any of the intervening trees, he with scarcely the slightest deviation. It is makes use of these four as the corner posts evident that in such a spot, where the soil is of his house. He knows by marks left on in the dry season nothing but mud, and in the trunks the precise height to which the

water w deep no felled it places b On the cross-pi trunks, l the giga ready n very lig These C and con On then and upor which se und forn which w ge to th twelve f structs a which a which up labors of illustrati of the Or these lak furnished

> Food i First, the as large dreds of branch p is the tru it be spli the flowe the enve soft, pith. This is t nishes a s Drink i From th like that

aloe, can intoxicati drink is p which is allowed to mentation tent, the 1 made of it sumption. The sm by the V itá, the m

From tl his furnitu made from he goes fis trunk, and string of v the one si all the wa

stripped o

orty or fifty feet under peculiar vegetation can tt (pronounced Eeth) the genus Mauritia, a se mangrove of Africa eat and moisture to en-tself fully. The native

Murichi. on of the its palm must proceed further, or the rstand the peculiar con-these water dwellers wn, it resembles a tall, h a fan of ten or twelve g from its extreme top, n feet in width, and is ige stem about twelve g more like a branch deed, a complete leaf is n. At regular intervals eves falls off, and is rege of leaf, until the stem eet high, and fifteen in

lads of these marvellous waters of the Orinoco stered into solid masses nes scattered, and someevious avenues, accordof the muddy channels y seasons traverse the rouped or scattered, the delfa to such an extent nced canoe men of the heir barks among the ow and winding chan-e natural paths being ed by the waste of who tried to thread this the aid of a native guide elf among the armies of miserably of hunger. pplies to the Waraus of all the necessaries, but

vithout the least diffisupplying house, food, urniture. ouse. The Warau rething but a floor and a e seen on page 1244, by the earth, but it is ase built in a locality s for many months to-y feet beneath the surn artificial flooring is u architect, therefore, this house in the fol-

nd were the whole tribe e mainland, they could

trees that grow near m of a square, and, cutintervening trees, he our as the corner posts nows by marks left on e height to which the water will rise, and some three feet or so above this mark he builds his floor, cutting deep notches in the trunk. In these notches are laid beams made from the stems of the felled its palms, and lashed tightly in their places by ropes made of its fibre.

On these beams are laid a number of cross-pieces, sometimes made from the split trunks, but usually being nothing more than the gigantic leaf-stems which have been already mentioned, and which are when dry very light, very tough, and very elastic. These cross-pieces are tled firmly together, and constitute the essential part of the floor. On them is placed a layer of palm leaves, and upon the leaves is a thick coating of mud, which soon dries under the tropical sun, and forms a smooth, hard, and firm flooring, which will bear a fire without risk of damage to the wooden structure below. Ten or twelve feet above the floor the Warau constructs a roof of palm leaves, the corners of which are supported by the same trees which uphold the house, and then the chief labors of the native architect are over. An illustration on page 1244 shows the scenery of the Orinoco delta and the architecture of these lake dwellers. So much for the house

firmished by the itá palm.

Food is supplied by it in various forms.

First, there is the fruit, which, when ripe, is as large as an ordinary apple, many hundreds of which are developed on the single branch produced by this tree. Next, there s the trunk of the tree and its contents. If it be split longitudinally at the time when the flower branch is just about to burst from the enveloping spathe, a large quantity of soft, pith-like substance is found within it. This is treated like the cassava, and furnishes a sort of bread called yuruma.

Drink is also obtained from the its palm. From the trunk is drawn a sap, which, ike that of the maguey or great American aloe, can be fermented, and then it becomes intoxicating in quality. Another kind of drink is procured from the fruit of the ita, which is bruised, thrown into water, and allowed to ferment for a while. When fer-mentation has proceeded to a sufficient extent, the liquor is strained through a sieve made of ita fibre, and is thus ready for consumption.

The small amount of clothing required y the Warau is also obtained from the its, the membrane of the young leaf being stripped off and woven into a simple fab-

From the same tree the Warau obtains all his furniture. Bows, arrows, and spears are made from its leaf-stems, the canoe in which he goes fishing is made from a hollow itá trunk, and the lines and nets are both furnished from the same tree, as is also the string of which his hammock is made. That more extraordinary, because in former days the Warau had no iron tools, and it is not easy to find a tree that will at the same time furnish all the necessaries of his life, and be of such a character that it can be worked by the rude stone implements which the Warau had to use before he obtained iron from the white men.

It may readily be imagined that the Wa-raus who inhabit this strange region are lower in the scale of civilization than those who live on dry land, and, to use the words of Humboldt, "in the lowest grades of man's development we find the existence of an entire race dependent upon almost a single tree, like certain insects which are confined to particular portions of a flower.'

THE Waraus are not the only lake dwellers of Southern America. At the extreme north of this half of the continent there is a province which derives its name from the mode of life adopted by the savage tribe which dwells upon the waters of a lake. On the north-western coast of Venezuela there is a large gulf, called the Gulf of Maracaibo, the large guir, called the croll of Matricalbo, the name having been given to it by the Spanish discoverers in honor of a native chief whom they met on its shores. Close to the gulf, and only separated from it by a narrow, is a vast fresh-water lake, fed by the streams that pour from the mountains which sur-round it. The shape of this lake has been well compared to that of a jews-harp, with a rather elongated neck, and the depth of its water varies in a most remarkable manner

From the sides the bottom of the lake shelves almost imperceptibly for a great distance, so that at a distance of two or three miles from the shore, a man would be able to walk with his head above the surface. Suddenly, and without the least warning, the bed of the lake dips into almost unfathomable depths, so that, though a man might be barely submerged above his waist, a single step will plungs him into weter so a single step will plunge him into water so deep that the tallest spire ever built would be plunged far below the surface.

Over the surface of this lake dwell numerous human beings, and, even at the present day, when the number of the inhabitants has been much decreased, upon its waters are no less than four large villages, beside numerous detached dwellings formed in the various bays which indent its shores.

The reason for thus abandoning the dry land and taking to the water is a very curious one, and may be summed up in a single word — mosquitoes. These tiny but most annoying insects are found in clouds around the edge of the lake, some species flying by night and others by day, so that at no hour is there the least respite from their attacks. string of which his hammock is made. That the one single tree should be able to supply luxuriant vegetation that fringes the shore all the wants of an entire population is the

wing, are obliged to rest at intervals in their ! flight. They therefore keep to the shore, and do not venture to any great distance over the water. Knowing this characteristic of the insect, the natives manage to evade them by making their dwellings behind the range of the mosquito's flight.

In building these curious habitations, the lake dweller of Maracaibo is forced to em-ploy a greater skill in architecture than is needed by the Waraus of the Orinoco delta. In that muddy delta, formed by the alluvium washed down by the river, the its palm abounds, and forms natural pillars for the house; but the Lake Maracaibo furnishes no such assistance, and the native archi-tect is therefore obliged to drive piles into the bed of the lake in order to raise his floor above the level of the water.

It is evidently needful that these piles should be made of wood which will not perish by the action of the water, and upon the shores of the lake grows a tree which sup-plies precisely the kind of timber that is required. It is one of the numerous ironwood trees, and its scientific name is Guiacum arboreum. It is a splendid tree, rising to the height of a hundred feet or so, and having wood so hard that it will turn the edge of an axe. The natives, however, manage to fell these trees, to cut them into proper lengths, and to drive them firmly into the bed of the lake, where they become even stronger by submersion, being covered in course of years with an incrustation of lime, which makes them look as if they had been actually converted into stone.

On these piles are laid cross-beams and planks of lighter wood, and when a strong roof and light walls have been added, the house is complete. All the parts of the

house are lashed together with green sipol which contracts when dry, and binds the various portions as with bands of iron.

As has been already mentioned, number As has been arready mentioned, numbers of these houses are gathered together individual control of Maracaibo, and came with view of the lake, they were struck will amazement, at these habitations, and called the place Venezuela— i. c. Little Venice—a name which has since been extended the whole of the large province which the whole of the large province which now known by that title. It is on this lake that the gourd syste

of duck catching is carried to the greates perfection. Great quantities of ducks frequent its waters, but they are shy of ma and will not allow him to come near them The natives, however, manage to cate them by hand, without even employing snare. They take a number of large gourd scrape out the inside, and set them floating on the lake. At first the timid birds and afraid of the gourds and avoid them, bu after a while they become accustomed them, and allow them to float freely among their ranks.

The Indian then takes a similar gour and puts it over his head, having previous cut a couple of holes through which he cal see. He slips quietly into the water, an makes his way toward the duck, taking car to keep the whole of his body submerger As soon as he gets among them, he grass the nearest duck by the legs, jerks it unde water, and ties it to his girdle, where it soon drowned. He then makes his way another duck, and, if an experienced han will capture as many as he can carry, an

yet not alarm the survivors.

MEXICO A DIC SAC

REFORE tribes, a ICO.

At the of a sor features by a mi: Spanish ances w hybrid grading suming

The fa pire was Those i whites, o dominat a ruler o empire v land, and civil war which ke tile land But in th blood pr empire 1 ropean c them as cique in be held b bayonet must, ho ico as it

out her ci THE a perplexi ish conq ogether with green sipo when dry, and binds the with bands of iron. ady mentioned, number e gathered together interest entered by aniards first entered caibo, and came within they were struck with se habitations, and called a — 4. e. Little Venice since been extended large province which

te that the gourd system s carried, to the greater quantities of ducks for ut they are shy of ma him to come near them ever, manage to catch hout even employing number of large gourds le, and set them floating irst the timid birds a ds and avoid them, bu become accustomed to m to float freely amon

takes a similar gourd head, having previously es through which he ca etly into the water, and the duck, taking car of his body submerger among them, he grass the legs, jerks it under to his girdle, where it is then makes his way to if an experienced han ny as he can carry, an rvivors.

CHAPTER CXXXV.

MEXICO.

HISTORY - RELIGION - ART.

MEXICO AS IT IS, AND WAS BEFORE THE SPANISH CONQUEST -- WHY THE EMPIRE FAILED -- CONTRA-DICTORY ACCOUNTS OF THE ANCIENT MEXICANS -- THE RUINS OF THEIR BUILDINGS -- HUMAN SACRIFICES - THE SACRIFICIAL KNIFE - MEXICAN ART - MOSAIC WORK AND FEATHER PICTURES -CAPABILITIES OF THE COUNTRY.

tribes, a brief notice must be taken of MEX-

At the present day this land is possessed of a sort of civilization which presents no features of interest. It is inhabited chiefly by a mixed people, the descendants of the Spanish conquerors having contracted allispanish conquerors maying contracted am-ances with the natives, and so produced a hybrid race, which is continually retro-grading from the white parentage, and as-suming more of the aboriginal type.

The failure in establishing a Mexican empire was entirely due to the question of race. Those inhabitants who were either pure whites, or in whom the white blood pre-dominated, were naturally desirous to have a ruler of their own kind, thinking that an empire was the only mode of civilizing the land, and of putting an end to the constant civil wars and repeated changes of dynasty which kept back their most prolific and fer-tile land from developing its full capabilities. But in the great bulk of the people the Indian blood predominated, and in consequence an empire founded on the principles of European civilization was as irreconcilable to them as would be the rule of an Indian cacique in Europe. Such an empire could only be held by force of arms, and as soon as the bayonet was withdrawn the empire fell. must, however, confine ourselves to Mexico as it was before the Spaniard crushed

BEFORE passing to the North American nothing would be simpler than to condense them into a consecutive history. But it is quite certain that these accounts were very much exaggerated, and that the reality fell very far short of the romantic tales of the

Spanish conquerors. The following is an abstract of the narratives put forth by the Spaniards. The capital was situated on an island in the midst of a large lake. It contained twenty thousand houses, which were of great magnificence. In the midst was the emperor's palace, built of marble and jasper, and of prodigious extent. It was adorned with fountains, baths, and statues, and the walls were covered with pictures made of feathers. Not only the palace, but the houses of the caciques, possessed menageries filled with all the animals of the country, together with museums of various natural curiosities.

One of the greatest beauties of Mexico was a large square, daily filled with merchants, who came to buy and sell the various works of art in gold, silver, and feathers for which the Mexicans were famous. Between the city and the borders of the lake a hundred thousand canoes were continually passing; besides which mode of transit three vast causeways were built on the lake. The capital was not the only city of the waters, for more than fifty large cities and a multi-tude of villages were built on the same lake.

The dress of the nobles was most gorgeous, outher civilization and destroyed her history, and their persons were adorned with gold and THE accounts of ancient Mexico are most jewels in profusion. Their treasuries were perplexing. If the narratives of the Span-filled with the precious metals, and gold was ish conquerors could be implicitly trusted, as plentiful in Mexico as copper in Europe.

That these statements were much exaggerated is not to be doubted, but they were not pure inventions, and had all some foun-dation in fact. For example, the archi-tecture of the ancient Mexicans was of a Cyclopean vastness, as is proved by the ruins which are now almost the sole memorials of a vanished system of civilization. There is a strong resemblance between the archi-tecture of Mexico and that of Egypt, not only in its massiveness, but in the frequent

use of the pyramid.

One of these pyramids has the sides exactly twice as long as those of the large pyramid of Egypt. This is the great pyramid tower of Cholula, which had eight stories, each forming a platform on which rested the one above it, so that it closely resembled the Temple of Belus as described by Herodotus. The interior of these pyramidal structures was pierced with chambers, galleries, and flights of stairs, probably the habitations of the priests who served the temples and performed those terrible human sacrifices which formed an important part of their religious system. Viaducts which crossed deep val-leys, bridges, and roads, remains of which are still in existence, testify to the vanished civilization of the Mexicans, or, as some eth-nologists think, of a race that preceded them.

Specimens of the artistic skill of the ancient Mexicans may be seen in the magnificent Christy Collection. There is, for example, one of the sacrificial knives with which the priests laid open the breast of the human victim in order to tear out the heart and offer it to the blood-loving deity of the temple. The blade of this instrument is obsidian, and its handle is a marvellous piece of mosaic work, made of lapis lazuli, ruby, and other precious stones. Then there are masks made of similar materials, one being a most ghastly imitation of a human skull.

The skill in feather working still survives, and even at the present day pictures are made so exquisitely from humming-birds' feathers that they seem, at a little distance, to be admirable specimens of enamel.

The courage of the ancient Mexicans was very great. They opposed their naked breasts to the mail-clad invaders, and their comparatively feeble weapons to the creaded fire-arms. Even the horse, which a struck terror into them as a superturbural being, soon ceased to be an object of dread, and there is a story that they captured a horse in battle, stabled it in a temple, and treated it as a god, feeding it with daintily dressed chickens and similar dishes, until the poor beast was starved in the midst of plenty.

The induct of the Aztecs in destroying their once venerated Emperor Montezuma, because he yielded to the Spaniards, and the calm endurance of his warlike successor Guatemozin, when stretched on the flery rack, are sufficient instances of the courage the race.

possessed by the Mexicans when Cortez caminto the country.

The real prosperity of Mexico is to come The real prosperity of Mexico is to cons. There is every capability in the country, which is fertile in many valuable productions,—cattle and horses, for example both of which, importations from Europe have multiplied in an astonishing manner, and may at some time supply half Europe with cheap food, hides, and beasts of burden.

Insect life is almost as valuable as that of the higher and larger animals. The co-chineal insect reproduces itself in var-numbers, and, large as is the trade in this valuable insect, it could be extended almost indefinitely. There is no trouble in breeding the insect, no risk, and scarcely any capital required. It feeds upon the prichly pear, a plant which springs up luxuriantly if but a leaf be stuck in the ground.

It is indeed so huxuriant, that riders are forced to employ a peculiar kind of stirm, in order to prevent their feet from bein riddled with the needle-like thorns with which the plant, the leaf, and fruit are covered. One of these curious stirrups is shown in illustration, No. 1, page 1265, drawn from my own specimens, which was brought from Mexico by Sir F. Wetherell.

It is cut from a solid block of wood and

is therefore exceedingly heavy. A hole is cut in the back of the stirrup, into which the foot can be thrust nearly half way, Owing to the size and weight of this curious implement, the prickly pears are pushed aside as the rider passes among them, and thus the foot and ankle are protected from the slender but formidable thorns with which they are armed. The stirrup is sometimes put to another use, and employed as a rough and ready drinking cup. The front of the implement is covered with bold and graceful patterns, the effect of which is often heightened by means of color. In my own specimen they are colored with blue, scar-

let, and black.
As to the vegetable products of Mexico. they are too numerous to mention, but the principal are the indigo, the chocolate, and the vanilla.

Then it is as prolific in mineral as in animal wealth, and in the hands of an energetic and industrious people, the yield of copper, iron, gold, tive r, and other metals might be imost indemnitely extended. In all these productions comparatively little labor is required. Nature gives almost gratuitously those privileges which in other lands cannot be obtained without the expenditure of time, labor, and money

The past civilization of Mexico has vanished never to return. Its present is a comparative failure. The future is yet to be seen, but it may even eclipse the van-ished glories of the past if guided by those who understand the epoch, the country, and

CHIEF THE T TINOT CLAW BUNC PAINT

CATIO

Ir has alr the excepti is inhabite treme nort The vari divided ar the locality they inhab in the per extreme n ferent in n who inhabi Then, ever definite me The inhab ample, diffe the plain, v

forests diffe Yet they sime great maux of th tropics, or south, all teristics. The colo

the cheekmostly aqui ng, and t latter chara ual exposur atmosphere deficient, a make their cated with kicans when Cortez came

y of Mexico is to come, ability in the country, in many valuable pro-ad horses, for example, ortations from Europe, an astonishing manner, me supply half Europe es, and beasts of burden. st as valuable as that of ger animals. The co roduces itself in vast as is the trade in this uld be extended almost is no trouble in breed-risk, and scarcely any feeds upon the prickly springs up luxuriantly in the ground.

xuriant, that riders are eculiar kind of stirrup, their feet from being needle-like thorns with leaf, and fruit are covcurious stirrups is shown , page 1265, drawn from which was brought from

etherell.

olid block of wood, and ngly heavy. A hole is the stirrup, into which rust nearly half way. ckly pears are pushed asses among them, and kle are protected from dable thorns with which ne stirrup is sometimes nd employed as a rough cup. The front of the od with bold and grace-fect of which is often as of color. In my own colored with blue, scar-

le products of Mexico, ous to mention, but the ligo, the chocolate, and

ic in mineral as in anie hands of an energetic ole, the yield of copper, to other metals might be extended. In all these tively little labor is rees almost gratuitously h in other lands canno the expenditure of time,

on of Mexico has vanurn. Its present is a The future is yet to even eclipse the van-east if guided by those spoch, the country, and

CHAPTER CXXXVI.

THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS.

GOVERNMENT - CUSTOMS.

GENERAL NOTICE OF THE TRIBES - THEIR COLOR AND PRATURES - CATLIN'S DESCRIPTION OF A CROW CHIEF-LONG HAIR OF THE MEN-SILVER HAIR OF THE MANDAN TRIBE-GOVERNMENT OF THE TRIBES - THE HEREDITARY AND ELECTED CHIEFS - THEIR LIMITED POWERS - THEIR DIS-TINCTIVE DRESS - COSTUME THE RECORD OF DEEDS - THE SCALP-LOCKS, PAINTED ROBES, AND CLAW COLLAR - PRESERVATION OF SKINS - THE FEATHER PLUMES - THE HORNS, AND THEIR SIGNIFICATION - INDIAN DANDIES - RETIMATION IN WHICH THEY ARE HELD - THE PORTRAIT PAINTER BAFFLED - DRESS OF THE WOMEN - BISON SKIN ROBES - WAMPUM, AND ITS SIGNIFI-

Ir has already been mentioned that, with who is careless about his personal appearthe exception of the shore districts, America is inhabited from the extreme south to ex-

treme north by the same race.

The various tribes into which that race is divided are naturally varied according to the locality and climate of the spot which they inhabit. Those, for example, who live in the perpetual snow and ice of either the extreme north or south are naturally different in manners and customs from those who inhabit the tropical centre of America. Then, even in similar climate, there is very definite modification according to locality. The inhabitants of the mountains, for example, differ materially from the dwellers of the plain, while those tribes who live in the forests differ from both.

Yet they are all members of one and the same great race, and whether in the Esquimaux of the north, the Amazonian of the tropics, or the Patagonian of the extreme south, all display the same race charac-

teristics.

The color of the skin is deep copper red, the cheek-bones are prominent, the nose mostly aquiline, the forehead rather recedng, and the eyes apparently small, this latter characteristic being due to the continual exposure to the sun, and to the smoky atmosphere of the huts. The beard is very deficient, and even those few hairs that make their appearance are carefully eradiance allows his beard to grow, but in that case it is very scanty, thin, and never reaches

any great length.

The hair of the head contrasts strongly with that of the face, being very long and fine, in some of the tribes attaining an al-most incredible length. The Crow tribe are remarkable for the extraordinary develop-ment of their hair, which in some of the warriors actually trails on the ground as they walk. They pride themselves so much on this peculiarity, that in 1833 their chief received both his name of Longhair and his office from his wonderful tresses. The hair of this man was carefully measured by some white travellers, who had lived in his lodge for months together, and was found to be ten feet seven inches in length.

He did not allow it to hang at its full length except on occasions of ceremony, but kept it carefully wound with a broad leather strap, and made up into a bundle weighing several pounds. Usually this bundle was carried under his arm or in the bosom of his robe, but on great occasions the hair was let down to its full length, and carefully smoothed with bear's grease, and allowed to trail on the ground several feet behind the owner as he proudly stalked

along.

Several other tribes, such as the Blackfeet (so called from the dark moccasins which cated with tweezers. Sometimes an old man they wear), have very long hair, of which

false hair to their own tresses.

The Mandans, of whom we shall hear much in the course of this narrative, the Sioux, and the Minatarees, are all distinguished by this peculiarity, though none of them possess it so abundantly as the Crows. When Mr. Catlin was staying among the Minatarees, a party of Crows came to visit them, and excited the admiration of their hosts by their magnificent hair. One of them possessed so picturesque an appearance that the artist traveller transferred him at once to canvas, and the engraver has reproduced the sketch for the reader on the 1284th page. The following is Mr. Catlin's account of this splendid specimen of the North American Indian:

"I think I have said that no part of the human race could present a more picturesque and thrilling appearance or horse-back than a party of Crows rigged out in all their plumes and trappings - galloping about and yelling in what they call a war parade, i. e. in a sort of tournament or sham fight, passing rapidly through the evolutions of battle, and vaunting forth the wonderful character of their military exploits. This is an amusement of which they are excessively fond; and great preparations are invariably made for these occasional shows.

"No tribe of Indians on the continent are better able to produce a pleasing and thrilling effect in these scenes, not any more vain, and consequently better prepared to draw pleasure and satisfaction from them, than the Crows. They may be justly said to be the most beautifully clad of all the Indians in these regions, and, bringing from the base of the Rocky Mountains a fine and spirited breed of the wild horses, have been able to create a great sensation among the Minatarees, who have been paying them all attention and all honors for some days past.

"From amongst these showy fellows who have been entertaining us, and pleasing themselves with their extraordinary feats of horsemanship, I have selected one of the most conspicuous, and transferred him and his horse, with arms and trappings, as faithfully as I could to the canvas, for the information of the world, who will learn vastly more from lines and colors than they could

from oral or written delineations.

"I have painted him as he sat for me, balanced on his leaping wild horse, with his shield and quiver slung on his back, and his long lance, decorated with the eagle's quills, trained in his right hand. His shirt and his leggings, and moccasins were of the mountain-goat skins, beautifully dressed; and their seams everywhere fringed with a profusion of scalp-locks taken from the heads of his enemies slain in battle. His long hair, which reached almost to the ground while i dividing their long hair into flat tresses, two

they are exceedingly proud, and those indi-viduals whose locks do not reach the stand-ard of beauty are in the habit of splicing the hips of his leaping charger. On his head and over his shining black locks, he wore a magnificent crest, or headdress, made of the quills of the war eagle : nd ermine skins, and on his horse's head was another of equal beauty, and precisely the same in pattern and material.

"Added to these ornaments there were yet many others which contributed to his picturesque appearance, and amongst them a beautiful netting of various colors, that completely covered and almost obscured the horse's head and neck, and extended over its back and its hips, terminating in a most extravagant and magnificent crupper, em-bossed and fringed with rows of beautiful shells and porcupine quills of various colors.

"With all these picturesque ornaments and trappings upon and about him, with a noble figure, and the bold stamp of a wild gentleman on his face, added to the rage and spirit of his wild horse, in time with whose leaps he issued his startling though smothered yelps, as he gracefully leaned to and fro, leaving his plume and his plumage, his long locks and his fringes, to float in the wind, he galloped about; and felt exceeding pleasure in displaying the extraordinary skill which a lifetime of practice and experiment had furnished him in the beautiful art of riding and managing his horse, as well as in displaying to advantage his weapons and ornaments of dress, by giving them the grace of motion, as they were brandished in the air and floating in the wind,"

Although the hair is generally black, it sometimes takes various colors, the Mandan tribe being the most remarkable for this peculiarity. Some of them, even though quite young, have the hair of a bright silver gray, or even white. The men dislike this kind of hair in their own sex, and when it occurs try to disguise it by a plentiful use of red or black earth mixed with glue. The women, on the contrary, are very proud of such hair, and take every opportunity of displaying its beauties. Generally a woman wears the hair in two plaits, which are allowed to fall down the back over on each side of the head; but when they wish to appear to the best advantage, they rapidly unplait it, pass their fingers through it in the manner of a comb, and spread it as widely as possible over the shoulders. They always part it in the middle and fill the line of parting with red paint.

The silver gray hair is remarkable for its coarseness, in which respect it seems like a horse's mane, while the dark colored hair is quite soft. Among the Mandans almost every shade of hair is found between white, brown, and black, but there is never the least tinge of red in it.,

The Mandan men have a curious habit of

inches or at interv giue, so a atches o and are treated is head, and parallel t knee, and

THE g similar c has at its but not eldest se qualified sume the becomes be dissat from amo a double of equal whom ma other effe policy. It ofte chief of t

> the secon superior position, command among the abilities a and feare loved by and over of the tr Mah-to-t which h enemy. w four bear extraordi course of

holds the

Great much mo joyed by The Am or limb, council, a the counc with it, b war chief follow his of his fol the warr follow or principal contempl regarded of his off

The ch over the of wealt popularit if he wer is feet, was now lifted ig in black waves over charger. On his head, black locks, he wore a headdress, made of the e and ermine skins, and was another of equal the same in pattern

ornaments there were ich contributed to his ice, and amongst them of various colors, that nd almost obscured the k, and extended over its minating in a most exnificent crupper, em-vith rows of beautiful quills of various colors. oicturesque ornaments and about him, with a bold stamp of a wild , added to the rage and se, in time with whose tartling though smoth-acefully leaned to and and his plumage, his ringes, to float in the out; and felt exceeding the extraordinary skill ractice and experiment the beautiful art of ridhorse, as well as in dishis weapons and ornaving them the grace of brandished in the air nd."

ous colors, the Mandan remarkable for this peem, even though quite of a bright silver gray, nen dislike this kind of and when it occurs try ntiful use of red or black The women, on the oud of such hair, and a woman wears the hich are allowed to fall on each side of the wish to appear to the apidly unplait it, pass it in the manner of a as widely as possible They always part it in e line of parting with

is generally black, it

is remarkable for its espect it seems like a ne dark colored hair is the Mandans almost found between white, t there is never the

ave a curious habit of ir into flat tresses, two

glue, so as to keep them separate. These patches of glue and earth become very hard, and are never removed. The hair thus treated is drawn tightly over the top of the head, and allowed to fall down the back in parallel tresses, which mostly reach to the knee, and in some cases to the ground.

THE government of these tribes is of a similar character throughout. Each tribe has at its head a chief, whose office is usually, but not always, hereditary. Provided the eldest son of a chief be tolerably well qualified for the post, he is suffered to assume the leadership when his father dies, or becomes too old for work. Should the tribe be dissatisfied with him, they elect a leader from among the sub-chiefs. There is often adouble system of government, two chiefs of equal power being appointed, one of whom manages all matters of war, and the other effects the administration of domestic

It often happens that, although the head chief of the tribe is nominally the ruler, and holds the first place, the real power lies in the second or third chief, who pays to his superior every deterence which is due to his position, but is practically the leader and commander of the tribe. This was the case among the Mandans when Mr. Catlin visited them. The head chief, though a man of abilities and courage, and therefore respected and feared by the people, was by no means loved by them, on account of his haughty and overbearing demeanor. The real leader of the tribe was the second chief, named Mah-to-toh-pa, i. e. the Four Bears, a name which he got from an exclamation of the enemy who said that he came at them "like four bears." Some of the adventures of this extraordinary man will be mentioned in the course of the following pages.

Great as is the power of the chief, it is much more limited than that which is enjoyed by the chiefs of the African tribes. The American chief has no control over life, or limb, or liberty. He takes the lead in council, and if an offender be cited before the councillors, his voice carries great weight with it, but nothing more. Should he be the war chief, he cannot compel a single man to follow him to battle, nor can he punish one of his followers for deserting him. Any of the warriors, even the very youngest, may follow or desert his chief as he pleases, the minimum heads are the pleases, the principal check against desertion being the contempt with which a warrior is sure to be regarded if he leaves a chief who is worthy of his office.

The chiefs have, as a rule, no advantage over the other members of the tribe in point of wealth. A chief would soon lose the popularity on which his influence depends if he were to amass wealth for himself. By honorable an ornament as the much prized

inches or so in width, and filling each tress | virtue of his office, he has a larger house or at intervals of an inch with vermilion and tent than the rest of the tribe, and he generally possesses a few more wives. But he is often actually poorer than most of the warriors, thinking himself bound in honor to distribute among the tribe the spoils that he takes in war, Many chiefs even dress worse than the warriors under their command, so as not to excite envy, and only assume their splendid dress of office on great occasions.

The question of dress is really an important one. Varying as it does among the dif-ferent tribes, there is a general character which runs through the whole. Every man without distinction wears a scanty dress much like the "cheripa" which

has already been described, but is very much smaller. In battle or hunting, and in all cases in which exertion is required, he contents himself with this single garment; but when he is enjoying himself at home, he as-sumes his full costume. He wears a pair of leggings reaching to the hips, and falling as low as the ankles, sometimes spreading well over them. These leggings are mostly adorned with little bells, bits of fur, or similar decorations; and if the wearer be a suc-cessful warrior, he fringes them along the sides with tufts of hair taken from the head

of a slain enemy.

He has also a loose coat descending to the knees, and ornamented in a similar manner with feathers or scalp-locks, and, when the owner has performed any conspicuous feat of valor, he makes a rude painting of the event. This answers the same purpose as the Victoria Cross among ourselves. Although it is conferred by the man himself, it is equally valuable. No man would dare to depict on his robe any deed of valor which he had not performed, as he would be challenged by the other warriors to prove his right to the decoration, and, if he failed to do so, would be utterly scorned by them. The chief Mah-to-toh-pa represented on his robe a series of events in which he had killed no less than fourteen of the enemy with his own hand. Sometimes, when the tribe uses skin huts or wigwams, the warriors also paint their adventures upon the walls of their

dwellings. From a similar spirit the scars and wounds received in war are kept covered with scarlet paint, and when a man has succeeded in killing a grizzly bear he is entitled to wear its skin, claws, and teeth. The usual mode of so doing is to string the claws into necklaces and bracelets, and to make the skin into robes. Sometimes they dress the skin without removing the claws, and wear it in such a fashion that the claws are conspicuously seen. Owing to the extreme ferocity, strength, and cunning of the bear, to kill one of these animals is considered equivalent to killing a warrior, and the claw necklace is as

scalp. Some of the most valiant hunters have killed several of these animals, and it is a point of honor with them to appear on great occasions with all their spoils, so that they have to exercise considerable ingenu-

All the dress of a North American Indian is made of skin, mostly that of the deer, and in dressing it the natives are unrivalled, contriving to make a leather which is as soft as silk, is nearly white, and which may be wetted and dried any number of times without

becoming harsh.

The skin is first washed in strong lye, made of wood-ashes and water, so as to loosen the hair, which is then scraped off. The hide is next stretched tightly upon the ground upon a frame, or by means of a number of wooden pegs driven firmly into the ground. In this position it remains for several days, the brains of the animal being spread thickly upon it, and rubbed into it. The next process is to scrape it carefully with a blunt knife made of the shoulderblade of the bison, the native tanner pressing heavily upon it, and scraping every portion of the hide.

The process by which it is made capable of resisting the effects of water has yet to be undergone. A hole is made in the ground, and a quantity of rotten wood is piled in it, so that when lighted it will continue to smoulder for a long time, and produce smoke, but no flame. Around the hole are stuck a number of sticks, which are then tied together at the top, so as to make the framework of a sort of tent. The wood is then set on fire, the hides are placed within the tent, and over the sticks are wrapped other hides carefully fastened together, so as to prevent the smoke from escaping. For several days the hides are left in the smoke, and at the expiration of that time they have assumed the peculiar quality which has been described. The whole of the processes are conducted by women, manual labor being beneath the dignity of a man and a warrior.

The headdress of a North American Indian deserves some attention. Variable as are the modes of dressing the hair, no warrior ever wears his hair short. By so doing he would be taking an unfair advantage of an adversary. When a warrior is killed, or even totally disabled, the successful adversary has a right to take his scalp, in which he would be much impeded if the hair was short. Moreover, he would lose the honorable trophy with which he is entitled to fringe his garments. So for a warrior to wear his hair short would be a tacit acknowledgment that he was afraid of losing his scalp, and all the men therefore always leave at least one lock of hair attached to the

crown of the head.

The process of scalping will be presently described, when we treat of war.

A great chief always wears, in addition to the ordinary headdress of the warrior, a plume of eagle feathers, by which he is made they, and display some forty huge claws about their persons in a sufficiently conspicuous as possible, so that the enemy shall have no difficulty in recognising him. The form of plume varies achieved the construction of the co nising him. The form of plume varies according to the different tribes. That of the Crows may be seen in an illustration on page 1284. That of the Mandans is represented on the following page. It is made of a long strip of ermine, to which are fastened the quill feathers of the war eagle, and the property of the page so as to form a crest beginning at the back of the head and descending to the feet These quills are so valuable that a perfect tail of the war eagle is considered to be worth a first-rate horse.

In the present instance two horns may be seen projecting from the headdress. This is a decoration very rarely seen, and only conferred by the chief and council upon the most distinguished warriors. Even the head chief will not be able to assume them unless by the general vote of the council. and in the case of the Mandans the second chief wore them, while the head chief was

not privileged to do so.

Even a brave may wear them, though he below the rank of chief.

They are made from the horns of the bison bull, divided longitudinally, scraped nearly as thin as paper, and highly polished. They are loosely attached at the base, so that they can be flung backward or forward by the movement of the head, and give a wonderful animation to the action of the

wearer when he is speaking.

This elaborate headdress is very seldom worn, and is only assumed on occasions of special state, such as public festivals, war parades, or the visits of other chiefs. In battle the wearer always assumes the headdress by way of challenge to the enemy. There is good reason for not always wearing this dress. I have worn the dress formerly used by Mah-to-toh-pa, and found it to be hot,

heavy, and inconvenient.

As a contrast to the dress of a noted warrior, we may take that of a mere dandy, a few of whom are sure to be found in every tribe. They are always remarkable for elegance of person and effeminacy of nature, having the greatest horror of exposing themselves to danger, and avoiding equally the bear, the bison, and the armed enemy. Consequently they may not deck themselves with the plumage of the war eagle, every feather of which signifies a warrior slain by the warrior's own hand. Neither may they adorn their necks with the claws of the grizzly bear, their robes with scalp-looks and paintings, nor their bodies with the scarlet streaks that tell of honorable wounds received in battle.

Such ornaments would at once be torn from them by the indignant warriors of the lping will be presently treat of war.

ys wears, in addition to ress of the warrior, a res, by which he is made possible, so that the no difficulty in recogram of plume varies actually in the in an illustration on the Mandans is reprecing page. It is made ermine, to which are athers of the war eagle, beginning at the back scending to the feet valuable that a perfect less considered to be se.

ance two horns may be the headdress. This rarely seen, and only f and council upon the warriors. Even the be able to assume them I vote of the council, Mandans the second the head chief was

wear them, though he chief.

the horns of the binegitudinally, scraped r, and highly polished. thed at the base, so g backward or forward the head, and give a to the action of the aking.

ddress is very seldom med on occasions of ublic festivals, war pather chiefs. In battle sumes the headdress to the enemy. There talways wearing this e dress formerly used I found it to be hot, not.

dress of a noted warof a mere dandy, a few
found in every tribe.
kable for elegance of
of nature, having the
osing themselves to
equally the bear, the
nemy. Consequently
mselves with the pluvery feather of which
by the warrior's own
tey adorn their necks
izzly bear, their robes
paintings, nor their
streaks that tell of
ived in battle.

ald at once be tern



THE MANDAN CHIEF MAH-TO-TOH PA AND WIFE.
(See pages 1276, 1286, 1287.)

canvas. for their were en which b and pride

tribe, selves skins, simila

the scalp-l The and do which but d adornicupy felets, be of every the sions of Have occupaned

orname, hour or sons t saunter where athletic hour or key-tai they lo loose, t and fan Thes

warrior anxious men: -"Wh
day, the
fops con
attitude
all their
formatic through The chi notice, them in my doo: dresses that I

else to b
"My 1
I had go
who we
there we
ing in m
tapped o
who too
and delig
notice I
beautiful ine wha

tribe, and they are forced to content them-selves with mountain goat, doe, and ermine around the room; and by which honor he unskins, swans' down, porcupine quills, and similar articles—all more beautiful than the sombre eagle quills, bears' claws, and scalp-locks that mark the brave.

They spend their whole lives in idleness. and do not even join the athletic games of which the Americans are exceedingly fond, but devote their whole energies to the adornment of their persons. They will occupy four of five hours in making their toilets, being fastidious as to the arrangement of every hair of their eyebrows, and trying by the mirror the effect of various expres-

sions of countenance.

Having spent the whole morning in this occupation, they sally out on their horses, seated on white and soft saddles, beautifully ornamented with porcupine quills and ermine, and lounge about the village for an hour or two, displaying their handsome persons to the best advantage. They then saunter, still on horseback, to the place where the young warriors are practising athletic exercises, and watch them for an hour or two, plying all the while their tur-key-tail fans. Fatigued with the effort, they lounge home again, turn their horses loose, take some refreshment, smoke a pipe, and fan themselves to sleep.

These men are utterly despised by the warriors, as Mr. Catlin found. He was anxious to procure a portrait of one of these

Whilst I have been painting, day by day, there have been two or three of these fops continually strutting and taking their attitudes in front of my door, decked out in all their finery, without receiving other in-formation than such as they could discover through the seams and cracks of my cabin. notice, and, of course, without inviting them in; and they seemed to figure about my door from day to day in their best dresses and best attitudes, as if in hopes that I would select them as models for my canyas. It was natural that I should do so, for their costume and personal appearance were entirely more beautiful than anything

else to be seen in the village.

"My plans were laid, and one day, when I had got through with all of the head men who were willing to sit to be painted, and there were two or three of the chiefs lounging in my room, I stepped to the door, and tapped one of these fellows on the shoulder, who took the hint, evidently well pleased and delighted with the signal and honorable notice I had at length taken of him and his beautiful dress. Readers, you cannot imagine what was the expression of gratitude

doubtedly considered himself well paid for two or three weeks of regular painting, and greasing, and dressing, and standing alternately on one leg and the other at the door of

my premises.
"Well, I placed him before me, and a canvas on my easel, and chalked him out at full length. He was truly a beautiful subject for the brush, and I was filled with en-

thusiasm.

"His dress from head to foot was made of the skins of the mountain goat, dressed so neatly that they were almost as soft and white as Canton crape. Around the bottom and the sides it was trimmed with ermine, and porcupine quills of beautiful dyes garnished it in a hundred parts. His hair, which was long and spread over his back and shoul-ders, extending nearly to the ground, was all combed back, and parted on his fore-head like that of a woman. He was a tall and fine figure, with ease and grace in his movements that were worthy of better caste. In his left hand he held a beautiful pipe, in his right hand he plied his fan, and on his wrist was attached his whip of elk-horn and his fly-brush, made of the buffalo's tail. There was nought about him of the terrible, and nought to shock the finest and chastest intellect.

Unfortunately, the portrait was never taken, for the chiefs were so exceedingly offended that so contemptible a being should be put on the same level as themselves by being painted, that they left the hut in angry silence, and sent a message to the effect that, if Mr. Catlin painted the portrait of so worthless a man, he must destroy all the portraits of the chiefs and warriors. The through the seams and cracks of my cabin. The chiefs, I observed, passed them without dividual, who at once yielded the point, notice and of course without inviting walked consequentially out of the hut, and took up his old station at the door as if nothing had happened to disturb his equanimity.

On their feet the American Indians wear moccasins, i. e. shoes made of soft leather, the sole of which is no thicker than the upper .part. To an European walking in moccasins is at first very fatiguing, on account of the habit of turning out the toes. When, however, the white man learns to walk as the natives do, with his toes rather turned in, he soon finds that the moccasin is a better preservative of the feet than the European shoe, with its thick and almost inflexible sole.

The dress of the women is made of the same materials as that of the men, and differs chiefly in its greater length, reaching nearly to the ankle. It is generally embroidered in various patterns with colored which beamed forth in this poor fellow's porcupine quills, as are the leggings and face, and how high his heart beat with joy moccasins. The women are fond of tattooand pride at the idea of my selecting him to be immortal alongside of the chiefs and patterns by the use of charcoal and vermiltre, around which were figures of men and animals, showing the prowess of the owner both in war and hunting.

Beads and such like ornaments, obtained from the white men, are much in fashion; but, long before a glass or porcelain bead was introduced into America, the natives had an ornament of their own manufacture. This is the celebrated wampum, an article which is now almost extinct. It is made of fresh water shells, which are found on the borders of the lakes and streams. The thick part of the shell is cut into cylinders an inch or so in length, and then bored longitudinally, like the "bugles" that are worn by European ladies. Indeed, when the shell is, as is mostly the case, a white one, the piece of wampum looks almost exactly like a frag-

ment of clay tobacco-pipe stem. The wampum is either strung like beads to a museum for that purpose.

ion rubbed into the punctures. Both sexes and worn round the neck, or is formed into are furnished with large robes made of bison skins, and the inner side of these robes is purposes. In the first place, it acts, like the often painted in curious patterns. One of these robes in Mr. Catlin's collection, had a most elaborate figure of the sun in the centure of the sun in the centur It is also the emblem of peace when presented by one chief to another, and, when war has ceased between two hostile tribes, a wampum belt is presented as a token that the two tribes are at peace.

There is no particular beauty about the wampum. If the reader will break a tobacco-pipe stem into pieces an inch in length and string them on a thread, he will produce a very good imitation of a wampum necklace. Its only value lies in the labor represented by it; and, as the white men have introduced tons of imitation wampum made of porcelain, which looks rather better than the real article, and is scarcely one-hundredth part of the value, the veritable wampum is so completely extinct among many of the tribes that, if one of the natives should wish to see a string of wampum, he must go

MARTIAI Al Al

TI

THE N tially a respect conduct mies wl The v prevent

dience

civilized sibility which a where 1 order o only giv lowers best su war am guerilla almost i moral et is there A few

but the mishing of his m of dange the battl is unkno Declar council

to them.

deciding lead the by sendi the tribe ck, or is formed into It answers several place, it acts, like the ubstitute for money, and breadths being se, a gun, or a robe. of peace when preanother, and, when two hostile tribes, a nted as a token that

ace. ar beauty about the ler will break a topieces an inch in on a thread, he will itation of a wampum ue lies in the labor l, as the white men f imitation wampum ch looks rather better l is scarcely one-hune, the veritable wamtinct among many of

f the natives should wampum, he must go

urpose.

CHAPTER CXXXVII.

THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS - Continued.

WAR - WEAPONS.

MARTIAL CHARACTER OF THE TRIBES - THEIR MODE OF FIGHTING - DECLARATION OF WAR, AND APPLICATION FOR VOLUNTEERS - WEAPONS - THE PLAIN AND THE SPIKED CLUB - THE SHIELD, AND THE INGENIOUS MODE OF MAKING IT - THE LONG SPEAR - THE BOW AND ITS CONSTRUC-TION -- MODE OF SHOOTING -- THE STONE AND IRON TOMAHAWKS -- THE SCALPING-KNIFE -- MODE OF SCALPING - USE MADE OF THE LOCKS - THE SCALP DANCE - THE EXPLOITS OF MAH-TO-TOH-PA - SHAM BATTLES OF THE BOYS - THE TORTURE OF PRISONERS - TWO WONDERFUL ESCAPES - HOW THE CAMANCHEES FIGHT - SMOKING HORSES.

THE North American Indians are essentially a warlike people, measuring their respect for a man almost entirely by his conduct in battle and the number of enemies which he has slain.

The very constitution of the tribes, which prevents any leader from enforcing obe-dience upon his followers, as is done with civilized armies, entirely precludes the possibility of such military manceuvres as those which are employed in civilized countries, where bodies of men are wielded by the order of one individual. The leader can only give general orders, and leave his followers to carry them out in the way that best suits each individual. Consequently, war among these tribes is much of the guerilla kind, where each combatant fights almost independently of the other, and the moral effect of mutual defence and support is therefore wanting.

A few very simple manœuvres are known to them, and practised by them from infancy, but they lead to nothing more than skirmishing, the chief being merely the leader of his men, and expected to be in the post of danger. The idea of a general directing the battle from a place of comparative safety is unknown to the is unknown to them.

Declaration of war is made in the full council of chiefs and doctors, the majority

each warrior who draws a puff of smoke

through its stem by that act enlists himself.

After the pipe has gone its round and a sufficient number of men have volunteered, a grand war dance is got up in front of the chief's house, where has been set up a post covered with red paint, the sign of war. The newly enlisted warriors make their appearance with all their weapons, and execute a solemn dance, each man in succession dancing up to the reddened post and striking his axe into it as a public ratification of his promise. As has been mentioned, the leader always wears every decoration to which he is entitled, so as to make himself as conspicuous a mark as possible, while the braves and warriors wear scarcely any clothing, and have their faces so dis-guised with black and red paint that even their most intimate friends can scarcely recognize them.

As among us, white and red are the signs of peace and war, and each leader carries with him two small flags, one of white bison's hide, and the other of reddened leather. These are kept rolled round the staff like a railway flag-signal, and only produced when required.

At the present day fire-arms have superseded the original weapons of the American council of chiefs and doctors, the majority Indians, and much changed the mode of deciding the question. The chief who is to warfare. We will, however, contemplate lead the expedition then asks for volunteers by sending his reddened war pipe through the tribe by means of his messengers, and the tribe by means of his me

were the only weapons employed.

In illustration No. 4, on page 1265, are seen examples of the clubs and shield, drawn from specimens in the Christy Collection. The clubs are short, seldom exceeding a yard in length, and mostly eight or nine inches shorter. They are almost invariably made upon one or other of two models, examples of which are seen in the illustration. The primitive idea of a club is evidently derived from a stick with a knob at the end, and that is the form which is most in vogue. In the common kind of club the whole of the weapon is quite plain. but in many specimens the native has imbedded a piece of bone or spike of iron in the ball or bulb at the end of the club, and has decorated the handle with feathers, bits of cloth, scalps, and similar ornaments.

The second kind of club is shaped some-

thing like the stock of a gun, and has al-ways a spike projecting from the angle. In most cases this spike is nothing more than a pointed piece of iron or the head of a spear, but in some highly valued weapons a very broad steel blade is employed, its edges lying parallel with the length of the Such a club as this is often decoweapon. rated with some hundreds of brass headed nails driven into it so as to form patterns, and is besides ornamented so profusely with strings and feathers, and long trailing scalp-locks five or six feet in length, that the efficacy of the weapon must be seriously impeded by them.

I have handled both kinds of clubs, and found this latter weapon to be most awk-ward and unwieldy, its thick; squared, sloping handle giving scarcely any power to the grasp, while the abundant ornaments are liable to entanglement in the other weapons that are carried about the person.

The shield is made by a very ingenious process from the thick hide which covers the shoulders of the bull bison. Making a shield is a very serious, not to say solemn, business, and is conducted after the following manner.

The warrior selects a piece of hide at least twice as large as the intended shield, and from the hoof and joints of the bison prepares a strong glue. He then digs in the ground a hole the exact size of the shield, and almost two feet in diameter, and makes in it a smouldering fire of decayed wood. These arrangements being com-pleted, his particular friends assemble for the purpose of dancing, singing, and smoking round the shield maker, and invoking the Great Spirit to render the weapon proof against spears and arrows.

The fire being lighted and the glue heated, the skin is stretched above the hole by means of numerous pegs round the edge, which

the spear, and in some districts the lasso, glue is spread over it and rubbed carefully were the only weapons employed.

In illustration No. 4, on page 1265, are skin to contract forcibly, and at the same time to become thicker. As it contracts, the family of the shield maker busy themthe tamily of the shield maker busy themselves in loosening the pegs, and shifting them inward, so as to yield with the contraction of the skin, and at the same time to keep it on the full stretch. This goes on until the skin has absorbed all the glue which it is capable of receiving, and has contracted to the very utmost. By this time it is only half as wide, though twice as thick, as it was when first placed on the fire, and is allowed to cool slowly, after which it is carefully trimmed into shape, furnished with a strap, painted with the totem" or symbol of the owner, and decorated with the usual ornaments.

The completed shield is rather flexible. but is so strong that it will resist the direct blow of a spear or arrow, and if turned a little obliquely will throw off even a pistol bullet. The specimen shown in the illustration is painted light green with a white pattern. Above it is a cover made of very thin and soft leather, which is thrown over it in case of rain. The long strap is for the purpose of throwing the shield when not in

use over the shoulders, where it hangs, together with the bow and quiver.

The spear presents nothing especially worthy of remark, except that the blade is leaf-shaped, long, and narrow, and the shaft is often so covered with feathers and scalp-locks that there is barely enough space for the hand of the wielder. It sometimes measures fourteen or fifteen feet in length.

Next come the bows and arrows. The bow is always a very short and apparently insignificant weapon, being mostly used on horseback. It scarcely ever exceeds three feet in length, and is mostly six inches shorter, so that it looks more like a child's toy than a weapon fit for a warrior's hand. Yet, with this apparently feeble bow, the American Indian can drive an arrow completely through a man, and some of their best hunters are known to have sent their arrows fairly through the body of a bison, so that the missile fell on the ground after passing through the huge animal.

These bows are made of wood, horn, or bone. Ash is considered the best wood for bows, and it is strengthened enormously by having the wet sinews of the bison or deer fastened along the back, and so worked and kneaded into it that they appear to be of one substance with the wood. Several layers of sinews are often used, so that, in spite of its small size, the bow is a very powerful one. Some of them are made of the horn of the mountain or big horn sheep, and a few which are the most valuable are made of bone, probably obtained on the Pacific coast from keep it a few inches above the ground. As the spermaceti whale, and sent inland by soon as the skin is thoroughly heated, the traders. The owners of these bows do

and rubbed carefully operation causes the suby, and at the same ser. As it contracts, at maker busy themes yield with the cond at the same time to retch. This goes on sorbed all the glue? receiving, and has y utmost. By this vide, though twice as rest placed on the fire, slowly, after which it to shape, furnished vith the totem? or and decorated with

id is rather flexible, will resist the direct row, and if turned a ow off even a pistol shown in the illust green with a white a cover made of very which is thrown over long strap is for the eshield when not in rs, where it hangs, and quiver.

and quiver.

nothing especially ept that the blade is larrow, and the shaft in feathers and scalply enough space for lder. It sometimes freen feet in length. Ye and arrows. The hort and apparently eing mostly used on ever exceeds three mostly six inches more like a child's arrows.

or a warrior's hand.

tly feeble bow, the
frive an arrow com, and some of their
n to have sent their
ne body of a bison, so
the ground after passnimal.

of wood, horn, or the best wood for leened enormously by of the bison or deer, and so worked and yappear to be of one of that, in spite of its very powerful one. of the horn of the eep, and a few which are made of bone, e Pacific coast from and sent inland by ors of these bows do





(2.) AMERICAN INDIANS SCALPING. (See page 1285.) (1284)

not how bow tried lection and, and poiso wing Wheel hunder

quive taste stain In may when that

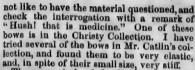
son He w most has o shield Mr. C sans c and p paint, guise, war." loaded rende

enem The skill scarce long But t chargi cessio throw gallop The variou

culiar kept a assemi each which throws every first an draws
as rap
throw
air bei
ground
simulta

has tou The tw 1265, a

Some dischar



hundred or so of these arrows in a neat quiver made of deer or cougar skin, and tastefully decorated with patterns woven in stained porcupine quills.

In an illustration on page 1318, the reader may see the usual costume of the Indian when equipped for battle. The portrait is that of Ee-a-chin-che-a (the red thunder) son of Black Moccasin of the Minatarees. He was at this time one of the brayest and most desperate warriors of this tribe. He has on his war-dress, with quiver slung, and shield upon his arm. "In this plight," says Mr. Catlin, " sans headdress, sans robe, and sans everything that might be a useless encumbrance, — with the body chiefly naked, and profusely bedaubed with red and black paint, so as to form an almost perfect disguise, the Indian warriors sally forth to war." The chief only plumes himself, and loaded with his ornaments and trophies renders himself a conspicuous target for the

enemy.

The Indians are not celebrated for their skill in marksmanship, which indeed is scarcely required, as they never shoot at long ranges, like the old English bowmen. But they are wonderfully skilled in discharging a number of arrows in rapid suc-

casaring a number of arrows in rapid succession, a practised archer being able to throw twenty or more in a minute while galloping at full speed.

There is a game much practised by the various tribes, by means of which this peculiar modification of skill in archery is bent at the bighest with. The requirement kept at the highest pitch. The young men assemble with their bows and arrows, and each brings several articles of property which he is willing to stake on his skill, and throws one of them on the ground. When every one has thrown down his stake, the first archer advances with his bow and ten arrows clenched in his left hand. He then draws the arrows and shoots them upward as rapidly as he can, the object being to throw as many arrows as possible into the air before the first arrow has reached the ground. He who gets the greatest number simultaneously in the air wins the stakes, Some archers are so skilful that they will discharge the eighth arrow before the first has touched the ground.

not like to have the material questioned, and check the interrogation with a remark of "Hush! that is medicine." One of these bows is in the Christy Collection. I have tried several of the bows in Mr. Catlin's collection, and found them to be very elastic, and, in spite of their small size, very stiff.

The arrow is headed with filnt or bone, and when used against the enemy is usually poisoned. The feathers are taken from the wing of the wild turkey. (See page 1290.) When a warrior is fully agned, he has a hundred or so of these arrows in a neat weapon is now so rare that it is scarcely posweapon is now so rare that it is scarcely pos-

sible to procure a specimen.

The steel-headed tomahawk has in most tribes superseded that which is made of stone. Vast numbers of these steel axe-heads are made in Birmingham, and sold at a very high price to the Indians. The form which is most valued is that

which is shown in fig. 1, page 1265. It is a "pipe-tomahawk," the upper part of the head being formed into a pipe-bowl, and the smoke drawn through the handle, which is plentifully decorated with porcupine quills and feathers. This is specially valued by the American Indians, because it saves them the trouble of carrying a separate pipe, and is most formidable as a weapon, and in time of peace is an efficient axe for chopping fire-wood and similar purposes. The tomahawk is used both in close combat and as a missile, in which latter capacity it is hurled with wonderful force and accuracy of aim.

Beside these weapons, every warrior carries the scalping knife, which, with the poniard of early English times, is equally useful for war and domestic purposes. Almost without an exception every scalping knife used in North America is nothing more than a common butcher's knife, made in Sheffield for sixpence, and sold to the Indians at the price of a horse. After all, it is perhaps the very best instrument that they could use. One of my friends, an experienced hunter, said that he discarded all his elaborate and costly hunting knives, and preferred the Sheffield butcher's knife, which combines the advantages of strength, lightness, and the capability of taking an edge like a razor.

Every one has heard of the custom of scalping as practised by these tribes, a custom which takes the place of the preserved heads of the Dyak, and Mundurucu. When an American Indian slays an enemy, he removes the scalp as a proof of his victory. The scalp is a piece of skin, with the hair attached to it, taken from the very crown of the head, so as to exhibit that portion of the skin where the hair radiates from a centre. The size of the scalp is of no importance, provided that it only contain this indispensable mark.

We now come to the axe or tomahawk.

The two figures in illustration No. 2, page most as large as the palm of the hand, and 1265, afford excellent examples of the prin- it is taken in the following manner. The

enemy being fallen, the victor sits behind of his leggings, the arms and edges of his him on the ground, seizes the scalp-lock coat, the shaft of his spear, the handle of with his left hand, and with the knife makes two semicircular incisions in the skin, cutting it completely down to the bone. then twists the scalp-lock round both his hands, puts his feet on the victim's shoulders, and with a violent pull drags off the circular piece of skin with the hair adher-

ing to it.

This whole scene (illustrated on page 1284) is enacted in much less time than it has taken to write, the Indians being well practised in their sham fights before they come to taking scalps in actual battle. Brandishing the scalp in one hand and the knife in the other, the exultant conqueror utters the terrible "scalping yell," which even when given in a mock battle seems as if it were uttered by a demon rather than a man.

The scalped man is always supposed to be dead or dying, and, as the scalp is always accepted as a proof of death, the native warrior would never scalp a man whom he thought likely to recover. There have, however, been many instances, where in the heat of battle a man has been scalped while stunned, though without a mortal wound, and has afterward recovered and lived for many years

When the battle is over and the warrior returns to his home, he dresses the scalp for preservation. This is usually done by stretching it in a sort of battledore, made by bending a flexible stick and lashing the ends together, and it is then solemnly "danced" before it takes its place with the other valuables of the owner. Some of the scalps are quite small, not larger than a penny, and are hung on the bridles of the horses, or the handles of clubs.

Generally, however, they are, when quite dry, painted on the inside so as to resemble a human face, and hung to the end of a long, slight pole. On a fine day, the head chief of an encampment mostly orders that the scalps should be hung out, and sets the example, by protruding from the top of his own hut the pole on which are hung the scalps which he has taken. All the warriors at once follow his example, so that by walking round the village and counting the scalps, a stranger can learn the standing of every warrior.

It has been mentioned that many of the scalps are very small. Their limited size is thus accounted for. If a warrior be hur-ried, as is mostly the case when scalping a fallen man in the heat of battle, he contents himself with the scalp alone. But, if he should have leisure, he removes the whole of the hair-bearing portion of the skin, and treats it as follows. He first cuts out a small circular piece containing the crown of the head, this being the actual scalp. The remainder of the hair he divides into little

his club, etc., etc. The whole of Mah-totoh-pa's dress was covered with fringes made from the hair of those whom he slew

A dress thus ornamented is valued be-yond all price, and there is scarcely any price sufficiently high to tempt a warrior to

part with these trophies of his valor.

The "scalp dance" is a ceremony quite in keeping with the custom of securing the trophy. A scalp dance of the Sioux is thus described by Mr. Catlin:—"Among this tribe, as I learned whilst residing with them, it is danced in the night by the light of their torches, just before going to bed. When a war party returns from a war exof their enemies, they generally dance them for fifteen nights in succession, vaunting forth the most extravagant boasts of their wonderful prowess in war, whilst they brandish their war weapons in their hands.

"A number of young women are selected to aid (though they do not actually join in) the dance, by stepping into the centre of the ring and holding up the scalps that have been recently taken, while the warriors dance, or rather jump, around in a circle, brandishing their weapons, and barking and yelping in the most frightful manner, all jumping on both feet at a time, with a simultaneous stamp, and blow, and thrust of their weapons, with which it would seem as if they were actually cutting and carving each other to pieces. During these frantic leaps and yells, every man distorts his face to the utmost power of his muscles, darting about his glaring eyeballs, and snapping his teeth as if he were in the heat—and actually breathing through his nostrils the very hissing death - of battle.

"No description that can be written could ever convey more than a feeble outline of the frightful effects of these scenes enacted in the dead and darkness of night, under the glaring light of their blazing flambeaux; nor could all the years allotted to mortal man in the least obliterate or deface the vivid impression that one scene of this kind would leave upon his memory."

Mr. Catlin suggests, with much reason, that these dances are propitiatory of the spirits of the slain men, showing how highly their valor was prized by the conquerors, and the great respect and estimation in which they were held, though the fortune of war had gone against them.

A good example of the war career of an American Indian chief may be gained by the exploits of Mah-to-toh-pa, as displayed on his robe, and explained by him to Mr. Catlin. It was covered with twelve groups of figures, which will be briefly described.

His first exploit was killing a Sioux chief, locks, and with them he fringes the seams who had already killed three Riccarees.

This on h ahow chief The Mah yet, warr his fi Th the !

spler alave episo trave they The who foot, mark caree broth

drove

the fa

lenge lenge the b that broth passe vow, lay, b fatal a parch dans he re Won-Am

he lef

grassy

travel

ing h Riccar mixin friend Wonthe in the ev gently took s began for th accord Amer he ne

The took t bacco, with e cess in wife of was ea some o

go to

himsel Who arms and edges of his s spear, the handle of the whole of Mah-to-covered with fringes f those whom he siew

mented is valued bethere is scarcely any to tempt a warrior to ies of his valor.
" is a ceremony quite

custom of securing the ce of the Sioux is thus atlin: —" Among this whilst residing with he night by the light of before going to bed, returns from a war exne with them the scalps y generally dance them succession, vaunting vagant boasts of their in war, whilst they capons in their hands. ng women are selected o not actually join in) ng into the centre of up the scalps that have , while the warriors p, around in a circle, apons, and barking and frightful manner, all at a time, with a siwhich it would seem as y cutting and carving During these frantic man distorts his face of his muscles, darting balls, and snapping his the heat - and actuh his nostrils the very

ttle. at can be written could a a feeble outline of the se scenes enacted in the night, under the glaring flambeaux; nor could to mortal man in the face the vivid impresf this kind would leave

ts, with much reason, re propitiatory of the n, showing how highly ed by the conquerors, ect and estimation in , though the fortune of them.

f the war career of an ief may be gained by to-toh-pa, as displayed plained by him to Mr. be briefly described. s killing a Sioux chief, lled three Riccarees. This feat entitled him to wear eagles' quills cended, Mah-to-toh-pa turned toward the on his lance, and in the second group he is bed, and with his foot pushed an ember on shown as killing with this lance a Shienne the fire, so as to make a blaze by which he might see the exact position of his victim. The third scene represents a combat in which Mah-to-toh-pa was forsaken by his party, and yet, though badly wounded, killed a Shienne warrior in the presence of some thirty of his fellows.

The fourth scene shows a great chief of the Shiennes killed by this warrior, whose splendid headdress was assumed by his slayer. The fifth picture represents a strange episode in a battle. Mah-to-toh-pa was travelling with a party of Riccarees, when they were fired upon by a war party of Sioux. The Riccarees fled, leaving Mah-to-toh-pa, who sprang from his horse, faced the Sioux on foot, killed one of them, and secured his scalp.

foot, killed one of them, and secured his scalp. The sixth drawing illustrates a most remarkable piece of personal history. A Riccare brave, named Won-ga-tap, shot the brother of Mah-to-toh-pa with an arrow, drove his well-known spear into the body of the fallen man, and left it there, as a challenge to the surviving brother. The challenge was accepted. Mah-to-toh-pa found the body, recognized the spear, and vowed that he would slay the murderer of his brother with the same weapon. Four years passed without an opportunity to fulfil the vow, when he could no longer brook delay, but dashed out of his house with the fatal spear in his hand, and a small wallet of fatal spear in his hand, and a small wallet of parched corn at his belt. He told the Mandans to mention his name no more unless he returned victorious with the scalp of Won-ga-tap.

Amid the awe-struck silonce of his people he left the village, and disappeared over the grassy bluffs. For two hundred miles he travelled alone and by night, always concealing himself by day, until he reached the Riccaree village, which he boldly entered, mixing with the inhabitants as if he were a ook some meat out of the cooking-pot, and began to eat in order to strengthen himself for the fulfilment of his task. This was according to the hospitable custom of the American Indians. If a man be hungry, he need not ask for food, but has only to go to the nearest hut and help himself.

The repast being ended, Mah-to-toh-pa took the still warm pipe, filled it with tobacco, and began to smoke it, breathing, with every curl of smoke, a prayer for success in his undertaking. Once or twice the wife of Won-ga-tap asked her husband who was eating in their hut, but he replied that some one must be hungry, and was helping

When the last smoke-wreath had as-

In an instant he leaped toward the bed. drove the spear through the heart of Won-ga-tap, tore off his scalp, snatched the spear from his heart, and darted out of the hut in the scalp of his victim in one hand, and in the other the fatal spear, with the blood of Won-ga-tap already drying over that of the man he had killed four years before. The whole village was in an uproar, but Mah-to-toh-pa succeeded in making his escape, and on the sixth day after leaving the Mandan village, he re-entered it with the scalp of his enemy. A portrait of this cele-

Scalp of his cleany. A portfact of the brated chief is given on the 1277th page.

Another of these pictures records a single combat fought with a Shienne chief in presence of both war parties. They fought on horseback, until Mah-to-toh-pa's pow-der-horn was shattered by a bullet. The der-horn was shattered by a bullet. The Shienne chief flung away his gun, horn, and bullet pouch, and challenged the foe with bow and arrow. Both parties were wounded in the limbs, but kept their bodies covered with their shields.

Presently Mah-to-toh-pa's horse fell with an arrow in its heart. The Shienne chief immediately dismounted, and proceeded with the fight until he had exhausted his arrows, when he flung the empty quiver on the ground, challenging with his knife, the only weapon which he had left. The challenge was accepted, and they rushed on each other, but Mah-to-toh-pa had left his knife at home, and was unarmed. He closed with his antagonist, and a struggle ensued for the knife. Mah-to-toh-pa was dreadfully wounded in the hands, but at last wrested the knife from his adversary, drove it into his heart, and in silence claimed the scalp of his fallen foe.

On another occasion he alone faced sixty friendly stranger. He knew the position of Won-ga-tap's hut, and after having seen that the intended victim and his wife had smoked the evening pipe and were in bed, he walked gently into the hut, sat down by the fire the name of them. It was in this battle that he earned the name of Four Bears," by which must be understood the grizzly bear, the most terrible quadruped of North America. This is a sample of the mode in which warfare is conducted by the North American Indians - a strange mixture of lofty and chivalrous nobility with cunning and deceit. In fact, in contemplating these interesting tribes, we are thrown back to the time of Ulysses, whose great fame was equally derived from his prowess in battle and his skill in deceiving his foes, or, in other words, of being a most accomplished liar.

The men are taught the operations of war from a very early age. Every morning, all the lads who are above seven years old and upward, and have not been admitted among the men, are taken to some distance from the village, where they are divided into two opposing bodies, each under the command

of an experienced warrior. They are armed with little bows, arrows made of grass stems, and wooden knives stuck in their beits. In their heads they slightly weave a plaited tuft of grass to represent the scalp-lock.

The two parties then join in sham combat, which is made to resemble a real fight as much as possible. When any of the combatants is struck in a vital part, he is obliged to fall as if dead, when his antagonist goes through the operation of scalping with his wooden knife, places the scalp in his belt, utters the wild yell, and again joins in the battle. As no one may fight without a scalplock, the fallen adversary is obliged to withdraw from the fight. This goes on for an hour or so, when the mock fight is stopped, and the lads are praised or rebuked according to the skill and courage which they have shown, the number of scalps at the belt being the surest criterion of merit.

It is well known that after a battle the American Indians torture their prisoners, and that they display the most diabolical ingenuity in devising the most excruciating torments. Still, there has been much exaggeration in the accounts of this custom. They do not torture all their prisoners, selecting only a few for this purpose, the others being absorbed into the tribe by marriage with the widows whose husbands have been killed in battle, and enjoying equal rights with the original members of the tribe.

Neither is the torture practised with the idea of revenge, though it is likely that vengeful feelings will arise when the victim is bound to the stake: Superstition seems to be at the root of the torture, which is intended to propitiate the spirit of those members of their own tribe who have suffered the like treatment at the hands of their adversaries. The doomed warrior accepts his fate with the imperturbable demeanor which is an essential part of a North American Indian's character, and, for the honor of his tribe, matches his endurance against the pain which his enemies can inflict.

Tortures too terrible even to be mentioned are tried in succession; for when the victim is once bound to the stake, the Indian never has been known to relent in his purpose, which is to extort acknowledgments of suffering from the captured warrior, and thereby to disgrace not only himself but the tribe to which he belongs. He, in the meanwhile, prides himself on showing his enemies how a warrior can die. He chants the praises of his tribe and their deeds, boasts of all the harm that he has done to the tribe into whose power he has fallen, ridicules their best warriors, and endeavors to anger them to such an extent that they may dash out his brains, and so spare him further torture. He will even laugh at their attempts to extort cries of pain from a warrior, and tell

One remarkable instance of endurance in a captured Creek warrior is told by Mr. Adair. The man had been captured by the Shawnees, and forced to run the gauntlet naked through all the tribe; he had been tied to the stake, and was horribly tortured with gun-barrels heated redhot. All the efforts of his enemies only drew from him taunts and jeers, to the effect that the Shawnees were so ignorant that they did not even know how to torture a bound prisoner. Great warrior though he was, he had fallen into their hands through some fault in addressing the Great Spirit, but that he had enough virtue left to show them the difference between a Creek and a Shawnee. Let them only unbind him, and allow him to take a redhot gun-barrel out of the fire, and he would show them a much better way of torturing than any which they knew.

His demeanor had excited the respect of the Shawnees, and they unbound him and took him to the fire, in which were lying the redhot tubes. Unhesitatingly, he picked up one of them with his bare hands, sprang at the surrounding crowd, striking right and left with this fearful weapon, cleared a passage through the astonished warriors, and leaped down a precipice into the river. He swam the river amid a shower of bullets, gained a little island in its midst, and, though instantly followed by numbers of his disconcerted enemies, actually succeeded in getting away. In spite of the injuries which he had suffered, and which would have killed an ordinary European, he recovered, and lived for many years, the implacable foe of the Shawnees.

A somewhat similar adventure occurred to a Katahba warrior, who was pursued by a band of Senecas, and at last captured, though not until he had contrived to kill seven of them. A warrior of such prowess was guarded with double vigilance, and he was brought to the Seneca village for the torture, after having been beaten at every encampment through which the party had passed.

As the torturers were taking him to the stake, he, like the Creek warrior, burst from his captors, and flung himself into the river, swimming across in safety. He paused for a moment on the opposite bank to express emphatically his contempt for the pursuers who were crowding down the bank and into the river, and then dashed forward so fast that he gained nearly a day's journey upon the foremost of the pursuers.

of his tribe and their deeds, boasts of all the harm that he has done to the tribe into whose power he has fallen, ridicules their best warriors, and endeavors to anger them to such an extent that they may dash out his brains, and so spare him further torture. He will even laugh at their attempts to extert cries of pain from a warrior, and tell them that they do not know how to torture.

and not which h

which in When place who led a country wizard was and that sue was

stress th the scal compara their nu body so scalp. I pursued lentless' f spot whe might be his life in tory. H be forese scalp was of underg comparis On mo

has been

able to 1

death, an

tear off 1

sign of su

any rate, Several the use w and their most cele Camanche is spent o with those horseback walkers, a gait. Nos the back o alters, and strides sec ated with on his feet element, a ward as a limb or br he lays his comes ha away like There is

chee warr
fancy. As
gallop, he
of his hors
except the
over the
which he

stance of endurance in arrior is told by Mr. been captured by the to run the gauntlet tribe; he had been was horribly tortured ated redhot. All the e effect that the Shawnt that they did not ture a bound prisoner. he was, he had fallen igh some fault in adpirit, but that he had show them the differand a Shawnee. Let m, and allow him to rel out of the fire, and a much better way of

hich they knew. excited the respect of ey unbound him and , in which were lying hesitatingly, he picked is bare hands, sprang owd, striking right and veapon, cleared a pas-tonished warriors, and ce into the river. He a shower of bullets, its midst, and, though numbers of his disconlly succeeded in get-of the injuries which hich would have killed n, he recovered, and the implacable foe of

r adventure occurred , who was pursued by and at last captured had contrived to kill rrior of such prowess ible vigilance, and he eneca village for the been beaten at every which the party had re taking him to the

k warrior, burst from ng himself into the oss in safety. He on the opposite bank y his contempt for the wding down the bank then dashed forward nearly a day's journey he pursuers. ressed upon him, and,

narmed, he deliber-At night, when they ving thought a sentry the party, snatched s, and killed them all e. He scalped them, nself, invigorated his od, and set off to the

not where he had slain the seven foes as he position. In this attitude he can ride for was first pursued. They had been buried any distance, and moreover can use with for the sake of preserving their scalps, but he found the place of burial, scalped them all, and not until then did he make for his home,

which he reached in safety.

When the rest of the pursuers came to the place where the five had been killed, they held a council, and determined that a man who could do such deeds unarmed must be a wizard whom they could not hope to resist, and that the best course that they could pur-

sue was to go home again.

The reader will not fail to notice the great stress that is here laid on the possession of the scalp. A war party of Indians care comparatively little for the loss of one of their number, provided that they conceal his body so that the enemy shall not take his scalp. Here we have an instance of a man pursued by numbers of infuriated and reentless foes deliberately going back to the spot where he thought his slain enemies might be buried, and a second time risking his life in order to secure the trophies of victory. He knew that his intention would be foreseen, and yet the value set upon the scalp was so incalculable that even the risk of undergoing the torture was as nothing in comparison.

On more than one occasion, a warrior who has been struck down, and felt himself un-able to rise, has saved his life by feigning death, and permitting his victorious foe to tear off his scalp without giving the least sign of suffering. He must lose his scalp at any rate, and he might possibly contrive to

save his life.

Several of the tribes are remarkable for the use which they make of the horse in war, and their marvellous skill in riding. The most celebrated tribe in this respect are the Camanchees, the greater part of whose life is spent on horseback. As is often the case with those who spend much of their time on horseback, the Camanchees are but poor walkers, and have a slouching and awkward gait. No sooner, however, is a Camanchee on the back of a horse, than his whole demeanor alters, and he and the animal which he bestrides seem one and the same being, actuated with the same spirit. "A Camanchee on his feet," writes Mr. Catlin, " is out of his element, and comparatively almost as awkward as a monkey on the ground without a limb or branch to cling to. But the moment he lays his hand upon his horse, his face becomes handsome, and he gracefully flies

There is one feat in which all the Camanchee warriors are trained from their infancy. As the man is dashing along at full gallop, he will suddenly drop over the side of his horse, leaving no part of him visible deadly effect either his bow or his fourteenfoot lance.

One of their favorite modes of attack is to callop toward the enemy at full speed, and then, just before they come within range, they drop upon the opposite side of their horses, dash past the foe, and pour upon him a shower of arrows directed under their horses' necks, and sometimes even thrown under their bellies. All the time it is nearly useless for the enemy to return the shots, as the whole body of the Camanchee is hidden behind the horse, and there is nothing to aim at save the foot just projecting over the animal's back.

To enable them to perform this curious manœuvre, (illustrated on the 1201st page) the Camanchees plait a short and strong halter of horse hair. This halter is passed under the horse's neck, and the ends are firmly plaited into the mane, just above the withers, so as to leave a loop hanging under the animal's neck. Into this loop the warrior drops with accurate precision, sustaining the weight of his body on the upper part of the bent arm, and allowing the spear to fall into the bend of the elbow. Thus both his arms are at liberty to draw the bow or wield the spear; and as in such cases he always grasps a dozen arrows in his left hand, together with the bow, he can discharge them without having recourse to his quiver.

Sometimes the Camanchees try to steal upon their enemies by leaving their lances behind them, slinging themselves along the sides of their steeds, and approaching carelessly, as though they were nothing but a troop of wild horses without riders. A very quick eye is needed to detect this guise, which is generally betrayed by the fact that the horses always keep the same side toward the spectator, which would very seldom be the case were they wild and unrestrained in

their movements.

Every Camanchee has one favorite horse, which he never mounts except for war or the chase, using an inferior animal on ordinary occasions. Swiftness is the chief quality for which the charger is selected, and for no price would the owner part with his steed. Like all uncivilized people, he treats his horse with a strange mixture of cruelty and kindness. While engaged in the chase, for example, he spurs and whips the animal most ruthlessly; but as soon as he returns, he carefully hands over his valued animal to his women, who are waiting to receive it, and who treat it as if it were a cherished member of the family.

It need scarcely be added that the Camanchees are most accomplished horse except the sole of one foot, which is hitched ever the horse's back as a purchase by tunity of robbing other tribes of their ani-which he can pull himself to an upright which he can be a considered which he can be a considered which he can be a c out on a horse stealing expedition, the warriors who compose it are bound in honor not to return until they have achieved their object. Sometimes they are absent for more than two years before they can succeed in surprising the settlement which contains the horses on which they have set their hearts, and they will lie in ambush for months, awaiting a favorable opportunity. The value set upon horses by the eques-

The value set upon horses by the equestrian tribes cannot be better illustrated than by the singular custom of "smoking horses," which prevails in some parts of the country. The reader will find this illustrated on

the following page.

When one of these tribes determine on making war, and find on mustering their forces that they have not sufficient horses, they send a messenger to a friendly tribe to say that on a certain day they will come to "smoke" a certain number of horses, and expect the animals to be ready for them. This is a challenge which is never refused, involving as it does the honor of the tribe.

On the appointed day, the young warriors who have no horses go to the friendly village, stripped and painted as if for war, and seat themselves in a circle, all facing inward. They light their pipes and smoke in silence, the people of the village forming a large circle around them, leaving a wide space between themselves and their visitors.

Presently in the distance there appears an equal number of young warriors on horseback, dashing along at full gallop, and in "Indian file," according to their custom. They gallop round the ring, and the foremost rider, selecting one of the seated young men, stoops from his saddle as he passes, and delivers a terrible blow at his naked shoulders with his cruel whip. Each of his followers does the same, and they gallop round and round the smokers, at each circuit repeating the blow until the shoulders of the men are covered with blood. It is incumbent upon the sufferers to smoke on in perfect calmness, and not to give the slightest intimation that they are aware of the blows which are inflicted on them. When the requisite number of circuits have been made, the leader springs off his horse, and places the bridle and whip in the hands of the young man whom he has selected, saying at the same time, "You are a beggar; I present you with a horse: but you will always carry my mark on your back." The rest follow his example.

Every one is pleased with this remarkable custom. The young men are pleased because they get a horse apiece; and as to the flogging, in the first place they really care very little for pain, and in the next place they have enjoyed an opportunity of showing publicly their capability of orders are

they have enjoyed an opportunity of showing publicly their capability of endurance.

Those who give the horses are pleased because they have been able to show their liberality, a trait which is held in great esti-

mation by these people, and they have also the peculiar satisfaction of flogging a warrior with impunity. Both tribes are also pleased, the one because they have gained the horses without which they could not have made up their forces, and the other because they have shown themselves possessed of superior wealth.



FLINT-HEADED ARROW.
(See page 1285.)

s.

ople, and they have also ction of flogging a warboth tribes are also cause they have gained which they could not r forces, and the other shown themselves posrealth.





(1.) CAMANCHEES RIDING. (See page 1289.)



(2.) SMOKING HORSES. (See page 1290.)

(1291)

a Size.



DED ARROW. age 1285.)

NORTH A As mig people li the tribe are nota rica, this ing grou accordin hunter tion. First America erroneou exists in the contibeen sumanner it still b tudes.

Before America: the bison day there are able to it with the is general hunters, sults, and exciting bow when I selects on tioned coopares his

IN "O AN

CHAPTER CXXXVII.

THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS - Continued.

HUNTING - AMUSEMENTS.

north american hunters—bison or buffalo hunting—the chase on horsebauk—use of THE GUN-BISON DRIVING - THE SNOW SHOE, AND ITS USE IN BISON HUNTING-THE DISGUISE IN WOLF SKINS - HORSE CATCHING - MODES OF USING THE LASSO - HOW HORSES ARE TAMED -"CREASING" HORSES - THE BUFFALO DANCE - CREDIT OF THE BUFFALO DANCE RESTORED - A SINGULAR MASK — INVARIABLE SUCCESS OF THE DANCE — HOW THE DANCERS ARE RELIEVED — AN INGENIOUS DECEPTION.

As might be expected from a migratory people like the North American Indians, all the tribes excel in hunting, though some are notable above the others. Next to Africa, this country presents the finest hunting grounds in the world, the game varying according to the locality, and giving the hunter an almost unrivalled scope of ac-

First and most important of the North American game is the bison, popularly but erroneously called the buffalo. This animal exists in countless myriads, and in spite of the continual persecutions to which it has been subjected, and the utterly reckless manner in which it has been destroyed, it still blackens the plains with its multitudes.

Before the horse came into use, the North American Indians were obliged to chase the bison on foot, and even at the present day there are many celebrated hunters who are able to run down a bison on foot and kill it with the lance. The mode, however, which is generally adopted is the chase by mounted hunters, a chase which offers the greatest results, and exhibits the wildest enthusiasm and excitement. Armed merely with his tiny bow and flint-headed arrows, the native hunter mounts his horse, and goes off in chase of the bison.

When he comes up with the animals, he selects one, usually a fat and well-condi-tioned cow, presses his herse to her and prepares his bow and arrow. The well-trained sions.

horse needs no guiding, but keeps close to the right shoulder of the bison, and a little behind it, so that it may not run upon the horns of the animal if it should happen to stop suddenly and turn its head. This plan, moreover, just brings the rider into the proper position to deliver his arrow in the most deadly manner, i. e. directing it just behind the shoulder. When an arrow is discharged by a practised hand, the bison falls mortally wounded, and, tenacious of life as the animal is, soon breathes its last. Leaving the arrow in the wound in order to mark the owner of the dead animal, the successful archer dashes on in pursuit of another animal, and does not cease until he has expended all his store of arrows. An illustration on page 1299 shows a herd of bisons, and the Indians on horseback engaged in the exciting sport.

It is the pride of the native hunter to kill a bison with every arrow, and not to shoot twice at the same animal. The younger hunters are flerce and anxious rivals in this sport, knowing that the result of the day's hunt will be the talk of the whole village, and that on their success or failure will much depend the estimation in which they are held. So each successive hunt produces its eager competitors for honor, some being desirous of wiping off past disgrace by present success, and others equally anxious to maintain the reputation which they have gained on former occa-

the bow has been almost entirely superseded by fire-arms, it is equally a point of honor to kill the bison with a single shot, and to claim a slain bison for every bullet. In such cases, the hunter takes little pains in loading his gun. He carries the powder loose in his pocket or bag, scoops hastily a random quantity into the gun, drops upon it, without any wadding, a bullet wetted in the mouth, and the loading is complete. The muzzle of the gun is kept uppermost until the moment for firing, when the gun is dropped, aimed, and fired simultaneously, without being brought to the shoulder.

The skill displayed in managing the horse is the more remarkable, as these Indians use no bit by which the animal can be guided. They have nothing but a slight hide halter tied round the lower jaw of the horse, the only use of which is to cause it to halt when required. This is popularly called the "lariat," a corruption from the

French word, l'arêt,

The excitement caused by this chase is indescribable, though Mr. Catlin gives a very graphic idea in a few words:—"I have always counted myself a prudent man, yet I have often waked, as it were, out of the delirium of the chase, into which I had fallen as into an agitated sleep, and through which I had passed as through a delightful dream where to have died would have been to have remained, riding on, without a struggle or a pang."

Sometimes the bison is destroyed in a much less sporting manner, the precipice and the pound being the two modes which are usually followed. The reader may prob-ably be aware that, in those parts of North America inhabited by the bison, the surface of the plain is frequently interrupted by ravines with precipitous sides and of tremendous depth. When a hunting party see a herd of bisons within several miles of one of these ravines, they quietly separate, and steal round the herd, so as to place the bisons between themselves and the ravine.

They then gently move forward, and the bisons, retreating from them, draw nearer and nearer to the ravine, at the same time becoming packed closer and closer together. Suddenly the hunters raise a shout, and dash forward at the bisons. The affrighted animals take to flight at their best speed, and run on until they reach the edge of the ravine. Here the foremost bisons try to check themselves, but to no avail, as they are pressed forward by their companions behind, and thus almost the whole of the herd are forced over the precipice, and killed by the fall. Even those in the rear, which at last see their danger, and try to escape, have to run the gauntlet of their enemies, who allow but very few of them to

Even in those parts of the country where the bow has been almost entirely superseded by fire-arms, it is equally a point of honor of kill the bison with a single shot, and to laim a slain bison for every bullet. In which often occupies several weeks, and, when they arrive within the fatal arms of the entrance, are urged forward by means of little fires, which are lighted on either side. Instinct urges the animals to escape from an element which sweeps over vast districts of country, and kills every living thing in it, and in their haste they run toward the pound, in which they are at once shut up. It is fortunate for the hungers that the bisons do not know their own strength. They could easily break through the walls of the pound, but they mostly con-tent themselves with turning round and round, and passively await the arrival of the destroyer. So foolish are they in this respect, and in such numbers are they killed. that pounds have been built of the bones of slaughtered bisons.

In the winter another plan of hunting the bison is followed. At this time of the year the fur or "pelt" of the bison is the thickest and warmest, and the skin is of the most value. It is from these skins that the "buffalo" rugs and robes are made, without which out-of-door life would be scarcely endurable in the more northern parts of this

vast continent.

During the winter months the prairies assume a new aspect. They are not only covered with snow, so that the ordinary landmarks are obliterated, but the snow is blown by the wind into the most fantastic shapes, raised in some places into long and sharply scarped hills where no hills were, forming level plains where the ground is forming level plains where the ground is really cut up by hollows, and leaving only the tops of eminences bare, whence the snow is blown away by the tempestuous winds that sweep across the vast expanse. On these hills the bison congregate for the purpose of grazing, shovelling away with their broad noses the snow which still clings to the house. to the herbage.

The animals instinctively keep clear of the small but treacherous plains and valleys, knowing that the hidden crevices may at any time swallow them up. Into these valleys the hunters try to drive them, so that they may be helplessly entangled in the snow, and fall easy victims to the spear. Were it not for some invention whereby the hunters are enabled to skim over the surface of the snow, the bisons would be in perfect safety, but the snow shoe lays the poor animals at the mercy of their pursuers. It is necessary first to describe this ingenious implement.

The best form of snow shoe is seen on the next page. The shape is that of a fish, and its framework is made of ash-wood, kept in A somewhat similar plan is adopted with form by two cross-bars, one in front and one

behind The w made r of a ra use the shoe. in len breadt wearer and the can pa a child feet.

Just : space ci hoe is that the and the the thi son," th ing, wh order t leathern attached passes c round t

As, t the feet heels c parallel down th is drag thong, in keep ward. After

skim ov

but to a awkwar unaccus gether v produce called b Not on the exc over the whole fo dislocate Perseve: du raque is able to th the bisons are driven e pound is an enclosure and branches, with an ard the enclosure, a task es several weeks, and, ithin the fatal arms of ged forward by means are lighted on either the animals to escape hich sweeps over vast, and kills every living their haste they run in which they are at fortunate for the huntdo not know their own ild easily break through nd, but they mostly conith turning round and await the arrival of the sh are they in this re-numbers are they killed, en built of the bones of

ther plan of hunting the At this time of the year the bison is the thickest he skin is of the most these skins that the robes are made, withor life would be scarcely re northern parts of this

er months the prairies the months the plants oct. They are not only so that the ordinary cerated, but the snow is into the most fantastic ne places into long and s where no hills were, as where the ground is llows, and leaving only nces bare, whence the by the tempestuous cross the vast expanse. ison congregate for the t, shovelling away with e snow which still clings

inctively keep clear of erous plains and valleys, hidden crevices may at them up. Into these val-to drive them, so that essly entangled in the victims to the spear. e invention whereby the to skim over the surface ons would be in perfect shoe lays the poor ani-f their pursuers. It is describe this ingenious

snow shoe is seen on the pe is that of a fish, and de of ash-wood, kept in ars, one in front and one behind. It is slightly turned up in front. The whole of the space within the framework is filled in with a close and strongly work is littled in with a close and strongly made nettling of hide thongs, much like those of a racquet—indeed, the French Canadians use the word "raquet" to represent the snow shoe. As the snow shoe is about five feet in length and eighteen inches or more in breadth, it is evident that the weight of the wearer is distributed over a large surface, and that a heavy man wearing these shoes can pass with impunity over snow in which a child would sink if only supported on its

The most ingenious part of the snow shoe is the mode by which it is fitted to the foot. It is evident that if it were fastened firmly to the foot, like the sole of a shoe, the wearer would be unable to stir a step. The movewould be unable to stir a step. The move-ment of a snow-shoe wearer is somewhat analogous to that of a skater, the shoe being slid over the snow, and not raised and de-pressed like shoes in ordinary walking. If the reader will refer to the illustration, he will see that in the middle and toward the forepart of the shoe there is a square open-ing, edged by thongs, very much stronger than the others.



SNOW SHOE. (From my collection.)

Just behind the opening is a triangular space crossed by parallel thongs. When the shoe is to be worn, the foot is placed on it so that the heel rests on the parallel thongs, and the centre of the foot is supported by the thick cross-thong, call the "bimikibi-son," the toes passing into the square opening, which is called the eye of the shoe. In order to keep the foot in its place, two leathern loops (not shown in the figure) are attached to the bimikibison, one of which passes over the instep and the other comes round the heel.

As, therefore, the wearer moves along, the feet play freely on the bimikibison, the heels coming down at each step on the parallel thongs, while the toes move up and down through the "eye" of the shoe, which is dragged over the snow by the instep thong, the heel strap being only useful in keeping the foot from slipping out back-

After some practice, the wearer is able to skim over the snow with astonishing speed, but to a novice the first attempt is not only awkward, but causes excruciating pain. The unaccustomed movement of the foot, together with the pressure of the instep strap, produces a pain peculiar to the snow shoe realled by the Canadians "mal du raquet,"
Not only does blood stain the snow as
the excoriated foot drags the heavy shoe ever the surface, but a pain pervades the whole foot, as if all the little bones were dislocated, and rubbing against each other. Perseverance is the only cure for the "mal is able to preceed with perfect comfort.

It often happens that heavy snow storms fall before the people are able to replace the shoes, which are generally damaged in the course of the summer months, and in this case they are obliged to extemporize snow shoes out of flat boards. These are shorter and wider than the regular snow shoes, but are used in much the same manner, the "eye" being cut out of the board, and the necessary thongs being fixed across the opening. These simple instruments are called by a name which signifies "bear'spaw" shoes. Some of the prairie tribes use very long and comparatively narrow skates, turned up in front, and precisely resembling the "skidor" of Northern Europe.

Upborne on the snow shoe, the American Indian has the bison at his mercy. He drives the herd from the eminences into the valleys, and while the poor animals are floundering about in the deep snow, he deliberately selects those which have the largest and softest "robes," and kills them with his spears. Thousands are annually slain in this manner, their skin removed, and with the ex-ception of the tongue and the hump, which are the best parts of the bison, the whole of the carcass is left to the prairie wolves and

birds of prey. On these shoes the native hunters capture the huge moose. They select a time when there has been a partial thaw followed by a frost, so as to leave a thin crust of ice upon a substratum of soft snow. As the moose plunges through the snow, it breaks through Perseverance is the only cure for the "mal this icy crust at every step, cutting its legs du raquet," and after a few days the wearer frightfully with the broken edges, and so falls an easy victim.

Another mode of bison hunting presents a lasso, stops his well-trained horse with a rious analogy with the ingenious method jerk, leaps on its back, and is at once ready curious analogy with the ingenious method of ostrich hunting which is practised by the

Bosjesmans of Southern Africa.

Upon the vast plains of North America the so-called wolves prowl in numbers. They will follow the hunter for weeks together for the sake of the offal of the beasts which he kills. They will not venture to harm him, but follow him by day at a distance of half a mile or so, and at night, when he lies down to sleep, they will couch also at a lies down to sleep, they will couch also at a respectful distance.

Should he wound a bison and not be able to secure it, the wolves are sure to have that animal sooner or later, and if they manage to detach a single bison from the herd, they will fairly persecute the wretched animal to death. But they will never venture to attack a herd of bisons, and, being instinctively aware of the protection afforded by mutual support, the bisons allow the wolves to approach quite close to them, and, indeed, to wander freely among the herd. Of this fact the hunters take advantage in the following manner. They remove the skin of a large wolf, and put it upon themselves, so that when they go on all fours the head of the wolf projects just above their own head, and their arms and legs are partly covered by the skin belonging to the corresponding

Thus disguised, they creep slowly and cautiously toward the herd, bearing their bow and arrows in their left hands. The bisons, whose eves are processed and the herd, bearing their being choked by the leathern cord. When the horse has fallenged and allows himself to be dragged along by the affrighted animal, which soon falls, in consequence of bisons, whose eves are processed. bisons, whose eyes are none of the best, being overshadowed by the masses of black hair that overlap them, think nothing of the supposed wolves, and allow them to come quite close. Even if an animal more wary than his comrades does suspect the ruse, the disguised hunter has merely to turn in another direction, as if the creature he rep-resents has no business with the herd. By degrees, he contrives to creep close to the bison which he prefers, and drives the flintheaded arrow to its heart. No report at-tending the discharge of the arrow, the wounded bison runs for a few paces, and sinks on the ground, mostly without alarming any of its companions. The hunter leaves his dying prey, goes off after another victim, and slays it in a similar fashion. Thus a skilful hunter will manage to exhaust the whole of his stock of arrows, killing a bison with each arrow, and yet not alarm the rest of the herd.

Both in hunting and in warfare the equestrian warriors always carry the lasso attached to the saddles of their horses. It is not, however, kept coiled, as is the case in Mexico, but is allowed to trail on the ground behind their horse. The object of this custom is easily understood. It often happens that, whether in the hunt or warfare, the rider is thrown from his horse. In such a case, as soon as he touches the ground, he seizes the to renew the combat or the chase,

The mode in which the natives themselves with horses is worth a brief de themselves with norses is worth a brief de-scription. In various parts of the country the horses have completely acclimatized themselves, and have run free for many years, so that they have lost all traces of domestication, and have become is truly wild as the bison and the antelope, assembling in large herds, headed by the strongest and swiftest animals. It is from these herds that the natives supply themselves with the horses which of late years have become absolutely necessary to them; and in most cases the animals are captured in fair chase after the following manner:

When an American Indian - say a Camanchee -- wishes to catch a fresh horse, he mounts his best steed, and goes in search of the nearest herd. When he has come as he dashes at the herd at full speed, and, singling out one of the horses, as it gallops along, hampered by the multitude of its companions, flings his lasso over its neck.

As soon as the noose has firmly settled. the hunter leaps off his own steed (which is trained to remain standing on the same spot until it is wanted), and allows himself

comes cautiously up, keeping the lasso tight enough to prevent the animal from fairly recovering its breath, and loose enough to guard against its entire strangulation, and at last is able to place one hand over its

cycs and the other on its nostrils.

The animal is now at his mercy. He breathes strongly into its nostrils, and from that moment the hitherto wild horse is his slave. In order to impress upon the animal the fact of his servitude, he hobbles together its fore-feet for a time, and casts a noose over its lower jaw; but within a wonderfully short period he is able to re-move the hobbles, and to ride the conquered animal into camp. During the time occu-pied in taming the horse, it plunges and struggles in the wildest manner; but after this one struggle it yields the point, and be-comes the willing slave of its conqueror. Those who have seen the late Mr. Rarey operate on a savage horse can easily imagine the scene that takes place on the prairie.

The rapidity with which this operation is completed is really wonderful. An experienced hunter is able to chase, capture, and break a wild horse within an hour, and to do his work so effectually that almost before its companions are out of sight the hitherto wild animal is being ridden as if it had been born in servitude.

The native hunter, cruel master though

he gen damp t self on creatur upon it Ther

of hun the lass These herd, a well as as they knowin Conseq more in the hur on a ho A rai

fire-arn ing," ar Taking as near until he suit hin ing wit fully at aim be neck, a for the within : regaine up to th over its thus to

has bee

who w because animal. imation highly. favorite or in th his chie second horse by The v

This

catching

small a breed of value ha which b thought are on th each. T horses o the aver worth m The 1

into the by "cre however imals. disadvar danger c trained horse with a , and is at once ready or the chase.

h the natives supply es is worth a brief departs of the country mpletely acclimatized e run free for many ave lost all traces of ave become 18 truly the antelope, assemeaded by the strongest It is from these herds ly themselves with the ears have become abhem; and in most cases red in fair chase after

n Indian — say a Cacatch a fresh horse, ed, and goes in search When he has come as out being discovered, d at full speed, and, e horses, as it gallops the multitude of its lasso over its neck. se has firmly settled, s own steed (which is anding on the same), and allows himself by the affrighted anis, in consequence of athern cord.

as fallen, the hunter eeping the lasso tight animal from fairly and loose enough to re strangulation, and e one hand over its ts nostrils.

at his mercy. He to its nostrils, and hitherto wild horse of his servitude, he re-feet for a time, and ower jaw; but within riod he is able to reto ride the conquered aring the time occuorse, it plunges and at manner; but after ds the point, and be-re of its conqueror. the late Mr. Rarey se can easily imagine ce on the prairie.

nich this operation is aderful. An experichase, capture, and hin an hour, and to y that almost before of sight the hitherto den as if it had been

ruel master though

self on the bounds and curvets which the creature makes when it receives its master upon its back.

There is only one drawback to this mode of hunting. It is impossible to capture with the lasso the best and swiftest specimens. These animals always take command of the herd, and place themselves at its head. They seem to assume the responsibility as well as the position of leaders, and, as soon as they fear danger, dart off at full speed, knowing that the herd will follow them. Consequently, they are often half a mile or more in advance of their followers, so that the hunter has no chance of overtaking them

on a horse impeded by the weight of a rider.

A rather strange method of horse taking has been invented since the introduction of fire-arms. This is technically named "creasing," and is done in the following manner. Taking his rifle with him, the hunter creeps as near the herd as he can, and watches until he fixes on a horse that he thinks will suit him. Waiting till the animal is standing with its side toward him, he aims carefully at the top of the neck, and fires. If the aim be correct, the bullet just grazes the neck, and the horse falls as if dead, stunned for the moment by the shock. It recovers within a very short time; but before it has regained its feet the hunter is able to come up to the prostrate animal, place his hands over its eyes, breathe into its nostrils, and thus to subdue it.

This is a very effectual mode of horse catching; but it is not in favor with those who want horses for their own riding, because it always breaks the spirit of the animal, and deprives it of that fire and animation which the native warrior prizes so highly. Indeed, so careful is the Camanchee of his steed, that he will not mount his favorite war horse except in actual warfare, or in the hunt. When he is summoned by his chief, he attends muster, mounted on a second horse, or hack, and leading his war horse by the bridle.

The wild horses of North America are a small and neat-limbed, though powerful, breed of animal. Mr. Catlin says that their value has been much overrated, as even those which belong to the Camanchees, and are thought to be equal to the best Arab horses. are on the average worth some twenty pounds each. The chiefs have generally one or two horses of very superior quality; but as far as the average goes, the Camanchee horse is not worth more than the above mentioned sum.

The horses that are generally brought into the market are those that are obtained by "creasing." Experienced purchasers, however, do not care much about such an-

he generally is, takes special care not to which case the whole herd dashes off, and damp the spirit of his horse, and prides him-gives no more chances to the hunter; or of striking too low, in which case the horse is killed on the spot.

In accordance with their usual custom, some of the tribes perform a sacred dance as a means of bringing the bison within their reach. The most characteristic of these performances is the Buffalo Dance as practised by the Mandans.

Sometimes it happens that the supplies of fresh meat fail. During the greater part of the year the bisons are scattered with tolerable evenness throughout the land, so that the hunters are able to find a sufficiency of game within a few miles of their village, to supply them with food. Indeed, large herds of bisons can often be seen from the village itself, their black masses being conspicuous against the verdure of the ground over which they range.

At certain seasons of the year, however, the animals are sure to withdraw themselves further and further from the villages, so that the hunters, in order to procure meat, are obliged to venture so far from their own ground that they are in danger of meeting with war parties of an inimical tribe. last the hunters report to the council of chiefs and medicine men that they can no longer find game. A solemn conclave is at once held, and if, after a few days of patient waiting, during which every adult throughout the community is reduced to a state of semistarvation, no bisons are found, the buffalo dance is ordered. This remarkable dance is a sort of homage to the Great Spirit, acknowledging that He can send the animals to them, and praying that He will do so; and, as we shall presently see, it is a remedy that never fails.

Among the Mandans every man is obliged by law to have a buffalo mask, i. e. the skin of the head, with the horns added to it. Usually to the head is added a strip of skin some four or five inches wide, extending along the whole length of the animal, and including the tail. When the wearer puts on his mask, the strip of skin extends down his back, and the tufted tail drags on the ground behind him.

I have worn one of these strange masks. and found it much less inconvenient than might have been supposed. It is not nearly so cumbrous as the chief's dress of state, described on page 1276. The buffalo mask is kept by each man at the head of his bed, a circumstance which gives a strange wildness to the interior of the hut, or lodge, as it is called, especially if several young warriors sleep in the same lodge.

As soon as the mandate for the buffalo dance is given, the men repair to their lodges and bring out their masks, together with the weapons which they are accustomed mals. Creasing is, moreover, liable to two disadvantages. The hunter is equally in danger of missing his mark altogether, in arrange themselves in a circle, while the medicine men seat themselves on the ground, beating their sacred drums and shaking their rattles to a rhythmical sort of movement which guides the steps of the dancers.

These move continually in a circle, stamping, yelping, grunting, bellowing, and imitating in various ways the movements of the bisen. The dance goes on day and night without cessation, and as it never ceases until bisons are seen, the reader will understand that it is absolutely effective in bringing them. A spirited sketch of such a dance is

given on the following page.

The mode in which it is kept up is rather amusing. The medicine men who beat the drums and encourage the dancers are relieved from time to time by their companions. But for the dancers there is supposed to be no relief but death. This difficulty, however, is surmounted by a sort of legal fiction. When one of the performers has yelped, stamped, bellowed, and leaped until he can dance no longer, he stoops down and places his hands on the ground. Another dancer, who is armed with a very weak bow and arrows with large blunt heads, fits an arrow to his bow, and shoots him. The wounded dancer falls to the ground, and is seized by the bystanders, who drag him out of the ring, go through the movements of skinning him and cutting him up, when he is allowed to retire and rest from his labors. As soon as he is dragged out of the ring, another dancer leaps into his place, and in this way the dance may go on for weeks without cessation.

Meanwhile scouts are posted on all the hills within range, and as soon as one of them sees the bisons, he gives the signal by tossing his rope in the air in the direction of the game. Mr. Catlin relates a remarkable instance of the buffalo dance and its sequel.

Game had been scarce, the dance had been going on for days, and the village was in a state of increasing distress, when the welcome signal was seen from the hills. dance ceased, the young men flew to their arms, sprang on their horses, and dashed off into the prairie toward the signal.

"In the village, where hunger reigned and starvation was almost ready to look them in the face, all was instantly turned to joy and gladness. The chief and doctors, who had been for seven days dealing out minimum rations to the community from the public crib, now spread before their subjects the contents of their own private caches (i. e.

hidden stores), and the last of everything that could be mustered, that they might eat a thanksgiving to the Great Spirit for His goodness in sending them a supply of buffalo

" A general carouse of banqueting ensued, which occupied the greater part of the day, and their hidden stores, which might have fed them on an emergency for several weeks, were pretty nearly used up on the occasion. Bones were half picked, dishes half emptied, and then handed to the dogs. I was not forgotten in the general surfeit, Several large and generous wooden bowls of pemmican and other palatable food were sent to my painting room, and I received them in this time of scarcity with great pleasure."

When the feast was over, songs and dances set in, and the whole village was filled with sounds of revelry. Suddenly, in the midst of their mirth, two or three of the hunters dashed in among the feasters, one having in his hands a still bleeding scalp, another sitting wounded on his horse, whose white coat was crimsoned with the fast-flowing blood of the rider, while another was, though unwounded, totally unarmed, having flung away his weapons in the hurry of

flight.
Their fatal story was soon told. bisons, after whom the hunters had gone were nothing more than empty skins, within which a party of Sioux warriors had hidden themselves, and were imitating the action of the animals which they personated Inveterate enemies of the Mandans, they had reconnoitred their village by night, and ascertained that they were executing the buffalo dance. Several of them procured bison skins, and enacted the part of the animals, while their comrades were concealed behind the bluffs.

Fortunately for the Mandans, their leader became suspicious of the supposed bisons, and halted his troop before they had quite fallen into the trap, and, when some eighty or ninety mounted Sioux dashed at them from behind the bluff, they were just start-ing homeward. As it was, however, eight of them fell, a loss which was but ill compensated by one or two Sioux scalps secured by the Mandans in the hurry of flight. Even under such untoward circumstances, the buffalo dance did not lose its reputation, for within two days a large herd of bisons passed near the village, and afforded an abundant supply of meat.

the last of everything d, that they might eat e Great Spirit for His hem a supply of buffalo

of banqueting ensued, eater part of the day, es, which might have aergency for several early used up on the e half picked, dishes n hauded to the dogs. In the general surfeit erous wooden bowls of palatable food were room, and I received arcity with great plea-

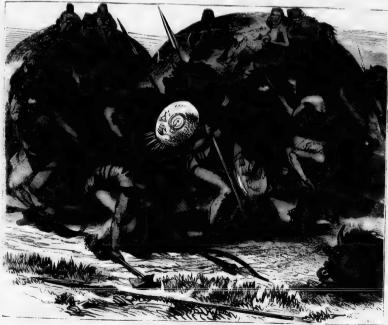
was over, songs and he whole village was revelry. Suddenly, in th, two or three of the long the feasters, one a still bleeding scalp, ed on his horse, whose ned with the fast-flow-r, while another was, tally unarmed, having ons in the hurry of

ras soon told. The
ne hunters had gone
than empty skins,
of Sioux warriors had
d were imitating the
hich they personated,
f the Mandans, they
village by night, and
were executing the
d of them procured
d the part of the anirades were concealed

Mandans, their leader the supposed bisons, before they had quite d, when some eighty oux dashed at them they were just start-was, however, eight ch was but ill com-Sioux scalps secured turry of flight. Even cumstances, the bufe its reputation, for gre herd of bisons and afforded an abun-



(1.) BISON HUNTING. (See page 1293.)



(2.) BUFFALO DANCE. (See page 1298.)

(1299)

THE TRI WE no of thes with th youths knowled throws of whice gloves compar initiatic. Until unknow was away pass threfore t warriors mony we never by acter of by his signessent. for the and thur supersti emony is and the of it.

The c is, in facting the men what them value is a second to the control of the cont

BA IN

CHAPTER CXXXVIII.

THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS - Continued.

RELIGION - SUPERSTITION.

THE TERRIBLE ORDEAL OF THE MANDAMS - LEGEND OF THE FLOOD - APPROACH OF THE FIRST MAN-THE GREAT MEDICINE LODGE, AND ITS CONTENTS - APPROACH OF THE CANDIDATES, AND DE-PARTURE OF THE FIRST MAN -- BUFFALO DANCE, AND THE BIG CANOE -- APPROACH OF THE EVIL SPIRIT - POWER OF THE MEDICINE PIPE - COMMENCEMENT OF INITIATION - TRIAL BY SUSPEN-SION - SWOON AND REJOVERY - THE LAST RACE - TWO COURAGEOUS INITIATES - LOOKING AT THE SUN-RAIN MAKING-THE WHITE BUFFALO HAIR, AND HIS PROWESS-THE MEDICINE BAGS AND THE TOTEMS -- THE MEDICINE MAN AT WORK -- THE WOUNDED MAN AND SICK GIRL --INITIATION OF THE MIDE ORDER - THE PIPES OF PEACE AND WAR - SACRIFICES.

We now come to the religious ceremonies ing conducted in the presence of the great of these remarkable tribes, and will begin chief and medicine man, it enables the of these remarkable tribes, and will begin with the terrible ordeal through which the youths have to pass before they can be acknowledged as men. Among the Mandans, this ordeal, for length and for severity, throws into the shade all the various ordeals of which we have read. Even the terrible gloves of the Mundurucú are mild when compared with the horrors of the Mandan initiation.

Until late years this ceremony was quite unknown. Every one who knew the people was aware that the Mandan youths had to pass through some terrible scenes of torture before they could take their place, among the warriors, but the details of the whole ceremony were kept a profound secret, and were never betrayed until Mr. Catlin, in his character of medicine man (which he had gained by his skill in painting), was permitted to be present. It is most fortunate that he did so, for the Mandan tribe has utterly perished, and thus the records of a most extraordinary superstition would have vanished. The cer-

The ceremony has a religious aspect, and is, in fact, performed for the sake of propiti-ating the Great Spirit in favor of the young men who undergo it, so that he may make them valiant warriors and successful hunters.

leader of the tribe to watch the behavior of the young men who pass through the ordeal, and to decide upon their ability to sustain the various privations of Indian warfare.

The reader must first be told that among the Mandans there survived the legend of a flood which covered the earth, and from which only one man escaped in a large canoe. In the centre of the village there is a large open space, in which is a conventional representation of the "big canoe," in which the First or Only Man escaped. It is not the least like a cance, and in fact is nothing more than a sort of tub standing on one end. It is bound with wooden hoops, and is religiously preserved from injury, not the least scratch being allowed to defile its smooth surface.

The ceremony only takes place once in the year, the time being designated by the full expansion of the willow leaves under the banks of the river. The Mandans posemony is a very long and complicated one, and the following is a condensed account of it. of the olive. The bird itself is held sacred, and, as it may not be injured, it may often be seen feeding on the tops of the Mandan

Early on the morning of the appointed day, a figure is seen on a distant bluff, ap-It has also another important object. Be- proaching with slow and stately steps. As

soon as he is seen, the whole village becomes a scene of confusion, as if the enemy were attacking it. The dogs are caught and muzzled, the horses that are feeding on the surrounding pastures are driven into the village, the warriors paint their faces for battle, seize their spears, string their bows, and prepare their arrows.

In the midst of the confusion the First Man, or Nu-mohk-muck-a-nah, as he is called in the Mandan tongue, stalks into the central space, where the chief and principal warriors receive him and shake hands. He is a strange object to the eye. His nearly naked body is painted white, a white wolf-skin mantle is thrown over his shoulders, his head is decorated with plumes of ravens' feathers, and in his left hand he bears his mystery pipe, which he treats with the greatest veneration.

After greeting the chief, he proceeds to the great medicine lodge, which is kept closed during the year, and has it swept and the floor strewn with fresh green boughs and aromatic herbs. Several skulls of men and bisons are laid on the floor, a number of new ropes are thrown over the beams, a quantity of strong wooden skewers are placed under them, and in the centre is built a slight platform, on the top of which is laid the chief medicine or mystery of the tribe. This is so sacred that no one is allowed to approach it except the conductor of the ceremony, and none but he ever knows what it is.

He next goes to every hut in succession, stands before the gate, and weeps loudly. When the owner comes out, the First Man narrates the circumstances of the flood and of his own escape, and demands an axe or a knife as a sacrifice to the Great Spirit. Every hut furnishes an edged tool of some kind; and when the tale is completed, they are carried into the medicine lodge. There they rest until the last day of the ceremonies when they are thrown into a deep pool in the river. No one is allowed to touch them, and there they lie until at some future day they will be discovered, to the great bewilderment of antiquarians.

From the moment that the First Man enters the village a dead silence reigns, a circumstance quite in opposition to the usual noisy habits of a native village. Where he sleeps no one knows, but at dawn of the following morning he again enters the village, as he had done before, and walks to the medicine lodge, whither he is followed by the candidates for initiation walking in Indian file, and each painted fantastically, and carrying his bow and arrows, his shield, and "medicine bag." Of this article we shall learn more in a future page. In silence they seat themselves round the lodge, each having his weapons hung over his head.

Here they have to sit for four days, during which time they may not communicate

with those on the outside of the hut, and are not allowed to eat, drink, or sleep. When they have taken their places, the First Man lights his pipe from the fire that is kept burning in the centre of the lodge, and makes an oration to the candidates, exhorting them to be courageous and enduring, and praying that the Great Spirit may give them strength to pass satisfactorily through the ordeal.

He then calls to him an old medicine man, and appoints him to be master of the ceremonies, handing him the mystery pipe as a symbol of office. Addressing the assembled company, he takes leave of the chiefs, saying that he will return in another year to re-open the lodge, and stalks slowly out of the village, disappearing over the bluffs whence he came. The master of the ceremonles then takes his place in the centre of the lodge, and relights the pipe, uttering with every whiff of smoke a petition to the Great Spirit in behalf of the candidates. For three full days they sit silently round the lodge, but outside it a strange series of ceremonies takes place.

ceremonies takes place.

Chief among them is the buffalo dance, in which the eight actors wear the entire skins of bisons, and carry on their backs a large bundle of slight twigs. They also carry a mystery rattle in one hand, and a slender staff in the other. They arrange themselves in four pairs round the Big Cance, each pair corresponding with one of the cardinal points of the compass. Between each group dances a young man, two of them painted black and covered with white stars, so as to represent the night, and the other two painted red, to represent the day.

Beside the Big Cance sit two medicine men, wearing the skins of grizzly bears, and threatening to devour the whole village. In order to appease their hunger, the women bring continual relays of meat in dishes, which are at once carried off to the prairie by men painted entirely black, except their heads, which are white. They are thus colored in imitation of the bald-headed eagle. As they run to the prairie they are pursued by a host of little boys painted yellow, with white heads, and called antelopes. After a severe chase they catch the eagle-men, seize the food, and devour it.

These dances occur several times daily, the performers being summoned by the master of the ceremonies, who comes out of the medicine lodge, followed by his immediate assistants, and proceeds to the Big Canoe, against which he leans, and weeps aloud as if in dire distress. The dance takes place four times on the first day, eight times on the second, twelve times on the third, and sixteen times on the fourth; the sound of the old man's wailing cry being the signal for the dancers to issue from the hut in which they dress.

During each performance, the old medi-

dress t Great tions, a that e hold th the ev rites he Thirty yaunt but aft ble-loo

on a appears wild an ters the painted his moulike greaten the runs on the at the g

They and shi master hears to Canoe, holds hi The der drous in each lim it had to him.

"This

nity to g free from beat yet alarm w bitant la sudden of lous possible. T side, wit face, wit

sented a individual eyeballs each other acy, relyicine or ministration body mather as Evil Spirron the otwith a local him charm of

This so powers of the assau have gai tside of the hut, and drink, or sleep. When places, the First Man the fire that is kept e of the lodge, and ne candidates, exhortgeous and enduring, reat Spirit may give satisfactorily through

im an old medicine to be master of the im the mystery pipe Addressing the as-takes leave of the vill return in another ge, and stalks slowly appearing over the The master of the his place in the cenlights the pipe, utter-smoke a petition to alf of the candidates. ey sit silently round t a strange series of

the buffalo dance, in wear the entire skins their backs a large. They also carry a hand, and a slender They arrange them-und the Big Canoe, ag with one of the compass. Between young man, two of covered with white t the night, and the o represent the day. e sit two medicine of grizzly bears, and he whole village. In hunger, the women of meat in dishes. d off to the prairie black, except their e. They are thus e bald-headed eagle. ie they are pursued ainted yellow, with antelopes. After a the eagle-men, seize

everal times daily, summoned by the s, who comes out of wed by his immedi-ds to the Big Canoe, and weeps aloud as if nce takes place four ight times on the the third, and sixthe sound of the ing the signal for

nce, the old medi-

cine men who are beating their drums ad- | The women then begin in their turn to asdress the bystanders, telling them that the Great Spirit is pleased with their invocations, and that he has given them peace; that even their women and children can hold the mouths of grizzly bears; and that the evil spirit who is challenged by these rites has not dared to make his appearance. Thirty-two times during the four days this vaunt is made, and no evil spirit appears; but after the last day he comes, and a horri-ble-looking object he is.

On a distant bluff the evil spirit makes his appearance, rushing toward the village in a wild and devious course. Presently he en-ters the circle, perfectly naked, with his body painted black and covered with white rings, his mouth decorated with white indentations like great teeth, and holding in his hand a long magic staff tipped with a red ball. As he runs along, he slides this ball before him on the ground, and suddenly makes a rush at the groups of women who are witnessing the ceremony.

They fall back on each other in terror, and shriek for aid, which is given by the master of the ceremonies. As soon as he hears their cries, he runs from the Big Canoe, where he has been weeping, and holds his magic pipe in front of the intruder. The demon is instantly checked by its wondrous influence, and he stands as if petrified, each limb remaining in the attitude which it had taken when the pipe was held before

"This check gave the females an opportunity to get out of reach, and when they were free from their danger, though all hearts beat yet with the intensest excitement, their alarm was cooled down into the most exorbitant laughter and shouts of applause at his sudden defeat, and the awkward and ridiculous posture in which he was stopped and held. The old man was braced stiff by his side, with his eyeballs glaring him in the face, whilst the medicine pipe held in its mystic chain his satanic majesty, annulling all the powers of his magical wand, and also depriving him of the power of locomotion.

Surely, no two human beings ever presented a more striking group than these two individuals did for a few moments, with their eyeballs set in direst mutual hatred upon each other; both struggling for the supremacy, relying on the potency of their medicine or mystery; the one held in check, with his body painted black, representing, or rather assuming to be, O-kee-hee-de (the Evil Spirit), frowning everlasting vengeance on the other, who sternly gazed him back with a look of exultation and contempt, as he held him in check and disarmed under the charm of his sacred mystery-pipe."

This scene is repeatedly enacted, until the powers of the magic pipe are proved against

sail their persecutor with jeers and laughter, until at last one of them snatches up a handful of mud and dashes it in his face. He is at once vanquished by this attack, and begins to weep piteously. Emboldened by this confession of weakness, another woman snatches away his magic staff, and breaks it across her knee. The fragments are seized by the surrounding women, who break them to pieces and fling them at the head of the demon. Being now deprived of all his power, he runs off across the prairie, followed for half a mile or so by the women, who pelt him with sticks, stones, and mud, until at last he effects his escape, and the village is rid of the evil spirit for another year.

Now the remainder of the initiation may

The little scaffold with its mystic burden is removed from the centre of the great medicine lodge, the hide ropes are passed through apertures in the roof to men who stand outside, and the master of the ceremonies, and his assistants, together with the chiefs and braves of the tribe, re-enter the

lodge, and take up their positions.

The first candidate is now called, and, wasted by four days of abstinence from food, drink, or sleep, places himself in front of two of the operators. One of these, who is armed with a double edged knife, purposely blunted and notched, pinches up an inch or so of flesh of the shoulder or breast, and pushes the knife through it, between his finger and thumb and the body of the candidate. The knife is then withdrawn, and one of the wooden skewers forced through the aperwooden skewers lored through the aper-ture. This operation is repeated on the other shoulder or breast, on each arm just below the shoulder and below the elbow, upon each thigh, and upon each leg just below the knee

While this operation is being performed, the candidates do not allow the slightest symptom of pain to escape them, and they even invite the spectators to watch their countenances, so as to ascertain that they betray no signs of suffering. They may well do so, for upon the verdict of these chiefs depends the consideration in which these depends the consideration in which they will be held in after life, and no man has a chance of being appointed the leader of a war party if he has been seen to flinch during the ordeal.

As soon as these preparations are com-pleted, two of the hide ropes are lowered from the roof, and hitched round the skewers on the breast or shoulders. To the others are hung the weapons of the candidate, while to those of the lower arm and leg are suspended the skulls of bisons. A signal is then given, and the poor wretch is hauled up into the air, when he swings suspended powers of the magic pipe are proved against the assaults of the evil one, and the people only his own weight but that of the heavy have gained confidence in its protection.

from the ground. In this terrible position he has to remain until nature finally gives way, and he faints. The artist has represented this stage of the fearful ordeal on the

following page

"Surrounded," writes Mr. Catlin, "by imps and demons, as they appear, a dozen or more, who seem to be concocting and devising means for his exquisite agony, gather around him, when one of the number advances toward him in a sneering manner. and commences turning him round with a pole which he brings in his hand for that purpose. This is done in a gentle manner at first, but gradually increased, until the poor fellow, whose proud spirit can control its agony no longer, bursts out in the most lamentable and heart-rending cries that the human voice is capable of producing, crying forth a prayer to the Great Spirit to support and protect him in this dreadful trial, and continually repeating his confidence in his protection.

"In this condition he is continued to be turned faster and faster, and there is no hope of escape for him, nor the chance for the slightest relief, until, by fainting, his voice falters, and his strugglings cease, and he hangs a still and apparently lifeless corpse. When he is by turning gradually brought to this condition, which is generally done within ten or fifteen minutes, there is a close scrutiny passed upon him among his tormentors, who are checking and holding each other back as long as the least struggling or tremor can be discovered; lest he should be removed before he is, as they term it, en-

tirely dead."

When they are satisfied, a signal is given to the rope-holders, and the senseless man is lowered to the ground, the skewers which passed through his breast are removed, and the ropes attached to another candidate. Just as he falls, he is allowed to lie, no one daring to touch him, for he has put himself under the protection of the Great Spirit, and

to help him would be a sacrilege.

When he recovers a little strength, he crawls to another part of the lodge, where sits a medicine man with a bison skull before him, and an axe in his hand. Holding up the little finger of his left hand as a sacrifice to the Great Spirit, the initiate lays it upon the skull, when it is severed by a blow from the axe. Sometimes the fore-finger of the same hand is also offered, so that there are only left the thumb and the two middle fingers, which are all that are needed to hold the bow.

It is a point of honor with the initiates to recover as quickly as possible from their swoon, and the chief warriors all watch them narrowly on this point, inasmuch as rapidity of recovery is a proof that the individual is strong, and capable of enduring the hardships which every war party is nearly certain to undergo before their return.

The final scene of the initiation is called the Last Race, and is, if possible, even a more dreadful trial than any which the candidates have yet undergone. An illustration of it is also given the reader on the next page.

The reader will remember that, although the skewers by which the young men were suspended are removed as soon as they are lowered to the ground, there yet remain eight more, two in each arm, and two in each leg. To each of these is attached a heavy weight, such as the bison skull, and none of them may be drawn out. They must absolutely be torn out through the flesh by main force, and that this object may be accomplished the Last Race is run. Hitherto the ordeal has been confined to the interior of the medicine lodge, but the Last Race is run in the open air, and the whole of the inhabitants are spectators.

The master of the ceremonies leaves the medicine lodge, goes to the Big Canoe, leans his head against it, and sets up his wailing cry. At the sound of his voice twenty young men issue from the dressing hut, all of the same height, and all wearing beautiful war dresses of eagle quills. Each carries in one hand a wreath of willow boughs, and on reaching the Big Canoe they arrange themselves round it in a circle, holding the wreaths as connecting links. They then wreaths as connecting links. They then run round the cance, from left to right, screaming and yelping at the top of their voices, and going as fast as their legs can carry them.

The candidates are now brought out of the medicine lodge, each trailing the heavy weights attached to his limbs, and are placed at equal intervals outside the ring of runners. As each takes his place, he is given into the charge of two powerful young men, who pass round each of his wrists a broad leathern strap, which they grasp firmly with-

As soon as all are ready, a signal is given, and the candidates are set running round the Big Canoe, outside the inner circle, each man being dragged along by his supporters, until the skulls and other weights tear out the skewers to which they are fastened. The bystanders yell and applaud at the tops of their voices, so as to drown the groans of the sufferers, should the force of nature extract a sound from them, and to encourage them to endure this last trial. It often happens that the flesh is so tough that the skewers cannot be dragged out, and in such cases the friends of the sufferers jump on the skulls as they trail along the ground so as to add their weight to them.

The candidates mostly faint before they have run very far, but they are still dragged round the circle, and not released until the last weight has been torn away. As soon as this occurs, the two men who have dragged their senseless charge loosen their

the initiation is called is, if possible, even a than any which the undergone. An illusiven the reader on the

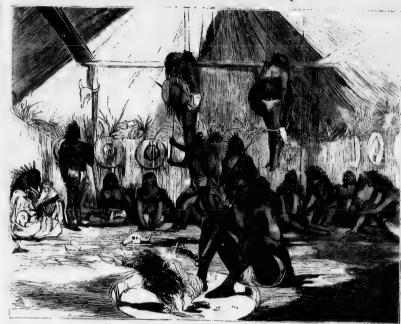
nember that, although a the young men were ed as soon as they are and, there yet remain ach arm, and two in of these is attached a s the bison skull, and be drawn out. They forn out through the ad that this object may be Last Race is run, has been confined to edicine lodge, but the the open air, and that are spectators.

ceremonies leaves the o the Big Canoe, leans and sets up his wailing of his voice twenty in the dressing hut, all ind all wearing beautie quills. Each carries of willow boughs, and Canoe they arrange in a circle, holding the g links. They then, from left to right, g at the top of their ast as their legs can

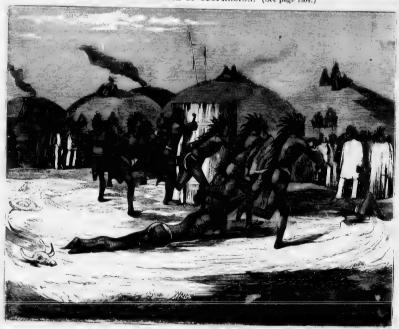
ow brought out of the trailing the heavy slimbs, and are placed side the ring of runhis place, he is given powerful young men, of his wrists a broad hey grasp firmly with-

ady, a signal is given, a set running round the inner circle, each ng by his supporters, her weights tear out a they are fastened. d applaud at the tops drown the groans of er force of nature exm, and to encourage last trial. It often is so tough that the ged out, and in such as sufferers jump on along the ground so to them.

cly faint before they they are still dragged ot released until the corn away. As soon wo men who have charge loosen their



(1.) MANDAN ORDEAL OF SUSPENSION. (See page 1304.)



(2.) THE LAST RACE. (See page 1362.)

holdsing to may to a sec Spirit sense to his and do The not be fairly relate tive o had

sinew throw hung a cry cerem the s Prese at the pleasa three until him t

branc fering In t The u cipitor into th the w down
ble pedays,
gave v
He sw
steep
Sucl

are at means ance, a the tri
Dresing, as
man, a
gone i
by the

some o mitted Some | men ar on the and the portion are pe

dergon the tri

holds, and run away as fast as they can, leaving the body lying on the ground. No one may touch the poor wretch; and there he lies, a second time in the keeping of the Great Spirit. After a few minutes he recovers his senses, rises, and staggers through the crowd to his own hut, where his friends meet him.

and do their best to succor him.

The rule is absolute that the man may not be released until the skewers have been fairly torn through the flesh. Mr. Catlin relates two remarkable anecdotes illustrative of this fact. In the one case the skewer had been unfortunately passed under a sinew. The poor lad was in vain dragged round the ring, and in vain did his friends throw themselves on the elk skull that was hung to him. At last the spectators set up a cry of distress, and the master of the ceremonies stopped the runners, leaving the senseless body lying on the ground. Presently the lad recovered himself, looked at the cause of his torment, and with a pleasant smile crawled on his hands and knees to the prairie, where he remained for three days longer without food or drink, until suppuration took place, and enabled him to release himself from his encumbrance. He crawled on his hands and knees to his home, and, in spite of his sufferings, recovered in a few days.

In the other case, two of the weights attached to the arms could not be removed. The unfortunate wretch crawled to the precipitous bank of the river, and drove a stake into the ground. To this stake he fastened the weights by two ropes, and let himself down half-way to the water. In this terrible position he hung for more than two power to sustain the character. days, until the too stubborn flesh at last gave way, and let him fall into the water. He swam to the side, made his way up the

steep bank, and recovered.

Such instances as these, terrible as they are at the time, are never regretted by those to whom they occur, as they offer means of proving their valor and endurance, and any one who has overcome them is held in much consideration by the rest of

Dreadful as is the whole scene of suffering, and sufficient to kill an ordinary white man, several of the warriors have undergone it more than once, and Mr. Catlin saw by the scars left on the body and limbs that some of the chief Mandan braves had submitted to the torture no less than five times. Some part of the estimation in which such men are held is owing to the belief of the Mandans that the annual supply of bisons depends on the proper fulfilling of these ceremonies, and that the Great Spirit is gratified in proportion to the number of times that the rites are performed. Thus those who have undergone them repeatedly are benefact rs to the tribe in general, and as such receive stand there from sunrise to sunset, and if their gratitude.

A somewhat similar system among the Dacotah or Sioux Indians, as they are generally called. This, however, is a voluntary proceeding very rarely seen, and one which is intended simply to raise the candidate to the rank of medicine man. A tall and slender pole is set firmly in the ground, and to the top of it is fastened one eround, and to the top of it is fastened one end of a rope, the other being made into a loop. The candidate for mystic honors takes his place at the pole before dawn, painted gaily, and holding his medicine bag in his hand. Just before the sun rises, two skewers are passed through his breast, as is done by the Mandans, and the loop of the

rope is passed over them.

The man now stands opposite the spot where the sun will rise, fixes his eyes upon it, and leans backward so as to throw the whole weight of his body on the rope, his feet serving more to balance than sustain him. As the sun passes over the heavens, he moves gradually round, never speaking nor taking his eyes from it; and if he can endure this torture from sunrise to sunset without fainting, he earns the rank to which he aspires, together with all the valuable presents which are laid at the foot of the

pole by his admirers.

There is great risk attending this practice. Should the man faint in spite of the shouts and cheering cries of his friends, and the prayers and songs of the medicine men who sit around the pole, chanting and beating their magic drums, his reputation is lost, and he will ever afterward be held up to ridicule as one who had the presumption to set up for a medicine man, and had no

The Mandans have a curious mode of obtaining the rank of medicine man, resembling in many points the rain making ceremonies of Africa. As they depend much for their subsistence on the maize which they grow, a drought is always a great calamity, and must be averted if possible. When such an event occurs, the women, whose business it is to till the ground, come to the chiefs and doctors, and beg them to make rain, lest the corn should die. A council is then held, and the medicine men as-semble in the council-house, and go through their preliminary ceremonies. No one is allowed to enter the house except the medicine men and those candidates who aspire to that rank.

There are generally ten or fifteen young men who prize that rank so highly that they are willing to run the risk of failure, and to lose all reputation in their tribe if they fail in drawing down the rain from the sky. They are called one by one out of the lodge, and take their position on the roof, when they go through the ceremonies which they think will produce the desired rain. They

graced, and debarred from all hope of being unnoticed by the excited crowd. In a moadmitted into the Council of the tribe. ment he was on the roof of the council Should, however, the rain descend, the reputation of the rain maker is assured, and he is at once admitted into the council among the chiefs and greatest braves.

Mr. Catlin relates a curious account of rain making of which he was a witness. There had been a drought for some time in the land, and the rain makers had been at work for three days. On the first day a man named Wah-kee, or the Shield, essayed his fortune, and failed. The same fate befell Om-pah, or the Elk, in spite of his head-Om-pan, or the Eik, in spite of his nead-dress made of the skin of the raven, the bird that soars amid the storm. Wa-rah-pa, or the Beaver, also tried and failed; and on the fourth day Wak-a-dah-ha-hee, the White Buffalo Hair, took his stand on the lodge. He placed his chief reliance on the red lightnings with which he had painted his shield, and the single arrow which he carried in his hand.

He made an oration to the people, saying rain or live with the dogs and old women all his life. He explained that one candidate had failed because the shield warded off the rain clouds; that the second failed because the raven was a bird that soared above the storm, and so did not care whether it rained or not; and the third failed because the beaver was always wet, and did not require rain. But as for himself, the red lightnings on his shield should bring the black thunder-doud, and his arrow should pierce the cloud and pour the water on the fields.

Now it happened that just at that time a steamboat the first that had ever been up the Missouri fired a salute from a twelvepounder gun, as she came in sight of the Mandan village. The sound of the gun was naturally taken for thunder, and the village was filled with joy. Valuable gifts were pre-sented on all sides to the successful candidate, mothers were bringing their daughters to offer them as his wives, and the medicine men were issuing from their lodge in order to admit him formally among them-

Suddenly, from his elevated post, Wak-adah-ha-hee saw the steamboat ploughing her way up the river, and emitting the thunder from her sides. He turned to the chiefs and the assembled multitude, and told them that, though the sounds were not those of thunder, his medicine was strong, and had brought a thunder-boat to the village. The whole population thronged to the bank in silent wonder, and in the excitement of the time even the rain maker was forgotten. The passengers landed among the Mandans, and for the rest of among the Mandans, and for the rest of the day all was turmoil and confusion. Just before sunset the White Buffalo Hair spied

ment he was on the roof of the councilhouse again, his bow strung and the arrow brandished in his hand. He renewed his boastings and adjurations, and as the cloud came over the village, he bent his bow and shot his arrow into the sky. Down came the rain in torrents, drenching the fortunate rain maker as he stood on the roof, still brandishing his thunder shield and vaunting

its power.

The storm continued during the night, but unfortunately a flash of lightning entered a lodge, and killed a young girl. Construction reigned throughout the village. and no one was more frightened than th newly-made medicine man, who feared that the Council would hold him responsible for the girl's fate, and condemn him to a cruel death. Moreover, he really considered that he was in some way responsible, as he had left the top of the council-house before he

had brought rain. that he was willing to sacrifice himself for the good of the tribe, and either to bring as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sent his tribe as the sun rose, he again manufactured in the sun rose has a sun rose. as the sun rose, he again mounted the lodge and addressed the people. His medicine was too strong, he said. "I am young, and I was too fast. I knew not where to stop. The wigwam of Mah-sish is laid low, and many are the eyes that weep for Ko-ka (the Antelope). Wak-a-dah-ha-hee gives three horses to gladden the hearts of those that weep for Ko-ka. His medicine is great. His arrow pierced the black cloud, and the lightning came, and the thunder boat also. Who says that the medicine of Wak-a-dah-hahee is not strong?" This ingenious address was received with shouts of applause, and from that time to his death Wak-a-dah-hahee was known by the honorable title of the

"Big Double Medicine." We will now glance at the medicine bag, which plays so important a part among all the tribes of North America.

When a boy is fourteen or fifteen years old, he is sent into the woods to find his medicine. He makes a couch of boughs, and then lies without food or drink for several days, the power of his medicine being in proportion to the length of his fast. severe is this discipline that instances have been known when the lad has died from the long abstinence to which he subjected him-self. When he has endured to the utmost, be yields himself to sleep, and the first beast, bird, or reptile of which he dreams becomes his "medicine."

He then returns home, and as soon as he has recovered a little strength, he goes out in search of his medicine, and, having killed it, preserves the skin in any shape which his fancy may dictate. It is mostly sewed up in a black cloud creeping up from the horizon, able, according to the size of the creature

from w is thre is 80 ST the gar Fron parts.

indispe dertaki where he lose and the self to "make not res ing and enemy bag, his he then slain m man wl succeed in fair " double portuni bags as medicin scalp, a further

by the t where a his med any disp the opin be induc to bury were th about it sacred a were ali to it: an offer a h Such a lic ceren

prairie, t

the med horse, w 8038es. branded. the proce the sacri Great Sp the anim place am and if at once reco again. St very high the privil on his ma sacrificed horses.

In con be mentic each fam animal, s toise, &c. cited crowd. In a moe roof of the councilstrung and the arrow and. He renewed his tions, and as the cloud by he bent his bow and the sky. Down came lirenching the fortunate tood on the roof, still ler shield and vaunting

ned during the night, flash of lightning ened a young girl. Con-broughout the village, re frightened than the man, who feared that ld him responsible for ndemn him to a cruel really considered that responsible, as he had ouncil-house before he

morning, he sent his his three horses, and, ain mounted the lodge eople. His medicine l. "I am young, and w not where to stop. t weep for Ko-ka (the ah-ha-hee gives three hearts of those that s medicine is great. black cloud, and the e thunder boat also. cine of Wak-a-dah-hahis ingenious address outs of applause, and death Wak-a-dah-hahonorable title of the

at the medicine bag, nt a part among all perica.

teen or fifteen years ne woods to find his couch of boughs, and or drink for several s medicine being in gth of his fast. So that instances have ad has died from the h he subjected himured to the utmost, p, and the first beast, he dreams becomes

e, and as soon as he rength, he goes out e, and, having killed any shape which his mostly sewed up in contains one or two der will see that the is exceedingly variize of the creature

From the medicine bag the Indian never parts. He considers its presence absolutely indispensable to ensure success in any undertaking, and even carries it into battle, where he trusts to it for protection. Should he lose it in battle, he is utterly disgraced, and there is only one way of restoring him-self to reputation. An Indian can only "make his medicine" once, so that he may not restore it by another probation of fast-ing and dreaming. But if he can slay an enemy in open battle, and take his medicine bag, his status in the tribe is restored, and he thenceforth assumes the medicine of the slain man in exchange for his own. If a man who has not lost his own medicine succeeds in capturing one from an enemy in fair battle, he is entitled to assume a "double-medicine," and never loses an opportunity of displaying both the medicine bags as trophies of his prowess. Taking a medicine bag is as honorable as taking a scalp, and the successful warrior has the further advantage of being doubly protected

by the two charms.

Very few instances have been known where an Indian has voluntarily parted with his medicine bag, and in such cases scarcely any display of valor will reinstate him in the opinion of his tribe. Sometimes he can be induced by the solicitation of white men to bury it, but he treats the grave as if it were that of a revered relation, hovering about it as much as possible, lying over the sacred spot, and talking to the bag as if it were alive. Sometimes he offers sacrifices to it, and, if he be a wealthy man, he will

offer a horse.

Such a sacrifice as this takes rank as a public ceremony. A long procession goes to the prairie, the lead being taken by the owner of the medicine bag, driving before him the horse, which must always be the best he possesses. The animal is curiously painted and branded, and is held by a long lasso. When the procession arrives at the appointed spot, the sacrificer makes a long prayer to the Great Spirit, and then slips the lasso from the animal, which from that time takes its place among the wild horses of the prairie, and if at any time caught by the lasso, is at once recognized by the brand, and set free again. Such a sacrifice as this is appreciated very highly by the tribe, and gives the man the privilege of recording the circumstance on his mantle and tent. One Mandan chief sacrificed in this way no less than seventeen

In connection with the medicine bag may be mentioned the "totem," or mark by which each family is known. This is mostly an animal, such as a wolf, a bear, a dog, a tortoise, &c. If a chief wishes to show that he

from whose skin it is formed. Sometimes it is three feet or more in length, and often it is strikes with his axe a chip off a tree and is so small that it can be concealed under the garments of the owner.

I and his party have passed a given spot, he is trikes with his axe a chip off a tree and draws on the white surface his totem. Or, if he sends an order to a distance, he draws if he sends an order to a distance, he draws his totem on a piece of bark, and gives it to his messenger as a token

To return to the medicine man. He is best seen to advantage when exercising his art upon a sick person. He wears for this purpose one of the most extraordinary dresses which the mind of man ever conceived. No two medicine men wear a similar costume, but in all it is absolutely essential that every article shall be abnormal. Mr. Catlin saw one of these men called in to practise on a Blackfoot Indian, who had been shot through the body with two bullets. There was not the least chance of his recovery, but still the medicine man must be summoned. His strange, grotesque appearance, and the wild ceremony over the sick man are vividly represented on page

A ring was formed round the dying man, and a lane was preserved through them, by which the mystery man would make his appearance. In a few minutes a general hush-h-h ran through the assembly as the tinkling and rattling of his ornaments heralded the approach of the wise man. As he entered approach of the wise man. As ne entered the ring, nothing could surpass the wild grotesqueness of his costume. By way of a coat, he wore the skin of a yellow bear—an article exceedingly rare in North America, and therefore in itself a powerful medicine. The skin of the head was formed into a rocal which entirely hid the foctures of the mask, which entirely hid the features of the enchanter. The skins of various animals dangled from his dress, and in one hand he held his magic wand, and in the other the mystery drum, which contained the arcana of his order.

His actions were worthy of his appearance. He came in with a series of wild jumps and yells, accompanied with the rat-Jumps and years, accompanied with the fat-tling and beating of his magic drum as he approached the dying man. Having reached his patient, he began to dance round him to the accompaniment of his drum, to leap over him, to roll him from side to side, and in every imaginable way to render his last hours unendurable. In fact, the man might well die, if only to be rid of his physician. In a short time he did die; but the man, not in the least disconcerted at the failure of his efforts, danced out of the circle as he had entered it, and went off to his lodge to take off and pack up his official dress.

A somewhat similar scene was witnessed by Mr. P. Kane, in which the mode of manipulation was almost identical, though the medicine man, instead of disguising himself in a strange dress, went just to the opposite extreme. The story is narrated in Mr. Kane's "Wanderings of an Artist," being as

follows:

"About ten o'clock at night I strolled into

the village, and on hearing a great noise in one of the lodges, I entered it, and found an old woman supporting one of the handsomest Indian girls I had ever seen. She was in a state of nudity. Cross-legged and naked, in the middle of the room, sat the medicine man, with a wooden dish of water medicine man, with a wooden dish of water before him; twelve or fifteen other men were sitting round the lodge. The object in view was to cure the girl of a disease affecting her side. As soon as my presence was noticed, a space was cleared for me to sit

"The officiating medicine man appeared in a state of profuse perspiration, from the exertions he had used, and soon took his seat among the rest, as if quite exhausted; a younger medicine man then took his place in front of the bowl, and close beside the patient. Throwing off his blanket, he commenced singing and gesticulating in the most violent manner, whilst the others kept time by beating with little sticks on hollow wooden bowls and drums, singing continually. After exercising himself in this manner for about half an hour, until the perspiration ran down his body, he darted suddenly upon the young woman, catching hold of her side with his teeth, and shaking her for a few minutes, while the patient seemed to suffer great agony. He then relinquished his hold, and cried out he had got it, at the same time holding his hands to his mouth; after which he plunged them in the water. and pretended to hold down with great difficulty the disease which he had extracted, lest it might spring out and return to its victim.

"At length, having obtained the mastery over it, he turned round to me in an exulting manner, and held something up between the finger and thumb of each hand, which had the appearance of a piece of cartilage; whereupon one of the Indians sharpened his knife, and divided it in two, leaving one in each hand. One of the pieces he threw into the water and the other into the fire, accompanying the action with a diabolical noise, which none but a medicine man can make. After which he got up perfectly satisfied with himself, although the poor patient seemed to me anything but relieved by the violent treatment she had undergone."

Mr. Mulhausen relates an amusing anecdote of a native doctor's practice upon himself. He had suffered so much in a long march that he was at last compelled to ask for a day's rest. One of his companions, a medicine man, immediately tried the effect of his art. First he kneaded the body, and especially the stomach, of the prostrated traveller with all his force. This was to drive out the evil spirit; and, in order to effectually exorcise him, he procured his drum, and seated himself on the ground.

Placing the drum close to the ear of his patient, he kept up a continual rub-a-dub for ing.

medicine as that, gave the signal for resum. ing the march.

Among the Ojibbeways there is a remarkable ceremony by which an infant is received into the order of the Midés, a society in some degree resembling the Freemasons, the members of which consider themselves as related to each other, and addressing each other by the names of uncle, aunt, brother.

sister, cousin, &c.

A temple, forty feet in length, was constructed for the express purpose, and built of boughs, like the bowers of the Feast of Tabernacles. It was built east and west, and had the entrance door at the eastern end, and the exit door at the western. In the middle sit the great Mides, each with his mystery bag, and opposite them sits the father of the child, dressed in his full paraphernalia of feathers, furs, and scalp-locks, and holding in his arms the child, lying tied on its board after the manner of Indian babies. On either side of him are the witnesses of the reception, and eastward of the chief Midés lies a large rough stone, which

prevents the evil spirit. The ceremony begins with an address of the principal Midé, and then the chiefs rise, and after walking in procession, each of them runs at one of the guests, presenting his medicine bag at him, and yelling in quickening accents, "Ho! ho! hohohoho! O! O! O! O! O!" As he presents the bag, the breath proceeding from it is supposed to overcome the person to whom it is pre-sented, who falls down and lies there motionless. Having struck one person down, the Midé runs round the temple, to allow the medicine bag to recover its strength, and then presents it to another victim. This process is repeated until all the inmates of the hut, with the exception of the officiating Midés, are lying prostrate on the ground, where they lie until a touch from the same bag restores them to life and activity. This ceremony is repeated several times during the day, and is intended to show the virtue of the medicine bag.

The father then presents his child to the Midés, after which there is another speech from the chief Midé, and then follows a curious dance, consisting of two leaps to the right and two to the left alternately. After this, every one produces his medicine bag, and tries to blow down everybody else. And, as the bags are covered with tinkling bells, bits of metal, and shells, and the principal Midés are beating their drums and shaking their rattles with all their might, it may be imagined that the noise is deafen-

nging the magic chant oite of his wounded feet. wled out of the tent The triumphant doctor brows, and, declaring ould withstand such a e the signal for resum-

ways there is a remark-ich an infant is received he Midés, a society in bling the Freemasons, ch consider themselves er, and addressing each of uncle, aunt, brother,

et in length, was conress purpose, and built bowers of the Feast of s built east and west, ce door at the eastern or at the western. In eat Mides, each with his poposite them sits the ressed in his full paras, furs, and scalp-locks, ms the child, lying tied the manner of Indian ide of him are the witon, and eastward of the ge rough stone, which it.

ins with an address of nd then the chiefs rise, n procession, each of the guests, presenting him, and yelling in "Ho! ho! hohohoho! As he presents the bag, g from it is supposed to to whom it is pren and lies there mouck one person down, the temple, to allow recover its strength, o another victim. This ntil all the inmates of eption of the officiating strate on the ground, touch from the same life and activity. This several times during led to show the virtue

esents his child to the ere is another speech nd then follows a curiof two leaps to the eft alternately. After ces his medicine bag, lown everybody else. covered with tinkling d shells, and the prin-ing their drums and vith all their might, it t the noise is deafen-



(1.) THE INDIAN BALL PLAY. (See page 1324.)



globe.

This mony. covered stone, a initiate women lodge, of passed, they sto were se were se they ap from th cloth. typifies sions ar round the shell

The ligits of a chief Mi One o

characte ious fee tenor of them abo ever im subject, their wo to one C tion they They I future re

acter in stitions a oping th through cepted by To the session of

of life, and return the For exam the tribes ing, are h Spirit to t ingly. To or Indian held both

Tobacco and the sn be a sort of Great Spin wreath of each quart as an ackn gift of the dian mine sacred abo count of th exhilaratin its use to

Every reended with teers enlis реже соце

This completed the first part of the ceremony. In the next act, a pile of boughs covered with a cloth lay in front of the evil stone, and the chief Midé summoned all the initiated. They formed a procession of men, women, and children, and walked round the lodge, each stooping over the cloth as he passed, and looking at it. The second time they stooped closer, and the third time they were selzed with convulsive movements as they approached the cloth, and each ejected from the mouth a little yellow shell upon the cloth. By the ejection of the shell (which typifies the sinful nature of man) the convulsions are healed, and, after going once more round the lodge, each performer takes one of the shells and places it in the medicine bag. The last scene was a general feast, and

gifts of amulets and charms presented by the chief Mides to the child.

One of the most pleasing traits in the character of these tribes is the strong religious feeling which pervades the general tenor of their lives, and which has raised them above the rank of mere savages. However imperfect may be their ideas on this subject, they are not idolaters, and give all to one Great Spirit, whose aid and protection they continually invoke.

They believe in future existence and a future recompense according to their character in this life. Whatever their superstitions and ignorance, the mysteries enveloping their belief, there is running clearly through them all, these great doctrines accepted by the civilized Christian races.

To the Great Spirit they ascribe the pos-

session of all the necessaries and pleasures of life, and to him they offer their prayers and return their thanks on almost every occasion. for example, the bisons, on which many of the tribes depend for food, clothing, and lodg-ing, are held to be direct gifts of the Great Spirit to the red men, and asked for accord-The same is the case with the maize, or Indian corn, and religious ceremonies are held both at the planting and at the harvest

Tobacco is placed in the same category and the smoke of the plant is considered to be a sort of incense, which is offered to the Great Spirit whenever a pipe is lighted, one wreath of smoke being blown silently to each quarter of the heavens, and to the sun, as an acknowledgment that the tobacco is a gift of the Great Spirit. Indeed, to the Indan mind there is something peculiarly sacred about tobacco smoke, probably on account of the soothing, and at the same time exhilarating, properties which have caused its use to extend to every portion of the

Every religious ceremony is begun and ended with the pipe; war is declared, volunteers enlisted, negotiations conducted, and acter of the pipe varies with the occasion, the most valued being the sacred calumet, or medicine pipe, by which are settled the great questions of war and peace.

Among the Cree Indians the calumet is borne by a man who is solemnly elected to the office, and who has to pay rather dearly for the honor, from fifteen to twenty horses being the usual fee which each pipe bearer presents to his predecessor on receiving the insignia of office. These, however, are of considerable intrinsic value. They include a bear skin, on which he lays the pipestem when uncovered, a beautifully painted skin tent, in which he is expected to reside, a medicine rattle of singular virtue, a food bowl, and other articles so numerous that two horses are needed to carry them.

During his term of office, the pipe bearer is as sacred as the calumet itself. He always sits on the right side of the lodge, and no one may pass between him and the fire. He is not even allowed to cut his own food, but this is done by his wives, and the food placed in the official bowl which has just been mentioned. The pipe, with its innumerable wrappers, hangs outside the lodge, and is finally enclosed in a large bag, embroidered with the most brilliant colors which native

art can furnish.

When it is uncovered, great ceremony is shown. No matter how severe may be the weather, - sometimes far below zero, - the bearer begins his operations by removing all his garments with the exception of his cloth, and then pours upon a burning coal some fragrant gum, which fills the place with smoke. He then carefully removes the different wrappers, fills the bowl with tobacco, and blows the smoke to the four points of the compass, to the sky, and to the earth, at each puff uttering a prayer to the Great Spirit for assistance in war against all enemies, and for bison and corn from all quarters. The pipe is replaced with similar ceremonies. No woman is allowed to see it, and if during the begining of the ceremony a single word is spoken, it is looked upon as a very bad omen, and all the ceremony has to be begun again.

The bowl of the calumet is made of a pe-culiar stone, found, I believe, only in one Pipe-stone Quarry. This is situated in the Coteau des Prairies, about three hundred miles west of the Falls of St. Anthony, on the southern summit of the dividing ridge. between the Minnesota and Missouri rivers, in the very middle of the Sioux territory. On this sacred spot the Great Spirit is said to have stood in the ancient times, and to have called together all the Indian nations. He broke from the rock a piece of stone, moulded it in his hands into a huge pipe bowl, and smoked it toward the peace concluded, by its means. The charthem that the ground was sacred, and that four quarters of the compass. Then he told

no weapon of war should be raised in it, for the red stone was their flesh, and belonged equally to them all. At the last whiff of the pipe the Great Spirit disappeared in the cloud, and the whole ground was melted, and became polished as at the present time. In consequence of this legend, the Indians

have the greatest reverence for this place. They will not allow any white man to touch the stone, or even to approach the place, if they can keep him away, saying that the stone is their flesh, and that if a white man takes the red men's flesh, "a hole will be made in their flesh, and the blood will never

stop running.

Even the natives themselves never take a piece without asking permission of the Great Spirit, depositing tobacco in the hole whence they dug it, and promising that it shall be made into a pipe. When Mr. Catlin suc-ceeded in reaching this sacred spot, one of the chief obstacles lay in the fact that a native had once given a piece of the red stone to a white man in order to be made into a pipe, and he had made it into a dish, thereby offending the Great Spirit, and "making the heart of the Indians sick."

Mr. Catlin's opinion is, that the red pipes, found among almost every tribe of Indians on the continent, were obtained at this place. His reasons are that every tribe he visited alleged this as their source; and furthermore, the stone from which they are made is different from any mineral yet discovered in America or Europe. He expresses the conviction substantiated by striking proof that the various tribes had for centuries visited this quarry, laying aside the war club and scalping knife, and smoking to-gether in amity upon this neutral ground by command, as they thought, of the Great Spirit.

This stone is of a soft, creamy red color, rather variable in point of tint, and taking a peculiar polish. It has been analyzed, and is said to be a kind of steatite. It is cut into various fanciful shapes, those shown in the illustration on the next page being ordinary examples, though in some cases the bowls are adorned with figures of men and various animals. Some of these pipe heads have two bowls, one in front of the other.

These bowls are fitted with stems worthy of their sacred character. They are generally made of the stalk of the young ash, and are often adorned in the most elaborate manner. They are mostly flat, and sometimes are twisted spirally and perforated with open patterns in such a way that the observer cannot but marvel how the aperture for the smoke is made. After all, the mode of boring is simple enough. As every one knows who has cut a young ash sapling, the centre is occupied with pith. This is easily burned out with a hot wire, or bored out with a piece of hard wood, and the aperture is com-

Afterward the wood is cut away on two sides, so as to leave only a flat stem, with the bore occupying the centre. The per-forated patterns are next cut at either side of the bore, being carefully kept clear of it: and if the stem be then softened in boiling water, it can be made to assume almost any shape. One valued but rather rare form is a screw, or spiral, and several of the pipes in Mr. Catlin's collection have this form.

The stems are very seldom left bare, but are almost invariably decorated with colored porcupine quills, woven into various patterns. sometimes representing the forms of men and animals. The calumet is always decorated with a row of eagle feathers, sometimes stained scarlet, and being tufted at their ends with slight plumes of hair. Indeed, this portion of the calumet is formed on exactly the same principle as the head-dress of the chief, of which a drawing is given on page 1277. An example of this kind of pipe is shown in the upper figure, on page 1315. Many pipes, instead of feathers, have long tufts of hair dyed scarlet. This hair is taken either from the tail of a white horse or that of a white bison, as in the lower figure of the same illustration. The woodpecker furnishes many ornaments for these pipes, and sometimes the stem passes through the preserved skin of a bird, or through that of a particularly beautiful ermine. But whatever may be the ornament of a medicine pipe, it is always the very best and most valuable that can be procured. The stem of the pipe varies from two to four feet

The natives do not restrict themselves to tobacco, but smoke many narcotic vegetables, whether leaves, roots, or bark. These are generally mixed with tobacco, and go by the

general name of k'neck-k'neck.

The custom of sacrifice obtains among all Indian tribes and is performed in various ways and upon many occasions. Cruel as the Indian is reputed to be, none of the tribes, except the Pawnees, have ever made human sacrifices; and these many years since abandoned the inhuman custom.

Their offerings to the Great Spirit must consist of the best of their possessions: the choicest piece of buffalo meat, the finest arrow, the most costly piece of cloth, the favorite horse or dog, and sometimes their own fingers. Such offerings are erected over the great medicine lodge in the centre of the village. When Mr. Catlin was among the Mandans there was placed there beside other gifts a beautiful skin of a buffalo, the history of which he gives as follows: -"A few weeks since a party of Mandans returned from the mouth of the Yellow Stone with information that a party of Blackfeet were there on business with the American Fur Company, and that they had with them a white buffalo robe. Such a robe is a great curiosity, even in the coun-

try o an in artici into Spiri that herds hund and v a grea tione delibe

delibe eight d is out away on two only a flat stem, with the centre. The per-next cut at either side refully kept clear of it; en softened in boiling to assume almost any ut rather rare form is a several of the pipes in have this form.

y seldom left bare, but decorated with colored n into various patterns. ng the forms of men alumet is always dec-eagle feathers, someand being tufted at ght plumes of hair. f the calumet is formed principle as the headwhich a drawing is An example of this in the upper figure, on es, instead of feathers, ir dyed scarlet. This om the tail of a white white bison, as in the ame illustration. The many ornaments for times the stem passes red skin of a bird, or rticularly beautiful ermay be the ornament is always the very best nat can be procured. varies from two to four

restrict themselves to ny narcotic vegetables, , or bark. These are tobacco, and go by the k-k'neck.

fice obtains among all performed in various d to be, none of the nees, have ever made d these many years nhuman custom. he Great Spirit must

their possessions: the falo meat, the finest y piece of cloth, the and sometimes their
offerings are erected
the lodge in the centre
Mr. Catlin was among vas placed there be-tiful skin of a buffalo, e gives as follows: a party of Mandans outh of the Yellow on that a party of on business with the ny, and that they had uffalo robe. Such a

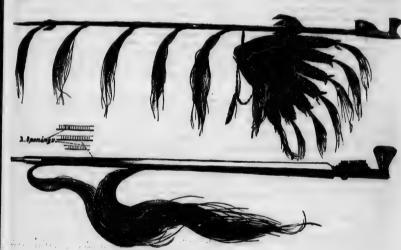
ity, even in the coun-

try of buffaloes, and will always command the chief, goods exceeding the value of the an incredible price. Being the most costly horses. They arrived in due time, made an incredible price. Being the most costly article in the region it is usually converted into a sacrifice, being offered to the Great Spirit as the rarest and most acceptable gift that can be procured. Among the vast herds of buffaloes there is not one in a hundred thousand, perhaps, that is white; and when such is obtained it is considered

a great medicine or mystery.

"Receiving the intelligence above menthe Fur Company's store, on the credit of

horses. They arrived in due time, made the purchase, and leaving their horses and all the goods carried, returned on foot, bringing the coveted robe, which was re-garded as vastly curious and containing (as they express it) something of the Great Spirit. This wonderful anormaly lay several days in the chief's lodge, till public curiosity was gratified; then it was taken by the high priests, and with a great deal of coremony. tioned the chiefs convened in coursil and deliberated on the propriety of procuring this valuable robe. At the close of their deliberation eight men were fitted out on eight of their best horses, who took from the Fur Company's store, on the credit of



INDIAN PIPES. (From my collection.) · (See pages 1318, 1314.)

CHAPTER CXXXIX.

THE NORTH AMERICAN INDIANS - Continued.

SOCIAL LIFE.

MARRIAGE - AN ENTERPRISING BRIDEGROOM, AND HIS SUDDEN ELEVATION TO BANK - TREATMENT OF WOMEN - TREATMENT OF CHILDREN - PORTRAIT OF PSHAN-SHAW - OF INDIAN BOY - THE CRADLE -THE FLAT-HEADED TRIBES - AFFECTION OF THE MOTHERS -THE COUCH OF MOURNING -ABANDONING THE SICK AND OLD -- DANCES OF THE TRIBES -- GAMES -- THE SPEAR AND RING GAME - PAGESSAN, OR THE BOWL GAME - THE BALL PLAY - THE BALL DANCE - STARTING THE GAME, AND EXCITING SCRIES-THE WOMEN'S BALL PLAY-HORSE-RACING-CANOE-MAKING-THE CANOE RACE - PRIMITIVE SAILS - SWIMMING - THE LEAPING ROCK - QUILL ORNAMENTS-BARK-BITING - WIGWAMS - MUSIC - PLEDGE OF FIDELITY - DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD - BURIAL OF BLACKBIRD-REFLECTIONS UP IN CHARACTER AND DESTINY OF THE INDIANS.

tribes now comes before us. As to marriage, there is little to distinguish it from the same ceremony among other uncivilized tribes, the girl being in fact purchased from her father, and her affections not necessarily, though generally, considered. A man may have as many wives as he can afford to keep, and when he can purchase four or five, their labor in the field is worth even more to the household than his exertions in the hunting field.

Mr. Catlin relates one rather amusing wedding.

There was a young lad, the son of a chief, whom his father started in life with a handsome wigwam, or tent, nine horses, and many other valuable presents. On receiving these presents, the young man immediately conceived a plan by which he could perform an act which would be unique. went to one of the chiefs, and asked for the hand of his daughter, promising in return two horses, a gun, and several pounds of tobacco. The marriage was fixed for a certain day, but the transaction was to be kept a profound secret until the proper time. Having settled the business, he went to

THE ordinary social life of these interesting | one knew who was to be the bride, while each of the four fethers stood proudly by his daughter, inwardly exulting that he alone was in the secret. Presently the young bridegroom advanced to the chief to whom he had made the first offer, and gave him, according to his promise, the two horses, the gun, and the tobacco. The other three fathers immediately sprang forward, each denouncing the whole affair, and saying that the offer was made to his daughter, and to his alone. In the midst of great confusion, which was partially quelled by the chiefs and doctors, the young bridegroom addressed the assembly, saying that he had promised each of the claimants two horses, a gun, and a certain amount of tobacco in exchange for his daughter, and that he expected them to fulfil their part of the contract. There was no gainsaying the argument, and in the sight of the admiring spectators, he delivered the stipulated price into the hands of the parents, and led off his four brides, two in

each hand, to his wigwam.

The action was so bold, and so perfectly unique, that the doctors immediately deter-mined that a lad of nineteen who could act in this manner must have a very strong three other chiefs, and made exactly the same bargain with each of them, and imposed silence equally upon all.

On the appointed day, he announced to the tribe that he was to be married at a certain hour. The people assembled, but no nued.

RANK — TREATMENT OF DIAN BOY — THE CRADLE COUCH OF MOURNING— - THE SPEAR AND RING DANCE—STARTING THE SING — CANCE-MAKING— (— QUILL ORNAMENTS— OF THE DEAD—BURIAL E INDIANS.

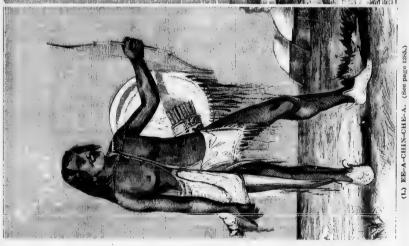
be the bride, while a stood proudly by his ulting that he alone Presently the young of the chief to whom offer, and gave him, ise, the two horses, co. The other three prang forward, each affair, and saying that his daughter, and to st of great confusion, uelled by the chiefs bridegroom addressed at he had promised woo horses, a gun, and acco in exchange for he expected them to contract. There was nent, and in the sight tors, he delivered the he hands of the pafour brides, two in am.

four brides, two in am.

sold, and so perfectly simmediately detereteen who could act have a very strong orthy to be ranked o they at once interested of their mystery, on a level with the d by that bold coup from a mere untried







(2.) A BLACKFOOT BOY. (See page 1319.)

name the rate that the sart infant brade crade control of the sart infant brade control of the sart infant brade.

toys a ment preserving antichild, a means for eher orname which broider cupine Amo of the tract the put to a the tri To the a piece

BOY. BLACKFOOT

EE-A-CHIN-CHE-A.

husbands. They have to perform all the

That the reader may form a better idea of the appearanc and dress of the women, I have given or an epreceding page the portrait of a beautiful girl of the Riccarees (a part of the Pawnee tribe), whose name is Pshan-shaw (the Sweet-scented Grass). "The inner garment, which is like a frock, is entire in one piece, and tastefully ornamented with embroidery and beads. row of elk's teeth passes across the breast, and a robe of young buffalo's skin, elaborately embroidered, is gracefully thrown over her shoulders, and hangs down to the ground behind her."

On the same page the reader may find, as illustrative of Indian childhood, a portrait of the grandson of a chief of the Blackfeet, a boy of six years of age. He is represented at full length, with bow and quiver slung, and his robe of raccoon skin thrown over his shoulder. This young chief, his father dying, was twice stolen by the Crows, and twice recaptured by the Blackfeet, and then placed in the care of a Mr. M'Kenzie until he should be old enough to assume the chieftainship of his tribe, or be able to defend himself against his foes.

The Indian mothers do not have many children, possibly owing to the early age at which they marry. For example, the ages of the four brides just mentioned ranged from twelve to fifteen. Two or three is the average, and a family of five is considered quite a large one.

The children are carried about much in the same way as those of the Araucanians. A sort of cradle is made by bandaging the infant to a flat board, the feet resting on a broad hoop that passes over the end of the cradle. Another hoop passes over the face of the child, and to it are hung sundry little toys and charms; the one for the amusement of the infant, and the other for its preservation through the many perils of infantile life. When the mother carries the child, she hangs the cradle on her back by means of a broad strap that passes over her forehead. Both the cradle and band are ornamented with the most brilliant colors which native art can furnish, and are embroidered in various patterns with dyed porcupine quills.

Among the tribes which inhabit the banks of the Columbia River, and a considerable tract that lies contiguous to it, the cradle is put to a singular use, which has earned for the tribes the general title of Flat-heads. To the upper part of the cradle is fastened

warrior to the height of native ambition, and a voice in the policy of the tribe.

The Iudian women are the slaves of their infant is laid on its back, the upper board is household. husbands. They have to perform all the brought over its forenesic, and assented down domestic duties and drudgeries of the tribe, and are never allowed to unite in their religious ceremonies or amusements.

They have to perform all the brought over its forenesid, and assented down and are never allowed to unite in their increased, until at last the head is so flattened that a straight line can be drawn from brought over its forehead, and fastened down



THE FLAT-HEADED WOMAN.

This is perhaps the most extraordinary of all the fashionable distortions of the human body, and the wasp waist of an European belle, the distorted leg of the female Carib, and even the cramped foot of the Chinese beauty, appear insignificant when compared with the flattened head of a Chinnook or Klick-a-tack Indian. Mr. Catlin states that this custom was one far more extended than is the case at present, and that even the Choctaw and Chickasaw tribes of Mississippi and Alabama were accustomed to flatten their heads, their burial-places affording in-controvertible evidence that such must have been the case, and at no very distant

The reader, especially if he dabble in phrenology, might well imagine that such a practice must act injuriously upon the men-tal capacities of those who are subjected to it. Let us, for example, fancy a skull which has been so ruthlessly compressed that it only measures an inch and a half, or at the most two inches, in depth, at the back; that it is in consequence much elongated, and a piece of board, which lies on the child's forced outward at the sides, so that it is

hearly half as wide again as it would have been if it had been permitted to assume its normal form. The hair, combed down in one place, and expanding in others, would seem to have its natural capabilities much altered, even if not in many cases destroyed. Yet those who have mixed with the Flatheaded tribes say that the intellect is in no way disturbed, much less injured, and that those members of the tribe who have escaped the flattening process are in no way intellectually superior to those who have undergone it. Indeed, as Mr. P. Kane observes, in his "Wanderings of an Artist," the Chinnooks despise those who retain the original shape of their heads. They always select their slaves from the round-headed tribes, the flattened head being the sign of freedom.

There is another point about the head flattening which deserves attention. Seeing that it is begun almost in the same hour that the infant is born, and is continued for eight months to a year or more, it might naturally be imagined that it would cause considerable pain to the child, and in many cases be dangerous to life. This, however, is not the case; and that it should not be so is one of the many proofs of the extent to which the human frame may be distorted without permanent injury! Mr. Kane's remarks are as follows:

"It might be supposed, from the extent to which this is carried, that the operation would be attended with great suffering to the infant, but I have never heard the infants crying or moaning, although I have seen the eyes seemingly starting out of the sockets from the great pressure. But on the contrary, when the lashings were removed, I have noticed them cry until they were replaced. From the apparent dulness of the children while under pressure, I should imagine that a state of torpor or insensibility is induced, and that the return to consciousness occasioned by its removal must be nat-urally followed by the sense of pain."
Should a child die before it is old enough

to be released from the cradle, the mother is not released from her maternal duties, but, on the contrary, continues to perform them as assiduously as if the little creature were living.

After the child is buried, she makes a "mourning-cradle," i. e. in the place which the child had formerly occupied she places a large bundle of black feathers, by way of representative of the deceased infant, and treats it in all respects as if the little one still occupied the cradle. She carries it on her back wherever she goes, and when she rests, stands it upright against a tree or the shown in the great variety of their dances, side of the hut, and talks to it as if to a living child. This custom is continued for at least a year, and in many cases is extended jous significance. There are the ball-place bereaved mother may be so poor as scarcely (already described), beggar's, bear, and dog

nearly half as wide again as it would have to have sufficient clothing for herself, she been if it had been permitted to assume its will contrive to decorate the cradle of her lost child with the appropriate ornaments.

As a rule, the North American Indians are affectionate parents. Mr. Catlin men-tions an instance where he had painted a portrait of a married woman, the daughter of a chief. Some time afterward she died, and the father, happening to see and recognize the portrait of his lost daughter, offered ten horses—an enormous price for an American Indian to pay. Of course the portrait was presented to him at once.

Parental affection is fully reciprocated by the children, and the greatest respect paid by the younger to the elder men. Yet we find even among them, as among so many tribes which lead a semi-nomad existence, the custom of abandoning the sick and aged when they are obliged to make a forced march of any distance.

This is generally done at the instance of the victims themselves, who say that they are old and useless, and can be only an encumbrance to the rest of the tribe. Accordingly, a rude shelter is formed of a bison hide stretched over four upright rods, under which the sick man is laid; a basin of water and some food are placed by his side; and he is left to perish, if not by privation or disease, by the ranging flocks of wolves that roam the prairies.

WE will now pass to a more agreeable phase in the life of these tribes, and take a glance at their dances and games.

It has been the prevalent impression that the Indian is taciturn, unsocial, and morose. Mr. Catlin, whose testimony cannot be impeached, takes considerable pains to correct this opinion; and states as the result of his travels among the Indian tribes, that "they are a far more talkative and conversational race than can easily be seen in the civilized world. No one can look into the wigwams of these people, or into any little momentary group of them, without being at once struck with the conviction that small talk, garrulity, story-telling and amusements, are leading passions with them." To watch their games, and hear their shouts of exultation, in any of their villages, to sit down in their lodges and listen to their jokes, repartee, anecdote and laughter, would effectually banish this erroneous opinion so generally held in re-gard to the Red Men. With no anxieties for the future — no necessities goading them, it is natural that they should be a merry people, and most of their life be spent in sports and games.

The Indian fondness for amusement is most of which are very fanciful and picturesque, though some of them have a relighing for herself, she ate the cradle of her ropriate ornaments. h American Indians ts. Mr. Catlin men-ere he had painted a woman, the daughter afterward she died, ing to see and recog-ing to see and recog-lost daughter, offered mous price for an pay. Of course the to him at once, s' fully reciprocated the greatest respect

the greatest respect the elder men. Yet them, as among so d a semi-nomad ex-abandoning the sick re obliged to make a

stance.

e at the instance of es, who say that they
ad can be only an enof the tribe. Accordis formed of a bison ur upright rods, un-an is laid; a basin of e placed by his side; h, if not by privation ging flocks of wolves

o a more agreeable se tribes, and take a

and games. dent impression that insocial, and morose. mony cannot be imable pains to correct as the result of his an tribes, that "they e and conversational seen in the civilized into the wigwams of my little momentary

being at once struck small talk, garrulity, ements, are leading o watch their games, f exultation, in any down in their lodges s, repartee, anecdote fectually banish this tenerally held in re-Vith no anxieties for ties goading them, it uld be a merry peofe be spent in sports

for amusement is ety of their dances, fanciful and pictuthem have a relig-e are the ball-play lo and scalp dances gar's, bear, and dog



(1.) BIRCH BARK CANOE. (See page 1326.)



(2.) DANCE TO THE MEDICINE OF THE BRAVE. (See page 1323.)



(3.) THE SNOW SHOE DANCE. (See page 1323.)

(1522)

dance eagle peculi snowpictur it on

Befc Indian thanks the sn plenty stuck on one and on similar ing dreamd roall the a song

Near from e annual enough a great improving eig and sur ing sac to the (during carniva Catlin t time wh have fle dain sue ing the the med at sunri cil hous must on When th decide t criers to or tribe and the thanks t bled trib over a fir four med in one ha bodies pa it chanti Spirit, to a more e ber of was laid upon

to be dea When is sufficia different the docto corn on a fire, where removed,



dances. But the most pleasing of all are the | fire is originated on the same spot, and in eagle dance, dance of the braves which is peculiarly attractive, and the green corn and snow-shoe dances. The latter is exceedingly picturesque, and the artist has represented it on the preceding page.

Indians always perform a dance by way of thanksgiving to the Great Spirit for sending the snow which will enable them to live in plenty so long as it lasts. Several spears are stuck upright in the snow covered ground. on one of which are tied a pair of snow shoes, and on the others sundry sacred feathers and similar objects. The dancers, clad in hunting dress, and wearing snow shoes, go round and round the spears, imitating the while

all the movements of the chase, and singing a song of thanksgiving.

Nearly all the tribes, however remote from each other, have a season of festivity annually, when the ears of corn are large enough for eating. Green corn is regarded a great luxury, and is dealt out with most improvident profusion — the festivities lasting eight or ten days. The whole tribe feast and surfeit upon it so long as it lasts, making sacrifices, singing songs of thanksgiving to the Great Spirit, and celebrating the green corn dance. Every occupation is suspended during these festivities, and all unite in the carnival of gluttony and merriment. Mr. Catlin thus describes this dance: —"At the time when the corn is thought to be nearly ready for use, several of the old women, who have fields or patches of corn (the men disdain such degrading occupations as cultivating the field or garden), are appointed by the medicine men to examine the cornfields at sunrise every day, and bring to the council house several ears of corn, which they must on no account break open or look into. When the doctors, from their examination, decide that the corn is suitable, they send criers to proclaim to every part of the village or tribe that the Great Spirit has been kind, and they must meet next day to return thanks to Him. In the midst of the assembled tribe, a kettle filled with corn is hung over a fire. While this corn is being boiled, four medicine men, each with a stalk of corn in one hand and a rattle in the other, their bodies painted with white clay, dance around it chanting a thanksgiving to the Great Spirit, to whom the corn is to be offered. In a more extended circle around them, a number of warriors dance, joining in the same song. During this scene, wooden bowls are laid upon the ground, in which the feast is to be dealt out."

When the doctors decide that the corn is sufficiently boiled, the dance assumes a different form, and a new song is sung, the doctors in the meantime placing the corn on a scaffold of sticks built over the

the same way as by the Hottentots, described on page 100. Then corn is boiled for the feast, at which the doctors and valriors are seated. An unlimited license is given to the whole tribe, who mingle excess Before the first snow shoe hunt, the and amusement until the fields of corn are stripped, or it has become too hard for eating.

The dance of the braves is beautiful and exciting in the highest degree: - "At intervals the dancers stop, and one of them steps into the ring and vociferates as loudly as possible the feats of bravery which he has performed during his life. . . . He boasts of the scalps he has taken, and reproduces the motions and actions of the scenes in which his exploits were performed. When his boasting is concluded, all assent to the truth of his story, and express their approval by the guttural 'waugh!' Then the dance commences again. At the next interval another makes his boast, and so another and another, till all have given a narrative of their heroic deeds, and proved their right to be associated with the braves of the nation."

The dog dance, though a favorite with the Sioux, is not an attractive one.

The hearts and livers of two or more slain dogs are placed entire and uncooked upon two crotches, about as high as a man's head, and are cut into strips so as to hang down. The dance then commences, which consists in each one proclaiming his exploits in loud, almost deafening gutturals and yells. At the same time the dancers, two at a time, move up to the stake, and bite off a piece of the heart and swallow it. All this is done without losing step or interrupting the harmony of their voices. The significance of the dance is that none can share in it but the braves who can boast that they have killed their foe in battle and swallowed a piece of his heart.

Among the Sacs and Foxes there are several singular dances, besides some already mentioned, viz: the slave dance (a very curious one), dance to the Berdashe, which is an amusing scene, and dance to the medicine of the brave. There is a tender and beautiful lesson conveyed in this latter dance. In the illustration of it on page 1322, a party of Sac warriors are represented as returned victorious from battle, with the scalps they have taken as trophies. Having lost one of their party, they appear and dance in front of his wigwam fifteen days in succession, about an hour each day, the widow having hung his medicine bag on a green bush, which she erects before her door, and under which she sits and cries whilst the warriors dance and brandish the scalps they have taken. At the same time they recount the heroic exploits of their fallen comrade, to solace the fire, where it is consumed. This fire is then ents as they dance before her, that she may grief of his widow, and they throw her presremoved, the ashes are all buried, and a new be kept from poverty and suffering.

There is little in these dances that resembles the "light fantastic toe" and giddy maze of the dance among the civilized. The former consist very much of jumps and starts — oftentimes the most grotesque, and even violent exertions - united with songs and yells, sometimes deafening by their sound or fearful by the wildness and in-tense excitement that are manifested.

To a looker on not familiar with the pe-culiar significance of these displays, they seem only a series of uncouth and meaningless motions and distortions, accompanied with harsh sounds, all forming a strange, almost frightful medley. Yet Mr. Catlin says "every dance has its peculiar step and says the position of the posit one in ten of the young men who are singing know the meaning of the songs. None but medicine men are allowed to under-stand them." There are dances and songs, stand drift.

The least data the same solgs, however, not so intricate, which are understood and participated in by all the tribe.

The beating of drums, the yells, stamping, and bellowing, the noisy demonstrations forwing contact and tribes.

tions forming so great a part of Indian amusements, will remind the reader of similar manifestations among some of the African tribes, recorded in the first part of this

work.

The game which is perhaps the most popular and widely spread is almost unintelligible to an uninstructed bystander. Its title is Tchung-chee, that being the name of the spear which will be presently described. It is played with a ring about three inches in diameter, made of bone or wood wrapped with cord, and a slight spear, on which are several little projections of leather. The players roll the ring along the ground, and as it is about to fall, project the spear so that, as the ring falls, it may receive within it one of the pieces of leather. If it does so, the player scores one or more points, according to the particular projection which is caught in the ring, and the mode in which it dies. mode in which it flies.

Another variation of this game, called Al-kol-lock, has the spear without the leathern projections, but in their stead six colored beads are fixed inside the ring. each end of the smooth clay course, which is about fifty feet in length, a slight barrier is erected. The players bowl the ring from one end of the course, run after it, and as it falls after striking the barrier, throw their spears as described above, the points being reckoned according to the color of the bead

which lies on them.

The absorption of the players in this game is beyond description. They will play at it all day, gamble away their horses, their tents, their clothes, and, when they have lost all their property, will stake themselves, the loser becoming the slave of the winner.

Another game, called Pagessan, or the bowl game, is very popular, though it is a sedentary one, and lacks the graceful action that gives so great a charm to the preceding game. It is played with a wooden bowl. containing a number of pieces of wood carved into various forms; some, which we on which to stand, and others, which we will term the pawns, being round, and palnet term the pawns, being round, and palnet on one side and plain on the other. The players take the bowl alternately, give it a shake, and set it in a hole in the ground. The contents are then examined, and the points are scored according to the number of pieces which stand on their pedestals. If the pawn has its colored side upward, the player scores one point; if it has the plain side uppermost, he deducts a point from his score. The position of the pawns is entirely a question of chance, but considerable still is accreted in action. skill is exerted in getting the pieces to stand on their pedestals.

The game which is most characteristic of the American Indians is the celebrated ball game, a modification of which has been introduced into England under the name of La Crosse. The principle on which it is played is exactly that of toot-ball and hockey, namely, the driving of a ball through a goal defended by the opposite party. We will first take the game as it is played by the Choctaws. The reader will find it illus-

trated on page 1311.

A ball is carefully made of white willow wood, and ornamented with curious designs drawn upon it with a hot iron. The ballsticks, or racquets, are much like our own racquets, but with larger and more slender handles, and with a very much smaller hoop. Each player carries two of these sticks, one in each hand. The dress of the players is very simple, being reduced to the waist-cloth, a tail made of white horsehair or quills, and a mane of dyed horsehair round the neck. The belt by which the tail is sustained may be as highly ornamented as possible, and the player may paint himself as brilliantly as he likes, but no other article of clothing is allowed, not even moccasins on the feet.

On the evening of the appointed day, the two parties repair to the ground where the goals have been already set up, some two hundred yards apart, and there perform the ball-play dance by torchilght. Exactly in the middle between the goals, where the ball is to be started, sit four old medicine men, singing and beating their drums, while the players are clustered round their respective goals, singing at the top of their voices, and ratiling their ball-sticks together. This dance goes on during the whole of the night, so that the players are totally deprived of rest - a very bad preparation, as one would think, for the severe exertion of the ensuing day. All the bets

auch utensi being holder night. the pl with t selves

are m

while t attack ball is the tw upon i dred pl ined th "In writes ning to

other's versari foiling and eve shrill y cession and am one wl luck to "In that car

the fore and the individu violent Then 1 parties : tling it general who are their dir all ball encampi for one; place on saddenly much pe to interf individu

the grou rushing their stie of any o that the strength the cond and blood ent part hour at a being ab often scu been thre part of th "For e

between

counted i

" Thei

ed Pagessan, or the opular, though it is a ks the graceful action charm to the precedwith a wooden bowl. of pieces of wood rms; some, which we wing round pedestals others, which we will g round, and painted on the other. The alternately, give it a hole in the ground. n examined, and the rding to the number on their pedestals. If red side upward, the t; if it has the plain lucts a point from his of the pawns is enng the pieces to stand

nost characteristic of is the celebrated ball f which has been ind under the name of ciple on which it is f foot-ball and hockey, a ball through a goal site party. We will s it is played by the er will find it illus-

nade of white willow with curious designs hot iron. The ballmuch like our own er and more slender very much smaller arries two of these l. The dress of the , being reduced to nade of white horsene of dyed horsehair elt by which the tail ighly ornamented as r may paint himself es, but no other artied, not even mocca-

appointed day, the ground where the y set up, some two d there perform the chlight. Exactly in ne goals, where the four old medicine g their drums, while ed round their reat the top of their heir ball-sticks tooes on during the at the players are -a very bad prepa-ink, for the severe g day. All the bets

are made on this night, the article staked, about one minute; when the ball was again such as knives, blankets, guns, cooking utensils, tobacco, and even horses and dogs, being placed in the custody of the stake-holders, who sit by them and watch them all

About nine o'clock on the next morning the play begins. The four medicine men, with the ball in their custody, seat themselves as before, midway between the goals, while the players arrange themselves for the attack and defence. At a given signal, the ball is flung high in the air, and as it falls, the two opposing sets of players converge upon it. As there are often several hundred players on a challenge of the several hundred players on the several hundred players of the s dred players on each side, it may be imag-ined that the scene is a most animated one. "In these desperate struggles for the ball,"

writes Mr. Catlin " where hundreds are running together, and leaping actually over each other's heads, and darting between their adversaries' legs, tripping, and throwing, and folling each other in every possible manner, and every voice raised to its highest key, in shrill yelps and barks, there are rapid successions of feats and incidents that astonish and amuse far beyond the conception of any one who has not had the singular good luck to witness them.

"In these struggles, every mode is used that can be devised to oppose the progress of the foremost, who is likely to get the ball; and these obstructions often meet desperate individual resistance, which terminates in a violent scuffle, and sometimes in fisticuffs. Then their sticks are dropped, and the parties are unmolested, whilst they are settling it between themselves, except by a general stampedo, to which those are subject who are down, if the ball happen to pass in their direction. Every weapon, by a rule of all ball players, is laid by in the respective encampments, and no man is allowed to go for one; so that the sudden broils that take place on the ground are presumed to be as saddenly settled without any probability of much personal injury, and no one is allowed to interfere in any way with the contentious individuals.

"There are times when the ball gets to the ground, and such a confused mass is rushing together around it, and knocking their sticks together, without a possibility of any one getting or seeing it for the dust that they raise, that the spectator loses his strength, and everything but his senses; when the condensed mass of ball sticks and shins and bloody noses is carried around the different parts of the ground, for a quarter of an hour at a time, without any one of the masses being able to see the ball, which they are often scuffling for several minutes after it has been thrown off and played over another part of the ground.

started by the judges of the play, and a similar struggle ensued; and so on until the successful party-arrived at 100, which was the limit of the play, and accomplished at an hour's sun, when they took the stakes."

In this game the players are not allowed to strike the ball with their sticks, or catch it in their hands; though to do so between the netted ends of the sticks, and then to run away with it, is a feat which each player tries his best to accomplish. Ball-play among the Sioux is exactly the same in principle as that of the Choctaws, but the players only carry one stick, which is wielded with both Lands.

Sometimes the men are kind enough to indulge the women with a ball-play, and to present a quantity of goods as prizes, hanging them across a horizontal pole, in order to stimulate the players by the sight. Such inferior beings as women are not, however, allowed to use the ball and racquet of their superiors, the men, but play with a couple of small bags filled with sand, and attached to each other by means of a string about eighteen inches in length. Each of the players is furnished with two slight sticks, about two feet in length, and with these sticks they dexterously catch the sand bacs, and fling them toward the goals. The women play with quite as much enthusiasm as the men, and the game often assumes the appearance of a general battle rather than of a pastime.

Since the introduction of horses, the American Indians have become very fond of horse racing, and bet so recklessly on the speed of their animals that they often lose everything which they possess. In these races neither the horse nor the rider are allowed to be costumed in any way, not even a saddle or a girth being allowed. They also have boat races, in which the spectators take as much interest as those who witness the Oxford and Cambridge races. The canoes are mostly propelled by one man

The canoes are of various forms and materials, according to the tribe to which they bolong. For example, the Mandans have an odd, circular vessel, made from a bison hide, stretched over a wooden framework. This is called a "bull boat," and is propelled in a very singular manner. A woman is the usual paddler, and she stands or kneels with her face toward the direction in which she intends to proceed, and, thrusting the paddle into the water as far forward as she can reach, draws it smartly toward her, and thus propels the boat with considerable

"For each time that the ball was passed panions were desirous of crossing the river, On one occasion, Mr. Catlin and two combetween the goals of either party, one was and were packed into one of these bull boats counted for their game, and they halted for by the wife of a chief. She then went into

the water, and swam across the river, towing the boat after her. As, however, she neared the opposite bank, a number of young girls surrounded the cance, took it into their own management, and kept it in mid-stream, until the passengers, utterly powerless in such a craft, ransomed themselves with bead necklaces and other decorations. Then there is kind of canoe, which is simply a lowed tree-trunk, and which is graphica. called a "dug-out." No very particular care is taken about the shaping of this simple boat, which is more like a punt than a canoe.

The best and most characteristic form of native cance is that which is made of the bark of the birch tree. The mode of making these canoes is briefly as follows. Canoe building is a work in which both sexes take a part. The men first select the largest and finest birch trees, with the smoothest skins, and strip off large pieces of the bark. The women then take charge of the bark, and, while it is still fresh and moist, clean and scrape it as if it were leather, and then sew the pieces together, so as to make the "cloak" of the future canoe.

While the women are at this work, the men are busily preparing the skeleton of the canoe. This is made of the white cedar, the ribs being cut and scraped until they are quite thin and light, and held in their places by smaller cross-pieces, and a long thin piece of wood, which runs round the entire edge of the boat, and is, in fact, the chief support of the canoe. This is technically called the "mattre." No nails are used, the whole of the junctions being effeeted by means of thongs of bass, obtained from the inner bark of the white cedar.

The skeleton being completed, it is laid upon the cloak, which is brought over the ribs, firmly lashed to the "maitre," and then by degrees brought into its proper shape. A strengthening piece, called the "faux mattre," is next tied along the whole of the gunwale in order to protect it from injury, and the interior is lined with cedar boards, scarcely thicker than pasteboard. When the canoe is finished and dry, the holes through which the lashings have passed, as well as all the junctions of the bark, are carefully stopped with pitch obtained from the pine or fir-tree, and the weaker parts of the bark are also strengthened with a coat of pitch.

The bark canoe of the Chippeways is, unquestionably, the most beautiful model of all the water crafts ever invented. It is usually made complete, from the rind of one birch tree, and so ingeniously formed and put together, that it is water-tight, and will ride upon the water with singular grace and swiftness.

These canoes are wonderfully light, as indeed is necessary for the navigation of the pelled by a friend in the stern of the boat,

prevent a boat from passing up the river, were it not for the plan called "portage." When the cance arrives at the foot of a rapid, it is taken ashore, the crew land, take all the goods out of the canoe, and carry them to the opposite side of the rapid. They then go back for the canoe itself, launch it in the smooth water above the rapid, and load it, and proceed on their jouney. The figure at the head of page 1322 will give the reader a good idea of the form of the birch bark canoe.

These vessels can be propelled with wonderful speed, as they sit on the surface like ducks, and, when empty, scarcely draw two inches of water. The number of paddlers varies according to the size of the boat, but the course is regulated by the two who sit respectively in the bow and stern, whom we may for convenience call the "bow" and "stroke." It is the duty of the "bow" to look carefully ahead for any rocks or any other obstacles, and, by movements well understood, to indicate their presence to the "stroke," who, with a sweep of the paddle, brings the canoe round in the direction indicated by the "bow."

The canoes which are used in races are made of birch bark, and are almost always of small size - so small, indeed, that a man can easily carry his canoe on his head from his house to the water's edge, and then launch it without assistance. Mr. Catlin gives a very animated description of a canoe race, the competitors being accompanied by large canoes, full of their respective friends, who yell encouragements to the antagonists, fire guns in the air, and render the scene a

singularly exciting one, even to a stranger.
Toward the right hand of the illustration which depicts the canoe race, on the following page, the reader may see a curious mode of propelling canoes, which is often adopted when there is no necessity for speed and the wind is favorable. The man who acts as "bow" stands up in the front of the cance, extends a robe or a blanket in his two hands. and then he presses the two other corners at the bottom of the boat with his feet. The robe thus becomes an extemporized sail, of which the man is the mast. In this manner a canoe is often carried for a considerable distance, to the great relief of the paddlers

An European would instantly upset the fragile canoe if he tried to stand erect in it; but the natives are absolutely perfect masters of their little vessels, and seem to move about in them as easily and firmly as if on dry land. They will load a canoe within an inch and a half of the water's edge, and paddle it for a whole day, without dreaming of danger. And an accomplished canoe man will take a fish spear in his hand, place a foot on each gunwale of the boat, and, prorivers. The many rapids would effectually dart down rapids, spearing fish as he shoots

passing up the river, lan called "portage" ives at the foot of a re, the crew land, take the cance, and carry ide of the rapid, They cance itself, launch it above the rapid, and a their jouney. The mage 1322 will give the form of the birch

e propelled with wonit on the surface like
ty, scarcely draw two
in number of paddlers
e size of the boat, but
d by the two who sit
v and stern, whom we
call the "bow" and
luty of the "bow" to
for any rocks or any
by movements well
their presence to the
sweep of the paddle,
in the direction indi-

are used in races are nd are almost always noe on his head from er's edge, and then istance. Mr. Catlin description of a canoe eing accompanied by eir respective friends, ts to the antagonists, d render the scene a e, even to a stranger. nd of the illustration e race, on the followay see a curious mode hich is often adopted sity for speed and the ne man who acts as e front of the canoe, ket in his two hands, e two other corners boat with his feet. es an extemporized is the mast. In this n carried for a cone great relief of the

instantly upset the to stand erect in it; solutely perfect massls, and seem to move y and firmly as if on and a canoe within an a water's edge, and y, without dreaming omplished canoe man in his hand, place af the boat, and, protes stern of the boat, ing fish as he shoots



(1.) CANOE RACE. (See page 1326.)



(2.) ESQUIMAUX DWELLINGS. (See page 1335.)

along, h water, a hind him

Amoning for trequired the period its for highly very no small much mooff only affliction

affiction
There
of a relig
Great P
rises froo
pillar, b
though r
is situate
edge of
come to
often try
The mer
casy, bu
which ti
place, the
polished
should b
should h
difficult the
spran
slippery
slight ful
spring.
Before

Before
he offers
spirit for
all events
if he shou
the sacre
who succe
rock, and
public me
to speak,
this feat w
would at
Leaping I
If the

the canoe sides are d made by fi the sides quills are and, even superseded orating the tives.

These q those of the are natura easily take sorted very the largest length, wh like, and ca

Among most Indian tribes, when mourning for the death of relatives, the women are required to cut their hair entirely off, and the period of mourning is until it has grown talts former length. As long tresses are so highly valued by most of the tribes this is no small sacrifice. But long hair being of much more importance to the men they cut off only a lock or two, to indicate grief or affliction for their departed kindred.

There is a game which has in it somewhat of a religious aspect. On the border of the Great Pipe-stone Quarry a solitary rock rises from the plain. It resembles a large pillar, being only a few feet in diameter, though more than thirty feet in height. It is situated within a short distance from the edge of the precipice, and the Indians who come to procure red stone for their pipes often try to leap upon it and back again. The mere leap to the rock is comparatively easy, but there are two terrible dangers which threaten the leaper. In the first place, the small, flat surface of the rock is so polished and smooth, that if the leaper should exert too much power, he must slip off, and be killed on the sharp rocks below. Should he retain his foot-hold he has still a difficult task in regaining the spot whence he sprang, as he can take no run, and the slippery surface of the rock affords but a slight fulcrum from which he can take his spring.

Before an Indian essays this terrible leap, he offers up many prayers to the Great Spirit for help and protection, and he has at all events the satisfaction of knowing that, if he should fail, his body will be buried in the sacred ground of the nation. Those who succeed leave an arrow sticking in the rock, and have a right to boast of it at every public meeting when they are called upon to speak. No man would dare to boast of this feat without having performed it, as he would at once be challenged to visit the Leaping Rock and to point out his arrow.

If the reader will refer to the figure of the canoe on page 1322, he will see that its sides are decorated with a pattern. This is made by fastening dyed porcupine quills to the sides of the little vessel. Porcupine quills are used very largely for ornaments, and, even though they have been partly superseded by beads, are still in use for decorating the dresses and utensils of the na-

These quills are never so long or thick as those of the porcupine of the Old World, and are naturally white or gray, so that they can easily take any desired dye. They are first sorted very carefully into their different sizes,

along, hauling the struggling fish out of the ordinary needle. Both ends are sharp, water, and shaking them into the boat behind him. side of the bark or leather; the two ends of the quill are then pushed through the fabric, and fastened on the wrong side, the quill acting both as needle and thread.

Perhaps the most ingenious mode of making ornaments is that which is practised by the Ojibbeway women, and called Barkbiting. The following description of this curious art is given by Mr. Kohl in his "Kitchi-Gami:"—

"This is an art which the squaws chiefly practise in spring, in their sugar plantations. Still, they do not all understand it, and only a few are really talented. I heard that a very celebrated bark-biter resided at the other side of St. Mary's River, in Canada, and that another, of the name of Angelique Marte, lived in our cataract village. Natu-

raily, I set out at once to visit the latter.

"Extraordinary geniuses must usually be sought here, as in Paris, on the fifth floor, or in some remote faubourg. Our road to Angelique Marte led us past the little cluster of houses representing our village far into the desert. We came to morasses, and had to leap from stone to stone. Between large masses of scattered granite block, the remains of the missiles which the Indians say Menaboju and his father hurled at each other in the battle they fought here, we at length found the half-decayed birch-hut of our pagan artiste, who herself was living in it like a hermit.

"The surrounding landscape seemed better adapted for a renversi than for an atélier. When we preferred our request for some specimen of her tooth carving, she told us that all her hopes as regarded her art were concentrated in one tooth. At least she had only one in her upper jaw properly useful for this operation. She began, however, immediately selecting proper pieces of bark, peeling off the thin skin, and doubling up the pieces, which she thrust between her teeth.

"As she took up one piece after the other, and went through the operation very rapidly, one artistic production after the other fell from her lips. We unfolded the bark, and found on one the figure of a young girl, on another a bouquet of flowers, on a third a tomahawk, with all its accessories, very cor-rectly designed, as well as several other objects. The bark is not bitten into holes, but only pressed with the teeth, so that, when the designs are held up, they resemble, to some extent, those pretty porcelain transparencies made as light-screens."

The mode of constructing the wigwam is very much the same among the various tribes. Generally it is made of dressed bufthe largest rarely exceeding three inches in length, while the smaller are quite thread-like, and can be passed through the eye of an loos about twenty-five feet in height, as a support, and with an opening at the apex clothe it in his best robes and ornament for the escape of smoke or the admission of furnish it with food, pipes, tobacco, and arlight. The Crows, however, excel all others rows, and wrap it up in skins previously light. The Crows, however, excel all others in the style of their lodge. They dress the skins almost as white as linen, embellish them with porcupine quills, and paint them in various ways so as to make their tents exceedingly beautiful and picturesque.

The Indian lodges may be removed in a few minutes. The taking down and the transportation is the work of the squaws. A tribe will generally remove six or eight times in a summer in order to find good hunting grounds among the herds of buffa-

The Indian tribes judging from their musical instruments, have little taste or skill in music. These are very rude, and consist of rattles, drums, the mystery whistle, war whistle and deer skin flute. The war whistle is from six to nine inches in length, made of the bone of the deer's or turkey's leg, with porcupine quills wound around it. chief wears this to battle under his dress. It has only two notes - one, produced by blowing into one end of it, is shrill, and is the summons to battle; and the other sounds a retreat. Even in the noise of battle and amid the cries and yells of their fierce conflicts, this little instrument can be distinctly heard.

The chief pledge of friendship among these tribes, is a dog feast. If we consider that the dog is an object of special affection with the Indians; that he is more valued by them than anywhere else on the globe; we can understand the significance of this feast. This sacrifice of what is dearest to them is therefore the very strongest evidence of friendship. On their coats of arms. on the rocks, they carve the image of the dog, and everywhere and always, he is the emblem of fidelity. Accordingly, to ratify friendship, to give the most unquestionable proof of honor and devotion, the Indian will take his beloved companion of the chase and wigwam, and offer it as the sacrifice to hospitality and affection.

These feasts are conducted in the most solemn and impressive manner, as if with the conviction that the pledge of friendship is a sacred thing. Those were tender words which Catlin gives at the conclusion of an Indian chief's address to him and other white guests, to whom such a feast had been given: "we offer you to-day not the best we have got, for we have plenty of good buffalo hump and marrow—but we give you our hearts in this feast—we have killed our faithful dogs to feed you, and the Great Spirit will seal our friendship. I have no

more to say."

We come now to consider the customs of the Indians in regard to death and the disposal of the dead.

The Mandans take the body of the deceased,

soaked in water, so as to render them pliant and cause them to exclude the air as much as possible. The body is then placed upon a slight scaffold, some seven feet in height, and left to decay. In process of time, the scaffold gives way and falls, when the relations of the deceased bury the whole of the remains. with the exception of the skull, which they place on the ground, forming circles of a hundred or more, all with the faces looking in-ward, and all resting on fresh bunches of herbs. In the centre of each circle is a little mound, on which are placed the skulls of a male and female bison, and on the mound is planted a long pole, on which hang sundry "medicine" articles, which are supposed to aid in guarding the remains of the dead.

No people are more fond of swimming than the Indians, the youth of both sexes learning the art at a very early age. Such knowledge is indispensable to them, especially liable as they are to accidents with their light canoes, and in their marches compelled to cross the widest rivers. The squaws will fasten their children to their backs, and easily cross any river that lies in their way.

The Indian mode of swimming, however, is quite different from ours. They do not make a horizontal stroke outward from the chin, but throw the body alternately from one side to the other, and raising one arm out of the water, reach as far forward as possible, while the other arm having made the same motion, goes down and becomes a propelling power. And this, though an apparently awkward, is yet a most effective mode of swimming, and less likely to be attended with injury to the chest, or with

The relatives constantly visit the skull circles, and the women may often be seen sitting by the skulls of their dead children for hours together, going on with their work, and talking to the dead skull as if it were a living child. And, when tired, they will lie down with their arms encircling the skull, and sleep there as if in company with the child itself. The Sioux and many other tribes lodge their dead in the branches or crotches of trees, enveloped in skins, and always with a wooden dish hanging near the head of the corpse, for the purpose, doubtless, to enable it to quench its thirst on the long journey they suppose awaits it after death. The Chinnooks place them in canoes, which, together with the warrior's utensils accompanying the dead, are so shattered as to be useless.

The most singular funeral of which a record has been preserved was that of Blackbird, an Omaha chief. The artist has reproduced the strange scene on page 1341.
Upon the bank of the Missouri, and in the

bluff, the distance found the should be war hors

district o

The re On the together repaired in the m buried. Presen

borne up was led steed wl When the of the blu panoply o head, the and medi scalps, wh to his hor his favori furnished in his pas his pipe a steel, so th the luxury

This do his horse. their turn their dead his addres milion, pro the horse, of his han warriors b turf, and w mound, in his horse v they place the devote built the m alive.

The mo above the buried in horse were top of the and this me built, a far rounding c ted mound travellers, t ascend the so strange the magnifi the latter vi respects at most renov cine men.

The cust victims wit now to be e can tribes, 1 within comp robes and ornamenta pipes, tobacco, and are p in skins previously s to render them pliant xclude the air as much y is then placed upon a even feet in height, and ess of time, the scaffold hen the relations of the whole of the remains, f the skull, which they orming circles of a hun-h the faces looking ing on fresh bunches of of each circle is a little placed the skulls of son, and on the mound , on which hang sundry which are supposed to

re fond of swimming e youth of both sexes very early age. Such ensable to them, espee to accidents with their neir marches compelled rivers. The squaws iren to their backs, and that lies in their way. of swimming, however, m ours. They do not oke outward from the body alternately from , and raising one arm ach as far forward as her arm having made s down and becomes a nd this, though an apyet a most effective and less likely to be to the chest, or with

tantly visit the skull en may often be seen of their dead children ng on with their work, d skull as if it were a hen tired, they will lie encircling the skull, in company with the and many other tribes e branches or crotches skins, and always with g near the head of the e, doubtless, to enable on the long journey it after death. The n in canoes, which, ior's utensils accomso shattered as to be

eral of which a record that of Blackbird, an ge 1341.

Missouri, and in the

district over which he ruled, there is a lofty a Nachez chief, called the Stung Serpent, bluff, the top of which can be seen for a vast who died; and as he was the head chief of the distance on every side. When the chief found that he was dying, he ordered that he should be placed on the back of his favorite war horse, and buried on the top of the bluff.

The request was carried out to the letter. On the appointed day, the whole tribe, together with a vast concourse of spectators, repaired to the bluff, leaving an open space in the middle, where the chief was to be buried.

Presently, the body of the dead chief was borne up the sides of the bluff, and after him was led his war horse, a noble milk-white steed which he had valued exceedingly. When the funeral procession reached the top of the bluff, the dead chief was clothed in full panoply of war, the feather plumes on his head, the strung bow, quiver, arrows, shield, and medicine bag slung on his back, his scalps, which no other man might take, hung to his horse's bridle and to his weapons, and his favorite spear in his hand. He was also firnished with food and drink, to sustain him in his passage to the spirit land, and with his pipe and filled tobacco pouch, flint, and steel, so that he might solace himself with the luxury of smoking.

This done, he was mounted on the back of his horse, and all the chiefs advanced in their turn to make their farewell speeches to their dead leader. Each. after delivering his address, rubbed his right hand with vermilion, pressed it against the white coat of the horse, and left there the scarlet imprint of his hand. Then began the burial. The warriors brought in their hands pieces of turf, and with them began to raise a huge mound, in the middle of which the chief and his horse were to be enclosed. One by one they placed their turves around the feet of the devoted horse, and so, by degrees, they built the mound over the animal while yet

The mound, when completed, rose high above the head of the chief this strangely buried in its centre, and there he and his horse were left to decay together. On the top of the mound a cedar post was erected; and this mound has been, ever since it was built, a familiar landmark to all the surrounding country. This green, flower spotted mound is visited by great numbers of travellers, both white and red. The former ascend the bluff partly out of curiosity to see so strange a tomb, and partly for the sake of the magnificent view from its summit, while the latter visit it for the sake of paying their respects at the burial-place of one of their most renowned chiefs and greatest medi-

tribe, a considerable number of victims were devoted for sacrifice. The French, however, remonstrated, and induced the friends of the dead chief to limit the number to eight or ten. Among them was a beautiful girl, who, though not his wife, had loved him greatly, and desired to share his grave.

On the day appointed a procession was formed, in which the victims were led in great state, accompanied by eight relatives of the deceased, who were to act as executioners, and who bore the fatal cord, the deerskin which was thrown over the head of the victim, the tobacco pills which were to be taken before the ceremony, and the other implements required. When they were all placed at the grave, the chief wife made a speech, in which she took leave of her children; and the victims, after being strangled, were deposited in the grave.

As the object of this work is to present the manners and customs of tribes and races in their primitive state, and not those semicivilized, it will be enough to merely introduce the names of the Cherokees, Choctaws, Creeks, Chickasaws, Senecas, Delawares, etc. Nor is it necessary to consider those, now extinct, that occupied the country when first settled by white men. For the same general characteristics, now presented, pertain to all the North American races. The Indian tribes are rapidly retreating or vanishing before the steady, irresistible march of civilization, and the growing grandeur of the great Republic in North America. The line, where the echoes of the Indian's yell blends with the shout of advancing pioneers and the sound of the wood-chopper's axe, is continually moving westward. In a few years we have seen it pass from the Mississippi River, to the base of the Rocky Mountains. The settler's cabin is unceasingly encroaching upon the wigwams of the Red Men. With sadness, having smoothed the graves of their fathers, and taken a last look of their hunting grounds, they retreat before a power which they vainly strive to resist. Pressed backward in two centuries and a half, across three-quarters of the continent, from Massachusetts Bay almost to the Pacific, except a few decaying remnants of tribes, their history and doom cannot but awaken sympathy

for an unfortunate and overpow red race. Even though we do not form our estimate of the Indian from the romantic creations of Cooper, every right-thinking person will accord them the tribute of many qualities that constitute a real grandeur of character. Their marvellous bravery, their ardent rage, The custom of burying wives and other their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight victims with the deceased husband seems now to be extinct among the North Amerians their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight of their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their steadfast, flery enthusiasm in the fight or in the chase, their manly sports, their sports are considered as the chase of the can tribes, but such an event has happened their stern, stoical endurance in misfortune, within comparatively late years. There was

given to the Indian a character unique and noble, a character and history that the annalist, poet, and novelist, have transferred to their immortal pages, and over which multitudes of old and young alike have bent with eager, breathless interest. As Mr. Manginin his "Desert World" says: "There was poetry in their faith, in their customs, in their language, at once laconic and picturesque - and even in the names they bestowed on each tribe, each chief and warrior, on mountain and river. One can hardly suppress a feeling of regret that so much of wild romance and valor should have been swept from the face of the earth, unless we call to mind the shadow of the picture — the Indian's cruelty, perfidiousness and savage lust. Even then, our humanity revolts from the treatment to which he has been subjected by the white man." Tracked and hunted like wild beasts, driven from their hunting grounds and the territory of their ancestors, imbruted by drink, decimated and dying by epidemics and vices contracted from white men, the poor Indians vainly struggling to avert their doom of extermination have elicited the sympathy and com-miseration of the civilized world. The theory advocated in the preceding part of this work, (see page 790), in regard to the decay and extinction of savage races, does not forbid regrets that such a people should have suffered so grievously at the hands of the United States Government, by the greed of its agents, the frauds of traders and the fatal contagion of the vices of a civilized people. What with American rifles and American whiskey, their extinction has been rapid, and their doom certain.

These tribes, contending in a most unequal strife with the forces of modern civilization, more readily falling victims to the vices of white men than accepting their virtues, are entitled to the just consideration and protection of the government, as its wards, from whom, or their ancestors, have been taken

their soil and their homes.

It is gratifying to know that a more humane policy is about being inaugurated, and though the wrongs of the past may not be redressed, that their rights in future may be

recognized and maintained. Major-General Thomas, of the U. S. army, whose name and history are the guarantee of candid and wise judgment, says, in respect to an instance of cold-blooded, unprovoked, unpunished outrage upon an Indian boy (it is given only as a representative fact of many more and bitter wrongs):- "I see no better way than to extend civil authority over the Indians and enable them to appear as witnesses in all cases affecting their own status and that of the whites toward them. This is a fair instance of the cause of the Indian troubles: and until white murderers and robbers of the Indians are punished, a large force of troops will be necessary to protect peaceful white settlers from Indian avengers." And Gen. Sherman, in whose opinion the utmost confidence can be reposed, makes the following indorsement to General Thomas' view:-"This case illustrates the origin of most of the Indian wars on the frontier. A citizen may murder an Indian with impunity, but if the Indian retaliate, war results, and the United States must bear the expense."

Here we have the secret of many of the barbarities of the Indian tribes. Inflamed and imbruted by the whiskey sold them, their ignorance imposed upon by the greed of traders and even government agents, having little or no chance for securing justice in their real or imagined injuries, there is certainly some extenuation if this wild son of the forest go forth with tomahawk and scalping knife, as the self-appointed avenger of his own and his people's wrongs. This is not the place, if there were room, for a thorough discussion of the wrongs of the Red Men, but I cannot forego the duty, in treating of the manners, customs and character of tribes so interesting, so noble and superior, by many traits, to most savage races, of recording at the same time, this tribute and testimony. It will unquestionably be the verdict of the future, as coming generations shall study the memorials and character of the North Ameri-

can Indians.*

APPEAR CH 66 B

MO

ICE

WE no ple, call-(their o amid p those ele pass as l try as d habitant verdure.

relates th "death man, wh fully lear of the h But all was take tive land being the Do you s

fect yea

culiar pe compared the aver inches for less for t The co dark, but,

In app

that of th It looks, consequer who neve death. It lutions, by

^{*} These reflections, with much relating to the customs of the Indians, have been introduced into the work by the American editor.

tained. Major-General army, whose name and ntee of candid and wise spect to an instance of oked, unpunished outboy (it is given only act of many more and ee no better way than to y over the Indians and ar as witnesses in all own status and that them. This is a fair of the Indian troubles; urderers and robbers nished, a large force of ary to protect peaceful Indian avengers." in whose opinion the be reposed, makes the t to General Thomas' ustrates the origin of ars on the frontier. A Indian with impunity, aliate, war results, and st bear the expense." secret of many of the dian tribes. Inflamed hiskey sold them, their ipon by the greed of rnment agents, having ecuring justice in their ries, there is certainly is wild son of the forest wk and scalping knife, venger of his own and This is not the place, a thorough discussion Red Men, but I cannot ating of the manners, of tribes so interesting, or, by many traits, to recording at the same d testimony. It will verdict of the future,

h much relating to the ave been introduced into editor.

s shall study the me-

of the North Ameri-

CHAPTER CXL.

THE ESQUIMAUX.

APPEARANCE - DRESS - DWELLINGS.

APPEARANCE OF THE PEOPLE - THEIR COMPLEXION, AND DIFFICULTY OF SEEING IT - AN ESQUIMAUX CHILD WASHED AND COMBED - BODILY STRENGTH - DRESS OF THE MEN - THE TAILED COAT-"MILLING" BOOTS - DRESS OF THE WOMEN - THE LARGE HOOD AND BOOTS - THE TATTOO, AND MODE OF PERFORMING IT - HAIR-DRESSING - PREPARING SKINS - THE SNOW HOUSES, AND MODE OF BUILDING THEM - CAPTAIN LYON'S DESCRIPTION - INTERNAL ARRANGEMENTS OF THE HUT-ICE AND BONE HOUSES-THE TUPIC, OR SUMMER DWELLING-FOOD OF THE ESQUIMAUX-A WISE TRAVELLER.

ole, called by Europeans the EsquiMAUX (their own name being Innuit), who, placed amid perpetual ice and snow, have bent those elements to their own purposes, and pass as happy lives in their inclement country as do the apparently more favored inhabitants of the tropics amid their perpetual verdure. Indeed, the Esquimaux has a perfect yearning for his beloved country, should he be away from it. Captain Hall relates the circumstances attendant upon the "death of Kudlago, a singularly intelligent man, who had visited the United States, and fully learned to appreciate the advantages of the high civilization which he saw there. But all his wishes were for home, and he was taken back. As the ship neared his na-tive land, he fell ill and died, his last words being the eager inquiry, 'Do you see ice?' Do you see ice?'"

In appearance, the Esquimaux are a peculiar people. Their stature is short, when compared to that of an ordinary European, the average being about five feet three inches for the men, and two or three inches less for the women.

The complexion is in some cases rather dark, but, as a rule, is not much darker than that of the inhabitants of Southern Europe. It looks, however, many shades darker, in consequence of the habits of the Esquimaux, who never wash from their birth to their death. It is not that they neglect their ab-

WE now come to those extraordinary peo- enters the mind of an Esquimaux, who, unless he has met with white men, has not even heard of such an operation. however, an Esquimaux has been induced to allow his skin to be cleansed, he is found to lose many shades of his original darkness. There is an amusing passage in the journal of Captain Hall, given in his "Life with the Esquimaux," a work to which frequent reference will be made in the next few pages.

"Kimnaloo has just been Americanized. Captain B--'s good wife had made and sent to her a pretty red dress, a necktie, mittens, belt, &c.

"Mr. Rogers and I, at a suggestion from me, thought it best to commence the change of nationality with soap and water. process was slow, that of arriving at the beautiful little girl, whom we at length found, though deeply imbedded layer after layer in dirt. Then came the task of making her tollet. With a very coarse comb I commenced to disentangle her hair. had but little, the back part from behind her ears having been cut short off on account of severe pains in her head. How patiently she submitted to the worse than curry-comb process I had to use! This was the first time in her life that a comb had been put to her head. Her hair was filled with moss, seal and reindeer hairs, and many other things, too numerous to call them all by name. Poor little thing! Yet she was fact and beautiful, the very picture of health. Her cheeks were as red as the blown rom; lutions, but the very idea of washing never Nature's vermilion was upon them."

The skin is smooth, soft, and yet wonderfully tough, with a sort of unctuous surface, probably occasioned by the enormous amount of oil and fat which forms the principal part of their diet. The features are not very pleasing, the face being broad, and the cheek-bones so high that in many cases, if a flat ruler were laid from cheek to cheek, it would not touch the nose. As is the case with the Chinese section of this vast race, the eyes slope rather downward, and the face is often covered with wrinkles to a wonderful extent, extending from the eyes down each check.

In bodily strength, the Esquimaux present a great contrast to the Andamaners, who, though short, are possessed of gigantic mus-cular powers. Captain Lyon found that the natives could not raise burdens that were easily lifted by his sailors, whereas an ordinary Andamaner is often a match for two powerful sailors. The neck is strangely thin and feeble, however well-proportioned the chest may be, and it is a curious fact that the Esquimaux are almost wholly ignorant of running and jumping. There is but little beard, and the hair is black, coarse, straight, and lanky.

The general character of the dress is alike in both sexes, so that at a little distance it is not easy to tell whether the spectator be looking at a man or a woman, both sexes wearing trousers, and jackets with a large hood, which can either be drawn over the head or allowed to fall on the shoulders. The jacket of the man is made something like a broad-tailed dress coat, hanging behind as far as the middle of the caif, and cut away in front just below the waist. It is mostly made of deer-hide, and the hood is lined and turned up with white fur, which forms a curious contrast to the dark, broad face within it. The edge of the coat is generally bordered with a lighter-colored fur,

fur hanging like tassels. Under this coat is another of similar shape, but of lighter material, and having the furry side turned inward. The legs are clothed in two pairs of trousers, the outer pair being often made of strips of differently colored deer-skins arranged in parallel stripes, and having the fur outward, while the other has the fur inward, as is the case with the coats. They only come as low as the knee, so that the joint is often frost-bitten; but nothing can induce the Esquimaux to outrage fashion by adding a couple of inches to the garment.

and is often decorated with little strips of

The boots are made of the same materials as the other parts of the dress. In winter time the Esquimaux wear first a pair of boots with the fur inward, then slippers of soft seal-skin so prepared as to be water-proof, then another pair of boots, and, lastly, proof, then another pair of boots, and, lastly, a quantity of soot. With this, together with strong seal-skin shoes. In the summer time a little oil and much saliva, she soon made a

The soles are made of thicker material than the rest of the garment, and it is the duty of the women to keep the soles flexible by chewing or "milling" them, an operation which consumes a considerable part of their

Mittens are made of various skins, the hairy side being inward; and if the wearer be engaged in fishing, he uses mittens made of watertight seal-skin. During the summer, light dresses are worn, made of the skins of ducks, with the feathers inward. Over all there is sometimes a very thin and light waterproof garment made of the intestines of the walrus.

The jackets worn by the women have a much longer and narrower tail than those of the men, and a tolerably deep flap in front. The hood is of enormous size, being used as a cradle as well as a hood, in which a child of nearly three years old is carried. The trousers, or rather leggings, are tied to a girdle that passes round the waist, and are so cut away at the top, that they allow a portion of the skin to be visible between them and the sides of the jacket, an exposure from which the wearers do not seem to suffer. The oddest article of the female apparel is, however, the boots, which more resem-ble sacks or buckets than boots, and are simply tied to the girdle by a broad strap that passes up the front of the leg. The boots are used as receptacles for all kinds of portable property, food included, and in consequence impart a most singular walk, or rather waddle, to the wearers, who are obliged to keep their feet widely apart, and, as they walk, to swing one foot round the other, rather than to use the ordinary mode of walking.

The Esquimaux women use the tattoo, called by them the kakeen, and in some places cover their limbs and a considerable portion of their persons with various patterns. There are some who mark the fore-head, cheeks, and chin, these being mostly proof that the woman is married, though they are sometimes worn by unmarried females. The mode in which the kakeen is performed is amusingly told by Captain Lyon, who courageously submitted to the operation.

"My curiosity determined me on seeing how the kakeen was performed, and I accordingly put myself into the hands of Mrs. Kettle, whom I had adopted as my amama, or mother.

"Having furnished her with a fine needle, she tore with her teeth a thread off a deer's sinew, and thus prepared the sewing appara-She then, without a possibility of darkening her hands beyond their standard color, passed her fingers under the bottom of the stove pot, from whence she collected one pair of boots is sufficient protection. goed mixture, and taking a small piece of

whale variet I easil self w mates figure ing th stroke measu

work

and ta my sk the wo and b where tough, broken throug pleted allow h with oi which a I could by the lishmer inflamn color w skin hea on the

The o

sexes.

is nearl

is kept i is then jacket, piece, th Into thi opening operatio hood or of the fa maux h nable, ar As to the fore grow to very long knot pr

women make it bone or the tails are then of deer-h women w the hair i then pre

The wl the skin a the wome task whe The fat, h the skins inner sur. sometime thicker material than t, and it is the duty of the soles flexible by them, an operation siderable part of their

of various skins, the d; and if the wearer he uses mittens made During the summer, made of the skins of rs inward. Over all very thin and light ade of the intestines

the women have a wer tail than those of y deep flap in front, is size, being used as od, in which a child old is carried. The gings, are tied to a be visible between e jacket, an exposure do not seem to sufof the female apparel which more resemhan boots, and are le by a broad strap nt of the leg. The acles for all kinds of ncluded, and in const singular walk, or wearers, who are et widely apart, and, one foot round the

nen use the tattoo. keen, and in some and a considerable s with various patwho mark the forethese being mostly is married, though orn by unmarried which the kakeen gly told by Captain y submitted to the

e the ordinary mode

ined me on seeing erformed, and I acto the hands of Mrs. pted as my amama,

r with a fine needle, a thread off a deer's the sewing apparapossibility of darknd their standard under the bottom hence she collected this, together with va, she soon made a g a small piece of whalebone well blackened, she then drew a variety of figures about my arm, differing, as I easily saw, from those with which she her-I easily saw, from those with which she her-self was marked; and, calling her house-mates, they all enjoyed a good laugh at the former which saw is figures, which perhaps conveyed some meaning that I could not fathom.

I had, however, only determined on a few strokes, so that her trouble was in some measure thrown away. She commenced her work by blackening the thread with soot, and taking a pretty deep but short stitch in and taking a preced deep but short staten in my skin, carefully pressing her thumb on the wound as the thread passed through it, and beginning each stitch at the place where the last had ceased. My flesh being tough, she got on but slowly, and, having tough, she got on but stowly, and, naving broken one needle in trying to force it through, I thought fit, when she had completed forty stitches, or about two inches, to allow her to desist; then, rubbing the part with oil in order to stanch the little blood which appeared, she finished the operation. I could now form an idea of the price paid by the Feguinary formers for their employers. by the Esquimaux females for their embellishments, which for a time occasion a slight inflammation and some degree of pain. The color which the kakeen assumes when the skin heals is of the same light blue as we see on the marked arms of scamen."

The dress of the children is alike in both sexes. None at all is worn until the infant is nearly three years old, up to which age it is kept naked in its mother's hood. A dress is then made of fawn skin, having the jacket, trousers, boots, and hood in one piece, the only opening being at the back. Into this odd dress the child is put, and the opening being tied up with a string, the operation of dressing is completed. The hood or cap is generally made in the shape of the fawn's head, so that the little Esquimaux has the strangest appearance imagi-

nable, and scarcely looks like a human being. As to the hair, the men cut it short over the forehead, and allow the side locks to grow to their full length, tying them, when very long, over the top of the head in a large knot projecting over the forehead. The women part the hair in the middle, and make it into two large tails. A piece of bone or wood is introduced into each of the tails by way of a stiffener, and they are then bound spirally with a narrow strip of deer-hide, with the fur outward. Those women who can afford such a luxury pass the hair through two brass rings, which are then pressed as closely as possible to the

The whole of the operations of preparing the skin and making the clothes to done by he women, the men having completed their task when they have killed the animals. The fat, blood, and oil are first sucked from the skins, and the women then scrape the ground in summer, and laced over a hoop in winter and exposed to the heat of the lamp, which constitutes the only fire of the Esquimaux

Bird skins are prepared in a somewhat similar fashion, and are stripped from the bodies of the birds in a marvellously expeditious manner. With their knife, which exactly resembles a cheese cutter, they make an incision round the head and round the outer joint of each wing. The cut part is then seized between the teeth, and with a pull and a jerk the skin comes off in one piece, and turned inside out. These skins are considered a great luxury by the Esquimaux, who bite and suck off the fat which adheres liberally to them.

In a country where the thermometer remains many degrees below zero for many months together, and in which ice and snow are the prevailing features, it is evident that houses cannot be built after the fashion of those in most countries. No trees can grow there, so that wooden houses are out of the question, and in a land where ice has been known to choke up the iron flue of a stove always kept burning neither clay could be made into bricks, nor stones cemented with mortar. There is only one substance of which houses can be made, and this is frozen water, either in the form of snow or ice, the former being the usual material. These snow houses, called igloos, are made in a dome-like shape, and are built with a rapidity that is perfectly astonishing. The reader will find the form and mode of building these houses illustrated on page 1327.

The general appearance of these strange houses is thus described by Captain Lyon, in his "Private Journal." "Our astonishment was unbounded, when, after creeping through some long passages of snow, to enter the different dwellings, we found our-selves in a cluster of dome shaped edifices, entirely constructed of snow, which, from their recent erection, had not been sullied by the smoke of the numerous lamps that were burning, but admitted the light in most delicate hues of verdigris green and blue, according to the thickness of the slab through which seed . . . There were five clusters of huts, some having one, some two, and others three domes, in which thirteen families lived, each occupying a dome or one side of it. according to their strength. The whole number of people were twentyone men, twenty-five women, and eighteen children, making a total of sixty-four.

"The entrance to the building was by a hole about a yard in diameter, which led through a low arched passage of sufficient inner surface with an ingenious instrument, through a low arched passage of sufficient sometimes furnished with teeth, and at breadth for two to pass in a stooping pos-

ture, and about sixteen feet in length; another hole then presented itself, and led through a similarly shaped but shorter passage, having at its termination a round opening about two feet across. Up this hole we crept one step, and found ourselves in a dome about seven feet in height, and as many in diameter, from whence the three dwelling-places with arched roofs were en-tered. It must be observed that this is the description of a large hut; the smaller ones, containing one or two families, have the domes somewhat differently arranged.

"Each dwelling might be averaged at fourteen or sixteen feet in diameter, by six or seven in height; but as snow alone was used in their construction, and was always at hand, it might be supposed that there was no particular size, that being of course at the option of the builder. The laying of the arch was performed in such a manner as would have satisfied the most regular artist, the key piece on the top being a large square slab. The blocks of snow used in the buildings were from four to six inches in thickness, and about a couple of feet in length, carefully pared with a large knife. Where two families occupied a dome, a seat was raised on either side two feet in height. These raised places were used as beds, and covered, in the first place, with whalebone, sprigs of Andromeda, or pieces of sealskin; over these were spread deer-pelts and deer-skin clothes, which had a very warm appearance. The pelts were used as blank-ets, and many of them had ornamental fringes of leather sewed round their edges.

"Each dwelling-place was illuminated by a broad piece of transparent fresh-water ice, of about two feet in diameter, which formed part of the roof, and was placed over the door. These windows gave a most pleasing light, free from glare, and some-thing like that which is thrown through ground glass. We soon learned that the building of a house was but the work of an hour or two, and that a couple of menone to cut the slabs and another to lay them were sufficient laborers.

" For the support of the lamps and cooking apparatus a mound of snow is erected for each family; and when the master has two wives or a mother, both have an in-dependent place, one at each end of the bench.

In the middle of the hut is erected a slight scaffold, which supports a rudely made net, and under the net is placed the one essential piece of furniture of the house, namely, the lamp. This is a very simple contrivance. It is merely an oval shaped dish of stone, round the edge of which is arranged a long wick made of moss. noured into it, and a quantity of blubber is heaped in the centre of the lamp, so as to keep up the supply. Over the lamp is hung the cooking pot, the size of each being pro-

portioned to the rank of the possessor. It sometimes happens that two wives occupy sometimes napp⁻hs that two wives occupy the same hut. In this case, the chief or "igloo-wife" has the large lamp and the supporting scaffold, while the other has to content herself with a little lamp and a small pot, which she must support as she

The value of the lamp is simply incalculable, not so much for its use in cooking, as the Esquimaux like meat raw quite as well as cooked, but for its supply of warmth, for she water which is obtained by melting snow over it, and for its use in drying clothes. All garments, the snow being first beaten off them, are placed on the "dry-net" over the large that the snow the snow that the snow the sn net" over the lamp, where they are gradually dried, and, after being chewed by the women, are fit for wear again: otherwise they become frozen quite hard, and are of no more use than if they were made of ice. Oil is supplied by chewing blubber, and the women, who always perform the task, have the curious knack of expressing the oil without allowing a drop of moisture to mix with it. In one minute a woman can obtain enough oil to fill a lamp two feet in

Sometimes, when snow is scarce, the igloo is made of ice. The walls are formed of this material, and are generally of an octagonal form, the ice slabs being cemented together with snow. The domed roof is usually made of snow, but the tunnel, or passage to the interior, is of ice. Such a house is, when first made, so transparent that, even at the distance of some paces, those who are within it can be recognized through its walls.

It may seem strange that such materials as snow and ice should be employed in the construction of man's dwelling-place, as nothing seems more opposed to comfort; yet these houses, instead of being cold, are so warm that the inhabitants throw off the greater part, and sometimes the whole, of their clothes when within them; and the bed of snow on which they recline is, when covered with the proper amount of skins, even warmer than an European feather bed. In the summer time the Esquimaux prefer the skin hut, or "tupic." This is a mere tent made of deer-skins thrown over a few sticks, though the supports are sometimes formed from the bones of whales.

THE food of the Esquimaux is almost wholly of an animal character. In the first place, the country supplies scarcely any vegetation; and, in the next place, an abundant supply of animal food is required in order to mable the inhabitants to withstand the intense cold. The seal and the rein-deer form their avorite food, and in both cases the fat is the part that is most highly

the po maux is as n butter conditi almost Anoth valuab the de raw ve like the not to

be delig This' partaki tried th he then stance, eating 1 light, a the feas wise co was not that, in previou whatevo it. As t nor any for an 1 or ten p with pie unable t a sort of which st

that if he tended to to the sa a bold pl them eat to his fee that had in order traneous he had no not have meat, and in which fresh seal mal seem and the

liquors.

Puttin

sity of tl

of the possessor. It nat two wives occupy nat two wives occupy nis case, the chief or large lamp and the hile the other has to a little lamp and a must support as she

mp is simply incalcuits use in cooking, as neat raw quite as well supply of warmth, for obtained by melting or its use in drying t, the snow being first placed on the "dryhere they are gradu-being chewed by the ear again: otherwise uite hard, and are of ey were made of ice. ving blubber, and the erform the task, have expressing the oil p of moisture to mix te a woman can oba lamp two feet in

w is scarce, the igloo alls are formed of this rally of an octagonal g cemented together roof is usually made or passage to the ina house is, when first hat, even at the disose who are within it igh its walls.

that such materials be employed in the dwelling-place, as osed to comfort; yet of being cold, are so tants throw off the times the whole, of thin them; and the they recline is, when r amount of skins, European feather time the Esquimaux "tupic." This is a -skins thrown over supports are someones of whales.

squimaux is almost racter. In the first plies scarcely any next place, an abunod is required in oritants to withstand seal and the rein-food, and in both that is most highly

of the hinder quarmaux " toodnoo," is

the portion that is most valued. Captain | sort of after-dinner delicacy. But finding Half, who very wisely lived as the Esquimaux while staying with them, says that it is as much superior to butter as is the best buter to lard; and when the deer is in good condition, the meat is so tender that a steak almost falls to pieces if lifted by its edge. Another part of the reindeer is almost as valuable as the fat. This is the contents of the deer's paunch, eaten raw with slices of raw venison. It has a slightly acid flavor, like that of surrel, and if the consumer were not to know what he was eating, he would be delighted with it.

This was the case with Captain Hall, while partaking of a deer feast in an igloo. He tried the deer flesh, and found it excellent; he then took a morsel of the unknown substance, and describes it as ambrosial. After eating the greater part of it, he took it to the light, and was horrified to find the nature of the feast. However, he soon came to the wise conclusion that epicurism of any kind was nothing but the effect of education, and that, in consequence, he would ignore his previous prejudices on the subject, and eat whatever the Esquimaux ate, and as they ate it. As to the quantity consumed, neither he nor any other white man would be a match for an Esquimaux, who will consume nine or ten pounds of meat at a sitting, and lie eleisurely on his back, being fed by his wife with pieces of blubber when he is utterly unable to help himself. An Esquimaux finds asort of intoxicating effect in utter repletion, which stands him in the stead of fermented

Putting aside the gourmandizing propensity of the Esquimaux, Captain Hall found that if he were to live with them, as he intended to do, he must sooner or later come to the same diet. He determined in making a bold plunge, and eating whatever he saw them eat. At first it was rather repugnant to his feelings to eat a piece of raw meat that had been carefully licked by a woman, in order to free it from hairs and other extraneous matters. But he reflected that, if he had not known of the licking, he would not have discovered it from the flavor of the meat, and he very wisely ignored the mode in which it had been cleaned. Similarly, fresh seal's blood just drawn from the animal seemed rather a strange kind of soup, and the still warm entrails a remarkable

that the Esquimaux considered them both as very great dainties, he tried them, and pro-nounced that the Esquimaux were perfectly right, and that his preconceived ideas were entirely wrong.



HARPOON HEAD. (From my collection.) (See page 1340.)

CHAPTER CXLL

THE ESQUIMAUX - Continued.

HUNTING - RELIGION - BURIAL

MODES OF HUNTING - SEAL HUNTING IN THE SNOW - THE INFANT DECOY - THE SEAL'S IGLOO - AN IVORY FLOAT -- SEAL "TALK" -- THE HARPOONS AND SPEARS -- SPEARING THE WALRUS -- THE ICE RAFT - THE BOW AND ARROWS AND WRIST GUARD - DEER HUNTING - GROUSE SHOOTING-THE WOLF AND FOX TRAPS -- THE BIRD SLING -- BEAR HUNTING -- THE MEN'S AND WOMEN'S BOATS - CONSTRUCTION OF THE KIA, AND MODE OF USING IT - AQUATIC FEATS - THE WOMEN'S BOAT AND ITS USES - THE SLEDGE - THE VARIOUS RUNNERS - SLEDGE DOGS AND THEIR TRAIN-ING - EXAMPLES OF THEIR CLEVERNESS - BARBEKARK AND THE CAPELINS - MARRIAGE AND EDUCATION OF CHILDREN - GAMES AND DANCING - RELIGION - THE ANGERO AND HIS MYSTERIES "IN VINO VERITAS" — HONESTY — HOSPITALITY — DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD.

DEPENDING wholly upon the products of the | seal will not be struck, and the man is often chase for their food, the Esquimaux are most accomplished hunters, and in their peculiar way are simply unequalled by any other people on earth. Take, for example, their mode of seal catching. The reader is doubtless aware that the seal, being a mammal, breathes atmospheric air, and that in consequence it cannot remain very long under water, but is obliged to come up at certain intervals for the purpose of breathing. When it dives under the ice, it would therefore be drowned did it not form for itself certain breathing holes in the ice. These are very small, not more than an inch and a half, or at the most two inches, in diameter, and do not penetrate through the coating of snow that lies on the ice.

The hunter's dog, which is specially trained for this purpose, detects the breathing hole, and the master then reverses his harpoon, which has a long, spindle shaped butt, and thrusts it through the snow in search of the concealed hole, which often lies under some two feet of snow. When he has found it, he seats himself by the hole, with his harpoon ready; and there he will sit until he hears the blowing sound of the seal, when he drives the harpoon into the hole, and invariably secures his prey. This is the more difficult, as, if the stroke be

wearied with waiting and need of sleep.

The patience with which the Esquimaux hunter will watch a seal hole far surpasses that of a cat at a mouse hole. Captain Hall mentions one case, where an Esquimaux, a notable seal hunter, actually sat watching a seal hole for two and a half days and two nights without either sleep or food. Considering the nature of the climate, such a feat as this is almost incredible. The poor man, after all his trouble, failed to secure the seal, but was not disheartened, and, after taking some food, went off again to the seal hole to renew his watch.

Some of the Esquimaux seal hunters use a singularly ingenious instrument for enabling them to detect the approach of the animal. It consists of a very slender ivory rod, about twelve inches in length, pointed at one end, and having a round knob at the other. It is about as thick as a crow quill. When the hunter has found a seal hole, he ties to the upper end a very fine thread made of sinew, and lowers it into the scal hole, where it is allowed to dangle by the thread. When the seal comes to breathe, it takes no notice of so small an object, but rises as usual for air, pushing the little rod before it. As soon as the hunter sees the rod rise, he knows that the seal is there, and wrong by even a quarter of an inch, the drives his spear down the hole. Even &

farger be uns with th Ther in which

mother produc until sh upon it of the s chambe of the J ice is ju of the a feet in platforn can resi here it snow co is called able to At th

off in se they ar flings h down th his seal out the way, tha same m the iglo with its When oung se hind flip

sea thro the igloc the motl one. T seals by and pres ing the 1 Someti the wary strange v ice. It seconds' its head a be approx vantage o

looking h lies on th ments. the hunt hands, an logue, w! supposed that the s the talk, in hunter to fatal strok

ice, he wa

himself a

The san the scaler the hunter

There is another mode of catching seals, in which the young acts as a decoy for its mother. The seal, when she is about to produce her young scratches away the ice until she comes to the snow, which lies deep upon it. She then scratches away a quantity of the snow until she has made a dome-like chamber, in form exactly like the snow hut of the Esquimaux. The tunnel through the ice is just large enough to allow the passage of the seal, while the chamber is about five feet in diameter, so that a tolerably large platform of ice is left, on which the creature can rest. Here its young is produced, and here it remains until the sun melts away the snow covering of the chamber, or igloo, as it is called, by which time the young animal is able to take care of itself.

At the proper season, the Esquimaux set off in search of these seal igloos, and when they are detected by the dogs, the hunter flings himself on the snow, thus beating down the roof of the igloo. He then thrusts his sealing hook into the igloo, and drags out the young seal. It is remarkable, by the way, that the polur bear acts in precisely the same manner, crushing down the walls of the igloo, and dragging out the young one

with its paws.

When the Esquimaux has secured the oung seal, he ties a long line to one of the hind flippers, and allows it to slip into the sea through the tunnel, while he creeps into the igloo with his hook, in hopes of catching the mother as she comes to help her young one. The Esquimaux always kill young seals by putting the foot on their shoulders, and pressing firmly down, so as to suffocate it. This is done for the purpose of preserv-

ing the blood.

Sometimes the seal hunter actually stalks the wary animal on the ice. The seal has a strange way of sleeping when lying on the ice. It takes short naps of only a few seconds' duration, and between them raises its head and looks round to see if any enemy be approaching. The Esquimaux takes advantage of this habit, and, lying down (ice, he waits for these short naps, and hitches himself along the ice toward the animal, looking himself very much like a seal as he lies on the ice, covered with seal skin garments. Whenever the seal raises its head, the hunter stops, begins to paw with his hands, and utters a curious droning mono-logue, which is called "seal talk," and is supposed to act as a charm. Certain it is, that the seal appears to be quite gratified by the talk, is put off its guard, and allows the hunter to approach near enough to make the

The same kind of "talk" is used when it is put, but is essentially the same in printhe scaler goes out in his boat, and some of the hunters are celebrated for the magical The first example is the typical harpoon. the hunters are celebrated for the magical

farger float—if we may so call it—might power of their song. In seal hunting from be unseen by the seal, but it would interfere a boat, a different kind of harpoon is employed. It is longer and slighter than that which is used for ice hunting, and is fur-nished with a float made of a leathern bag inflated with air. This is fastened to the shaft, and just below it one end of the harpoon line is secured, the other end being made fast to the head of the weapon.

When the seal is struck, the shaft is shaken from the head, so that there is no danger of its working the weapon out of the seal by its leverage, and it acts as a drag, impeding the movements of the animal, so that the hunter is able to overtake it in his boat, and to pierce it with another harpoon. When the seal is dead, the float serves another purpose. Seals, when killed in the water, almost invariably sink so rapidly that they cannot be secured. The float, however, remains at the surface, so that the successful hunter has only to paddle to it, take it into the canoe, and haul the seal on board. Perhaps the most curious part of the business lies in the skill with which the hunter carries the seal home. The boat in which he sits is entirely covered with skin, except a small aperture which admits 143 body, and yet he lays the body of the sear upon this slight platform, and manages to balance it as he paddles homeward, regardless of the waves upon which his light little canoe trembles like a

Of these boats we shall presently see something, and will now merely look at the weapons which are employed by the Esqui-

maux in hunting.

It is worthy of remark that war is totally unknown among the Esquimaux, who are perhaps the only people in the world who possess no war weapons, and have no desire to do so. Generally, when a savage obtains for the first time possession of fire-arms, he uses them in warfare, and by the superiority of his weapons raises himself to eminence. The Esquimaux cares for none of these things. He is essentially a family man, and when he is fortunate enough to procure a musket, he simply uses it for hunting purposes, never wasting the precious powder and lead upon the bodies of his fellow-men. Of fame he is totally ignorant, except that sort of local fame which is earned by skill in hunting. He finds that all his energies are required to procure food and clothing for his household, and therefore he does not expend them upon any other object.

The weapon which is to the Esquimaux what the rifle is to the backwoodsman, the boomerang to the Australian, the sword to the Agageer, the lasso to the South American, and the sumpitan to the Dyak, is the harpoon, a weapon which undergoes various modifications, according to the use to which

G - GROUSE SHOOTING -HE MEN'S AND WOMEN'S FEATS -THE WOMEN'S DOGS AND THEIR TRAIN-PELINS - MARRIAGE AND EKO AND HIS MYSTERIES DEAD and the man is often

THE SEAL'S IGLOO -AN

ING THE WALRUS -THE

nd need of sleep. hich the Esquimaux eal hole far surpasses hole. Captain Hall nere an Esquimaux, a tually sat watching a a half days and two sleep or food. Conf the climate, such a ncredible. The poor ible, failed to secure sheartened, and, after off again to the seal

h.

aux seal hunters use instrument for enthe approach of the a very slender ivory es in length, pointed a round knob at the hick as a crow quill. found a seal hole, he l a very fine thread wers it into the scal ed to dangle by the l comes to breathe, it small an object, but ushing the little rod the hunter sees the the seal is there, and

the hole. Even a

It consists of a long wooden shaft, with a float attached to it, as has already been described on page 1339. Owing to the great scarcity of wood in Esquimaux land, the greater part being obtained from the casual drift-wood that floats ashore from wrecks, such a weapon is exceedingly valuable. The shaft is generally made of a number of pieces of wood lashed together in a most ingenious fashion.

The barbed head is but loosely fitted to the shaft, a hole in the base of the head re-ceiving a point at the end of the shaft. It is held in its place by leathern thongs, so ar-ranged that, as soon as the wounded animal darts away, the shaft is shaken from the head. The arrangement of the leathern thongs varies according to the kind of weapon. The illustration on page 1337, shows the head of the harpoon which is used for spear-

ing the walrus.

It is about nine inches in length, and is made of ivory, either that of the walrus or the narwhal, probably the former, as it par-takes of the curve of the walrus tooth. It consists of two pieces, which we call, for convenience' sake the body and the head. The upper part of the body is slightly pointed and rounded, and is meant to be fixed to the shaft of the harpoon. About an inch and a half from the end two holes are bored, through which is passed a double thong of leather about as thick as a goose quill. Next comes the head, which is a triangular and deeply barbed piece of ivory, armed with a thin, flat plate of iron, almost exactly like the armature of the Bosjesman's war arrow. Through this head is bored a hole, and through the hole passes the loop of the double thong already mentioned. At the butt of the head there is a hole, into which is fitted the conical termination of the body.

By reference to the illustration, the reader will easily comprehend the arrangement. Fig. 1 shows the entire instrument, the head fitted on the body, and held in its place by the double thong. Fig. 2 shows the head disjointed from the body. The reader will now see what a perfect barb this instrument forms. When the harpoon is hurled at the walrus, the head penetrates through the touhh skin, and, becoming disjointed from the body, sets at right angles across the little wound which it made on entering, and effectually prevents the weapon from being withdrawn. Fig. 3 shows the upper view of the head, and fig. 4 shows the hole at its base, into which the conical end of the body

is loosely fitted.

The line attached to the shaft of this harpoon is very long and of great strength, and, when the hunter goes out to catch walrus, is coiled round and round his neck in many folds, very slightly tied together so as to prevent the successive coils from being entangled with one another. When the hunhe with the left hand simultaneously jerks the coils of rope off his neck, and throws them after the harpoon. The jerk snaps the slight ligatures, and the animal is "played" like a salmon by an angler, until it is utterly wearied with pain, loss of blood, and its struggles to escape, and can be brought near enough to receive the fatal wound from a

Casting off the rope in exact time is a most important business, as several hunters who have failed to do so have been caught in the coils of the rope, dragged under the ice, and there drowned. On the end of the harpoon line is worked a loop, and, as soon as the weapon is hurled, the hunter drives a spear deeply into the ice, slips the loop over it, and allows the walrus to struggle against the elastic rope until it is quite tired. He then hauls up the line until he has brought the animal to the ice, snatches up his spear, and with it inflicts a mortal wound. On the next page the reader may find an illustration showing the Esquimaux in his usual dress,

and engaged in walrus hunting.

One mode of employing this harpoon against the walrus is singularly ingenious. When the Esquimaux hunters see a number of the animals sleeping on a sheet of ice, they look out for an ice fragment small enough to be moved, and yet large enough to support several men. Paddling to the ice, they lift their canoes upon it, bore holes in it, and make their harpoon lines fast to the holes. They then gently paddle the whole piece of ice, men, canoes, and all, to the spot where are lying the drowsy animals, who do not suspect any danger from a piece of ice

floating by.

Having made their selection, the hunters tell off two men to each walrus, and, at a given signal, all the harpoons are hurled. The whole herd instantly roll themselves into the sea, the wounded animals being attached to the piece of ice by the harpoon The hunters allow them to tow their ice craft about until they are exhausted, when they launch their canoes, and kill the animals with their spears. As soon as the walrus is dead, the hunters plug up the holes with little pegs of ivory, for the purpose of pre-serving the blood, which is so highly valued by the Esquimaux.

The Esquimaux have another kind of The shaft is made of wood, but the spear. point and the barbed projections are of ivory. This spear is chiefly used for catching fish, and is flung by means of a throwing stick, almost in the same manner as the spears of the Australians. The throwing stick is made of wood, flattish, and near one end has a hole, into which the butt of the spear is passed. This is altogether a much slighter and lighter weapon than that which has been described.

Bows and arrows are also employed by the Esquimaux. The former are made of ter launches his harpoon with the right hand, horn, bone, or wood, and are almost always SPEARING THE WALRES

BURIAL OF BLACKBIRD.

(See page 1320.

I simultaneously jerks his neck, and throws n. The jerk snaps the ne animal is "played" agler, until it is utterly loss of blood, and its ad can be brought near afatal wound from a

in exact time is a most a several hunters who are been caught in the god under the ice, and he end of the harpoon, and, as soon as the hunter drives a spear hunter drives a spear as the loop over it, and struggle against the quite tired. He then he has brought the ches up his spear, and wound. On the next find an illustration ux in his usual dress, hunting

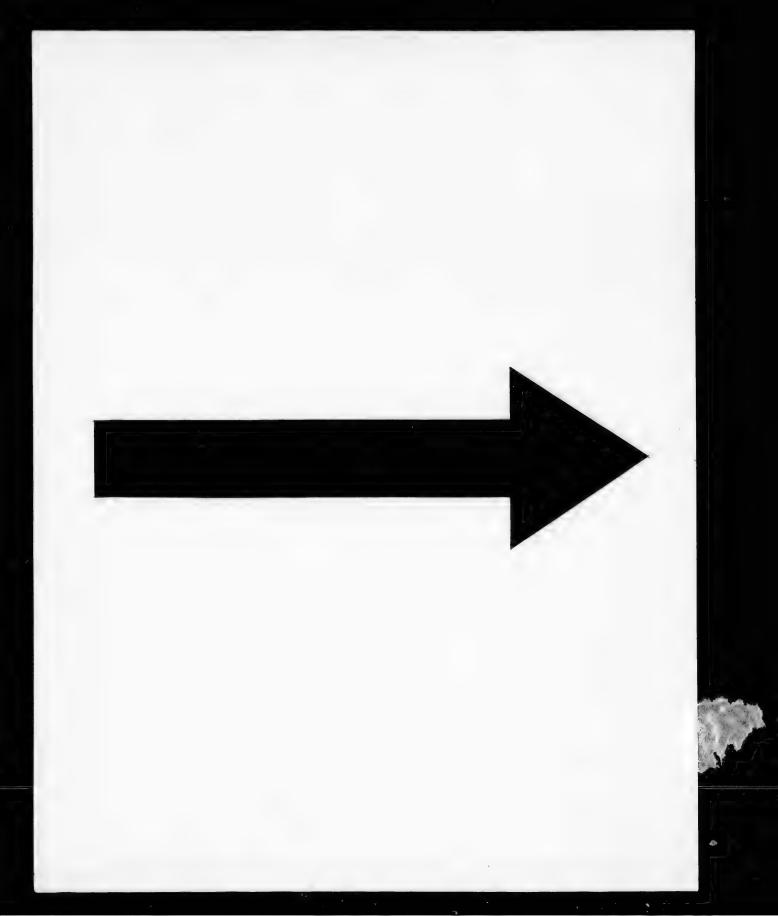
hunting.
loying this harpoon singularly ingenious, hunters see a number go on a sheet of ice, ice fragment small and yet large enough en. Paddling to the es upon it, bore holes harpoon lines fast to ently paddle the whole es, and all, to the spot owsy animals, who dor from a piece of ice

selection, the hunters ach walrus, and, at a anrpoons are hurled, antly roll themselves led animals being attended to the manner of the being are exhausted, when coes, and kill the animas soon as the walplug up the holes with the purpose of preth is so highly valued

we another kind of ade of wood, but the ojections are of ivory, sed for catching fish, of a throwing stick, nner as the spears of rowing stick is made ar one end has a hole, the spear is passed, h slighter and lighter in has been described, e also employed by former are made of dare almost always







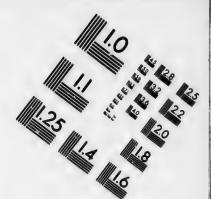
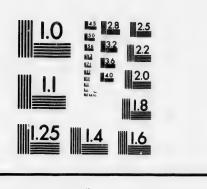


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



STATE OF THE SECOND SEC

Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

SIM STATE OF THE S



geth Nor is o rial of si The these tight again is ra is so distayardi avern The have the si and with

have the stand with contain a gener pervimade men: When holds is material than the string that the string that

is mastring made
The the car
mode When the le
draws creeps
the de
bellow
the de
the ar
which
Eve
call, h

the ar which Evec call, h ground some of They at they se sist said it. Pr does no series or ow, ca ciously or two a victin fitted to Some genious deer, and the chick street of the chick

genious
deer, an
the anin
they wa
innate
them to
past son

composed of several pieces lashed firmly to-gether. As is the case with the bows of the North American tribes, the chief strength is obtained, not so much from the material of the bow, as from a vast number of sinew strings which run down its back. There are often a hundred or more of these sinears which committees the strings with the st There are often a hundred or more of these sinews, which are put on sufficiently tight to give the bow a slight curvature against the string. The shape of the bow is rather peculiar. And though the weapon is so powerful, it is seldom used at a greater distance than twelve, or at most twenty yards. The length of the bow is on an average three feet six inches. average three feet six inches.

The arrows are extremely variable. Some have wooden shafts tipped with bone, but the shafts of the best specimens are half bone and half wood, and the points are armed with a little piece of iron. The arrows are contained in a quiver, and the bow is kept in a case. This quiver and bow-case are generally made of seal skin, as being impervious to wet, though they are frequently made of other materials. My own specimen is formed from the hide of the reindeer. When the Esquimaux shoots, he always holds his bow horizontally. The bow-string is made of some fifteen or twenty sinew strings, which are loosely twisted, but not made into a cord.

The bow and arrows are chiefly used in the capture of the reindeer and in shooting rabbits, birds, and other small game. The mode of deer hunting is very ingenious. When the hunter sees some deer feeding on the level plain, he takes his bow and arrows, draws his hood well over his head, and creeps as close as he can to the spot where the deer are reposing. Here he begins to bellow in imitation of the cry with which the down and contact the deer call each other, and thus attracts the animals within the short distance at which an Esquimaux archer shoots.

Even if he should not use the bellowing call, he has only to lie patiently on the ground to be sure that, sooner or later, some of the deer will come and look at him. They are most inquisitive animals, and when they see any strange object, they cannot re-sist satisfying their curiosity by inspecting it. Providing the object of their curiosity does not move after them, they approach in a series of circles which they gradually nar-row, capering and tossing their heads capriclously, and at last will come within a yard or two of the motionless hunter, and so fall a victim to the arrow which he has already fitted to his bow.

they walk slowly away, knowing that the innate curiosity of the deer will induce them to follow. They direct their course

of them quickly steps behind it, while the other walks onward as before. The deer do not notice that one of the men has disappeared, and so follow the other, thus coming within a yard or two of the deadly arrow.

The arrow is also used for shooting birds, which are always killed when sitting. arctic grouse are killed in great numbers by the arrow. They pack closely together, so that an arrow shot at random among them can scarcely avoid hitting one of them; and the birds are so apathetic that, when the missile falls among them, they only fly a few yards further and then settle, so that the hunter can pick up his arrow and shoot it at them again, until he has shot the greater number of the covey. In order to save the wrist from the recoil

of the bow-string, the Esquimaux wears a very ingenious guard, composed of several pieces of bone tied together and fastened on the wrist by a bone button and loop. The pieces of bone are about four inches in length. Below the wrist-guard, which is shown on the 1353d page, some curiously formed hooks are represented. No bait is required with them. They are simply moved up and down in the water so as to attract the attention of the fish, and then are jerked sharply upward, so as to catch the fish on one of the projecting points. There are many varieties of this curious hook, but those which are illustrated are the most characteristic.

There is also an instrument called the kakeeway, or little nippers, which is used in a similar manner by the Esquimaux boys. They take a model of a fish made of ivory, tie a string to it, and troll it about in the water in order to attract the fish, when they are struck with the kakeeway, and hauled out of the water. The artificial fish are about three inches long, and are very neatly made, with eyes of iron pyrites. This is a very slow process of fish catching, but the boys, to whom time is of no object, are very fond of it, and will sit on their heels all day for the chance of catching two or three little

The foxes and wolves are generally taken in traps. There are several kinds of traps, but they are mostly made on one or the other of two principles. The usual trap is very like a common mouse trap, except that it is made of ice instead of wood. It is so long and narrow that a wolf cannot turn himself in it, but, if he wishes to retreat, must do so backward. The door is a fitted to his bow.

Sometimes the deer hunters adopt an ingenious ruse. Two of them walk near the deer, and purposely show themselves. When the animals' attention is fixed upon them, they walk slowly away, knowing that the innate curiosity of the deer will induce them to follow. They direct their course. them to follow. They direct their course door is released, and effectually secures the past some stone or similar object, when one animal in the key prison. A hole is then

Foxes are also taken in these traps, but the usual kind of fox trap is made on a different plan. It is built in a form somewhat resembling a lime-kiln, and the aperture is covered with a piece of whalebone, along which the animal must walk to get at the bait. As it steps on the whalebone, the elastic material gives way, lets the fox into the trap, and then resumes its former posi-

tion, ready for another victim.

It has already been mentioned that birds are often shot with arrows as they are sitting. The Esquimaux have a singular in-strument by which they can capture birds on the wing, provided that they do not fly at any great height from the ground. It consists of seven or eight pieces of bone or ivory, or stone, the latter being preferred on account of its weight. To each of the weights is attached a sinew cord about two feet six inches in length, and all the ends of the cords are tied together, their junction being usually ornamented by a tuft of feathers. when the Esquimaux sees a bird flying so that it will pass tolerably near him, he whirls the sling round his head and flings it at the bird. As it leaves his hand, all the weights the passet of the restriction of the sline of fly apart, on account of the rotatory motion which has been communicated to them, so that the weapon covers a space of five feet. Should one of the weights or strings strake the bird, the whole of the sling becomes wrapped round it, and the bird falls helpless to the ground. The reader will doubtless see that this sling is in fact a modification of the Patagonian bolas.

In bear hunting the Esquimaux use either the walrus harpoon or the spear, and often both. They set their dogs at the bear, and while he is engaged in repelling their attacks, which are always made at his back and hind-quarters, the hunter drives the harpoon at him, and fastens the end of the line to the ice, so as to prevent the bear from escaping. He then attacks the animal with another harpoon and with his lance, and, avoiding skilfully the repeated attacks which the bear makes upon him, drives the

sharp weapon into the animal's heart. The Esquimaux are always very careful not to kill a young bear without previously killing its mother. Should one of them, pressed by hunger, commit so rash an act, the whole party to which he belongs are obliged to take the strictest precautions lest obliged to take the strictest precautous they should be assailed by the mother, who therefore proceed for some five or six miles in a straight line, and then suddenly turn off at right angles, so that the bear may overrun their track as she presses eagerly This manœuvre is several times forward. When the houses are reached, the weapons are laid ready for use by the

made in the side of the trap, and the wolf outside the house. This is intended by way is speared where he lies.

Foxes are also taken in these traps, but the usual kind of fox trap is made on a different view. This built in a form semantial bound is that the work at the trap of the follows ledge. house, so that the noise of the falling sledge awakens the sleepers, and puts them on their

> THE two means of transport used by the Esquimaux are the boat and the sledge, both

of which deserve description.

There are two kinds of boats, those of the men and those used by women. The man's boat is called kajak or kis, according to the dialect of the people, and is a very re-markable piece of workmanship. It is shuttle shaped, both ends being sharply pointed. It is made of a very slight framework of wood and whalebone, over which is stretched a covering of skin. In the middle there is a hole just large enough to admit the body of the rower, and when he takes his seat, he gathers his skin together and ties it round his waist, so that the boat is absolutely im-pervious to water. The average length is twenty-five feet, and so light are the mate-rials of which it is made, that a man can carry his kia on his head from the house to the water.

These slight canoes have no keel, and sit so lightly on the water that they can be propelled over, rather than through, it with wonderful speed. The paddle is a double one, held in the middle, and used in a manner which is now rendered familiar to us by the canoes which have so largely taken the place of skiffs. It is between nine and ten feet in length, small in the middle, which serves as a handle, and gradually widening to the blades, which are about four inches in width, and edged with ivory, not only for ornament but for strength.

The paddle acts much the same part as the balance pole to the rope-dancer, and by its aid the Esquimaux canoe man can perform really astonishing feats. For example, if two kias are out together, one of them will remain still, the canoe man keeping his boat exactly in the same place, by delicate management of his paddle. The other goes to a distance at right angles to him, and then, urging his kia to the utmost speed, drives it fairly over that of his friend. In performing this remarkable feat, the skill of both is equally tried, for it is quite as difficult to preserve the balance of the stationary kia as to drive the other over it.

There is one feat which is sometimes performed in order to show the wonderful command which an Esquimaux has over his little vessel. He does not, however, attempt it unless another kia is close at hand. After seeing that the skin cover is firmly tied round his waist, and that his neck and wrists are well secured, the man suddenly flings himself violently to one side, thus capbedside, and the sledges are stuck upright sizing the kia, and burying himself under

dle l over, over fast s his f In feats Th

that

witho weigh asks two 1 paddl that doubl lines end o the p are a seal's canoe. taken versed seen o

The

is call

women

fragile poses, ance o more some This square like a it bear does to the oor and the the ha these s the form can be The s

Captain boats, n by eigh than tw There a the boat by anot of steer who is t but is s and of hook, or at the

in heig

made o

dling. To ead very prints but a s is intended by way eepers. The bear is rect sledge, and al-before attacking the of the falling sledge d puts them on their

ransport used by the and the sledge, both ption.

of boats, those of the women. The man's r kia, according to ble, and is a very renanship. It is shut-ing sharply pointed. light framework of er which is stretched he middle there is a o admit the body of e takes his seat, he r and ties it round at is absolutely imaverage length is light are the mate-le, that a man can from the house to

we no keel, and sit hat they can be pron through, it with paddle is a double and used in a manered familiar to us we so largely taken between nine and all in the middle, dle, and gradually which are about edged with ivory, it for strength.

the same part as ope-dancer, and by anoe man can per-eats. For example, ther, one of them e man keeping his e place, by delicate e. The other goes ingles to him, and the utmost speed, of his friend. In le feat, the skill of is quite as difficult f the stationary kia it.

is sometimes perhe wonderful comax has over his lit-, however, attempt ose at hand. After er is firmly tied at his neck and the man suddenly one side, thus capng himself under

water. With a powerful stroke of his paddle he turns himself and canoe completely over, and brings himself upright again. A skilful canoe man will thus turn over and over some twenty times or so, almost as over some twenty times or so, almost as implest of all sails, the lug, and is made of the average of the average soil to average fast as the eye can follow him, and yet only his face will be in the least wet.

In the illustration on page 1847 both these feats are shown.

The paddler is so tightly tied to the kia, that he is unable to change his position without assistance, or even to lift a heavy weight, such as a seal. In such a case, he asks assistance from a companion. The two kias are placed near each other, and paddles are laid from one to the other, so that for the time they are formed into a double canoe, which cannot be upset. Small lines of whalebone are stretched across the end of the kia, and under them are thrust end of the kin and under them are thresh the points of the spears and harpoons, so that they cannot roll off the boat, and yet are always ready to hand. An inflated seal's bladder is always attached to the cance. When the kia is not in use, it is taken out of the water, and rested in a reversed position upon the snow houses, as is seen on page 1327

The second kind of boat is that which is called the comiak, and is used by the women. It is evident that the slight and fragile kin, useful as it is for hunting purfragile kin, useful as it is for numing pur-poses, cannot be employed for the convey-ance of baggage, or for the transport of more persons than one, and that therefore some other kind of boat must be made. This is a large, clumsy, straight sided, square ended, flat bottomed vessel, more like a skin trough than a cance, to which theory, shout the same analogy as a punt it bears about the same analogy as a punt does to a racing skiff. The framework of the comiak is made of wood and whalebone, and the covering is of seal skin, from which the hair has been removed. When wet, these skins are nearly transparent, so that the forms of the persons sitting in the boat can be indistinctly seen. The sides of the boat are about three feet

in height, and the weight which a wellmade oomiak will carry is really wonderful. Captain Lyon mentions that in one of these boats, measuring twenty-five feet in length by eight in width and three in depth, more than twenty human beings were conveyed. There are two very clumsy paddles by which the boat is slowly propelled, and it is steered by another paddle in the stern. The post of steerer is usually occupied by an old man, who is unable any more to manage the kia, but is still capable of guiding the oomiak, and of flinging a knife, a harpoon, a seal hook, or anything that may come to hand, at the women, if they neglect their pad-

To each oomiak there can be attached a very primitive mast, with its sail. The mast

the intestines of the walrus, split open so as to form strips of some four inches in width. These strips are sewed together, and produce a sail which is remarkable both for its strength and its extreme lightness. The reader will doubtless have noticed the singular contrast between the canoes of the hot and cold parts of the world. In the former, the cance and sails are entirely of vegetable materials, without a particle of hide, sinew, or any animal product; while, in the latter, the animal world furnishes almost the whole of the materials.

We now come to the sledge, which is quite as important to the Esquimaux as the ca-noe. The materials and form of the sledge differ exceedingly, so that in these respects no two sledges are alike, while the principle is identical in all. A sledge is nothing more than two runners, connected with each other by a number of cross-pieces, on which the

driver can sit and the goods be packed.

The best sledges are those in which the runners are made from the jaw-bone of a whale, sawn into narrow planks and cut into the proper shape. They are always shod with a strip of the same material. Others are made of wood, shod with bone, and in these cases the wooden part is usually in several pieces, which are lashed together with hide thongs. In the winter, the hide of the walrus is often used for runners. It is fully an inch in thickness, and, when frozen, is very much stronger than a board of the same thickness.

When neither wood, bone, nor walrus skin can be procured, the Esquimaux is still at no loss for runners. He cuts long strips of seal skin, and sews the edges of each strip together, so as to make two long tubes. The tubes are next filled with moss and earth, and water is then poured into them. In a minute or two they are frozen as hard as stone, and are then ready to form the runners of a sledge. The lower edge of the runner, whether it be of bone, wood, or skin, is always shed with a carting of its which is always shod with a coating of ice, which is renewed as soon as it is worn off by friction, which not only causes the sledge to glide faster over the frozen surface, but pre-serves the valuable material of the runners from being rubbed to pieces.

The cross-bars of the sledge are generally of bone. They project a little beyond the runners on either side, and are so arranged that the sledge is narrower in front than behind. They are not lashed too tightly, as they are required to yield to the jerks and contin-ual strain which the sledge undergoes in its

travels.

The sledge is drawn by a team of dogs, is but a short one, and is stepped in the fore- varying from seven to ten, or even more, ac-

cording to the weight to be carried. They | the bones of fish and seals, scraps of hide, are very simply harnessed to it by a strong cord, or trace, made of seal hide, the trace of the leading dog being considerably longer than that of any of the others. Being accustomed to the work of the sledge, as soon as they can walk, their training is very complete, and a good team will do almost anything but speak.

A team of seven dogs drew a heavy sledge, full of men, a mile in four minutes and a half; and Captain Lyon mentions that three dogs drew him the same distance in six minutes, the weight of the sledge being one hundred pounds. Several times, when returning to the ships, the sagacious animals brought him and his companions safely to the vessels, though the night was pitchy dark and the snow-drift blowing about in clouds. They kept their noses to the ground, and galloped on at full speed, in absolute

certainty of their proper line.

The dogs are guided, not by reins, but by a whip, the lash of which is from eighteen-to thirty feet in length, and the handle only one foot in length, much like the stock-whip of Australia. A skilful driver makes but little use of the whip when he has a good team of dogs, but guides the animals partly by his voice, and partly by flinging the lash of the whip on one side or other of the leader, who perfectly understands the signal. When they are required to stop, the driver gives a cry almost exactly like the "Woa!" of our own country. He then throws the last gently over their backs, when they all lie down, and will remain couched in the snow

for hours even, during their master's absence.

The worst of these dogs is that they are very quarrelsome, and are apt to snap and suarl at each other as they gallop along. Sometimes a dog will be exasperated with a bite, and turn furiously on his assailant, when a general fight takes place, the whole of the dogs tumbling over each other, and entangling the traces in a manner that none but an Esquimaux could hope to disentangle. A plentiful application of whip is then made, which is always resented by the dog that receives the stroke. He chooses to think that his next neighbor has hurt him, and so bites his ear. Sometimes a dog is so unruly that the driver is obliged to use his unruly that the driver is obliged to use his last argument. Making a little hole in the snow with the toe of his boot, he presses the dog's snout into it, and pounds away at it with the ivory handle of his whip. The dog never howls, nor tries to release himself, but only utters a low whine. Such a punishment never has to be repeated, and the dog always goes quietly for the rest of the day. the day.

The endurance of these animals is won-derful. They are kept in the open air when the temperature is from thirty to forty de-

and such very few fragments as their mas and such very few fragments as their mas-ters cannot devour. Consequently they are always hungry, and can eat almost any-thing. Captain Hall mentions that in one night they ate a whiplash thirty feet long, and that on one occasion a single dog ate in seven seconds a piece of walrus hide and blubber six feet long and an inch and a half

Yet, in spite of all the hardships which they undergo, they can endure almost any amount of fatigue without appearing to be the worse for it, and a team has been known to eat nothing for at least forty-eight hours, to traverse some seventy miles of ground, and yet to return to their homes apparently

as fresh as when they set out.

Many of them are possessed of singular intelligence, especially those which are trained to chase the seal, the bear, or the deer. One of these dogs, named Barbekark, belonging to Captain Hall, actually killed a deer himself, took one morsel from the neck, and then went home and fetched his master to the spot where he had left the dead deer. He had a brother that equally distinguished himself in seal catching. He was the lead-ing dog in the team, and once, while draw-ing a sledge, he caught sight of a seal on the ice. He immediately dashed forward at full speed, and just as the seal was plunging into the water, caught it by the hind flippers. The seal struggled frantically to escape, but the dog retained his hold, and, aided by his fellows, dragged the seal firmly on the ice, when it was secured by his master.

A very amusing example of the intelligence of these dogs is related by Captain Hall, He fed the dogs on "capelins," a small dried fish, and used to make them stand in a circle round him, so that each received a cape-lin in turn. "Now Barbekark, a young and shrewd dog, took it into his head that he would play a white man's trick. So every time he received his fish he would back square out, move a distance of three or four dogs, and force himself in line again, thus receiving double the share of any other dog. But this joke of Barbekark's bespoke too much of the game many men play upon their fellow-beings, and, as I noticed it, I deter-mined to check his doggish propensities. Still, the amusing and the singular way in which he evidently watched me induced a moment's pause in my intention.

"Each dog thankfully took his capelin as his turn came round, but Barbekark, finding his share came twice as often as his companions, appeared to shake his tail twice as thankfully as the others. A twinkle in his eyes as they caught mine seemed to say, 'Keep dark; these ignorant fellows don't know the game I'm playing. I am confoundedly hungry. Seeing my face smiling at his trick, he now commenced making another change, thus grees below zero. They are very ill fed, commenced making another change, thus being forced to content themselves with getting three portions to each of the others' seals, scraps of hide, ments as their masonsequently they are can eat almost any-nentions that in one ash thirty feet long, on a single dog ate e of walrus hide and nd an inch and a half

the hardships which endure almost any nout appearing to be eam has been known ast forty-eight hours, aty miles of ground, eir homes apparently et out.

et out.

possessed of singunully those which are
sal, the bear, or the
s, named Barbekark,
fall, actually killed a
norsel from the neck,
d fatched his master d fetched his master d left the dead deer. equally distinguished He was the lead-id once, while draw-sight of a seal on the ashed forward at full al was plunging into ne hind flippers. The y to escape, but the nd, aided by his fel-firmly on the ice, his master.

ble of the intelligence od by Captain Hall, belins," a small dried them stand in a cirach received a capebekark, a young and o his head that he a's trick. So every ish he would back nce of three or four n line again, thus ree of any other dog. kark's bespoke too men play upon their noticed it, I deteroggish propensities. he singular way in ched me induced a atention.

took his capelin as t Barbekark, finding often as his compans tail twice as thank-vinkle in his eyes as to say, 'Keep dark; on't know the game foundedly hungry. at his trick, he now other change, thus each of the others'



(1.) THE KAJAK AND ITS MANAGEMENT. (See page 1344.)



for a gam "
he g position Now point and from watch looke been bekan looke a looke a looke a prodi

the veally arbride with same severatakes and is the la provisagement food, a This i her to

purpolihem boots a After to conmonth pired, she ha She th of clott habitan child b for the bir mains; and sh The

very ea dle the igloos; women lamp, to tasks th Esquim They no imitation

from the circle to where I was, and came to me, crowding his way between my legs, and looked up in my face as if to say, 'I have been a very bad dog. Forgive me, and Barbekark will cheat his brother dogs no more. Please, sir, give me my share of capelins.' I went the rounds three times more, and let him have the fish, as he had shown himself to sagging and so much like a reportant. so sagacious, and so much like a repentant prodigal dog."

MARRIAGE among the Esquimaux is of the very simplest description, and is gener-ally arranged by the parents of the bride and bridegroom, the latter having nothing to do with the affair. There is no marriage ceremony, the parties merely going to live in the same igloo. A man may, and often does, have several wives, and in this case one of them takes the position of the chief, or igloo wife, and is supreme under her husband. She has the largest lamp, the best bed, and the best provision. But she also has the entire management of the household, such as cooking the food, and drying the clothes on the "dry-net."
This is by no means a sinecure, as it forces her to rise many times in the night for the purpose of turning the clothes and drying them equally. She also has to see that the boots are properly "milled."

After a child is born, the mother is obliged

to confine herself to her own igloo for some months, and when the allotted time has expired, she throws of all the clothing which she has worn, and never wears it again. She then dresses herself in a totally new suit of clothes, and visits in succession the in-habitants of every igloo. If a second or third child be born, a separate igloo is always built for the mother, to which she repairs before the birth of the child, and in which she re-mains until the customary time has elapsed

The children begin their education at a very early age; the boys being taught to paddle the kia, to hunt and to fish, and to build igloss; while the girls learn to row the women's boat, to dress skins, to manage the lamp, to cook, and perform the multituding. women's boat, to dress skins, to manage the lamp, to cook, and perform the multitudinous tasks that fall to their lot. The carving of the Esquimaux women is wonderfully good. They make spirited, though conventional, limitations of fish, ducks, dogs, and various animals, from ivory, using in the manufacture. By way of worship, they have sundry medicine men, or "angekos," as they are called, who go through a series of strange ceremonies on various occasions, such as illustrations of fish, ducks, dogs, and various animals, from ivory, using in the manufacture.

one. This was enough, and it was now time for me to reverse the order of Barbekark's game by playing a trick upon him.

"Accordingly, every time I came to him he got no fish, and though he changed his position three times, yet he got nothing. Now, if ever there was a picture of disappointed plans — of envy at others' fortunes, and sorrow at a sad misfortune— it was to be found in that dog's countenance as he watched his companions receiving their allowance. Finding that he could not succeed by any change of his position, he withdrew from the circle to where I was, and came to me, crowding his way between my legs, and looked up in my face as if to say, 'I have chase a kia, or indeed anything that was asked in exchange for it.

As may be inferred from the climate, the games of the Esquimaux are but few. They are wonderful experts at a sort of "cat's-cradle," producing with a piece of string imitations of seals, reindeer, ducks, cances, and other objects. The little ivory models of ducks and other animals, which have already been mentioned, are used in several of the

native games. Their dances are remarkable for their simplicity, the dancer inventing the steps according to his own taste. There is a dance in which a number of women stand in dance in which a number of wonter stand in a ring, with their hands under the front flaps of their jackets, and sing, with half-closed eyes, the inevitable Amna-aya song: these are the band. The dancers are repre-sented by one man, who takes his place in the middle of the ring, swings his head and arms from side to side, his long, lank hair flapping in the wind, while he utters sharp yells at intervals, and occasionally flings one

leg as high as his thick garments permit.

The women have a special dance of their own, which consists in kneeling on the ground, leaping to their feet as fast as they can. This is really a difficult task when the heavy and clumsy boots are taken into consideration. Sometimes the men challenge each other to dance, and in that case the challenge is accepted by employing the "koonik," or national salutation, which is given by rubbing the noses together, and inhaling strongly through the nostrils. With regard to religion, the Esquimaux

seem to have no very definite idea of the subject, except that they believe in a future existence, in a heaven and a hell - the lat-

pay heavily for their services, and rule with retire. The voice gradually sank from our a rod of iron, so that no Esquimaux is likely hearing, as at first, and a very indistinct historetain possession of any valuable piece of sing succeeded. In its advance, it sounded to retain possession of any valuable piece of property if an angeko should happen to be in the neighborhood. They act upon a very simple and intelligent principle, namely, that the amount of success in "ankooting," or divining, is in exact ratio with the amount

Sometimes, in order to impress awe upon their victims, the angekos go through a se-ries of imposing ceremonies, the perform-ance of which infers a vast amount of practice. By the present of a knife and some beads, Captain Lyon induced a celebrated angeko, named Toolemak, to have an inter-view with a Tornga, or familiar spirit, in

the cabin of the ship.

"All light excluded, our sorcerer began by chanting to his wife with great vehe-mence, and she, in return, answered by singing the Amna-aya (the favorite song of the Esquimaux), which was not discontinued during the whole ceremony. As far as I could learn, he afterward began turning himself rapidly round, and, in a loud, pow-erful voice, vociferated for Tornga with great impatience, at the same time blowing and snorting like a walrus. His noise, ing and snorting like a walrus. His noise, impatience, and agitation increased every moment, and he at length seated himself on the particular spirit whom he is addressing. the deck, varying his tones, and making a rustling with his clothes.

"Suddenly the voice seemed smothered, and was so managed as to sound as if retreating beneath the deck, each moment becoming more distant, and ultimately giving the idea of being many feet below the cabin, where it ceased entirely. His wife, now, in answer to my queries, informed me very seri-ously that he had dived, and that he would

send up Tornga

"Accordingly, in about half a minute, a distant blowing was heard very slowly approaching, and a voice which differed from that which we at first had heard was at times mixed with blowing, until at length both sounds became distinct, and the old woman informed me that Tornga was come to answer my questions. I accordingly asked several questions of the saga-cious spirit, to each of which inquiries I received an answer by two loud slaps on the deck, which I was given to understand was favorable.

"A very hollow yet powerful voice, certainly much different from the tones of Toolemak, now chanted for some time, and a strange jumble of hisses, groans, shouts, and gabblings like a turkey succeeded in rapid succession. The old woman sang with increased energy, and, as I took it for granted that this was all intended to astonish the Kabloona, I cried repeatedly that I was very much afraid. This, as I expected, added fuel to the fire, until the form immortal, ex-

like the tone produced by the wind upon the bass-cord of an Æolian harp; this was soon changed to a rapid hiss, like that of a rocket, and Toolemak, with a yell, announced his return. I held my breath at the first distant hissing, and twice exhausted myself; yet our conjuror did not once respire, and even his returning and powerful yell was uttered without a previous stop or inspiration of air.

"Light being admitted, our wizard, as might be expected, was in a profuse perspiration, and certainly much exhausted by his exertions, which had continued for at least half an hour. We now observed a couple of bunches, each consisting of two strips of white deer-skin and a long piece of sinew, attached to the back of his coat. These we had not seen before, and were informed that they had been sewed on by Tornga while he was below." A similar exhibition has been seen by several travellers, and they have expressed their astonishment at the length of time during which an angeko can howl, hiss, and gabble without taking breath.

and sometimes gives a detailed account of the places in which he has been, and of their inhabitants. One female spirit, for example, is called Aywilliayoo. She commands all the bears, whales, seals, and walruses by means of her right hand. So, when there is a scarcety of provisions, the angeko makes a visit to Aywilliayoo and attacks her hand. If he can cut off her nails, the bears immediately are set free, the loss of one finger joint liberates the small seals, the second joint sends the large seals, the knuckles free the whole herds of walrus, while the entire hand liberates the whale.

In figure this spirit is very tall, and has only one eye and one pigtail, but this is as large as a man's leg, and descends to her knee. Her house is a very fine one, but Toolemak did not venture to enter it, because it was guarded by a huge dog with black hind-quarters and no tail. Her father is no larger than a boy of ten years old, and he has but one arm, which is always covered with a large bear's-skin mitten. His house is also handsome, but its entrance is guarded by troops of bears and walruses, who keep up a continual growling.

Unfortunately for his own credit, Toolemak got drunk one evening, as he might well be, having consumed in succession nearly ten glasses of rum, or "hot water," as he was pleased to call it. During his intoxication he became very good-natured, and betrayed the secrets of his magic art, showing how he altered his voice by coverhausted by its own might, asked leave to ing his face with his hands and then with

walk So are s when ing i 085y, rema quim a spin ing h drive raisin blowi

He re

would

raise i

that t

of dra

TH

his j

depti by di

one becar

of per sketch from 1 really there : and al one w on wo repres the ho in exe stages most a fidelity texture the fur and the

admira

Of m

quimau ayason and the ment, c thing 1 very th whale's wooden 00p, a1 the mer Asa ood q There a

and suc But the leave th that not Now, to is more would b quimaux these ar dually sank from our d a very indistinct his-ts advance, it sounded d by the wind upon Eolian harp; this was id hiss, like that of a with a yell, announced breath at the first dis-ce exhausted myself; not once respire, and nd powerful yell was vious stop or inspira-

itted, our wizard, as s in a profuse perspi-tuch exhausted by his ontinued for at least w observed a couple sting of two strips of long piece of sinew, his coat. These we d were informed that on by Tornga while milar exhibition has travellers, and they astonishment at the which an angeko can ithout taking breath. the earth, the angeko ne habitation of the n he is addressing, a detailed account he has been, and of e female spirit, for williayoo. She comnales, seals, and wal-ight hand. So, when ovisions, the angeko layoo and attacks her f her nails, the bears ee, the loss of one small seals, the sec-ee seals, the knuckles of walrus, while the e whale.

is very tall, and has pigtail, but this is as and descends to her very fine one, but ure to enter it, bey a huge dog with no tail. Her father of ten years old, and hich is always covs-skin mitten. His , but its entrance is ears and walruses, growling.

own credit, Tooleening, as he might med in succession m, or "hot water," lit. During his invery good-natured, s of his magic art, his voice by coverands and then with

his jacket, so as to make the voice appear as if it came from a continually increasing on the pavement. depth. He finished this singular exhibition by drinking in succession eleven pints and one gill of water, and within a few minutes became sober enough to leave the ship and walk to his sledge.

Sometimes the Esquimaux say that they are annoyed by spirits. On one occasion when a man nicknamed Kettle was eatwhen a man nicknamed Kettle was earing in Captain Lyon's cabin, he became uneasy, and frequently ceased eating, a very
remarkable circumstance in a hungry Esquimaux. Presently he said that there was
a spirit sitting on the opposite side of the
cabin, making grimaces at him, and preventing him from eating. He asked leave to
drive his termanter away, which he did by drive his tormenter away, which he did by raising a long, bellowing sound, and then blowing sharply on the ends of his fingers. He resumed his meal quietly, and nothing would induce him to blow on his fingers or raise the exorcising yell again, on the ground that the spirit was no longer to be seen.

THE Equimaux possess wonderful powers of drawing. They know scarcely anything of perspective, but they can make their sketches tell their own tale; while in drawing from memory a chart of a coast, their skill is really admirable. In Captain Hall's book there are fac-similes of several native charts and sketches, the most curious of which is one which was not only drawn but engraved on wood by the native draughtsman. It represents a woman with a child nestling in the hood behind her back, and is quite equal in execution to wood-cutting in the earlier stages of the art. The point about it which most strikes a practised eye is the force and fidelity with which the artist has marked the texture of the different parts of the dress; the fur coat and trowsers edged with leather, and the white-edged, fur-lined hood, are most admirably managed.

Of music and musical instruments the Esquimaux know little. They have the Amna-ayasong, which has already been mentioned, and they possess one national musical instru-ment, called the "keeloun." This is some-thing like a tambourine, being formed of a very thin deer skin, or the envelope of the whale's liver, stretched over one side of a wooden hoop. A handle is attached to the 100p, and the instrument is struck, not upon

the membrane, but upon the hoop.

As a nation they are remarkable for two good qualities, honesty and hospitality. There are, of course, exceptions to every rule, and such is the case with the Esquimaux. But the early voyagers found that they might but the early voyagers found that they might leave their knives and axes on shore, and that not one of them would be touched. Now, to an Esquimaux a steel knife or axe is more valuable than a box full of sovereigns would be to us, and the honesty of the Es-

As to hospitality, their food is considered As to hospitality, their food is considered to be merely common property, so that if one of the Esquimaux should kill a seal, all his friends and neighbors assemble as a matter of course to assist in eating it; and even though the family of the successful hunter should be starving, he will nevertheless invite all his friends to partake of the food. In this way, it often happens that an entire seal this way, it often happens that an entire seal barely affords a single meal to all who come to share it.

FUNERALS among the Esquimaux are rather variable in their forms. Generally, when a sick person is on the point of death, a new igloo is built, and carefully fitted with lamp, provisions, and other furniture. The lamp, provisions, and other furniture. The dying person is carried in — not through the regular doorway, but through a breach in the wall — placed on the couch, the lamp lighted, and the provisions laid ready to hand. The attendants then leave the igloo, build up the openings, and never trouble themselves again about the sick person. The principal reason why the dying are left alone is, that if the relatives are in the igloc at the moment of death, they are obliged to throw away the dresses which they were wearing, and never to wear them again. None of them can tell the reason for this strange belief, but it is so strongly ingrained that no argument can induce them to abandon it.

Sometimes the body of a dead person is simply buried in a hole scooped in the snow, and sometimes it is laid upon a ledge of rock and sometimes it is raid upon a leage of roce, accompanied by the lamp, kettle, knives, spears, and dresses which the deceased used while in life. When a child dies, all its toys are placed with it in the grave, that it may be supplied with them in the next world.

The demeanor of the Esquimaux with regard to their dead is a most extraordinary mixture of affection and unconcern. After having buried the body, whether alive or dead does not matter, they care nothing about it, and this strange insensibility is even displayed before the burial. For example, a man's wife had died, leaving a child of a few weeks old, which in a short time followed its mother. The father was very sorrowful for his dying child, and was seen in the night lifting the curtains of its bed as it lay ill on board ship, and sighing deeply. But, on the next day, when he came to the ship, he made no scruple of laying his meat on the body of the child, and using it as a table at breakfast. does not matter, they care nothing about it,

the child, and using it as a table at breakfast.

Once, when Captain Lyon visited the grave where an Esquimaux named Pekooya had been laid, he found that the wolves and dogs had uncovered the body, and had eaten a considerable portion of it. He was naturally shocked at the scene, but the natives treated it with absolute indifference, and though the father and a brother of Pekooya were witquimaux was as much tried by the sight of these articles as would be that of our London cover up the mangled body, and only laughed

when Captain Lyon remonstrated with like fire-threads, that shot with the rapidity them. Moreover, when the body was buried, of lightning hither and thither, upward and it was covered so slightly with snow that the first day's thaw would melt off all the snow,

and leave it to the mercy of the dogs.

Judging from such a fact as this, it might be thought that the Esquimaux have but little natural affection, and that they are in-different to the loss of their nearest relatives. Such, however, is not the case. An Esquimaux never passes the grave of an acquaint-ance without depositing a piece of meat as an offering, and the surviving relatives often visit the burying-place of their dead, and sit there for hours, talking to them as if they were still alive. On comparing all the conflicting accounts respecting the Esquimaux and their dead, it seems likely that they consider the dead holy as something that. Such, however, is not the case. An Esquiconsider the dead body as something that the deceased once possessed, but cast away at death, and that, as their departed friend abandoned the body, they need take no trouble about so worthless an article.

IF the reader will refer to the illustration on page 1347, he will see that the horizon is illuminated by strange and wild-looking flashes of light. These represent the Aurora Borealis, as it often appears in those parts, — not pale and flickering as we see it in these comparatively southern regions, but blazing with all imaginable hues, and giving out a light that stands the natives in stead of the sun, which in those latitudes is absent for months at a time. The glory and magnifi-cence of these displays can only be described by those who have seen them, and very inadequately even by such.

There is an account given by Captain Hall of one of these marvellous exhibitions:—"I had gone on deck several times to look at the beauteous scene, and at nine o'clock was below in my cabin, when the captain hailed me with these words, 'Come above, Hall, come at once! THE WORLD IS ON FIRE.'
"I knew his meaning, and quick as thought

I re-dressed myself, scrambled over several sleeping Innuits close to my berth, and rushed to the companion stairs. In another moment I reached the deck, and as the cabin door swung open, a dazzling and overpowering light, as if the world were really ablaze under the agency of some gorgeously colored fires, burst upon my startled senses. How can I describe it? Again I say, No mortal hand can truthfully do so. Let me however, in feeble, broken words, put down my thoughts at the time, and try to give some faint idea of what I saw.

"My first thought was, 'Among the gods there is none like unto Thee, O Lord; neither are any works like unto Thy works!'
I tried to picture the scene before me. of golden light and rainbow light, scattered along the azure vault, extended from behind the western horizon to the zenith; thence of lighting nither and thitner, apward and athwart the great pathway indicated. No sun, no moon, yet the heavens were a glorious sight, flooded with light. Even ordinary print could easily have been read on deck. "Flooded with rivers of light! Yes, flooded with light; and such light! Light all but indicated the constraints. The galden has predicted.

conceivable. The golden hues predominated, but in rapid succession prismatic colors leaped forth. We looked, we saw, and trembled; for as we gazed, the whole belt of aurora began to be alive with flashes. Then each pile or bank of light became myriads; some were dropping down the great pathway or belt; others springing up, others leaping with lightning flash from one side, while more as quickly passed into the vacated space; some twisting themselves into folds, entwining with others like enormous serpents, and all these movements as quick as the eye could follow.

"It seemed as if there were a struggle with these blazing lights to reach and occupy the dome above our heads. Then the whole arch above became crowded. Down, down it came; nearer and nearer it approached us. Sheets of golden flame, coruscating while leaping from the auroral belt, seemed as if met in their course by some mighty agency that turned them into the colors of the rainbow, each of the seven primary colors 3° in width, sheeted out to 21°.

"White the auroral fires seemed to be

descending upon us, one of our number could not help exclaiming, -

"' Hark! hark! such a display! almost as if a warfare were going on among the beauteous lights above—so palpable—so near—it seems impossible without noise.

"But no noise accompanied this won-drous display. All was silence. "I would here make the remark that the finest displays of the aurora only last a few moments. Though it may be playing all night, yet it is only now and then that its grandest displays are made. As if marshalling forces, gaining strength, compound-ing material, it continues on its silent workings. At length it begins its trembling throes; beauty anon shoots out here and there, when all at once the aurora flashes into living hosts of powdered coruccating rainbows, belting to the heavenly dome with such gorgeous grandeur that mortals sometimes tremble to behold."

These wonderful aerial phenomena are characteristic of the Arctic regions. One of the most extraordinary appearances in the sky is called the Parhelion, or Mock Sun. It assumes various and most astounding forms, the sun appearing in the middle, and being surrounded with dimmer imitations of itself, round which run circular bands of light. There seems, indeed, to be no end down to the eastern, within a belt of space, to the extraordinary modifications of serial 20° in width, were the fountains of beams, effects which take place in these regions.

Capta amon distor limb whole a man The nhere stroyi

aight : nary l anilors

vessel

through and th ward. ers are wonde In o nessed verted and at the sea sevent of it o an ord rocky in vie

length

sight w

of disto " Pen

line the the hear mountai upon a what th tains 1 thread? said, ' If one of t that thr nessed t tacle, v out u followed had an a taking digiants, in earth. . Was at wondrou the rugg atmosph ever ma upon the act of power, it arcuated

"Betwe mountain sky were also inv

with suc

pendous :

shot with the rapidity d thither, upward and thway indicated. No eavens were a glorious ight. Even ordinary been read on deck. of light! Yes, flooded th! Light all but inen hues predominated, prismatic colors leaped e saw, and trembled; whole belt of aurora n flashes. Then each ecame myriads; some the great pathway or up, others leaping from one side, while into the vacated space; elves into folds, ene enormous serpents, its as quick as the eye

ere were a struggle nts to reach and ocur heads. Then the me crowded. Down, r and nearer it ap-f golden flame, corusom the auroral belt, heir course by some irned them into the ach of the seven pri-h, sheeted out to 21°, fires seemed to be one of our number

ng, — a display! almost as ing on among the so palpable — so palpable — so ible without noise. mpanied this won-

silence. the remark that the rora only last a few may be playing all w and then that its made. As if mar-strength, compounds on its silent workegins its trembling loots out here and the aurora flashes he heavenly dome indeur that mortals hold."

ial phenomena are tic regions. One of appearances in the d most astounding in the middle, and immer imitations of circular bands of leed, to be no end difications of aerial in these regions.

In one of these strange exhibitions, witnessed by Captain Hall, a vast white inverted pyramid seemed to form in the sky, and at every roll of the vessel to dip into the sea. Presently "some land that was seventy-five miles distant, and the top of it only barely seen in

an ordinary way, had its rocky base brought full in view. The whole length of this land in sight was the very symbol of distortion.

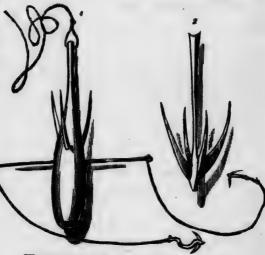
"Pendant from an even line that stretched across the heavens was a ridge of mountains. Life hangs upon a little thread, but what think you of mountains hanging upon a thread? In my fancy I said, 'If Fate had decreed one of the Sisters to cut that thread while I witnessed the singular spechesset the singular spec-tacle, what convulsions upon the land and sea about us might not have followed!' But Nature had an admirable way of taking down these rock-giants, hanging between the heavens and the earth. Arch after arch was at length made in wondrous grandeur from the rugged and distorted atmospheric land; and, if ever man's eye rested upon the sublime, in an act of God's creative power, it was when He arcuated the heavens with such a line of stu-

pendous mountains. "Between those several mountain arches in the ky were hung icebergs,

Captain Hail described many of them, among which may be mentioned a moon distorted beyond all recognition, its lower limb all crushed and shapeless, and the whole appearance of the planet like that of a man under the influence of liquor.

Then the refractive powers of the atmosphere produce most wonderful effects, destroying all perspective, and bringing into sight all kinds of objects which, by the ordinary laws of optics, are far out of sight. All saliors are familiar with the appearance of a vessel high in the air, sailing, as it were, through the sky with her keel in the clouds, and the tops of her masts pointing downward. In these regions the refractive powers are even terrible to accustomed eyes, so wonderful are the sights presented to them. In one of these strange exhibitions, with the product of the product of





WRIST-GUARD AND HOOKS. (See page 1843.)

CHAPTER CXLII.

VANCOUVER'S ISLAND.

THE AHTS AND NEIGHBORING TRIBES.

DEFINITION OF THE AHT TRIBES -APPEARANCE OF THE NATIVES -STRENGTH OF GRASP-PECULIAR-ITY OF THE LEGS -- GAIT OF THE WOMEN -- SPEED OF THE MEN -- DANCE -- THE LIP ORNAMENT OF THE WOMEN -- CLOTHING -- THE BOAT CLOAK AND HAT -- WEAPONS -- THE BOW AND ARROW - INGENIOUS CONSTRUCTION OF THE BOW-ITS BACKING OF ELASTIC STRINGS-THE ABROWS AND THEIR SPIRAL FEATHERING -- THE FISH SPEAR AND HARPOON ARROWS -- THE HALIBUT HOOK -- VARIOUS MODES OF HUNTING -- EALMON SPEARING BY TOROHLIGHT -- THE HERRING RAKE -- HOW TO KEEP THE BOAT FROM SINKING -- THE WHALE FISHERY.

BEFORE leaving this part of the world, we will cast a brief glance at the tribes which inhabit Vancouver's Island. They are singularly interesting, inasmuch as they com-bine some of the habits which distinguish the Esquimaux with others of the North American tribes, and add to them several of the customs which have been already noticed among the Polynesians, their insular position and peculiar climate no doubt affording the cause for this curious mixture.

As a type of these tribes, we will take the AHTS, though other tribes will be casually mentioned. The Ahts may rather be called a nation than a tribe, being divided into some twenty tribes, the names of which all end in "aht," as, for example, Ohyaht, Muchlaht, Ayhuttisaht, Toquaht, etc. Al-together they number about seventeen hundred. They do not, however, act together as a nation, and each tribe is perfectly distinct, and often at war with another.

They are not a tall people, the men averaging a little less than five feet six inches, and the women being just above five feet. Possibly, from the continual paddling which they practise almost from childhood, the upper limbs of an Aht are exceedingly strong, so strong, indeed, that a slight-looking native can carry with ease on his extended fingers a weight which a white man can scarcely lift. Their power of grasp, prob-ably from the same cause, is more like the

have found that if once an Aht be allowed to seize either the clothing or the hair, the only way to loosen his grasp is to knock him down with a blow in the throat or in the ribs - he cares nothing for a blow on the head.

When he comes to such close quarters in a quarrel, he has an awkward habit of grasping the enemy with one hand, and using with the other a knife which he has kept concealed in his long hair. Fortunately for his white opponent, so extraordinary a proceeding as a blow from the fist, which deprives him for a time of breath, bewilders and alarms him to such an extent that he seldom risks its repetition.

The legs of the Aht tribes are, as a rule, short, ill-made, bowed, and apparently deficient in power. This peculiarity is especially noticeable in the women, whose legs are so bowed, and whose toes are so turned inward, that they waddle rather than walk, and at every step they are obliged to cross their feet as a parrot does. The legs of the inland tribes are, as a rule, better developed than those of the inhabitants of the coast. Yet these unsightly limbs are by no means deficient in power. An Aht, powerfully built above, will step out of his canoe, and exhibit a pair of legs scarcely as thick as his arms, and yet he will walk in the woods for a whole day without showing any signs of fatigue.

Owing to this form of limb, the natives, grip of a machine than the grasp of a man; though enduring enough, are not swift of and those who have had to fight with them foot, and can be easily overtaken by a white

the in of she pursu the o he on as no in the The dark, the ne

not dr

ornam marke very li

that of erally should into a covere are ver an Ah which i ment is will be has gro hair in one of v and ofte the end thinks the Aht large in place ah remarks sometim even if t be but s edly mer altered have res Some (ornamen lip, just America. the north to an enc ornameni hood, the an oval c wide. Th edge so a sides are used as a piece of n s cool, tu traction of The val

disfigurem

rank being

ment Po

which mu erifice in

opinion of held in res posed by a she will c man on the open ground, notwithstanding the impediments of clothing, and especially of shoes, which hinder the progress of the pursuer, the pursued usually throwing off

The color of the Ahts is a dull, but not dark, brown. Their face is broad and flat, the nose tolerably well formed when it is not dragged out of shape by rings and other ornaments, and the cheek-bones are strongly marked and broad, but not high. There is very little hair on the faces of the men, but that of the head is long, straight, and is generally allowed to hang loosely over the shoulders, though it is sometimes gathered into a knot at the back of the head, merely covered by a cap or a wreath of grass. They are very proud of their hair, so that when an Aht has been guilty of some offence which is not very serious, the best punishment is to cut off his hair, inasmuch as he will be an object of constant ridicule until it has grown again. The women divide their hair in the middle, and tie it in two plaits, one of which hangs at each side of the face, and often has a piece of lead suspended to the end to keep it straight. Mr. Sproat thinks that the physical characteristics or the Ahts have been modified by means of a large importation of Chinese, which took place about the end of the last century, and remarks that the peculiar Chinese eye is sometimes seen among these natives. Still, even if this be the fact, the modification can be but slight, as both people are undoubtedly members of the same great race, though altered by the conditions in which they have respectively been placed.

Some of the women have a hideously ugly ornament which they wear in their under lip, just as do the Botocudos of Tropical America. This practice exists only among the northern tribes, where it is carried out to an enormous extent. As the size of the ornament is gradually increased from childhood, the lip of an old woman will contain an oval ornament three inches long by two wide. There is a shallow groove round the edge so as to keep it in its place, and both sides are slightly concave. Sometimes it is used as a spoon, the woman putting on it a piece of meat that is too hot, and, when it side of white pine bark. s cool, turning it into her mouth by a contraction of the lip.

The value that is set upon this horrible disfigurement is almost ludicrous, a woman's ank being due to the size of her lip ornament. Possibly, on account of the long time which must be occupied in stretching the orifice in the lip to the required size, the opinion of a woman with a large lip is always is an admirable specimen of savage art held in respect; and, if she should be opmust be the result of long experience. posed by a younger person of her own sex,

into argument with a woman who has so small a lip. Some of them wear a shell or-Some of them wear a shell ornament, like the stem of a clay tobacco-pipe, one or two inches long, stuck through the bursuer, the pursued usuany throwing on the only garment that he wears. Should he once reach the woods, pursuit is useless, as no white man can follow a naked native called the hai-qua.

As for clothing, the men wear a sort of robe made by themselves, for which they have in later days substituted an European blanket. They are not at all particular as to the disposal of this robe, and even if it should fall off do not trouble themselves. The women also wear the blanket, but always have a small apron in addition to it. In their canoes they wear a cape. It is made of cedar-bark string, and is woven in nearly the same manner as the mat of the New Zealander, which has already been described; namely, by stretching the warp threads parallel to each other on a frame, and tying them together at intervals with a cross-thread which represents the woof. A specimen in my collection has the crossthreads at intervals of half an inch.

It is shaped exactly like the cross section of a boat, straight above, and rounded below. It measures five feet three inches in width, and three feet six inches in depth in the centre. As is usual with such robes, the upper edge is adorned with a strip of marten fur a quarter of an inch wide, wound spirally round the selvage so as to form quite a thick rope of fur. These capes are the work of the women, who have the manufacture of all the clothing. Fur bags are made by the simple process of skinning the marten, the body being then extricated through a cut made across the abdomen just below the tail. As the skin comes off it is reversed, and when dry and properly dressed it is turned with the fur outward, and the bag is complete, the tail serving as a handle. One of these bags in my collection was presented to me by Lieut.

The woofthread is also made of the white pine bark, and the needle is nothing more than a sharpened twig. The same useful materials are also employed for the curious hats which the natives wear in their canoes. These hats are made on the principle of the sailors" sou'-westers," and are fashioned so as to shoot rain off the shoulders. The outside of the hat is made of cedar bark, and the in-

DEPENDING largely upon animal food for their nourishment, the Aht tribes are expert hunters, and make very ingenious weapons, some of which are shown in the illustrations

on page 1357, drawn from my own specimens.

The bow and arrows used by these people are worthy of a brief description. The bow is an admirable specimen of savage art, and must be the result of long experience. It is four feet three inches in length, and made of the will contemptuously decline to enter one piece of wood. In general shape it re-

TH OF GRASP-PECULIAR-NCE - THE LIP ORNAMENT -THE BOW AND ARROW C STRINGS - THE ARROWS ARROWS -THE HALIBUT CHLIGHT - THE HERRING ny.

ace an Aht be allowed othing or the hair, the his grasp is to knock ow in the throat or in nothing for a blow on

such close quarters in n awkward habit of with one hand, and a knife which he has s long hair. Fortupponent, so extraordia blow from the fist, or a time of breath, him to such an exks its repetition.

tribes are, as a rule, , and apparently de-is peculiarity is espee women, whose legs se toes are so turned lle rather than walk, are obliged to cross oes. The legs of the rule, better developed abitants of the coast. mbs are by no means An Aht, powerfully out of his canoe, and carcely as thick as his alk in the woods for howing any signs of

of limb, the natives, gh, are not swift of overtaken by a white

sembles the bow of the Andamans, though it is not of such gigantic dimensions. In the middle the wood is rounded, so as to form a handle which is nearly four inches in cir-cumference. From the handle to the tips, the wood is gradually flattened and widened

Were no addition made to the bow it would still be a very powerful weapon, but the maker has not been satisfied with the simple wood, and has strengthened it with a wonderfully complex arrangement of strings made of twisted sinews. In my specimen there are rather more than fifty of these strings, which are laid on the bow and interwoven with each other in a manner so strong and neat, that the most skilful sailor might be envious of such a piece of handiwork. Each of these strings is double, the two strands being about as large as thin whipcord, and when seen against the light they are quite translucent.

They are put on in the following manner. Two deep notches, parallel to the line of the bow, are made at each tip, these notches serving two purposes: first, the reception of the bow-strings, and next the support of the strengthening strings. Eight of the strings, measuring about eleven feet in length, have been doubled, the loop passed over the tip of the bow, and the strings led along the back over the corresponding notch at the other tip, and brought back to the middle. These strings lie parallel to each other, and form a flat belt from one end of the bow to the other. About an inch below the tip, three other sets of strings are fastened in a someof the weapon.

Even these have not sufficed the maker, who has added six more layers starting from the widest and flattest part of the bow, so that handle which is nearly four inches in circumference. From the handle to the tips, the wood is gradually flattened and widened for about fourteen inches, where it is just two inches wide. From this point it gradually lessens again to the tip, which is rounded and thickened, so as to receive the notch for the string.

Were no addition made to the bow it would that even when it is unstrume they are all as nearly three feet of the centre of the weapon that even when it is unstrung they are all as

tight as harp strings.

The string of the bow is made of the same material as those which strengthen the back, and in consequence of the very great strength of the material, it is much thinner than the string of an ordinary archer's bow. It is made of two strands, each strand being about as large as the back strings.

By referring to illustration No. 3, on the next page, a good idea can be gained of this singularly ingenious weapon. At first the bow is seen as it appears when strung, fig. 3 giving a section of the wood. At fig. 2 is an enlarged representation of one end of the bow, so as to show the manner in which the various sets of strings are fastened. At the upper part are seen the strings which form the first layer, passing over the end of the bow, and filling up the notch in which they lie. Just below the tip come the second and third sets, which pass down the bow, where they are met by, and interwoven with, the remainder of the strings, the whole of them being gathered in the rope with its spiral building. This beautiful weapon was added

to my collection by Lieut. Pusey, R. N.
The arrows are of various kinds, according to the object for which they are intended. That which is used for ordinary occasions is what similar manner, so that four distinct shown in the uppermost figure of the illuslayers of strings run throughout the length tration. It is two feet three inches in length, and is headed with bone.



ARROWS.

There is a peculiarity about these arrows wind with greater ease and certainty than which is worthy of notice. Some time ago could be obtained with the ordinarily feathan arrow was patented in England, which had the feathers placed spirally upon the end of the shaft, so as to give it a rapidly revolving movement when discharged from the bow. The principle was exactly that of the screw which is applied to steam vessels; and those who used the arrow acknowledged that the spiral setting of the feathers not only increased the power of flight, but enabled the archer to drive his arrow through the finish of the latter.

cred arrow. There is a very old saying that there is nothing new under the sun, and this is the case with the arrow in question, the savages of Northern America having adopted the same principle long ago. In their arrows the feathers are set spirally, with a bold curve, and there is really no difference b. tween the weapon of the savage and the toy of civiliza-

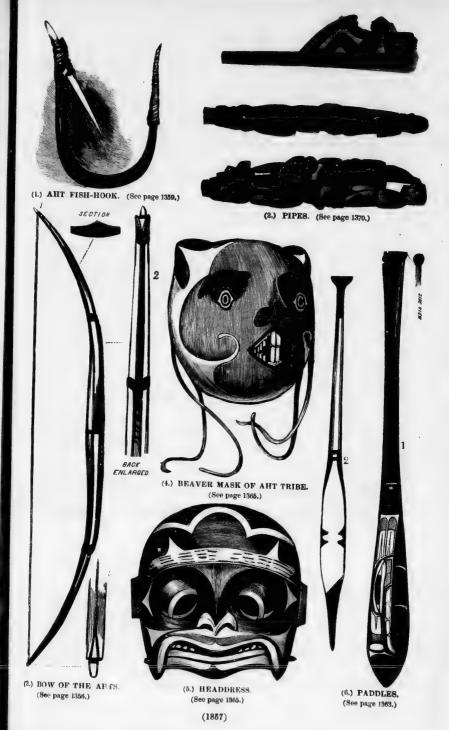
ot sufficed the maker, re layers starting from part of the bow, so that e centre of the weapon no less than twelve s. By referring to the r will perceive the exwhich the strings are to whether the weapon, they all keep their they lashed to the bow, astrung they are all as

w is made of the same h strengthen the back, he very great strength such thinner than the archer's bow. It is ach strand being about rings.

stration No. 3, on the can be gained of this weapon. At first the ure when strung, fig. 3 wood. At fig. 2 is an of one end of the bow, her in which the variastened. At the upstrings which form over the end of the notch in which they come the second and down the bow, where interwoven with the rope with its spiral all weapon was added

ut. Pusey, R. N.
rious kinds, according
h they are intended.
ordinary occasions is
st figure of the illusnree inches in length,
e.

and certainty than the ordinarily feathvery old saying that der the sun, and this row in question, the erica having adopted go. In their arrows ly, with a bold curve, ference b. tween the d the toy of civilizateatness and higher



whice on to muc dive bein firmi genc are o porti this lently
It is
made
by the

seven ject t sharp are of crimin only t the m oner, ing his cer drawill re and of are set In illustration loosely by meaning rally rethe he

serves
fish, ar
may be
The
used fo
and is v
ures ab
deservir

arrow.
The sis about butt-end and at the and at the shaped pure the thick is bored the head is very seand is further the head line, but the head line, but the head line, but the head line, but the head line the

ine, but
about the
Instead
string, it
ranged is
twisted t
which po
bined wis
The model
the methology

The lower figure represents the arrow which is used for killing fish. In this weap-on the point is also of bone, but is very much longer, and is double, the two halves diverging considerably from each other, and being barbed on the inner surface. It is firmly lashed to the shaft, and their divergence is given by means of two pegs, which are driven between the shaft and the two portions of the point. If a fish be struck by this ingenious weapon, it cannot possibly escape, the elastic points contracting vio-lently and holding the fish between them.

It is worthy of notice that a police spear made exactly on the same principle is used by the Malays. It consists of a handle some seven feet long, from the end of which project two diverging points. The inner side of each point is armed with a row of very sharp barbs, all directed backward. Thorns are often used for this purpose. Should a criminal try to escape, the police officer has only to thrust his spear against the back of the man's neck, when he is at once a prisoner, the barbed points effectually preventing him from escaping, even should the officer drop his weapon. The zoological reader will remember that the teeth of the snake and of many fish - the pike, for example are set on exactly the same principle.

In some specimens the head is fitted loosely on the shaft, and connected with it by means of a string, which is wound spirally round it, and when the fish is struck the head is shaken off the shaft, which

used for shooting seals and the larger fish, and is very elaborately constructed. It measures about four feet in length, and is almost

the head. This is also made of bone, and is very small in comparison with the arrow, and is furnished with two deeply cut barbs. As is the case with all harpoon weapons, the head is connected with the shaft by a line, but in this case there is a peculiarity about the line and its mode of attachment. Instead of being a mere double-strand

string, it is made of a number of fibres arranged in three strands, and plaited, not twisted together, so as to form a flat line, which possesses enormous strength combined with great elasticity and small size. The mode of attachment is as ingenious as the method of manufacture. The line is a

The line is first doubled, the loop is put through a hole in the point and over the head, so as to secure it, and the two halves of the line are then lashed together about eighteen inches from the point. One end is eighteen inches from the point. One end is then fastened to the arrow just below the feathers, and the other to the shaft just above the bone tip. The object of this ar-rangement is evident. As soon as a seal is struck, it dashes off, shaking the shaft from the barbed head, which remains in its body. Were the line simply tied to the end of the Were the line simply tied to the end of the shaft, the wounded creature would easily drag it through the water. But, as the line is fas-tened to each end of the shaft and to the head besides, when the latter transfixes a seal it is separated from the shaft, and the shaft is drawn crosswise through the water, presenting so great a resistance that the seal becomes exhausted with its unavailing struggles, and comes to the surface. where it is despatched with a second or third

Besides the harpoon and fish arrow, these people also use the hook (see page 1357), which is quite as ingenious in its way as the implements which have been described. The body of the hook is of wood, and is exactly in the shape of the capital letter U.

The point bends slightly outward, and is charred at the tip to render it harder. It is also defended and strengthened by a band of very tough vegetable fibre, which covers the head is shaken off the snar, which serves both as a drag to aid in tiring the sharpened like a needle at the point, as is the barb is not attached to the point, as is the case with the generality of hooks, but is case with the generality of hooks, but is it for about three inches. The barb is a its tip reaches to the middle of the hook.

At first sight this seems a very inadequate deserving of the name of harpoon rather than arrow.

The shaft is made of very light wood, and is about as thick as a man's finger. At the butt-end it is feathered in the usual manner, and at the other it is terminated by a pearshaped piece of bone an inch in diameter at the thickest part. Into the end of this bone is bored a small conical hole, which receives if the creature could easily slip off the unguarded point. If, however, the hook, which is a very large one, be tested, it will be found as very large one, be tested, it will be found served between the fingers, as it would be inserted into the jaws of a fish, and then shaped piece of bone an inch in diameter at the thickest part. Into the end of this bone is bored a small conical hole, which receives from being withdrawn.

There is one effect of this mode of fixing the barb which may or may not have been intended. Should, by any accident, the line become entangled with the hook, and reverse it, the fish is quite as secure, the long, straight barb forming a second hook, to which it is transferred. The body of this hook is made of the Douglas pine, and it is brought into shape by steaming. The hook is chiefly used for catching the halibut, as, for some reason, the Ahts will not use a steel hook in the capture of this fish.

There is plenty of game, both large and small, in these regions, though the chase is double one, measuring twelve feet in length. the skill but the endurance of the hunter. There is, for example, the black bear, which is a most valuable animal, its fur being used for clothing, and its flesh for food. Bear hunting is not carried on at all times of the year, but is generally followed toward the end of autumn, when the bears are fat, and about to enter their winter quarters. Sometimes the Ahts wait until the bear has gone into retirement, and then spear it in its winter home. Traps are in great favor, because they do not spoil the skin. They are very simple; the trap consisting of a tree trunk heavily loaded with stones, and suspended at one end over the animal's track. It is kept in position by a trigger, to which is attached a slight rope crossing the track. It is always placed in some spot where a large stump or the root of a fallen tree allows the trap to be set without disturbing the appearance of the track.

Then there are one or two deer, the largest of which is the wapiti, commonly but erroneously called the elk. The hunter generally takes it by following its track, and stalking it as it feeds, when the powerful bow drives an arrow to its heart. The skill of the hunter is shown as much after the deer is dead as during the actual chase. Captain Mayne mentions that he has seen a wapiti killed, and in a quarter of an hour it has been skinned, the whole of the flesh removed from the bones, and the skin converted into moccasins. The natives have rather a strange way of carrying the meat. At their first halt after killing a deer, they cut the meat into pieces two or three inches square, transfix them with a long stick, and carry the stick upon their shoulder, every now and then pulling off a piece and eating it as they go along. In this manner the flesh of a deer vanishes in a wonderfully short time. Very little meat is preserved, the Ahts generally eating it as soon as the animal is killed.

As to the fish, there are so many that only one or two can be mentioned. The salmon is the fish that seems to be the most valued by these fish-eating tribes, and it is caught, as the interest in a variety of ways. Sometimes the natives use a rather curious fish spear, about fifteen feet long in the shaft, and with a double head, made of wapiti bone. The head is only slightly fixed in the shaft, to which it is attached by a line, as in the harpoon arrow already described. Should the fish be a very heavy one, the hunter merely ties to the line a number of inflated bladders, and causes it to the itself by useless struggles before he risks the fracture of the line or loss of the barbed head, one or both of which events would probably happen if he were to try to secure a fresh and powerful fish.

Sometimes, when the fish are plentiful,

Sometimes, when the fish are plentiful, they are caught by dropping among them a stick armed with barbed points, and jerking it upward sharply, until it impales a fish on one or other of these points.

"Burning the water" is employed in catching salmon, and is carried on by two natives, one of whom paddles the cance, while the other stands in the bow, where a torch is kept burning, and strikes the fish as they glide through the water. Mr. Sproat mentions that a single cance has been known to bring back forty fine salmon as the result of a day's fishing. Salmon traps are also employed. These are made after a fashion closely resembling that of the cel-traps used in this country. They are double baskets, externally cylindrical, and are set with their mouths directed down the stream. When the fish try to pass up the stream they enter the basket, and, as the inner basket is very much shorter than the other, shaped like a sugar-loaf, the salmon finds itself imprisoned between them. Some of these baskets measure as much as twenty feet in length, and five feet in diameter, so that they will contain a considerable number of fish.

One of the oddest fishing instruments is that by which the herring is caught. This is a pole about ten feet in length, flattened at one end like the blade of an oar, and armed along the edge with projecting spikes. When the fisherman gets among a shoal of herrings, he plunges his pole into the mass of fish, draws it through them with a peculiar movement of the arms, so as to transfix the herrings on the spikes, and then shakes them into his boat. By this mode of fishing, which is called "herring-raking," great numbers of fish are taken, as well as by the net, which is ingeniously made from fibre obtained from a native nettle, which reaches eight or ten feet in height.

The Ahts are such keen fishermen that they will often endanger the safety of their canoes by the quantity of fish with which they will heap them, so that the gunwales are sunk within an inch or so of the water's edge. In calm weather they can manage well enough, even with such a burden as this; but if the wind should get up before they can reach the shore, the danger is very great. Should such an event happen, these enterprising fishermen will not throw their cargo overboard to save the boat, but will fasten all the the spare floats round the canoe, so as to keep it from sinking even if it be filled with water.

There is scarcely any end to the use which is made by the Ahts of these floats, and with their aid they will attack and conquer even the gigantic whale. "The following account of their mode of whale fishing is written by Mr. G. M. Sproat:—"A whale-chase is an affair of some moment. The kind of whale commonly seen on the coast was described by an old whaling skipper as 'finner,' in which there is not much oil. The season for fishing whales commences about the end of May or in June. Many whales are killed every season by the Nitinalts, who live principally on the seaboard near

madered noti my which which which which will be a dozen an A a dozen privi

these

their

wive

nigh

roug

sized durin

some

Ba

else

ann

sep:

parat instit Witn made perso stanc dealt rank: " W the fit blow ferent tance sists o and w is ofte an ale

of a

from t

this bl

the lin

line is

cedar 1

inch ro to thi



er" is employed in is carried on by two addles the canoe, while bow, where a torch rikes the fish as they r. Mr. Sproat mennoe has been known salmon as the result almon traps are also made after a fashion of the eel-traps used y are double baskets, and are set with their the stream. When the stream they enter inner basket is very other, shaped like a

finds itself imprisoned f these baskets measy feet in length, and o that, they will connber of fish. shing instruments is

ring is caught. This t in length, flattened olade of an oar, and with projecting spikes. gets among a shoal of is pole into the mass th them with a peculrms, so as to transfix kes, and then shakes this mode of fishing, g-raking," great num-as well as by the net, made from fibre obnettle, which reaches

ght. keen fishermen that er the safety of their y of fish with which that the gunwales are or so of the water's er they can manage h such a burden as should get up before e, the danger is very event happen, these will not throw their ve the boat, but will floats round the carom sinking even if

end to the use which of these floats, and attack and conquer ale. The following of whale fishing is Sproat:—" A whalesome moment. The ly seen on the coast whaling skipper as is not much oil. The es commences about June. Many whales n by the Nitinahts, n the seaboard near

Barclay or Nitinaht's Sound. This tribe has a custom, which I have not observed elsewhere, of separating during spring and summer into small parties, each under a the bow of his cance, throws his harpoon at the whole with all torse. As soon as the elsewhere, of separating during spring and summer into small parties, each under a separate head, but all still continuing under the chieftaincy of the principal chief of the

"Months beforehand preparations are made for the whale fishing, which is consid-ered almost a sacred season. I particularly noticed this circumstance from having, in my boyhood, heard of the Manx custom, in which all the crews of the herring fleet invoke a blessing before 'shooting' their her-ring-nets. The honor of using the harpoon in an Aht tribe is enjoyed but by few, — about a dozen in the tribe, — who inherit the privilege. Instances, however, are known of the privilege having been acquired by merit.

"Eight or nine men, selected by the harpooner, form the crew of his canoe. several moons before the fishing begins, these men are compelled to abstain from their usual food; they live away from their wives, wash their bodies morning, noon, and night, and rub their skins with twigs or a rough stone. If a canoe is damage. sized by a whale, or any accident happens during the fishing season, it is assumed that some of the crew have failed in their preparatory offices, and a very strict inquiry is instituted by the chief men of the tribe. Witnesses are examined, and an investigation made into the domestic affairs of the accused persons. Should any inculpatory circumstance appear, the delinquent is severely dealt with, and is often deprived of his rank and placed under a ban for months.

"When the whales approach the coast, the fishermen are out all day, let the wind blow high or not. The canoes have different cruising grounds, some little dis-tance apart. The Indian whaling gear consists of harpoons, lines, inflated seal-skins, and wooden or bone spears. The harpoon is often made of a piece of the iron hoop of an ale cask, cut with a chisel into the shape of a harpoon blade, two barbs fashioned from the tips of deer-horns being affixed to this blade with gum. Close to the harpoon the line is of deer sinews. To this the main line is attached, which is generally made of cedar twigs laid together as thick as a three-

the whale with full force. As soon as the barb enters, the fastening of the wooden handle, being but slight, breaks, and be-comes detached from the line. The natives comes detacned from the line.

raise a yell, and the whale dives quickly, but
the scalesting impede his movements. Very long lengths of line are kept in the canoes, and sometimes the lines from several canoes are joined. On the re-appearance of the whale on the surface, he is attacked from the nearest canoe; and thus, finally, forty or fifty large buoys are attached to his body. He struggles violently for a time, and beats and lashes the water in all directions, until, weakened by loss of blood, and fatigued by his exertions, he ceases to struggle, and the natives despatch him with their short spears. The whale is then taken in tow by the whole fleet of canoes, the crews yelling and sing-ing, and keeping time with their paddles.

"Sometimes, after being harpooned, the whale escapes, and takes ropes, harpoons, seal-skins, and everything with him. Should he die from his wounds, and be found by another tribe at sea, or on shore within the territorial limits of the finders, the instruments are returned to the losers, with a large piece of the fish as a present. Many disputes arise between tribes on the finding of dead whales near the undefined boundaries of the tribal territories. If the quarrel is serious, all intercourse ceases, trade is for-bidden, and war is threatened. By and by, when the loss of trade is felt, negotiation is tried. An envoy is selected who is of high rank in his own tribe, and, if possible, con-nected with the other tribe by marriage. He is usually a quiet man of fluent speech. Wearing white eagle feathers in his head-dress as a mark of peace, he departs in a small canoe. Only one female attendant, generally an old slave, accompanies him, to assist in paddling, as the natives never risk two men on such occasions. The envoy's return is anxiously awaited. As a general rule, the first proposition is rejected. Objections, references, counter proposals, frequently make three or four embassies necesinch rope. Large inflated skins are fastened to this line about twelve feet from the cid." sary before the question can be settled. By



CANOE OF THE AHTS. (See page 1362.)

CHAPTER CXLIII.

VANCOUVER'S ISLAND - Continued.

THE AHTS AND NEIGHBORING TRIBES - Continued.

MANUFACTURE OF CANOES - CORRECT EYE OF THE NATIVE BUILDERS - MATERIAL AND SHAPE OF THE PADDLE - MODE OF USING IT - PATTERN WITH WHICH IT IS DECORATED - "CUTTING" THE WAVES - SKILL AND ENDURANCE OF THE PADDLERS - ESCAPE OF A NATIVE - FEASTS AMONG THE AHT TRIBES - METHOD OF COOKING - THE WOODEN POTS AND HEATED STONES - HOW "THE INDIANS DIED" - DISTRIBUTION OF PROPERTY, AND ITS CONSEQUENT DESTRUCTION - SACRED CHARACTER OF A FEAST - THE SACRED MARKS - THE ARTIFICIAL SNOW-STORM - THE DOCTOR'S DANCE - ADMIRABLE ACTING - SIMULATED MURDER AND RECOVERY OF THE CORPSE - THE BOOF DANCE.

THE canoes in which the Aht fribes make their expeditions are carved out of solid wood. The tree which is employed for this purpose is a kind of cedar (Thuja gigantea), which flourishes by the sea. When a native wishes to make a cance, he looks out for a good tree as near as possible to the water, and, with the assistance of a comrade, cuts it down. Now that he has European tools, he can fell a tree with some rapidity, but in the olden times, when his sole tool was a sort of chisel made of wapiti horn, it was a very slow process indeed. The only way of using this primitive instrument was by placing the edge of the chisel against the tree, and striking the butt with a heavy stone, shaped something like a dumb-bell.

The tree being felled, the bark is stripped off, and the trunk split lengthwise by wedges. The next process is to hollow out the inside, which is done entirely by hand, fire not being employed, as is the case with many savage tribes. The outside is then dubbed down to the proper thickness by means of an adze formed of a large mussel-shell fixed in a handle. In this work the natives use no measuring tools, but trust entirely to the eye; yet their work is so true that, when the boat is completed, it sits lightly on the water, and is well balanced. Any of my readers who have made even a toy boat will appreciate the difficulty of this task.

In about three weeks or so the canoe is

a more difficult business, namely, the bring-ing it into the peculiar shape which the Ahts think to be the best. This is done by filling the canoe with water, and throwing redhot stones into it till the water boils. This part of the process is continued for a considerable time, until the wood is quite soft, and then a number of crosspieces are driven into the interior, so as to force the canoe into its proper shape, which it retains ever afterward.

While the canoe is still soft and comparatively pliant, several slight crosspieces are tinserted, so as to counteract any tendency toward warping. The outside of the vessel is next hardened by fire, so as to enable it to resist the attacks of insects, and also to present it. vent it from cracking when exposed to the sun. Lastly, the bow and stem pieces are fixed to the canoe, and the interior is painted of some brilliant color, usually red. The outside is generally quite black and highly polished, this effect being produced by rub-bing it plentifully with oil after the fire has done its work. Lastly, a pattern of some kind is generally painted on the bow and stern.

The figure on page 1361 will give the reader a good idea of the form of this cance. It is drawn from a large model brought from Vancouver's Island by Lieut. Pusey, and added by him to my collection. In this specimen the patterns at the bow and stem are red and blue. As is mostly the gase with roughly hewn and hollowed, and then comes are red and blue. As is mostly the case with

cano the b Th pelle ing ti ity, 8 exter illust speci six in six in shape where nearly ually it is seems is put canoe The

illustr

being

sized :

notice

order

the Al paddle

inches

hand 1

handle crum ; erage figured in ord races inventi the for shape o The the pac extend the wo themse after t The col red, the aration imen, re marks c handle pattern No m

people. The b paddle is sides pre been me

paddle,

characte

that it i

picting 1

the worl and alth

may not

observer

ter with

canoes made by savages, there is no keel to | overboard their cargo of fish, no matter how

The paddle by which the canoe is propelled is a singularly ingenious one, combining the three qualities of lightness, elasticity, and strength to a really remarkable extent. The paddle represented in fig. 1 of illustration No. 6, on page 1357, is one of the specimens in my collection. It is four feet six inches in length, and the blade is about six inches wide at the broadest part. It is shaped with the greatest accuracy, the part where it is grasped by the left hand being nearly cylindrical, and then widening grad-ually until it forms the blade. At this part it is very thin - so thin, in fact, that it seems scarcely able to bear the strain that is put upon it when the paddler urges his canoe swiftly over the water.

The lightness of such a paddle is wonderful. The specimen which is figured in the illustration only weighs eighteen ounces, being hardly half the weight of a similarly sized New Zealand paddle. The reader will notice the peculiar handle. This is made in order to suit the mode of paddling. When the Aht gets into his canoe, he grasps the paddle with his left hand about eighteen inches from the end, and places his right hand upon the crosspiece that serves as a handle. The left hand thus acts as a fulcrum; upon the right hand works the leverage of the paddle. Beside this paddle is figured another from the Solomon Islands, in order to show how two totally distinct races of mankind have hit upon the same invention. There is even a similarity in the form of their canoes, as well as in the shape of their paddles.

The reader will observe that the blade of the paddle is covered with a pattern which extends some way up the handle.. This is the work of the women, who take upon themselves the decoration of the paddles after their husbands have shaped them. The colors employed are generally black and red, the latter hue being obtained by a preparation of annatto. In this particular specimen, red is the chief color, the large oval marks on the side of the blade and on the handle being red, while the more intricate pattern on the blade is drawn in black.

No matter what may be the color of the paddle, the pattern is always of the same character. I have no doubt in my mind that it is really a conventional mode of depicting the human face, such as is seen upon the work of many extinct races of mankind; and although at a first glance the semblance may not be seen, it is evident to a practised observer, and is, moreover, quite in character with other works of art found of these

The broad, flat, sharp-edged blade of the addle is often used for other purposes behigh the waves may roll, or how deeply the canoe may be loaded. They watch carefully for the waves, and if one of them comes in such a manner that it would dash inboard, they have the art of cutting it in two with a blow from the edge of the paddle, and causing it to fly harmlessly over the little vessel.

Both in making canoes and in other work where holes have to be bored, the Ahts where holes have to be bored, the Anis make use of a simple drill, formed from the bone of a bird, fixed in a wooden handle. When it is used, the shaft is taken between the two hands, the point placed on the object to be bored, and the hands moved swiftly backward and forward until the hole is made. In the same manner, by using a stick instead of a drill, fire is produced, precisely as is done by the Kaffirs.

The skill of the paddlers is wonderful. Mr. Sproat mentions the escape of an Aht Indian who had committed several murders, and had contrived to escape from custody. Finding the place where he had concealed himself, a party set out to recapture him, and discovered him running across the snow to gain the shelter of a wood. Had he reached it he would have been safe, so one of the pursuers chased him, and, notwith-standing the disadvantage of wearing shoes, which soon became clogged by the snow, succeeded in gaining on him, the Ahts being, as has already been remarked, very poor

The man soon perceived that he was no match for his pursuer in running, and so, abandoning his intention of reaching the wood, he turned sharply off toward the river, flung off his blanket, and leaped into the stream. Presently he was seen making his way toward a canoe which was made fast to a drift tree in the river, and in a short time he reached it, looked eagerly into it to see if there were a paddle, scrambled into the boat, east it off, and paddled away. Meanwhile two of his pursuers had got into a canoe, and were paddling after him, so that when he cast the boat loose they were not more than twenty yards from him. It was, however, quite enough for the fugitive, who forced his cance up the stream with a power and rapidity which soon increased the dis-tance between the two boats, and, in spite of all the efforts of his pursuers, he made his way to the bank nearly fifty yards ahead of them. As soon as he reached the shore, he jumped out of the canoe, and dashed into the wood, where it was useless to follow

Several times during the struggle Mr. Sproat had the man covered with his revolver, but the skill, grace, and strength of the fugitive were so admirable, that, much to the discontent of his companions, he would not fire. He remarks that in such a chase as this a white man has no chance with an Aht, sides propelling the canoe. It has already this a white man has no chance with an Aht, been mentioned that the Ahts will not throw but that in a long race on the sea the white

HAL AND SHAPE OF THE TED - "CUTTING" THE ATIVE - FEASTS AMONG

D STONES - HOW "THE DESTRUCTION - SACRED STORM - THE DOCTOR'S OF THE CORPSE - THE

, namely, the bring-r shape which the est. This is done by vater, and throwing ill the water boils.
s is continued for a I the wood is quite r of crosspicces are r, so as to force the pe, which it retains

ll soft and comparaght crosspieces are eract any tendency outside of the vessel so as to enable it to cts, and also to prehen exposed to the nd stem pieces are e interior is painted usually red. The e black and highly produced by rub-il after the fire has a pattern of some d on the bow and

will give the reader of this canoe. It is odel brought from Lieut. Pusey, and ollection. In this t the bow and stem lostly the case with man will win, his powers of endurance ex- tioned each other as to their state, whether ceeding those of the savage.

The possession of a canoe is an object of much ambition among the Ahts, as it confers upon them a sort of distinction, and is looked upon much as is the possession of a carriage among ourselves. Each canoe is furnished with a baling instrument, which is always made of wood. It is, in fact, a large spoon, the bowl being angular, and shaped something like the gable of a house.

THE domestic manners of the Ahts are, from Mr. Sproat's account, very interesting, and, as he remarks, if any one only knew their strange language well, and had the stomach and the nose to live among them during the winter months, he would obtain copious information respecting them.

Winter is the time mentioned, because during the summer the men are generally dispersed in their pursuit of game, especially of salmon, which they dry and preserve for winter use. But about November they return to their homes, and a time of general feasting and enjoyment sets in. Cooking goes on all day, and the revellers are perpetually feasting, while during times of work they only eat twice in the day, namely, in the morning and evening, and even then do not eat much at each meal. Fish is the principal article of their diet, and dried salmon is the food which is most plentiful, though they also eat the flesh of the seal and the whale when they can get it. Of late years the Ahts have obtained rice and molasses, and health.

The pots in which the food is cooked are made of wood, the water being boiled, not by placing the pots on the fire, but by heat-ing stones red hot and throwing them into it. Rude as this mode of boiling water may seem, it is much more rapid and effectual than might be imagined, which will account for the wide spreading of the custom. In more than one place, when the white man visited the natives for the first time, nothing impressed them so strongly as the fact that, when he boiled water, he put the vessel on the fire. The capability of making a vessel that would endure such treatment had, in their eyes, something of the supernatural.

An old native illustrated well the astonishment which they themselves felt when they saw a kettle placed on the fire for the first time. He narrated the story to Mr. Duncan in the following quaint but forcible lan--" The strangers landed, and beckoned the Indians to come to them and bring them some fish. One of them had over his shoulder what was supposed to be only a stick. Presently he pointed it at a bird that was flying past - a violent 'poo' went forth down came the bird to the ground. The

any were dead, and what each had felt.

"The whites then made signs for a fire to be lighted. The Indians proceeded at once according to their tedious practice of rubbing two sticks together. The strangers laughed. laughed, and one of them, snatching up a handful of dry grass, struck a spark into a little powder placed under it. Instantly, another 'poo' and a blaze! The Indians died! After this, the new-comers wanted some fish boiled. The Indians therefore put the fish and some water into one of their the fish and some water into one of their square wooden buckets, and set some stones in the fire, intending, when they were hot to cast them into the vessel, and thus boil the food. The whites were not satisfied with tals way. One of them fetched a tin kettle out of the boat, put the fish and some water into it, and then, strange to say, set it on the fire. The Indians looked on with astonishment. However, the kettle did not consume, the water did not run ir to the fire. Then again the Indians died!"

Sometimes a man of consequence issues invitations for a solemn feast, and on such an occasion he seizes the opportunity of showing his wealth by the liberal distribution of presents, every individual present receiving a share of the property. Consequently, a feast always affords a scene of destruction For example, Captain Mayne mentions that at one feast which he witnessed, he recognized three sea-otter skins, for one of which thirty blankets had been offered and refused. Ahts have obtained rice and molasses, and apparently with a bad effect upon their up into little pieces about three inches by one, so that every guest might have a piece. As each blanket is to the Aht the equivalent of a sovereign among ourselves, the amount of waste may be imagined. Mr. Duncan, the successful missionary among these people, relates several instances of the waste of property which takes place both on these and other occasions. For example, a chief had just built a house, and issued invitations for a great feast. "After feasting, I heard he was to give away property to the amount of four hundred and eighty blankets, of which one hundred and eighty were his own property, and the three hundred were to be subscribed by his people.

"On the first day of the feast, as much as possible of the property to be given to him was exhibited in the camp. Hundreds of yards of cotton were flapping in the breeze, hung from house to house, or on lines put up for the occasion. Furs, too, were nailed up on the fronts of houses. Those who were going to give away blankets or elk-skins managed to get a bearer for every one, and exhibited them by making the persons walk in single file to the house of the chief. On the next day, the cotton which had been hung out was now brought on the beach, at Indians died! As they revived, they ques- there run out at full length, and a number

ceive a day chief and posit desce this the s chief selve howe they givin again not 1 folly.

of b triu

rece

hune

They they but a like t sessin off as thus i stock never be tr mere "TI prope ishly.

with a

jury, r

proper

disgra

cotton

to ha

up for

is torr Son acter, latter object charge instead witnes was pe her ba dead, v makin and be they s hubbul

After a show a sitting trived some e pants of with de to their state, whether

made signs for a fire Indians proceeded at ear tedious practice of gether. The strangers them, snatching up a struck a spark into a new-comers wanted indians therefore put ater into one of their sa, and set some stones when they were hot a vessel, and thus boil as were not satisfied of them fetched a tin put the fish and some the struck and some the struck and in the st

of consequence issues n feast, and on such the opportunity of he liberal distribution vidual present receiverty. Consequently, scene of destruction. Mayne mentions that witnessed, he recogn offered and refused. were, they were cut t three inches by one, thave a piece. As Aht the equivalent urselves, the amount ed. Mr. Duncan, the among these people, of the waste of prop-both on these and example, a chief had issued invitations for feasting, I heard he rty to the amount of y blankets, of which were his own prop-lred were to be sub-

he feast, as much as to be given to him amp. Hundreds of pping in the breeze, use, or on lines put urs, too, were nailed puses. Those who ay blankets or elk-bearer for every one, making the persons of the chief, ton which had been the on the beach, at chief's house, and agth, and a number

of bearers, about three yards apart, bore it triumphantly away from the giver to the receivers. I suppose that about six to eight hundred yards were thus disposed of.

hundred yards were thus disposed of.

"After all the property the chief is to receive has been thus openly handed to him, a day or two is taken up in apportioning it for fresh owners. When this is done, all the chiefs and their families are called together, and each receives according to his or her position. If, however, a chief's wife is not descended from a chief, she has no share in this distribution, nor is she ever invited to the same feasts as her husband. Thus do the chiefs and their people go on reducing themselves to poverty. In the case of the chiefs, however, this poverty lasts but a short time; they are soon replenished from the next giving away, but the people only grow rich again according to their industry. One cannot but pity them, while one laments their folly.

folly.

"All the pleasure these poor Indians seem to have in their property is in hoarding it up for such an occasion as I have described. They never think of appropriating what they can gather to enhance their comforts, but are satisfied if they can make a display like this now and then; so that the man possessing but one blanket seems to be as well off as the one who possesses twenty; and thus it is that there is a vast amount of dead stock accumulated in the camp, doomed never to be used, but only now and then to be transferred from hand to hand for the

mere vanity of the thing.

"There is another way, however, in which property is disposed of even more foolishly. If a person be insulted, or meet with an accident, or in any way suffers an injury, real or supposed, either of mind or body, property must at once be sacrificed to avoid disgrace. A number of blankets, shirts, or cotton, according to the rank of the person,

is torn into small pieces, and carried off." Sometimes a feast assumes a sacred character, and such festivals are held during the latter half of the last month in the year, their object being to induce the demons who have charge of the weather to give them rain instead of snow. In one of these feasts, witnessed by Mr. Garrett, the principal part was performed by a female chief, who lay on her back in the middle of the house as if dead, while all the people assembled were making a hideous noise, howling, wailing, and beating with sticks the bench on which they sat, while a young man added to the hubbub by drumming upon a wooden box. After a while the prostrate woman began to show signs of life, and gradually assumed a sitting posture. In this attitude she contrived to jump round the room, and exhibited some extraordinary vagaries, the other occupants of the room alternating dead silence with deafening uproar at signals from her

The costumes that are worn at such feasts are very remarkable articles, especially the head-dresses that are worn by the chiefs. They take the form of masks, and are cut out of solid wood, generally imitating the heads of various birds and beasts, though they sometimes are carved in the semblance of a grotesque human face. The specimens which are shown in the illustrations on page 1357 will give a good idea of these strange head-dresses. One of them, which was presented to me by Lieut. Pusey, is carved in imitation of a beaver's head, and is tied on the wearer's head with strings. There are holes bored through the eyes, by means of which the wearer is enabled to see, and these holes are cleverly bored in a slanting direction, so as to coincide with the pupil of the eye. Some of these masks are made with great goggle eyes and large jaws. Both the eyes and the jaws are movable, and are worked by strings that pass down the back, so that the wearer can make the eyes rell and the jaws open and close without any apparent cause.

Sometimes the masks are made in the form of birds, and by a similar arrangement of cords, the birds can be made to turn their heads from side to side, and to flap their wings while the wearer speaks. There is a very remarkable specimen of these masks in the museum at Maidstone. It is double, one mask within another. The outer mask is divided by lines drawn from forehead to chin, down the centre of the nose, and across the face, so that it is in four distinct pieces. The pieces all work on hinges, and are so well fitted to each other that a spectator could not suspect that they were not one solid piece. Suddenly, while the wearer is dancing, he will fling all the pieces open, and discover a second and more hideous mask beneath.

When the chief wishes to pay an extraordinary compliment to a visitor, he puts on a mask that is fitted with a number of porcupine quills. Upon this head-dress he heaps a vast quantity of swan's down, which is retained in its position by the quills. He then dances up to the visitor, and, as he retreats backward in the dance, gives a jerk with his head, and sends the down flying over him. It is a point of honor that the visitor should be kept enveloped in a shower of down, as if he were in a snow-storm, and this can only be done by perpetually dancing and nodding the head, which is kept well supplied with down by attendants.

White feathers and down always signify peace, and hence, when a man sets off on a mission of peace to a neighboring tribe with whom there has been a quarrel, he puts white down on his head, and knows that his person will be as sacred as that of the bearer of a flag of truce in civilized warfare.

One of the dances practised by the Ahts

displays a really wonderful amount of ingedisplays a really wonderful knownt of ingenuity, and must take no little time to practise. It was witnessed by Mr. Sproat, who describes it in the following terms. The different dances are called Nooks in Aht different dances are called Nooks in Alt-language. This might be called the "Doc-taries (Ooshtukyu) Nook." A fine represen-tation of it by the artist is given on the

following page.
"During the song and dance, which at
"During the song and nothing peculiar, a first seemed to present nothing peculiar, a well-known slave (one, however, who was in a comparatively independent position, being employed as a sailor on board the steamer Thames), suddenly ceased dancing, and fell down on the ground apparently in a dying state, and having his face covered with blood. He did not move or speak, his head fell on one side, his limbs were drawn up, and he certainly presented a ghastly spec-tacle. While the dance raged furiously around the fallen man, the doctor, with some others, seized and dragged him to the other side of the fire round which they were dancing, placing his naked feet very near the flames

"After this a pail of water was brought in, and the doctor, who supported the dying man on his arm, washed the blood from his face; the people beat drums, danced, and sang, and suddenly the patient sprang to his feet and joined in the dance, none the worse for the apparently hopeless condition of the moment before. While all this was going on, I asked the giver of the feast whether it was real blood upon the man's face, and if he were really wounded. He told me so seriously that it was, that I was at first inclined to believe him, until he began to explain that the blood which came from the nose and mouth was owing to the incantations of the medicine man, and that all the people would be very angry if he did not afterward restore him.

"I then recalled to mind that in the early part of the day, before the feast, I had seen the doctor and the slave holding very friendly conferences; and the former had used his influence to get a pass for the latter to be present at the entertainment, to which, probably, he had no right to come. I feel sure a noise like thunder. As the dancers bethat many of the Indians really believed in the affair was over, many of the natives asked me what I thought of it, and referred to it as if it must set at rest for ever any possible doubts with regard to the abilities of their native doctors. The Indian, who explained this and other performances to me, said that the cure was not entirely owing to the doctor, but to the large body of dancers and singers, wo all 'exerted their hearts' to desire the recovery of the sick wan, and so procured the desired effect."

This simulated production of blood forms an element in several of the Aht dances. In an element in several of the Aht dances. In one of them a man, stripped even of his blanket, is bound with his hands behind him, and driven about at the end of long cords, while the spectators yell, shout, and hammer with sticks upon wooden dishes and drums made of bear-skin.

Suddanly the chief debear are not the several the several state.

Suddenly the chief dashes among the peo-ple, brandishing a knife, and, on seeing the bound man, gives chase to him, and to all appearance drives the knife deeply into his back. Blood pours abundantly from the wound, and the man rushes wildly about in would, and the limit tender what y about in search of shelter, followed by the chief, who plunges his bloody weapon repeatedly into the man's back. Exhausted by his wounds and loss of blood, the victim staggers, falls, and dies. His friends gather round the dead body, and carry it outside the house, when it washes itself, and puts on its blanket.

Mr. Sproat remarks of this dance that the illusion is absolutely perfect, and the acting so lifelike, that the performers would make the fortune of a minor theatre in London. The red liquid which simulates blood is a mixture of red gum, resin, oil, and water; and is, indeed, the material which is used for painting the inside of the canoes.

Another of these "nooks" is called the seal dance. The performers take off their seal dance. The performers take on their blankets, and, though in the depth of winter, go into the sea, and crawl upon the shore, imitating the movements of the seals as they flounder along the ground. They proceed in the same manner until they reach the houses, which they enter, and crawl about the fires, which are purposely kept brightly blazing by being fed with oil. The dance is finished by jumping up and dancing round the house until the performers are tired.

There is one dance which belongs specially to the Sesaht tribe, and, absurd as it may seem, appears to have in it something of a religious nature. It is peculiar to that tribe, and may not be omitted. While the people are singing and dancing within the house, a number of the performers clamber up the posts, push some of the roof-boards aside, and oth . . . their place . s, that there is a constant stremm of men ascending and de-

scending one roof.

After the dance is over, an old man makes a speech to the owner of the house, saying that he is aware that the roof-boards are damaged by the dance, but at the same time the ceremony may not be omitted. A number of men then come forward, and each presents the owner of the house with a small stick, which is a token that the owner will redeem it with a new roof-board as soon as possible.

duction of blood forms of the Aht dances. In stripped even of his ith his hands behind

ith his hands behind at at the end of long tators yell, shout, and upon wooden dishes ear-skin. dashes among the peofic, and, on seeing the lase to him, and to all knife deeply into his abundantly from the rushes wildly about in wed by the chief, who eapon repeatedly into eapon repeatedly into austed by his wounds victim staggers, falls, gather round the dead side the liouse, when its on its blanket. its on its blanket.

of this dance that the erfect, and the acting formers would make theatre in London. simulates blood is a resin, oil, and water; rial which is used for

he canoes.

nooks" is called the ormers take off their the depth of winter, will upon the shore, sof the seals as they and. They proceed in they reach the houses, rawl about the fires, ept brightly blazing The dance is finished ing round the house

tired. ich belongs specially l, absurd as it may n it something of a eculiar to that tribe,

While the people within the house, a rs clamber up the roof-boards aside, nce there, making as the dancers beend from the roof es, so that there is ascending and de-

an old man makes the house, saying of-boards are damthe same time the ted. A number of and each presents with a small stick, owner will redeem s soon as possible.



(1.) AN AHT DANCE. (See page 1306.)



(2.) INITIATION OF A DOG EATER. (See page 1371.)



CHAPTER CXLIV.

VANCOUVER'S ISLAND - Concluded.

THE AHTS AND NEIGHBORING TRIBES - Concluded.

architecture of the ahts—semi-nomadic character of the people—the permanent fram. WORK, AND MOVABLE WALLS AND BOOF -- DIVISION OF THE HOUSE -- RANK OF THE OCCUPANTS --OBJECT AND MODE OF MIGRATION -- PIPES OF THE ART TRIBES -- LABOR EXPENDED IN THEIR MANUFACTURE — RELIGIOUS SYSTEM OF THE TRIBES — AN AHT PROMETHEUS — SOCIETY OF THE "ALLIED" — THE MEDICINE MEN AND THEIR EDUCATION — THE CANNIBALS AND DOG-EATERS --REVOLTING SCENES - THE TWO CANNIBLES - SACRED BATTLES - TERROR INSPIRED BY THE MEDICINE MEN - DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD - RESPECT FOR THE CEMETERY.

From the account of the Roof-dance in the preceding chapter, it is evident that the houses are built very strongly, or they would house becomes a sort of fortress. There are houses are built very strongly, or they would not be able to endure the violent stamping and jumping which constitute the principal charms of the dance. The houses of the Ahts are constructed after a very peculiar manner, the posts and framework being stationary, and the roof and sides movable. The effect of thic arrangement is to enable the people to shift from one place to another. At each of the spots to which they migrate they find the framework of their houses ready they find the iramework of they have to do is to for them, and all that they have to do is to mode of migrating will be presently described.

The framework of the houses consists of stout posts about twelve feet in diameter, and twelve feet or so in height, placed at distances of twenty feet from each other. The top of the post is hollowed so as to receive the cross pieces which connect them. house is some eighty feet in length, and the ridgepole which supports the roof is made of a single tree trunk. The roof, which is gabled-shaped, but slopes gently from the back to the front of the house, so as to throw of the rain, is made of cedar boards, about five feet long and nearly two inches thick. The walls are made of similar boards lashed to small upright posts driven into the ground.

Just below the roof a rude framework is

no windows, and the only chimney is formed by removing one of the roof-boards above the fireplace. In many of these houses, the large inside posts are ornamented by having great faces carved upon them, face-carving being an art in which these tribes excel, just as is the case with the New Zealanders. Mr. Sproat mentions, that he has seen a row of such houses extending for the third of a mile along a river's bank, and that the depth of the houses varied from twenty-five to forty feet.

Inside the house, the earth is dug away for a foot or so in depth, in order to give additional height to the interior. Every house is partitioned off into several divisions, each of which is occupied by a family, which is thus separated from the other inhabitants by a sort of bulkhead about four feet high. These partitions are movable, so that on occasion of a great festival they can be taken away, and the whole of the space kept clear. There is a fire in the middle of each division, and around it are placed wooden couches, about nine inches from the floor, and covered with a whole series of mats by way of bedding

There is to each building one main entrance, and other small doors, which are always in a corner of one of the divisions. The ertended, on which the inhabitants keep rank of the different occupants is marked by their stores of food, their weapons, and sim- the position which they occupy in the house.

For example, the chief of the house oc- pipes, and, except that they draw the smoke cupies the extreme end on the left of the very well, there is not a redeeming point building, the next in rank lives in the corresponding place at the other end, while the common people occupy the space between

the two great men.

These houses are much more agreeable to the eye than to the nostrils. Having no windows, and all the stores of salt fish and other provisions being kept in them, the interior atmosphere is close, fishy, rank, and pungent, the last quality being due to the wood smoke of the several fires. Neither is the exterior air better than that of the interior than the interior than that of the interior than that of the interior than the interior terior, for the ground is covered with heaps of putrefying heads, tails, and bones of fish, decaying mollusks, and refuse of all kinds, which is simply flung into heaps and never removed, the nostrils of the natives being incapable of feeling any annoyance from the horrible odor that arises from the decompos-

ing heaps.

The ownership of these houses is rather a complicated question. The framework of the house is generally considered as being in several divisions, each division being called after the name of the owner, while the planks are the common property of the inhabitants.

When the Ahts wish to move to another spot, which is done for the purpose of changing to better fishing, hunting, and fruit grounds, according to the time of year, they always migrate by water. They place two large canoes about five or six feet apart, and connect them together with the planks of the roof and walls, which thus form a platform on which can be placed the stores and household goods. Mr. Sproat remarks that he has seen this platform heaped to a height of fourteen feet, only just enough space being left for the passengers. As soon as they arrive at their destination, the travellers unpack the boats, and, assisted by the slaves who have been sent forward in readiness, fix the boards on the already existing framework, so that in a very short time the house is ready for the occupants.

These migrations have one beneficial effect. While the people have deserted their villages, the birds, aided by the elements, the only scavengers of Vancouver's Island, clear away a considerable portion of the heaps of putrefying rubbish, which would otherwise become too much even for native endur-

In the meetings which are held within these houses the pipe naturally plays an important part; and, as the pipes made by these tribes differ from those of any other part of the world, a short description is here given of them. Both in shape and material these pipes are most remarkable. They seem to have been made for the express object of expending the greatest possible amount of labor upon the clumsiest possible pipe. I have seen and tried many of these about them.

In the first place, they are carved—stem and bowl—out of solid stone, a sort of very dark slate. The upper figure in illustra-tion No 2, on page 1357, which represents one of these pipes in my collection, shows the lightest and least cumbrous form of pipe, Although only eight inches in length, it weighs six ounces, no trifle for a pipe of that description. As is usually the case with these pipes, it is adorned with a human fig-ure and a human head. The figure evidently represents a man seated in a canoe. On account of the details of dress, it seems likely that it is intended to represent a native—possibly the carver himself—in European costume, the features being of a strongly-marked Indian type, while the dress is European. This pipe was presented to me

by Lieut. Pusey.
Sometimes the natives absolutely run riot in pipe making, and expend infinite labor in making pipes which look utterly unlike pipes, and which cannot be smoked without the very greatest inconvenience. The lower specimens represent two views of a pipe of this kind, belonging to T. W. Wood, Esq., which has apparently been made for the purpose of trying how many heads of men and birds could be compressed into a certain space. As the reader may observe, the whole character of this carving bears a very strong resemblance to the art of the ancient Mexicans, so strong, indeed, that it might almost be passed off as a specimen of that

In total length it is a very little more than eight inches, but from bowl to the mouth-piece it only measures five inches, the remaining three inches being simply superabundant material. The number of heads that the carver has contrived to introduce into this pipe is really wonderful, the ingenuity of combination, together with force of effect, being worthy of all praise, especially when the rudeness of the workmanship is considered. Taken as a work of art, it is admirable; taken as a pipe, it is detestable. It is so heavy that the mere exertion of holding it is fatiguing, and it is so thick and clumsy that it does not at all adapt itself to the lips. And, in so cold a climate, to grasp or to put to the lips such a piece of hard, cold stone, must involve very great inconvenience.

THE religious ideas of the Aht tribes are, as may be expected, exceedingly vague, and are rendered still more so by the reticence which a savage always exhibits on such subjects. Mr. Sproat remarks that he lived for two years among the Ahts, with his mind constantly directed toward this subject, before he could discover whether the people believed in any overruling power, or had any

idea · ceeds lived 88 0116 to the any v is, noi who I conve forma ing th

really state, on the treat e earth them 1 of the fire, b ward their b discov of it is will do legend As f have a preside inmate if a nat

face of

approv

hear a

cannot

not rec

to the As n of medi the pe them. unpleas ted into medicin education the bus! days, fa spiritua encoura motives by it. he posse of which be admi giving a tatiously corted b and mal front of end of a er end b who pre

quired in Captai respectiv men. H nat they draw the smoke not a redeeming point

they are carved - stem plid stone, a sort of very oper figure in illustra-1357, which represents in my collection, shows cumbrous form of pipe, at inches in length, it o trifle for a pipe of that usually the case with rned with a human figd. The figure evidently eated in a canoe. On ails of dress, it seems ended to represent a e carver himself—in he features being of a ian type, while the dress pe was presented to me

ives absolutely run riot expend infinite labor ch look utterly unlike not be smoked without onvenience. The lower two views of a pipe of to T. W. Wood, Esq., been made for the purany heads of men and ressed into a certain ler may observe, the is carving bears a very the art of the ancient indeed, that it might as a specimen of that

is a very little more out from bowl to the measures five inches, inches being simply rial. The number of has contrived to introreally wonderful, the ation, together with worthy of all praise, rudeness of the work-Taken as a work of taken as a pipe, it is eavy that the mere exfatiguing, and it is so at it does not at all s. And, in so cold a put to the lips such a ne, must involve very

of the Aht tribes are, kceedi igly vague, and e so by the reticence exhibits on such subarks that he lived for Ahts, with his mind ward this subject, bewhether the people ing power, or had any

idea of a future existence. He then proceeds to say that "a traveller must have lived for many years among savages, really disk of wax to represent the moon, and had lived for many years among savages, really as one of themselves, before his opinion as to their mental and spiritual condition is of any value at all." How true this statement is, none know better than the missionaries, who find that even their most promising converts are almost as unwilling to give information on such subjects as they were during their state of heathenism.

It is, however, ascertained that the Ahts really have a belief in a deity and in a future state, and that they possess several legends on these subjects. Some of these legends treat of a certain Quawteaht, who made the earth and the animals, but would not give of the cuttle-fish. In those days they needed fire, because the Indians, who were afterward to people the earth, were hidden in their bodies. what to be per the earth, were finden in their bodies. At last the deer succeeded in discovering the fire, and carried away some of it in the joint of his hind leg. The reader will doubtless perceive the similarity of this legend to the old myth of Prometheus.

As far as can be understood, this Quawteaht is the chief of their deities, but they have a whole host of minor divinities, who preside over the sea, the woods, and their inmates, as well as rule the elements. So, if a native sees a sudden breeze curl the surface of the sea, he thinks it signifies the approval of some spirit; and if he should hear a rustling in the woods for which he cannot account, or a sound which he does not recognize, he immediately puts it down to the presence of some demon or other.

As might be expected, there are plenty of medicine men, who have great power over the people, and are implicitly trusted by them. They have to go through a long and unpleasant ordeal before they can be admitted into the order of the "Allied," as the medicine men call themselves. When their medicine men call themselves. When their education is nearly finished, they go into the bush alone, and remain there for several days, fasting until they have received the spiritual gifts. The society of the Allied is encouraged by the chiefs, not from religious motives, but because they become enriched by it. No one can become un Allied unless he possesses considerable wealth, the whole of which he must give away before he can be admitted into the society. The act of giving away his property is done as osten-iatiously as possible, the candidate being escorted by a large body of men, who shout and make as great a noise as they can. In front of them goes the candidate, with one end of a large rope round his waist, the other end being held by fifteen or twenty men, who pretend that all their strength is required in order to hold Lim back.

Captain Mayne relates a curious anecdote respecting the doings of these medicine He was called one evening to see a very pleasant, involving, as it does, the

painted a man upon it,—they having the belief, which is still prevalent among the illiterate of our own country, respecting a man who lives in the moon. They had lighted a torch and placed it behind the artificial moon, so as to illuminate it, and were supposed to be holding converse with its inhabitant, much to the awe of the surrounding crowd.

These medicine men seem to be divided into three parties, or sects. One of them does not appear to be particularly distinguished, but the other two gradually rise in circumstances of horror. The former section collection of whose is called the Dog-eaters, a portion of whose initiation is described by Mr. Duncan, and

is illustrated on page 1367.
"Early in the morning the pupils would be cut on the beach or on the rocks, in a state of nudity. Each had a place in front of his own tribe, nor did intense cold interfere in the slightest degree. After the poor creature had crept about, jerking his head and screaming for some time, a party of men would rush out, and, after surrounding him, would commence singing. The dogeating party occasionally carried a dead dog this again. to their pupil, who forthwith commenced to tear it in the most dog-like manner. The party of attendants kept up a low, growling noise, or a whoop, which was seconded by a screeching noise made from an instrument which they believe to be the abode of a

"In a little time the naked youth would start up again, and proceed a few more yards in a crouching posture, with his arms pushed out behind him, and tossing his flowpushed our benind thin, and tossing is ear-ing black hair. All the while he is ear-nestly watched by the group about him, and when he pleases to sit down, they again surround him and commence singing. This kind of thing goes on, with several little additions, for a time.

"Before the prodigy finally retires, he takes a run into every house belonging to his tribe, and is followed by his train. When this is done, in some cases he has a ramble on the tops of the same houses, during which he is anxiously watched by his extendants, as if they expected his flight attendants, as if they expected his flight. By and by he condescends to come down, and they then follow him to his den, which is signified by a rope made of red bark being hung over the doorway, so as to prevent any person from ignorantly violating its precincts. None are allowed to enter that house but those connected with the art: all I know, therefore, of their further proceedings is, that they keep up a furious hammering, singing, and screeching, for

devouring of raw dog-flesh; but it is nothing seize and kill the first person whom they in comparison to that of the most powerful might meet. Therefore, when the sound of and dreaded of the three sects, namely, the caunibals. Mr. Duncan was also a witness to part of the initiation of a cannibal Allied.

It order to give his assistance to the cer-emony, a chief ordered one of his slaves, an old woman, to be killed, and her body flung into the sea. As soon as this was done, the whole of the uninitiated population left their houses and formed themselves into groups at a distance from the fatal spot, lest they should also become victims, a fear for which there was very good reason. Presently two bands of Allied men came rushing along, producing the most hideous sounds, each being headed by a

candidate for membership.

The two candidates advanced with a long creeping step, waving their arms, and jerking their heads backward and forward, so as to make their long hair wave in the breeze. They pretended for some time to be seeking for the body, and at last they discovered it, and made a simultaneous rush at it. In a moment they were closely surrounded by their respective bands, but in a few minutes the crowd opened, and out passed the two men, each bearing half the body of the murdered woman, which they had actually torn in two with their hands and teeth alone. They then began devouring the body, when the spectator was unable to endure the sight any longer, and left the spot.

These cannibal medicine men are the dread of their country. At the cost of such revolting practices, as have been but very lightly touched, they gain such a complete influence over the people, that they can do exactly as they choose, no man daring to contradict them. Sometimes at a feast one of them will be taken with a fit of inspiration, and dash among the people, biting like a mad dog at every one whom he meets. On such occasions it is thought very manly and praiseworthy of the guests to welcome instead of repelling his attacks, and to offer their arms or shoulders for him to bite. The Allied cannibal responds to the invitation by biting at and swallowing a piece of the flesh, and the man who offers it thinks himself honored in proportion to the size of the piece that is removed. The wound thus made is not only productive of excruciating pain, but is also dangerous, many men hav-ing died from the effects of it. Yet they are willing to have both the pain and the danger for the sake of the honor which is con-ferred upon them.

The general public have very good reason for getting out of the way when one of these cannibals chooses to make an excursion in search of a human body. Should not one be found, the cannibal Allied who escort their companions would think themselves bound

the horrid cannibal songs is heard in the distance, the whole population of a village will desert their houses, take to their canoes, and remain at a distance from the shore until the danger is over for the time. skel and

hims

flyin

vells

his n

wom

orde

fluen

So

terrif

All w

The '

ary i

feath

them head.

cision

blood

where

Shoul

is evic

ingly

prope:

and er

kept, a

the pr

THE extren

even i

form.

conseq

ground wrappo ground

bodies

are pla

remain

by the

that of

nearly : an infer

branche

boughs

Over mats, ar

These medicine men are considered allpowerful in the cure of the sick, and are always called in when any one is ill. They almost invariably say that the malady is local, and that it is due to some object or other, which they can extract by their incantations. In the ceremonies which they employ, they make much use of a rattle, the material of which does not seem to be of much consequence, provided that it can only make a noise. For example, a favorite form is a hollow wooden case, carved like a bird or a frog, and containing a few stones. Some rattles, however, are made on totally different principles, and resemble the beetleshell rattle of Guiana that is figured on page 1265. Captein Mayne saw one which was made of three or four dozen puffinbeaks strung loosely together.

Incisions are often made over the part affected, or the doctor uses the actual cautery by means of a moxa, made of a pledget of dried flax. These remedies often do have the effect of relieving pain, and when that is the case, the patient and his friends present the doctor with liberal gifts, all which, however, he is bound to return should a relapse come on and the patient die. They even say that, when they are violently excited by their incantations, they can see the soul of the patient, which they say is in the shape of a fly, with a long curved proboscis. One man, who had recovered from a dangerous illness said that he desired. gerous illness, said that he had seen his own soul, which the medicine man had caught as it was escaping from the body, and had put back again.

The noise which these medicine men make at their incantations is almost indescribable. Mr. Sproat describes their howling as being perfectly demoniacal, and says that no wild beast could utter sounds so calculated to strike sudden horror into the heart. Even himself, though a white man, and in perfect security, has often shuddered at the savage yells of the mystery men. Indeed, their object is to keep up the dread in which they are held, and, in order to do this, they must ever be doing something to keep themselves before the eyes of the peo-

Sometimes they will assemble together on the outskirts of the village, set up a furious howling, and then rush like a pack of wolves through the village, the cannibals and dogeaters tearing to pieces with their teeth any corpses or dogs that they may find. Some-times a single man will leave the place and bury himself in the woods, whence he will to provide a corpse for his eating, and would suddenly rush, quite naked, reduced to a

rst person whom they ore, when the sound of ongs is heard in the disulation of a village will ake to their canoes, and e from the shore until the time.

en are considered alle of the sick, and are n any one is ill. They by that the malady is due to some object or n extract by their ineremonies which they uch use of a rattle, the pes not seem to be of provided that it can for example, a favorite len case, carved like a ntaining a few stones. r, are made on totally nd resemble the beetlea that is figured on Mayne saw one which or four dozen puffintogether.

made over the part uses the actual cautery made of a pledget of nedies often do have pain, and when that and his friends pre-beral gifts, all which, to return should a ne patient die. They hey are violently exions, they can see the ong curved proboscis. covered from a dant he had seen his own ne man had caught as ne body, and had put

hese medicine men ions is almost indedescribes their howldemoniacal, and says l utter sounds so callen horror into the hough a white man, has often shuddered the mystery men. o keep up the dread and, in order to do doing something to the eyes of the peo-

ssemble together on ige, set up a furious ike a pack of wolves cannibals and dogwith their teeth any y may find. Some-leave the place and ds, whence he will aked, reduced to a

skeleton through his long fast, with his body and limbs covered with wounds inflicted by and minos covered with would similated by himself in his mad violence, and with foam flying from his lips, while he utters wild yells and beats furiously his drum or shakes his magic rattle. As is the case in Africa, women as well as men can enter this sacred women as well as men can enter this sacred order, and exercise quite as powerful an influence over the people as do their male col-

Sometimes a man will leap up in the night terrified, and crying that he sees a spirit. All within the house are at once in motion. An within the house are at once in motion. The women begin to sing, while the vision-ary tears his blanket to pieces, snatches feathers from his pillow, eating some of them, and scattering the others over his head. His nearest relation then makes incisions in his legs and arms, receives the blood in a dish, and scatters it over the place where the spirit is supposed to be steading where the spirit is supposed to be standing. Should the spirit withstand this exorcism, it Should the spirit withstand this exorcism, it is evident that he wants property. Accordingly the friends of the visionary throw his property on the fre; his clothes, his mats, and even the very boxes in which they were kept, go to make up the demands of the spirit, which will not take its leave until all the property has been destroyed. the property has been destroyed.

THE mode of disposal of the dead varies extremely among the different tribes, and even in the same tribe is not always uniform. The bodies of slaves and people of no consequence are simply taken to the burialground—which is usually a small island—wrapped in mats, and merely laid on the ground, covered with sticks and stones. The ground, covered with sticks and stones. The bodies of chiefs and young girls of rank are placed in boxes, and hoisted into the branches of trees, where they are allowed to remain. The rank of the person is indicated by the height to which the body is raised, that of a great chief or of his daughter being nearly at the top of the tree, while that of an inferior chief will be on one of the lowest branches.

always torn into strips, partly perhaps as a sign of mourning, and partly to guard them from being stolen. With the dead man is deposited all the property which he has not given away before his death, except his best canoe, his share of the roof and wall boards, his weapons, and his slaves, all of which be-long by right to his eldest son. In some cases even his house is burned, and in others the posts are dug up, and the whole house transported to another position.

Near the bodies of chiefs are placed large wooden images intended to represent the dead man. One of them, seen by Mr. Sproat, held a skull in its hand, which it was grimly contemplating; another, which represented a deceased orator, had its hand outstretched as in the act of speaking; and a third was shown as if grasping a wolf. The relatives often visit their burial-places. They come about dark, light a great fire, and feed it with

oil and other inflammable materials, while they wail loudly at intervals.

To the honor of these tribes, it may be said that they never disturb the relics of the said that they never disturb the relics of the departed, even if they occupy the burial-ground of a hostile tribe. In consequence of the mode of burial, nothing can have a more dreary or forlorn look than an island which has been selected as a burial-ground. On the branches of the trees are the mouldering bodies of the dead, and on their boughs futter the attered remains their boughs flutter the tattered remains of their clothing. And on the ground the scene is no better, for it is occupied with decaying boards, broken boxes, shattered canoes, rotten paddles, and other emblems of decay.

When the dead chief has been a man of when the dead other has been a man of very great importance, his emblem or crest is either painted or carved. In the former case it is painted on the coffin, but in the latter it is generally placed on a post or a tree near the body. According to Mr. Duncan, if the crest should happen to be an eagle or a raven, it is carved as if in the act of flying, and fixed to the edge of the coffin. Over the coffin are thrown blankets and of flying, and fixed to the edge of the coffin mats, and similar articles are hung on the boughs of neighboring trees. They are dead chief.

CHAPTER CXLV.

ALASKA.

MALEMUTES - INGELETES - CO-YUKONS.

LARGE STATURE -- THE TO-TOOK -- ORNAMENTS -- BAIDARRES -- UNDERGROUND HOUSES -- MALEMUTE DANCE - CHIEF ALEUYANUK - INGELETES - HOUSES - HONESTY - CO-YUKONS - DRESS - MOURN-ING FOR THE DEAD - WAKE - DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD - APPEARANCE OF THE WOMEN - AFFEC-TION FOR CHILDREN - COMMUNITY OF GOODS - CHARACTER.

THE United States Government having recently purchased the territory of Alaska, this work will be increased in value to the American public, by including some account of the uncivilized tribes which are its most

numerous inhabitants.

At the mouth of the Unalachleet River is the most northern settlement on the coast, a Russian trading post. To the northwest of this post Mr. Whymper found a large village of Malemute and Kaveak Indians. They resemble the Esquimaux, except that they are a tall and stout race. It is not unusual to find men among them six feet in height, and some even taller than this. The men shave the crown of the head, and are fond of an ornament called the To-took. It is made by pieces of bone run through holes on either side of the face just below the mouth. The ornaments of the women, who are stout and good-humored, are a tattoo on the chin, beads hanging from their hair, and also leaden or iron bracelets. Both sexes wear skin clothing. The coat has a hood almost always, which is generally of wolf skin. Men and women alike wear pantaloons of seal or reindeer skin, the women having the socks attached and in one piece. The "baidarres" of these natives, similar to the Esquimaux kajak, are admirably made. The frames are light and strong, the skin covering being sewed

with sinew, and the seams made water-tight by fat rubbed into them.

Their houses are usually underground, and have a tunnel, through which one must orawl to enter them. A hole in the roof -which is just above the surface of the ground—lets out the smoke. When there is no fire, this aperture is closely covered

with a skin.

Mr. Whymper gives the following account of a dance to which he and his party were invited: -

"On arriving at the doorway, we found a subterranean passage, two and a half feet high, crawling through which we at last reached the room, — dimly lighted by blub-ber lamps. The Indians who were to take part in the dance, chiefly young men, were nude to the waist, and wore seal, deerskin or cotton pantalons, with talls of wolves or dogs hanging behind, and feathers round their heads. The elders sat on a bench or shelf, running round the entire building, and looked on approvingly, while they consumed their own smoke, like the Tchuktchis, by swallowing it, and getting partially intoxi-cated thereby. The women brought in berries and fish in large 'contogs,' or wooden bowls.

"The performance commenced by the actors ranging themselves in a square, and raising these dishes of provisions to the four cardinal points successively, and once to the skies, with a sudden noise like 'swish!' or the flight of a rocket.

"Then came the feast; and that over, a monotonous chorus, with an accompaniment of gongs, was started. The words of the song of gongs, was started. Into words of the song commenced, 'Yung i ya, i ya, i ya!' and con-tinued throughout, 'Yung i ya!' Then a boy sprang out on the floor; he was joined by a second, then a third, till a circle of twenty was formed. Now they appeared violently attracted together, and now as much repelled; now they were horrified at one another's conduct, and held up their arms in warning gestures, and again all were friends and made pantomime of their happiness. In this performance there was nearly as much done by arms and bodies, as with feet. When

TH nearl stout.

pres vite inter man diale

havin Pol comm tion, e barre childr in suc missed such a

THE

the lar

river o

and na

found o

other in ble the have a dress is the other modifica on the 3 The c squarely Hy-a-qu through tween th higher u wear this Amon ng for th ing this cry over year, the generally

grief. Ő death of a

per at Nu some of h

guests we pole, on magnifice

kept up si

bour of th

who had

lungs for !

my voice

there was a lull in the entertainment, small presents were given to all the strangers into the other Indian tribes of that region. The Malemute chief "Aleuyanuk," whom The Malemutes and Kaveaks, though intermingling, and having similar habits, man, erect and soldierly, and, wearing a manners, and customs, yet speak different mustache and imperial, his manners would not have disgraced a civilized assembly."

INGELETES.

THE Ingeletes speak a dialect entirely different from that of the Malemutes,—one nearly allied to the Co-yukon. They are a stout, noble-looking race, good-natured, and having considerable intelligence.

having considerable intelligence.

Polygamy, though allowed, is not very common, and marriage is a permanent relation, except occasionally, when the wife is barren or has too many daughters. Female children not being prized so highly as sons, in such instances the wife is sometimes discussed. They live in underground houses

wet weather, the passage-way is nothing but a sewer. The entrance being covered with a skin, the mixture of foul smells inside, arising from stale fish and meat, old skins, dogs, dirt and smoke, is sickening and unendurable by any but an Indian. Mr. Whymper testifies to the good temper of the children and the honesty of the people. "At their villages our goods lay unguarded in our absence, and I cannot recall a single case of proved dishonesty among them in such instances the wife is sometimes dismissed. They live in underground houses, such as have been described, and in mild, greedy in their demands for payment."

THE CO-YUKONS.

THE Co-yukons are an interior tribe, and tion. The decorations of the pole were diselargest on the Yukon, which is the great vided among those who took part in the the largest on the Yukon, which is the great river of the north, being 2,000 miles long, and navigable 1,000 miles. They may be found on the banks of the Co-yukuk, and other interior rivers. These Indians resem-ble the Ingeletes, already mentioned, but have a more ferocious countenance. Their dress is a double-tailed coat, one tail before, the other behind, and this style, with some modifications, prevails for a thousand miles on the Yukon.

on the Yukon.

The dress of the women is cut more squarely, and they wear an ornament of Hya-qua shells on the nose, which runs through a hole made in the cartilage between the nostrils. It is a singular fact that higher up the river it is the men only who wear this ornament. wear this ornament.

Among these tribes the period of mourn-ing for the dead is one year, the women during this time often gathering to talk and cry over the deceased. At the end of the rear, they have a feast or "wake," which is generally a queer compound of jollity and grief. One such scene, to commemorate the death of a child, was witnessed by Mr. Whym-per at Nulato. "The poor old mother and some of her friends wept bitterly, while the guests were gayly dancing round a painted pole, on which strings of beads and some magnificent wolf skins were hung. They lept up singing and dancing to a fashionable

Their method of disposing of the dead is not interment, but enclosure in oblong boxes, raised on posts. These are sometimes ornamented with strips of skin, and the possessions of the deceased, as the canoe, paddles, &c., are placed on the top of the box. Smaller articles are placed within the box. This fourpost coffin is a custom also among the coast tribes already described. The women are quite prepossessing in appearance, are affec-tionate toward their children, and especially fond of their first-born. They are good-natured and playful, snowballing and rolling each other in the snow, sliding down hill on sled-ges or snow-shoes, with the enthusiasm of

There are other tribes, the names of which need only be mentioned, viz: the Kotch-a-Need only be mentioned, viz: the Kotch-a-Kutchins (or lowland people), the Au Kutchins, the Tatauchok Kutchins, Birch River and Rat River Indians. The Zanana Indians (or knoll people), Mr. Whymper thinks are the most unsophisticated of all the Indian tribes of the present day. Those he saw "were gay with painted faces, feathers in their long hair, patches of red clay at the in their long hair, patches of red clay at the back of their heads, covered with small fluffy feathers, double-tailed coats and pantaloons of buckskin, much adorned with fringes and bour of the morning, and one little savage, sho had been shouting at the top of his belts." Many of them, as in other Indian tribes, wore through the nose the Hy-a-qua my voice at all, a case of righteous retribu-

The words of the song a, i ya, i ya!'and con-ng i ya!' Then a boy ; he was joined by a ll a circle of twenty y appeared violently I now as much re-horrified at one aneld up their arms in

, as with feet. When

ND HOUSES - MALEMUTE UKONS - DRESS - MOURN-OF THE WOMEN-AIFEO-

the following account e and his party were doorway, we found a two and a half feet

gh which we at last

imly lighted by blubans who were to take efly young men, were

wore seal, deerskin

with tails of wolves l, and feathers round

ers sat on a bench or

e entire building, and

while they consumed

the Tchuktchis, by

ting partially intoxi-omen brought in bercontogs,' or wooden

commenced by the lves in a square, and provisions to the four

ively, and once to the oise like 'swish!' or

st; and that over, a h an accompaniment

gain all were friends f their happiness. In was nearly as much

Among the coast tribes, and especially on the Yukon, there is, to some extent, a community of goods, the industrious hunter supplying the village crowd. This is a custom so much practised that the hunter gets no praise for his service. Some of the chiefs maintain their position by frequent distributions of their effects, and the game which they, being good hunters, have been able to take. "These chiefs are often the worst clothed and worst fed of all the tribe. Such generosity is expected as a matter of course. No man, woman, or child among them goes unfed, unhoused, or unwarmed, if there be

food, dwelling, or fire in the settlement."

Among the tribes of Alaska, a system of slavery exists that can hardly be surpassed for barbarism. They all buy and sell slaves. "Parents will sell their children for three or four blankets or a few dollars, and have no compunction of conscience for the use they may be put to in the future. When one tribe goes to war with another, all the prisoners taken by either tribe are called and used as slaves. When a chief or any of his family dies, it is the custom to kill one or more of these slaves, so that the chief or his deceased relative may have a servant in the other world to wait on him. In 1868 an old chief of the Sitka tribe died, and a few days before his death, when his relatives were satisfied that he could live but a short time, they selected as a victim for sacrifice a young, healthy, good-looking warrior, whom the Sitka tribe had taken prisoner while at war with one of the tribes down near Queen Charlotte's Sound. The slave had been tied up two days about the time the old chief died, and by some means some of his friends were apprised of his condition, and immediately notified Gen. Davis that the Indian slave was liable to be killed at any moment. Gen. Davis had one of the chiefs brought before him, and after a long conversation about the foolishness of such sacrifices, he agreed to let the slave go free; and lest they might attempt to put into execution their original idea of killing him, the General permitted the Indian to remain in the city, where he would be protected.

"Recently one of the chiefs tried hard to

men, and are compelled to do more drudgery than those of the lower Yukon and coast of Alaska.

get hold of a half-breed, named Evanoff, to the two preceding weeks this chief would go up every day to Gen. Davis, stating that he had a slave in the city, and wanting to know if he could not get him into Indiantown. The General, supposing the chief wanted one of his Indians, told him to go and get him, but it was not until the day in question that the effort was made to get this man. It seems that Evanoff's mother was an Indian woman, but his father was a Russian, and when he was but three years of age a lady named Benge-man adopted and brought him up. The chief who claimed him had a child that was expected to die, and afterward did die. Haying no slave but his claim on Evanoff, he made this effort to sacrifice him that he might be a servant for his child in the spirit world. When the general saw whom the chief claimed, in a very few well-timed words he taught him and several of his warriors more about civilization than ever they knew before. He asked the chief what he wanted with this man. Pointing to Evanoff, the Indian told him his child was sick, and he only wanted him for three hours, and then he would let him go free. The General told him that the best thing he could do was to look on Evanoff as a free man already, and warned the Indian if in the future he should ever attempt to trouble Evanoff again, he would put him in the guard-house and keep him there. The Indian went off well pleased, and stated that he would be a good Indian thereafter.

"The slaves are put to death as follows: As soon as a chief dies, the slave is compelled to wash the body of the corpse; and is then taken out and thrown flat on his back and held there, when a stick of wood is placed across his throat, and two Indians sit down on each end of it, and in this way strangle him to death. His body is then placed inside a large pile of wood and burned to ashes. It is customary when a big chief dies to put to death two or more slaves. All slaves taken in war have to act as servants for the chiefs who own them." - (Sitka Times

of Nov. 27, 1869.)
The Indian population of the whole territory of Alaska is estimated at about 30,000. They are peaceful and quite capable, learning quickly, and exhibiting considerable skill in their utensils and weapons.

CROSS find i whose within The treme by the Behrin travelle drearie indicat winter The ser and wa Arctic : cold, de nal race all atte take av

MONER

leader, numero tundras. A nat bors has enter in the Russ of Ostro far from the Anir From

ing Behr

in his

rulers o Barrowe

and the second second second second second second second

eed, named Evanoff, to he two preceding weeks up every day to Gen. he had a slave in the ne had a salve in the snow if he could not get a. The General, supted one of his Indians, et him, but it was not tion that the effort was . It seems that Evan-Indian woman, but his and when he was but a lady named Benge-rought him up. The m had a child that was fterward did die. Hayim on Evanoff, he made him that he might be saw whom the chief w well-timed words he al of his warriors more ever they knew before. at he wanted with this vanoff, the Indian told k, and he only wanted and then he would let neral told him that the was to look on Evanoff and warned the Indian hould ever attempt to h, he would put him in keep him there. The pleased, and stated that adian thereafter.

it to death as follows: ies, the slave is com-ody of the corpse; and ad thrown flat on his when a stick of wood is at, and two Indians sit of it, and in this way th. His body is then pile of wood and burned mary when a big chief o or more slaves. All have to act as servants them."—(Sitka Times

ion of the whole terrinated at about 30,000. d quite capable, learn-chibiting considerable and weapons.

CHAPTER CXLVI.

SIBERIA.

THE TCHURTCHI — JAKUTS — TUNGUSI.

SOME OF THE TOHURTOHI - INDEPENDENCE - DISTRICT OF THE RUSSIANS - CARAVANS - INTOXE-CATION BY TORACCO - FAIR OF OSTROWNOJE -- GRAVITY OF THE TORUSTCHI -- THEIR TENT -- MADAME LEUTT -- HOSPITALITY -- SEAMANIEM -- HUMAN SACRIFICE -- POLYGAMY -- MURDER OF THE AGED -- JAKUTS -- THERE EMDURANCE -- RESERVE -- SUPERSTITION -- THE TUNGUSI --DIFFERENT TRIBES -- CANNIBALISM -- ORNAMENTS -- BRAVERY -- DIET -- SHAMANISM -- DISPOSAL OF THE DEAD - A RIGHT'S HALT WITH THE TURGUE! IN THE POREST - SPORTS - PAIRS,

whose condition and character bring within the scope of this work.

The home of the TCHUKTCHI is at the externe north-eastern point of Asia; bounded by Behring Sea on the other. It is, as the few travellers who have visited it say, one of the dreariest regions of the earth. There is no indication of summer before July 20th, and indication of summer perfore July 20th, and winter begins about the 20th of August. The sea coasts abound with seals, sea-lions, and walruses; while the wolf, reindeer, and Arctic fox abound in the interior. In this cold, desolate region dwell the only aboriginai race of Northern Asia that has resisted all attempts of the Russian government to hat averages of the Mussian government to hate away its independence. Dr. Hartwig, in his sketch of this tribe, says: "The rulers of Siberia have confined them within narrower limits, but they obey no foreign leader, and wander unmolested, with their numerous reindeer herds, over the naked tundras.

A natural distrust of their powerful neighbors has rendered them long unwilling to enter into any commercial intercourse with the Russians, and to meet them at the fair of Ostrownoje, a small town, situated not far from their frontiers, on a small island of the Aninj, in 68° N. lat. From the East Cape of Asia, where, cross-

Chossing Behring's Straits into Asia, we find in Northern Siberia several peoples whose condition and character bring them within the scope of this work.

The home of the TCHURTCHI is at the extense north-eastern point of Asia; bounded by the Polar Ocean on one side, and by end when they set off to make their arrangements for the next.

ments for the next.

Tobacco is the primum mobile of the trade which centres in Ostrownoje. Their pipes are of a peculiar character, larger at the stem than the bowl, which holds a very small quantity of tobacco. In smoking, they swallow the fumes of the tobacco, and often, after six or eight whiffs, fall back, completely intoxicated for the time.

But Ostrownois extracts not only Tobuk.

But Ostrownoje attracts not only Tchuktchi and Russians; a great number of the tem and Russians; a great fininger of the Siberian tribes, from a vast circuit of 1,000 or 1,500 versts, — Jukahiri, Lamutes, Tun-gusi, Tsehuwanzi, Koriacks, — also come flocking in their sledges, drawn partly by dogs, partly by horses, for the purpose of bartering their commodities against the goods of the Tchuktchi. Fancy this bar-barous assembly meeting every year during the intense cold and short days of the beginning of March. Picture to yourself the fantastic illumination of their red watchfires blazing under the starry firmament, or mingling their ruddy glare with the aurora flickering through the skies, and add to the strange sight the hollow sound of the Shaing Behring's Strait in boats covered with man's drum, and the howling of several

hundreds of hungry dogs, and you will surely confess that no fair has a more original char-

The imperturbable gravity of the Tchuktch forms a remarkable contrast with the greedy eagerness of the Russian trader. Although the Tchuktchi have no scales with them, is not easy to deceive them in the weight, for they know exactly by the feeling of the hand whether a quarter of a pound is want-ing to the pound. The whole fair seldom lasts longer than three days, and Ostrownoje, which must have but very few stationary inhabitants indeed (as it is not even mentioned in statistical accounts, which cite towns of seventeen souls), is soon after abandoned for many months to its ultra-Siberian solitude.

But before we allow the Tchuktchi to retire to their deserts, we may learn some-thing more of their habits by accompanying Mr. Matiuschkin Wrangell's companion on a visit to the ladies of one of their first chiefs. "We enter the outer tent, or 'wamet,' consisting of tanned reindeer skins supported on a slender framework. An opening at the top to let out the smoke, and a kettle in the centre, announce that and a kettle in the centre, announce that antechamber and kitchen are here harmoniously blended into one. But where are the inmates? Most probably in that large sack made of the finest skins of reindeer calves, which occupies, near the kettle, the centre of the 'wamet.' To penetrate into this sanctum sanctorum of the Tchuktch household, we raise the loose flap which serves as a door, green on all fours through. household, we raise the loose hap which serves as a door, creep on all-fours through the opening, cautiously re-fasten the flap by tucking it under the floor-skin, and find ourselves in the reception or withdrawing-room,—the 'polog.' A snug box, no doubt, for a cold climate, but rather low, as we can not stand upright in it, and not quite so well ventilated as a sanitary commissioner well ventilated as a sanitary commissioner would approve of, as it has positively no opening for light or air. A sufficating smoke meets us on entering. We rub our eyes, and when they have at length got accustomed to the biting atmosphere, we perceive, by the gloomy light of a train-oil lamp, the worthy family squatting on the floor in a state of almost complete nuclity. Without being in the least embarrassed, Madame Louitt and her daughter receives. Madame Leutt and her daughter receive us in their primitive costume. But, to show us that the Tchuktchi know how to receive company, and to do honor to their guests, they immediately insert strings of glass beads in their greasy hair. Their hospitality equals their politeness; for, instead of a tchi may possibly amount to 30,000.

cold reception, a hot dish of boiled reindeer flesh, copiously irrigated with rancid traindesn, copiously irrigated with rancid train-oil by the experienced hand of the mistress of the household, is soon after smoking before us. Unfortunately, our effeminate taste is not up to the haut gout of her culi-nary art, and while Mr. Leutt does ample justice to the artistic talent of his spouse, by rapidly bolting do 'n pieces as large as a fist, we are hardly able to swallow a morsel." Though most of the Reindeer or nomadic

Tchuktchi have been baptized, yet Wrangell supposes the ceremony to have been a mere financial speculation on their part, and is convinced that the power of the Shamans is still as great as ever. An epidemic had car-ried off a great number of persons, and also whole herds of reindeer. In vain the Shamans had recourse to their usual conjurations. The plague continued. They consulted together, and directed that one of their most getner, and directed that one of their most respected chiefs, named Kotschen, must be sacrificed, to appease the irritated spirits. Kotschen was willing to submit to the sen-tence, but none could be found to execute it, until his own son; prevailed on by his father's exhortations, and terrified by his threatened curse, plunged a knife into his heart, and gave his body to the Shamans.

Polygamy is general among the Tchuk-tchi, and they change their wives as often as they please. Still, though the women are certainly slaves, they are allowed more influence, and are subjected to less labor, than among many savages. Among other heathenish and detestable customs, is that of killing all deformed children; and all old people as soon as they become unfit for the hardships and fatigues of a nomal life. They do not indulge in any needless cruelty, but stupefy the aged victim, by putting some substance up the nostrils before opening a vein. Two years before Wrangell's arrival at Kolyma there was an instance of this in the case of one of their richest chiefs. Waletka's father became infirm and tired of life, and was put to death at his own express desire, by some of his nearest rela-

tions.

The number of the Tchuktchi is greater than one might expect to find in so sterile a country. According to the Russian missionaries, there were, some years back, 52 ulusses or villages of the Onkilon (or stationary Tchuktchi), with 1,568 tents, and 10,000 inhabitants, and Wrangell tells us that the Tennygk (or Reindeer Tchuktchi), are at least twice as numerous, so that the entire population of the land of the Tchuktahi was supported to the transfer of the transfer of the Tchuktahi was supported to the transfer of the Tchuktahi was supported to the Tchuktahi was supported

THE thes tion with table and Russ are c them

the cing t

THIS drivi Tchu conqu ignor hund deriv the A of thi vario they a deer, gusi;

basins Tung Ochot the B numb and di quenc other o by the cattle, mestic guse, 1 some the wo of a riv the for

Of t Wrang a solita nesses his da long s for sev girl rer - whic imperfe -expo

hunger No wor not seld the rei and chi

JAKUTS.

THE JAKUTS are the most energetic of these races, having reached a higher civiliza-tion than the others in the same latitude, with the exception of Iceland, Finland, and Norway. They are a pastoral people, hospitable, possess considerable mechanical skill, and are so shrewd and cunning that no

Russian can compete with them.

"Even in Siberia," Wrangell says, "they are called 'men of iron.' Often have I seen them sleeping at a temperature of 4° in the open air, and with a thick ice rind covering their almost unprotected bodies."

Though reserved and unsocial, they are kind to strangers that need assistance. They are the universal carriers to the east of the Lena. Bidding defiance to the cold and the storm, fearing neither the gloom of the forest nor the dangers of the icy stream, yet they are not emancipated from the old belief in Schamanism—the dread of svil spirits. They number about 200,-000, and form the principal part of the population of the vast and dreary province of Jakutsk.

THE TUNGUSI.

This race having spread over East Siberia, driving before them the Jakuts, Jukahiri, Tehuktehi, and other aboriginal tribes, were Tenukton, and other aboriginal tribes, were conquered by the Russians, and are now as ignorant and uncivilized as they were two hundred and fifty years ago. Dr. Hartwig deriving his information from Wrangell, the Arctic explorer, thus sketches the traits

"According to their occupations, and the various domestic animals employed by them, they are distinguished by the names of Reindeer, Horse, Dog, Forest, and River Tun-gusi; but, although they are found from the basins of the Upper, Middle, and Lower Tunguska, to the western shore of the sea of Ochotsk, and from the Chinese frontiers and the Baikal to the Polar Ocean, their whole number does not amount to more than 30,000, and diminishes from year to year, in consequence of the ravages of the small-pox and other epidemic disorders transmitted to them by the Russians. Only a few rear horses and cattle, the reindeer being generally their domestic animal; and the impoverished Tun-guse, who has been deprived of his herd by some contagious disorder, or the ravages of the wolves, lives as a fisherman on the borders of a river, assisted by his dog, or retires into the forests as a promyschlenik, or hunter."

Of the miseries which here await him, Wrangell relates a melancholy instance. In a solitary hut, in one of the dreariest wildernesses imaginable, he found a Tunguse and his daughter. While the father, with his long snow-shoes, was pursuing a reindeer for several days together, this unfortunate girl remained alone and helpless in the hut, which even in summer afforded but an imperfect shelter against the rain and wind, exposed to the cold, and frequently to hunger, and without the least occupation. No wonder that the impoverished Tungusi not seldom sink into cannibalism. Neither the reindeer nor the dogs, nor the wives and children of their more fortunate coun-

trymen, are secure from the attacks and voracity of these outcasts, who, in their turn, are treated like wild beasts, and destroyed without mercy. A bartering trade is, how-ever, carried on with them, but only at a distance, and by signs; each party deposit-ing its goods, and following every motion of

the other with a suspicious eye. The Russian government, anxious to relieve the misery of the impoverished nomade, has given orders to settle them along the river banks, and to provide them with the necessary fishing implements; but only extreme wretchedness can induce the Tunguse to relinquish his free life of the forest. His careless temper, his ready wit, and sprightly manner, distinguish him from the other Siberian tribes,—the gloomy Samoïede, the uncouth Ostiak, the reserved Jakut,— but he is said to be full of deceit and malice. His vanity shows itself in the quantity of glass beads with which he decorates his dress of reindeer leather, from his small Tartar cap to the tips of his shoes. When chasing or travelling on his reindeer through the woods, he of course lays aside most of the woods, he of course lays aside most of his finery, and puts on large water-tight boots, or sari, well greased with fat, to keep off the wet of the morass. His hunting apparatus is extremely simple. A small axe, a kettle, a leathern bag containing some dried fish, a dog, a short gun, or merely a how and a sling is all be requires for his bow and a sling, is all he requires for his expeditions into the forest. With the assistance of his long and narrow snow-shoes, he flies over the dazzling plains, and protects his eyes, like the Jakut, with a net made of black horse-hair. He never hesitates to attack the bear single-handed, and generally masters him. The nomad Tunguse naturally requires a movable dwelling. His tent is covered with leather, or large pieces of pliable bark, which are easily rolled up and transported from place to place. The yourt of the sedentary Tunguse resembles that of the Jakut, and is so small that it can

re allowed more inted to less labor, than Among other heathcustoms, is that of ldren, and all old peoecome unfit for the in any needless cru-ed victim, by putting nostrils before open-s before Wrangell's re was an instance

lish of boiled reindeer ted with rancid train-hand of the mistress

soon after smoking

nately, our effeminate haut gout of her culi-

fr. Leutt does ample

talent of his spouse,

n pieces as large as a

to swallow a morsel." Reindeer or nomadie

paptized, yet Wrangell y to have been a mere

on their part, and is

An epidenic had car-r of persons, and also r. In vain the Sham-

eir usual conjurations. They consulted to-

nat one of their most d Kotschen, must be the irritated spirits.

to submit to the sen-

pe found to execute it, ailed on by his father

led by his threatened into his heart, and

among the Tchuk-

heir wives as often as

ough the women are

amans.

er became infirm and t to death at his own of his nearest rela-Tchuktchi is greater to find in so sterile a o the Russian mis-

one of their richest

he Onkilon (or sta-th 1,568 tents, and Wrangell tells us eindeer Tchuktchi), merous, so that the land of the Tchuknt to 30,000.

be very quickly and thoroughly warmed by a fire kindled on the stone hearth in the centre. In his food the Tunguse is by no means dainty. One of his favorite dishes consists of the contents of a reindeer's stomach mixed with wild berries, and spread out in thin cakes on the rind of trees, to be dried in the air or in the sun. Those who have settled on the Wiluj and in the neighborhood of Nertschinsk likewise consume large quantities of brick tea, which they boil with fat and berries into a thick porridge, and this unwholesome food adds, no doubt, to the yellowness of their complexion.

But few of the Tungusi have been converted to Christianity, the majority being still addicted to Shamanism. They do not like to bury their dead, but place them, in their holiday dresses, in large chests, which they hang up between two trees. The hunting apparatus of the deceased is buried beneath the chest. No ceremonies are used on the occasion, except when a Shaman happens to be in the neighborhood, when a reindeer is sacrificed, on whose flesh the sorcerer and the relatives regale themselves, while the spirits to whom the animal is supposed to be offered are obliged to content themselves with the smell of the burnt fat. As among the Samoïedes or the Ostiaks. woman is a marketable ware among the Tungusi. The father gives his daughter in marriage for twenty or a hundred reindeer, or the bridegroom is obliged to earn her hand by a long period of service.
In East Siberia the Tungusi divide with

the Jakuts the task of conveying goods or travellers through the forests, and afford the stranger frequent opportunities for admiring their agility and good humor. On halting after a day's journey, the reindeer are un-packed in an instant, the saddles and the goods ranged orderly on the ground, and the bridles collected are hung on branches of

Comfortably seated on his reindeer saddle, the traveller may now amuse himself with the dances, which the Tungusi accompany with an agreeable song; or, if he choose to witness their agility in athletic exercises, it only coats him a word of encouragement and a small donation of brandy. Two of the Tungusi hold a rope, and swing it with all their might, so that it does not touch the ground. Meanwhile a third Tunguse skips over the rope, picks up a bow and arrow, spans the bow and shoots the arrow, without once touching the rope. Some particularly bold and expert Tungusi will dance over a sword which a person lying on his back on the ground is swinging about with the greatest rapidity. Should our traveller be a friend of chess, the Tungusi are equally at his service, as they are passionately fond of this noblest of games, especially in the Kolymsk district.

Like all other Siberian nomads, they visit, at least once a year, the various fairs which are held in the small towns scattered here and there over their immense territory, such as Kirensk, Olekminsk, Bargusin and Ochotak, which, before the opening of Amoor to trade, was the chief port of East Siberia.

THE ! lander civiliz deepe and w ern Si With the na of the Chatai betwee interco his anı settlen where, pany, 1 their i merely estant instruc majorit still ac their fl Being, resides old, sen and sno a poeti the mos bow "t deity, 1

them to favor, either Num, spirits,

f conveying goods or forests, and afford the ortunities for admiring humor. On halting the reindeer are unon the ground, and the aung on branches of

on his reindeer saddle, amuse himself with Tungusi accompany g; or, if he choose to athletic exercises, it d of encouragement brandy. Two of the does not touch the third Tunguse skips p a bow and arrow, oots the arrow, with rope. Some partic-Tungusi will dance person lying on his swinging about with Should our traveller Tungusi are equally are passionately fond ies, especially in the

n nomads, they visit, various fairs which towns scattered here nense territory, such Bargusin and Ochopening of Amoor to rt of East Siberia.

CHAPTER CXLVII.

SIBERIA - Concluded.

THE SAMOIEDES AND OSTIAKS.

turib Barbabism — non, or jilibhambahrtje — shamanism — samoïedh idols — sjadæi — hahb - THE TADESTSIOS, OR SPIRITS - THE TADISES, OR SORGERERS - THEIR DRESS - THEIR DIVO-GATIONS - THEIR CONJURING TRICKS - REVERENCE PAID TO THE DEAD - A SAMOIRDE OATH-APPRARANCE OF THE SAMOIRDES - THEIR DRESS - A SAMOIRDE BELLE - CHARACTER OF THE SAMOIEDES -- THEIR DECREASING NUMBERS -- TRADITIONS OF ANCIENT HEROES -- OSTIAKS -- WHAT is the obl? -- A summer yourt -- poverty of obtiak fishermen -- A winter yourt -- At-TACHMENT OF OSTIAKS TO THEIR ANGIENT CUSTOMS - ARCHERY - APPRARANCE AND CHARACTER OF THE OSTIAKS.

THE Samoïedes, the neighbors of the Laplanders, are still farther removed from civilized society, and plunged in even deeper barbarism. The wildest tundras and woods of Northern Russia and Western Siberia are the home of the Samoïede. With his reindeer herds he wanders over the naked wastes, from the eastern coasts of the White Sea to the banks of the Chatanga, or hunts in the boundless forests between the Obi and the Jenissei. His intercourse with the Russians is confined to his annual visit at the fairs of such miserable settlements as Obdorsk and Pustosersk, where, far from improving by their company, he but too often becomes the prey of pany, as but too often becomes the proyect their avarice, and learns to know them merely as cheats and oppressors. Prot-estant missionaries have long since brought instruction to the Laplander's but, but the majority of the less fortunate Samoiedes still adhere to the gross superstitions of their fathers. They believe in a Supreme Being, — Num, or Jilibeambaertje, — who resides in the air, and, like the Jupiter of old, sends down thunder and lightning, rain and snow; and as a proof that something of a poetic fancy is to be found even among the most savage nations, they call the rain-bow "the hem of his garment." As this deity, however, is too far removed from

invoking the aid or averting the wrath of a

higher power. The chief of all Samoïede idols is in the The chief of all Samoiede idols is in the island of Waygatz,—a cold and melancholy Delos,—where it was already found by old Barentz. This idol is a mere block of stone, with its head tapering to a point. It has thus been fashioned, not by a mortal artist, but by a play of nature. After this original the Samoïedes have formed many idols of stone or wood of various sizes, which they call "Sjadei," from their possessing a human physiognomy (sja). These idols they dress in reindeer skins, and ornament them with all sorts of colored rags. But a resemblance to the human form is not the necessary attribute of a Samoïede idol; any irregularly shaped stone or tree may be thus distinguished.

If the object is small, the savage carries it everywhere about with him, carefully wrapped up; if too cumbersome to be trans-ported, it is reserved as a kind of national deity. As with the Ostiaks, each Samoïede tribe has in its train a peculiar sledge,—the Hahengan,—in which the household idols (or Hahe) are placed. One of these Penates them to leave them any hope of gaining his favor, they never think of offering him either prayer or sacrifice. But, besides Num, there are a great many inferior spirits, or idols, who directly interfere in fourth takes care to fill their nets with fish.

Whenever his services are required, the seeks no other medical advice; and the sor-Hahe is taken from his repository, and erected in the tent or on the pasture ground, in the wood or on the river's bank.

His mouth is then smeared with oil or blood, and a dish with fish or flesh is set before him, in the full expectation that his good offices will amply repay the savory re-past. When his aid is no longer necessary, he is put aside without any further ceremony, and as little noticed as the Madonna of the Neapolitan fisherman after the storm

has ceased.

The Hahe, or idols, are very convenient objects of reverence to the Samoïede, as he can consult them, or ask their assistance, without being initiated in the secrets of magic; while the Tadebtsios, or invisible spirits, which everywhere hover about in the air, and are more inclined to injure than to benefit man, can only be invoked by a Tadibe, or sorcerer, who, like the Cumean sibyl, works himself into a state of ecstatic frenzy. When his services are required, the first care of the Tadibe is to invest himself with his magical mantle, —a kind of shirt made of reindeer leather, and hemmed with red cloth. The seams are covered in a similar manner, and the shoulders are decorated with epaulettes of the same gaudy material. A piece of red cloth veils the eyes and face,—for the Tadibe requires no external organs of sight to penetrate into the world of spirits, —and a plate of polished metal shines upon his breast.

Thus accounted, the Tadibe seizes his magical drum, whose sounds summon the spirits to his will. Its form is round, it has but one bottom, made of reindeer skin, and is more or less decorated with brass rings and other ornaments, according to the wealth or poverty of its possessor. During the ceremony of invocation, the Tadibe is generally assisted by a disciple, more or less initiated in the magic art. They either sit down, or walk about in a circle. The chief sorcerer beats the drum, at first slowly, then with increasing violence, singing at the same time a few words to a mystic melody. The disciple immediately falls in, and both re-

peat the same monotonous chant.

At length the spirits appear, and the consultation is supposed to begin; the Tadibe from time to time remaining silent, as if listening to their answers, and but gently beating his drum, while the assistant continues to sing. Finally, this mute conversa-tion ceases, the song changes into a wild howling, the drum is violently struck, the eye of the Tadibe glows with a strange fire, foam issues from his lips, when suddenly the uproar ceases, and the oracular sentence is pronounced. The Tadibes are consulted, not only for the purpose of recovering a strange reindeer, or to preserve the herd from a contagious disorder, or to obtain success in fishcerer's drum either scares away the malevo-lent spirits that cause the malady, or sum-mons other to the assistance of his patient. Besides dealing with the invisible world,

the Tadibe does not neglect the usual arts of an expert conjurer, and knows by this means how to increase his influence over his simpleminded countrymen. One of his commonest tricks is similar to that which has been practised with so much success by the brothers Davenport. He sits down, with his hands and feet bound, on a reindeer skin stretched out upon the floor, and, the light being removed, begins to summon the ministering spirits to his aid. Strange, unearthly noises now begin to be heard; bears growl, snakes hiss, squirrels rustle about the hut. At length the tumult ceases, the audience anxiously awaits the end of the spectacle, when suddenly the Tadibe, freed from his bonds, steps into the hut, no one doubting that the spirits have set him free.

As barbarous as the poor wretches who submit to his guidance, the Tadibe is incapable of improving their moral condition, and has no wish to do so. Under various names, — Schamans among the Tungus, Angekoks among the Esquimaux, medicinemen among the North American Indians, we find similar magicians or impostors assuming a spiritual dictatorship over all the Arctic nations of the Old and the New World, wherever their authority has not been broken by Christianity or Buddhism. This dreary faith still extends its influence over at least half a million of souls, from the White Sea to the extremity of Asia, and

from the Pacific to Hudson's Bay.

Like the Ostiaks and other Siberian tribes, the Samoïedes honor the memory of the dead by sacrifices and other ceremonies. They believe that their deceased friends have still the same wants and pursue the same occupations as when in the land of the living; and thus they place in or about their graves a sledge, a spear, a cooking-pot, a knife, an axe, etc., to assist them in procuring their food. At the ing and preparing their food. At the funeral, and for several years afterward, the relations sacrifice reindeer over the grave. When a person of note, a prince, a Starschina, the proprietor of numerous herds of reindeer, dies (for even among the miserable Samoiedes we find the social distinctions of rich and poor), the nearest relations make an image, which is placed in the tent of the deceased, and enjoys the respect paid to him during his lifetime. At every meal the image is placed in his former seat, and every evening it is undressed and laid down in his bed. During three years the image is thus honored, and then buried; for by this time the body is supposed to be decayed, and to have lost all sensation of the past. The souls of the Tadibes, and of ing. The Samoiede, when a prey to illness, those who have died a violent death, alone

enjoy their as un Lil the t highe has b oïede, from

If r manu his op break with th mitted like th jury a -who of a fu will be violent deer, ceremo guilt, a The

of a be vered 1 Kamsel by the they be his sha than h terms o Lapps, the atte they fee The a wild as t

dwarfish

that it

thick lip nose, 80 nearly up jaw (whi raven-bla a yellowacteristic nothing little nat oïede is s affords h rain, and some dar with cloth long as th with thei girl, with appears in round the

in her sca

tresses, or

tin, she m

to offer a hand. Fo ever thin al advice; and the sorares away the malevo-the malady, or sumstance of his patient. h the invisible world eglect the usual arts of d knows by this means uence over his simple-One of his commonest which has been prac-cess by the brothers down, with his hands eindeer skin stretched d, the light being remon the ministering nge, unearthly noises bears growl, snakes about the hut. At es, the audience anx-f the spectacle, when reed from his bonds,

poor wretches who the Tadibe is incaeir moral condition. so. Under various nong the Tungusi, squimaux, medicine-American Indians, — cians or impostors ictatorship over all the Old and the New authority has not anity or Buddhism. xtends its influence llion of souls, from tremity of Asia, and

ne doubting that the

son's Bay. id other Siberian nor the memory of d other ceremonies. r deceased friends nts and pursue the ce in or about their a cooking-pot, a et them in procur-ir food. At the years afterward, reindeer over the of note, a prince, etor of numerous or even among the poor), the nearest which is placed in l, and enjoys the g his lifetime. At aced in his former is undressed and uring three years, and then buried; s supposed to be t all sensation of e Tadibes, and of plent death, alone

Like the Ostiaks, the Samoïedes consider the taking of an oath as an action of the highest religious importance. When a crime has been secretly committed against a Samoïede, he has the right to demand an oath

from the suspected person.

If no wooden or stone Hahe is at hand, he manufactures one of earth or snow, leads his opponent to the image, sacrifices a dog, breaks the image, and then addresses him with the following words: "If thou hast committed this crime, then must thou perish like this dog." The ill consequences of perjury are so much dreaded by the Samoïedes, who, though they have but very faint ideas will be punished in this life: murder with violent death, or robbery by losses of reindeer,—that the true criminal, when called upon to swear, hardly ever submits to the ceremony, but rather at once confesses his

guilt, and pays the penalty.

The most effectual security for an oath is that it should be solemnized over the snout of a bear, - an animal which is highly revered by all the Siberian tribes, from the Kamschatkans to the Samoïedes, as well as hamschakans to the Samoledes, as well as by the Laplanders. Like the Laplanders, they believe that the bear conceals under his shaggy coat a human shape with more than human wisdom, and speak of him in terms of the highest reverence. Like the Lapps, also, they will drive an arrow or a bullet through his skin; but they preface the attack with so many compliments that. the attack with so many compliments that

they feel sure of disarming his anger. The appearance of the Samoïedes is as wild as the country which they inhabit. The dwarfish stature of the Ostiak or the Lapp, thick lips, small eyes, a low forehead, a broad nose, so much flattened that the end is nearly upon a level with the bone of the upper jaw (which is strong and greatly elevated). raven-black, shaggy hair, a thin beard, and a yellow-brown complexion, are their characteristic features, and in general they do nothing to improve a form which has but little natural beauty to boast of. The Samorde is satisfied if his heavy reindeer dress afords him protection against the cold and rain, and cares little if it be dirty or ill-cut; some dandies, however, wear furs trimmed with cloth of a gaudy color. The women, as long as they are unmarried, take some pains with their persons; and when a Samoïede girl, with her small and lively black eyes, appears in her reindeer jacket tightly fitting round the waist, and trimmed with dog-skin, in her scarlet moccasins, and her long, black tresses, ornamented with pieces of brass or in, she may well tempt some rich admirer to offer a whole herd of reindeer for her

enjoy the privilege of immortality, and after their terrestrial life hover about in the air as unsubstantial spirits.

I the the Orticle the Samorades consider riage. The consequence of this degrading custom is that the husband treats his consort like a slave, or as an inferior being. A Samoïede, who had murdered his wife, was quite surprised at being summoned before a court of justice, for what he considered a trifling offence; "he had honestly paid for her," he said, "and could surely do what he liked with his own."

The senses and faculties of the Samoïedes correspond to their mode of life as nomads and hunters. They have a piercing eye, del-icate hearing, and a steady hand; they shoot an arrow with great accuracy, and are swift runners.

The Samoïede is good-natured, melancholy, and phlegmatic. He has, indeed, but indistinct notions of right and wrong, of good and evil; but he possesses a grateful heart, and is ready to divide his last morsel with his friend. Cruelty, revenge, the with his friend. Cruelty, revenge, the darker crimes that pollute so many of the savage tribes of the tropical zone, are foreign to his character. Constantly at war with a dreadful climate, a prey to ignorance and poverty, he regards most of the things of this life with supreme indifference. A common trait in the character of all

Samoïedes is the gloomy view which they take of life and its concerns; their internal world is as cheerless as that which surrounds them. True men of ice and snow, they relinquish, without a murmur, a life which they can hardly love, as it imposes upon them many privations, and affords them but few pleasures in return.

The entire number of the European and Asiatic Samoïedes is estimated at no more than about 10,000, and this number, small as it is when compared to the vast territory over which they roam, is still decreasing from year to year. Before their subjugation by the Russians, the Samoïedes were frequently at war with their neighbors, the Ostiaks, the Woguls, and the Tartars, and the rude poems which celebrate the deeds of the heroes of old are still sung in the tents of their peaceful descendants. The minstrel, or troubadour, — if I may be allowed to use these names while speaking of the rudest of mankind, — is seated in the centre of the hut, while the audience squat around. His ges-ticulations endeavor to express his sympathy with his hero. His body trembles, his voice quivers, and during the more pathetic parts of his story, tears start to his eyes, and he covers his face with his left hand, while the right, holding an arrow, directs its point to the ground. The audience generally keep silence, but their groans accompany the hero's death; or when he soars upon an to offer a whole herd of reindeer for her hand. For among the Samoiedes no father malice of his enemies, they express their ever thinks of bestowing a portion on his delight by a triumphant shout.

MATTER CORPORATION THE OSTIAKS.

WHAT is the Obi? "One of the most | melancholy rivers on earth," say the few European travellers who have ever seen it roll its turbid waters through the wilderness; "its monotonous banks a dreary succession of swamps and dismal pine forests, and hardly a living creature to be seen, but cranes, wild ducks, and geese." If you address the same question to one of the few Russians who have settled on its banks, he answers, with a devout mien, "Obi is our mother"; but if you ask the Ostiak, he bursts forth in a laconic but energetic phrase, "Obi is the god whom we honor above all other gods."

To him the Obi is a source of life. With

its salmon and sturgeon he pays his taxes and debts, and buys his few luxuries; while the fishes of inferior quality which get entangled in his net he keeps for his own consumption and that of his faithful dog, eating them mostly raw, so that the perchanot seldom feels his teeth as soon as it is pulled out of the water. In spring, when the Obi and its tributaries burst their bonds of ice, and the floods sweep over the plains, the Ostiak is frequently driven into the woods, where he finds but little to appease his hunger. At length, however, the waters subside, the flat banks of the river appear above their surface, and the savage erects his summer hut close to its stream. This hovel has generally a quadrangular form, low walls, and a high-pointed roof, made of willow branches covered with large pieces of bark. These, having first been softened by boiling, are sewed together, so as to form large mats or carpets, easily rolled up and transported. The hearth, a mere hole in-closed by a few stones, is in the centre, and

the wolf, or the owner's dogs. At the beginning of winter the Ostiaks retire into the woods, where they find, at least, some protection against the Arctic blasts, and are busy hunting the sable or squirrel; but as fishing affords them at all times their chief food, they take care to establish their winter huts on some eminence above the reach of the spring inundations, near some small river, which, through holes made in the ice, affords their nets and anglers a precarious supply. Their winter yourt is somewhat more solidly constructed than their summer residence, as it is not re-moved every year. It is low and small, and its walls are plastered with clay. Light is admitted through a piece of ice inserted in the wall or on the roof.

top. Close to the hut there is also, generally,

a small store-house erected on high poles, as

in Lapland; for the provisions must be secured against the attacks of the glutton,

Besides those who live solely upon fishes

and birds of passage, there are other Ostiaks who possess reindeer herds, and wander in summer to the border of the Polar Sea. where they also catch seals and fish. When winter approaches, they slowly return to the woods. Finally, in the more southerly dis-tricts, there are some Ostiaks who, having entirely adopted the Russian mode of life, cultivate the soil, keep cattle, or earn their livelihood as carriers.

In general, however, the Ostiak, like the Samoiede, obstinately withstands all innovations, and remains true to the customs of his forefathers. He has been so often deceived by the Russians that he is loth to receive the gifts of civilization from their hands. He fears that if his children learn to read and write, they will no longer be satisfied to live like their parents, and that the school will deprive him of the support of his age. He is no less obstinately attached to the religion of his fathers, which in all essential points is identical with that of the Samoïedes. In some of the southern districts, along the Irtysch, at Surgut, he has indeed been baptized, and hangs up the image of a saint in his hut, as his Russian pope or priest has instructed him to do; but his Christianity extends no further. Along the tributaries of the Obi, and below Obdorsk, he is still plunged in Schaman-

Like the Samoïedes, the Ostiaks, whose entire number amounts to about 25,000, are subdivided into tribes, reminding one of the Highland clans. Each tribe consists of a number of families, of a common descent, and sometimes comprising many hundred individuals, who, however distantly related, consider it a duty to assist each other in disthe smoke escapes through an aperture at the

The Ostiaks are excellent archers, and, like all the other hunting tribes of Siberia. use variously constructed arrows for the different objects of their chase.

They are generally of a small stature, and most of them are dark-complexioned, with raven-black hair like the Samoïedes; some of them, however, have a fairer skin and light-colored hair. They are a good-natured, indolent, honest race; and though they are extremely dirty, yet their smoky huts are not more filthy than those of the Norwegian or Icelandic fishermen.

As among the Samoïedes, the women are in a very degraded condition, the father al-ways giving his daughter in marriage to the highest bidder. The price is very different, and rises or falls according to the circumstances of the parent; for while the rich man asks fifty reindeer for his child, the poor fisherman is glad to part with his daughter for a few squirrel-skins and dried sturgeon.

LOCALE

D

8/ IN

THE re man Is of India two pha advance civilizat most li followin account

throwin

trench 1

akin to From country. distinct through the tribe Australi golian, i figure in with tho: civilized. most of toma.

THERI which de people s any other are called here are other Ostiaks herds, and wander in er of the Polar Sea, seals and fish. When y slowly return to the e more southerly dis-Ostiaks who, having Russian mode of life. p cattle, or earn their

r, the Ostiak, like the withstands all innotrue to the customs le has been so often ans that he is loth to ivilization from their if his children learn ey will no longer be leir parents, and that him of the support of s obstinately attached fathers, which in all itical with that of the of the southern disch, at Surgut, he has , and hangs up the s hut, as his Russian ructed him to do; but ls no further. Along he Obi, and below clunged in Schaman-

, the Ostiaks, whose is to about 25,000, are reminding one of the tribe consists of a f a common descent, ising many hundred ver distantly related, sist each other in dis-

cellent archers, and, ing tribes of Siberia ed arrows for the difchase.

f a small stature, and k-complexioned, with the Samoïedes; some ve a fairer skin and y are a good-natured, and though they are heir smoky huts are ose of the Norwegian

iedes, the women are dition, the father aler in marriage to the rice is very different, rding to the circumfor while the rich r for his child, the irrel-skins and dried

p · · · CHAPTER CXLVIII.

INDIA.

THE SOWRARS AND KHONDS.

LOCALITY OF THE SOWRAH TRIBE - GENERAL APPEARANCE - THE TARTAR CHARACTER OF THE FEA-TURES -- DRESS OF THE MEN, THEIR SCANTY COSTUME AND PLENTIFUL ORNAMENTS -- CURIOUS EAR-RINGS — DRESS OF THE WOMEN — MODE OF OBTAINING CLOTHES FOR WINTER USE — WEAPONS OF THE SOWRAHS — THEIR COURAGE, AND THE APPREHENSION WHICH THEY EXCITE — A SOWRAH WEDDING - RELIGIOUS SYSTEM OF THE SOWRAHS - THEIR TRUTHFULNESS - THE KHONDS -DRESS AND APPEARANCE -- THE KHOND POCKET -- FRATURES OF THE WOMEN -- THE MERIAM SACRIFICE AND ITS OBJECT -- PROCURING OF THE VICTIM -- VARIOUS MODES OF PERFORMING THE SACRIFICE - SUBSTITUTE FOR THE MERIAH - STRANGE USE OF BRACELETS - THE MERIAHS' INDIFFERENCE TO THEIR PATE - INFANTICIDE - WEAPONS OF THE KHONDS - DEATH OF A BEAR - PRIDE OF THE KHONDS - SUPERSTITION - BELIEF IN THE POWER OF TRANSFORMATION -A KHOND MARRIAGE.

THE reader may remember that the Anda- country about lat 18° 30' N., and long. 72° man Islands trench closely upon the shores of India, thus bringing closely together the two phases of utter savagery that never has advanced in the scale of humanity, and of a civilization which has advanced to the utmost limits of which it is capable. In the following pages I propose to give a brief account of various phases of Indian life, throwing most emphasis upon those which trench least upon civilization, as being most akin to the objects of this work.

From the figures which illustrate this country, and which are all taken from photographs, the reader will notice the very distinct type of man which is exhibited throughout India; and though in some of the tribes there is a facial resemblance to the Australian type, and in others to the Mongolian, it is impossible to mistake an entire figure in either instance. We will begin with those parts of India which are the least civilized, and in which the inhabitants retain most of their aboriginal manners and cus-

THERE is a remarkable hill tribe of India which deserves a short description, as the people seem to have preserved the origihal characteristics of their race better than any other inhabitants of the country. They 30 E.

The Sowrahs are a tolerably good-looking tribe, some of the girls being even hand-some, were not their faces disfigured by the nose rings, of which one woman will often wear three. The men, as is the case with all the Indian tribes, are slenderly built, and appear to be devoid of muscles, especially in the legs. This apparent slightness, however, conceals great muscular power, as has often been shown in the skirmishes which their predatory habits constantly entail upon them. In one of these skirmishes, a Sowrah who had been taken prisoner suddenly snatched a bayonet out of the hands of his captor, and bent the blade double.

There is about the features of the Sowrahs a decidedly Tartar look, which increases with age, and is marked most strongly in the men. Some photographs of them now before me exhibit this characteristic very distinctly marked, and in one case so strongly that, but for color and the mode of dressing the hair, the face might easily be mistaken for those of a genuine Tartar. Indeed, Mr. Hooper, from whose paper this account is condensed, thinks that

they may have a Tartar origin. One remarkable point about the Sowrahs is, that they have no distinction of caste, are called Sowrahs, and live in a tract of though they are divided into two distinct

classes, the Hill Sowrahs and the Sowrahs stomach and legs, so that the wounds are of the Plain. The latter are comparatively always dangerous, and generally mortal. civilized, and live in villages, and it is only of the former that this work will treat. The dress of the Sowrahs is primitive

enough. The men wear nothing but the "languti," i. e. a narrow strip of cloth passing round the waist, through the legs, and tucked into the waistband. They are, however, very fond of ornaments, though they care so little about dress, and have their necks loaded with beads, and their ears and nostrils filled with rings. A photograph of one of these men shows that he is wearing no less than twenty-seven bead necklaces, as well as a broad brass collar. Besides the ordinary ear-rings, he wears an ornament which seems rather popular among the Sowrahs. A hole is bored in the upper part of the ear, and through it is passed one end of a string almost four inches in length, to the other end of which is attached a glittering bead about as large as a walnut. Some of the Sowrahs also thread small beads upon the string.

The hair of the men is allowed to grow to considerable length, and on festival days it is gathered into a knot at the back of the head, and adorned with feathers, mostly those of the peacock. This mode of dressing the hair gives a very effeminate look to the countenance, and on seeing a photo-graph of the face alone, especially if it be that of a young man, it is not very easy at a hasty glance to discover whether it is the

portrait of a man or woman.

The dress of the women consists of a cloth wrapped round the waist. Those women who have been photographed wear long calico cloths wrapped round them from shoulder to knee after the ordinary Indian fashion; but it is evident that they have borrowed these cloths for the occasion, and so, after the custom of all uncivilized peo-ple, have contrived, through anxiety to look their best, to baffle the real object of the photographer, i. e. to represent them as they really appear. Like the men, they wear an abundance of necklaces, and also are fond of simple bracelets, consisting of broad metal bands wound spirally round the wrists. The hair is parted down the middle, but no particular care is expended upon it.

When the colder weather comes on, and the Sowrahs want more clothing, they do not make it, but have recourse to the simple plan of waylaying travellers, killing them, and taking their garments. In these robberies, as well as in the skirmishes to which they often tend, the Sowrahs chiefly use the bow and arrow. The bow is a comparatively weak one, only being a yard or so in length, and having a string made of the outer coating of the bamboo. The arrows are of

stomach and tegs, so that the wounds are always dangerous, and generally mortal.

They also carry a kind of battle-axe. They are a brave as well as a warlike people, and are the terror of the inhabitants of the plains. Even the Khonds, who will be presently described, ready as they are to fight among each other, and skilled as they are among each other, and skilled as they are in the use of the bow and the battle-axe, stand in awe of the Sowrahs, and do not like to be drawn into a quarrel with them. They are especially afraid of these enemies, because the favorite mode of attack with the Sowrahs is to make a raid under cover of night, and, after securing all the plunder they can seize, and doing all the harm in their power, to return to their hill fastnesses as rapidly as they issued from them.

General Campbell thinks that their mode of life may have something to do with this superiority, and that their more abstemious and less dissipated life renders them stronger and more enduring than their self-indulgent neighbors. In some places, Sowrahs and Khonds dwell together in tolerable amity, but both of the tribes, although they may derive their origin from the same source, and both assert themselves to be the aboriginal inhabitants of the land, and to have a right to its possession, preserve their own characteristic differences so rigidly that there is no difficulty in distinguishing a Sowrah

from a Khond.

THE ceremony of marriage among the Sowrahs, illustrated on the following page, is thus described by Mr. Hooper: young man, or his friends for him, having selected a bride, messengers are sent to her parents, and finally the young man goes, bearing a pot of toddy, or other present. If the consent of the parents is obtained, the ceremony is commenced by fixing three posts in the ground, between which the bride and bridegroom, with their respective friends, assemble, and a feast is commenced at which nearly every person gets drunk upon toddy.
"The bride and bridegroom sit together,

while turmeric water is poured on their heads. Presents of cloth, beads, rings, etc., are exchanged, fowls, and if possible sheep, are sacrificed to propitiate the demons, and the flesh is then cooked, made up into balls with some sort of grain, and distributed among the party. On these occasions they all join in a dance, which seems to consist principally in hopping from one leg to the other, at each movement snapping their fingers and uttering an ejaculation, while at intervals the whole of the dancers come

bumping together, and then separate.

"If the parents of the bride refuse to conlength, and having a string made of the outer coating of the bamboo. The arrows are of reed, armed with a flat, many-barbed iron head. The Sowrahs always lie in wait for their victims, and direct their aim at the that the wounds are d generally mortal, md of battle-axe. They a warlike people, and he inhabitants of the onds, who will be presely as they are to fight d skilled as they are in the battle-axe, stand in and do not like to be with them. They are these enemies, because track with the Sowrahs er cover of night, and, plunder they can seize, in their power, to reesses as rapidly as they

thinks that their mode thinks to do with this their more abstemious renders them stronger an their self-indulgent o places, Sowrahs and er in tolerable amity, is, although they may om the same source, elves to be the aborige land, and to have a 1, preserve their own the sor or girlly that there tinguishing a Sowrah

marriage among the the following page, Mr. Hooper: "A ends for him, having engers are sent to her young man goes, bear-ther present. If the is obtained, the cerey fixing three posts in which the bride and r respective friends, commenced at which ets drunk upon toddy. legroom sit together, is poured on their oth, beads, rings, etc., and if possible sheep, iate the demons, and d, made up into balls ain, and distributed these occasions they ich seems to consist from one leg to the ment snapping their ejaculation, while at then separate.

e bride refuse to cont frequently happens e bridegroom watch if the girl is found carry her off. The en pursue and attack



(1.) A SOWRAH MARRIAGE. (See page 1386.)



(2.) MERIAH SACRIFICE. (See page 1391.)



the of full it.

the interpolation and a stem of case of case to have that of case of

In the the ren like the ren like the descend and to I modifie savage in the plain selves made round in front, few cigale. If with a p The with a p T

the opposite party, but, even though successful in retaking her, they are prohibited by their customs from giving her in marriage to any one else. Should such a thing be attempted, the parties would have to fight it out in a more serious manner with bows and arrows."

The reader will doubtless recognize the similarity of these marriage rites to those which are practised by savage tribes in many

parts of the world.

In the account of the wedding, the propitiation of the demons is mentioned. This is the key to their religious system, such as it is, and ea ins the reason for the absence of caste. The Sowrahs of the Plains seem to have a rather better religious system, but that of the Hill Sowrahs is simply demonolatry. They seem to have but little notion of worship, the only ceremonies which have been observed taking place at harvest time. When the crops reach maturity, the owners set small stones upright in the earth as emblems of the presiding demons, and lay before them little heaps of each crop. After the offerings have remained there for some little time, they are consumed at a feast to which the proprietor of the crops invites his relatives and friends.

When a Sowrah dies, his body is burned, the sames buried, and a small building erected over the spot. Five days after the burial a pot of toddy is laid on the grave, round which are placed a number of leaves round which are placed a number of least of representing the ancestors of the deceased. A little toddy is poured upon each leaf, and the remainder is drunk by the people the remainder is drunk by the people of th who have assisted at the ceremony. somewhat similar rite, but accompanied with feasting, is celebrated at the end of the first

and fourth years after burial.

According to General Campbell, they do not destroy their female infants, as is done by too many of the Indian tribes, neither do they practise human sacrifice. Yet they will sometimes participate in the remarkable Meriah sacrifice, which will presently be described, and will travel some distance to do so. They do not, however, seem to attach very great importance to the rite, and when General Campbell remonstrated with them on the subject, they at once promised to abandon it, and not even to be present as spectators.

Perhaps the most characteristic trait of the Sowrahs is their absolute truthfulness, which, according to Mr. Hooper, is the result from their want of capacity to invent a lie.

THE KHONDS.

In the now renowned district of Orissa live | These, however, are mostly reserved for the the remarkable tribes called Khonds, who, like the Sowrahs, appear to be immediately descended from the aboriginal inhabitants, and to have retained, though in a somewhat modified form, several of the customs of their savage forefathers, the chief of which will be briefly described.

The Khonds are active, wiry, and of much darker complexion than the inhabitants of the plains, and neither sex trouble themselves much about clothing. The men wear seves much about clothing. The men wear a few yards of coarse cotton round their waits, a separate piece dyed red hanging down behind like a tail. Their hair is allowed to grow to its full length, and is twisted round and round the head, and fastened in a knot in front, in which the Khond always keeps a few cigars made of tobacco rolled in a green led. He generally decorates this top-knot with a piece of red cloth and feathers

The women wear a rather large cloth round their loins, and decorate themselves with vast quantities of beads and other ornaments, among which the most conspicuous are some heavy bracelets, which are little more than thick brass bands twined round their wrists. Among some of the tribes, these ornaments are put to a very tragical use, as we shall presently see. Slips of red cloth are conidered very fashionable ornaments by the Khond women, and in some cases strings of copper coins are worn by way of necklaces.

children. There is some excuse for the anxiety of the Khond women to make the best of themselves, as they are very inferior to the men in appearance, being short, stumpy, and so plain in features, that they are pronounced by General Campbell to be absolutely repulsive. Some photographs, however, which are now before me, do not give this impression. Perhaps these women were selected for their good looks.

They are divided into many tribes, and as a rule live in villages varying in population from forty to ten times the number. We will now proceed to the manners and customs of the Khond tribes.

THROUGHOUT the whole of Khondistan there is a system of human sacrifice, varying exceedingly in detail according to the locality, but agreeing in all principal points. There is one point especially which seems to be the very essence of the sacrifice, and which is common to all the tribes. The victim, or Meriah, must be bought with a price. Should a captive be taken in war, he may not be offered as a Mariah by his capter, but he may offered as a Meriah by his captor, but he may be sold for that purpose, and will then be accepted by the priests.

There is no restriction of age, sex, or caste, but adults are thought more acceptable because they are more costly, and the healthy more likely to propitiate the gods than the

sick or feeble. That the Meriah should be he is dead. The officiating priest or zaid sacrificed is thought an absolutely necessary then cuts off a small piece of the fiesh of the condition for the prosperity of every under-taking, but especially for the growth of the crops, and the Khonds therefore use every endeavor to secure a succession of victims. Sometimes they purchase children from their parents or relations when they have fallen into poverty, but, as a rule, they are stolen by a set of robber tribes called Pannos, who decoy them into the hills, seize them, and sell them to the Khonds. It is rather remarkable that although the Khonds avail themselves of the services of the Pannoos, and are very glad to purchase victims, they bear an intense hatred and contempt toward them, and, except in the way of business, will have no dealings with them.

The Meriah victims have no reason to com-

plain of their lot, with the one exception that it must soon come to an end. They are well fed and kindly treated, and, with the ruling fatalism of the Oriental character, generally resign themselves to their fate, and make no efforts to escape. Often a Meriah girl is married to a Khond man, and allowed to live until she has borne children. These, as well as herself, are liable to be sacrificed, but must never be offered in the village wherein they were born. In order to avoid this difficulty, the various towns agree to exchange their Meriah children.

The mode of sacrificing the Meriah is so exceedingly variable that it will be necessary to give a short abstract of the various modes. In the first place, the Meriah must always be sacrificed openly in the sight of the peo-ple, and this rule is absolute throughout all

In Goomsur, the sacrifice is offered to the Earth-god, Tado Pennor, who is represented by the emblem of a peacock. When the time is fixed, the victim is selected, and for a month there is much rejoicing, feasting, and dancing round the Meriah, who is abundantly supplied with food and drink, and is in all appearance as merry and unconcerned as any of the people. On the day previous to the sacrifice a stout pole is set up, having on its top the peacock emblem of Tado Pennor, and to it is bound the Meriah. The people then dance round him, saying, in their chants, that they do not murder the victim, but sacrifice one who was bought with a price, and that therefore no sin rests with them. As the Merish is previously intoxicated with toddy, he can give no answer, and his silence is taken as consent to his sacrifice.

Next day he is anointed with oil, and carried round the village, after which he is brought to the peacock post, at the foot of which is a small pit. A hog is then killed, and the blood poured into the pit and mixed with the soil, so as to form a thick mud. The Meriah, who has been previously made sense-

victim and buries it near the pit, as an offering to the earth, and, as soon as he has done so, all the spectators rush upon the body, hack it to pieces, and carry off the fragments to bury them in their fields as a propitation to the earth deities who produce the crops. Revolting as this custom is, it is much more merciful than most modes of Meriah sacrifice, inasmuch as suffocation is not a death involving much physical pain, and the victim has been previously deprived of his senses.

In Boad, the Meriah is taken round the village, when every one tries to procure one of his hairs, or to touch his lips with their fingers so that they may anoint their heads with the sacred moisture. After being drugged into insensibility, he is taken to the fatal spot, where he is strangled by placing his neck between the two halves of a split bamboo, the ends of which are then brought together by the priests. The head priest next breaks the bones of the arms and legs with his axe, and when he has done so, the

body is cut to pieces as in Goomsur.

In Chinna Kimeday a grotesquely cruel mode of sacrifice is employed. In lieu of the peacock which is used at Goomsur, a large wooden figure of an elephant is placed on the post, and revolves on a pivot. Meriah is tied to the extended proboscis of the elephant, and, amid the yells of the spectators, is whirled round as fast as the figure can be turned. In this case the Meriah is not drugged. At a signal from the officiating zani, the crowd rush on the Meriah with their knives, and in a few moments hack him to pieces as he is tied, still living, on the elephant

General Campbell, while executing his mission of mercy in Khondistan, saw as many as fourteen of their elephant images, all of which he caused to be pulled down and destroyed by the baggage elephants attached to his force, so that the Khonds might see that those venerated emblems of a cruel worship were powerless even against the animals which they simulated. His task was naturally a difficult one, as it involved the abolition of a rite which had existed from time immemorial, and which no amount of reasoning could persuade them to be wrong, much less criminal. So deeply was it ingrained in their nature, that their only idea of his object in setting free so many hundred Meriahs was, that he might sacrifice them on his own account, in order to bring back water into a large tank which he was thought to have constructed for the use of his elephanta.

In this very place, a most singular circumstance occurred. The English officer was told that a sacrifice was being actually per-Meriah, who has been previously made sense-less from intoxication, is thrown into the pit, with his face pressed into the mire until He instantly started off with an armed party,

arme man they TOSCU Th told. out. broke appoi a hap we b aged over

Let u

old n

round

emplo

In

and

com tual

to gi

of Me them consec detect ing th Meria the vie the he the ha in this strang ready is then each p it on a of the In P

boos, to marks, where . inhabit moniou fice, wh their h front de days are buried. al, until Bund the peop system.

ceeding

stoned.

this dis Meriah. force, fle tains. that the sacrifice. haste th sacrificia hanging iciating priest or zani near the pit, as an offeras soon as he has done rush upon the body, carry off the fragments fields as a propitiation who produce the crops.

com is, it is much more

codes of Meriah sacrifice, on is not a death inal pain, and the victim eprived of his senses. In is taken round the ne tries to procure one ch his lips with their nay anoint their heads isture. After being ility, he is taken to the strangled by placing two halves of a split hich are then brought ets. The head priest of the arms and legs

n he has done so, the s in Goomsur. y a grotesquely cruel employed. In lieu of s used at Goomsur, a an elephant is placed lves on a pivot. The extended proboscis of d the yells of the spec-d as fast as the figure is case the Meriah is al from the officiating on the Meriah with w moments hack him d, still living, on the

while executing his Khondistan, saw as neir elephant images, to be pulled down baggage elephants so that the Khonds enerated emblems of owerless even against simulated. His task t one, as it involved which had existed and which no amount ersuade them to be inal. So deeply was ature, that their only etting free so many that he might sacriaccount, in order to large tank which he astructed for the use

ost singular circum-English officer was being actually pera young and handr sixteen years old, with an armed party,

and found the offering of the Meriah already complete, and nothing wanting but the ac-tual sacrifice. The 'ged priest was ready to give the signal, and the surrounding peo-ple were mad with excitement, when the armed party came to the rescue, and de-manded the girl. The Khonds, furious as they were, found that they dared not risk a collision, and so the party retired with the rescued victim.

The remainder of the story has yet to be told. Scarcely were the English soldiers out of sight than the assembled Khonds broke out into loud murmurings at their disappointment. At last one of them hit upon a happy thought. "Why," said he, "abould we be debarred from our sacrifice? See our aged priest. Seventy summers have passed over his head—what further use is he? Let us sacrifice him." And forthwith the old man was tied on the elephant, spun round, and cut to pieces.

In Maji Deso another mode of sacrifice is employed. They do not keep a large supply of Meriahs, as do most of the tribes, but buy them immediately before the sacrifice. The consequence is, that it is very difficult to detect them, except in the very act of offering the victim. Their mode of killing the Meriah is as follows. The Khonds surround the victim, and beat him on the head with the victain, and beat fifth on the fleat with the heavy metal bracelets, which they are in the habit of wearing. Mostly they kill him in this way, but if they fail in doing so, they strangle him with a split bamboo, as has al-ready been described. The flesh of the back is then cut into long and narrow strips, and each person carries off a strip and suspends it on a pole, which he thrusts into the bed of the stream which waters his fields.

In Patna, the mode of sacrifice varies exceedingly. In some cases the victim is stoned, in others beaten to death with bamboos, together with other barbarous modes of putting to death. General Campbell remarks, that in this district there are places where sacrificing and non-sacrificing tribes inhabit the same village. They live har-moniously together until the time of sacrifice, when the non-sacrificing tribes retire to their houses, and never pass through the front door of their dwellings until seven days are over, and the remains of the Meriah buried. After that time, all goes on as usual, until the next sacrifice takes place.

Bundari appears to be the place where the people adhere most firmly to the Meriah system. When General Campbell visited this district, they refused to give up the Meriah, and on the near approach of his

suspended beside it. The mode of sacrifice empilyed in this district is thus described:—

"The sacrifice which had taken place, and which is called Junnah, is performed as follows, and is always succeeded by the sacrifice of three other human victims, two to the sun to the sast and west, and one in the centre, with the usual barbarities. A stout wooden poot is firmly fixed in the ground. At the foot of it a narrow grave is dug, and to the top of the poet the victim is firmly fastened by the long hair of his head. Four assistants hold his outstretched arms and legs, the body being suspended horizontally assistants hold his outstretched arms and legs, the body being suspended horizontally over the grave, with the face toward the earth. The officiating sani, or priest, standing on the right side, repeats the following invocation, at intervals backing with his sacrificing kuife the back part of the shricking victim's neck: victim's neck:

"" O mighty Manicksoro, this is your fea-tal day (to the Khonds the sacrifice is Meriah, to the Rajahs, Junnah). On account of this sacrifice you have given to Rajahs countries, guns, and swords. The sacrifice we now offer, you must eat; and we pray that our battle-axes may be turned into swords, and our bows and arrows into gunpowder and balls, and if we have any quarrels with other tribes, give us the victory, and preserve us from the tyranny of Rajahs, and other offi-

"Then, addressing the victim, he added, that we may enjoy prosperity, we offer you a sacrifice to our god Manicksoro, who will immediately eat you, so be not grieved at our slaying you. Your parents were aware when we purchased you from them for sixty gunties (articles) that we did it with intent to sacrifice you; there is, therefore, no sin on our heads, but on those of your parents. After you are dead, we shall perform your

obsequies."

This speech being concluded, the head of the victim is severed from the body, and allowed to hang from the post until it is also suseaten by wild beasts. The knife is also suspended from the post, and allowed to remain there until the three additional sacrificant there until the three additional sacrificant have been offered, when it is removed with many ceromonies. Eight of these posts were found in the village, and were all destroyed.

It is this mode of sacrifice which is shown It is this mode of sacrifice which is shown in the illustration on page 1387. In the centre is seen the aged priest in the act of sacrificing the Meriah, which in this case is a young girl. Her head is supported by her long hair, which is tied to the top of the post, and her body is held horizontally by the four assistants, who each grasp a hand or a foot. On the right hand is shown a post, to which hangs the head of the first sacrificed Meriah, and on the other side is another victim bound by the hair to the post, Meriah, and on the near approach of his force, fied to their hiding-places in the mountains. As he approached Bundari, he found that the people had been actually offering a sacrifice, and that they had gone off in such laste that they had left behind them the sacrificial post with the head of a victim hanging to it by the hair, and the fatal knife

One circumstance connected with the Meriah sacrifice is rather remarkable, namely, the indifference to their fate that seems to possess the victims. One young man, a Meriah, said that it was better to be sacrificed among his own people and to give parties the gods included, were satisfied ficed among his own people, and to give them pleasure, than to live upon the plains. The natives believe that this indifference is caused by the Meriah food, a mixture of rice, turmeric, and other ingredients, prepared with certain magical ceremonies. Even the with certain magical ceremonies. Even the Meriahs themselves have this belief. For example, three young women were hired by a seller of salt fish to carry his goods among the Khonds, and when he got them there, the treacherous dealer sold not only the fish but the women. Twice the victims attempted to escape, but were recaptured, and after the second attempt, the Khonds fed them on Meriah food, when they became reconciled to their fate, and made no further efforts to

Other ties seem to have their effect on the Meriahs. Sometimes a man wishes to buy a Meriah, that being a very meritorious act; but the cost is so great, amounting on an average to sixty-five rupees, that the Khond is almost reduced to poverty. Under such circumstances, he is unable to marry, inasmuch as he cannot pay the heavy price which is demanded of a bridegroom. Accordingly, he buys a Meriah girl, and takes her as his wife until the time when she may

be required for sacrifice. It has already been mentioned that children are sold by their parents as Meriahs. This seems so cruel and heartless a system. that some explanation ought to be offered. It is very seldom that such a purchase is made, unless the parents be very poor, and fear that they shall not be able to provide their children with food. In such cases they argue that it is better for the child to be nouras a sacrifice to the delties, than to die as a sacrifice to the delties, than to perish by degrees of starvation. Moreover, it is considered rather a meritorious action for a parent to devote a child to the gods, and, when it is done, the parents are very proud of such children, and regard them with respect and admiration as belonging to the deities.

Another reason for the continuance of the Meriah sacrifice is the slight regard in which the Khonds hold human life, sacrifleing that which we consider as priceless because they are indifferent to it, not only with regard to.

others, but with regard to themselves. That the custom of propitiating the deities of agriculture with living sacrifices should be entirely abolished could not be expected, and General Campbell found that the best mode of extinguishing human sacrifice was to induce the Khonds to substitute that of a to induce the Khonds to substitute that of a beast. This was done in many cases, the sacrificers apologizing to the god for the substitution, and begging him, if he should be

parties, the gods included, were satisfied.

A very similar custom was once prevalent among certain tribes of the Lower Amazon, The name of these tribes was Tapuyos, but this title has now been given to all the in-habitants of the Lower Amazon district, habitants of the Lower Amazon district. Prisoners taken in war by them were reserved for sacrifice. They were treated with extreme kindness, fed in the most liberal manner, so that they might be plump and fat, and were provided with wives. They were generally allowed to live for several years, until their wives had borne children. They were then taken to the place of sacrifice, and killed with a single blow of a clubfice, and killed with a single blow of a club; their children being carefully reared, for the purpose of undergoing a similar fate after they had grown up.

Even without reference to the Meriah system, the Khonds are in the habit of killing their female children. This custom has arisen partly from the fear of poverty, and partly from the system on which marriages are conducted. The Khonds dislike marrying among themselves, and seek their wives among distant tribes, alleging as a reason that they can purchase them at a cheaper rate. But General Campbell tried to show them that if they were to rear their own female children, they would find them much cheaper as wives, and recommended them, as a beginning, to marry their Meriah women, for whom a high price had already been paid.

In some of the hills of Chinna Kimedy, children of both sexes are put to death. As soon as a child is born, a priest is called to ascertain whether it is to live or die. To effect this purpose, he employs a plan very like the "Sortes Virgilianæ." He produces a book, and, after some prayers, thrusts an iron style at random among the leaves. He then reads the passage to which the style points, and if it be unfavorable, the child must die, or the fields would bear no more

The fatal edict having been pronounced, the child is placed in a new earthen vessel (which has been painted in red and black stripes), the cover is fastened down, and the jar is buried. Some flowers and rice are laid on the cover, and, after the earth is filled in, a fowl is sacrificed upon the poor little victim's grave.

BEFORE leaving these remarkable tribes, we will glance slightly at one or two of their most characteristic customs.

bear seve twee ouly the i four smal good Khoi mida cour actor rescu been weap than The of qu on a Pitch steal o them fight. ing as tagoni harm

delega purpos

surd sc

the re

the nu

and it

is equa

acknow

has be

use Can out ing

alig

prove i man wa acciden or bitte Pride charact land, an sell one even to on that to barte Pannoo member ally furi are but dignity,

no syster and amo any preju haps a di As to t the simp

18 practic fice. The

persons

professio

may pro:

th, not upon them, but he had suggested the o objection to this arcrops turned out well be supposed that all ded, were satisfied.

om was once prevalent of the Lower Amazon. ibes was Tapuyos, but in given to all the inwer Amazon district. var by them were re-They were treated with d in the most liberal might be plump and with wives. They ed to live for several is had borne children. to the place of sacri-single blow of a club; arefully reared, for the g a similar fate after

nce to the Meriah sysn the habit of killing i. This custom has fear of poverty, and a on which marriages honds dislike marryand seek their wives alleging as a reason e them at a cheaper mpbell tried to show to rear their own feuld find them much recommended them, ry their Meriah woprice had already

of Chinna Kimedy, re put to death. As a priest is called to to live or die. To employs a plan very anæ." He produces prayers, thrusts an ong the leaves. He to which the style favorable, the child would bear no more

been pronounced, new earthen vessel ed in red and black oned down, and the ers and rice are laid the earth is filled in, the poor little vic-

remarkable tribes, one or two of their ms.

y simple, consisting i to a gauntlet, the xe. The last is the Khonds, and in its

use they are wonderfully adroit. General Campbell mentions that a British officer was out in the evening for the purpose of shooting a bear, but only wounded the animal slightly, instead of killing it outright. The bear started for the hills, but was pursued by several Khonds, who overtook it, got between the hill and the bear and then a med several Khonds, who overtook it, got between the hill and the bear, and then, armed
ouly with their axes, attacked and hacked
the animal to pieces. These axes are about
four feet long in the handle, and have but
small heads. These, however, are made of
good steel, and in the practised hand of a
Khond the axe is a weapon much more formidable than it looks. This exhibition of
courage is the more remarkable, because the
actors in it were Meriah men who had been
rescued from sacrifice. The sword that has
been mentioned is a comparatively rare been mentioned is a comparatively rare weapon, and belongs rather to the Ooryahs than to the Khonds proper.

The Khond tribes seem to be rather fond of quarrelling among each other, and carry on a kind of desultory or guerilla warfare. Pitched battles they dislike, preferring to steal cattle from their opponents, and to kill them by stealth, to meeting them in open fact. fight. Indeed, they pride themselves on do-ing as much injury as possible to their an-tagonists, while receiving the least possible harm themselves. Accordingly, when the delegates of two inimical tribes meet for the purpose of restoring peace, some very absurd scenes take place. The umpires call upon the representatives of the tribes to declare the number of cattle stolen and men killed; the number of cattle stolen and men killed; and it is generally found that the latter item is equally balanced, neither party caring to acknowledge that a man of their own tribe has been killed, unless the adversaries can prove it. They cannot but admit that the man was killed, but attribute his death to accident, such as being carried off by a tiger, as hitten has a scale. or bitten by a snake.

Pride forms a great element in the Khond character. The people are fond of their land, and nothing can induce a Khond to land, and nothing can induce a Khond to sell one yard of ground to a foreigner, nor even to part with a single tree that grows on that soil. Generally, they are too proud to barter, but leave that business to the Pannoo tribes, by whom, as may be remembered, the Meriah victims are generally furnished. Among the Khonds there are but two employments worthy of their dignity, i. e. warfare and agriculture, and all persons are despised who carry on any other persons are despised who carry on any other profession or business, even though they profession or business, even though they may profit by it themselves. Yet there is no system of caste among them, such as we and among the Hindoos, neither have they any prejudice in regard of diet, except perps a dislike to milk.

As to the religion of the Khonds, it is of the simplest description, and their worship is practically comprised in the Meriah sacri-

cred images to be found in the hill districts, but no one seems to care or even to know much about them, and the priests, or media cine men, are as ignorant or carcless on the subject as the people in general. It ought to be mentioned that very elaborate accounts have been published respecting the religion of the Khonds, their vast army of deities, and their quadruple souls. But there is now no doubt that the information upon which these accounts were based was simply invented by the narrators in order to suit their own

Putting aside the Meriah system, the Khonds have several superstitions in which they firmly believe, and the strangest of them is their idea that certain human beings them is their idea that certain human beings can transform themselves into tigors. These persons are called "Pulta Bags," and are very much dreaded by the people, upon whose fears they intentionally play for the purpose of extortion. Knowing that the ignorant people believe them to be possessed of such a power, they extort food, clothing, and other property from them at intervals, and that they are noor, and unless supsaying that they are poor, and unless sup-plied with the necessaries of life, they will be forced to transform themselves into tigers,

and to carry off the cattle.
General Campbell mentions an instance where he was brought in contact with, or rather in opposition to, this superstition.
An excited crowd came to him, accompanied by several armed men, who guarded two women. One of the men then said that he and his son were in the jungle cutting firewood, when a tiger sprang upon the lad and carried him off. The father pursued the animal, shouting after it until it turned the corner of the rock, when it disappeared, and on the top of the rock were then seen the two women. The case was clear. These two women were Pulta Bags. While in the tiger form they had carried off his son, but, alarmed by his shouts, had hidden the body of the lad and resumed their human shapes.

On being questioned, the women acknowledged that the story was true, and that they did possess the power attributed to them. General Campbell then offered to release them, provided that they would transform themselves into tigers in his presence. This, to his attentions that they would transform themselves into tigers in his presence. to his astonishment, they agreed to do, pro-vided that he accompanied them to a neighboring jungle. Finding, however, that the English general was not so easily frightened as a Khond warrior, and that they would be taken at their word, they threw themselves at his feet, and acknowledged their

A remarkable instance of this belief is narrated by the same writer. A brave little Khond, belonging to the irregular force, was engaged in a conflict when several of the enemy were killed, among whom was one who was shot by his own hand. Instead of fice. There are certain very barbarous sa- being proud of his exploit, he was seized

with terror, declaring that the man whom he had killed was a Pulta Bag, and that he would assume the shape of a tiger and avenge himself. After the campaign was over, he obtained leave to visit his family, and, previous to his departure, he brought his uniform, asking that care might be taken of it, as he felt sure that he should never wear it again. He joined his family, and lived with them for some weeks, when, as he was watching his cattle, a tiger sprang on him, and wounded him so cruelly that he shortly died. Nothing could persuade him that the tiger was not the man whom he had wear it again. He joined his family, and lived with them for some weeks, when, as he was watching his cattle, a tiger sprang on him, and wounded him so cruelly that he shortly died. Nothing could persuade him that the tiger was not the man whom he had that the tiger was not the man whom he had shot, and the event only strengthened the hold which the superstition has on the native mind.

at him by the women. When he reaches the boundaries of his own village, he is supposed to have won his bride, while the asve mind.

Marriage is generally celebrated at the own dwellings,



Bows and Quiver. (From my Collection.) (Gen mage 1401.)

THE GHO ER FIC BO TIC

> MO SIR GRI

ONE of tribe, is markable ence to ery," and my collec on page : curved. my own one, mean of an inc is thinned has a cu that of th as well as at one end loward th blade is fo shown by to my kno thirty year among oth with rust, face is bur turning it polished s room. Th markable forms the 1 size of the

This small: dian sword bly because the stores secured for that time, elenty of food for the ng them prevails the the bride. The bridegirl and runs off with ber of young women from him, or at least however, is protected oung men, who keep a their midst, and do m from the bamboos, iles which are hurled . When he reaches own village, he is sup-bride, while the as-at full speed to their

CHAPTER CXLIX.

INDIA - Continued

WEAPONS.

THE CHOOREA TRIBE AND THEIR PAVORITE WHAPON -- BLADE AND CURVED HANDLE OF THE "ECON-ERY" - MODE OF STRIKING WITH IT - THE ADDITIONAL KNIVES - MAKING "WOOTZ" STEEL-FIGHTING A TIGER—THE HUNTER'S NECKLACE—ROBBERS OF INDIA — THE BURGLAR, THE BUR-ROWER-THE PURSE CUTTER -AN INGENIOUS THEFT - STRANGE MODE OF ESCAPING OBSERVA-TION - VARIOUS BOWS -- THE PELLET BOW AND ITS DOUBLE STRING -- THE REVERSED BOW AND Mode of using it—stringing the bow—the various arrows—armor and chain mail— SIR HOPE GRANT'S SPECIMEN - INDIAN SWORDS AND MODE OF USING THEM - VARIOUS DAC-GERS -- THE "CHARRA" OR QUOIT WEAPON.

ONE of the hill tribes, called the Ghoorka ordinary English soldier. My own hand is tribe, is worthy of notice, if only for the remarkable weapon which they use in preference to any other. It is called the kookence to any other. It is called the "kookery," and is of a very peculiar shape. One of the knives, drawn from a specimen in my collection, is given in illustration No. 2, on page 1403. As may be seen by reference to the drawing, both the blade and hitt are curved. The blade is very thick at the back, my own specimen, which is rather a small me, measuring a little more than a querter. one, measuring a little more than a quarter of an inch in thickness. From the back it is thinned off gradually to the edge, which has a curve of its own, quite different to that of the back, so that the blade is widest as well as thickest in the middle, and tapers so wen as thickest in the middle, and tapers at one end toward the hilt, and at the other loward the point. The steel of which the blade is formed is of admirable temper, as is shown by the fact that my specimen, which, to my knowledge, has not been cleaned for hirty years, but has been hung upon the wall manny other weapons is secreely toward. among other weapons, is scarcely touched with rust, and for the greater part of its surfice is burnished like a mirror. Indeed, on turning it about, I can see reflected upon its polished surface the various objects of the mom. The handle is made after a very remarkable fashion, and the portion which first the hilt is so small that it shows the itse of the hand for which it was intended. The hand for which it was intended. The possestwo smaller knives are used, of very smaller knives are used, of very smaller form, but apparently of inferior metal.

a small one, but it is too large even for the heavy sabre or "tulwar," while the handle of the kookery looks as if the weapon were of the kookery looks as if the weapon were intended for a boy of six or seven years old. Indeed, the Ghoorkas are so small, that their hands, like those of all Indian races, are very delicate, about the same size as those of an English boy of seven. The point of the kookery is as sharp as a needle, so that the weapon answers equally well for cutting or stabbing. In consequence of the great thickness of the metal, the blade is exceedingly heavy, and it is a matter of much woningly heavy, and it is a matter of much wonder how such tiny hands as those of the Ghoorkas can manage so weighty a weapon, which seems almost as much beyond their strength as does the Andamaner's gigantic bow to the dwarfish man who wields it. It may be imagined that a blow from such a may be imagined that a blow from such a weapon as this must be a very terrible one. The very weight of the blade would drive it half through a man's arm, if it were only allowed to fall from a little height. But the Ghoorkas have a mode of striking which respectively. sembles the "drawing" cut of the broad-sword, and which urges the sharp edge through flesh and bone alike.

TOTO COM

These are kept in little cases attached to the side of the kookery-sheath, just as is the case with the knives attached to a Highlander's dirk, or the arrangement of the Dyak sword, which has already been described in the artiwhich has already been described in the arti-cle upon Borneo. There is also a little flat leathern purse, with a double flap. This is pointed like a knife-sheath, and is kept in a pocket of its own fastened upon the larger sheath.

In the illustration the kookery is shown with all its parts. Fig. 1 shows the kookery in its scabbard, the top of the purse and the handles of the supplementary knives being just visible as they project from the sheaths. At Fig. 2 the kookery itself is drawn, so as to show the peculiar curve of the blade and the very small handle. Fig. 3 represents the purse as it appears when closed, and figs. 4 and 5 are the supplementary knives.

My own specimen, which, as I have already mentioned, is a small one, measures fifteen inches from hilt to point in a straight line, and twenty-one inches if measured along the curve of the back. Its weight is exactly twelve ounces. The knife is a very plain one, no ornament of any kind being used, and the maker has evidently contented himself with expending all his care upon the

This steel is made by the natives in a very simple but effectual manner. After smelting the iron out of magnetic ore, the Indian smith puts small pieces of it in a crucible, and mixes little bits of wood with them. He then covers the crucible with green leaves and plenty of clay, and puts it in his simple furnace. The furnace being lighted, a constant blast of air is driven through it for about three hours, at the expiration of which time the iron, now converted into cast-steel, is found in the form of a small cake at the bottom of the crucible. Wootz steel was at one time much used in England, and great numbers of these cakes were imported.

In the hands of an experienced wielder this knife is about as formidable a weapon as can be conceived. Like all really good weapons, its efficiency depends much more upon the skill than the strength of the wielder, and thus it happens that the little Ghoorka, a mere boy in point of stature, will cut to pieces a gigantic adversary who does not understand his mode of onset. The Ghoorka generally strikes upward with the kookery, possibly in order to avoid wound-ing himself should his blow fail, and possibly because an upward cut is just the one that can be least guarded against.

Years ago, when we were engaged in the many Indian wars which led at last to our Oriental empire, the Ghoorkas proved themselves most formidable enemies, as since they have proved themselves most invaluable allies. Brave as lions, active as mon-

keys, and fierce as tigers, the lithe, wiry little men came leaping over the ground to the attack, moving so quickly, and keeping so far apart from each other, that musketry was no use against them. When they came near the soldiers, they suddenly crouched to the ground, dived under the bayonets, struck upward at the men with their kookeries, ripping them open with a single blow, and then, after having done all the mischief in their power, darting off as rapidly as they had come. Until our men learned this mode of attack, they were greatly discom-fited by their little opponents, who got under their weapons, cutting or slashing with knives as sharp as razors, and often escaping unburt from the midst of bayonets. They would also dash under the bellies of the officers' horses, rip them open with one blow of the kookery, and aim another at the leg of the officer as he and his horse fell together.

Perhaps no better proof can be given of the power of the weapon, and the dexterity of the user, than the fact that a Ghoorka will not hesitate to meet a tiger, himself being armed with nothing but his kookery. He stands in front of the animal (see the next self with expending all his care upon the page), and as it springs he leaps to the left, delivering as he does so a blow toward the tiger. As the reader is aware, all animals of the cat tribe attack by means of the paw; and so the tiger, in passing the Ghoorka, mechanically strikes at him.

The man is well out of reach of the tiger's paw, but it just comes within the sweep of the kookery, and, what with the force of the tiger's stroke, what with the blow delivered by the man, the paw is always disabled, and often fairly severed from the limb. Furious with pain and rage, the tiger leaps round, and makes another spring at his little enemy. But the Ghoorka is as active as the tiger, and has sprung round as soon as he delivered his blow, so as to be on the side of the disabled paw. Again the tiger attacks, but this time his blow is useless, and the Ghoorka steps in and delivers at the neck or throat of the tiger a stroke which generally proves fatal.

The favorite blow is one upon the back of the neck, because it severs the spine, and the tiger rolls on the ground a lifeless mass. For so flerce is the tiger's fury, that, unless the animal is rendered absolutely powerless, rage supplies for a few moments the place of the ebbing life, and enables it to make a last expiring effort. All experienced hunters know and dread the expiring charge of a wounded lion or tiger, and, if possible, hide themselves as soon as they inflict the death wound. If they can do so, the animal looks round for its adversary, cannot see him, and at once succumbs, whereas, if it can espy its enemy, it flings all its strength into one effort, the result of which is frequently that the man and the tiger are found lying dead together.

r proof can be given of apon, and the dexterity e fact that a Ghoorka o meet a tiger, himself othing but his kookery. The animal (see the next ngs he leaps to the left, s so a blow toward the is aware, all animals of by means of the paw; passing the Ghoorka, at him.

at him.
t of reach of the tiger's
es within the sweep of
at with the force of the
with the blow delivne paw is always dissevered from the limb.
dd rage, the tiger leaps
ther spring at his little
oorka is as active as the
g round as soon as he
as to be on the side of
gain the tiger attacks,
ow is useless, and the
delivers at the neck or
stroke which generally

s one upon the back of vers the spine, and the da a lifeless mass. For fury, that, unless the olutely powerless, rage ments the place of the es it to make a last exerienced hunters know c charge of a wounded ssible, hide themselves the death wound. If himal looks round for see him, and at once it can espy its enemy, h into one effort, the uuently that the man



(1.) INGENIOUS RUSE OF BHEEL ROBBERS. (See page 1400.)



(2.) A GHOORKA ATTACKED BY A TIGER.

(See page 1396.)

with claws of the figure It is n and m upper well b specim in leng cumfer At Fig evident claw of differen Fgs. 4: the slot that in are of part widecoration Consequence succession and the consequence s

resign at AMON half-sava limited likely the prevail. one exis murder, ital offen may ther some cas-tain it is t thieves in The na wonderfu conjuring they turn

must be n a most val Inspectorhieves of
which it i
wonderful
thieves, ar
which the
For exa
lars, who
on of th
the wall at
lars were
hite the c
the wall, la
d'his perse
beach, ho
hee of gr
bel like a

"ertain w
for it somet

Many of these little hunters are decorated; with necklaces made from the teeth and claws of the animals which they kill. One claws or the animals which they kill. One of these necklaces is in my collection, and is figured in illustration No. 1, on page 1403. It is made of the spoils of various animals, tranged in the following way. The central upper canine teeth of a tiger. The man may wall be proud of this for it is a very fire. well be proud of this, for it is a very fine specimen, measuring five inches and a half in length, and more than three inches in circumference. This tooth is shown at Fig. 5. cumirence. This toom is shown at Fig. o. At Fig. 1 is a claw from a fore-foot of a tiger, evidently the same animal; and at Fig. 9 is a claw of the hind-foot. Figs. 2, 3, 7, 8 are differently sized teeth of the crocodile; and Figs. 4 and 6 represent claws from the foot of the sloth-bear. The reader may remember that in all uncivilized countries such spoils are of the highest value, and play the same part with regard to them, that titles and decorations do among more civilized nations. Consequently, it is almost impossible to procuro such ornaments, the natives having as strong objection to part with them as a holder of the Victoria Cross would have to resign at the same time his badge and a right to wear it.

Among men of such a stamp, leading a half-savage existence, with ideas necessarily limited to their own range of thought, it is likely that a strange sort of morality should prevail. We have already seen that there is one existing system in which treacherous murder, instead of being regarded as a capial offence, is exalted into a religion, and we may therefore expect that robbery may in some cases be considered as a virtue. Certain it is that there are no more accomplished thieves in the world than those of India.

The natives are justly celebrated for their wonderful powers of posture making and conjuring, and it is to be expected that, when they turn those powers to an evil use, they must be most dangerous opponents. Lately amost valuable report has been issued by the laspector-General of Prisons, relating to the bieves of Lower Bombay, in the perusal of which it is impossible to restrain a smile, so wonderfully ingenious are the devices of the which they are employed.

For example, there are the regular burghis, who completely carry out the description of the Scriptures, "breaking through the wall and stealing." Two of these burgters work together. One acts as sentinel, while the other gently bores a hole through the wall, large enough to admit the passage of his person. When he has completed the reach, he pushes through it a stick, with a

the house hears the miner at work, and quietly stands by the side of the hole, armed quietly stands by the side of the hole, armed with a sword or cudgel, with which he strikes at the head of the robber, as soon as it appears through the wall. Should the sham head be smashed by a blow from the inside, the thieves escape as fast as they can. If not, one of them crawls through the breach, steals all the property on which he can lay his hands, and returns to his comrade, who has been keeping careful watch. rade, who has been keeping careful watch, and will alarm him, should danger appear.

Other thieves appear to be more harmless, though they probably steal as much money as the borglars. They carry in their mouths a tiny knife, with a blade as sharp as that of a razor. They frequent the bazaars, mix with the crowd, and contrive to feel for the money which is wrapped up in the girdle. with the crowd, and contrive to feel for the money which is wrapped up in the girdle. With their little knives, they gently cut the cloth, noiselessly extract the money, and slink off into the midst of the crowd, where they can scarcely be detected. In short, they act precisely after the manner of our European cut-purses.

The most ingenious of all the thieves are those who get into the zenanas, or women's apartments, and steal their jewelry. As the reader is probably aware, the women's apartments, and steal their jewelry. ments are in the most central portion of the house, and are so carefully guarded that lit-tle precaution is taken with respect to the costly jewels with which the women deck themselves so abundantly. The Indian burglar knows of this wealth, and some-times manages to steal it. He digs a hole in the ground outside the walls of the house, and burrows under the foundation until he comes beneath the floor of the zenana. He then cautiously works his way upward, and so obtains admission into the apartment. But even when there his task is not completed, as a large portion of the jewelry consists of nose rings and bangles, or brace-lets. The skill of these thieves is now shown, for they will contrive to cut the rings and bangles, remove them from the wearers, and make good their escape with-out disturbing the sleeping women. These adroit burglars often commit the most daring robberies in the very midst of

vonderfully ingenious are the devices of the an army. Knowing the position of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents, they mark out that which is the resistance of the tents. dence of a great man, and creep silently toward it. Arrived at the tent, their sharp knife cuts a hole and they glide into the in-terior without making the slightest noise. Indeed, so wonderfully adroit are they, that even the very watch-dogs do not discover them, and a thief has been known actually to step over the body of a dog without dis-turbing the animal. They take an extraor-dinary pride in their skill, and have not the least objection to boasting of it. Once, an is pushes through to store, with a clinity print in their sain, and the store, who had been robbed of all best and whether the inmates are alarmed, his valuables, his clothing included, in the fit sometimes happens that the owner of course of a night, was talking to a robber,

a challenge as this could not but be accepted, and the officer laid a wager with the man that his blanket could not be stolen without arousing him.

Accordingly, one morning, when the officer awoke, he found his blanket missing. The thief came openly with the blanket, restored it, and told him how he had achieved the

theft. It was done by gently tickling the face and hands of the sleeping man, so that he involuntarily turned on his bed. As he moved, the thief gave the blanket a slight pull, and so by degrees "coaxed" it away without fairly awaking the sleeper.

When these thieves set about their task of robbery, they remove all their clothes, and rub themselves with oil. Round their neck is a slight string, which holds their razor-bladed knife, so that, if they should be detected, the pursuer has no hold of them; and even should he succeed in grasping them, the ready knife is used to sever his wrist and

to deal a fatal stab.

Then there are other thieves of altogether a sneaking and despicable character. burglars have, at all events, the redeeming points of audacity and ingenuity. The Mooches exhibit neither of these qualities, but act in a way that exactly resembles the proceedings of the gipsy thieves as described by Mr. Borrow. They lay poison on plantain leaves, and drop them about at night among the cattle. The bait is sure to be taken, and the dead cattle are thrown away next morning. This is exactly what the Mooches have expected, and they flay the dead cattle and sell their skins.

Sometimes a band of these thieves is pursued, and then the robbers are often driven to use all their ingenuity in evading their pursuers. One stratagem is marvellously clever. Should a company of these men succeed in reaching the jungle, there is no hope of capturing them; but when they find that they must be overtaken on a level plain, they are not without a mode of avoiding detection. As is the case in many hot countries, the ground is often cleared by fire, which destroys all the coarse, dry, rank herbage, and leaves it free for the fresh green blades that at the first rains shoot through the surface. In those spots where the grass is short, the fire does but little damage; but where it is long, the flames are powerful enough to destroy the small trees which grow upon them, and to leave nothing but a number of blackened stumps.

If the thieves think that they cannot pass the plain without being observed, they put in practice a ruse which they may have borrowed from the habits of many insects. They strip off all their clothes, place them and their weapons under their little round shields, which they disperse so as to look

who made very light of the exploit, and like stones, and then dispose themselves in boasted that if he chose he could steal the blanket from under him as he slept. Such nearly fleshless limbs bear the most exact such strange attitudes that their slender and nearly fleshless limbs bear the most exact resemblance to the blackened branches of which their bodies represent the trunks. In these attitudes they will remain fixed until the enemy has passed them, when they slip off as fast as they can to the nearest jungle. An illustration on page 1397 shows with what rare ingenuity, even artistic verisimilitude these rascals simulate the charred trunks and branches of the trees.

Before the English had become used to these manœuvres, a very ludicrous incident occurred. An officer, with a party of horse, was chasing a small body of Bheel robbers, and was fast overtaking them. Suddenly the robbers ran behind a rock or some such obstacle, which hid them for a moment, and, when the soldiers came up, the men had mysteriously disappeared. After an unavailing search, the officer ordered his men to dismount beside a clump of scorched and withered trees, and, the day being very hot, he took off his helmet and hung it on a branch by which he was standing. The branch in question turned out to be the leg of a Bheel, who burst into a scream of laughter, and flung the astonished officer to the ground. The clump of scorched trees suddenly became metamorphosed into men, and the whole party dispersed in different directions before the soldiers could recover from their surprise, carrying with them the officer's helmet by way of a trophy. This stratagem is not confined to one

tribe, or even one race, but is practised in many parts of the world where the country

is cleared by means of fire.

WE will now examine some of the weapons used by the Indians. I intentionally omit any description of their fire-arms, as such weapons are of a modern date, and the use of gunpowder has been imported from other countries. In the following pages will be described some of the most characteristic weapons of India.

The reader will probably notice that what ever may be their form, there is a nameles something which designates the country is which they were produced. No matte whether the weapon has belonged to a rick or a poor man, whether it be plain wood and iron, or studded with jewels and inlai with gold, the form remains the same, an there is about that form a graceful eleganc which is peculiar to India. Take, for ex-ample, that simplest of weapons, the kookery and see how beautiful are the curves of the satisfy the eye. In the same manner we shall find that, with all the weapons the will be figured, there is always a graceful. curve or a well-balanced arrangement lines.

We will begin with the bow and arrow

In ing ree the Th bul stri apa 80 1 8 C stri whe tigh T

A b

and

do ap

fing encl is t strir finge obta and then bow. favor some amus enwa Wom to pic

Th much ing s that w the o amou differe in wh other. 1 of which is a si of we

Water

nally, s of exa flatten trimme the san and the and are care, th for som horn.

manne

A h

in their laid we kneade en dispose themselves in les that their slender and abs bear the most exact blackened branches of represent the trunks. In sed them, when they slip an to the nearest jungle, page 1397 shows with , even artistic verisimilinulate the charred trunks

trees

ish had become used to very ludicrous incident r, with a party of horse, body of Bheel robbers, taking them. Suddenly ind a rock or some such them for a moment, and, came up, the men had peared. After an unofficer ordered his men a clump of scorched and , the day being very hot, met and hung it on a he was standing. The turned out to be the leg burst into a scream of the astonished officer to clump of scorched trees etamorphosed into men. y dispersed in different

ne soldiers could recover carrying with them the vay of a trophy. is not confined to one race, but is practised in corld where the country

of fire. nine some of the weapons

s. I intentionally omit their fire-arms, as such odern date, and the use en imported from other following pages will be the most characteristic

obably notice that what rm, there is a nameles signates the country it produced. No matte has belonged to a rich ther it be plain wood with jewels and inlaid remains the same, an orm a graceful elegand o India. Take, for ex of weapons, the kookery d how completely the the same manner w e is always a graceft anced arrangement

h the bow and arrow

Many kinds of bows are used by the Hindoes, the most simple of which is made from a piece of male bamboo. Even this simple weapon is not complete in the eyes of an weapon is not complete in the cycs of an Indian without some ornament, and accordingly it is bound at intervals by belts of split reed drawn tightly round it, and tied up at the back of the bow in a sort of rosette form. This kind of bow is often used for shooting bullets or stones. For this purpose two strings are placed side by side, and kept spart by a little piece of wood near one end, so their in the wildle three transfers. so that in the middle there is an interval of a couple of inches between the strings. strip of leather rather more than an inch in width is then sewed to the strings, so that when the bow is bent the leather is stretched tightly between them.

The bow is used in the following manner. A bullet or stone is placed on the leather, and the two strings are grasped by the fore-finger and thumb of the right hand, so as to enclose the bullet in the leather. The bow is then drawn and aimed, and when the strings are released from the pressure of the fingers, they fly asunder and permit the bullet to escape. The precision that may be obtained by this weapon is really wonderful, and even Europeans complete. and even Europeans soon learn to pride themselves on their skill with the "pellet-bow." Squirrel shooting with this bow is a favorite amusement with many persons, and some of the natives of rank occasionally amuse themselves with shooting at the earthenware jars carried on the heads of the women, a successful shot smashing the jar to pieces, and deluging the women with the

water which had been contained in it.

There is another kind of bow which is
much used in different parts of Asia, varying somewhat in form and material, but smaller in principle. The bow is so formed that when it is unstrung it curves in exactly the opposite direction to the string. The amount of curvature varies considerably in different bows, the most perfect being that in which the two ends almost touch each other. The specimen which is shown in Fig. other. The spectmen which is shown in Fig. 1 of the illustration on page 1394, and which is drawn from a bow in my collection, is a singularly perfect example of this kind of weapon. It is made in the following

A horn of the buffalo is sawn longitudinally, so as to produce two tapering pieces of exactly the same size. These are then flattened by heat and pressure, and are trimmed until when bent they give exactly the same amount of curvature. The handle the same amount of curvature. The handle and are fitted to the horn with the greatest care, the wood which forms the tips running for some distance along the under side of the horn. After the handle and tips are fitted

sinews, and the horn seem to be altogether one substance. After this part of the work is finished, the whole of the bow is covered with repeated layers of a kind of glue, which is very carefully smoothed and polished. The bow is practically complete, but the maker is not satisfied unless he adds plenty maker is not satisfied unless he adds pienty of ornament. This is always a sort of conventional flower pattern, gilt on a brilliantly colored background. I possess several such bows, in each of which there is a dissimilarity of color and pattern. In the bow now larity of color and pattern. In the bow now before us, the groundwork is vivid green and scarlet, on which are drawn the most elaborate patterns of flowers, leaves, and arabesques in gold. It is inpossible, on looking at the surface, not to admire both the beauty of the patterns and the excellence of the paint and varnish, which can be subjected to such violant treatment as is subjected to such violent treatment as is caused by the bending of the bow and shooting the arrow, and yet not be cracked to

pieces.

The elasticity of this bow is wonderful.
I have often tried to string it, but without effect, and indeed I never saw but one man, the late Colonel Hutchinson, of the Indian Army, who could do so. It is strung by passing it under one leg, bending it back sharply over the other leg, at the same time slipping the loop of the string into its notch. A groove passes along the back of the bow, so as to guide the string. When strung it assumes quite a different shape, and looks something like the bow which the ancient sculptors placed in the hands of Cupid. I regret that the bow could not be strung, so as to give two illustrations of the same bow in its different aspects.

The classical reader may perhaps remember that this weapon is exactly similar to the ancient Scythian bow. Reference is made to this shape by Athenœus (book x.) when an unlearned shepherd, trying to describe the letters which formed a name, said that "the third (i.e.c) was like a Scythian bow." This kind of bow was of horn, as indeed were most of the ancient bows.

The length of the bow above mentioned, measured along the back, is a little more than four feet, whereas the measurement across it as it appears when unbent is only nineteen inches. The reader will see how useful a bow of this description would be to a horseman, its peculiar curvature rendering it easy of carriage. It could even be carried along on the bridle arm, if required, so as to leave the sword hand at liberty, and in a moment could be strung when needed, by passing it under the leg as the rider sits on horseback. Small as this bow seems, almost indeed insignificant in appearance as a weapon, its performances in skilful hands are something marvellous. With one of these bows an arrow has been shot to a distance in their places, a great number of sinews are laid wet over the back of the bow, and kneaded so carefully that the wood, the

trement. And, although so powerful, it is wonderfully manageable. Colonel Hutchin-son told me that he once saw an archer shoot an arrow along a corridor, and send the mis-sile through a hole which a bullet had made in a pane of glass at the end of the cor-

Next comes a form of bow which is much more common than the preceding. In this bow the reflex curvature is strongly marked, though not so strongly as in the case of the weapon just described.

Several of these bows are in my collection, the handsomest of which was presented to me by J. Allen, Esq. This bow, with its case, its quiver, and score of arrows, is shown in Fig. 2 of illustration 0, on page 000. Measuring along the back, the bow is four feet five inches in length, whereas the space between the two tips is only twenty-eight inches. The color with which the bow is painted is bright scarlet, profusely covered with gilt flowers and arabesques, so that it is a more showy weapon at a distance than the previous specimen, though it is not nearly so handsome when closely examined, the patterns being larger and more roughly executed. The bow-string is made of some vegetable fibre, I think that of some species of aloe, - and is very thick, being composed of nine strands

twisted very closely together.
The case, quiver, and straps by which they are held have been once very splendid, being crimson velvet, so covered with gold embroidery that scarcely any part of the velvet is visible. The arrows are two feet three inches in length, and are very carefully made. The shaft is of reed, and to either end is fixed a piece of hard wood four inches in length. On one end of the shaft is fixed the point, which is a heavy and solid quadrangular piece of steel brought to a sharp point. The hard wood at the end receives the feathers, and is enlarged at the extreme end, so as to allow space for the nock or notch in which the thick bow-string is received. Both the pieces of hard wood are colored, that in which the point is fixed being simply green, but that at the other end being gilt, and covered with patterns in blue and scarlet.

This is the most common kind of arrow, but there are many varieties, of which I possess specimens. Several varieties are in many collections, the chief distinction being in the shape of the point. In most of them it is more or less quadrangular; though in some it is leaf-shaped, like a spear head, in others it is conical, and in others round and blunt. In one of the arrows the place of the lower piece of hard wood is taken by a solid piece of steel nearly four inches in length, and weighing about three ounces, looking something like a rather elongated

Whitworth bullet

The most primitive form of Indian arrow

The shaft is of wood, not of reed, and the head is deeply barbed, and tied to the shaft with fibre, exactly as is done with the flintheaded arrows, which this weapon almost precisely resembles in form, though not in material. Instead of feathers, dry leaves are substituted, cut into the required shape, and passed through slits in the shaft of the arrow, these slits being afterward bound up. In one arrow the nock has been formed in a very strange manner, a piece of wood being lashed to each side of the shaft, and projecting a little beyond it.
Some very beautiful examples of the best

kinds of weapons are shown in the illustraral Sir Hope Grant, G.C.B. etc., who kindly allowed them to be drawn for the use of this work. They are splendid instances of Indian art, one or two of them displaying a

most elaborate ornamentation.

The first of the illustrations shows a suit of armor and weapons, which is made of steel most elaborately engraved and inlaid with gold, the patterns resembling those on the bow, and looking much as if they had been taken from the bow and sunk into the steel, the freedom and grace of the lines being quite as remarkable as the elaborate mi-

nuteness of the pattern.
In the centre (Fig. 1) is seen the martial looking helmet, with its slight feather plume. There are often several of these plumes in a helmet, their shafts being adorned with gold and jewels, and placed in sockets projecting from the helmet. In front is seen the flat bar which protects the nose and upper part of the face from a sword cut. This bar slides up and down through a groove for the convenience of the wearer. From the helmet depends a piece of very slight but very strong chain-mail, which falls behind and on either side of the face, and hangs as low as the shoulders, so that, however abruptly the wearer may move his head, the folds of the chain-mail protect his neck. In several of these helmets the links of the mail are gilt, and arranged so as to form patterns, mostly of a diamond shape.

By the side of the helmet (Fig. 3) is the curious gauntlet, which extends far up the arm, and has no joint at the wrist. The absence of the joint, unpleasant as it would be to an European swordsman, is no obstacle to the proper use of the sword by the Oriental warrior. If the reader will refer to the figure of the sword (Fig. 6), he will see that the hilt is terminated by a large circular plate of steel. In a specimen in my own collection, this plate is three inches in diameter, so that when the sword is grasped after the European fashion, the plate comes against the wrist, and acts as a fulcrum by which, when a blow is struck, the leverage of the blade forces the sword out of the grasp.

But the whole system of swordsmanship is that which is made by the hill tribes. in India differs essentially from that which

not of reed, and the , and tied to the shaft is done with the flint-this weapon almost a form, though not in eathers, dry leaves are he required shape, and in the shaft of the g afterward bound up. r at seen formed in a a s piece of wood being a piece of wood being the shaft, and project-

examples of the best shown in the illustra-They belong to Gene-i.C.B. etc., who kindly wwn for the use of this plendid instances of of them displaying a ntation.

rations shows a suit of which is made of steel aved and inlaid with embling those on the d sunk into the steel, e of the lines being s the elaborate mi-

) is seen the martial slight feather plume. of these plumes in a ng adorned with gold in sockets projecting front is seen the flat nose and upper part d cut. This bar slides groove for the con-. From the helmet ery slight but very ch falls behind and e face, and hangs rs, so that, however y move his head, the protect his neck. In the links of the mail as to form patterns,

ipe. limet (Fig. 3) is the extends far up the easant as it would be nan, is no obstacle to ord by the Oriental will refer to the fighe will see that the large circular plate in my own collectinches in diameter, is grasped after the plate comes against fulcrum by which, the leverage of the it of the grasp.
of swordsmanship

lly from that which



is en gene as de its cu the more curve over

The was Hutcoment He it on of the could of the and the root that I of cur glided glass.

glass, glass, glass, Howe tolera The pushir stead delicatows i being our co capabl battle an ene the whour sweapool with a head fi In the lar shie measure

head fr
In the lar shift measure ter, and the hid properly ble this so britt. The she circular nary speculian lacquer less see tween the Scot of the sing, like several severa

Illustrate dra drant's coat of n tiful piec of the li

is employed in England, or indeed in Europe generally, strength not being used so much as dexterity. For the object of this weapon its curved form is essential. The stroke of the sword is done by a turn of the wrist more than by a direct blow, so that the curved edge of the weapon is drawn rapidly over the object of attack.

The mode of employing the Indian aword was illustrated to me by the same Colonel Hutchinson whose name has already been

mentioned.

He took a large mangold-wurzel, and laid it on a table. He then placed the flat side of the sword upon the root, so that no blow could be dealt, and then, with a slight turn of the wrist, he drew the blade toward him, and the root fell apart, severed in two pieces. In the same manner he cut the whole of the root into slices. The feat looked so easy that I tried it on another root, but, instead of cutting it in two, the edge of the sword glided off it as if it had been a solid piece of glass, and jarred my arm to the shoulder. However, after a few lessons, the feat became tolerably easy.

The same effect can also be produced by pushing the blade from the swordsman in-stead of drawing it toward him. It is to this delicate, drawing cut that the Indian sword owes its efficiency, the steel of the blade not being nearly of so good a quality as that of our common dragoon swords, and not being capable of taking so fine an edge. But if in battle an Indian warrior meets or overtakes

an enemy, he does not strike at him with the whole power of the arm, as is done by our swordsmen, but places the edge of his weapon against the neck of the enemy, and with a turn of his wrist nearly severs the

head from the body.

In the same illustration is seen the circular shield or target. This is of no great size, measuring about eighteen inches in diameter, and sometimes even less. It is made of the hide of the rhinoceros, which, when properly dressed and dried, is of considera-ble thickness, as hard as horn, though not so brittle, and almost equally translucent. The shield is generally adorned with four circular plates of metal, which in an ordinary specimen are merely of iron, but in a peculiarly handsome one are covered with lacquered gilding. The reader will doubt-less see the almost exact resemblance between the Indian shield and the target of the Scotch Highlander. The other portions of the armor are adorned with gold inlaying, like those parts which have been described.

Illustration No. 4, on page 1403, contains several articles used in warfare, all of which are drawn from specimens in Sir Hope Grant's collection. In the centre is seen a coat of mail. This is one of the most beaucould be made in half an hour, and, indeed, tiful pieces of armor I have ever seen, each

the Koran. Three of the links are shown underneath the coat of mail, drawn of the size of the originals. If the reader will reflect upon the vast number of such links which are required to form a coat of mail, he will appreciate the amount of labor that must have been expended on it, the letters having to be formed after the links are put having to be formed after the links are put together, so that they may not be obliterated in the forging. The helmet belonging to this suit is seen by its side at Fig. 2. Between the helmet and the coat of mail

is a Coorg knife or dagger, and its sheath This weapon is sometimes very plain, and sometimes blazes with gold and jewels on the hilt and sheath. A specimen in my collection is of the former kind, and, though the blade is of good quality, the handle is of wood, and is secured to the blade by a stout brass rivet which passes through the tang. A bold ridge runs along either side of the

Two more characteristic forms of the Indian dagger are shown at Figs. 7 and 9 in the illustration. One, Fig. 7, with its sheath at Fig. 8, is in great favor, especially with the rich. It is made entirely of steel, the two cross-bars constituting the handle. The form of the blade varies somewhat in differ ent specimens, but the general form is the same in all. A good specimen in my collection is altogether twenty inches in length, and weighs exactly a pound, so that it must be rather an awkward weapon for the girdle. The blade, if it can be so called, is nearly a foot in length, flat toward the handle, and within five inches of the tips welling suddenly into a sort of quadrangular bayonet, rather more than half an inch in thickness.

The reader will see that when this dagger is grasped, the steel continuations of the handle project on either side of the wrist, and effectually guard it and the lower part of the arm from a sword-blade. The weight of this instrument, as well as the force with which a thrust can be delivered by a straight blow as in boxing, render the weapon well calculated to drive its way through the folds

of dress, or even between the joints of armor.

Next comes a weapon (Fig. 9) which
would scarcely be recognized as a dagger. It is, however a dagger, made from the two horns of the Indian antelope. In the simplest form of this curious weapon, the horns are arranged with their bases crossing each other for about six inches. The curvature of the bases thus furnishes a sort of handle, which can be grasped in such a way that the holder of the weapon can strike right and left with it, and, among a number of people, could do a vast amount of damage in

tiful pieces of armor I have ever seen, each a temporary weapon might be made in a of the links bearing upon it a sentence from few minutes by lashing the horns together.

But the Indians prefer to add ornament to weapon, that bears some resemblance to the the weapon, and so they often make a hol-boomerang of Australia or the casting-knife low steel hilt in the form of a cup, with the curved side outward. The hand passes into this cup as into the basket-hilt of a singlestick, and is effectually guarded from injury.
The dagger shown in the illustration has
one of these steel hilts. In some places this weapon is in such favor that, instead of making it of antelope horns, with a steel hilt, the entire dagger is of steel, the points made in imitation of the borns.

The last weapon (Fig. 10) is one which is used by the Afghans, and is a sort of compromise between a sword and a dagger. A weapon of a similar form and character is carried by the Moors.

There is one kind of sword which ought not to be passed without some notice. It is a most murderous looking weapon, and is made on precisely the opposite principle to that of the sword which has already been described. In that form of sword, the edge is on the outer curve of the blade, which narrows toward the point. In the other sword, the edge is on the inside curve, and the blade widens greatly at the tip, which is curved like a bill-hook. Indeed, the weapon bears some resemblance to a bill-hook with a greatly elongated blade. In a specimen in my collection the blade is very little more than an inch wide by the hilt, but at the point (or rather the tip, for this part of the blade is squared) it is just four inches in width. The weight of this sword is rather more than two pounds.

There is also the quoit, or chakra, a missile the subject.

boomerang of Australia or the casting-knife of the Fan tribe, it being intended to cut and not to pierce as is generally the case with missiles. It is made of thin steel, and is sharpened to a razor-like edge on the outside. The mode of casting it is to spin it on the forefinger and then to hurl it. The reader may imagine that such a missile, which not only strikes an object, but revolves rapidly at the time, must be a very formidable one. It is generally aimed at the face of the adversary, and a skilful warrior will hurl four or five in such rapid warrior will further to the transfer type in succession that it is scarcely possible to avoid being struck by one of them, and having the face laid open, or the nose or lip absolutely cut off. These quoit-like articles are carried upon a tall, conical head-dress worn by the natives, into the folds of which they also put several small knives, as Irish laborers-stick their pipes in their hats. See illustration No. 3, on page 1403.

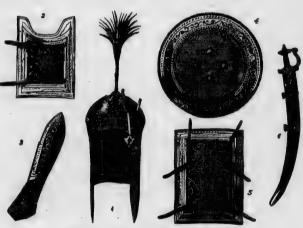
A similar weapon, made of brass instead of steel, is used by the cattle-poisoning Mooches, who have already been described. They call it by the name of "thal."

The chakra is the special weapon of Vishuu, and may be seen in the various representations of that deity, hanging in one of the hands. Reference is made to this by Southey in the "Curse of Kehama." Other deities also hold the chakra in the many-armed images by which the Indian artists clumsily attempt to depict omnipotence. This takes us to another branch of

TH Afr Bac 80 1 hun has dist with the Thi drea soci ทแล nan only cert T sacr OVER chec thos subj distr one, hand tice ' Th ful S

fune

in A eral i



SUIT OF ARMOR INLAID WITH GOLD. (See page 1402.)

me resemblance to the lia or the casting-knife being intended to cut is generally the case nade of thin steel, and brille edge on the out-sting it is to spin it on then to hurl it. The that such a missile, es an object, but retime, must be a very is generally aimed at rereary, and a skilful or five in such rapid scarcely possible to by one of them, and pen, or the nose or lip iese quoit-like articles all, conical head-dress nto the folds of which small knives, as Irish pes in their hats. See page 1403. nade of brass instead

the cattle-poisoning ready been described. me of "thal."

e special weapon of seen in the various at deity, hanging in Reference is made to "Curse of Kehama." ld the chakra in the by which the Indian pt to depict omnipoto another branch of

CHAPTER CL.

INDIA - Continued.

SACRIFICIAL RELIGION.

PRINCIPLE OF HUMAN SACRIFICE — THE SUITEE, OR WIDOW BURNING — HER PATE DESIRED BY HER-SELF AND HER NEAREST RELATIVES - REASONS FOR THE SACRIFICE - CONTRAST BETWEEN THE LIRE OF A WIFE AND A WIDOW OF HIGH CASTE - SOCIAL STATUS OF THE BRAHMINS-HONOR IN WHICH THE SUTTEE IS HELD - MODE OF CONDUCTING THE SACRIFICE - STRUCTURE OF THE PILE - COURAGEOUS CONDUCT OF THE VICTIM - ATTEMPTED ESCAPE OF A SUTTEE-BERNIER'S DESCRIPTION -- GRADUAL ABOLITION OF THE SUTTEE -- THE GODDESS KALL AND HER WORSHIPPERS - THE THUGS AND THEIR CONSTITUTION - THE SACRED "ROOMAL" OR NOOSE -MODE OF OFFERING A VICTIM — THE FESTIVAL OF JUGGERNAUT — HARDSHIPS OF THE PILORIMS -FORM OF THE IDOL -- SELF-SACRIFICE IN THE GANGES -- SACRIFICE OF BEASTS -- THE GODDESS DOORGA OR KALI - FAKIRS OR JOGIS - THEIR VARIOUS MODES OF SELF-TORTURE - THE SWING-ING FESTIVAL - THE MOTIONLESS FARIR.

THERE is no part of the world, not even he may not find himself wifeless when he Africa itself, where the principle of human reaches the spirit land. But it is remarksacrifice is so widely spread, and is developed so variously, as in India. Several forms of human sacrifice, such as the Meriah, which has already been described, belong to definite districts, and even in them are carried out with certain limitations. Some forms of the same principle, such as the murders by Thugs or Phânsigars in their worship of the dread goddess Kali, are restricted to certain societies of men. Again, the victims annually crushed under the wheels of Juggernaut's car are comparatively few, and can only be sacrified in a certain locality, and at certain times.

There is, however, one mode of human sacrifice which at no distant period prevailed over the whole of India, and has only been checked by the influence of England in those parts of the country which has been subject to British dominion. Even in those districts the task has been a very difficult one, and there is no doubt that if the strong hand of England were ever lifted, the practice would again prevail as it did before.

This form of human sacrifice is the dread-

able that even among the lowest of the savages, whose indifference to inflicting pain is well known, there are none who exercise such horrible cruelty toward the widow and the highly citizens. widow as do the highly civilized Hindoos. On referring to the former portions of this work, the reader will see that in some places work, the reader will see that in some places the widows are strangled and laid in the grave, in others they are buried alive, and in others they are killed by a blow of a club (perhaps the most merciful death that can be inflicted), but that in no instance is the surviving wife burned alive, as is the case with the Hindoo.

At the first clance, it seems strange that

At the first glance, it seems strange that not only should the relatives of the miserable wife desire her to be burned, but that she herself should wish it, and should adhere to her determination in spite of every opportunity of escaping so dreadful a death. the calm, dispassionate cruelty of the Hindoo nature is shown by the fact that, painful as is a death by burning, the life of a widow who survives her husband is made so miser able that the short though sharp agony of ful Suttee, or the death of the widow on the funeral pyre of her dead husband. Both in Africa and Polynesia we have seen several instances where the widow is sacrificed and despised even by the very Pariahs, on the grave of her husband, so that



nation to her during the lifetime of her husband. The horror of such a life can scarcely be conceived by an European, even suppos-ing a delicate girl, bred in the midst of all luxury and refinement, to be suddenly cast among the most debased of savages without possibility of rescue, and to be made an object of scorn and contempt even to them.

To realize the depths of utter degradation which a high-caste widow incurs, we must first see what is her opinion of her own sta-The reader is doubtless aware that the Hindoos are divided into a number of distinct castes, the peculiarity of which is, that no one can ascend to a superior caste, though he may fall into a lower. Now, of all the castes, the Brahmins are immeasurably the highest, and the reverence which is paid to them by their countrymen is almost incredible. Wealth or secular rank have nothing to do with this reverential feeling. A Hindoo of inferior caste may be, and often is, a man of almost unbounded wealth, may possess almost unbounded power, and, in his own way, unbounded pride. But the very poorest of Brahmins is infinitely his superior, and should he meet one of these exalted beings, he bows before him, and pays divine honors to him. And, according to his be-lief, he is right in so doing the Brahmin being an incarnation of Delty, sprung from the mouth of Vishnu, the Saviour God himself. He may be mounted on a magnificent elephant, covered with glittering trappings, he may be clothed in gorgeous robes and sparkle with costly gems, but before a Brahmin, with a single cloth round his waist, and bearing the solitary sign of his caste,slight cord hung over one shoulder and under the other,—he is an abject slave. Even if, as sometimes happens, he should empley a Brahmin as his cook, that Brahmin retains his rank, and receives the wor-

According to their sacred books, "when a Brahmin springs to light, he is born above the world; the chief of all creatures; assigned to great the sacred books." signed to guard the treasury of duties, reli-gious and civil." According to the same books, the very existence of mankind, and even of the world itself, depends upon the forbearance of the Brahmins whose power even exceeds that of the gods themselves. Should there be one who cannot be slain by the great god Indra, by Kali, the goddess of destruction, or even by Vishnu himself, he would be destroyed if a Brahmin were to curse him, as if he were consumed by fire. In the same spirit, princes were warned not to take the property of the Brahmins, how-ever much in want of money, for that if these holy men were once enraged, they could by a word destroy them, their armies, elephants, and horses.

By them, under Brahma, were originally

"What prince could gain wealth by oppressing those who, if angry, could frame other worlds, and legions of worlds, could give being to new gods and mortals?" Just as these tremendous privileges are independent of the external circumstances of wealth and rank, so are they independent of indi-vidual character. The pure soul of a Brahmin is beyond all moral elevation, and above all moral pollution. He may be a man of the purest life and loftiest morality, but he is none the better Brahmin for that; he may be one of the vilest of debauchees, and be none the worse Brahmin for that, provided he does not commit any act which would forfeit his caste,—such, for example, as kill-ing a cow, or eating food that had been

on

of

the ere

and

laic

har

inte

ute

are

hav

and

whi

lash

hea

fere

bres Two

pile,

as to

евса

is lis

pile

tee suffo

flam

So of th

ence

the v

the f

lessly her l

stanc

the n the c

At ea

from

like s

above canop

Aft

pile, a ghee, rolled

victim and if

own w

have I this tir

swords

so tha

Poss

but its For th

blow, 1 action

slowly

flames

arough her, an

her.

cooked by an inferior.

To fall from such an estate as this, above humanity and equal to divinity, must be something almost too terrible to conceive, and we can easily imagine that any death would be preferable to such a life. But not even the horror of a life like this would be equivalent to the sufferings of the Indian widow, who believes that her very soul is contaminated beyond hope by the loss of her caste, and who feels herself degraded below the level of those on whom she had looked with an utter loathing that is almost incom-prehensible to the Western mind. She has to cut off her hair, she has to live on the coarsest of food, she has to clothe herself in the coarsest of raiment, and altogether to lead a life utterly and hopelessly miserable in every hardship that can afflict the body, and every reproach that can torture the mind.

On the other side comes the belief, that if she follows the dictates of her religion, and suffers herself to be burned on the funeral pile of her husband, she qualifies herself for everlasting happiness. From the moment that the ceremonies of the sacrifice are begun, she becomes an absolutely sacred being, whose very touch sanctifies the objects on which she lays her hands; she renders herself a model to be imitated by all her sex, and her memory is forever venerated by her family. It is therefore no wonder that, swayed by such considerations, the Indian widow prefers death to life, and that the sacrifice of the Suttee has taken such

hold upon the people.

Varying slightly in details according to the rank of the individual and the particular district in which the sacrifice takes place, the ceremony is conducted after the following manner.

A hole is dug in the ground, over which the funeral pile is raised. The object of the hole is to supply a current of air by which the fire may be fed. Sticks are then driven round the edge of the hole to support the materials of the pile, which are dry wood, rushes, and hemp. These are heaped care-fully to a height of four feet or so, and resin made the earth, the sun, the moon, and the fully to a height of four feet or so, and resin fire, and by them they could be destroyed. and ghee (i. e. liquid butter) are thrown

n wealth by oppress-, could frame other worlds, could give mortals?" Just as eges are independamstances of wealth ndependent of indioure soul of a Brahelevation, and above e may be a man of est morality, but he min for that; he may debauchees, and be n for that, provided by act which would for example, as killood that had been

estate as this, above divinity, must be errible to conceive, ine that any death uch a life. But not like this would be ings of the Indian at her very soul is pe by the loss of her self degraded below om she had looked at is almost incomern mind. She has has to live on the to clothe herself in ad altogether to lead lessly miserable in afflict the body, and torture the mind. es the belief, that if

f her religion, and ned on the funeral qualifies herself for From the moment the sacrifice are absolutely sacred sanctifies the ober hands; she renbe imitated by all y is forever vener-therefore no wonconsiderations, the th to life, and that ee has taken such

etails according to l and the particular crifice takes place, d after the follow-

ground, over which The object of the nt of air by which ks are then driven de to support the ich are dry wood, are heaped careet or so, and resin tter) are thrown

on the pile, so as to increase the vehemence of the flames. The body is then taken to the river, on whose bank the pyre is always

bank, uttering prayers, and waving in her hand a branch of mango. After the corpse is removed from the water, she descends into it herself, and, having washed, distributes to her friends all her ornaments, which are eagerly sought, as being sanctified by having been touched by the sacred hand of a suttee. She is then dressed in a new robe, and places herself by the side of the body, to and places herself by the side of the body, to which she is usually, though not always, lashed. Dry rushes and wood are next heaped over her, only her head being suffered to be uncovered, so that she may breathe for the short time she has to live. Two long bamboos are then laid across the pile, the ends being held by the relations, so as to press her down should she struggle to escape when the flames reach her. The fire is lighted by her nearest relation, and, if the pile has been properly constructed, the sut-tee is soon dead, being killed rather by suffocation from the smoke than by the

Sometimes, however, when the building of the pile has been entrusted to inexperienced hands, a terrible scene takes place, the wretched victim trying to escape from the wretched victim trying trying the flames that torture her, and being ruththe flames that torture her, and being ruth-lessly held down by the bamboo poles across her body. Dr. Massie relates several in-stances of attempted escape. In one case, the mode of preparing the pile was evidently the cause of the poor victin's sufferings. At each corner a stout pole was erected, and from this nole was suspended a second pile. from this pole was suspended a second pile, like a canopy, elevated three or four feet above the surface of the principal pile. This canopy was chiefly made of logs of wood,

and was exceedingly heavy.

After the suttee had been laid upon the pile, and covered with straw saturated with ghee, the fire was kindled, and the smoke rolled in thick volumes over the head of the victim. The flames began to blaze flercely, and if they had been allowed to burn in their own way, the death of the poor woman would have been almost immediate. But just at this time four assistants severed with their swords the ropes which upheld the canopy, so that it fell with its whole weight upon

Possibly it was intended as an act of mercy, but its effect was anything but merciful.

that none would give her, until death at last put an end to her sufferings.

the river, on whose bank the pyre is have, streeted, and is there washed by the relatives, and afterward wrapped in a new cloth and offered by the officiating Brahmins and her

"Another well-authenticated and brutal instance of this sacrifice occurred about the same time in a more northern province of India: 'The unfortunate Brahminee, of her own accord, had ascended the funeral pile of her husband's bones, but finding the torture of the fire more than she could bear, by a violent struggle she threw herself from the down. Some gentlemen, who were spectators, immediately plunged her into the river, which was close by, and thereby saved her from being much burnt. She retained her senses completely, and complained of the badness of the pile, which, she said, con-sumed her so slowly that she could not bear it; but expressed her willingness again to try it if they would improve it. They would not do so, and the poor creature shrunk with dread from the flames, which were now hurning intensaly and refused to con-

burning intensely, and refused to go on.
""When the inhuman relations saw this, they took her by the head and heels, and threw her into the fire, and held her there till they were driven away by the heat; they also took up large blocks of wood, with which they struck her, in order to deprive her of her senses; but she again made her escape, and, without any help, ran directly into the river. The people of her house followed her here, and tried to drown her by pressing her under the water, but an European gentleman rescued her from them, and she immediately ran into his arms and cried to him to save

"I arrived at the ground as they were bringing her the second time from the river. and I cannot describe to you the horror I felt on seeing the mangled condition she was in: almost every inch of skin on her body had been burnt off; her legs and thighs, her arms and back, were completely raw, her breasts were dreadfully torn, and the skin hanging from them in threads; the skin and nails of the skin and the skin an her fingers had peeled wholly off, and were hanging to the back of her hands. In fact, I never saw and never read of so entire a picture of misery as this poor woman displayed. She seemed to dread being again taken to the fire, and called out to "the Ocha Sahib" to save her. Her friends seemed no languaging inclined to force and one of how relonger inclined to force, and one of her rebut its effect was anything but merciful. For the moment she was stunned by the blow, but the mass of billets checked the action of the fire, and caused it to burn slowly instead of rapidly. The creeping fames soon restored her to consciousness fames soon restored her to consciousness arough the agony which they inflicted upon her, and she shricked pitifully for the help lations, at our instigation, sat down beside

It is often said that the woman is stupefied with opium or Indian hemp before she is brought to the pile, and that the bystanders beat drums and shout in order to drown her shrieks. This, however, is not the case, the woman requiring the use of all her senses to enable her to go through the various ceremonies which precede the actual burning, and the pile being generally made so carefully that death is so rapid that the victim scarcely utters a cry or makes a single struggle to escape.

Additions to the mere burning of the widow have been mentioned by various travellers. Bernier, for example, says that, while travelling near Agra, he heard that a Suttee was about to take place. He went to the spot, and there saw a great pit, in the midst of which was a large pile of wood. On the pile lay the body of a man, and beside it sat a young and handsome woman, whose dress was almost saturated with oll, as was the wood of the pile. The fire being lighted, she sat on the pile, and as the flames wrapped her body, she exclaimed with a loud voice that, according to the Indian belief in the transmigration of souls, this was the fifth time that she had become a suttee, and that she would have to do so twice more in order to attain perfection.

Round the edge of the nit danced five women, holding each other by the hand, and appearing regardless of the fire. Presently the flames seized upon the dress of one of them; whereupon she detached herself from her companions, and flung herself headlong into the burning pit. The remaining four continued their dance, and, as the fire caught their garments, they one by one leaped into the naming pit. These women it appeared, had been slaves of the suttee. They were greatly attached to their mistress, and when they heard her offer the vow to die on the funeral pile, they determined to die with her.

The same traveller relates a very curious anecdote of a suttee who employed the dreadful ceremony for a strange purpose.

She was a widow by her own act, having poisoned her husband in order to carry on an intrigue with a young tailor, a Mohammedan, who was celebrated for his skill in playing the drum. He, however, was alarmed at her crime, and declined her society. On account of the caste to which she belonged, the death by burning was not a necessity, but on her lover's refusal she went to her relations, reported the sudden death of her husband, and deplared that she would be burned with him.

"Her kindred, well satisfied with so generous a resolution, and the great how that she did to the whole family, presently had a pit made and filled with wood, exposing the corpse upon it, and kindling the fire. All being prepared, the woman goes to embrace and bid farewell to all her kindred that were there about the pit, among whom was also clutches.

the tailor, who had been invited to play upon the tabor that day, with many others of that sort of men, according to the custom of the country. This fury of a woman, being also come to this young man, made sign as if she would bid him farewell with the rest, but, instead of gently embracing him, she taketh him with all her force about his collar, pull him to the pit, and tumbles him, together with herself, into the ditch, where they both were soon despatched."

The date at which the Suttee was instituted is not known, but it was in operation at the time of Alexander the Great, and must have been established long before. Under the British rule the Suttee system has gradually been abolished, and we may hope that never again will the dread scene be repeated.

REFERENCE has already been made to several other modifications of human sacrifice, and we will give a few pages to a description of them.

There is in the Indian mythology a certain dreadful goddess of destruction, named Kali. Her statues show her attributes, her many hands being filled with all kinds of weapons, and her person decorated with a huge neck-lace of human skulls. In order to propitiate this terrible divinity, a system has been developed which is perhaps the most remarkable, illogical, and best regulated system that is to be found upon the face of the earth. It is simply murder raised to the rank of a religious rite, and differs from all other human sacrifices in that blood is not shed, that the victim is always killed by stratagem, and that the worshippers need neither temple nor altar.

The members of the society call themselves Thugs, from a Hindoo word which signifies "deception," and which is given to them in consequence of the mode in which the victims are entrapped. In some parts of India they are called Phânsigars, from a Sanscrit word which signifies "a noose." Perhaps the strangest point, in this country of strict and separate caste, is that the Thugs do not belong to one caste, nor even to one religion. They all agree in worshipping Kali, but in other respects they admlt among their numbers men and women of all castes, and a large number of them are Mahommedans, who have no caste at all. Indeed, the Mahommedan Thugs claim for themselves the origin of the system, though the Hindoos say that it was in existence long before the time of Mahommed.

They always go in companies, a complete band often consisting of several hundred persons of all ages and both sexes. As the very essence of the sacrifice is secrecy, they assume all kinds of disguises, the usual being that of travelling merchants. In this capacity they act their part to perfection, and endeavor to entice travellers into their clutches.

of th Thug yo' ... which not a of ha neck draw called who a are ca gener activi namel the v 888888 while

death.

digger

recept

The

Fo

orga

chief

their which except arm, a stead o Havi think Sothas the fata in this probabi execute their o tempt 1 children employe excite men.]

some, tl

and, ho

the grea

within t

When pointed adroitly him, who of execus Sudden! victim's pressed is ceases to adroit dered malmost woof the no The be

stripped, Sometime entrapped simultane the case together, vants are invited to play upon many others of that to the custom of the a woman, being also n, made sign as if she l with the rest, but, acing him, she taketh bout his collar, pull mbles him, together itch, where they both

Suttee was instituted s in operation at the Freat, and must have before. Under the system has gradually may hope that never ne be repeated.

eady been made to ions of human sacriw pages to a descrip-

mythology a certain ruction, named Kali. attributes, her many all kinds of weapons, ed with a huge neckn order to propitiate system has been deos the most remarkregulated system that he face of the earth, hed to the rank of a from all other human is not shed, that the by stratagem, and need neither temple

society call them-Hindoo word which nd which is given to the mode in which ped. In some parts Phânsigars, from signifies "a noose." oint, in this country caste, is that the one caste, nor even ll agree in worshiprespects they admit men and women of umber of them are ive no caste at all. an Thugs claim for the system, though t was in existence Mahommed.

mpanies, a complete of several hundred both sexes. As the ifice is secrecy, they isguises, the usual merchants. In this part to perfection, travellers into their

For this purpose they have a regular organization. At their head they have a chief, or Sirdar, who directs the operations of the band. Then an old experienced Thug acts as instructor, and teaches the younger men how to use the sacred noose by which the victims are strangled. This is not a cord with a running knot but a sort not a cord with a running knot, but a sort of handkerchief, which is flung round the neck of the unsuspecting man, and suddenly drawn tight. This noose, or handkerchief, is called the "roomal." Then come the men who are entrusted with the noose. These are called Bhuttotes, or stranglers, and are generally men possessing both strength and activity. Next are the entrappers, or Sothas, namely, those whose business it is to entrap namely, those whose obsiness it is to entrap the victim into a convenient spot for his assassination, and to engage his attention while preparations are being made for his death. Lastly come the Lughaees, or grave-diggers, who prepare the grave for the reception of the body.

The method in which the Thugs perform their sacrifices is almost exactly like that which is employed by the modern garroter except that a noose is used instead of the arm, and that the victim is always killed, instead of being only made insensible for a time.

Having pitched upon a person whom they think will be a fit offering for Kali, the Sothas manage to induce him to come to the fatal spot. Several days are often spent in this concerns for upleas there is a contract. in this endeavor; for, unless there is every probability that the murder will not be executed before any except members of their own society, the Thugs will not attempt the traveller's life. The women and will not attempt the traveller's life. children attached to the band are usually employed as Sothas, inasmuch as they would excite less suspicion than if they were men. If the women be young and hand-some, they are the more valuable as decoys; and, horrible to say, even young girls take the greatest interest in decoying travellers within the fatal noose.

When the party have arrived at the appointed spot, the attention of the traveller is adroitly directed to some object in front of him, while the Bhuttote who acts the part of executioner steals quietly behind him. Suddenly the noose is flung round the victim's neck, the knee of the murderer is pressed into his back, and in a short time he ceases to live. Generally the executioner is so adroit at his dread office that the murdered man makes no resistance, but dies almost without a struggle, the first pressure little interest. of the noose causing inscusibility.

several places to prevent it from swelling, and is then laid in the grave. The soil is carefully filled in, and levelled with such ingenious care that scarcely any except those who dug the grave can discover it after the burial. In one case, when an English force was in chase after a band of Thug they passed over ground which was full o bodies, and never suspected it until one of the Thug prisoners exultingly pointed out grave after grave as proofs of their success

After the body is buried, and all signs of the murder removed, the Thugs go through white cloth, on which are laid the sacred pickaxes with which the graves are dug, a piece of silver, and some sugar. The Sirdar then sits on the sheet, facing westward, with the most accomplished stranglers on either side of him, and distributes the sugar to all present, who eat it in solemn silence. The sheet is then put away, and to all appear-ance the Thugs are nothing more than a

party of harmless travellers.
So secretly is the whole business conducted, that the system has only been discovered within late years. Numbers of persons had mysteriously disappeared; but in India the natives are singularly apathetic, and it is always easy to account for the discound it is always easy to account for the discound. In India the natives are singularly apathetic, and it is always easy to account for the disappearance of a traveller by saying that he has been carried off by a tiger. The Thugs take the greatest pride in their profession, and, when captured, do not attempt to disguise it, but openly boast of the number of victims whom they have slain, and describe victims whom they have slain, and describe with glee the method in which they destroyed them; and, when themselves led to the gallows, they treat the whole business with calm contempt, having no more care for their own lives than for those of their victims.

WE now come to another ceremony, in which human life is sacrificed, though as an adjunct, and not as its essential feature. This is the celebrated procession of Juggernaut, or Jaganatha. The ceremonies connected with this idol, and indeed the invention of the idol table. vention of the idol itself, seem to be of comparatively modern date, and, except for the great annual procession of the car, are of

The body of the murdered man is then stripped, and his property falls to the band. Sometimes a whole party of travellers is entrapped by a band of Thugs, and all are simultaneously murdered. This is generally the case when several wealthy men travel together, in which case they and their services when several wealthy men travel together, in which case they and their services when several wealthy men travel together, in which case they and their services when several wealthy men travel together. The body of the murdered man is then miles southwest from Calcutta. It is a tail, pyramidal tower, some two hundred feet in height, built of a warm red sandstone, covered with the lime-cement called "churchen and their services when several wealthy men travel."

Being on the sea-coast, this tower is a most useful landmark to navigatore in the Bay of Bengal. The great temple of the idol is situated

Once in every year the great festival of | Juggernaut takes place, and the huge idol-car is brought out for the procession. The car is an enormous edifice of wood, more than forty feet high, and thirty-five feet square. This mass of timber is supported on sixteen wheels, each more than six feet in diameter, some of the wheels being under the body of the car. The car itself is plentifully adorned with sculptures of the usual character, and it is conventionally supposed to be drawn by two great wooden horses, which are attached to it in readiness for the procession, and kept inside it during the rest of the year.

On the appointed day three idols are placed in the car. The central figure represents Krishna, and the others are his brother Bala Rama and his sister Subhadra. are nothing but three enormous and hideous busts, not nearly so well carved as the tikis of New Zealand, and, in fact, much resemble the human figures scribbled on walls by tached to the car, by means of which the worshippers of the idol drag it along. The scene that takes place at the procession is most vividly described by Bruton:

"In this chariot, on their great festal days, at night they place their wicked god, Jaggarnat; and all the Bramins, being in number nine thousand, attend this great idol, besides of ashmen and fackeers (fakirs) some thousands, or more than a good many. "The chariot is most richly adorned with

most rich and costly ornaments; and the aforesaid wheels are placed very complete in a round circle, so artificially that every wheel doth its proper office without any impediment; for the chariot is aloft, and in the centre betwixt the wheels: they have also more than two thousand lights with them. And this chariot, with the idol, is also drawn with the greatest and best men of the town; and they are so greedy and eager to draw it, that whosoever, by shouldering, crowding, shoving, heaving, thrusting, or in any insolent way, can but lay a hand upon the rope, they think themselves blessed and happy; and when it is going along the city, there are many that will offer themselves as a sacrifice to this idol, and desperately lie down on the ground, that the chariot-wheels may run over them, whereby they are killed outright; some get broken arms, some broken legs, as that many of them are so destroyed; and by this means they think to merit heaven."

Another of the earlier writers on this subject states that many persons lie down in the track of the car a few hours before it starts, and, taking a powerful dose of opium, or "bhang," t. c. Indian hemp, meet death while still unconscious.

dans, was astonishing, a million and a half of pilgrims having been considered as the average number. Putting aside the comparative few who perished under the wheels of the great car (for, indeed, had the whole road been paved with human bodies, they would have been but a few), the number that died from privation and suffering was

We know by many a sad experience how difficult it is to feed a large army, even with the great advantage of discipline on the part of the commissariat and the recipients. It is therefore easy to see how terrible must be the privation when a vast multitude, quadruple the number of any army that ever took the field, arrives simultaneously from all directions at a place where no arrangements have been made to supply them with provisions, and where, even if the locality could furnish the requisite food, the greater number of the pilgrims are totally without money, and therefore unable to pay for food. In those days the pilgrims perished by thousands, as much victims to Juggernaut as those who were crushed under his chariot wheels, and, indeed, suffering a far more lingering and painful death. Still, according to their belief, they died in the performance of their duty, and by that death had earned a high place in the paradise of the Hin-

Such was the case before the English raj was established in India. Since that time a gradual but steady diminution has taken place in the number of the pilgrims to Juggernaut's temple; and we have lately seen a most astonishing and portentous event. Formerly, the vast crowd of worshippers pressed and crowded round the cables by which the car was drawn, trying to lay but a hand upon the sacred rope. Of late years the Brahmins have found fewer and fewer devotees for this purpose, and on one occasion, in spite of all their efforts, the ropes were deserted, and the car left stationary, to get along as it could.

As to the idol Juggernaut itself, Bruton gives a curious description of it, saying that it is in shape like a serpent with seven heads, and that on the cheeks of each head there are wings which open and shut and flap about as the car moves along.

An idol in the form of a five-headed cobra is mentioned by Messrs. Tyerman and Bennett in their "Missionary Voyages": "We happened to be visiting a very handsomely built stone temple (at Allahabad), covered with well executed sculptures of their idols, holy persons, etc., in stone of the highest re-lief. In the temple were several stone idels representing the serpent—the cobra capella, or hooded snake. The largest, which represents a serpent twelve feet long, with five heads, and the heads all expanded, coiled the state of Clerkian beat is the wriginal In former days the annual assemblage at the deads, and the heads all expanded, coiled the temple of Juggernaut, which is to the into a sort of Gordian knot, is the principal Hindoos what Mecca is to the Mahomme-object of worship in this temple.

" 7 snak rush old), quan His e fore after looke himse as if in havin out of the ve at the hurrie humai of a de who, Hindo ANG

intend gernau dise, th volting The a most from th ever, or Jumna sacred. necessi dent, tl tering junction devotee his feet with sar stream, into the pose we a fee for Somet fice then Brahmir empty c behind, sels, pad until the then sco they wer the vesse the botto entrusted when the able to at mlpile. straw, so considere ties are th the body with wat What bed nothing, a many cres

in sea

, a million and a half sen considered as the atting aside the comshed under the wheels indeed, had the whole h human bodies, they t a few), the number ion and suffering was

a sad experience how large army, even with of discipline on the riat and the recipients. see how terrible must en a vast multitude, of any army that ever s simultaneously from ce where no arrangee to supply them with e, even if the locality ns are totally without unable to pay for food. rims perished by thoums to Juggernaut as ned under his chariot suffering a far more death. Still, according ed in the performance that death had earned paradise of the Hin-

efore the English raj lia. Since that time a liminution has taken f the pilgrims to Jugwe have lately seen a nd portentous event. crowd of worshippers round the cables by wn, trying to lay but d rope. Of late years und fewer and fewer ose, and on one occaheir efforts, the ropes car left stationary, to

gernaut itself, Bruton otion of it, saying that pent with seven heads, as of each head there n and shut and flap s along.

of a five-headed cobra ors. Tyerman and Ben-tary Voyages ": "We ng a very handsomely t Allahabad), covered alptures of their idols, tone of the highest reere several stone idols ent - the cobra capella, largest, which repre-e feet long, with five all expanded, coiled knot, is the principal

is temple.

"While we were looking at this stone are perfectly satisfied with their share in its snake, a horrid-looking man, unclothed, disposal.

In many cases beasts are substituted for old), being covered with ashes, and his huge quantity of hair matted with mud dust. His eyes appeared inflamed; he bowed before the serpent, then prostrated himself, afterward respectfully touched his head, looked fixedly upon the corpent, prostrated himself again, then touch tand rushed out, having worshipped this thing. When he got out of the temple, he walked all round within the verandah, and, having once more bowed at the door of the temple, he departed with a hurried step. hurried step. We cannot conceive of any human being having more the appearance of a demoniac than this miserable creature, who, nevertheless, is regarded by the poor Hindoos as one of the holiest of men."

Another form of human sacrifice was intended, like the prostration under Juggernaut's car, to take the devotee to Paradise, though by a less painful and less revolting process

The Ganges has always been reckoned as a most sacred stream, whose waters wash from the soul all taint of sin. There is, however, one spot, namely, the confluence of the Jumn with the Ganges, which is so very sacred, that any one who dies there must of necessity go straight to Paradise. It is evident, therefore, that the simplest plan of endent, therefore, that the consumer death at the tering Paradise is to ensure death at the junction of the rivers. For this purpose the devotee entered a boat, and tied to each of his feet a chatty or earthenware jar filled with sand. The boat was rowed into midstream, and the devotee dropped overboard into the river. The boats used for this purpose were kept by Brahmins, who charged

a fee for officiating at the sacrifice. Sometimes he devotees managed to sacrifee themselves without the assistance of the Brahmins and their boat. They tied an empty chatty to their waists in front and behind, and, buoyed up by the empty ves-sels, paddled themselves with their hands until they reached the desired spot. They then scooped water into the chatties, until they were filled, and so sank, the weight of they were fined, and so sains, the weight of the vessels being sufficient to take them to the bottom. In like manner are corpses entrusted to the keeping of the holy river, when the relatives of the deceased are not able to afford the great expense of a fune-malpile. The body is surrounded by lighted sapire. The body is suffreduced by lighted straw, so that it is scorched, and therefore considered to be purified by fire. Two chat-les are then fastened to it, the relatives tow the body into mid-stream, fill the chatties with water, and allow the body to sink.
What becomes of it afterward they care
softling, and though it be devoured by the

human sacrifices. A short, stout post is fixed in the ground, and on its top is cut a deep notch, in which is received the neck of the animal, the size of the neck and height of the post being suited to the size of the victim. Sacrifices are thus offered to Doorga, the goddess of nature, and it is of the utmost importance that the head of the victim should be severed at a single blow. This is easy enough with a lamb, or even a goat, but when a buffalo is to be sacrificed, the success of the blow is so doubtful that many ceremonies are employed to ensure its right performance. The sacrificial knife is a tremendous weapon, shaped something like a bill-hook, very broad, very heavy, and kept as sharp as a razor. When the sacrifice is to take place, the buffalo is brought to the post, which stands before the ten-armed image of Doorga, its horns are painted red, turmeric is poured over its head, water from the Ganges is sprinkled over it, and gar-lands of flowers are hung about its neck.

lands of flowers are hung about its neck.

The animal is then placed so that its neck rests in the fork of the post, to which it is firmly secured by an iron bar which passes through holes in the fork, and presses its head downward. The body is supported on a mound of earth in front of the post, and the legs are drawn apart and held by ropes, so that a movement is impossible. The sacrificer, always a man of great muscular power, then comes forward and takes the sacrificial knife from the altar before Doorga's statue, and, together with the assembled multitude, prays that strength may be given to enable him to fulfil his office.

Amid the breathless silence of the assembled worshippers, he raises the heavy blade, and with one blow drives it through the and with one blow drives it through the neck of the helpless victim. As the head falls to the ground, it is snatched up by the officiating Brahmins, who offer it to the goddess, while the people, in a frenzy of delight, dance round the sacrificer, embrace him, chant songs in his honor, and crown him with garlands of flowers. The body of the buffalo becomes the property of the specta-tors, who struggle for it until one party gains the superiority over the other, and carries off the prize. Around the blood, that lies in pools on the ground, the multitude crowd, dip their fingers in it, and daub it on their bodies and on the walls of the temple.

The goddess Doorga, to whom these sac-rifices are made, is in fact Kali under another title; the former name meaning the Inaccessible, and the latter the Black One. biling, and though it be devoured by the stroying God, Shiva, and as the mother of the grant of their loathsome food, they her many-armed figure is carved of wood, She is represented as the wife of the De-

or modelled in pasteboard, and painted rose color. She is seated cross-legged on a peacock, and surrounded by many other defices of the multitudinous Hindoo mythology. Before her is represented a man being devoured by a nondescript beast, something like the heraldic griffin. As soon as the searcifics is over the goddess is supposed to sacrifice is over, the goddess is supposed to depart from her image, which is then taken in procession to the Ganges, and amid the dealening shouts of the people, the blast of piety trumpets, and the beating of kettle-drums, is cast into the stream.

THE reader may remember that on page 1413 was given a short description of a holy man who came to worship the many-headed snake-god. He was one of the Fakirs, or Jogis, 6. ascetics, who in India are won-derfully numerous, and submit themselves to the most dreadful tortures in honor of their deities. By rights the Fakirs are Mohammedans, though the English have been accustomed to call both the Mohammedan and Hindoo ascetics by the common title of Fakir. "Jogi" is the usual title for the Hindoo devotees, though they are divided into a number of sects, such as Bairágès, Sangasés, Gosárés, &c.

In all ages and in almost all countries, there have been religious enthusiasts, who have sought to gain the favor or propitiate the anger of the deity by voluntary suffering, but there is perhaps no country where we find so great a variety of this principle as we do in India. There are Mohammedan as well as Hindoo ascetics, and the latter have this advantage, that they need not be-long to any particular caste. To describe long to any particular caste. To describe fully the extraordinary proceedings of these men would occupy much more space than can be afforded, and we will therefore only take a few of the most characteristic exam-

One of the commonest, as well as one of the lightest, of these tortures is, to have the tongue bored with a red-hot iron. practice used to prevail largely at Chinsurah, at the temple of the Bull-god. Under a clump of banyan trees the devo-tees assembled in order to inflict various tortures upon themselves, and by far the most common was that of tongue boring. The operation was performed by a native smith, who was reckoned very skilful at it, and at certain seasons he was completely beset by applicants, doubly clamorous in the first place to have their tongues bored, and in the next to have it done as cheaply as possible. At these seasons he used to range the applicants in regular lines, and take them in their turn, varying his fee according to their number, rank, and impatience.

A strange instance of self-torture is described by Colonel Campbell. At Colar, the birthplace of Tippoo Sultan, a man was seen marching up and down before a mosque,

ble torture which each step must have cost

Sometimes these devotees show their piety by long pilgrimages to certain sa-cred spots, making the journey as difficult and fanciful as possible. Some will lie on the ground and roll the whole distance, while others measure the track by prostrating themselves on their faces, marking the spot where their heads lay, getting up, placing their feet on the marked spot, and then prostrating themselves again. Some-times they will lie on their backs and push themselves along the road by their heels, thus cutting and bruising their backs ter-ribly against the rough ground. Some of these men practise a most extraordinary penance in honor of the goddess Doorga, a penance which in some respects resembles the initiation of the Mandans. A stout pole, some twenty feet high, is fixed in the ground, and a long bamboo is placed horizontally over the top, on which it revolves by means of a pivot. Sometimes two or even three poles cross each other on the top of the post. Ropes hang from each end of the bamboos, and to half of them are fastened large unbarbed hooks of polished iron. The devotees having placed them-selves under the bamboo, the hooks are run into their backs, and by persons hauling on the rope at the other end of the bamboo they are raised into the air. The men who hold the ropes then run in a circle, so as to swing the devotees round at a great pace, the whole weight of their bodies being borne by the hooks. While swinging the scatter flowers and other gifts among the spectators, who eagerly scramble for them, thinking they possess very great virtues.

Both men and women submit to this terrible torture, and do so for a variety of reasons. Some permit themselves to be swung in pure honor of the goddess, some do it in fulfilment of a vow, while many submit to the operation for pay, acting as substitutes of persons who have made the vow and are afraid to fulfil it personally, or who prefer honoring the goddess by deputy rather than in their own person. From one to two in their own person. From one to two rupees, i. e. from two to four shillings, is considered a fair price to the substitute.

Sometimes the upright post is fastened upon an ordinary bullock wagon, and is shorter than when it is fixed in the ground After the hooks have been inserted, the opposite end of the bamboo is drawn down so as to elevate the devotee some thirty feet in the air, and made fast to the wagon The cart is then drawn as fast as possible

which and se In 1 Yoge one or until : motion waste

round

one an extent by a co to upl instan hand, t the har and hu A v pletely become

so that

tion ev instanc manage any su One of William river or figures gentlem in a ce vowed 1 der of h abstract

"He

raised a

ground.

might were er feet high broad bo the other other pi inches w him. H form, and bar, held of the up to press little for

"His p and mise over with ted, disco exposure beard was his face so be said to "Not t

aside, and

limbs, nor ras perce dothing, the loins. thread, in Ie was shod with a pair not tied but nailed to spikes that had been ole and projected above walked with a firm, un-chanted his measured conscious of the horrich step must have cost

devotees show their images to certain sa-the journey as difficult sible. Some will lie on I the whole distance, the track by prostraheir faces, marking the eads lay, getting up, the marked spot, and mselves again. Some-n their backs and push ne road by their heels, uising their backs ter-ugh ground. Some of a most extraordinary f the goddess Doorga, ome respects resembles ne Mandans. A stout et high, is fixed in the amboo is placed horio, on which it revolves ot. Sometimes two or s each other on the top hang from each end of to half of them are having placed them-aboo, the hooks are run by persons hauling on er end of the bamboo run in a circle, so as to

other gifts among the very great virtues. nen submit to this terso for a variety of reathemselves to be swung goddess, some do it in while many submit to y, acting as substitutes made the vow and are sonally, or who prefer by deputy rather than a. From one to two o to four shillings, is ice to the substitute. right post is fastened ullock wagon, and is is fixed in the ground. ve been inserted, the amboo is drawn down

devotee some thirty ande fast to the wagon wn as fast as possible

round at a great pace, f their bodies being While swinging they

round the enclosure by six or eight bullocks, which are harnessed to it for the occasion, sufferer (if indeed his state can be called one

In many instances, the Jogis (pronounced Yogees) perform their penance by keeping one or more of their limbs in one attitude, until after a time it becomes incapable of motion, and the muscles almost entirely waste away. Some of these men will hold one arm stretched upward to its fullest extent. This is done by supporting the arm by a cord when the wearied muscles refuse to uphold the limb any longer. In some instances, where the Jogi has clenched his hand, the nails have grown fairly through the hand, forced their way through the back, and hung nearly to the wrist.

A very common practice is to sit com-pletely motionless, in which case the legs pletely motionless, in which case the legs become in time totally incapable of moving, so that the man could not change his position even if he desired to do so. In some instances they even go beyond this, and manage to stand instead of sit, with scarcely any support for their bodies during sleep. One of these men is described by Mr. Williamson: "Within a few yards of the river on our left stood one of those horrid figures called a vouce. or Indian saint.—a figures called a yoges, or Indian saint,—a gentleman beggar, who had placed himself in a certain attitude, from which he had rowed never to swerve during the remainder of his life, but to spend his life in mental abstraction.

"He appeared on a platform of earth raised about eighteen inches from the ground. At one end of this mound (which might be seven feet long by five broad)
were erected two bamboos, seven or eight feet high, and sufficiently apart for him to stand between them. At elbow height a stand between them. At elbow height a broad board was placed from one bamboo to the other, and upon the middle of this an-other piece of plank, two feet long by five inches wide, was fixed, sloping upward from him. He therefore, standing on the plat-form, and resting his arms upon the cross-bar, held with his hands on each side of the upright sloping board. He seemed to press equally on either foot, leaning a little forward, with his face turned rather side, and raised toward the sun.

"His personal appearance was squalid and miserable. His body was daubed all over with blue mud; his hair—long, mat-tel, discolored to a yellowish brown with exposure—dangled in all directions. His beard was bushy and black, and the rest of his face so disfigured with hair, that it might

be said to be all beard. "Not the slightest motion in one of his limbs, nor in a muscle of his countenance, was perceptible. I s was altogether without of suffering) maintains without any varia-tion this paralyzing position."

Mr. Bennett then expresses some disbe-

lief in the constant immobility of the devotee, and evidently suspects him to be an impostor, who, under cover of night, leaves his post, and refreshes himself with sleep in a recumbent position. This, however, was certainly not the case, and indeed the very language of the account shows that it could not be so. A very long period must have elapsed before the devotee in question could have trained his body to remain, as Mr. Bennett admits was the case, without the movement of a muscle during the whole time that his proceedings were watched. And, before such a consummation could have been attained, the limbs of the man must hav been so entirely stiffened by not-usage, that they would be as inflexible as if they had been cut out of wood or stone, and whether he stood or lay would have been a matter of perfect indifference. As to sitting, or assuming any attitude that involved tne flexion of a limb, it would have been utterly impossible.

We may see a similar phenomenon, if it may be so called, among ourselves. There is not one man in a thousand who preserves the normal flexibility of his limbs, unless he be a professional athlete. Naturally, the limbs of every man and woman are as flexible as those of the posture-masters, who can cross their feet over the back of their necks, pick up a coin with their mouths from the ground between their heels, or sit on the ground with their legs stretched straight at either side of their bodies. But, unless men preserve this flexibility by constant use, the limbs become stiff, and it is quite as difficult, not to say impossible, for an ordinary Englishman to perform the feats of the professional acrobat, as it is for the Jogi to bend the knees or ankles that have been unbent

for a series of years.

Moreover, the spectators who assemble round such devotees, and who never leave him unwatched by day or night, would be very ready to detect any attempt at imposture, and would be excited by it to such a pitch of religious fury, that the man would be torn to pieces by the excited crowd. And the very fact that the man was a Brahmin was nearly appears that the way was nearly appears to the the such as the such man was a product that the way are producted to the such as the suc Brahmin was proof enough that he was no impostor. By virtue of his Brahminical rank, he was at the summit of humanity. Had he been a low-caste man, he might with reason have been suspected of imposture, in order to obtain respect from his countrymen. But, as the man was already

delining, except a sup of brown stuff about the loins. He wore the 'poita,' or sacred thread, indicating that he was a Brahmin.

Brahmin, such imposture was totally needless, and his devotion, superstitious and fanatical as it might be, was undoubtedly sincere.

CHAPTER CLI.

INDIA - Concluded.

THE INDIANS WITH RELATION TO ANIMALS.

FALCONRY - THE MINA BIRD AND ITS FEATS - SNAKE CHARMERS - SUSPICION OF IMPOSTURE - GEN-BRAL CAMPBELL'S ACCOUNT OF THE CORRA AND THE CHARMER - DEATH OF THE MAN - DIFFI-CULTY OF THE TASK - THE POISON FANGS NOT REMOVED - INITIATION OF A NOVICE - ELEPHANT HUNTING -- CATCHING ELEPHANTS WITH KOOMKIES -- TAMING THE CAPTURED ANIMAL -- AN EN-THUSIASTIC KOOMKIE -- HUNTING IN NEPÂL -- JUNG BAHADÜR AND THE ELEPHANTS -- HUNTING WITH TRAINED STAGS AND ANTELOPES - THE CHETAHS OR HUNTING LEOPARDS.

WE will end this description of India with | ceeds a bright yellow wattle. This bird can a few remarks on one of the chief peculiarities of native character, namely, the wonderful capacity of the Indians in taming and training animals. This capacity develops itself in various ways, some partaking of a religious character, and being considered as in some sense miraculous, and some only illustrative of the natural ascendancy which these men exert over beasts, birds, and

reptiles.
The Indians are, for example, unsurpassed in their powers of training falcons, which they teach to attack, not only birds, but antelopes and other game. These falcons are of course unable of themselves to kill an antelope, but they will mark out any one that has been designated by their master, and will swoop down upon its head, clinging firmly with their talons, and buffeting the poor beast about the eyes with their wings, so that it runs wildly hither and thither, and thus allows itself to be captured by the dogs, from which it could have escaped had it been able to proceed in a straight line. A thoroughly trained falcon is held in very great esteem, and many a petty war, in which many lives were lost, has been occasioned by the desire of one rajah to possess a falcon owned by another.

Then there is a little bird called the Mina, belonging to the Grakles. It is a pretty bird, about as large as a starling, with phunage of velvety black, except a white patch on the

be taught to talk as well as any parrot, and it is said that, as a rule, the mina's tones more closely resemble those of the human voice than do those of any parrot. It is very intelligent besides, and can be taught to perform many pretty tricks.

One trick, which is very commonly taught to the bird, is to dart down upon the women snatch away the ornaments which they wear on their heads, and carry them to its master. This is a little trick that is sometimes played by a young man upon the object of his affect tions, and is intended to make her grant an interview in order to have her property restored.

As to reptiles, the cobra seems to be a unlikely a creature to be tamed as any on the face of the earth. Yet even this terrible serpent, whose bite is nearly certain death is tamed by the Indians, and taught to get the certain paraforms near Force example. through certain performances. For examp a couple of serpent charmers will come, with their flat baskets and their musical instru ments, and begin to give a performance One of them plays on a rude native pipe while the other removes the cover of one the baskets. Out comes the hooded head the cobra, which seems as if it were about to glide among the spectators, when a gestur and a few notes from the piper check it progress, and it begins to rise and fall, an sway its head from side to side, as if in tim to the music. The men will then take wing. From either side of the head pro- the venomous reptile, allow it to crawl over

their take al appear cinatio use its Som innocu extract stances the ge there a the oth or exti

> forward That

> upon s evident

pents h and aft found t such ins bell in 1 viously fangs we but the him that tricks w "Whe at Trich

garden snakes, a

morning

the botto

but while

native se

and drov brickwor charmers worthies into the v them, aft and sprin with ash mered cov ditty upor brass ring on one sid furnished "At fire

legan to to move. out his he terously sli we hoisted in triumph "Having round, th The enrage at the by-s

of native

witness the

ing him o

him to tur

erably bul

hole, was d

after half

their bodies, tie it round their necks, and moment sounding his pipe. The snake take all kinds of liberties with it, the serpent coiled himself up, raised his head, expanded appearing to labor under some strange fascination, and to be unable or unwilling to use its fange.

Some persons think that the serpents are innocuous, their poison fangs having been extracted. This may be the case in some instances, but in them the performers are not the genuine snake charmers. Moreover, there are several sets of fangs, one behind the other, so that when one pair is broken or extracted, another pair speedily comes forward.

That the genuine charmers do not depend upon such imposture for their success is evident from many cases in which the serpents have been carefully examined before and after the performance, and their fangs found to be perfect in every respect. One such instance is narrated by General Campbell in his "Indian Journal." He had previously been under the impression that the fangs were always removed from the serpents, but the following circumstance convinced him that the charmers could perform their tricks with snakes whose fangs were per-

"When I was on General Dalrymple's staff at Trichinopoly, there was a dry well in the garden which was the favorite haunt of snakes, and in which I shot several. One morning I discovered a large cobra-capella at the bottom of this well, basking in the sun; but while I ran to fetch my gun some of the native servants began to pelt him with stones, and drove him into his hole among the brickwork. I therefore sent for the snake charmers to get him out. Two of these worthies having arrived, we lowered them into the well by means of a rope. One of them, after performing sundry incantations, and sprinkling himself and his companion with ashes prepared from the dung of a mcred cow, began to play a shrill, monotonous ditty upon a pipe ornamented with shells, brass rings, and beads, while the other stood on one side of the snake's hole, holding a rod furnished at one end with a slip-noose.

"At first the snake, who had been considerably bullied before he took refuge in his hole, was deaf to the notes of the charmer, but after half an hour's constant playing the spell began to operate, and the snake was heard to move. In a few minutes more he thrust out his head, the horse-hair noose was dexerously slipped over it and drawn tight, and we hoisted up the men dangling their snake h triumph.

"Having carried him to an open space of round, they released him from the noose. the enraged snake immediately made a rush

his hood, and appeared about to strike, but, instead of doing so, he remained in the same position as if fascinated by the music, darting out his slender forked tongue, and following with his head the motion of the man's knee, which he kept moving from side to side within a few inches of him, as if tempting him to bite.

No sooner did the music cease, than the snake darted forward with such fury that it required great agility on the part of the man to avoid him, and immediately made off as fast as he could go. The sound of the pipe, however, invariably made him stop, and obliged him to remain in an upright position as long as the man continued to play.

"After repeating this experiment several times, he placed a fowl within his reach, which he instantly darted at and bit. The fowl screamed out the moment he was struck, but ran off, and began picking among his companions as if nothing had happened. I pulled out my watch to see how long the venom took to operate.

"In about half a minute the comb and wattles of the fowl began to change from a red to a livid hue, and were soon nearly black, but no other symptom was apparent. In two minutes it began to stagger, was seized with strong convulsions, fell to the ground, and continued to struggle violently till it expired, exactly three minutes and a half after it had been bitten. On plucking the fowl, we found that he had merely been touched on the extreme point of the pinion. The wound, not larger than the puncture of a needle, was surrounded by a livid spot, but the remainder of the body, with the excep-tion of the comb and wattles (which were of a dark livid hue), was of the natural color, and I afterward learned that the coachman, a half-caste, had eaten it.

"The charmer now offered to show us his method of catching snakes, and seizing the reptile (about five feet long) by the point of the tail with his left hand, he slipped the right hand along the body with the swiftness of lightning, and grasping him by the throat with his finger and thumb, held him fast, and forced him to open his jaws and display

his poisonous fangs. "Having now gratified my curiosity, I proposed that the snake should be destroyed, or at least that his fangs might be extracted, an operation easily performed with a pair of forceps. But, the snake being a remarkably fine one, the charmer was unwilling to ex-tract his teeth, as he said the operation sometimes proved fatal, and begged so hard If the by-standers, putting to flight a crowd if native servants who had assembled to these the sport. The snake charmer, taping him on the tail with a switch, induced lim to turn upon himself, and at the same certained by personal inspection, but so to be allowed to keep him as he was, that I

TON OF IMPOSTURE - GEN-GATH OF THE MAN - DIFF:

LEOPARDS.

w wattle. This bird can well as any parrot, and rule, the mina's tones ole those of the human f any parrot. It is very and can be taught to

OF A NOVICE - ELEPHANT

APTURED ANIMAL - AN EN-

THE ELEPHANTS - HUNTING

y tricks. is very commonly taught t down upon the women aments which they wear carry them to its master. that is sometimes played n the object of his affecd to make her grant an o have her property re-

e cobra seems to be a o be tamed as any on the Yet even this terrible is nearly certain death dians, and taught to gormances. For example charmers will come, wit nd their musical instru to give a performance on a rude native pipe oves the cover of one omes the hooded head ems as if it were abou ectators, when a gestur om the piper check it gins to rise and fall, an side to side, as if in tim men will then take u e, allow it to crawl ov

tame that he handled him freely, and appar- | Africa and India, the inhabitants of the forently without fear or danger."

The best proof that the snake's fangs were not extracted is, that some weeks afterwards the reptile bit the charmer, and killed him.

It seems strange that serpents should be thus subject to man. It is comparatively easy to tame a bird or a beast, as hunger can be employed in the process, and really is the chief power, the creature learning to be fond of the person who furnishes it with food. Or, in extreme cases, the power of in-flicting pain is employed, so that the animal is ruled by fear, if not by love.

But, in the case of a snake, the tamer is deprived of both of these adjuncts. As a serpent only feeds at very long intervals, and possesses an almost inexhaustible power of fasting, hunger cannot be employed; and its peculiar constitution would render the in-fliction of pain useless. The charmer has, therefore, to fall back upon some other mode of working upon his pupil, and finds it in music, to which the cobra seems peculiarly accessible. That it is powerfully influenced by music was known many centuries ago, as we may see by the references to serpent charming in the Scriptures. Any music seems to affect the creature, and, if it can be rendered docile by the harsh sounds that proceed from the charmer's flute, we may conjecture that more melodious sounds would have a like effect. Mr. Williams, who was very much inclined to be sceptical on the subject of serpent charming, and thought that the poison fangs were always removed, mentions that a gentleman at Chinsurah, who was a very excellent violinist, was forced to lay aside his instrument because the sounds of the violin attracted so many serpents to his house.

Serpent charming is thought to be a semi-sacred calling, and is one of those cases where the process of taming partakes of the religious character. The charmers are regularly initiated into their duties, and un-dergo certain ceremonies before they are thought to be impervious to the serpent's teeth. Sometimes an European has been initiated into these mysteries, as happened to Lady Duff Gordon, to whom a snake charmer took a fancy, and offered to initiate her. He and his pupil sat opposite each other, and joined their hands. The charmer other, and joined their hands. The charmer then twisted a cobra round their joined hands, and repeated some invocation. Both of them afterward spat on the snake, and the novice was pronounced to be safe, and enveloped in snakes as a proof of the success

of the incantation.

THERE is perhaps no better instance of the mastery of the Indians over animals than the manner in which they catch and instruct elephants.

The reader will doubtless remember that,

mer country never attempt to domesticate it. It has been thought that the African elephant is not trained, because it is fiercer than the Asiatic species or variety, and lacks the intelligence which distinguishes that animal. This, however, is not the case. The African elephant is as docile and intelligent as that of Asia, and quite as capable of being trained. The elephants which were used in the time of the ancient Romans were brought from Africa, and yet we read of the most wonderful feats which they could perform. Moreover, the African elephants which have been in the Zoölogical Gardens for some years are quite as tract-able as the Asiatic animals. The real cause for the non-use of the African elephant is, not its incapacity for domestication, but the lack of capacity in the Africans to domesticate it.

In almost all cases of domesticated animals, the creatures are born in captivity, so that they have never been accustomed to a wild life. The Indian, however, does not trouble himself by breeding elephants, but prefers to capture them when sufficiently grown to suit his purposes. There are two modes of catching the elephant, one of which is so ingenious that it deserves some description, however brief. A common way is by making a large enclosure, called a "keddah," and driving the elephants into it. The keddah is so made, that when the elephants have fairly entered it they cannot get out again, and are kept there until subdued by hunger and thirst.

By this mode of elephant catching, the animals are taken in considerable numbers, and of all sizes. The genuine elephant hunter, however, cares little for this method, and prefers to pick out for himself the best animals, the Indians being exceedingly particular about their elephants, and an elephant having as many "points" as a prize pigeon or rabbit.

In every herd of elephants the males are given to fighting with each other for the possession of the females, and it often happens that a male, who for some time has reigned supreme in the herd, is beaten at last. Furious with rage and disappointment, he leaves the herd, and ranges about by him-self, destroying in his rage everything which opposes him. In this state he is called a "rogue" elephant by the English, and saun by the natives. Now, furious and dangerous as is the saun, he is always a splendid animal, scarcely inferior indeed to the master elephant of the herd. The elephant hunters, therefore, are always glad to hear of a saun, and take measures to capture so valuable a prize.

They possess several female elephants, called "koomkies," which are used as decoys, and, strangely enough, take the greatest interest in capturing the saun. When though the elephant is abundant both in est interest in capturing the saun.

the l takes some to be takes much The

other flat or with a the p of tre as to seeing backs. loses a in gre over v fore. he fail slip of someti The

begin

someti

three

him, n

him n

him.

huge a foreleg aided i trunks and so the rop places : of stro and op studded when c are fas:

strong :

The

hunters koomki necks, a saun to he is te to disap and the He scre tree, pu flings it rope wh up the t with wl give him desist, a tion, he lowing come to and so th

to endur

ence. W tamed, s inhabitants of the forttempt to domesticate ught that the African ed, because it is fiercer les or variety, and lacks ich distinguishes that ver, is not the case. is as docile and intel-, and quite as capable e elephants which were the ancient Romans frica, and yet we read ful feats which they eover, the African eleeen in the Zoölogical ars are quite as tractimals. The real cause e African elephant is, domestication, but the Africans to domesti-

of domesticated anie born in captivity, so been accustomed to a n, however, does not ceding elephants, but nem when sufficiently poses. There are two the elephant, one of that it deserves some orief. A common way e enclosure, called a g the elephants into it. de, that when the eleered it they cannot get there until subdued

lephant catching, the considerable numbers, he genuine elephant little for this method, at for himself the best peing exceedingly par-phants, and an elephant nts" as a prize pigeon

ephants the males are th each other for the es, and it often happens ome time has reigned l, is beaten at last. ld disappointment, he ranges about by himrage everything which state he is called a the English, and saun , furious and danger-is always a splendid or indeed to the mas-herd. The elephant e always glad to hear neasures to capture so

ral female elephants, thich are used as de-lough, take the great-ing the saun. When

the hunter goes out on his expedition, he and attached to the koomkies, and, the lightakes with him at least two koomkies, and tures round his feet being removed, he is sometimes three, if the saun should happen to be a very large one; and in all cases he takes care that the koomkies shall not be much smaller than the saun.

other apparatus for securing the saun, lie flat on the koomkies' backs, cover themselves with a large dark cloth, and proceed toward the place where the saun was seen. Often the koomkies carry in their trunks branches of trees, which they hold in such a manner as to prevent their intended captive from seeing that they carry anything on their backs. The saun, seeing them approach, loses some of his fury, and thinks that he is in great good-fortune to meet with females over whom he can rule as he had done be-fore. He is so delighted with this idea that he fails to perceive the hunters, who usually slip off behind a tree as they near him, but sometimes boldly retain their post.

The koomkies then go up to the saun and begin to caress him, one on each side, and sometimes another in front of him, when three decoys are employed. They caress him, make much of him, and gradually bring him near a stout tree, where they detain him. The hunters then creep under the huge animal, and pass stout ropes round his forelegs, binding them tightly together, being aided in this by the decoys, who place their trunks so that their masters cannot be seen, and sometimes even assist him by passing the rope when he cannot conveniently reach it. The forelegs being secured, the hunter places round the elephant's hindlegs a pair of strong fetters. These are made of wood, and open with a hinge of rope. They are studded inside with sharp iron spikes, and, when clasped round the feet of the elephant, are fastened to the trunk of the tree with strong ropes.

The elephant being now made fast, the hunters creep away, and are followed by the koomkies, who receive their masters on their necks, and go off, leaving the unfortunate saun to his fate. If he was furious before, he is tenfold more so when he has to add to disappointment the sense of confinement, and the knowledge that he has been tricked. He screams with rage, tears branches off the tree, pulls up the grass by the roots and fings it about, and even tries to break the rope which holds him to the tree, or to pull up the tree itself by the roots. The spikes with which the wooden fetters are lined give him such pain, that he is soon forced to desist, and wearied out with pain and exertion, he becomes more quiet. On the following day the same men and elephants come to him, and bring him a little food; and so they go on until he has learned first to endure, and afterward to desire their presence. When they judge him to be sufficiently

marched off to his new quarters.

be a very large one; and in all cases he kes care that the koomkies shall not be uch smaller than the saun.

The hunters, furnished with ropes and the male pushes him on from behind, sometimes here appearing the saun lies. When here mate pushes him on from beining, sometimes using his tusks by way of spurs. When he has been taken to his abode, he is treated with firm but kind discipline, and is so effectually tamed, that in a few months after he was ranging wild about the fores: he may be seen assisting to convey, refractory brother to his new home.

The intelligence of the koomkies is really

wonderful, and they take quite as much interest in the pursuit as their masters. Captain Williams mentions an instance where a gentleman had purchased a koomkie, not knowing her to be such. The mahout or driver would not mention her capacity; because he very much preferred the ease and comfort of a gentleman's establishment to the dangers and hardships of a hunter's life. The wealthy natives of 'he neighborhood would not mention it, because each of them hoped to buy the animal for himself at a less price than would be asked for a koomkie.

One day the animal was missing, and did not return for several days. However, she came back, and was harnessed as usual for a walk. When she came to a certain spot, she became restive, and at last dashed into the jungle, where she brought her master to a fine saun, whom she had crippled by fastening a chain round his forelegs.

In Nepal the natives adopt a very dangerous mode of elephant hunting. They go to the hunt on elephants, and furnish themselves with very strong ropes, one end of which is made fast to the body of the riding elephant, and the other furnished with a slip-knot, to which is attached a line, by which the noose can be relaxed. They give chase to the herd, and, selecting a suitable animal, the hunter dexterously flings the noose upon the head of the animal just be-hind its ears and on its brows. The elephant instinctively curls up its trunk, whereipon the noose slips fairly over its head.

The hunter then checks the pace of his animal, so that the noose is drawn tightly round the neck of the captured elephant, and causes a partial choking. His speed being checked, another hunter comes up and flings a second noose, so that by their united force the captive can be strangled if necessary. Sometimes, when he is very furious, the hunters are obliged to render him insensible over and over again, before he can be induced to obey his new masters, The well-known Nepalese ambassador, Jung Bahadûr, was celebrated for his skill and daring in this dangerous sport.

As an example of the perfect command which the Indian mahouts have over their amed, strong ropes are fastened to his legs, animals, Captain Williams mentions an

adventure which took place at Chittagong. the most warlike and powerful of its males, During a stormy night, an elephant got the herd was congregated in apparent safety. During a stormy night, an elephant got loose, and escaped into the forest. Four years afterward, when a herd of elephants was driven into a keddah, the mahout, who had climbed the palisades to view the en-closed animals, thought that he recognized committee the missing elephant. His committee individual him, but he persisted in his idea, and called the animal by name. The elephant recognized the voice of its driver, and came toward him. The man was so overjoyed at this, that, regardless of the danger which he ran, he climbed over the palisades, and called to the elephant to kneel down. The animal obeyed him, he mounted on its neck, and triumphan ly rode it out of the keddah.

Elephants are sometimes taken in pits, at the bottom of which are laid bundles of grass in order to break the fall of the heavy animal. The elephants are generally decoyed into these pits by a tame animal which is guided close to the pit by the mahout, who has placed certain marks by which he knows its exact locality. Sometimes they are merely dug in the paths of the elephants, which fall into them in their nightly rambles, and by their moanings inform the hun-

ters of their proceedings. In these pits they are forced to remain until they have been tamed by hunger, just as is the case with those animals that are tied to the trees. When they are sufficiently tame, the hunter throws into the pit successive bundles of jungle grass. These the sagacious animal arranges under his feet in such a way that he soon raises himself sufficiently high to step upon the level earth, where he is received by the hunters and his tame elephants. These "pitted" elephants, as they are called, are not held in high estimation, as there is always danger that they may have suffered some injury by

Just as tame elephants are brought to capture the wild animals, so are tame stags taught to capture those of their own species. An account of the sport is given in the "Private Life of an Eastern King": —

"I have never heard of trained stags being employed elswhere as I saw them employed in Oude. . . . In our rides in the neighborhood of the lake, near which we encamped, we lighted upon a fine open country adjoining a forest, which would answer admirably for the purpose. The adjoining wood was full of the smaller game of Oude, or, if not smaller, at all events the more harmless, among which the wild deer must be classed as one. Skilful beaters were sent off into the forest to drive the deer, as if unintentionally,-that is, without violence, or making much noise,— toward the point of the forest adjoining the open space which I have just mentioned. Here, protected by its watching guardians,

India

the de

leopai same

which

larger

a cres

is not

mon ! tree,

comm

deer i

has n fact tl

well t

other

when

the Z

very o

though growli

my ha

about

cord re

that no

howeve

momen

on thei

thing li

This ho the hea his chai

only to

animal When the che

carts, no

of our s

by its ke

journey

sight of

and poi

toward

like a s

bush an

Thos

cats. been i

Che

"We had about a dozen trained stags, all males, with us. These, well acquainted with the object for which they were sent forward, advanced at a gentle trot over the open ground toward the skirt of the wood. They were observed at once by the watchers of the herd, and the boldest of the wild ani-mals advanced to meet them. Whether the intention was to welcome them peaceably, or to do battle for their pasturage, I cannot tell, but in a few minutes the parties were engaged in a furious contest. Head to head, antlers to antlers, the tame deer and the wild fought with great fury. Each of the tame animals, every one of them large and formidable, was closely contested with a wild adversary, standing chiefly on the defensive, not in any feligated battle or mimicry of the part has a large court to the contest. of war, but in a hard-fought combat. We now made our appearance in the open ground on horseback, advancing toward the scene of conflict. The deer on the skirts of the wood, seeing us, took to flight, but those actually engaged maintained their ground, and continued the contest.

" In the meantime a party of native huntsmen, sent for the purpose, gradually drew near to the wild stags, getting in between them and the forest. What their object was we were not at the time aware; indeed, it was not one that we could have approved or encouraged. They made their way to the rear of the wild stags, which were still combating too flercely to mind them; they appears to the stage of the wild stage of the wild stage. proached the animals, and, with a skilful cut of their long knives, the poor warriors fell hamstrung. We felt pity for the noble animals as we saw them fall helplessly on the ground, unable longer to continue the contest, and pushed down by the tame stags. Once down, they were unable to

rise again. "The tame ones were called off in a moment; not one of them pursued his victory. Their work was done; they obeyed the call of their keepers almost at once, and were led off like hounds, some of them bearing evidence in their gored chests that the contest in which they had been engaged was no sham, but a reality. As we rode up we saw them led off, triumphantly capering over the ground as if proud of their exploits, tossing their fine spreading antlers about joyously, and sometimes looking as if they would enjoy a little more fighting, - this time with each other."

The antelope is sometimes used in a simi-r manner. The largest and most powerful male antelopes are trained for the purpose, and are sent toward the herd with nooses fastened on their horns. The wild ante-lopes soon come out to fight the intruders, and are caught by the nooses.

THERE is another sport of which the

owerful of its males. ed in apparent safety. sen trained stags, all se, well acquainted nich they were sent gentle trot over the e skirt of the wood. once by the watchers dest of the wild ani-them. Whether the ne them peaceably, or pasturage, I cannot es the parties were itest. Head to head, tame deer and the fury. Each of the y contested with a chiefly on the deed battle or mimicry ought combat. We rance in the open lyancing toward the deer on the skirts of k to flight, but those ained their ground.

arty of native huntslose, gradually drew
getting in between
What their object
time aware; indeed,
ould have approved
ade their way to the
hich were still comind, with a skilful cut
e poor warriors fell
pity for the noble
a fall helplessly on
cer to continue the
own by the tame
ey were unable to

called off in a mopursued his victory, hey obeyed the call at once, and were he of them bearing chests that the conpen engaged was no as we rode up we imphantly capering ud of their exploits, ding antlers about looking as if they ore fighting,—this

mes used in a simit and most powerful ed for the purpose, e herd with nooses s. The wild anteight the intruders, oses.

port of which the

Indians are very fond, namely, the chase of the deer by means of the chetah, or hunting leopard. This animal is by no means the same species as the common leopard, from which it is easily distinguished by its much larger legs, its comparatively bushy tail, and a crest or ridge of hair along the neck. It is not so much of a tree-climber as the common leopard, and though it can ascend a tree, very seldom does so. Whether the common leopard could be trained to catch deer is rather doubtful. The experiment has not been tried, probably owing to the fact that the chetah performs its part so well that there is no object in trying another animal.

Chetahs are very docile creatures, and, when tame, seem to be as fond of notice as cats. This I can personally testify, having been in the same cage with the animals at the Zoölogical Gardens, and found them very companionable, even allowing me, though after some protest in the way of growling and spitting, to take their paws in my hand, and push out the talons.

Those which are used for the sport are led about by their attendants, merely having a cord round their necks, and are so gentle that no one is afraid to be near them. Lest, however, they might be irritated, and in a moment of passion do mischief, they wear on their heads a sort of hood, shaped something like the beaver of an ancient helmet. This hood is generally worn on the back of the head, but if the keeper should think that his charge is likely to be mischievous, he has only to slip the hood over the eyes, and the animal is at once rendered harmless.

When the hunters go out in search of deer, the chetahs are taken on little flat-topped carts, not unlike the costermongers' barrows of our streets. Each chetah is accompanied by its keeper, and is kept hooded during the journey. When they have arrived within sight of deer, the keeper unhoods the animal and points out the prey. The chetah insiders the stantly slips off the cart, and makes its way toward the deer, gliding along on its belly like a serpent, and availing itself of every bush and stone by which it can hide its

advance. When it can crawl no closer, it marks out one deer, and springs toward it in a series of mighty bounds. The horsemen then put their steeds to the gallop, and a most exciting scene ensues.

most exciting scene ensues.

The chase is never a very long one, for the chetah, though of wonderful swiftness for a short distance, does not possess the conformation needful for a long chase. Sometimes a chetah of peculiar excellence will continue the chase for some little time, but, as a rule, a dozen mighty bounds bring the animal to its prey. We all know the nature of the cat tribe, and their great dislike to be interrupted while their prey is in their grasp. Even a common cat has a strong objection to be touched while she has a mouse in her mouth, and we may therefore wonder how the keepers contrive to make the chetah relinquish its prey. This is done either by cutting off part of the leg and giving it to the chetah, or filling a ladle with its blood and allowing the leopard to lap it. The hood is then slipped over the eyes, and the chetah allows itself to be replaced in its cart.

Sometimes it is necessary to leave the cart, and lead the animal by its chain toward the place where the animals are known to be. This is always a difficult business, because the animal becomes so excited that the least noise, or the scent left by a passing deer, will cause it to raise its head aloft, and stare round for the deer. In a few moments it would become unmanageable, and dash away from its keeper, were not he prepared for such an event. He carries with him a kind of ladle, made of a hollowed cocoa-nut shell at the end of a handle. This is sprinkled on the inside with salt, and as soon as the man perceives a change of demeanor on the part of his charge, he puts the ladle over the muzzle of the chetah. The animal licks the salt, forgets the cause of excitement, and walks on quietly as before.

Some of the great men in India take considerable pride in their chetahs, and have them paraded daily, covered with mantles of silk heavily embroidered with gold, and wearing hoods of similarly rich materials.

CHAPTER CLII.

TARTARY.

THE MANTCHU TARTARS.

MUTUAL INFLUENCE OF THE TARTARS AND CHINESE UPON EACH OTHER — A CHINESE BATTLE — DASK AND COURAGE OF TARTAR HORSEMEN — TARTAR GUNNERS — "CATCHING A TARTAR" — THE BOW, AND MODE OF STRINGING IT -SYSTEMATIC TRAINING OF THE ARCHER - THE TARTAR ABROW-ATHLETIC EXERCISES - BLOODLESS CONQUEST OF THE TABLARS BY THE CHINESE.

WE now proceed to the more civilized portions of the vast Mongolian race, namely the Tartars, the Chinese, and the Japanese. In the field, unless opposed to enemies much It will of course be impossible to give even the briefest account of the numerous nations which have been called Tartars, and we will therefore confine ourselves to the Mantchu Tartars, who have exercised so remarkable an influence on the empire of China.

It has been well said, that when a strong people invade and conquer the territory of a weaker, their conquest has a double effect. The victors impose certain habits and modes of life upon the vanquished, and, in so doing, generally strengthen them in those points where they are weak. But, in return, the vanquished exert an influence upon their conquerors which has precisely the opposite effect, and tends to diminish rather than to increase their strength. So it has been with the Tartars and the Chinese, whose history during the last few centuries has been most instructive to the ethnologist,-I should

rather say, to the anthropologist.

Just as in one family we invariably find that there are members of very different powers, and that the possessor of the stronger intellect invariably obtains dominion over the others, so it has been with the two great divisions of the Asiatic Mongols. The Tartar is in many points superior to the Chinese, and, as a rule, is easily distinguished even by his appearance. He possesses more decided features, is more alert in his movements,

in the field, unless opposed to enemies much inferior. Mr. Searth, who had the opportunity of witnessing a battle, describes it as an absolute farce.

"One day, when a great many soldiers were out, I saw more of the contest than was pleasant. Having got into the line of fire, I was forced to take shelter behind a grave, the bullets striking the grave from each side every second. Why they came my way it was difficult to discover, for they ought to have passed on the other side of a creek, about twenty yards distant, to the people they were intended for; but to see the dodging of the soldiers, then of the rebels, each trying to evade the other, was almost amusing.

"One fellow, ready primed and loaded, would rush up the side of a grave-hillock, drop his matchlock over the top, and, without taking aim, blaze away. There is no out taking aim, blaze away. There is no ramrod required for the shot they use; the bullet, or bar of iron, is merely dropped in loose upon the powder.

"There was a fine scene on an occasion when the Shanghai rebels made a sortie. One of the men was cut off by an imperial skirmisher, who had his piece loaded. The rebel had no time to charge his; so he ran round and round a grave, which was high enough to keep his enemy from shooting him when on the opposite side. Hare huntand certainly possesses more courage. The chinese will fight wonderfully well behind walls, or on board ship, and even in the field display great courage of a quiet nature if they have been unlucky chance, the

rabe him prize to R heels Redthat fell (press singe Th

men

durin they : of wa that v

arms showe antag playe would they h boldly of Ar burst cision. mann Inde

to the alry w a fire, guns. superi vailed Proby discipl: and co led the of the They courage

to piece

leave (times after hi expecte it there that wa Tartars the Chi steeds a isting o culiariti the swo waist, an side, th where it leg. Th of the I

Of the under a stance is of the cl tar caval

free fron

the wais

rebel tripped and fell. The soldier was at the thrust of a lance or the stroke of a him in a moment, and, to make sure of his prize, put the muzzle of his matchlock close to Red-cap's head, fired, and took to his heels as fast as he could go. It is difficult to say who was most astonished, when Mr. Red-cap did exactly the same! The bullet that dropped down readily on the powder fell out as easily when the barrel was depressed. The rebel got off with a good singeing of his long hair."

The Tartars, however, are very different men in battle, as was frequently proved during our wars in China; and though they were comparatively ignorant of the art of war, and were furnished with weapons that were mere toys in comparison with the arms to which they were opposed, they showed themselves to be really formidable antagonists. As irregular cavalry, they dis-played an amount of dash and courage which would make them most valuable allies, could they be trained by European officers. They boldly charged in the face of field-batteries of Armstrong guns, and, though the shells burst among them with murderous precision, they came on in the most gallant

Indeed, a British officer, who was opposed to them, said that scarcely any regular cavalry would have advanced in the face of such a fire, delivered from fifteen breech-loading guns. Of course, when they did close, the superior discipline of their opponents pre-vailed against them, and the Sikh cavalry of Probyn and Fane at once routed their undisciplined ranks. But, had they been drilled and commanded by such men as those who led the Sikh cavalry against them, the issue

of the fight might have been very different. They served their guns with dauntless courage, and allowed themselves to be cut to pieces by the Armstrong shell rather than leave them. A single man would sometimes be seen working a gun by himself after his comrades had been killed, and he expected the same fate every moment; and it therefore happened, that of the slain in that war by far the greatest number were Tartars. They are better horsemen than the Chinese, and both themselves and their steeds are hardy, active, and capable of existing on very little food. One of their peculiarities is the method in which they carry the sword. Instead of hanging it to the waist, and letting it bang against the horse's side, they pass it under the saddle-flap, where it is held tight by the pressure of the They thus avoid the jingle and swing of the European sabre, and moreover are free from the drag of a heavy weapon upon the waist of the rider.

Of the courage displayed by the Tartars under adverse circumstances, a curious instance is given by Mr. M'Ghee. After one of the charges of Probyn's horse, the Tarsword, had suffered severe loss, and many were stretched on the ground. Among them was the body of a very powerful man, who had carried a handsome lance. As Mr. M'Ghee found himself without arms, in a rather dangerous position, he thought he would arm himself with the lance, and began to diamount.

As he took his foot from the stirrup, the supposed dead man sprang to his feet, lance in hand, and showed fight. An officer just then rode to the rescue with his revolver, and shot the Tartar in the back. The man fell, but rose again, charged the officer with his lance, unhorsed him, and made off, but was killed by a lance thrust from a Sikh horseman. The fact was, his horse had been killed in battle, and he meant to feign death until he could find an opportunity of slipping away. Even the wounded men, knowing nothing of the amenities of civilized war, and expecting no quarter, used to fire at the enemy when they lay writhing with pain on the ground.

These Tartar soldiers are commanded by a general belonging to their own people, and his immediate subordinate is almost inva-riably a Tartar also. The office of Tartar general is one of great importance, because, as the Emperor is always of a Tartar family, it is thought that the safety of his person and dynasty ought to be confided not to a Chinese, but to a Tartar. The lieutenantgeneral, who serves under him, though his post is perhaps the least lucrative in the Imperial household, is glad to hold the ap-pointment, because he is usually selected to

succeed to the generalship.

The chief weapons of these soldiers are the bow and the spear, the sword and firearms playing a comparatively subordinate Being good riders, they naturally part. Defing good rulers, they inturally take to the spear, the true weapon of a horseman, and are drilled in the various modes of delivering a thrust, and of avoiding one, the latter feat being performed with a dexterity almost equalling that of a Camanchee Indian. Although they carry fire-arms with them, they really place little dependence on the heavy, clumsy weapons which they use, that require two men to fire them, and generally knock down the firer by the recoil. Nor do they care very much for the improved fire-arms of Europeans, for, as one warrior said, guns get

out of order, spears and swords do not.

The bow of the Tartar (which has spread throughout all China) is much on the principle of the reversed bows which have already been described, though the curve is not so continuous. The bow is nearly straight for the greater part of its length, and then takes an abrupt curve within a foot or so of each end. One of these bows, in my collection, is nearly six feet in length, tar cavalry, in spite of their skill in evading and measures two inches in width. About

IINESE BATTLE - DASH TARTAR" - THE BOW, THE TARTAR ARROW-CHINESE.

officers. But, when re not good soldiers ed to enemies much ho had the opporattle, describes it as reat many soldiers

he contest than was nto the line of fire, ter behind a grave, rave from each side y came my way it er side of a creek, tant, to the people then of the rebels, other, was almost

rimed and loaded, of a grave-hillock, the top, and, with-way. There is no way. There is no shot they use; the merely dropped in

ene on an occasion pels made a sortie. off by an imperial piece loaded. The arge his; so he ran ve, which was high my from shooting side. Hare hunt-Red-cap described royalist was fast gods took pity on nlucky chance, the

seven inches from each end, a broad piece | more than fifty pounds, and having a handle of bone nearly an inch in length is fixed to in a hollow cut in its upper surface. the bow, so that the string passes over it, and does not strike against the wood.

The strength of these bows is enormous,

varying, according to our mode of reckoning, from sixty to ninety pounds. The weapon is strung in manner somewhat resembling that which has already been described in connection with Indian bows. It must be done in a moment, or not at all, and the only method of doing so is, by placing it behind the right thigh and in front of the left, and then bending it with a sudden stoop of the body, at the same time slipping the loop of the string into its notch. My own weapon is so powerful that I can scarcely make any impression upon it, though I have used my best efforts.

The soldiers undergo a vast amount of practice in the use of this weapon, of which they are as proud as were the English archers of their long-bow and cloth-yard arrow. They have a saying, that the first and most important duty of a soldier is to be a good archer, and that a man ought even to sleep with a bow in his hands. In order to instruct them in the proper attitude of an archer, they have invented a simple piece of machinery, by means of which the soldier undergoes a vast amount of "position drill," so that he may learn to keep his body straight and firm, his shoulders immovable, and his hands in the right position.

From a beam or branch are suspended two rings, which can be moved up and down, to suit the height of the learner. The young archer places his hands in the rings as far as the wrists, and then goes through the various movements of the weapon. When he can satisfy his instructor, a bow is placed in his hands, and he then practises the art of drawing the string to its proper ten-sion. Lastly, he has an arrow besides, and shoots it repeatedly. The head of the arrow is blunted, and the target is a piece of stout leather, hung loosely at a little distance, so that it partially yields to the arrow, and allows the missile to fall to the

The arrow corresponds to the bow. One of these missiles in my collection is three feet three inches in length. It is made of some light wood, and is terminated by a flat, spear-shaped head, two inches long and one inch wide. The other end of the arrow is expanded, so as to allow a large "nock" for the reception of the thick string, and is bound with fish-skin as far as the feathers, which are exactly a foot in length. The shaft is extremely slight in comparison with

the length of the arrow. These men train their muscular powers to a great extent, and have several exercises for this purpose. One of them is called Suay-tau, or throwing the weight. They

thei

and

of t with

ban

shop

plou

wor

or r

and

char

etor

obta

at P

prov

rebe if th

over

their

The men mark out a square on the ground, and the players stand at some distance apart. One of them takes the stone, swings it once or twice, and hurls it in the air toward the next player. It is thrown with such skill that the hollow always comes uppermost, and the stone descends into the hand with a shock that makes the man spin round on his heels. The same movement, however, is utilized to give force to the stone; and so the players pass this heavy weight from one to the other with apparent ease, and with the regularity of a machine. A similar exercise is conducted with a

heavy sand-bag.

It may easily be imagined how such men would vanquish in battle the comparatively sluggish Chinese, and how they would impose upon them many of their manners and pose upon their many of their manners and customs. But, though they succeeded in their conquest, though they changed the dress of the Chinese, though they placed a Tartar monarch on the throne, and though they have been the chief military necessaries. they have been the chief military power in China, they have themselves suffered a far severer, though slower, conquest at the

hands of the vanquished.

The Chinese, being essentially a contemplative and intellectual nation, care very little for military ability, so that the lowest civil mandarin feels a thorough contempt for the highest military mandarin, because the active life of the latter precludes him from following up those peculiar studies which can raise a Chinese from the state of a peasant to that of the highest in the land. Especially do the Chinese despise their intellectual capacities, though they may appreciate and utilize their bodily strength and military prowess. "The Tartars," said a

Chinese shopkeeper, "are cows."

The extraordinary reaction of the vanquished upon their conquerors is admirably put by Mr. Fleming, in his "Travels on Horseback in Mantchu Tartary."

"By dint of their extraordinary industry, thrifty habits, an unceasing desire to accumulate wealth by any amount of plodding, cunning, or hardship, the Chinaman has wormed himself beyond the Great Wall, built towns and villages, cultivated every rood of land, and is at once the farmer and the trader everywhere. He claims the best part of Mantchuria as his own, and dares even to scandalize the Tartar race in their own capital, though it is barely two centuries since that race filed in long cavalry troops through those gates at Shan-kis-Kwan, and were introduced by an indiscreet Chinese general to the vast empire which they soon conquered and sternly governed.

"Now the Chinese seem the conquerors, for they have not only obtained possession Suay-tau, or throwing the weight. They of the land, and converted it into a region have a nearly square stone, weighing rather thoroughly Chinese, but they have imposed and having a handle

upper surface. a square on the s stand at some disem takes the stone, and hurls it in the ayer. It is thrown hollow always comes ne descends into the makes the man spin he same movement, give force to the ers pass this heavy other with apparent larity of a machine. conducted with a

ined how such men e the comparatively now they would imf their manners and they succeeded in they changed the nough they placed a throne, and though of military power in elves suffered a far , conquest at the

ssentially a contemnation, care very, so that the lowest thorough contempt mandarin, because tter precludes him e peculiar studies se from the state of highest in the land. ese despise their inigh they may appreodily strength and e Tartars," said a e cows."

action of the vanuerors is admirably his "Travels on artary." aordinary industry,

ing desire to accu-

nount of plodding, he Chinaman has t the Great Wall, s, cultivated every nce the farmer and He claims the best is own, and dares artar race in their barely two centud in long cavalry ates at Shan-kised by an indiscreet vast empire which sternly governed. m the conquerors, btained possession d it into a region hey have imposed

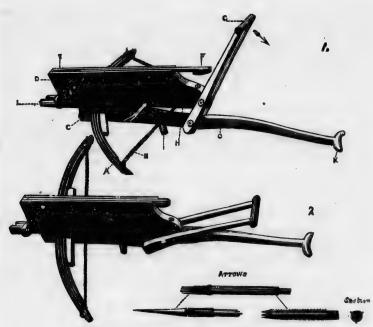
their language, their habits and customs, and every trait belonging to them, on those of the original occupants who choose to mix trace of their invaders in their own country. of the original occupants who choose to mix with them, and ousted out every grim old banner-man who would not condescend to shopkeeping, or handling the spade or

plough.
"There is not the most trifling Mantchu word to designate town, hamlet, mountain, or river, in use among the people nowadays, and anything that might at all tell of the character and power of the original proprietors is entirely effaced. If the Mantchus chtsined possession of the Dragon Throne. obtained possession of the Dragon Throne at Pekin, partly by force of arms in military prowess, and partly by perfdy, aided by rebellions among the Chinese themselves; if they compelled the hundreds of millions over whom they found cause to rule to alter their dress, wear tails, and perhaps smoke ness."

and leaving the existence of the usurpers all but traditionary in the metropolis where, two hundred years ago, they held their court, and where one of their kings boldly vowed vengeance for seven great grievances that he imagined had been brought on him by the Chinese Emperor.

him by the Chinese Emperor.

"Nothing prevents the invasion of the Corea by these wonderful Chinese but the high palisade that keeps them within the limits of Mantchuria. For, if once they got a footing in that country, the Coreans would suffer the same fate as the Mantchus, and there is no telling when these sons of Ham would stop in their bloodless aggrandizement and territorial acquisitiveness."



BEPEATING CROSSBOW. (From my Collection.) (See page 1434.)

CHAPTER CLIII.

CHINA.

APPEARANCE - DRESS - FOOD.

APPEARANCE OF THE CHINESE - MODE OF PLAITING THE "TAIL" - THE CHINESE BARBER - THE REFUSE HAIR AND ITS USES - CEREMONIOUS EMPLOYMENT OF THE TAIL - DRESSING THE HAIR OF THE WOMEN - MUTUAL ASSISTANCE - POWDER FOR THE SKIN, AND MODE OF APPLYING IT-SMALL FEET OF THE CHINESE WOMEN - ORIGIN AND DATE OF THE CUSTOM OF COMPRESSING THE FEET - DRESS OF THE WOMEN - DRESS OF THE MEN - THE "BUTTON" OF RANK - SYSTEM OF EXAMINATION - INGENIOUS MODES OF EVASION - EXCEPTION IN FAVOR OF OLD AGE - THE FAN AND ITS VARIOUS USES — CHINESE LANTERNS — THE "STALKING-HORSE LANTERN" — FEAST OF LANTERNS-THE GREAT DRAGON-CHOPSTICKS, AND THE MODE OF USING THEM-THE CASE OF CHOPSTICKS - FOOD OF THE CHINESE - LIVING CRABS - BIRDS'-NEST SOUP - TEA, AND MODE OF PREPARATION.

WE now come to China, a country of such ! extent, so thickly populated, and containing so many matters of interest, that justice could not be fully done if an entire volume were devoted to it. We will therefore restrict ourselves to a selection of those particulars in which the Chinese appear to offer the greatest contrast to Europeans.

The appearance of the Chinese possess many of the characteristics of the Tartar, both nations being different branches of the same great family. The Chinese, however, are, as a rule, of a less determined and manly cast than the Tartars, and have about them a sort of effeminacy which accounts for the conquest suffered at their hands.

One of the chief peculiarities in a Chinaman's appearance is his "tail." This mode of dressing the hair was imposed upon the Chinese by the Tartars, and has remained in full force ever since. The Tae-ping rebels, however, viewing the "tail" as an ignominious sign of conquest, refuse to wear it, and allow the whole of their hair to

With the loyal Chinese, however, the tail has become quite an institution, and they regard it with the same sort of reverence which is felt by an Arab, a Turk, or a Persian for his beard. It is scarcely possible to punish a Chinaman more severely than by

supply its place with an artificial tail curiously woven into the hair, he feels the indignity very keenly. Sometimes, when two men are to be punished severely, they are tied together by their tails, and exposed to the derision of the public.

The tail bears some resemblance to the scalp-lock of the American Indian, but it includes very much more hair than is comprehended in the scalp-lock. The Chinaman shaves the hair from his forehead and round the temples, but leaves a circular patch of tolerable size, the hair of which is allowed to grow to its full length. Sometimes, if the patch be not large enough to nourish a sufficient quantity of hair to produce a good tail, it is enlarged by allowing more and more hair to grow at each successive shaving. On an average, the head is shaved once in ten days, and no one would venture to go into good society unless the hair of his head were clean shaven. As for his face, he has so few hairs upon it, that he does not trouble the barber very much with his countenance.

Owing to the position of the tail, a man cannot dress it properly without aid, and, chiefly for this purpose, the peripatetic barber has become quite an institution in China. All the materials of his trade are carried at the ends of a bamboo pole, cutting off his tail, and, though he may which the barber carries in yoke fashion

acros requ his s sets : custo Ve barbe prim by or

half-p kind. a pen cost,

exper but, a set up six or living supply ment locks artific by na The in wh

These stitiou

the w collect

his bas basket combe and me the she are us being seed o univers wearin very g exceed The

among of the h it is a the tail any one an equa hanging be thou an Eng lady's movin r are at w cherishe so as to if a man happen tails at o Durin

the com that the ance of trouble tails hu were tw According across his shoulders. When his services are took advantage of this ignorance, and, required, he puts down his load, arranges though they would lower their tails for the his simple apparatus in a few moments, and meanest official who happened to pass near

by one inch wide, which cost, perhaps, three half-pence, or twopence if it be of the best kind. There is the linen strop, which costs a penny, and a bamboo seat and table, which six or seven shillings, and can make a good living by his business. This sum includes a supply of black silk, wherewith to supplement the tails of his customers, and a few locks of real hair, with which he can supply artifical tails in cases where they are denied

The customer always holds a sort of basin in which to catch the clippings of hair. These are preserved, not from any superstitious ideas, as is the case in many parts of the world, but are put aside for the hair collector, who makes his daily rounds with his basket on his back. The contents of the basket are carefully utilized. The long hair combed from women's heads is separated and made into false tails for the men, while the short pieces shaven from men's heads are used as manure, a tiny pinch of hair being inserted into the ground with each seed or plantlet. In consequence of the universal practice of shaving the head and wearing a tail, the number of barbers is very great, and in 1858 they were said to exceed seven thousand in Canton alone.

the tail to hang at full length, and any one who ventured to address an equal without having his tail hanging down his back would be thought as boorish as would an Englishman who went into a lady's drawing-room without removing his hat. When the people are at work, they always coil the cherished tail round their heads, so as to get it out of the way; but if a man of superior rank should happen to pass, down go all the tails at once.

During the late war in China, the common people soon found that the English, in their ignorance of Chinese customs, did not trouble themselves whether the tails hung down their backs or were twisted round their heads. Accordingly, Oriental-like, they

sets to work upon the cherished tail of his them, they made no sign even when an stomer. Very little capital is required to set up a $\frac{English}{of}$ general came by. However, one of the English officers discovered this $rusc_i$ barber in trade. There is the razor, a most and every now and then one of them used primitive triangle of steel, two inches long to go through the streets and compel every Chinaman to let down his tail.

The tail is never entirely composed of the hair of the wearer. Sometimes it is almost wholly artificial, a completely new tail being cost, perhaps, twopence each. There is one fixed to a worn-out stump, and, as a general expensive article, namely, the brass basin, rule, the last eighteen inches are almost enbut, as a rule, a Chinese barber can be well tirely made of black silk. Besides being a but, as a rule, a Chinese barber can be well tirely made of black silk. Besides being a set up in trade at the expenditure of about mark of fashion, the tail is often utilized. A sailor, for example, will tie his hat to his head with his tail when the wind rises, and a schoolmaster sometimes uses his tail in lieu of a cane.

Absurd as the tail looks when worn by any except a Chinese or Tartar, it rertainly does seem appropriate to their cast of countenance, and it is to be doubted whether the Tartar conquerors did not confer a benefit instead of inflicting an injury on the Chinese

by the enforcement of the tail.

The hair of the women is not shaven, but on the contrary, additions are made to it While they are unmarried, it hangs down the back in a long queue, like that of the men; but when they marry, it is dressed in various fantastic forms. There is a very fashionable ornament in China, called the "butterfly's wings." This is a quantity of false hair made in fanciful imitation of a huge butterfly, and fastened to the back of a wamen's head. Eaching however, were a woman's head. Fashions, however, vary in different parts of China, and even in the same locality the women are not tied to the absolute uniformity which distinguishes the The right management of the tail is, hair of the men. One mode of hair-dressing among the Chinese, what the management which is very prevalent makes the hair look of the hat is among ourselves. For example, very much like a teapot, the long tress was



MUTUAL ASSESTANCE.

OM OF COMPRESSING " OF RANK —SYSTEM R OF OLD AGE -THE E LANTERN" - FEAST F USING THEM - THE EST SOUP -TEA, AND

INESE BARBER-THE

-DRESSING THE HAIR

DE OF APPLYING IT-

artificial tail curihair, he feels the Sometimes, when shed severely, they r tails, and exposed olic. esemblance to the

can Indian, but it hair than is comlock. The Chinaleaves a circular e hair of which is ull length. Somet large enough to tity of hair to prolarged by allowing grow at each suc-average, the head days, and no one good society unless clean shaven. As hairs upon it, that barber very much

of the tail, a man without aid, and, , the peripatetic an institution in s of his trade are a bamboo pole, in yoke fashion

made from wood shavings. Another mode of hair-dressing which prevails in Northern China is thus described by Mr. Fleming: "Here it is dressed and gummed in the form of an ingot of sycee silver, which is something in shape like a cream-jug, or an eval cup, wide at the top and narrow at the bottom, with a piece scooped out of the edge at each side, and with bright-colored flowers fastened by, or stuck about with skewers and pins, that stand out like porcupine quills. Though their necks be ever so dirty, and their faces not much better, yet the hair must be as exquisitely trimmed and plastered, according to the local rage, as that in a wax model seen in a London barber's shop-window."

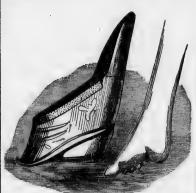
In the accompanying illustration two women are shown, who render aid to each other in arranging their hair after the "tea-pot" fashion. In the households of Chinese women, dressing-cases are considered almost the chief requisites of life. In the drawers are the combs, pins, and paint for the cheeks and lips, and the white powder which is rubbed into the skin. This powder is made from white marble, which is broken small with a hammer, and then thrown into a tub in which revolve two stones turned by a buffalo, just like the wheels which are used in making gunpowder. The coarsely ground mass is then transferred, together with water, to a second mill, in which it is reduced to a mixture like cream. This creamy substance is then levigated in a succession of tubs, the sediment of which is taken out and returned to the mill, and the remainder is allowed to settle, the superfluous water drawn off, and the sediment pressed, while still moist, into cakes

When used it is not only rubbed on the skin, but actually worked into it with string, which is placed on the hands in a sort of cat'scradle, and worked backward and forward until the required effect is produced. This powder is also used to give rice a factitious whiteness. The coarser portions are employed for making whitewash and whitening mortar.

Many of the Chinese of both sexes are remarkable for the great length to which they allow their nails to grow. This is supposed to be a sign of rank or literary occupation, inasmuch as the nails would be broken by any laborious work. For this purpose, they are kept carefully oiled to prevent them from being brittle, and are further preserved by being enclosed in tubes which slip over the end of the finger. These tubes are sometimes of bamboo, sometimes of silver, and a few of the most precious minerals.

The feet of the Chinese women are often more strangely decorated than their heads. A vast number of the women have their feet cramped by bandages into a state which

being held in their place by a strong cement | which to walk, or rather totter. It is not only the rich who are thus deformed, but the poorest often have their feet cramped. The operation is begun at a very early age, so that the feet of the full-grown woman may not exceed in size that of a child of five or six. Bandages are bound firmly round the foot in such a way as to force it into an arched shape, the heel being pressed forward and the ball of the foot backward, while the four middle toes are bent under the foot, and so completely squeezed into its substance that they almost lose their identity. In fact, the member is made artificially into a club-foot, which, repugnant as it may be to European eyes, is the delight of the Chinese, who call it metaphorically by the name of "golden



CHINESE WOMAN'S FOOT AND MODEL OF A SHOE.

(From my collection.)

Clay models of these "golden lilies" are sold at many of the shops; and as they are very accurate imitations of the foot, and it is almost impossible to induce a Chinese woman to remove the bandages and exhibit the member, a representation of one of these models is here given. The gait of the woman is necessarily reduced to an awkward waddle. There is no play of the beautiful machinery of the human foot, and the wearer of the "golden lily" walks exactly as she would do if she had no feet at all. Indeed, her gait is even more awkward, inasmuch as the weight of the body is thrown forward upon the great toe, than which nothing can be imagined more opposed to the real intention of the foot.

Fast walking is impossible with these feet, and running is out of the question, the women being obliged to support themselves by holdcramped by bandages into a state which ing to walls or other objects, or to balance renders them little better than mere pegs on themselves by holding out their arms at

right wher wom of fu peari she i diffic tunat Chine which have: can a alway desce: The

with depriv them, gradu that fr scarce Utte covete it try

achiev of woo and fas the rea

remark

in the

ing firn

of hobl

dle wh By a si

parts of

but the it with not in t that the Of th is know which a legend, press of some th having husband his fema that a ce chamber her feet, The emp off the f render th Another attributes named I condemn in the in his own

The dr according seasor detail, wh it is suffici dress is s

women.

her totter. It is not hus deformed, but the r feet cramped. The a very early age, so rown woman may not a child of five or six. mly round the foot in e it into an arched pressed forward and kward, while the four inder the foot, and so to its substance that dentity. In fact, the cially into a club-foot, may be to European the Chinese, who call he name of "golden



OT AND MODEL OF OE.

llection.)

e "golden lilies" are nops; and as they are as of the foot, and it o induce a Chinese bandages and exhiresentation of one of en. The gait of the reduced to an awkno play of the beauhuman foot, and the lily" walks exactly e had no feet at all. n more awkward, inf the body is thrown at toe, than which ed more opposed to e foot.

saible with these feet, question, the women t themselves by holdbjects, or to balance out their arms at

right angles to their bodies. Indeed, even | classes, but with the two sexes, the coat and when walking quietly in the house, the woman generally leans on the various articles of furniture as she passes them, the act ap-pearing to be instinctive, and one of which she is not conscious. Stairs are of course a difficulty in the way of "golden lilies." Fortunately, there are not many stairs in a Chinese dwelling-house, the living rooms of which are mostly on the ground floor. I have noticed that a small-footed Chinawoman broidery of such harmonious coloring and always holds by the banisters or wall as she descends.

The deformity in question does not end with the foot. As the toes and ankles are deprived of motion, the muscles which work them, and which form the calf of the leg, gradually dwindle away for want of use, so that from the ankle to the knee the leg is scarcely thicker than a broomstick.

Utterly hideous as is this deformity, it is coveted 1/all, and those who do not possess it try to look as if they did. This they achieve by making an artificial "golden lily" of wood, putting it into a fashionable shoe, and fastening the contrivance on the sole of the real and serviceable foot. Mr. Milne remarks that a nurse, if called up suddenly in the night, will make her appearance walking firmly on her full-sized bare feet, instead of hobbling along with the fashionable waddle which she has been exhibiting by day. By a similar ruse, the boys who enact female parts on the stage imitate not only the feet but the peculiar walk of the women, and do it with such perfection that no one who was not in the secret would have the least idea that they are not what they pretend to be.

Of the origin or date of the custom nothing is known, though there are various legends which attempt to account for both. One legend, for example, attributes it to an empress of China named Tan-key, who lived some three thousand years ago, and who, having club feet by nature, induced her husband to impose the same deformity on all his female subjects. Another legend states that a certain empress was discovered in the chamber of a courtier, and laid the fault on her feet, which carried her against her will The emperor accepted the excuse, but cut off the fore-part of her feet in order to render them more subordinate for the future. Another legend, which is a very popular one, attributes the custom to a contain prince named Le-yuh, who in co someowas condemned to seven bundrer ears' torture in the informal regions, and make with

The dress of the Chinese varies greatly coording to the rank of the individual and its season of the year. Without going into letail, which would occupy too much time, is sufficient to say that the principle of the

trousers being the principal articles, modified in material and form according to circumstances. The dress of a mandarin or noble, and of his wife, may be seen in the illustration on the 1437th page. The rich-ness of material and beauty of work displayed in some of these dresses are really marvellous. They are generally of the most delicate silks, and are covered with emexquisite workmanship as no country can equal.

It is not, however, the richness of dress which denotes rank among the Chinese. The symbol of social status is simply a spherical "button," about as large as a boy's planting members of the symbol of the property of the symbol playing marble, placed on the apex of the cap. The different colors and materials of the buttons designate the rank, the "blue ribbon" being a plain red coral button. The possession of these buttons is an object of high ambition for the Chinese, and its value is increased by the fact that there is no hereditary rank in China, and that the coveted button must be earned, and can neither be purchased nor given by favor.

It can only be gained by passing through a series of examinations, each increasing in severity, and no candidate for high rank being permitted to compete unless he can show the certificate that he has gained the rank immediately below it. The examinations are conducted in a building expressly made for the purpose. It has double walls, between which sentingles are continued to the purpose. which sentinels are continually pacing. The gates are watched in the strictest manner. and each candidate is locked into a tiny cell, after having undergone the strictest search in order to ascertain that he has not carried in any scrap of writing that may help him in the examination.

The examiners themselves are conveyed from a distance, and surrounded by troops, so that no one can approach them; and so careful are the officers who conduct the examination that the examiners are not allowed to see the original passages written by the candidates, but only copies made by official scribes. When they have passed a paper as satisfactory, the original is produced, the two are compared, and not until then does any one know the name of the voter, which has

been pasted between two. The precautions are most stringent, but the ingenuity exercised in evasion sometimes conquers all the barriers set up between a candidate and external assistance. his own hands one million shoes for the manage to substitute himself for the candi-Sometimes a man, already a graduate, will date, write all the essays, and contrive a second change on leaving the place, so that the real candidate takes up the substituted essays. Sometimes a friend within the building will learn the subject of the essays, write them in tiny characters on very thin dress is similar, not only among different paper, enclose the paper in wax, and drop it

into the water which is supplied to the can-didates. One man of peculiar daring hit on the plan of getting a friend to tunnel under a brisk fire of shot, shell, and bullets. didates. One man of peculiar daring hit on the plan of getting a friend to tunnel under the walls of the college, and push the required documents through the floor of the cell. Should any such attempt be discovered, the candidate is at once ejected, and disqualified from a second attempt

The Chinese have good reason to be ambitious of the honors of a button, as even the very lowest button exempts the wearer from military service and from arrest by the police. The bearer of this coveted symbol becomes at once one of the privileged classes; he wears an official costume when he likes, and is qualified to enter as candidate for still higher honors. Such privileges are worth much trouble to obtain, and accordingly the rejected candidates will enter the examination year after year, even until they are gray-headed. With the respect for old age which is one of the most pleasing characteristics of the Chinese, there is a law that if a man should attend the examinations annually until he is eighty years of age, and still be unable to pass, he is invested with an honorary degree, and may wear the button and official dress honoris causâ. The same rule holds good with the higher degrees.

The very highest posts in the kingdom are denoted by a peacock's feather, which falls down the side of the cap. The gradations in rank of the feather wearers are marked by the number of "eyes" in the ornament, the summit of a Chinaman's ambition being to wear a feather with three eyes, denoting a rank only inferior to that of the Emperor.

There is one article common to all ranks and both sexes, and equally indispensable to all. This is the fan, an article without which a Chinaman is never seen. The richer people carry the fan in a beautifully embroidered case hung to their girdles; but the poorer class content themselves with sticking it between the collar of the jacket and the back of the neck. Whenever the hand is not actually at work on some task, the fan is in it, and in motion, not violently agitated, as is mostly the case in Europe, but kept playing with a gentle, constant, and almost imperceptible movement of the wrist, so as to maintain a continuous though slight current of air.

Sometimes, in very hot weather, a stout mandarin will quietly lift up the skirts of his jacket, place his fan under the garment, and send a current of cool air round his body; and this done, he drops the skirts afresh into their place, and directs the refreshing breeze over his countenance. Sometimes it is used by vay of a parasol, the man holding it over his head as he walks along. Sometimes the choolmaster uses it by way of a ferule, and raps his pupils un-

The materials and patterns of Chinese fans are innumerable. They are made of paper, silk, satin, palm-leaf, wood, feathers, horn, or ivory. Some of them are made so that when they are opened from left to right they form very good fans, but when spread from right to left all the sticks fall apart, and look as if they never could be united again. Those which are made of paper have various patterns painted or printed on them, and thousands are annually sold on which are complete maps of the larger Chinese cities, having every street and lane marked. Those which are made of silk or satin are covered with the most exquisite embroidery; while the horn and ivory fans are cut into patterns so slight and so delicate that they look more like lace than the material of which they really are composed. The wooden fans are made in much the same way, though the workmanship is necessarily coarser: the material of these fans is sandalwood, the aromatic odor of which is much prized by the Chinese.

Choice sentences and aphorisms from celebrated authors are often written on the fan: and it is the custom for Chinese gentlemen to exchange autographs written on each other's fans. The price of these fans varies according to the material and workmanship, common ones being worth about four or five for a penny, while a first-class fan will cost several pounds.

The lantern is almost as characteristic of the Chinese as the fan, inasmuch as every one who goes alread after dark is obliged by law to carry a lantern, whereas he need not carry a fan urless he chooses. These lan-terns have of late years become very com-mon in England, the subdued light which they give through their colored envelopes having a very pretty effect at night, especially in conservatories. There is a wonderful variety of these lanterns, some of them being most complicated in structure, enormous in size, and hung round with an intricate arrangement of scarlet tassels. Others are made of a balloon-like shape, the framework being a delicate net of bamboo, over which is spread a sheet of very thin paper saturated with varnish, so that it is nearly as transparent as glass. Figures of various kinds are painted upon the lantern, and so great is the sale of these articles, that many artists make a good living by painting them. Generally, when a man buys a lantern, he purchases a plain one, and then takes it to the painter to be decorated. The name of the owner is often placed upon his lantern, together with his address, and sometimes the lantern is used as a representative of himself.

mercifully on the knuckles; and so invete-rate is the use of the fan, that soldiers, while principle of the fan; some of them open out

into cy One is- the only us tapers set rev the flar are led of mer which the who this lar work, th most co of order So co carrying

China, v

our fire

driven

away in

lantern of the er In con brated F ted. In lantern used, an bring ou lantern " The chie Dragon. of a num beer barr within it. are some single D neighbor. distance f enormous

the other

This D

Bions.

and villag fect as it bearers co movement different i lival is he he Drago various far he attend have heads they are weapons. and dwarfs houlders y the robe 10ys whose which the i the bear beir faces.

Various acted, of wen for w ave been observed lves in the midst of il, and bullets.

terns of Chinese fans vare made of paper, vood, feathers, horn, m are made so that om left to right they it when spread from s fall apart, and look d be united again. of paper have varior printed on them, ually sold on which the larger Chinese et and lane marked. of silk or satin are xquisite embroidery; ry fans are cut into o delicate that they nan the material of e composed. The

aphorisms from celea written on the fan; chinese gentlemen as written on each of these fans varies al and workmanship, rth about four or five the class fan will cost

in much the same anship is necessarily

these fans is sandalr of which is much

t as characteristic of , inasmuch as every er dark is obliged by whereas he need not chooses. These lans become very comsubdued light which r colored envelopes effect at night, es-ories. There is a ories. There is a ese lanterns, some of licated in structure, hung round with an of scarlet tassels. alloon-like shape, the cate net of bamboo, sheet of very thin arnish, so that it is as glass. Figures of ed upon the lantern, ale of these articles, e a good living by erally, when a man chases a plain one, the painter to be of the owner is often n, together with his the lantern is used imself.

shut up flat, on the

into cylinders, and some into spherical and oval shapes.

One of the most ingenious of these articles is the "stalking-horse lantern," which is only used for festivals. It is of large size, and contains several tapers. Above the tapers is a horizontal paddle-wheel, which is set revolving by the current of air caused by the flame, and from the wheel silk threads are led to a series of little automaton figures of men, women, birds, beasts, etc., all of which move their arms, legs, and wings as the wheel runs round. A good specimen of this lantern is really a wonderful piece of work, the threads crossing each other in the most complicated style, but never getting out of order.

So completely is the Chinaman a lanterncarrying being, that, during our war in China, when a battery had been silenced by our fire in a night attack, and the garrison driven out, the men were seen running away in all directions, each with a lighted lantern in his hand, as if to direct the aim of the enemy's musketry.

of the enemy's musketry.

In connection with this subject, the celebrated Feast of Lanterns must not be omitted. In this remarkable ceremony, every lantern that can be lighted seems to be used, and the Chinese on this occasion bring out the complicated "stalking-horse lantern" which has jus been described. The chief object, however, is the Great Dragon. The body of the Dragon is made of a number of lanterns, each as large as a beer barrel, and having large candles fastened within it. Nearly a hundred of these joints are sometimes used in the construction of a single Dragon, each joint being tied to its neighbor, so as to keep them at the same distance from each other. At one end is an enormous head with gaping jaws, and at the other is a tail of proportionate dimensions.

This Dragon is carried through the streets and villages, and has a most picturesque effect as it goes winding along its course, the learers contriving to give it an undulating movement by means of the sticks to which the different joints are attached. A similar festifferent joints are attached. A similar festifferent joints are attached. A similar festifferent joints are a number of men dressed in arious fantastic ways, as representations of the attendants of the gods. Some of them have heads like oxen, others like horses, and they are all armed with curious pronged reapons. Then there are simulated giants and dwarfs, the former being carried on the shoulders of men whose legs are concealed the robes of the image, and the latter by loys whose heads are received into the hats thich the images wear. In neitner instance the bearers trouble themselves to conceal their faces.

Various ceremonies of a like nature are mated, of which no description can be wen for want of space.

Or the Chinaman's social habits none has been more widely known than the use of the "chopsticks," or the two little rods by means of which the solid food is eaten. This is not the Chinese name, but is one invented by foreigners, who have employed the term as a sort of equivalent for the "kwai-tzze," or nimble-lads, as they are very appropriately termed by the Chinese. Originally they were simply two slips of bamboo, but now they are of wood, bone, ivory, or sometimes silver. Two pairs of chopsticks in my collection are nearly ten inches in length, and about as thick at the base as a small goosequill, tapering gradually to half the thickness at the tip.

Much misunderstanding prevails as to the use of the chopsticks, many persons supposing that they are held one in each hand, after the manner of knives and forks in Europe. These curious implements are both held in the right hand after the following manner: One of them is taken much as a pen is held, except that, instead of being held by the thumb and forefinger, it passes between the tips of the second and third fingers. This chopstick is always kept stationary. The second chopstick is held lightly between the thumb and forefinger, and can be worked so as to press with its tip against the point of the other, and act after the manner of pincers.

The adroitness displayed by the Chinese in the use of these implements is worthy of all admiration. I have seen them pick up single grains of rice with the chopsticks, dip them in soy, and carry them to the mouth with perfect precision; and, indeed, after some few lessons, I could do it tolerably well myself. In eating rice after the usual manner, the tips of the chopsticks are crossed, and the rice lifted with them as if on a spoon. If, however, the man be very hungry, he does not trouble himself about such refinement, but holds the bowl to his lips, and scoops the rice into his mouth with a celerity that must be seen to be believed. In point of speed a spoon would be nothing compared with the chopstick.

The reader must understand that the Chinese never carve at table, thinking that to do so is an utterly barbarous and disgusting custom. The meatis brought to table ready cut up into small morsels, which can be taken up with the chopsticks. The only use made of a knife at table is to separate any smell pieces of meat that may adhere together; and for this purpose, a narrow, long-bladed knife is generally kept in the same sheath with the chopstick.

As a rule, every Chinaman who can afford so cheap a luxury has his chopstick-case hanging from his girdle. The case is made of different materials, such as shagreen, tortoise shell, and ivory. Specimens of the two latter kinds of ease are in my collection. The ordinary case contains the two chop-

Sometimes, however, a wealthy man will carry a much more complicated set of table apparatus. Besides the usual chopsticks, the knife, and the toothpick, there is a spoon for eating soup, a neat little quatrefoil saucer for soy, and a peculiar two-pronged fork, with its prongs united in the middle by a

floriated ornament.

As to the food of the Chinese, it varies according to the wealth of the individual, so that a man of property would not think of eating the food which the poor man thinks luxurious. In fact, it is much the same as with ourselves, so that it is impossible to make the dietary of one station the sample for that of the nation in general. There are, perhaps, one or two articles of food which ought to be casually mentioned. One, which is not generally known, is rather graphically described by Mr. Milne: "Like other Chinese, he" (i.e. a Chinese officer named Le) "invited me to dine with him on an early day after our acquaintance was formed. On this occasion I met at his table with a peculiar dish, which I had never seen under the roof of any other host, though I was informed that it was not a monopoly of Mr. Le's taste.

"When our party of six had seated themselves at the centre table, my attention was attracted by a covered dish, something unusual at a Chinese meal. On a certain signal, the cover was removed, and presently the face of the table was covered with juve-nile crabs, which made their exodus from the dish with all possible rapidity. The crablets had been thrown into a plate of The vinegar just as the company sat down, such an immersion making them more brisk and lively than usual. But the sprightly sport of the infant crabs was soon checked by each guest seizing which he could, dashing it into his mouth, and swallowing the whole

morsel without ceremony.

"Determined to do as the Chinese did, I tried this novelty also with one. With two I succeeded, finding the shell soft and gelatinous, for they were tiny creatures, not more than a day or two old. But I was compelled to give in to the third, who had resolved to take vengeance, and gave my lower lip a nip so sharp and severe as to make me relinquish my hold, and likewise desist from any further experiment of this nature."

The celebrated birds'-nests, which the or presents.

sticks, the knife, and a flat ivory toothpick. | Chinese convert into soup, are not, as some persons seem to think, made of sticks, and straws, and wool, but are formed from he gelatinous substance obtained by masticating a sort of seaweed. The nests are transparent, as if made of gelatine, and when placed in hot water they dissolve as readily. The nest, when dissolved, is very much like the well-known "Irish moss," or carrageen; and I fully believe that, if the Chinese were to obtain the seaweed itself, and prepare it like the nests, it would answer every purpose. I possess specimens both of the seaweed and the nest, and, after tasting both, have found them to be identical in flavor and consistence. And, as the seaweed might be obtained for about ten shillings per hundredweight, and the finest kind of nest costs eight hundred pounds for the same amount, the importation of the seaweed instead of the nests from Java might be a good speculation.

With regard to the great staple of the country, namely tea, very little can be said here. In the first place, the public is very well informed on the subject, and, in the next, the tea question is so large that it would occupy far too great space. The mode of preparing tea differs much from that practised by ourselves. Instead of allowing the tea to be made and then to stand for a considerable time, the Chinaman puts a little tea into a cup, pours boiling rainwater on it, inverts the saucer over it, so as to prevent the aroma from escaping, and drinks it immediately, using the saucer as a strainer whereby to keep the tea-leaves out of his mouth. As to adulterating the tea with such abominations as cream and sugar, he would be horrified at the idea. The Chinese never use milk for themselves, though of late years they have learned to milk their buffaloes for the service of the foreigner, and they consume sugar in almost every

shape except in tea. We who use either of these accessories cannot understand the true flavor of tea, the aroma of which is as much destroyed by such admixture as would be that of the choi cest wine. Even those who do not spoil their tea in the usual manner can seldom know what the best tea is, because it is never sent to this country. Not in China can a foreigner purchase it, as it is not made for general sale, but is reserved for "cumshawa,"

WEAPON A

IT A1 O1 U8

A8

RO

WITHO fare in of the c Fire-

them fo have be provem the can being a two cer more th to stren and bore of size in for it, ar cannon, push it thought rather Chinese

by one ir as they c Clums to be the arms. I and is s though t ally of Some of

on tripod

from tim

is supplie which ca soup, are not, as some k, made of sticks, and are formed from he btained by masticating ie nests are transpartine, and when placed olve as readily. The is very much like the ss," or carrageen; and the Chinese were to elf, and prepare it like nswer every purpose. both of the seaweed ter tasting both, have tical in flavor and conseaweed might be ob-shillings per hundred-st kind of nest costs for the same amount, e seaweed instead of ight be a good spec-

e great staple of the ery little can be said ace, the public is very subject, and, in the n is so large that it po great space. The ea differs much from urselves. Instead of nade and then to stand e, the Chinaman puts p, pours boiling rainne saucer over it, so as a from escaping, and , using the saucer as a eep the tea-leaves out adulterating the tea ns as cream and sugar, at the idea. The Chior themselves, though e learned to milk their vice of the foreigner, ugar in almost every

r of these accessories e true flavor of tea, the s much destroyed by ild be that of the choiwho do not spoil their nner can seldom know ecause it is never sent in China can a forit is not made for gen-rved for "cumshaws,"

CHAPTER CLIV.

CHINA - Continued.

WARFARE.

WEAPONS OF THE CHINESE - BREECH-LOADING CANNON - VARIOUS FORES OF THE JINGALL - CHINESE ARTILLERYMEN AND THEIR MAGAZINE - DOWS AND ARROWS - THE REPEATING CROSS-BOW AND ITS MECHANISM -- CONSTRUCTION OF THE ARROWS -- CHINESE SWORDS -- THE DOUBLE SWORD, AND MODE OF USING IT -TWO-HANDED SWORDS - CRUELTY OF THE VICTORS - VARIOUS MODES OF TOBTURE - KNEELING ON THE CHAIN - THE CANGUE - FINGER AN ANKLE SQUEEZING -USE OF TORTURE IN MONEY-GETTING -- THE LARGE AND SMALL BAMBOO -- MODE OF EVADING IT -- EXPOSURE IN A CAGE -- THE HOT-WATER SNAKE -- CAPITAL PUNISHMENTS -- SUICIDE BY ORDER - STRANGLING - CLUCIFIXION PREFERRED TO BEHEADING - EXECUTION OF A THIEF - SAWING ASUNDER - CONDUCTOR THE MANDARINS - THE "UMBRELLA OF A THOUSAND PROPLE" - THE ROBE OF HONOR - TRANSFER OF RANK.

WITHOUT going into the question of warfare in China, we will mention one or two of the characteristic weapons.

Fire-arms have apparently been known to them for ages, but in all the years that we have been acquainted with China, no improvement has been made in these weapons, the cannon, the jingall, and the hand-gun being as rude and ineffective as they were two centuries ago. The cannon are little to strengthen them, and of various lengths and bores. As to preserving any exactness of size in the bores, the Chinese care little for it, and if the ball is too small to fit the cannon, they wrap it up in cotton and then oush it upon the powder. Wadding is push to upon the powder. wadding is thought to be needless in fire-arms. It is ather remarkable, however, that the Chinese have used breech-loading cannon from time immemorial. Each of these guns is supplied with several separate chambers, which can be kept loaded, and dropped one by one into the aperture of the gun as fast as they can be fired.

Clumsy as may be the jingall, it appears to be the most efficient of the Chinese fire-

ported on the shoulder of an assistant gunner while the firer takes aim, or rest upon two supports which are pivoted to the stock not very far from the muzzle of the gun. Of the manner in which the jingall is fired, Captain Blakiston gives a very amusing ac-count, the whole proceeding having a very ludicrous aspect to an English artillery officer.

"We explained to them that we should more than thick tubes of iron, mostly hooped like to see some practice with their artillery, on which the bombardier, as he seemed to be, went to the powder magazine, which was an old sack carefully tied up and lying urder a bed in the hut, and brought forth
th harge in a tea-cup. Then he mounted
on a stool, and poured the powder in at the
muzzle; the jingall was thumped on the ground, and with a long bamboo, which served as a ramrod, they rammed the pow-der home. A little of the already soft powder was then mealed, and the touch-hole filled with it.

"One man then held on tight to the butt, while another, coming out with a hot poker, discharged the weapon, the effect of which in noise and smoke was marvellous; but the and is supposed to carry an ounce ball, though the missiles sent from it are generally of a very miscellaneous character. Some of these guns are pivoted and fixed on tripod stands, while others are either supceeding. Suddenly swinging round the jingall on its pivot, he applied his mouth to the muzzle, and blew violently down it, which sent the remaining sparks flying out of the vent, and then swung it back into its former position, by which manœuvre he nearly knocked my companion off his legs.

"The piece was then left with its muzzle inclined well upward, so that any rain which might fall would trickle nicely down the barrel and accumulate at the breech. The picket seemed to be without any shot for their jingall, for we tried to get them to put one in, so that we might fire across the bows of our junks, in order to test the courage of the boat coolies. Probably shot are not used in the warfare of the interior: our after experience was favorable to this supposition.

Captain Blakiston rather maliciously adds, that the picket was placed there for the purpose of giving an alarm by running away as soon as any body of rebels might come in

I possess a specimen of the jingall. It is exactly seven feet in length, and is, in fact, nothing more than a heavy iron tube mounted on a stock, and supplied with the rudest imaginable arrangement for the match. Altogether, I think that the risk of firing it would be rather greater than that of

being fired at with it.

As for the bow and arrow, they are substantially the same as that which has been described when treating of the Tartars, the weapon having been taken up by the Chinese, and its use carefully learned after the same fashion as has been mentioned.

The most characteristic Chinese weapon with which I am acquainted is the repeating crossbow (shown on page 1425), which, by simply working a lever backward and forward, drops the arrows in succession in front of the string, draws the bow, shoots the missile, and supplies its place with another. The particular weapon from which the drawings are taken was said to have been one of the many arms which were captured in the Peiho fort.

It is not at all easy to describe the working of this curious bow, but, with the aid of the illustration, I will try to make it intelli-

gible.

The bow itself is made of three strong, separate pieces of bamboo, overlapping each other like the plates of a carriage-spring, which indeed it exactly resembles. This is mounted on a stock, and, as the bow is in-tended for wall defence, it is supported in the middle by a pivot. So far, we have a simple crossbow; we have now to see how the repeating machinery is constructed. Upon the upper surface of the stock lies an oblong box, which we will call the "slide."
It is just wide and long enough to contain the arrows, and is open above, so as to allow which the weapon rests, K is the hand them to be dropped into it. When in the L the place whence the arrows issue.

slide, the arrows necessarily lie one above the other, and, in order to prevent them from being jerked out of the slide by the shock of the bowstring, the opening can be closed by a little wooden shutter which slides over it.

Through the lower part of the slide a tranverse slit is cut, and the bowstring is led through this cut, so that the string presses the slide upon the stock. Now we come to the lever. It is shaped like the Greek letter w the cross-piece forming the handle. The lever is jointed to the stock by an iron pin or bolt, and to the slide by another bolk. Now, if the lever be worked to and fro, the slide is pushed backward and forward along the stock, but without any other result.

Supposing that we wish to make the lever draw the bow, we have only to cut a notch in the under part of the slit through which the string is led. As the slide passes along the stock, the string by its own pressure falls into the notch, and is drawn back, together with the slide, thus bending the bow. Still, however much we may work the lever, the string will remain in the notch, and must therefore be thrown out by a kind of trigger. This is self-acting, and is equally simple and ingenious. Immediately under the notch which holds the string, a wooden peg plays loosely through a hole. When the slide is thrust forward and the string falls into the notch, it pushes the peg out of the hole. But when the lever and slide are drawn backward to their full extent, the lower end of the peg strikes against the stock, so that it is forced violently through the hole, and pushes the string out of the notch.

We will now refer to the illustration. Fig. 1 represents the bow as it appears after the lever and slide have been thrust forward, and the string has fallen into the notch. Fig. 2 represents it as it appears when the lever has been brought back, and

the string released. A is the bow, made of three layers of male bamboo, the two outer being the longest. B is the string. This is made of very thick catgut, as is needed to withstand the amount of friction which it has to undergo, and the violent shock of the bow. It is fastened in a wonderfully ingenious manner, by a "hitch" rather than a knot, so that it is drawn tighter in proportion to the tension. It passes round the end of the bow, through a hole, and then presses upon itself.

C C show the stock, and D is the slide. E is the opening of the slide, through which the arrows are introduced into it, and it is shown as partially closed by the little shutter F. The lever is seen at G, together with the two pins which connect it with the stock and the slide. H shows the notch in the slide which receives the string. I is the pivot on which the weapon rests, K is the handle, and

If t descri only l ness w and fr drops and ar of the back, t peg, t kept a rows, a poured The

of the armed are fea The fe they a scratch feather inch fr slightly and im By the seeu a l The though

possessi

against

would 1

which : which w body of and car modern said to b think th the most even in except a Ofswo variety. and ther are carr used one two-swor understa son not Chinese

But in s about th mill, and fencer le side and cannot be would be and also whirling Two-ha of these

feet six i more than blade is th in width. back is a ssarily lie one above of the slide by the the opening can be oden shutter which

part of the slide a nd the bowstring is so that the string the stock. Now we shaped like the Greek forming the handle. the stock by an iron slide by another bolt. orked to and fro, the d and forward along my other result. wish to make the

have only to cut a t of the slit through As the slide passes ing by its own pres-, and is drawn back, e, thus bending the nuch we may work will remain in the re be thrown out by is self-acting, and is nious. Immediately holds the string, a sely through a hole. rust forward and the ch, it pushes the peg when the lever and ard to their full exne peg strikes against is forced violently oushes the string out

to the illustration. w as it appears after ve been thrust forhas fallen into the its it as it appears n brought back, and

three layers of male eing the longest. B ade of very thick catthstand the amount to undergo, and the nanner, by a "hitch" at it is drawn tighter ion. It passes round through a hole, and

nd D is the slide. E e, through which the into it, and it is ed by the little shuta at G, together with ect it with the stock the notch in the slide g. I is the pivot on K is the handle, and arrows issue.

If the reader should have followed this description carefully, he will see that the only limit to the rapidity of fire is the quickness with which the lever can be worked to and fro. As it is thrust forward, the string drops into its notch, the trigger-peg is set and an arrow falls with its butt just in front of the string. When it is drawn sharply back, the string is released by the trigger-peg, the arrow is propelled, and another falls into its place. If, therefore, a boy be kept at work supplying the slide with arrows, a constant stream of missiles can be poured from this weapon.

The arrows are very much like the "bolts" of the old English cross-bow. They are armed with heavy and solid steel heads, and They are are feathered in a very ingenious manner. The feathers are so slight, that at first sight they appear as if they were mere black scratches on the shaft. They are, however, feathers, projecting barely the fiftieth of an inch from the shaft, but being arranged in a slightly spiral form so as to catch the air, and impart a rotatory motion to the arrow. By the side of the cross-bow on Fig. 2 is seen a bundle of the arrows.

The strength of this bow is very great, though not so great as I have been told. It possesses but little powers of aim, and against a single and moving adversary would be useless. But for the purpose for which it is designed, namely, a wall-piece which will pour a series of missiles upon a body of men, it is a very efficient weapon, and can make itself felt even against the modern rifle. The range of this bow is said to be four hundred yards, but I should think that its extreme effective range is at the most from sixty to eighty yards, and that even in that case it would be almost useless, except against large bodies of soldiers.

Of swords the Chinese have an abundant variety. Some are single-handed swords, and there is one device by which two swords are carried in the same sheath, and are used one in each hand. I have seen the two-sword exercise performed, and can understand that, when opposed to any person not acquainted with the weapon, the Chinese swordsman would be irresistible. But in spite of the two swords, which fly about the wielder's head like the sails of a mill, and the agility with which the Chinese fencer leaps about and presents first one side and then the other to his antagonist, I cannot but think that any ordinary fencer would be able to keep himself out of reach, and also to get in his point, in spite of the whirling blades of his adversary.

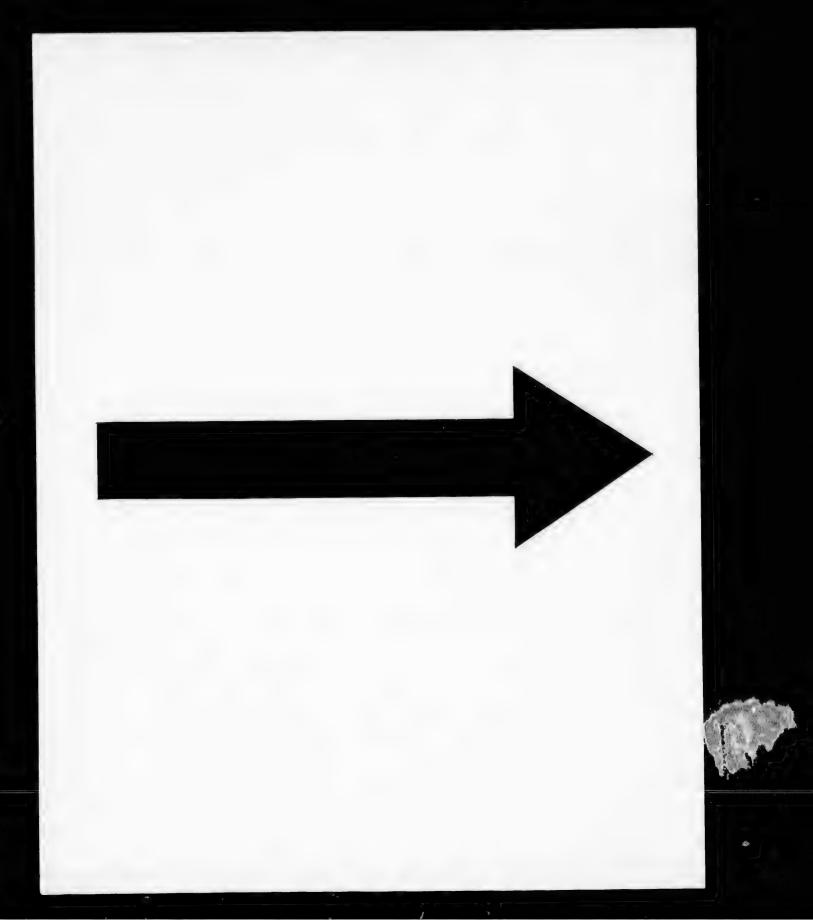
Two-handed swords are much used. One of these weapons in my collection is five feet six inches in length, and weighs rather more than four pounds and a quarter. The blade is three feet in length and two inches diminishing slightly toward the point. The whole of the blade has a very slight curve. The handle is beautifully wrapped with narrow braid, so as to form an intricate

There is another weapon, the blade of which exactly resembles that of the two-handed sword, but it is set at the end of a long handle some six or seven feet in length, so that, although it will inflict a fatal wound when it does strike an enemy, it is a most unmanageable implement, and must take so long for the bearer to recover himself, in case he misses his blow, that he would be

quite at the mercy of an active antagonist. Should they be victorious in battle, the Chinese are cruel conquerors, and are apt to inflict horrible tortures, not only upon their prisoners of war, but even upon the unoffending inhabitants of the vanquished land. They carry this love for torture even into civil life, and display a horrible ingenuity in producing the greatest possible suffering with the least apparent means of inflicting it. For example, one of the ordinary punishments in China is the compulsory kneeling bare-legged on a coiled chain. This does not sound particularly dreadful, but the agony that is caused is indescribable, especially as two officers stand by the sufferer and prevent him from seeking even a transient relief by shifting his posture. Broken crockery is sometimes substituted for the chain.

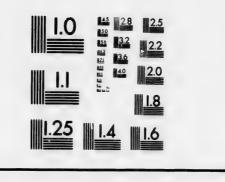
The most common punishment in China is that of the cangue, a sort of moveable pillory. A piece of wood, some four feet square and nearly four inches in thickness, has a hole in the middle, through which the culprit's head is passed. The machine opens with a hinge, and when closed is locked, and a placard designating the offence is pasted on it. As long as the cangue is worn, the unhappy delinquent cannot feed himself, so that he would be starved to death were he not fed by casual contributions. nately, it is considered a meritorious action to feed a prisoner in the cangue, so that little risk of actual starvation is run, and the principal terror of the cangue lies in the pain caused by carrying such a weight upon the neck and shoulders. This instrument is often worn for weeks and sometimes for three months, which is the extent of its legal use.

Finger squeezing is another torture which is frequently used. Four pieces of bamboo are tied loosely together at one end, and a string passes through the other ends, so arranged that by drawing it they can be pulled closely together. The fingers are introduced between the bamboos, and by pulling at the string they can be crushed almost to pieces. This torture is often employed by the mandarins, when endeavoring to extort money n width. The thickness of metal at the from persons whom they suspect of conback is a quarter of an inch near the hilt, cealing their wealth. The ankles are squeezed



M1.25 M1.4 M1.8

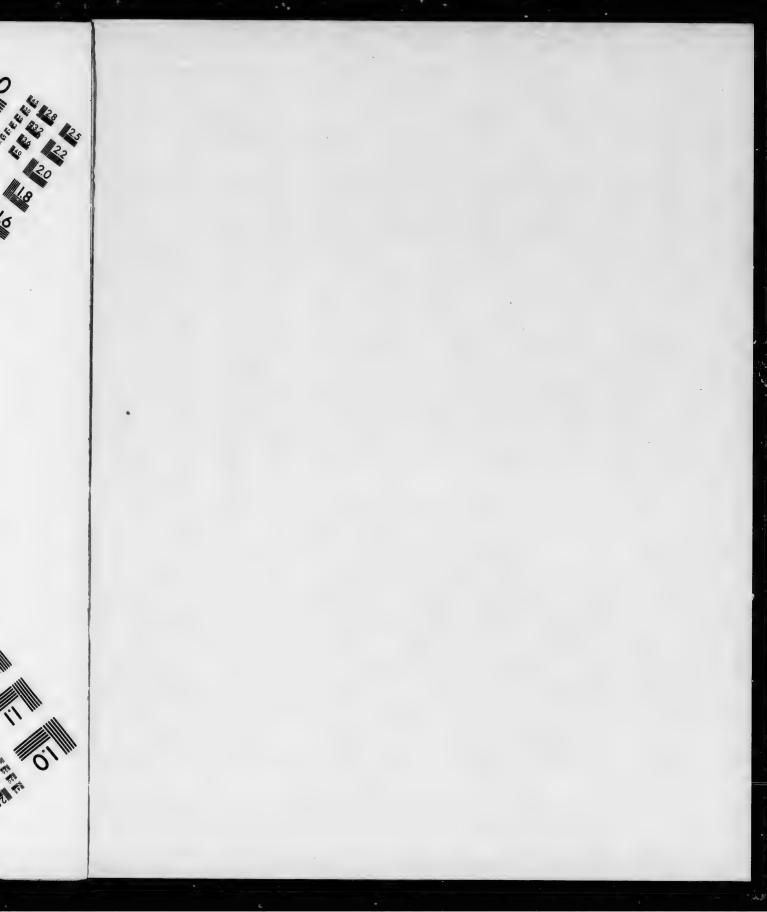
IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



STATE OF THE STATE

Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503 STATE OF THE STATE



CHINA. 1496

bamboos are much larger. Both these modes of torture are shown in the illustration on

Most of the so-called minor tortures, i. c. those which are not directly aimed at life, are employed for the purpose of extorting money. The fact is, the mandarins who are set over districts only have a limited term of office, and may, indeed, be transferred at any time. As during their term of office they have to make up a certain sum demanded by their superiors, and have also to keep up con-siderable state on a nominal salary, it follows that they oppress the people to the utmost of their power, looking upon them merely in the light of tax-producing animals. It is, therefore, no wonder that a Chinaman of any ability strives for literary rank, and the privilege of wearing the button, which exempts him from arrest except by imperial order.

Beating with the bamboo is another com-mon punishment. There are two kinds of bamboo for this purpose, the small and the large; the latter being capable of producing death if used with severity. Indeed, even the lesser bamboo, if the blows be struck with the edge, instead of the flat, bruises the flesh so completely as to bring on mortification, of which the sufferer is sure to die in a few days. This punishment is chiefly used by the peculative mandarins, in order to extort money, and is employed for men and women alike; the only difference being that the man is thrown prostrate on the ground, while the woman suffers in a kneeling

posture. A man of forethought, however, never suffers much from the bamboo, and, if pos-sible, nothing at all. In the former case, he bribes the executioner, who strikes so as to produce a very effective sounding blow, but in reality inflicts very little injury. In the latter case, he bribes a man to act as a substitute, and, just as the first blow is about to be struck, some of the officers, who are also bribed, get between the judge and the culprit, while the latter rolls out of the way, and the substitute takes his place. A similar ruse is enacted at the completion of the punishment. It may seem strange that any one should act as a substitute in such a business; but in China men care little for their skins, or even for their lives, and it is possible to purchase a substitute even for capital punishment, the chief difficulty being not to bribe the substitute, but to find enough money to bribe all the officials, who must act in concert.

Powerful as they may be, the mandarins have not all the power of life and death, though they can inflict punishments which practically lead to the same result. Mr. Milne mentions a case of this kind. Two men had been arrested in the act of robbing a house during a fire. This is rightly held to be the most heinous kind of theft, and is generally punished with decapitation. The man in a basket. They stopped, lashed the

after a similar fashion, only in this case the | mandarin of the district had not the power to inflict death, but contrived to manage that the men should die. Accordingly, he had two tail bamboo cages made, placed a man inside each, and tied him by his tail to the top bars of the cage. The cages were placed in the open air, in charge of officers, who would not allow any communication with the offenders. The natural consequence was, that privation of food, drink, sleep, and rest of any kind, together with exposure to the elements, killed the men as effectually as the sword of the executioner.

A modification of this mode of punishment is by covering the top of the cage with a board through a hole in which the head of the sufferer passes. It is, in fact, a fixed cangue. The top of the cage is adjusted so that the man is forced to stand on tiptoe as he is suspended by the neck. His hands being bound behind him, relief is impossible. This mode of punishment is shown in the

last figure but one, on the right-hand side.
The other figures speak for themselves, except that of the kneeling figure with snakes coiled round his body. These snakes are coiled round his body. These snakes are tubes of soft metal, fashioned in the shape of snakes with open mouths. They are coiled round the naked limbs and body of the sufferer, and boiling water is then poured into them, producing the most horrible torture.

As to capital punishments, they are inflicted in various ways. The mode that is thought to be the least terrible is the command to commit suicide, because in that case they can avoid the mangling of the body, and so make their appearance in the spirit world whole and entire. This is a privilege only accorded to officers of very high rank, and is conferred upon them by sending the "silken cord." No cord is really sent, but the mandate implies the instrument of death. When it is-received, the doomed man takes some of his nearest relatives and most valued friends to his house, fastens the silken cord to a beam, places himself on a stool, passes the noose round his neck, and then leaps off the stool, and so dies. Officers of lower rank, when they see that they will probably be condemned to death, generally anticipate their sentence by hanging themselves on their own responsibility.

For criminals of no status, strangulation is the mode of death most preferred. It is accomplished in a manner exactly resembling the Spanish garrote. The criminal stands with his back to a post, through which ahole is bored at the level of his neck. The two ends of a cord are passed through the hole, the loop embracing the man's neck. The ends are then twisted round a stick, and, by a few rapid turns of the stick, the man is killed. The rapidity of the process is such that Mr. Lockhart mentions an instance t had not the power rived to manage that Accordingly, he had made, placed a man m by his tail to the he cages were placed rge of officers, who munication with the

consequence was, rink, sleep, and rest ith exposure to the as effectually as the r.

mode of punishment of the cage with a n which the head of is, in fact, a fixed cage is adjusted so o stand on tiptoe as neck. His hands relief is impossible, ent is shown in the ne right-hand side.

eak for themselves, or figure with snakes are nioned in the shape ths. They are coiled a and body of the r is then poured into st horrible torture, ments, they are in.

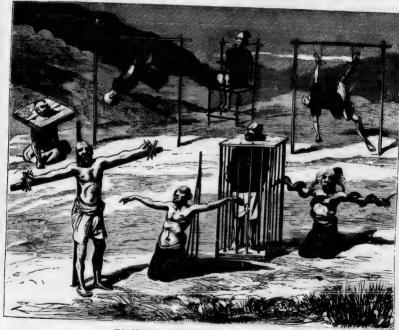
The mode that is

the mode that is terrible is the combecause in that case ting of the body, and the spirit world is a privilege only ary high rank, and is sending the "silken y sent, but the manent of death. When d man takes some of most valued friends he silken cord to a a stool, passes the detens of lower rank, will probably be conally anticipate their hemselves on their

status, strangulation ost preferred. It is are exactly resembling The criminal stands through which a hole this neck. The two so through the hole, a man's neck. The ound a stick, and, by the stick, the man is the process is such entions an instance saw a file of soldiers apple and a pinioned stopped, lashed the



(1.) MANDARIN AND WIFE. (See page 1429.)



(2.) MODES OF TORTURE. (See page 1436.)

pole (
the be
him b
they o
busine appar wante he wa were Truly To strong the ide world, power stance will go followi newspa and mo wife ha "On to crin scourge female evidence with a lawife, defused to applicat She con then ser the Chin ishment man les member in the note to be cru
"The foot being driven stretched legs werchain, an on the c name ar right arito remain to remain the remain th pole to an upright post, took the man out of the basket, tied him to the pole, and strangled him before the foreigners could find out what they were doing. The strange part of the business was that the officials had bribed the apparent culprit and his friends, as they wanted to make the foreigners believe that the was an only memory and that they was an only memory and that they was an only memory and that they was still alive, when the

wanted to make the foreigners believe that he was an opium smunggler, and that they were doing their best to stop the trade. Truly it is a strange country.

To beheading the Chinese have the strongest aversion, because they shrink from the idea of appearing headless in the next world, and they will therefore do all in their power to avoid it. A most remarkable instance of the extent to which a Chinaman will go to avoid decapitation is given in the following extract from a letter to an Indian newspaper. The man was a well-known newspaper. The man was a well-known and most abandoned criminal, who with his wife had been arrested.

wife had been arrested.

"On his trial before his judge he refused to criminate himself, although repeatedly scourged until his back was raw. If a female witness fails in giving satisfactory evidence in a court of justice, she is beaten with a leather strap across the mouth. His wife, desirous of sparing her husband, refused to give evidence, but after two or three applications of strap her courage gave way. She confessed his guilt. The prisoner was then sentenced to decapitation,—deemed by the Chinese to be the most severe of punthen sentenced to decapitation,—deemed by the Chinese to be the most severe of punishments, because they imagine that if a man leaves this world minus any of his members, he appears in the same condition in the next. The culprit, therefore, prayed to be crucified instead of being beheaded.

"The cross was of the Latin form, the foot being inserted in a stout plank, and the criminal standing on a hord head neits."

criminal, standing on a board, had nails driven through his feet, and his hands stretched and nailed to the cross-beam. His stretched and nailed to the cross-beam. His legs were fastened to the cross with an iron chain, and his arms bound with cords, and moved. He is pinioned in a very effective on the cord round his waist was inserted a piece of wood on which was written his name and offence; a similar piece on his right arm contained his sentence, namely, to remain on the cross night and day until he died; another on his left arm had the name of the judge, with his titles and offices.

"The criminal was nailed to the cross inside the Yamun in the presence of the mag-istrate, and then carried by four coolies to one of the principal thoroughfares leading from the city, where he was left during the lion the city, where he was left during the day, but removed at night inside the prison for fear of his friends attempting to rescue him, and again carried forth at daylight in tharge of two soldiers. He was crucified at noon on the Wednesday, and Mr. Jones con-rersed with him at five in the evening. He

large trade.
On Saturday he was still alive, when the "On Saturday he was still alive, when the Taotai was appealed to by a foreigner to put an end to the wretch's sufferings, and he immediately gave orders that the vinegar should be administered, which he expected would produce immediate death; but the result was otherwise, and at sunset, when the cross was taken within the jail, two soldiers with stout bamboos broke both his less and then strangled him?"

diers with stout bamboos broke both his legs, and then strangled him."
It is no matter of wonder that the woman confessed her husband's guilt, for the face is sometimes beaten with a hard leather strap until the jaws are broken, and the whole of the lips fall from them. In all probability she was quite as guilty as her husband, so that she was not altogether deserving of pity.

pity.

Decapitation is always conducted with much judicial solemnity, and, as a rule, is restricted to certain seasons of the year, when large batches of criminals are executed. There are, however, occasional exceptions for the rule. The instrument employed is a sword made expressly for the purpose. It is a two-handed weapon, very heavy, and with a very broad blade. The executioners pride themselves on their skill executioners price themselves on their skin in its management, and, in order to show their powers, will draw a black-ink line round a turnip, and sever it at a blow, the cut never passing on either side of the line. Before a man is admitted to be an executioner, he is obliged to prove his ability by this test.

The criminal is carried to the place of manner. The middle of a long and thin rope is passed across the back of his neck, and the ends are crossed on the chest, and brought under the arms. They are then twisted round the arms, the wrists tied together be-hind the back, and the ends fastened to the portion of rope upon the neck. A slip of paper containing his name, crime, and sentence is fixed to a reed, and stuck at the back of his head. See illustration No. I, on page 1451.

On arriving at the place of execution, the On arriving at the place of execution, the officials remove the paper, and take it to the presiding mandarin, who writes on it in red ink the warrant for execution. The paper is then replaced, a rope loop is passed over the head of the culprit, and the end given to an assistant, who draws the head forward so as to stretch the neck, while a second assistant helds the head forward head for the control of the culprit. complained of a pain in the chest, and hirst. On Thursday he slept for some moment the head is severed from the body. bours, when the cross was laid down within | The head is taken away, and generally hung

up in a bamboo cage near the scene of the crime, with a label announcing the name and offence of the criminal, and the name of the presiding mandarin by whose order he was executed. In some places these heads are unpleasantly numerous. In many cases the rope and assistants are exceptions to the usual rule, and men are found who resist the temptation of extorting money from the people,—a temptation which is rendered the stronger between the property and the people of the property and the people of the people of the criminal and for obvious reasons cannot be mentioned at all.

Although the mandarins are generally there are exceptions to the usual rule, and men are found who resist the temptation of extorting money from the people,—a temptation which is rendered the stronger between the criminal and offence of the criminal, and the name at all. not employed.

There is even a lower depth of degradation than mere beheading. This is called "cutting into small pieces." Before striking the fatal blow, the executioner makes long but not deep cuts on the face and in all the fleshy parts of the body, taking care to avoid the chief blood-vessels, so that when the culprit is released by the loss of his head, he may enter the next world not only with-out a head, but with scarcely any flesh on

his bones.

The last of the punishments which will be mentioned in this work is that of sawing asunder, a punishment which of late years has been but rarely inflicted, and we may hope is dying out, though in reality it does not cause nearly as much pain to the sufferer as many of the minor punishments. The mode in which it is performed may be seen from an anecdote related by Mr. Fleming, in the work which has been already quoted. There was a distinguished Imperial officer named Sun-kwei who was taken prisoner by the rebel leader Kih-yung. Knowing the ability of his prisoner, the rebel leader offered to spare his life on the condition that he would accept a command in his army. Sun-kwei flatly refused to do so, saying that as he was defeated he must die, for that to take service against his emperor was impossible. Bribes, threats, and promises were of no avail, and at last Kih-yung ordered his prisoner to be sawn asunder.

The executioners began to exercise their dreadful office, but with all their endeavors could not make the saw enter the body of their victim, who only jeered at them for their ignorance in not knowing how to saw a man asunder. At last Sun-kwei was good enough to instruct them in their business. "You dead dogs and slaves," said he, "if you would saw a man asunder, you should compress his body between two planks; but how could you know it?" The men followed his advice, and sawed him and the planks asunder at the same time, he never relenting, but scoffing at them to the last moment.

It is with some reluctance that I describe, however briefly, these horrible scenes, but to pass over them would be to omit some of the most characteristic traits of this strange people. Those who know the Chinese na-tion will be aware that I have touched the subject very lightly, and that the most re-volting modes of punishment have not been,

extorting money from the people,—a temp-tation which is rendered the stronger because a mandarin who can report that his district has paid a very large sum into the Imperial treasury is sure of promotion, and if he has "squeezed" a large tribute out of a district that previously had paid but a small sum, he may almost reckon on obtaining the coveted peacock's feather, with all

its privileges.

When an honest and kind-hearted manwhen an honest and kind-hearted man-darin vacates his post at the expiration of his term of office, the people subscribe to present him with an umbrella of state, called "The Umbrella of Ten Thousand of the People." It is made of red silk and satin, with three rows of flounces, and bears upon it the names of the chief donors written in golden characters. When he takes his formal leave of office, the umbrella is carried in procession by his attendants, and he is followed for a certain distance by those who

presented it.

The highest honorary reward of this kind that can be given is an outer garment made of the same material as the umbrella, and also decorated with the names of the principal donors. This robe of honor is carried in procession, hung within a kind of pavilion that all may see it, and accompanied by a band of music. Such a robe is very seldom presented, and the recipient naturally values

it very highly

While treating of honorary rewards, one particular kind must be mentioned. If a man distinguishes himself greatly, and feels that he is under great obligation to some person who has no real claim on him, he will solicit some high title from the emperor, and then ask permission to transfer it to his benefactor. Thus it has frequently happened that a man, without any rank of his own, has taken upon himself the education of a young lad of promising abilities, and has been afterward rewarded by finding himself raised even to a higher rank than that of his protégé. Sometimes, when a man who has been thus educated is presented to a higher title, the emperor bestows on his benefactor the lower rank from which he has been raised. Thus it will be seen that in this country every incentive is employed to promote education among the people, and that not only the educated man obtains the reward which his powers have earned, but that those by whom he was educated have their share in his honors.

OPTUM S

WE wil account customs Amor customs

terribly versally course, t to be en based, bu which th nently ir the quan habit. Let a 1

ing opiu certain h absolute much to horribly fers. In opium sm ard does immodera ng a hab From suc courage to their min of the bo

A confi exist bey deadly dru with some order to g

cannot be mentioned

darins are generally nom they are placed, the usual rule, and ist the temptation of the people,—a temp-red the stronger becan report that his large sum into the re of promotion, and a large tribute out of usly had paid but a ost reckon on obtaink's feather, with all

l kind-hearted manat the expiration of people subscribe to brella of state, called n Thousand of the f red silk and satin, nces, and bears upon ef donors written in en he takes his forimbrella is carried in idants, and he is fol-stance by those who

y reward of this kind outer garment made a the umbrella, and names of the princiof honor is carried in a kind of pavilion d accompanied by a robe is very seldom pient naturally values

onorary rewards, one be mentioned. If a self greatly, and feels obligation to some al claim on him, he tle from the emperor, ion to transfer it to it has frequently without any rank of a himself the educapromising abilities, rewarded by finding a higher rank than netimes, when a man cated is presented to eror bestows on his rank from which he it will be seen that centive is employed mong the people, and ted man obtains the ers have earned, but was educated have B.

CHAPTER CLV.

*CHINA - Continued.

SOCIAL CHARACTERISTICS.

OPIUM SMOKING — SINGULAR RESULT OF THE HABIT — MODE OF USING THE OPIUM PIPE — TOBACCO SMOKING — THE WATER PIPE — WEIGHTS AND MEASURES — THE STEELYARD AND ITS USES BOAT-LIFE IN CHINA — CORMORANT FISHING—FISH SPEARING—CATCHING FISH WITH THE FEET -THE DUCK BOATS - AGRICULTURE - MODE OF IRRIGATION - CHINESE MUSIC AND INSTRUMENTS — A SKILFUL VIOLINIST—CHIMESE SINGING—ART IN OHINA—FORGELAIN—CABVING IN IVORY AND JADE - MAGIC MIRHORS - RESPECT TO AGE.

customs is opium smoking, a vice which is terribly prevalent, but which is not so universally injurious as is often stated. Of course, those who have allowed themselves to be enslaved by it become gradually de-based, but the proportion of those who do so is very small, though, by the terrible sight which they present, they are brought promi-nently into notice. It seems, moreover, that the quantity consumed at a time is not of so much importance as the regularity of the habit

Let a man once fall into the way of smokng opium, though it be but one pipe, at a certain hour of the day, that pipe will be an absolute necessity, and he takes it, not so much to procure pleasure, as to allay the horribly painful craving from which he suffers. In fact, a man destroys his health by solum smoking in Chine much as a drubt. opium smoking in China, much as a drunkad does in England, not so much by taking immoderate doses occasionally, but by making a habit of taking small doses repeatedly. From such a habit as this very few have the ourage to break themselves, the powers of their mind being shattered as well as those of the body.

A confirmed opium smoker really cannot

WE will conclude this subject with a short obtain the desired pipe. An anecdote illusaccount of the miscellaneous manners and customs of the Chinese.

Cobbold in his "Pictures of the Chinese":—

"A small salesman, or pedler, was seen to stagger and fall, and his bundle flew seen to stagger and fall, and his bundle flew seen to stagger and fall, and his bundle flew seen to stagger and fall, and his bundle flew from him out of his reach. While many pass by, some good Samaritan comes to him, lifts up his head, and asks what is the matter, and what he can do for him. He has just strength to whisper, 'My good friend, please to untie that bundle; you will find a small box in the centre; give me two or three of the pills which are in it, and I shall be all right.' It was soon done; the optum pills had their desired effect, and he was soon able to the and ruyene his journey to soon able to rise and pursue his journey to his inn."

This most graphically describes the extreme state of exhaustion which comes on if the usual period of taking the pipe has passed by. The pedler thought, no doubt, he had strength just to reach his inn, where he would have thrown himself upon a bed and called for the opium pipe; but he mis-calculated by a few minutes his power of endurance, and the pills (often resorted to in like cases of extremity), when supplied him by his friend, perhaps saved him from an untimely end. Very similar scenes have an untimely end. Very similar scenes have trist beyond a certain time without the deadly drug, and those who are forced to exert themselves are generally provided with some opium pills, which they take in address to give them strength until they can exhaustion. A long hour or more, in the

rest, but really, in some instances, for the opium pipe.

The pipe which is used for smoking opium is not in the least like that which is employed for tobacco. The stem is about as large as an ordinary office-ruler, and it has a hole near one end, into which the shank of the bowl is fixed. The bowl itself is about as large as a Ribstone pippin, and nearly of the same shape, the bud representing the tiny aperture in which the opium is placed, and the stalk representing the shank which fits into the stem. These pipes are made of various materials, some being mere bamboo and wood, while others have bowls of the and wood, while others have bowls of the finest porcelain, and the stem richly enamelled. My own specimen has the stem twenty inches in length, and an inch and a half in diameter, the bore not being large enough to admit an ordinary crowquill. The bowl is of some light-colored wood, well varnished, and covered with land-scape scenes in black lines. Although it has not been in use for many years, it still smells strongly of opium, showing that it had been saturated with the fumes of the drug before it came into my possession.

The mode of using it is as follows: The

smoker has a couch prepared, together with a little lamp, and his usual supply of the pre-pared opium. He lays his head on the pil-low, with a long, needle-like implement places over the aperture of the bowl a little piece of the opium, about as large as a mustard seed, holds it to the flame of the lamp, and, with a long and steady inspiration, the whole of the opium is drawn into the lungs in the state of vapor. The smoke is retained for a few seconds, and then expelled. The generality of opium smokers are content with one pipe, but the votary of the drug will sometimes take as many as twelve in succession before he is completely under the influence of the opium. As he finishes the last morsel of opium, the pipe falls from his hand, and he passes into that dreamland for which he has bartered everything that makes life precious.

The terrible scenes which have so often been related take place for the most part at the opium shops, places which are nominally illegal, but which carry on their trade by payment of periodical bribes to the ruling official of the place. In Tien-tsin alone there were upwards of three hundred of these shops, in which opium could be purchased or sold wholesale, or could be refined

for smoking, and consumed on the premises. There is only one redeeming point in opium smoking, namely, that it does not produce the brutal scenes which too often produce the brutal scenes which too often take place in the gin palaces of this country.

Mr. Fleming remarks of this vice: "If opium emoking is a great evil among the Chinese people, as it is no doubt, yet they

middle of the day, has frequently to be al- endeavor to hide it, they are ashamed of it, lowed, nominally for the sake of dinner and and it offends neither the eves nor the hearand it offends neither the eyes nor the hearing by offensive publicity. It is not made a parade of by night and by day, neither does it give rise to mad revels and murderous riots. Its effects on the health may be more prejudicial than our habits of alchohol drinking, but yet it is hard to see any of those broken-down creatures that one reads about."

Indeed, the Chinese themselves, who are apt to drink more than they ought of a flery liquid called samshu, say that the spirit is far

more injurious than the drug. We will now see how the Chinese smoke tobacco. The pipe which is ordinarily used has a very little bowl of brass, at the end of a slight stem about as large as a drawing pencil. The bowl is scarcely large enough to hold the half of a boy's playing marble, and is almost exactly like the Japanese pipe,

and is almost exactly like the Japanese pipe, which will be presently described.

A pipe that is very much in fashion, especially with the women, is a kind of water-pipe made of brass, and enlarged at the bottom so as to stand upright. The enlarged portion is filled with water, through which the smoke passes, as in a hookah. The little brass tube which serves the purpose of a bowl can be drawn out of the body of the pipe, so as to be charged afresh; and in most cases each pipe is supplied with several bowls, so that they can be used successively as wanted. Only three whiffs are taken at a time; and indeed the quantity of tobacco used is so small, that more would be almost out of the question. For this pipe, tobacco is prepared in a peculiar manner, a minute quantity of arsenic being mixed with it.

One peculiarity about the Chinese is their almost universal employment of weight as a measure. With the exception of objects a measure. What the exception of objects of art, nearly everything is bought by weight, and the consequence is, that the most absurd modes of increasing the weight are often employed. Fowls and ducks, for example, are sold alive by weight, so that the dishonest vendor has a habit of cramming with stones before he brings them to market. Fish are also taken to market while still living, and are improved in appearance by being blown up with bellows, and in weight by being crammed with stones. Through the lips of each fish a ring is passed, so that it may be at once taken from the water and hung upon the hook of the balance. Nor is the fish dealer particular as to the sufferings of the creatures which he sells, and he has not the least hesitation in cutting off a pound or two in case his customer does not wish to purchase an entire fish.

shou for f like othe place a riv ends sepai need loose slipp of th it is s separ a far the b the re itself the s the ar and c

mea of '

tanc

nate

It

use at The and i chops scribe in len terin marks separa ceeds with o crum (The tile so

There

ances his ow of the sequen wasted avoide stan might of the l a prolo tion for lation v deed be nese in steelyar article : intende objects pan, att four sill

The tinguish shown i rivers r y are ashamed of it. he eyes nor the hear-ity. It is not made a by day, neither does vols and murderous the health may be our habits of alchois hard to see any of atures that one reads

themselves, who are they ought of a flery y that the spirit is far

e drug. w the Chinese smoke ich is ordinarily used of brass, at the end of s large as a drawing carcely large enough oy's playing marble, ke the Japanese pipe, described.

uch in fashion, especa kind of water-pipe larged at the bottom The enlarged por-r, through which the hookah. The little res the purpose of a it of the body of the d afresh; and in most applied with several be used successively e whiffs are taken at e quantity of tobacco nore would be almost

for this pipe, tobacco

iar manner, a minute ng mixed with it.

t the Chinese is their oyment of weight as exception of objects ching is bought by equence is, that the increasing the weight Fowls and ducks, for e by weight, so that has a habit of cramre he brings them to so taken to market are improved in apwn up with bellows, eing crammed with lips of each fish a ring ay be at once taken ing upon the hook of the fish dealer particuof the creatures which t the least hesitation or two in case his cuso purchase an entire

ons the Chinese do mploy a "steelyard" rious materials and ng to the object for ed. That which is

meant for ordinary market use is made picture of Chinese boat-life is given by Mr. of wood, and is marked at regular distances by small brass studs, so as to designate the exact places on which the weight should be hung. Those which are intended proceeds as follows:

(a) The floor work are of ivon:

It is kept in a case, which looks something like two wooden spoons laid upon each other, so that their bowls enclose any object placed between them. They are united by a rivet or pivot, which passes through the ends of the handles, enabling them to be separated at will by drawing them sideways. In order to prevent them from coming apart needlessly, a ring of bamboo is plaited loosely round the stem, so that when it is slipped toward the bowl, the two halves of the case are kept together, and when it is slid to the end of the stem, they can be separated. In one of the halves of the bowl a farge hole is scooped, in which the pan of the balance lies, and a smaller hole is cut for the reception of the weight. The steelyard itself lies in a groove cut along the inside of the stem. The reader will see that when the apparatus is closed, it lies very compactly, and can be stuck into the girdle ready for use at any moment.

The 'yard' of this balance is of ivory, and is longer and more slender than the chopsticks which have already been described. In my specimen it is eleven inches in length, and the sixth of an inch in diameter in the thickest part. Three distinct sets of marks are made upon it, and there are three separate fulcra, so that when the weight exceeds the amount which can be measured

with one fulcrum, the second or third ful-crum can be used with its own set of marks. The arrangement of these marks is a fertile source of dispute among the Chinese. There is no standard by which all the bal-ances can be regulated, but each dealer has his own balance, and his own arrangement his own balance, and his own arrangement of the gradations upon it. The natural con-sequence is, that quarrels take place with every purchase. A vast amount of time is wasted upon disputes which might easily be avoided, were the government to establish avoided, were the government to establish a standard balance, by which all others might be graduated. Time, however, is not of the least importance to a Chinese, and as a prolonged bargain has a positive fascination for him, it is probable that such a regulation would not be popular, and would indeed be evaded in every mode which Chinese ingenuity could invent. The larger steelyards have a hook whereon to hang the article to be weighed, but those which are intended for weighing small and valuable objects are furnished with a shallow brass pan, attached to the end of the balance by four silken threads.

The extraordinary economy which distinguishes the Chinese is characteristically shown in the population which crowds the

rations kinds of boats that he has seen, he proceeds as follows:

"We have passed through several miles of boats, and have not seen the quarter of them. It is, indeed, impossible to give an idea of their number. Some say that there are as many as seventy thousand of them at the city of Canton alone. But let us be content with forty thousand. Then fancy forty thousand wild swans, closely packed together, floating on some wide pend, and would cover many acres of their element. Now, by the enchantment of imagination, convert the pond into the roaring Pekiang River, the swans into boats of every shape and size, the notes of the birds into the yells, the shricks, the piercing voices of the river people, and you may have the actual scene before you.

"And all these boats, miles upon miles, from border to border, are densely packed with human beings in every stage of life, in almost every occupation that exists upon the shore that they seldom trespass upon; and there they are born and earn their scanty bread, and there they die. The boats are moored side by side, in long-reaching thousands, so that the canal which they form stretches to a point in the distance. In the stretches to a point in the distance. In the Shaneem quarter, above the foreign facto-ries, they form large squares and avenues. Forty thousand floating tenements would, under any circumstances, be considered a singular sight, but here the swarming occupants give them the appearance of a mighty metropolis."

It seems strange that so vast a population should live on the river, within pistol shot of the land, and yet that the greater number of them, from their birth to their death, have never known what it is to put a foot on the shore. When one of the older boatmen does so for the first time, he can hardly walk, the firm land being as difficult for him to tread as the deck of a tossing vessel is to a landsman.

Though the smallest of all the vessels that traverse a Chinese river, the sampans are perhaps the most conspicuous. They are rather small boats, drawing but little water, and for the most part propelled by two women, one sitting in the bow with her oar, and the other stationed in the stern, working the huge implement, half oar, half rudder, by which the boat is at once propelled and guided. Many of the boat-steerers are quite young girls, but they manage their craft with wonderful skill and power, hardly ever touching another boat, no matter how many may be darting about the river, and, with one mighty sweep of the huge scull, sending the boat clear of the obstacle from rivers near the principal towns. A vivid which escape seemed impossible but a second

before. To the eye of a foreigner, the boatwomen are more pleasing in appearance than their sisters of the land, inasmuch as their feet are allowed to assume their proper shape, and exposure to the air and exercise take away the sickly, pasty complexion which often distinguishes the better-class women on shore, and is heightened by the white powder with which they persist in

disfiguring themselves.

Some of the mandarin boats present the greatest possible contrast to the little sam-pans. They are, in fact, floating palaces, decorated in the most picturesque and sumptuous manner, and furnished with every luxury that a wealthy Chinaman can command. They often have thirty or forty oars of a side, are gaily bedecked with flags and brilliant lanterns, and mostly carry several cannon, together with abundance of fire-arms, in order to deter the pirates, who would be likely to swoop down upon an unarmed vessel, kill the passengers, and seize the boat for their own purposes.

In connection with the river life of the

Chinese may be mentioned the various modes of fishing. The most celebrated method is that in which the fish are caught by cormorants. The fisherman has several of these birds, which are trained to the sport, and indeed are bred from the egg for the purpose, and sold at high prices when fully trained. The man goes out in a boat or on a raft, accompanied by his birds, and when he comes to a favorable spot, sends them into the water. They immediately dive, and dart upon the fish, which they are

taught to bring to the boat.

Should the fish be too large, the man generally takes both fish and bird into his boat by means of a net at the end of a handle; and often when a bird has captured a very large fish, and is likely to lose it, one or two of its companions will come to its assistance, and by their united efforts hold the fish until their master can come up. A ring is put loosely round the throats of the birds, so that they cannot swallow the fish even if they desire to do so; but a well-trained cor-morant will no more eat a fish than a welltrained pointer will eat a partridge. Each time that the cormorant brings a fish to the boat, it is rewarded with a mouthful of food generally a mouthful of eel, its master raising the ring to allow it to swallow.

Fishing with cormorants is almost invariably carried on at high tide, and near bridges, as fish always love to congregate under shelter. At such times the bridges are always crowded with spectators watching

the feats of the cormorants.

The raft on which the fisherman stands is made of five or six bamboos, about twenty feet in length. Now and then a cormorant which has not completed its course of training is so delighted when it catches a fish, and when he thinks fit, he recalls them by a that itswims away from its master as fast as signal. As soon as they hear the signal,

it can. The fisherman, however, can propal his light raft faster than the cormorant can swim, and soon brings the truant to reason. This sport has recently been in-troduced into England, and bids fair to be

Though caring little for sport, and pursuing game merely for the "pot," the Chinese employ one or two methods of fishing which have the sporting element in them,—i. s. which give the quarry a fair chance of escape. Such, for example, is fish spearing, which is practised after rather a curious mauner. The fisherman generally takes his stand upon a low bridge, and is furnished with a trident spear and a decoy fish. The decoy fish is prepared by lacing a strip of wood to either side of its dorsal fin, and to these sticks a slight line is fastened.

All being prepared, the fisherman takes his place on the bridge, drops the decoy into the water, and ties the end of the line to a stick like a fishing-rod, while he holds the three prepared to the time to a stick like a fishing-rod, while he holds the three-pronged spear in his right hand. As large a fish as the sportsman can procure is used for the decoy; and as it swims about, its fellows come up to it, apparently attracted by its peculiar movements. As they come within reach, they are struck with the tri-dent, and deposited in the fisherman's

A very inferior kind of fishing is carried on in places where the bed of the river is muddy. The fisherman wades into the river up to his knees or deeper, and every now and then strikes the surface of the water violently. As he does so, the fish which love such localities dive under the mud, where they are felt and held down by the bare feet of the man. As soon as he feels the wriggling of a fish under his foot, he stoops down, often having to plunge entirely under water, draws the fish from under his foot, and drops it into his basket. It is evident that only small fish can be caught by this method. I have tried it myself, and found that after a little trouble it was easy to catch any quantity of small flounders and similar fish, — too small, indeed, to be of any use, except to the thrifty Chinese, two of whom will buy a duck's head and divide it for their dinner.

Among other river industries may be mentioned the system of duck feeding that is there carried on. Vast quantities of ducks' eggs are hatched by artificial heat, and are purchased, when only a day or two old, by the persons who make their living by feeding and selling the birds. One favorite mode of duck feeding is to keep the birds in a boat fitted up for the purpose, and to take the boat along the banks of the river. At low water the keeper lets out the ducks, which find abundance of food in the multi-

they I seems knows blow f The well s operat ful, no knowle reason hestow weed i which the rov hands a and wo every r disagre in mud under t the har conceiv The v

> enough his task to erect These a -i. e. wheels, inclined worked feet, sup bamboo. apparatu At th Milne o

energies to the ut

means.

convince in securi: both you frame, tr ming tog Boys six well with mount th ground to nands; a compress the mill, ing time were indo was there they foug

with which and with blazing su earth, no mdulatin; s it wave who are fo the natura s the m cantily a tousers, s , however, can propel an the cormorant can ngs the truant to as recently been ind, and bids fair to be

for sport, and pursu-ne "pot," the Chinese thods of fishing which ment in them, -i. c. a fair chance of esple, is fish spearing, ter rather a curious an generally takes his dge, and is furnished ad a decoy fish. The by lacing a strip of its dorsal fin, and to e is fastened.

the fisherman takes, drops the decoy into he end of the line g-rod, while he holds ar in his right hand. portsman can procure ind as it swims about , apparently attracted ents. As they come struck with the triin the fisherman's

of fishing is carried e bed of the river is an wades into the or deeper, and every the surface of the ne does so, the fish lities dive under the lt and held down by an. As soon as he a fish under his foot, having to plunge ennto his basket. It is I fish can be caught e tried it myself, and e trouble it was easy f small flounders and l, indeed, to be of any ifty Chinese, two of a head and divide it

industries may be of duck feeding that Vast quantities of ed by artificial heat, en only a day or two no make their living he birds. One favorg is to keep the birds the purpose, and to e banks of the river. er lets out the ducks, of food in the multiswarm in the mud, he recalls them by a ney hear the signal,

they hurry to the boat with an alacrity that from the sun, being all the clothing they seems rather ludicrous, unless the spectator knows that the last duck always gets a sharp blow from a switch.

The characteristic thrift of the Chinese is well shown in their various agricultural operations, which are marvellously successful, not only on account of the real skill and knowledge possessed by the Chinese, but by reason of the systematic and ceaseless labor bestowed upon the various crops. Not a weed is allowed to absorb the nutriment which ought to go to the rice, and between the rows of plants the laborer creeps on his the rows of plants the laborer creeps on me hands and knees, searching for every weed, and working with his fingers the earth round every root. Taken alone, this is hard and disagreeable work, but, as the rice is planted in mud, as sharp stones are often hidden under the mud, and as leeches abound in it, the hardships of a rice-weeder's life may be expected.

The water which is so necessary for the crop is mostly supplied by mechanical means. If the agriculturist is fortunate enough to have land near the river or canal, his task is comparatively easy. He has only to erect a certain number of water-engines. These are almost all on the same principle, -i. e. an endless that passing over two wheels, and drawing the water through an inclined trough. The wheels are generally worked by men, who turn them with their feet, supporting themselves on a horizontal bamboo. A larger and more complicated apparatus is worked by a buffalo.

At the smaller wheels all labor, as Mr.
Milne observes: "In working them the
energies of every household appeared taxed
to the utmost vigor, as if each individual felt convinced of the necessity of his personal aid in securing a good and plentiful crop. I saw between a good and plentific crop. I saw both young and old leaning on the same frame, treading the same wheel, and hum-ming together their rustic song as they trod. Boys six years of age kept the step very well with men of fifty, and if too small to mount the wheel, they were placed on the ground to work the paddles with their little hands; and women, too, whose tiny and compressed feet disable them from treading the mill, stood at the feet of the men, keeping time with their hands. . . . None ing time with their hands. . . . None were indolent. There was no cessation, nor was there exemption from labor; and, while they fought among the thorns and thistles with which the ground had been cursed, and with the sweat of the brow under a blazing sun sowed, weeded, and watered the arth, no murmurs were heard, save the undulating sound of the husbandman's song s it waved over the field." Those women who are fortunate enough to possess feet of the natural size work as hard in the field with intermittent seizures of hiccough,—the 'dying tally attired, a wide and short pair of the inhuman failusers, and a wide hat to shelter them

care for.

Though the earth be poor, the Chinese agriculturist forces it to bear, for every substance which can serve as manure is carefully saved for that purpose. Not only do the Chinese dispose of all the refuse of their houses and streets in the fields, but, as we have seen, even the little scraps of hair that are shaved from the head are saved and used as manure. Indeed, it is only by means of this exceeding economy that the inhabitants of so densely populated a country can sus-

Our concluding notes on Chinese life must be few and short.

According to their own ideas, they are as much adepts in music as in the other arts and sciences, which, as they believe, have placed them at the very summit of humanity. They have a tolerable variety of musical instruments, the most common of which is the San-hien, a sort of three-stringed guiis the san-nich, a sort of three-stringed gui-tar, with a very long neck and a very little cylindrical body. The strings are of silk, and are struck with a thin slip of bamboo at the end of the finger. Then, as a type of stringed instruments played with a bow, stringed instruments played with a bow, may be mentioned the Urh-heen, or two-stringed fiddles, the sounds of which are generally very disagreeable, — that is, when produced for Chinese ears; but when the player desires to imitate the characteristics of European music, he can do so very perfectly, as is shown by Mr. Fleming:

"In one of the most thronged streets I was, on one afternoon, elbowing my way along, exploring the 'Heavenly Ford,' when

the sound of a violin playing a well-known waltz fixed my attention in a bylane; and there, instead of a hairy Briton flourishing a bow over a Cremona, was a blind beggar eliciting those pleasant notes with as great precision and tone from the rude and weighty mallet-shaped urh-heen, as if he had been all his public life first violin at the opera."

The same traveller remarks of the vocal music of the Chinese, that "a Chinaman rehearsing a song looks and gives utterance to such goat-like bleats, that it is impossible to avoid the conclusion that he is laboring under a violent attack of chronic

verse finishing in the most confounding hysterical perturbations of the vocal chords.

There are several Chinese wind instru-ments. For instance, there is a clarionet, called Shu-teh, an instrument with a very loud and plercing note, and a peculiar "mouth-organ," in which are a number of pipes. One of these instruments, drawn from a specimen in my collection, is shown on page 1445. It contains sixteen pipes, of different lengths, arranged in pairs. Some of the pipes, however, are "dummies," and are only inserted to give the instrument an appearance of regularity. The length of the pipes has nothing to do with the pitch of the note, as they speak by means of brass vibrators inserted into the lower end, exactly like those of harmoniums. The pipes are bound together by means of a horn band that passes around them. When it is used, the player blows into the projecting mouthpiece, and with his fingers stops or opens the apertures in the pipes. The tone of this instrument 's not pleasing to European ears.

Strange as Chinese music seems to us, and unpleasant as are the odd and unexpected intervals of their melodies, the art is evidently cultivated among the people, and there is scarcely a house without its musical instrument of some kind. In the evening, according to Mr. Fleming, "in passing through the narrow streets, one is sure to

squealing, incoherent, and dis-torted vibrations tumbling out on the night air with a spasmodic reality and a foreign-ness of style that at once remind the listener of the outlandish country he is in."
The preference of the Chinese for the strange, wild, abrupt intervals of their own music is not, as the reader may see, merely occasioned by ignorance of a more perfect scale, but is the result of deliberate choice on their part. They have no objection to European music. On the contrary, they are pleased to express their approbation of it, but with the proviso that it is decidedly inferior to their own.

From Music we turn to Art. In theirown line of art the Chinese are unsurpassed, not to say inimitable. Ignorant of perspective as they praise, while their rich soft-

with the art of color printing from wooden ball to its centre with a spherical piece of blocks, and some of their oldest examples of vory, and the detaching each ball in succolor printing are so full of life and spirit, cession with curved tools.

despite their exaggeration of gesture, and their almost ludicrous perspective, that the best English artists have admired them sin-

Of their porcelain, in which they simply stand alone, it is impossible to treat fully in such a work as this, as the subject would demand a volume to itself. Their carved work in ivory is familiarly known throughout the greater part of the civilized world. In many of these carvings the object of the artist seems to have been, not to develop any beauties of form, but to show his power of achieving seeming impossibilities. Among the best-known forms of Chinese carving may be reckoned the sets of concentric balls, which are cut out of solid ivory, or at least are said to be so made.

There is quite a controversy about the mode of cutting these balls, and even those who have spent much time in Chiva, and are thoroughly acquainted with the arts and manufactures of the country, disagree on this subject, some saying that the balls are really cut from solid ivory, and others that each ball is made of two separate portions, which are joined very artificially by cement, and can be separated by steeping in boiling water. Of the two explanations I am rather inclined to believe the former, as none of those who say that the balls can be separated seem to have tried the experiment for themhear from the dimly lighted houses the selves. The mode of cutting these curious



may be, there is a quaint force and vigor about their specimens of chinese art. (From Sir Hope Grant lines that is worthy of all Collection.)

ness of color can scarcely be equalled. From specimens of art is said to be by borin time immemorial they have been acquainted conical holes from the circumference of the

This tifully and, a article by the tratio belong allowe work. imitat forme which same | of the specin the pa The se jar bel

The

The of the and be on whi emper The ming-y

filled w

ing, so ceding

of jade and the esteem bead, n is worth laces m destruc though and fifty were g sioners very che jade is One o Chinese is a circ a quarte

among conspicu or of lit employe When flecting t worthy o the sun, surface,

smooth

dark and

back are will even lamp, bu the chara specimen by Dr. F great adn ation of gesture, and perspective, that the ave admired them sin-

in which they simply saible to treat fully in as the subject would itself. Their carved arly known throughout the civilized world. In the object of the en, not to develop any to show his power of possibilities. Among as of Chinese carving ets of concentric balls. solid ivory, or at least

ontroversy about the balls, and even those time in China, and are d with the arts and country, disagree on ring that the balls are ivory, and others that wo separate portions, artificially by cement, by steeping in boiling planations I am rather he former, as none of balls can be separated experiment for themcutting these curious



rom Sir Hope Grant

said to be by boring circumference of the haspherical piece of ing each ball in suc ols.

The jade carving of China is also celebrated. This material is remarkable for the beau-tifully soft polish which can be given to it, and, as it is a rare mineral and exceedingly hard, coming next in that respect to the ruby, articles made of jade are valued very highly by the Chinese. In the accompanying illustration are shown a number of jade carvings belonging to Sir Hope Grant, who kindly allowed me to have them engraved for this work. The bowl in the front is carved in imitation of a water-illy, the handle being formed from the flower-stem. The ring which hangs from the handle is cut from the which hangs from the handle is cut from the same piece of Jade. Just behind it is a jar of the same material, which is a wonderful specimen of carving, and admirably shows the patient industry of the Chinese worker. The second small bowl in the front, and the jar behind it, are also of jade.

The elegant jar which occupies the centre

of the group is a splendid specimen of enamel, and beside it is a large piece of lapis lazuli, on which is engraved a poem written by the emperor himself.

The celebrated Summer Palace or Yuenming-yuen, which was sacked and burned by the English and French forces, was filled with splendid specimens of jade carv-ing, some of which are shown in the pre-ceding illustration. There are three kinds of jade, the cream-colored, the clear white, and the bright green. This last is the most esteemed, and is so valuable that a single bead, not so large as a boy's playing marble, is worth a pound, or even more. Some neck-laces made of these beads were sold after the destruction of the Summer Palace, and though they only contained about a hundred and fifty beads, a hundred and twenty pounds were given for them, the Chinese commissioners thinking that they were sold at a very cheap rate. The Chinese name for this jade is "feh-tsui."

One of the most remarkable instances of Chinese art is the magic mirror. This article is a circular plate of metal rather more than a quarter of an inch fhick, having its face smooth and highly polished, and its back dark and ornamented with various patterns, among which four Chinese characters are econspicuous. These characters are in hon-or of literature, and seem to be generally employed for the decoration of these mir-

When used simply for the purpose of reflecting the face, the mirrors present nothing worthy of notice, but when they are held to the sun, and the beams thrown upon a white surface, the whole of the characters on the back are shown in the reflection. The mirror will even show its powers when used with a lamp, but the sun is required to bring out the characters clearly. A small but excellent specimen of this mirror was presented to me by Dr. Flaxman Spurrell, and always excites great admiration wherever it is shown. Not dress of a mandarin.

the least trace of any figure is to be found in the face of the mirror, and the higher the polish given to the face, the clearer is the representation of the figures on the back

resentation of the figures on the back.
Several theories have been promulgated respecting the mode of making these extraordinary mirrors, the most probable one being that the characters and patterns on the being that the characters and patterns on the back are made of a harder and more con-densed metal than that of the rest of the mirror, and that, when a high polish is given to the face, the difference of the metal is not perceptible, except by the mode in which it reflects light.

There is much to say respecting the customs of the Chinese. The small space, however, which remains will not permit us to treat fully of such wide subjects as religion, to treatment of such was subjects as length, marriage, and disposal of the dead, and that they should be cursorily treated is impossible. We will therefore conclude with one of the most pleasing traits in the Chinese character, namely, the respect paid to old

According to Mr. Milne, "The sacred regard which Chinese pay to the claims of kindred secures to the patriarchs of respectable families ample support in the advanced and helpless stage of their pilgrimage; and charity often relieves poor septuagenarians whose relations may be unable to supply them with comforts or necessaries at their mature age. In China one's feelings are not harrowed with the sad spectacle of an aged parent discarded by his children, and left to perish, unattended and unnursed, under a scorching sun, or on the banks of a rolling river. But you will see the tottering senior, man or woman, who has not the means to hire a sedan, led through the alleys and streets by a son or a grandchild, com-

manding the spontaneous respect of each passer-by, the homage of every junior.

"The deference of the polloi to the extreme sections of old age is manifest likewise from the tablets and monuments you may any day stumble upon, that have been erected by public subscription to the memory of octopublic subscription to the memory of octo-genarians, nonagenarians, and centenarians. Nor is the government backward in en-couraging this, but the reverse. Hence I have often seen very aged men and women in the streets, arrayed in yellow, i. e. imperial, robes, the gift of the emperor, in mark of honor and out of respect to their gray hairs. honor, and out of respect to their gray hairs." The reader will remember that an honorary degree is given to competitors who have

reached an advanced age.
On one occasion, the emperor called together about four thousand old men at his palace, entertained them with a banquet, at which they were served by his own children and grandchildren, presented each of them with money and a yellow robe, and conferred upon the oldest of the assembly, a man aged one hundred and eleven years, the rank and

Family festivals are held, something like the silver and golden wedding of the Germans, to celebrate each decade of life; and so important do the Chinese consider these festivals that they are often held by children even after the death of their parents, the only difference being that they have somewhat of a funeral cast, white, the color of mourning, being substituted for red, the color of joy. On those occasions the children offer gifts, and no present is thought to be more grateful to the recipient than a very hand-some coffin. All Chinese who can afford it purchase during their lifetime a coffin as handsome as their means will permit, and so, should they not have been able to purchase this their last resting-place, their children think themselves honored by taking the pur-chase into their own hands. These coffins are nearly square, are made of immeuse thickness, and are so carefully cemented that the body may be kept in them without need-

ing burial.

Filial respect is inculcated into the Chinese with their earliest breath, and their youthful minds are filled with legends of pious children. For example: Wu Mang was the son of parents who were too poor to possess mosquito curtains. So at night Wu Mang their mother used to allow the mosquitoes to feed upon in the land.

him, hoping that they would prefer a young boy to aged people. Wang Liang lost his mother, and had a step-mother who disliked him. Still he behaved to her as though she had been his own mother, and once, when she wished for some fresh fish and the river was frozen, Wang Liang went to the river, took off his clothes, and lay on the ice, hoping to melt it. Suddenly, in reward for his filial conduct, the ice opened, and out leaped two fine carp, which he took to his step-mother. Again, Lae, when he was seventy years oage, dressed and beh...ad like a child, in order that his parents should not be troubled, when looking at him, with the idea of their own

In every town or village, the oldest persons are treated with the greatest consideration, not on account of their rank or wealth, but of their age. Every one gives way to them, they have the best places in the theatres, are brought forward at every public spectacle, and are indulged in every possible way. Such has been the custom from time immemorial in this great nation, which was civilized when the inhabitants of England were naked savages. The oldest civilized nation in the world, they have honored their fathers and their mothers, and their days have been long in the land.

POSITION HLE JAP OF 1

> THE DRA OF 1 — FA

THE Emp duster of on the no re nearl but the ki thief Islan tew, and these isla mpire, ou Japanese he Chines ie Land erred, it is he capital, The con ases is no r souther the Chi d coarse tell formed that of mbs, thoug ful, a slig lift easily hman wot The dress d well suit Althou hinese asp

hinese as e. As in (e same art. would prefer a young Wang Liang lost his -mother who disliked to her as though she er, and once, when she ent to the river, took on the ice, hoping to reward for his filial l, and out leaped two k to his step-mother. was seventy years of ed like a child, in order not be troubled, when he idea of their own

ge, the oldest persons reatest consideration. r rank or wealth, but ne gives way to them, es in the theatres, are ery public spectacle, y possible way. Such om time immemorial ch was civilized when ngland were naked ivilized nation in the red their fathers and days have been long

CHAPTER CLVI.

JAPAN.

DRESS - ART - AMUSEMENTS.

position and mame of Japan — appearance of the Japanese — dress of the men — use of SLEEVES - HAIR-DRESSING - COURT DRESS - THE TATTOO AND ITS USES - A STREET SCENE IN JAPAN — DRESS OF THE WOMEN —ARRANGEMENT OF THE HAIR — THE ANCIENT HAIR-PINS — USE OF PAINT-BLACKENING TEETH AND PULLING OUT EYEBROWS-MR. OLIPHANT'S OPINION UPON THE CUSTOM — DISREGARD OF CLOTHING — THE PUBLIC BATHS — HOMERIC SIMPLICITY — JAPANESE DRAWINGS — TRAVELLING IN JAPAN — A LADY ON HORSEBACK — JAPANESE RIDERS — THE GAME OF MALL - HORSE ACCOUTREMENTS - A SINGULAR HORSESHOE - THE NORIMON, OR FALANQUIN -FASHION OF THE POLE - THE CANGO, OR CHAIR - A NOBLE IN HIS NORMON - ATHLETIC POWERS OF THE JAPANESE - THE LADDER BALANCING, TOP SPINNING, AND BUTTERFLY TRICK.

THE Empire of JAPAN extends over a vast duster of Islands, of different sizes, situated in the comparative length of the robes and re nearly four thousand of these islands, but the kingdom practically consists of three bief Islands, Niphon, Kiou-siou, or Kew-ew, and Sikok, or Sitkokf. The first of these islands gives its name to the entire mpire, our word Japan not having even a lapanese origin, but being a corruption of the Chinese rendering of the word Niphon, is Land of the Sunrise. As might be in-kred, it is within the island of Niphon that becapital, Jeddo or Yedo, is placed.
The complexion of the Japanese is yel-

ewish, with a little brown, and in many uses is no darker than that of a Portuguese southern Italian. The eyes are small, t southern Italian. The eyes are small, ad not so much sunk in the head as those if the Chinese; the hair is black, straight, and coarse, and the nose, though thick, is tell formed. Their stature is about equal a that of ordinary Europeans, and their abs, though not large, are often very powerful a slightly-made. Japanese being ebbe. ful, a slightly-made Japanese being able lift easily a weight which a stalwart Enghman would find a heavy burden.

The dress of the Japanese is very peculiar, it well suited to their features and complex-Although it has about it something of a linese aspect, it is as distinct from the linese as is the character of the two peo-As in China, the dress consists of much the mode of dressing the hair. A male Japanese may or may not wear trousers, his liberty in this point being absolute, sometimes amounting to a practical dispen-sation with all dress whatever.

The chief articles of male dress are robes of differing lengths, one being worn upon the other, until a man will sometimes carry four or five robes at once. They are girt round the waist with a broad sash, so that if the wearer wishes to remove his dress, he if the wearer wishes to remove his dress, he has only to loosen the sash, and draw his arms out of the sleeves, when all the garments fall to the ground together. The sleeves are very large, and, being partly closed at the ends, are used as pockets, in which are carried various little articles of portable preparty. In the sleeves for every portable property. In the sleeves, for example, are carried the squares of white paper which serve as pocket handkerchiefs, and which are always thrown away when used; and in the same convenient receptacle the Japanese guest will carry off the remains of the feast ω which he has been invited, such being the custom of this strange country.

The material of these robes differs according to the wealth and quality of the wearer, some being of simple cotton, while those of the higher classes are made of the finest silks, and ornamented with the device or arms of the family, embroidered on the same articles with both sexes, that of the | breast and back of the outer robe.

JAPAN. 1450

singular manner. The front and temples of the head are shaved, as in China, and the remaining hair is made into a tail, as is the case with the Chinese. The hair, however, is not allowed to grow to its utmost length, and to hang down the back, but is made into a short queue, about three inches in length, and as thick as the finger, and is turned up over the top of the head. Generally the head is bare, but it is sometimes covered with a hat. The hats differ much in shape. That which is in general use is nearly flat, and is fastened to the head by six strings, two of which pass under the chin, two are crossed at the back of the head, and two more are passed under the nose. A hat thus fastened gives to the head a very singular aspect, making the face look as if it had suffered from a severe accident, and was covered with bandages. Some hats look like bechives, and entirely conceal the fea-tures, and are worn by outlaws, or "lonins," and disgraced nobles. Sometimes the men pass a piece of stuff over their heads in such a way as to hide the forehead and chin, and only to leave the eyes, nose, and mouth exposed; and in winter they throw over the hat a piece of cloth, which is tied over the nose so as to shield that member from the cold blasts.

Men of consideration also wear a scarf over the shoulders, its length being regulated by the rank of the wearer, and thus serving to indicate the amount of courtesy which is due from one man to another. Japanese gentlemen meet, they bow until the ends of the scarf touch the ground. It is evident, therefore, that the man who, in virtue of his rank, wears the longest scarf,

has the less distance to bow.

In addition to the ordinary costume, the dress of ceremony has two extraordinary additions. The first is the "kami-samo," respecting which the Japanese are exceedingly punctilious. It consists of a piece of stuff which is folded back over the shoulders in a fan-like form, and gives a most ex-traordinary and awkward look to the wearer. Courtiers wear another article of dress which is exactly opposed to our customs.

In European courts the nether garments are abbreviated, and only come to the knee; in Japan the custom is reversed. When the nobles appear before the emperor, they wear a pair of trousers with legs fully twice as long as those of the wearer, so that in walking they trail a yard or so on the ground. Walking in such garments is an art which can only be attained by long practice, and which, even when learned, is nothing more than an ungainly shuffle, threatening every moment to throw the courtier on his face. The attitudes which are assumed by fashionable courtiers are so absurd that the Japanese picture books abound in caricatures of noblemen at court. The object of this curious

The hair of the men is dressed in a very | custom is probably to give the wearer of the court dress an aspect as if he were kneeling instead of standing.

Men of the better classes always appear in public carefully dressed, but those of the lower orders consider themselves sufficiently clothed if they have a mere strip of cloth like the "languti" of India. Coolies, for example, laborers of various kinds, postrunners, etc., wear nothing but the cloth strip while at work.

Mr. Oliphant, in his "Narrative," mentions this fact in connection with the custom of tattooing, which is carried out in Japan to as much perfection as in Polynesia. "Some, however, denied themselves the benefit of dress, apparently for the purpose of exhibiting the brilliant patterns in which their skins were tattooed. One man had a monster crab on the small of his back, and a pretty cottage on his chest. It is rather fashionable to have scarlet fish playing sport-ively between your shoulders. The scarlet tattooing presents a very disgusting appearance. The skin looks as if it had been carefully peeled off into the required pattern.

"On a really well-tattooed man there is not an inch of the body which does not form part of a pictorial representation. If the general effect is not agreeable, it is perfectly decent, for the skin ceases to look bare, or like skin at all; it rather resembles a harlequin's costume. It must be dreadful to feel that one can never undress again. Yet what anguish does not the victim undergo, in order to put himself into a permanent suit of red dye and gunpowder!" The Japanese are very fond of their children, and in summer time a man may often be seen in the streets, wearing nothing but the cloth strip, and carrying in his arms his infant child, who has no clothing whatever.

Sometimes a man will appear in a costume which even seems more absurd than the almost entire nudity which has just been mentioned, and will walk about in a hat, a short jacket, and nothing else but the

In an illustration on the next page, the artist has shown a number of the ordinary costumes as they appear when the wearers are gathered round a ballad-singer. most conspicuous figure is that of a Samourai or Yaconin, an armed retainer of nobleman, swaggering along with the two swords emblematic of his office, and his fea-tures nearly hidden under his hat. Th men wearing the extraordinary piebal dresses are a sort of street constable, wh accompany a man of rank on his journey and who jingle an iron rod laden with rings in order to warn people to get out of the way of the great man. The other figures of men are arranged so as to show the mode of dressing the hair, and one or two varieties of costume.

The general appearance of the women

ve the wearer of the if he were kneeling

asses always appear essed, but those of der themselves suffihave a mere strip of of India. Coolies, f various kinds, posting but the cloth strip

"Narrative," men-nection with the cusch is carried out in ction as in Polynesia. nied themselves the ently for the purpose ant patterns in which nall of his back, and a est. It is rather fashet fish playing sport-oulders. The scarlet ry disgusting appearas if it had been caree required pattern.

attooed man there is which does not form presentation. If the reeable, it is perfectly eases to look bare, or ner resembles a harleust be dreadful to feel undress again. Yet to the victim undergo, elf into a permanent gunpowder!" The a man may often be

a man may often be aring nothing but the aring in his arms his incolothing whatever. will appear in a cosms more absurd than udity which has just will walk about in a d nothing else but the

on the next page, the umber of the ordinary ear when the wearers a ballad-singer. The ure is that of a Samarmed retainer of g along with the two his office, and his fea under his hat. The extraordinary piebale street constable, who rank on his journey n rod laden with rings ople to get out of th The other figures o as to show the mode of ad one or two varieties

rance of the women



(1.) DECAPITATION OF CHINESE CRIMINAL. (See page 1440.)



(2.) THE STREET BALLAD-SINGER. (See page 1450.)

may be best to brown o and hid face, no The nat gusting teeth are pulled or only to the pretty gives self into

dres that ехас mat whice very and "par wear grea woul dals held fork the s Mala they vate the g line . When of the grow, extractheir ing pu but in dinary hair i which could Hai much in the pins a inches are m tortois Some are m nearly that at bubble other. dozen d that at bundle into it. Havi

Th

dress is well shown by a figure opposite to that of the Samourai. The dress is almost exactly like that of the men, except that the materials are generally finer, and the sash which confines the garments to the waist is very broad, and gathered up into a large and peculiar knot, almost exactly like the "panier" of European fashion. Both sexes wear stockings made like mittens, and having a separate place for the reception of the great toe. Without this provision they would not be able to wear the peculiar sandals and clogs of the country, which are held on the foot by a Y-shaped strap, the fork of which passes between the great and the second toe. The clogs that are worn by the women very much resemble those of the Malays in general shape, and, awkward as they look, are easily manageable after a little practice. Some clogs in my collection elevate the foot of the wearer six inches above the ground, but I have found that walking, or rather shuffling, in them is not at all difficult.

The chief distinction between masculine and feminine attire lies in the hair. Whereas the men shave nearly the whole of the head, the women allow their hair to grow, and even add to it when they do not prossess a sufficient amount to produce the extraordinary forms into which they twist their locks. Various fashions of hair-dressing prevail in different parts of the country, but in all cases the women take extraor-dinary pains with their heads, and twist their hair into elaborate and fantastic patterns, which scarcely any European hairdresser

could equal.

Hair-pins are very fashionable, not so much for the purpose of confining the locks in their places, as of mere adornment. The pins are of enormous size, seven or eight pins are of enormous size, seven or eight inches in length, and half an inch wide, and are made of various substances, such as tortoise shell, carved wood, and ivory. Some of the most characteristic hair-pins are made of glass. They are hollow, and nearly filled with some colored liquid, so that at every movement of the wearer an air bubble, runs from one and of the pin to the bubble runs from one end of the pin to the other. Sometimes a woman will wear a dozen or more of these pins in her hair, so that at a little distance her head looks as if a

Having pleasing features by nature, it may be expected that the women do their best to disfigure them by art. The soft pale brown of their complexions is made ghastly and hideous by white paint, with which the face, neck, and bust are thickly covered. The natural pink of the lips is rendered disgusting by a layer of red paint, the white teeth are blackened, and the eyebrows are pulled out. This style of adornment belongs only to the married women, so that a really pretty girl will in a few hours transform her-

self into a repulsive hag.

Mr. Oliphant, in the work which has already been mentioned, gives rather a humorous reason for this strange custom. "The first impression of the fair sex which the traveller receives in a Japanese crowd is in the highest degree unfavorable; the ghastly appearance of the faces and bosoms, thickly coated with powder, the absence of eyebrows, and the blackened teeth, produce were it not for this abominable custom, Japanese women would probably rank high among Eastern beauties, certainly far before Chinese.

"All Japanese writers whom I have read upon the subject affirm that to have no eyebrows and black teeth is considered a beauty in Japan, and that the object of the process is to add to the charms of the fair one. The result of my inquiry and observation, how-ever, rather led me to form an opposite con-

clusion.

"In the first place, young ladies do not, as a rule, neglect any opportunity of improvas a rule, neglect any opportunity of improving their looks; but no Japanese young ladies, even after they are 'out,' think of taking this method of increasing their powers of fascination; they color their lips and cheeks, and deck their hair, but it is not until they have made a conquest of some lacky swain, that to prove their devotion to lucky swain, that, to prove their devotion to him, they begin to blacken their teeth and

pull out their cyebrows.

"He, privileged being, is called upon to exhibit no such test of his affection: on the contrary, his lawful wife having so far disfigured herself as to render it impossible that she should be attractive to any one else, seems to lose her charms for her husband as well. So he places her at the head of his establishment; and adds to it an indefinite number of handmaidens, who neither pull out their eyebrows nor blacken their teeth. Hence it seems not difficult to account for the phenomenon which is universally admitted, that while Japanese wives are celebrated for their virtue, their husbands are no less notorious for their licentiousness."

While upon the subject of dress, we must not pass unnoticed the extraordinary ideas which the Japanese have on the subject. bundle of firewood had been stuck loosely Possessed as they are of much taste in dress, and having certain complete costumes for various ranks, it seems very remarkable that they are utterly indifferent to clothing considered in the light of covering. They attach no sense of indelicacy to exposure of

Even their public baths, though some of them have two doors, one for men and one for women, are common to both sexes, and in those baths which are specially set apart for women the attendant is often a man. Sometimes there is a partition, about breast

high, to separate the sexes, but the usual baths have no such refinement. The baths are merely shallow pans or depressions in the floor, in which the bathers sit while they pour over themselves abundant supplies of hot and cold water. Baths of this nature are attached to all the "tea-houses," so that travellers can refresh themselves with a bath, in true Homeric style, before they take their meals. And, in Homeric style also, the attendants are women. The baths are known by a dark blue strip of cloth which hangs like a banner over the doorway. Europeans, when they first visit the country, are rather surprised when they pass along the streets to see a whole family "tubbing" in front of their houses, or, when they pass a public bath, to see the immates run out to look at the strangers; but they very soon become used to such spectacles, and think no more of them than do the Japanese themselves.

Sir Rutherford Alcock, in dealing with this subject, and illustrating it by a Japanese drawing representing a bath tenance by a man, a boy, and five women, makes the following remarks: "Men and women steaming in the bathing-houses raise themselves to the open bars of the lattice fronts to look out, the interior behind them presenting a view very fathfully represented in the following sketch by a native artist.

senting a view very faithfully represented in the following sketch by a native artist. "In reference to which, I cannot help feeling there is some danger of doing injustice to the womanhood of Japan if we judge them by our rules of decency and modesty. Where there is no sense of immodesty, no consciousness of wrong-doing, there is, or may be, a like absence of any sinful or depraying feeling. It is a custom of the country. Fathers, brothers, and husbands all sanction it; and from childhood the feeling must grow up as effectually shielding them from self-reproach or shame, as their sisters in Europe in adopting low dresses in the ball-room, or any other generally adopted fashion of garments or amusements. There is much in the usual appearance and expression of Japanese women to lead to this conclusion. Any one of the real performers in the above scene, — a bathing saturnalia as it may appear to us, — when all is over, and the toilet completed, will leave the bath-door a very picture of womanly reserve and modesty."

Certainly, no women can be more decently clad than those of Japan, as we may see by any of the multitudinous native drawings; and that they should attach no sense of decency to the dress, or indecency to its absence, is one of the many strange characteristics of this remarkable and enigmatic country.

The travelling dress of the women is little more than their ordinary costume, plus a large flat hat, which serves as a parasol. Japanese picture books abound with illustrative ments are so clumsy, that it is a wonder

tions of women travelling, and, multitudinous as they are, each has always some characteristic point, and no two are exactly alike. Sometimes we see the women sauntering quietly along the river bank, sometimes they are being carried across the river on the shoulders of men, or, if they be of importance, in "norimons" or chairs borne by six or eight coolles. Some of the drawings depict women as sitting in boats, as being caught in a heavy snow or rain storm (see illustration), as walking by moonlight, and as they appear when riding.



The attitude and general appearance of a female equestrian in Japan differ considerably from those of an European. Side-sadles are unknown, the fair rider perching herself upon a saddle which lifts her high above the back of the animal, concealing her body downward, holding on tightly by the front part of the saddle, and, in fact, giving herself a look very much resembling that of a gayly attired monkey on horse-back, as shown on the next page. This mode of riding is even followed by the opposite sex, the retainers of the high nobles sitting in their lofty saddles in very much the same attitude as that employed by the women, and being in consequence absolutely use-

less, except in looks, as cavalry.
Yet, when they choose, the Japanese can ride tolerably, as is shown by the fact of a game which is played among them, in which the competitors are all mounted. In this game the players have to contend against very great disadvantages. In the first place, the horses which they bestride are wretched animals, mere rough ponies, and the accourtements are so clumsy, that it is a wonder

the guid Trein shap stiff knee mal; sible the i light and i purp the r

the b

mout

how

the 1 alway count The untov large is a c groun Each dled, resem North descri game with t hole. wheth the ho site sic The parties

chief 1

oppone

toward

the rac

throug

ing, and, multitudias always some charwoo are exactly alike,
women sauntering
r bank, sometimes
across the river on
or, if they be of im" or chairs borne by
Some of the drawsitting in boats, as
snow or rain storm
alking by moonlight,
n riding.



eral appearance of a pan differ consideruropean. Side-sadfair rider perching
thich lifts her high
animal, concealing
loding on tightly by
dle, and, in fact, givy much resembling
monkey on horseext page. This mode
ved by the opposite
high nobles sitting
very much the same
yed by the women,
nce absolutely usecavalry.

cavalry.

10. the Japanese can

wn by the fact of a

mong them, in which

mounted. In this

to contend against

11. In the first place,

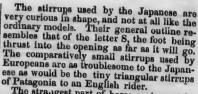
12. estride are wretched

mies, and the accou
that it is a wonder

how the horse can be guided at all. According to our ideas, a horse is guided by the pressure of the leg and the touch of the rein, but the Japanese saddles render such guidance impossible.

The former mode is prevented by the shape of the saddle, which has large flaps of stiff leather hanging so low that the heel or knee of the rider has no effect upon the animal; and the latter mode is nearly as impossible as the former, by reason of the bit and the fashion of riding. The bit is a mere light snaffle placed loosely in the mouth, and the reins are used, not so much for the purpose of guiding the horse, as of keeping the rider in his seat. The horsemen grasp a rein tightly in each hand, and so hang to the bit. The natural consequence is, that the mouths of the horses are nearly as tough as the leather saddle-flaps, and the animals always go with their noses in the air, so as to counteract the percental header.

counteract the perpetual haul on the bridle. The game which is played under these untoward conditions is a sort of mall. A large space is marked out, and at each end is a curtain. At some few feet from the ground a circular hole is cut in the curtain. Each player is furnished with a long-handled, small-headed racket, almost exactly resembling that which is employed by the North American Indians in their ball play, described on page 1824. The object of the game is to pick up the ball from the ground with the racket, and to throw it through the hole, a net is hung loosely on the opposite side of the hole, and receives the ball. The players arrange themselves in two parties, distinguished by colors, and the chief point of the game is to pursue the opponent as he is galloping triumphantly toward the goal, and knock the ball out of the racket just as he is going to throw it through the hole.



of Patagonia to an English rider.

The strangest part of horse equipment in Japan is, however, the shoe. Our idea of a horseshoe is a metallic plate to protect the horse against hard ground. The Japanese shoe is made of plaited straw, and is, in fact, nothing more than a straw sandal tied to the foot, giving it a very clumsy appearance. As may be imagined, their shoes never last very long, and on a stony road are soon cut to pieces. The rider, therefore, takes a supply of shoes with him, and renews them as fast as they are worn out. Indeed, a journey is often roughly calculated as a distance of so many shoes.

Under such circumstances, it is not surprising that the horse is seldom used in travelling. None but a poor noble will condescend to ride from one place to another, as it might be supposed that he could not afford the retinue which is required to carry him. Sometimes a nobleman will condescend to ride in public, but then his horse must be held by two grooms, who tug continually at the poor animal's mouth, and shout continually, "Chail chail" i. e. gently, for haste is always thought undignified by the Japanese, and a person of consideration would suffer a great infraction of dignity if he allowed himself to hurry over the road.

parties, distinguished by colors, and the chief point of the game is to pursue the opponent as he is galloping triumphantly toward the goal, and knock the ball out of the racket just as he is going to throw it through the hole.

For those who can afford so expensive a luxury, the usual mode of conveyance is a sort of palanquin called a Norimon. It is a square cage, hung from a pole, and carried by four men, two in front and two behind. For Japanese travellers this is a very comfortable conveyance that is a very comfortable conveyance.

fortable conveyance, but for Europeans, who are not accustomed to the crouching attitude so characteristic of the Japanese, even a short journey in a norimon is a source of torture, the unfortunate passenger finding great difficulty in getting into the machine, and, when the journey is over, almost as much difficulty in getting out again, his limbs being stiff and cramped by the position into which they have been forced.

The pole of the norimon is stout, and very long; and it is a matter of rivalry between young and fishionable men to have their norimon poles as long and as profusely decorated as possible. When the coolies carry the norimon, they hoist it on their shoulders at a signal from their master, and step along at some three miles an hour.



In many parts the coolies much resemble the palanquin bearers of India, but are in this respect superior, that they travel in silence, and do not weary the soul of their master by the perpetual grunts and moans with which the Indian bearers are accus-

tomed to lighten their journey.
Uncomfortable as is the norimon, there is a popular conveyance which is even more painful to European limbs. This is called the Cango, and it bears about the same relationship to the norimon as a wheelbarrow does to a carriage. Indeed, if the reader can imagine the wheel, the legs, and handle of a wheelbarrow to be removed, and the body of the machine to be hung from a pole, he can form some idea of a cango. In the nori-mon the inmate has to crouch, in the cango he has almost to tie himself in a knot. Yet the Japanese limbs are so supple, that cango employers travel for many successive hours without being in the least oppressed by the attitude which they are compelled to assume. Cangos are largely used in Japan, and are indeed what cabs are to Londoners, the nori-

mons supplying the place of carriages.
When a great noble or Daimlo travels, he always uses the norimon, partly because it is the most luxurious conveyance which he knows, and partly because it gives him an excuse for displaying the strength of his retinue, which is about the only mode of ostentation known to the Japanese. norimon is preceded by some of the men called Samourais, or Yaconins, i. e. men who are permitted to attach themselves to his service, and thereby to gain the privilege of wearing two swords. As their master passes along, they continually utter the word "Shitanirio!" i. e. kneel down, whereupon every one that hears it must at once prostrate himself on the ground, or remain erect at his peril. The most serious quarrels that have arisen between strangers and the natives in Japan have originated in this custom, the strangers either not knowing the custom, or refusing to comply with it lest they should compromise the dignity of their nation. Refusing to obey such an order is sure to cause a quarrel, and is likely to end in loss of life, as the Yaconins who give the order to kneel are always ready to enforce obedience with their swords.

Around the norimon is a crowd of servants, each wearing his master's badge on his back, and each armed according to his rank. Some led horses generally accompany the procession, so that the great man may ride when he is tired of the norimon, and a number of coolies bear umbrellas covered with waterproof cases, and large boxes on poles. These boxes are almost invariably empty, but are conventionally supposed to contain the stores of baggage without which so great a man could not be expected to stir. Superior officers in norimons, and inferior officers on horseback, accompany the into inanimate objects is almost incredible.

procession, for which a passage is kept by a number of men fantastically dressed in harlequin-like suits of various colors. Each of them carries a long iron rod, to which are attached a number of rings made of the same metal. As they walk they strike the end of the rod against the ground at each step, so that a clashing sort of jingle is produced, and strikes awe into the people.

That the Japanese should be such poor

horsemen is very singular, considering the marvellous perfection to which they have brought other athletic exercises. As "acro-bats" the performers are far superior to those of any other nation, performing the most audacious and apparently impossible feats with an absolute precision which quite

removes any idea of danger.

Until the Japanese gymnasts came to this country, we were inclined to treat the accounts of travellers as exaggerated, but they proved to be capable of performing any feats which our professional athletes could achieve, and many others which they never even dreamt of attempting. For example, nothing seems much more difficult than for a man to lie on his back and balance on the soles of his feet a ladder thirty feet high. But when we add that to the top of the ladder a second ladder was attached at right angles, like the top of the letter F, and that a boy went up and down the ladder, and even crawled to the end of the cross piece and there hung by his instep, while the ladder was balanced on the soles of the reclining man's feet, we appear to be romancing rather than relating a fact. Yet this astonishing performance was repeated day after day, and nothing was more wonderful than the elaborate perfection and finish of the performance. The heavy ladder was placed the authorized for the line worth it. on the upturned feet, and in a moment it was as steady as if it had been planted in the ground. Though, owing to the crosspiece, it was considerably inclined, its steadiness was not impaired, and even when the boy ascended and descended it, causing the centre of gravity to be continually altered, there was not the slightest wavering per-

So with the other feats achieved by these remarkable performers. Everything was done with the deliberation which forms an essential part of the Japanese nature, but there were no needless delays, and whether the man was balancing the ladder on his feet, or whether he was spinning tops and making them act as if they were rational beings, or whether he was making two paper butterflies flutter about as if they were real insects, the same quiet perfection characterized the whole of the performance, and every feat was done with such consummate ease that it looked as if it really required no skill at all. The extraordinary life which the Japanese performers contrive to infuse

Had 1 be sc could form touch It a

the do open e waited open forme incline went t It ther standi nassed diately top had Howev was flu ps ever ale, rin and ru the har some fo ples.

The of a sw the blac the air caught wound the air. then car passage is kept by a ally dressed in harleous colors. Each of on rod, to which are ags made of the same hey strike the end of und at each step, so jingle is produced.

people. should be such poor lar, considering the to which they have exercises. As acro-are far superior to ion, performing the parently impossible recision which quite

nger. ymnasts came to this ned to treat the acexaggerated, but they of performing any sional athletes could ers which they never ting. For example, ore difficult than for and balance on the der thirty feet high. to the top of the ladas attached at right he letter F, and that own the ladder, and d of the cross piece instep, while the lad-e soles of the reclinear to be romancing act. Yet this astons repeated day after nore wonderful than n and finish of the vy ladder was placed and in a moment it had been planted in owing to the cross-ly inclined, its stead-

ts achieved by these Everything was tion which forms an Japanese nature, but delays, and whether g the ladder on his s spinning tops and they were rational vas making two paper as if they were real perfection charactere performance, and th such consummate it really required no cordinary life which rs contrive to infuse is almost incredible.

and even when the ended it, causing the continually altered, htest wavering per-

Had not the feat been actually seen, it would be scarcely possible to believe that a top could be spun, and then launched off to perform the following feats without being even touched:

It ascended an inclined plane to a temple, the doors of which were closed. It knocked open one of the doors, entered the temple, waited inside some time, and then knocked open another door at right angles to the former, and emerged. It then went over an inclined bridge, entered another temple, and meined bridge, entered another temple, and went up stairs, emerging at an upper story. It then proceeded along an inclined plane standing at right angles to the temple, and passed over a drawbridge, which was immediately lifted, leaving a gap over which the top had to pass in order to get back again. However, by the loosing of a catch, the top was flung over the gap, and went on as gayly ps ever, finishing with entering a third temale, ringing a bell inside, coming out again, and running over two more bridges into the hands of the spinner, having traversed some forty feet, besides the work in the tem-

along which it ran as if alive, was passed behind the back, and caught again in front, behind the back, and caught again in front, and lastly, was received upon the hem of the sleeve, made to spin up the garment, over the neck and shoulders, and down the sleeve of the opposite side. It was also made to spin upon a slight string stretched from the wall, and to pass backward and forward as long as the spinner chose. forward as long as the spinner chose.

Some of these tops required no string, but were merely spun with the hand; they could be taken up and put down again, still spinning, or they could be stood on their heads and still spin, or they could be built into a perfect edifice of tops, three or four spinning upon each other, sometimes each learning in a different direction, and then spinning upon each other, sometimes each leaning in a different direction, and then being brought upright by a touch of the ever-ready fan. The concluding feat was a very curious one. Some thirty feet above the heads of the spectators was hung a model of a temple from which depended a string. of a temple, from which depended a string. The chief top-spinner then took a small but the hands of the spinner, having traversed some forty feet, besides the work in the temples.

The same man spun a top upon the edge of a sword, making it pass from one end of the blade to the other. He flung the top in the air and threw the string at it: the top caught the middle of the string by the peg wound itself up, and was again flung into the air, spinning faster than before. It was then caught on the slender stem of a pipe,

CHAPTER CLVII.

JAPAN - Concluded.

MISCELLANEOUS CUSTOMS.

SUMPTUARY LAWS -- SYSTEM OF ESPIONAGE -- THE DUPLICATE EMPIRE -- POWERS OF THE TYCOOK AND MIRADO - THE DAIMIOS AND THRIR RETAINERS - THE TWO SWORDS - LONINS, OR OUTLAWS - JAPANESE FENCERS - DEFENSIVE ARMOR - ARCHERY - THE HAPPY DESPATCH - PUBLIC EXE-CUTIONS - ARCHITECTURE - REASONS FOR ITS FRAGILITY - PRECAUTIONS AGAINST FIRE - SIMPLE HABITS OF THE JAPANESE - AMUSEMENTS AND GAMES - WRESTLERS - THEATRES IN JAPAN -CURIOUS ARRANGEMENT OF PLAYS - THE TEA-HOUSES AND THEIR ATTENDANTS - JAPANESE ART - THE PORTABLE INESTAND - THE CRANE, HERON, AND STORE - THE SNOW-CLOAK - SILK MADE BY NOBLES. - 11-

the power of carrying certain weapons being denied to all except the privileged classes. We will, therefore, take a hasty glance at the different ranks in Japan.

With regard to all official ranks a duplicate with regard to an one at ranks a duplicate system exists throughout the kingdom. At the head of the government there are two emperors, — the civil emperor, or Tycoon, and the spiritual emperor, or Mikado. The former of these potentates (whose title is sometimes spelled as Siogoen) is the real administrator of the empire, although he is nominally inferior to the Mikado, an inferiority which is carefully marked by certain visits of ceremony paid to the Mikado, but is not allowed to proceed beyond mere etiquette.

Indeed, the powers of the Tycoon himself are practically limited, though theoretically unbounded, and the government is in fact exercised by the nobles, through a double council, one of which is chosen by the emperor, and the other selected by the nobles from themselves. Every man who is employed in the duties of government has his duplicate, or "shadow," as he is called; he is subject to espionage on every side, and is himself a spy on others.

This system, uncomfortable as it may appear, has its advantages. According to Mr. Oliphant: "One most beneficial result arising from this universal system of espionage

In Japan there is a tolerably strict code of —is the entire probity of every government sumptuary laws, certain modes of dress and the nower of carrying certain weapons being they were incorruptible. When men can neither offer nor receive bribes; when it is almost impossible, even indirectly, to exercise corrupt influences, there is little fear of the demoralization of public departments of the state. In this respect Japan affords a brilliant contrast to China, and even to some European countries. So long as this purity exists, even though purchased at the cost of secret espial, there can be little cause to fear the decadence of Japan."

It is as well to mention in this place that the word Tycoon, or Tai-kû, is not of Japanese but of Chinese origin, and that it came into use through its insertion in an official document, the unlucky minister who employed it having in consequence fallen into disgrace and poverty. The name of Tycoon is never applied to him by the Japanese, who use instead the title which has been conferred upon him by his nominal superior, the Mikado.

The Mikado, or spiritual emperor, is held in the greatest veneration, and many of the honors paid to him are almost identical with those which are rendered to the Gran Lama of Thibet. He is too sacred to touch the earth with his feet, and is carried of men's shoulders on the rare occasions whe he moves from one part of the palace t another. Outside it he never goes. He too holy to wear any garment twice, or -for it extends through all classes of society use any article a second time, and, shoul

any o or ute bring heave he ha he ha are m A B whom head v

guette Mikad into 1 wives : at leng of the is subi tired o favor o Nex among

who ar

difficult

enced i

caused

position by the country English vast nur a gener Wears a being th even one of the St may not among t privilege certain is a lucre mios, an enormou

ounded. The hi

wear

This is m ers of th ery full ewed tog ne of the he right akkama. The mon he Yacor een admi alcock in "All of

his formi

heir belt; apan, to o ithout mu

ween mili

any one venture to wear or use a garment are the classes which furnish suitable speci-or utensil sanctified by his touch, he would mens of that extinct species of the race in bring down on himself the vengeance of bring down on minsell the vengeaned of heaven. Consequently, every garment that he has worn or every wooden utensil which he has employed is burned, and those which are made of earthenware are broken.

are made of earthenware are broken.

A similar rule extends to his wives, of whom he has twelve, one of them being the head wife or queen. A curious piece of etiquette is practised by the wives of the Mikado. All other women dress their hair into fantastic shapes, but the Mikado's wives are obliged to allow their hair to flow at length down their backs. In consequence of the innumerable restrictions to which he is subjected, the Mikado generally becomes is subjected, the Mikado generally becomes tired of his comfortless rank, and resigns in

favor of his heir.

Next come the Daimios or nobles, who, as among ourselves, are of different ranks, and who are the real rulers of the country. The difficulties which foreigners have experienced in Japan have almost invariably been caused by the Daimios, who fear that their position as feudal nobles may be endangered by the introduction of foreigners into the country. The greater Daimios are as formidable as were the great barons of early English history, and in like manner keep vast numbers of armed retainers. There is a general idea that in Japan every man wears a pair of swords. This is far from being the case, as none are permitted to wear even one sword unless he be in the service of the State. Even the wealthiest merchant may not wear a sword unless he is enrolled among the retainers of a Daimio, and, as the privilege is a great one, it is purchased for a certain annual sum. This indirect tribute is a lucrative source of income to the Daimios, and enables them to maintain the mormous retinue with which they are sur-

The higher classes in Japan are privileged b wear a garment called the "hakkama." This is much like the huge petticoat trouhis is much like the huge petticoat trou-ers of the French Zouave, and is indeed a rery full and abundantly plaited petticoat, ewed together in the middle, and gathered at the knees. The wearers are inordi-ately proud of this garment, and, though me of the unprivileged classes may purchase the right to carry a sword, no expenditure of money will enable a man to wear the akkame.

The most troublesome of the retainers are e Yaconins or Samourais, men who have en admirably described by Sir Rutherford leock in his "Capital of the Tycoon":— "All of a certain rank are armed with as formidable weapon projecting from his formidable weapon projecting else in helt; swords, like everything else in heapan, to our worse confusion, being double, ithout much or any obvious distinction be-

mens of that extinct species of the race in Europe still remembered as Swashbucklers, — swaggering, blustering bullies; many cowardly enough to strike an enemy in the back, or cut down an unarmed and inoffensive man; but also supplying numbers ever ready to fling their own lives away in accomplishing a revenge, or carrying out the orders of their chief.

orders of their chief.

"They are all entitled to the privilege of two swords, rank and file, and are saluted by the unprivileged (professional, mercantile, and agricultural classes) as Sama, or Lord. With a rolling straddle in his gait, reminding one of Mr. Kinglake's graphic description of the Janissary, and due to the same cause,—the heavy, projecting blades at his waist, and the swaddling clothes round his body.—the Janancse Samourai or Yas his body, - the Japanese Samourai or Yaconin moves on in a very ungainly fashion, the hilts of his two swords at least a foot in advance of his person, very handy, to all appearance, for an enemy's grasp. One is a heavy, two-handled weapon, pointed and sharp as a razor; the other short, like a Ro-man sword, and religiously kept in the same serviceable state.

"In the use of these he is no mean adept. He seldom requires a second thrust with the shorter weapon, but strikes home at a single thrust, as was fatally proved at a later period; while with the longer weapon he severs a limb at a blow. Such a fellow is a man to whom all peace-loving subjects and prudent people habitually give as wide a berth as they can. Often drunk, and always insolent, he is to be met with in the quarters of the town where the tea-houses most abound; or returning about dusk from his day's debauch, with a red and bloated face, and not oversteady on his legs, the terror of all the un-armed population and street dogs. Happy for the former, when he is content with try-ing the edge of a new sword on the quadrupeds; and many a poor crippled animal is to be seen limping about, slashed over the back, or with more hideous evidences of brutality. But, at other times, it is some coolie or inoffensive shopkeeper, who, coming unadvisedly between 'the wind and his a blow." is just as mercilessly cut down at

In some sort of a way, each noble is responsible for the acts of his retainers. Therefore, if any of these men determine upon some act which they know will compromise their master, - say the assassination of some one whom he dislikes, — they formally divest themselves of his protection, and become "lonins," or outlaws, or almost exactly the same as the "masterless-men" of the feudal English days. Each of them carries with him a paper on which his renunciation is ithout much or any obvious distinction be-reen military and civil, or between Ty-on's officers and Daimios' retainers. These who murdered Europeans were lonins.

OWERS OF THE TYCOON S - LONINS, OR OUTLAWS DESPATCH - PUBLIC EXE-S AGAINST FIRE - SIMPLE -THEATRES IN JAPAN -ENDANTS -- JAPANESE ART NOW-CLOAK - SILK MADE

of every government ve could learn or see, ble. When men can ive bribes; when it is en indirectly, to exer-s, there is little fear of public departments of spect Japan affords a hina, and even to some So long as this purity urchased at the cost of n be little cause to fear m." on in this place that the

kû, is not of Japanese , and that it came into ion in an official docunister who employed it ce fallen into disgrace me of Tycoon is never

e Japanese, who use ch has been conferred nominal superior, the

ritual emperor, is held ation, and many of th e almost identical with ndered to the Gran is too sacred to toucleet, and is carried o he rare occasions when part of the palace the never goes. He is garment twice, or to cond time, and, shoul

The swords which these men wear in virtue: of their rank are most formidable weapons, the temper of the steel, the balance of the weapon, and the slight curve of the edge, being all that can be desired. They are finished with the utmost care, and every part receives the minutest attention. A very beautiful specimen of the shorter sword was presented to me by C. Allen, Esq., of Black-heath. It measures two feet four inches in total length, of which the handle occupies nearly nine inches. This roomy handle of the Japanese sword presents a remarkable contrast with the small and cramped hilts of the Indian weapons. It affords an admirable grasp for the hand, being covered with dia-mond-shaped patterns of silken cord twist-ed over a basis of rough skate-skin. The blade is a little more than an inch in width, and even after a stay of many years in this country, is as bright as a mirror and sharp as a razor.

Indeed, for a hand-to-hand encounter, it would be difficult to find a more formidable weapon, even the kookery of India being in-ferior to it, as being heavier and less man-ageable. It is equally adapted for thrusting or cutting, and is so effective for the former purpose that one of these swords has been driven completely through a man's body by a single thrust. The balance of the weapon is admirable, and, though it is somewhat unsightly, it can be managed with perfect ease.

The amount of labor that has been bestowed on this particular weapon is really astonishing. The effect is not in the least obtrusive, and it is only by close examination that its beauties can be seen. The blade is left entirely without ornament, its excellence being shown by its high polish and sharp edge. But, with the exception of the blade, every portion of the weapon has its ornament. On the guard is represented a buffalo grazing under a tree, the ground-work being of bronze, and the leaves of the tree and the herbage being gold. Between the silken cords of the hilt and the skate-skin are inserted two beautifully executed models, in bronze, of a bow and arrows, the feathers of the arrows and wrappings of the head being gilt. One of these models is inserted on either side of the hilt, which is terminated by a richly engraved bronze ornament.

In the upper part of the sheath is kept a small knife, somewhat similar in shape to that which is kept in the chopstick-case of the Chinese. The handle of the knife is bronze, and is adorned with the gure of a cravish, beautifully wrought in gold, to-gether with a barner and one or two other devices. The sheath itself is a wonderful piece of workmanship. At a little distance it looks as if it were covered with darkbrown leather; but a closer inspection shows

delicate pattern that looks as if it had been traced with a needle's point, and must have cost the artist a very considerable expenditure of labor.

The larger sword is made after precisely the same pattern, except that it is four feet in length, and must be used with both hands. With one of these swords a Jap-anese will strike off a limb at a single blow; and so sharp are they, that an executioner, in beheading a criminal, scarcely raises the sword a foot for his stroke. The Japanese swordsmen practise the use of their weapon swordsmen practise that use of their weapons by means of sham swords, with which they fence, the combatants padding their limbs and sides, and covering their faces with wire masks. They have a very dangerous cut, which is made by the more motion of unsheathing the sword, and takes effect at a distance where an inexperienced person would think himself safe.

So good is the temper of these weapons. that a Japanese has been known to sever a thick iron bolt with a single blow, the edge of the sword not showing the slightest indication of the severe test to which it had been put. The Japanese name for the large sword is "ken"; that of the shorter, "kat-

Defensive armor was at one time much worn by the Japanese, though at the present day the introduction of improved firearms has caused them to abaudon armor, except for purposes of show. A complete suit of Japanese armor is shown on page 1469. It is made of multitudinous plates hung upon cloth, and profusely ornamented by gilding. Though very light, it is strong enough to resist the blow of the long sword. though it is worse than useless against rifled fire-arms. Indeed, had it not been for the recent disuse of protective armor, we should scarcely have been able to procure a suit; but, finding their suits of mail to be practically useless, the Japanese nobles very generously presented many of them to their foreign guests, and allowed others to be

The oddest part of the suit is the helmet with its appendages. The fantastic crest i very light, being made of exceedingly thir material, covered with gilding; and is s slight that a blow with a stick would crust it. Perhaps the reader may wonder at th beards which apparently depend from the chins of the soldiers. The fact is, the ha met is furnished with a very complete visor shaped like a mask, which covers the whol of the face, and is decorated with a larg gray beard and mustache, in order to strik terror into the beholders.

The bow is a favorite weapon with th Japanese, who expend nearly as much labor upon it as they do upon the sword. is mostly japanned in black, and adorne with various decorations. Some of the that it is entirely covered with a minute and bows are very powerful, and are strung i

rathe ing t hand. dle o powe his le arrow accor the pe

On Japar the J take i for th and is rior b sure t These emble In c

must l punisl Haraof .sui with t the up reality has fai act wh of his to per pointed dresses cence, speech placed. as he ra inflictin comes gword Hara-k slight in death is in the a

Some the vict kiri as the self several attempt attack o would-b ceeding had com were alr was cap used for kattan.

When kiri, he i able deal a reputa are prou enced. ooks as if it had been point, and must have considerable expendi-

made after precisely ept that it is four feet be used with both these swords a Japlimb at a single blow; , that an executioner, nal, scarcely raises the troke. The Japanese e use of their weapon ords, with which they s padding their limbs ig their faces with wire very dangerous cut, m re motion of unand takes effect at a inexperienced person afe.

per of these weapons. been known to sever a single blow, the edge wing the slightest inditest to which it had nese name for the large t of the shorter, "kat-

vas at one time much se, though at the prestion of improved fireem to abandon armor, of show. A complete nor is shown on page multitudinous plates l profusely ornamented very light, it is strong blow of the long sword an useless against rifled ad it not been for the ective armor, we should able to procure a suit its of mail to be practianese nobles very gen-nany of them to their allowed others' to be

the suit is the helmet The fantastic crest ide of exceedingly thing it is so it is

y wonder at the ently depend from the The fact is, the hele a very complete visor which covers the whole decorated with a larg tache, in order to strik

ders. orite weapon with th nd nearly as much la do upon the sword. in black, and adorne tions. Some of thes rful, and are strung i rather a peculiar manner, the archer plac-ing the lower end of the bow on the ground, and grasping the upper end with his right hand. He plants his right foot on the mid-dle of the bow, bends it with the united powers of his foot and right hand, and with his left alive the string into its place. The his left slips the string into its place. The arrows are made like those of China, but, in accordance with the national character of

accordance with the national character of the people, are more highly finished.

One of the strangest weapons used by the Japanese is the war fan. Like the Chinese, the Japanese are never without the fan, and are obliged, by force of long habit, to take it into battle. The fan which is kept for this purpose has its sheath made of iron, and is of very large size, so that if the war-nor be surprised without his sword, he is sure to have his fan ready by way of a club. These fans are decorated with the national

emblem, a red sun on a black ground.
In connection with the Japanese weapons must be mentioned some of their modes of punishment. The first is the celebrated Hara-kiri, or Happy Despatch, and consists of suicide by ripping open the abdomen with two cuts in the form of a cross. Only with two cuts in the form of a cross. Only the upper classes are privileged to perform the Happy Despatch, and to them it is in reality a privilege. If a Japanese official has failed in some duty, or committed some act which is likely to call upon him the anger of his superiors, he applies for permission to perform the Hara-kiri. At the ap-pointed time, he assembles his friends, dresses himself in white, as a token of innoto perform the Hara-Kiri. At the appointed time, he assembles his friends, dresses himself in white, as a token of innocence, gives an entertainment, and makes a speech upon the position in which he is placed. He then takes the fatal knife, and as he raises his clothing for the purpose of indiction, the wounds a good swordsman of wood and wherever possible are only as no raises his cooling for the purpose of inflicting the wounds, a good swordsman comes behind him, bearing a two-handed sword or "ken." The victim begins the Hara-kiri, but, as soon as he has made a slight incision, his head is swept off, so that death is not the result of the horrid wounds in the abdomen.

Sometimes, however, when time presses, the victim is obliged to perform the Harakiri as he can, and in that case dies from the self-inflicted wounds. For example, in several cases where assassination has been several cases where assassination has been attempted, and notably in the celebrated attack on the British Legation, when the would-be assassins were chased on the succeeding day, it was found that three of them had committed the Hara-kiri, two of whom were already dead, but one was still living and was captured. In these cases the weapon used for the purpose is the shorter sword, or "kattan."

hand of the executioner, his whole property is confiscated, his family fulls under ban, and his name is held as infamous. It will be seen, therefore, that the Hara-kiri is really a very great privilege, especially among a people so entirely indifferent to life as the Japanese.

Public executions are very simply carried out. The criminal is taken to the spot on a horse, and when he arrives, is bound, and made to kneel on the ground over a hole which is to receive his head. The executioner, who uses the "ken" above named, arranges the culprit's head in the proper position, and, apparently, it hout any effort, decapitates the man with a blow. The old traveller Purchas very neatly expresses the mode of execution by a single word. After narrating the preliminaries, he states that the criminal "holds out his head, presently wiped off."

Crucifixion is employed by the Japanese as well as by the Chinese, and is mostly reserved for high treason. Minor punishments are not much in vogue, inasmuch as a theft above a certain sum entails the penalty of death, and so does a theft of a smaller sum if repeated. Flogging and banishment are sometimes employed as punishments. The dreadful tortures to which the earlier Christian missionaries and their converts were subjected appear to be reserved for political and religious offenders.

of wood, and, wherever possible, are only one story in height. They have a very ingenious mode of dividing their houses into rooms. Instead of using permanent walls for that purpose, they prefer folding screens made of wood and paper, so that they can alter at will the size and shape of the rooms.

The floors are covered with mats, which serve also as measurements. They are beautifully made of straw and rushes, are several inches in thickness, and by law obliged to be exactly of the same dimensions, 4. e. one "kin," or seven feet four and a half inches in sength, and half as much in breadth in length, and half as much in breadth. The window frames are movable, and, instead of glass, are filled with oiled paper, mica, and the translucent shell of the great pearl cyster. The partitions of the houses and all the posts are curiously varnished and painted, and the Japanese, essentially a cleanly people, are very careful in keeping the interior of their houses in the best possible order. Like many Orientels they all When a man has committed the Harakiri, he is supposed to have died an honorable death, and so to have earned for himself a reputation as a brave man. His family are proud of him, and his memory is reversenced. But should he lose his life by the

The roof is also of wood, and is generally composed of thick boards, which are kept in their places by wooden pegs, or by heavy stones laid upon them. The ends of the roof project considerably beyond the walls, so that they protect the doorways from the sun. On the roof of each house is kept a tub full of water, and near at hand is a broom, so that, in case of a fire, all the wooden roofs are at once drenched with water. The extremely inflammable nature of the materials renders this precaution needful; and, in addition, there are cisterns and tubs kept in the streets, together with tolerably effective fire-engines.

The furniture of the houses is on the same simple plan as the edifices themselves. A Japanese, no matter what his rank or wealth, has but little furniture. From the highest Daimio to the ordinary workman, the furniture of the houses is much the same. The room is bare, and floored by mats; a few shelves hold some cups and saucers, and there are generally several small trays on stands. This, with a few coverlids and a small piliow, made of wood and having a padding on the top, constitutes the furniture of the living-room. As to the kitchen, one or two small movable stoves, a few pans of metal, and some brooms, are all that are needed.

The Japanese cannot in the least understand why their Western visitors should encumber themselves with such quantities of furniture, which, to them, are not only useless, but absolutely in their way. They need neither tables, chairs, sideboards, nor bedsteads, and care nothing for large and hand-

Some years ago, when preparations were made for the reception of a British Consul in Hakodadl, it was almost impossible to find any place that could accommodate him. However, after much trouble, a locality was found. After the arrangements had been made, the Japanese Governor rose, took Sir R. Alcock by the hand, and led him through a corridor to a little room, or rather closet, nine feet by six, and quietly remarked that in that room his successor would be installed.

Sir R. Alcock has some very pertinent remarks on this subject: "As we slowly wended our way through the streets, I had full opportunity of observing the absence of all the things we deem so essential to comfort, and which crowd our rooms almost to the exclusion, and certainly to the great inconvenience, of the people who are intended to occupy them, as well as to the detriment of the proprietor's purse.

"If European joints could only be made supple enough to enable their owners to dispense with sofas and chairs, and, par consequence, with tables; and we were hardy enough to lie on straw mats, six feet by three, stuffed with fine straw, and beautifully made with a silk border, so as to form a sort of

The roof is also of wood, and is generally emposed of thick boards, which are kept in solution of that much-debated question, the role is places by wooden pegs, or by heavy ones laid upon them. The ends of the possibility of marrying on 400l a year, might confirm protect the doorways from the other they protect the doorways from the up. On the roof of each house is kept a ment to a young couple in Japan.

ment to a young couple in Japan.

"Their future house is taken, containing generally three or four little rooms, in which clean mats are put. Each then brings to the housekeeping a cotton stuffed quilt, and a box of wearing apparel for their own personal use; a pan to cook the rice, half-a-dozen larger cups and trays to eat off, a large tub to bathe and wash in are added, on the general account: and these complete the establishment."

Such being the simplicity of the house and furniture, it is evident that loss by fire an event by no means uncommon - is not nearly so severe as is the case with us. The Japanese have, evever, a very sincere dread of fire, and at it end of every principal street there is an elevated station, furnished with a bell, by means of which information can be given as to the part of the city in which the fire rages, so that all can go to assist in extinguishing it. Fires are of almost daily occurrence, and whole streets are levelled at a time. The Japanese take these fires as a matter of course, and look on the destruction of an entire quarter with characteristic equanimity. Indeed, they calculate that, taking one part with another, Yeddo is burned down once in every seven years; and so they build their houses with the least possible expense, considering them to be sooner or later food for fire.

Of the amusements of the Japanese only a very short account can be given. First among them must be placed the calm and contemplative amusement of the pipe, in which the Japanese indulge largely. The pipe which they use is very small, the bowleing scarcely large enough to contain a moderately sized pea. The tobacco is very mild, something like Turkish tobacco, and it is smoked by drawing the vapor into the lungs, so that the whole of the tobacco is consumed at one inhalation. The ashes are then turned out of the pipe, which is replaced in its case, and the smoke is leisurely exhaled. A Japanese will smoke thirty or

forty such pipes in a morning.

Games for children are almost identical with those used in England; the ball, the shuttlecock, the stilt, the kite, and the hoop, being all common toys. As for adults, they have dice, the theatre, the wrestling matches. The dice are prohibited by law, and therefore they are made so minute as to be easily concealed. A pair of dice and their box are so small that they can be concealed between the tips of two flagers, the dice being barely the tenth of an inch in diameter, and the box just large enough to hold them.

The wrestling matches are very singular

perforgest it last p capab of the sack o five po with encum tlers a proud powers several garmer swords they p leaving apron, their pa

they p leaving apron, their pa In w their an arena, boundar of these an Ame "The bulls, w quired, 1 As they stamped were wi their hu the eartl over the between stalwart down lo mon one ent, wl imultan a opposi hat migl "The ersons w er, the ef quive odies. ang thei nd were truggle, eir anta ith the orm of a ces swel hich seer

kin, and to motion as ue of the eight upon mquished middeted. The there in the eight upon many shed, if young lowers, and farrangin

coms of any size; the debated question, the on 400l. a year, might with something like matrimony. The upver offer any impedie in Japan.

e is taken, containing little rooms, in which ach then brings to the stuffed quilt, and a box r their own personal the rice, half-a-dozen to eat off, a large tub n are added, on the these complete the

plicity of the house dent that loss by fire ns uncommon --- is not he case with us. The ver, a very sincere elevated station, fury means of which inn as to the part of the rages, so that all can uishing it. Fires are nce, and whole streets The Japanese take r of course, and look an entire quarter with ity. Indeed, they calne part with another, n once in every seven aild their houses with ense, considering them ood for fire.

of the Japanese only can be given. First placed the calm and ment of the pipe, in ndulge largely. The ndulge largely. s very small, the bowl enough to contain a The tobacco is very Turkish tobacco, and it

g the vapor into the ole of the tobacco is ation. The ashes are he pipe, which is re-the smoke is leisurely will smoke thirty or norning.

are almost identical England; the ball, the the kite, and the hoop, s. As for adults, they the wrestling matches. ed by law, and there-minute as to be easily

ice and their box are so be concealed between , the dice being barely in diameter, and the to hold them.

ches are very singular

performances. The wrestlers are the stran- are to be acted in a day: the performers go gest imaginable beings, being fattened to the through the first act of the first play, then gest imaginable beings, being fattened to the last possible degree, so that they seem incapable of any feats of activity. Yet one Yet one of these elephantine men took in his arms a sack of rice weighing a hundred and twentyfive pounds, and turned repeated somersaults with as much ease as any light and un-encumbered gymnast could do. The wres-tlers are kept by the Daimios, who are very proud of them, and fond of exhibiting their powers. Each wrestler is supplied with several attendants, and clad in magnificent garments, the privilege of wearing two swords being also accorded to them. When they perform, all their robes are removed, leaving them in the wrestler's garb, a fringed apron, embroidered with the cognizance of their patron.

In wrestling, they try, not only to throw their antagonist, but to push him out of the arena, a man who is forced beyond the

an American traveller.

"They were, in fact, like a pair of flerce bulls, whose nature they had not only ac-quired, but even their look and movements. as they continued to eye each other, they tamped the ground heavily, pawing as it were with impatience, and then, stooping heir huge bodies, they grasped handfuls of he earth, and flung it with an angry toss wer their backs, or rubbed it impatiently stween their massive palms, or under their slawart shoulders. They now crouched own low, still keeping their eyes fixed mon one another, and watching each moveent, when, in a moment, they had both multaneously heaved their massive frames

"The equilibrium of their monstrous ersons was hardly disturbed by the encounr, the effect of which was barely visible in quiver of the hanging flesh of their odies. As they came together, they had ing their brawny arms about each other, and were now entwined in a desperate ruggle, with all their strength, to throw heir antagonist. Their great muscles rose ith the distinct outline of the sculptured m of a colossal Hercules, their bloated res swelled up with gushes of red blood, hich seemed almost to burst through the in, and their bodies palpitated with savage motion as the struggle continued. At last he of the antagonists fell with his immense eight upon the ground, and, being declared inquished, he was assisted to his feet and inducted out of the ring."

The theatres much resemble those of the kinese, the building being a mere tempory shed, and the parts of the women taken

the first act of the second play, and so on, until they have taken in succession the first act of every play. They then take the second act of each play, and so on until the whole are concluded. The object of this custom is, to enable spectators to see one act, go away, and come again in time for the next act. Often, however, the spectators remain throughout the entire day, and in that case refreshments are openly consumed. It is also thought correct for ladies to change their dress as often as possible during the day, so that there is as much change of costume in front of the stage as upon it. In these plays there is generally a considerable amount of love-making, and a still greater amount of fighting, the "terrific corabat" being an acknowledged essential of the Japanese stage.

boundary being held as vanquished. One perplexing institution of Japan is that of the Perhaps the most characteristic and most Tea-house. In many points the whole tone of thought differs so much in Japan from anything that we Westerns have learned, that it is scarcely possible for two so diverse people to judge each other fairly. We have people to Judge each other larry. We have already seen that nudity conveys no ideas of indecency to a Japanese, the people having been accustomed to it from infancy, and thinking no more of it than do infants. In the tea-houses we find a state of things which in Europe would be, and rightly, stigmatized as national immorality in Japan it is taken as a matter of course. These teahouses are situated in the most picturesque spots, and are furnished with every luxury. The extraordinary part of them is, that the imultaneously heaved their massive frames attendants are young women, who are sold for a term of years to a life of vice. They are purchased by the proprietors of the teahouses, and instructed in various accomplishments, so as to make them agreeable com-panions. No sort of infamy attaches to them, men of high rank taking their wives and families to the tea-houses, so that they may benefit by the many accomplishments

of the attendants.

When the term of servitude is over, the girls retire from their business, and may reenter their families without losing the regard of their relatives. Many enter a Buddhist order of mendicant nuns, but the greater number find husbands. It is one of the most startling characteristics of this strange people that institutions such as this should exist, and yet that female virtue should be so highly valued. No sooner does one of these girls marry, than she is supposed to begin her life afresh, and, no matter what may have been their previous lives, no wives are more faithful than those of the Japanese. young lads. The plays last for some two tradiction is, that, though the girls incur no shame for the course of life into which they The only resting-point in this mass of contradiction is, that, though the girls incur no arranging them. Suppose that five plays have been sold, the keepers of the tea-houses

one of respectability will associate with them.

That the men should resort to such places is no matter of surprise, but that they should be accompanied by their wives is rather remarkable.

Sometimes the husbands prefer to go without their wives, and in that case the laddes are apt to resent the neglect. The accompany-ing illustration is copied from a Japanese book in my collection, and is a good example of the humorous power which a Japanese artist can put into his work. The engraving tells its own story. Two husbands are going off together, and are caught by their wives. The different expressions thrown into the faces and action of the truants are admirably given, - the surprise and horror of the one. who has evidently allowed his wife to be ruler in the house, and the dogged determination of the other to get away, are rendered with such force that no European artist could surpass the effect.

are looked upon as utterly infamous, and no | a square bowl closed by a lid. The bowl contains India ink, and into the hollow stem the pen is passed. When not in use the pen is slipped into the stem, and the lid is closed and kept down by twisting over it the string which hangs from the end of the case, and which is decorated with a ball of agate.

One reason for the excellence of Japanese art is, that the artists, instead of copying from each other, invariably go to nature for their models. They have teachers just as we do, but the great object of these pro-fessors is to teach their pupils how to pro-duce the greatest effect with the fewest lines. Book after book may be seen entirely filled with studies for the guidance of the young artists, in which the master has depicted various scenes with as few lines as possible. One of these books is entirely filled with studies of falling rain, and, monotonous as the subject may seem, no two drawings are in the least alike, and a separate and forcible character is given to each sketch. An-



CAPTURE OF THE TRUANTS.

people without a few remarks upon the state of art among them. The Japanese are evidently an art-loving people. Fond as they are of the grotesque in art, they are capable of appreciating its highest qualities; and, indeed, a Japanese workman can scarcely make any article of ordinary use without producing some agreeable combination of lines in color.

Even the pen, or rather the brush, with which they write is enclosed in an ingenious and decidedly artistic case. The case is made of bronze, and consists of a hollow stem and

We cannot take leave of this remarkable other book has nothing but outlines o landscape scenery, while some are entirely filled with grass-blades, some bending in the wind, others beaten down by rain, and other flourishing boldly upright. The bamboo is another favorite subject; and so highly de the Japanese prize the skill displayed by master, that they will often purchase at high price a piece of paper with nothing oit but a few strokes of the brush, the harmony of the corrections and the harmony of the corrections and the harmony of the corrections and the harmony of the corrections are the co mony of the composition and the balance of the different lines of beauty being that oughly appreciated by an artistic eye.

Studying as the Japanese do in the school

of na press dispos no m alway artist Amor be the popul by the

popula tame 1 oppor subjec figure anese the bir ble to wheth embos ture, t exactly fession sketch again, cellenc genuin

anv su living : taken at han attitud the Jap have beautif collecti y a lid. The bowl con-into the hollow stem hen not in use the pen m, and the lid is closed sting over it the string he end of the case, rated with a ball of

ne excellence of Japartists, instead of copyinvariably go to nature ney have teachers just eat object of these proneir pupils how to pro-ct with the fewest lines. be seen entirely filled guidance of the young master has depicted as few lines as possible. is entirely filled with n, and, monotonous as n, no two drawings are a separate and forcin to each sketch. An-



othing but outlines of while some are entirely des, some bending in the down by rain, and other pright. The bamboo is bject; and so highly de the skill displayed by vill often purchase at of paper with nothing of so of the brush, the har sition and the balance of of beauty being ther by an artistic eye. apanese do in the school

of nature, they are marvellously apt at expressing attitude, whether of man, beast, or bird. They never have any difficulty in disposing of the arms of their figures, and, no matter what may be the action, there is always an ease about it which betrays the extist's hand even in the rudget figures. artist's hand even in the rudest figures. Among living objects the crane appears to be the special favorite of the Japanese, its popularity being shared, though not equalled, by the stork and the heron.

These birds are protected both by law and popular opinion, and in consequence are so tame that the native artists have abundant tame that the native arises have abundant opportunities of studying their attitudes, which they do with a patient love for the subject that is almost beyond praise. No figure is so frequently introduced in Japanese and so the country in the subject that is almost beyond praise. anese art as the crane, and so thoroughly is the bird understood, that it is scarcely possible to find in all the figures of cranes, whether cast in bronze, drawn on paper, or embossed and painted on articles of furni-ture, two specimens in which the attitude is exactly the same. With us, even the professional animal painters are apt to take a sketch or two, and copy them over and over again, often repeating errors as well as excellences, while the Japanese artist has too genuine a love for his subject to descend to any such course. Day by day he studies his living models, fills his book with sketches taken rapidly, but truly, and so has always attitudes. In order to show how admirably the Japanese artist can represent the crane, I have introduced below drawings of some beautiful specimens in Sir Hope Grant's collection.

The reader cannot fail to perceive the consummate knowledge of the bird which is displayed in these figures, while the perfection of the work and the delicate finish of the detail are almost beyond praise. Nothing can be more true to nature than the three attitudes there shown. In one case, the bird stands upright and contemplative on one leg, after the manner of its kind. In the second instance, the bird is standing on a tortoise, and, as the neck is thrown into action, both legs are used for support. Then, in the flying bird, whose body serves as a censer, the attitude of the outspread wings and outstratched legs is just as true to and outstretched legs is just as true to nature as the others, all the attitudes having been undoubtedly taken from nature.

The porcelain of the Japanese is singularly beautiful, and sometimes is adorned with ornaments which may be reckoned under the head of "conceits." For instance, a cup will be adorned with a representation of pleasure boats on the river. With a needle the tiny windows of the boats can be raised, when a party of ladies and gentlemen drinking tea are discovered inside the boat. Sometimes a little tortoise may be seen reposing quietly at the bottom of the cup, until the hot tea is poured into it, when the creature rises to the surface, shaking its head and kicking with its legs as if in pain from the hot list if

from the hot liquid.

rushes. This strange costume is the snow-cloak of the ordinary Japanese. For mere rain the Japanese generally wear a sort of overcoat made of oiled paper, very thin,



CANDLESTICK AND CENSERS. (From Sir Hope Grant's Collection.)

ple and effective.

A sort of skeleton is made of network, the meshes being about two inches in diameter. Upon each point of the mesh is tied a bunch of vegetable fibre, like very fine grass, the bundles being about as thick as an ordinary bundles being about as thick as an ordinary pencil where they are tied, and spreading toward the ends. The garment thus made is exceedingly light, and answers its purpose in the most admirable manner. The bunches of fibres overlapping each other like the tiles of a house, keep the snow far from the body, while any snow that may melt simply runs along the fibres and drops to the ground. To wet this snow cloak through is almost impossible, even the jet of a garden engine having little effect upon it except when quite close, while no amount of snow would be able to force a drop of water through the

loose texture of the material.

nearly transparent, and very efficient, though it is easily torn. But when a snow-storm comes on, the Japanese endues another garment, which is made in a way equally simple to the control of the contro number of rolls of silk were presented to the members of the embassy. They were all in strips about three yards long and one wide, so that they seemed to be useless. They happened, however, to be exceedingly valuable; in fact, absolutely priceless, as no money could buy them. They were made by exiled nobles, who were punished by being sent to the island of Fatsizio, where they spend their time in making these peculiar silks. No one below a certain rank is al-lowed to wear the silk which has been woven by noble fingers, or even to have the fabric in the house, and in consequence not a piece ever even found its way to the shops.

The subject of Japanese art is most inquite close, while no amount of snow would teresting, but we must now close our no-be able to force a drop of water through the

DUPLEX

Di CC CE TE

In the kingdor princip already these ca kings is ing to d are mos ers; and rule, t n the the who he firs althoug ban the In Ch er of th influenc ase wi uence he real ood or rtunat irst T amese Buddh Il socie ren. foted lought nd whe eing th aston

ad mad eograp have long been celetone kind of which
to no kind of which
the known in England,
mission to Japan, a
tilk were presented to
mbassy. They were all
ards long and one wide,
be useless. They hapexceedingly valuable;
riceless, as no money
they were made by exre punished by being
of Fatsizio, where they
making these peculiar
to a certain rank is alsilk which has been
tend in consequence not
found its way to the

panese art is most inust now close our nothe next people on cur

CHAPTER CLVIII.

SIAM.

GOVERNMENT - DRESS - RELIGION.

DUPLEX GOVERNMENT—PERSONAL CHARACTER OF THE RING—THE LATE FIRST KING AND HIS ACCOMPLISHMENTS—APPEARANCE OF THE SIAMESE—THE MODE OF ARRANGING THE HAIR—DRESS OF BOTH SEXES—CEREMONIES IN SIAM—AUDIENCE OF A NOBLE—ACTORS AND THEIR COSTUMES—AN ACTRESS IN ROYAL ROBES—THE ARISTOCRATIC ELROW—PRECAUTIONS AGAINST CRIME—SYSTEM OF PUNISHMENT—RELIGION OF SIAM—THE WHITE ELEPHANT, AND REASON OF THE HONORS THAT ARE PAID TO IT—HAIRS OF THE TAIL—ARCHITECTURE OF SIAM—THE FUNERAL PILE.

In the empire of SIAM, and its dependent ingdoms, Laos and Cambodia, we find the principle of the duplex rule which we have ilready seen existing in Japan, though in these cases the distinction between the two lings is merely one of dignity, and has nothing to do with the secular and spiritual element, as in Japan. In Siam, the two kings are mostly near relations, and often brothers; and sometimes, though by no means as rule, the Second King becomes First King in the death of his superior. Practically, he whole of the royal power is vested in the first King, the secondary ruler being although enjoying royal rank, nothing more than the first subject in the land.

In China and Japan, the personal character of the king seems to exercise but little influence over the people. This is not the see with Siam, in which country the influence of the king pervades the whole of the realm, and is of infinite importance for you or evil. The Siamese have been very artunate in the king who lately held the first Throne. As is the custom with the samese kings, he spent a series of years in Buddhistmonastery, secluding himself from Il society, even from that of his own chillen. During twenty-seven years he detect himself to the studies which he hought would fit him for his future office; and when he mounted the throne in 1851, eing then about forty-seven years of age, is astonished every one by his learning. He and made himself master of the history and

enough astronomer to calculate eclipses, and determine the latitude and longitude of a place. He could speak and write English so well, that he was a valued contributor to the scientific journals of Hong Kong, and, on account of his writings, was elected a member of the Asiatic Society. He was a fair Latin and French scholar, was thoroughly acquainted with all the various dialects of Siam and Indo-China, and was also learned in Sanscrit, a language of which he was very fond.

He was always desirous of attracting to him any English people who could give him instruction, and showed his preference for Great Britain by invariably wearing a Glengary cap, except on occasions of ceremony, when he had to wear the heavy national crown; and, strange to say, to judge from several photographic portraits of the King in various costumes, the Glengary cap suits his countenance better than any other headdress. The full Siamese name of the King was Phra Chomklau chau yu hua; but the Sanscrit form, which he always used, was Somdetch Phra Paramendra Maha Mongkut. His name before he came to the throne was Chau Fa Yai. The death of this wise ruler and accomplished gentleman was a very severe loss to Siam, and was felt even among the scientific societies of Europe.

king then about forty-seven years of age, eastonished every one by his learning. He is a made himself master of the history and made himself master of the history and graphy of his own country; he was good

look to his face; but as, contrary to the habit of the bare-headed Siamese, he constantly and People of Siam.") wore it, he is drawn with it upon his head. I possess portraits of him in several dresses, but that which he generally wore is selected as being the most characteristic of the man.

His brother, Chau Fa Noi, was by univer-sal consent made the Second King, or Wanqua. When he received the crown, he took the name of Somdetch Piu Klau Chau yu hua. The choice was in both cases an ex-cellent one, the brothers resembling each other in their love of literature, and their anxiety to promote the welfare of their people by the arts of peace, and not of war. We will now turn to the general appear-

ance of the Siamese.

They are rather small, but well proportioned, and their color is a warm olive. hair of the men is shaved, except a tuft upon the top of the head, which is kept rather short; and the hair being black and coarse, the tuft looks as if a short brush had been stuck on the head. According to Siamese ideas, the tuft resembles the closed lotus flower. This tuft is held in the highest esteem; and for any one even to give indications of approaching the head-tuft of a great man, is considered either as a deadly insult or a mark of utter ignorance of manners. When a young Siamese comes of age, the head-tuft is shaved with great ceremonies, the relations being called together, priests being invited to recite prayers and wash the head of the young man, and all the family resources being drawn upon for the feast. The exact moment of the shaving is announced by a musket shot. After the tuft is removed, the lad is sent to the pagodas to be taught by the priests, and many of them never leave these quiet re-treats, but enter the ranks of the regular priesthood.

Even the women wear the hair-tuft, but in their case the hair is allowed to grow to a greater length, and is carefully oiled and tended. The woman's head-tuft is said to represent the lotus flower opened. The head is seldom covered, the cap worn by King S. Phra Mongkut being quite an exceptional instance. As for clothing, the Siamese care but little for it, though the great people wear the most costly robes on state occasions. But even the highest mandarins content themselves during the warmer months of the year with the single garment called the Pa-nung. This is a wide strip of strong Indian chintz, generally having a pattern of stars upon a ground of dark blue, pattern of stars upon a ground of dark bads, green, red or chocolate. When worn, "the siamese place the middle of this, when opened, to the small of the back, bringing the two ends round the body before, and the upper edges, being twisted together, are tucked in between the body and the cloth.

The part hanging is folded in large plaits,
passed between the legs, and tucked in be-

hanging loosely over their shoulders, and occasionally throw it over their heads.

casionally throw it over their neads. When walking in the open air, a broad palm-leaf hat is used to keep off the sunbeams, and is worn by both sexes alike.

There is very little difference in the dress of the sexes. When very young, girls went a light and airy costume of turmeric powder which gives them a girl, valley by a light and airy costume of turmeric pow-der, which gives them a rich yellow hue, and imparts its color to everything with which they come in contact. Up to the age of ten or eleven, they generally wear a slight gold or silver string round the waist, from the centre of which depends a heart-shaped piece of the same metal, and, when they reach adult ways, they accurate the they reach adult years, they assume the reg-ular woman's dress. This consists of the chintz or figured silk wrapper, which, how-ever, falls little below the knees, and a piece ever, falls little below the knees, and a piece
of lighter stuff thrown over one shoulder
and under the other. This latter article of
dress is, however, of little importance, and,
even when used, it often falls off the shoulder, and is not replaced. Even the Queen
of Siam, when in state dress, wears nothing
has the true carmonts. As a rule, the feet but these two garments. As a rule, the feet are bare, embroidered slippers being only

occasionally used by great people.

The appearance of the king in his royal robes may be seen from the portrait of a celebrated actress on the next page. In Siam, as in China, the actors are dressed in the most magnificent style, and wear costumes made on the pattern of those worn by royalty. To all appearance, they are quite as splendid as the real dresses, for gilding can be made to look quite as well as solid gold and sham jewels can be made larger and more gorgeous than real gems. The reader will notice that upon the fingers the actres wears inordinately long nail-preservers which are considered as indicating that the nails beneath are of a proportionate length

The actors in the king's theatre are all his own women, of whom he has some six of seven hundred, together with an average of five attendants to each woman. No male is allowed to enter this department of the palace, which is presided over by ladic chosen from the noblest families in the land. These plays are all in dumb show accompanied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which in Siam is on the companied by music, which is successful to the companied by music, which is successful to the companied by music, which is successful to the companied by music, which is president to the companied by music, which is president to the companied by the companied by music, which is president to the companied by a much sweeter character than is usual in that part of the world. Besides the chie actors, at least a hundred attendants assi in the play, all being magnificently attired. The play is continued ad infinitum. Whe any of the spectators become wearied, the retire for a while, and then return, and it i thought a compliment to the principal gues to ask him the hour at which he would lik

KING OF SIAM. (See page 1467.

Bowring's "Kingdom

on have a white cloth their shoulders, and ocer their heads. When air, a broad palm-leaf I the sunbeams, and is

difference in the dross very young, girls wear tume of turmeric powers a rich yellow hue, or to everything with contact. Up to the age they generally wear a string round the waist, which depends a heart-same metal, and when

same metal, and, when rs, they assume the reg-This consists of the k wrapper, which, howwhen the knees, and a piece own over one shoulder. This latter article of

This latter article or little importance, and, often falls off the shoulaced. Even the Queen ate dress, wears nothing ents. As a rule, the feet red slippers being only

or appears being only
f the king in his royal
om the portrait of a celhe next page. In Siam,
stors are dressed in the
tyle, and wear costumes
n of those worn by royrance, they are quite as

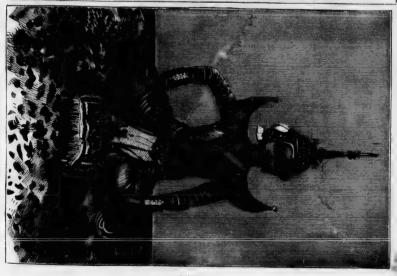
ARMOR.

n of those worn by royrance, they are quite as
dresses, for gilding can
ite as well as solid gold
an be made larger and
a real gems. The reader
on the fingers the actress
y long nail-preservers
ed as indicating that the
faper of a proportionate length
a king's theatre are all his
bom he has some six of
gether with an average of
such woman. No male it
this department of the
presided over by ladie
noblest families in the
sare all in dumb show
the and the families in the
sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the sare all in dumb show
the same sare all in dumb
the sare all in dumb show
the same sare all in dumb show
the same sare all in dumb
the same sare all in dumb
the same sare
the same sare
the same same same same
the same same same same
the same same
the same same same
the same same same
the same same
the same same same
the

oped. cown is shaped much like ents of the actress. Th







(1469)

mplete red by ws are ore so durder, f d in ev ouses wi e spot o e consid

King Bowri It is pounds covere termin size an the sw drawn, ing ins sheath. outer o adorne The moniou even if and Ja series o ent ran there r tween a

ence of than co an essen that the ways ke Shoul man, the hirty or his super trate his to prese to so the form of the form ikens he casants to bles be as a pet as humber of the form of th raceful a recding, mined t arly age As may

uis curio

King brought for the inspection of Sir J. cautious with regard to quarrels, and to check Bowring the crown used at his coronation. them before the two antagonists become Bowring the crown used at his coronation. It is very heavy, weighing about four pounds, and is of enormous value, being covered with valuable diamonds, that which terminates the peak being of very great size and splendor. The King also exhibited the sword of state, with its golden scabbard covered with jewels. When the sword is drawn it is sean to be deathed one blode he drawn, it is seen to be double, one blade being inserted into the other, as into a second sheath. The inner blade is of steel, and the outer of a softer metal. The handle is of wood, and, like the sheath, is profusely adorned with jewels,

The Siamese are among the most cere-monious people, and in this respect equal, even if they do not surpass, the Chinese and Japanese. Their very language is a series of forms, by which persons of differ-tered and decrease and others, and others. ent rank address each other; and, although there may be no distinction of dress be-tween a nobleman and a peasant, the differ-ence of rank is marked far more strongly than could be done by mere dress. It is an essential point of etiquette, for example, that the person of inferior rank should always keep his head below that of his superior.

Should a man of low degree meet a nobleman, the former will stoop at the distance of works, and at night they are all fastened together with one long chair. Of the religion of the Siamese it is impossible to treat, because Buddhism is far too wide and intricate a subject to be discounted in the state of the same of the sam Should a man of low degree meet a nobleas a position to there in the part of a solution and so crawl and push it along the ground shumbly as if he were a mere peasant, is amese artists are fond of depicting the variis modes of approaching a superior, and see forget to indicate the great man by the points. In the first place, he sits erect, hile the others crouch; and, in the second, the second is the others crouch; and, in the second, the second is the second in th bow inward. This most strange and un-aceful attitude is a mark of high birth and teeding, the children of both sexes being ained to reverse the elbow-joint at a very rly age.

As may be expected from the progress of vilization, the Siamese have a tolerably implete code of laws, which are administed by regularly appointed officers. The ws are rather severe, though not much ore so than were our own a century ago.
urder, for example, is punished with death;
id in every case of murder or suicide, the
uses within a circle of eighty yards from e spot on which the crime was committed considered responsible, and fined heavily. is curious law forces the people to be very

them before the two antagonists become sufficiently irritated to seek each other's life. This respect for human life contrasts strongly with the utter indifference with which it is

regarded in China and Japan.

Nobles of very high rank are exempt from capital punishment in one way, i. c. their blood may not be shed; but, if guilty of a capital offence, they are put into sacks, and beaten to death with clubs made of sandal wood. Some punishments are meant to of a bonze, or priest, who is detected in breaking his vow of chastity. He is taken to a public place, stripped of his sacred yellow robe, flogged until the blood streams down his back, and then kept in the king's stables for the rest of his life, employed in cutting grass for the elephants.

Another similar punishment is inflicted on laymen. A cangue is fastened round his neck, his hands and wrists are chained, and he is taken round the city, preceded by drums and cymbals. The worst part of the punishment is, that he is compelled to proclaim his crime aloud as he passes through the streets; and if he ceases to do so, or drops his voice, he is beaten severely with the flat of a sword. Prisoners are mostly employed on public works, and at night they are all fastened together with one long chain.

Of the religion of the Siamese it is im-

respect. The fortunate man who captures a white elephant sends the news to the capital, and in return for the auspicious news is thenceforth freed, with his posterity, from all taxation and liability to military service. A road is cut through the forest, and a magnificent raft is built on the Meinam River, for the reception of the sacred animal. When the elephant reaches the raft, he is taken on board under a splendid canopy, and kept in good temper by gifts of cakes and sweet-meats. Meanwhile, a noble of the highest rank, sometimes even the First King himself, goes in a state barge to meet the elephant, accompanied by a host of boats with flags and music, and escorts the sacred animal to the capital, each boat trying to attach a rope to the raft. When arrived, the animal is taken to the palace, when he receives some lofty title, and is then led to the magnificent house prepared for him, where, to the end of his life, he is petted and pampered and has everything his own way, the king himself deeming it an honor if the sacred beast will condescend to feed out of his hand. On the

head of the elephant is placed a royal crown, his tusks are encircled with precious rings, and a royal umbrella is carried over him when

he goes to bathe.
When the animal dies, the hairs of the tail are reserved as relics of a divine incar-nation, and the body is buried with royal honors. The hairs of the tail are set in golden handles, profusely adorned with precious stones; and the reader may possibly remember that the First King, Somdetch Phra Mongkut, sent one of these tufts to Queen Victoria, as a priceless proof of the estimation in which he held her. The King also gave the ambassador, Sir J. Bowring, a few hairs from the tail, as a gift about equal to that of the Garter in England, and when, to the great grief of the nation, the elephant died in 1855, the King sent Sir J. Bowring, as a further mark of his favor, a small piece of the skin preserved in spirits of wine.

The color of the elephant is not really white, but a sort of pale, brick-dust red. Albino animals of all kinds are venerated by the Siamese, the white monkey being in rank next to the white elephant. This veneration is so marked that a talapoin -a sort of preaching fakir—who will not condescend to salute the King himself, bows humbly if he should see even a white cock, much more

a white monkey.

The architecture of Siam deserves a brief notice. It possesses some of the characteristics of Chinese, Japanese, and Burmese, but has an aspect that belongs peculiarly to itself. Ordinary houses are of comparatively small dimensions, but the temples are often of enormous size, and in their way are exceedingly beautiful. They are full of lofty and gabled roofs, five or six of which often rise above each other, in fantastic beauty, so as to lead the eye upward to the central tower. This is always a sort of spire or pinnacle, which is made of a succession of stories, and is terminated by the slender emblem of sovereignty, namely, an ornament that looks like a series of spread umbrellas placed over each other, and become less and less as they heap of ashes, we approach the summit. The whole of the tower is profusely adorned with grotesque to that purpose.

statues in strange attitudes, and there is scarcely a square foot which is undecorated in some way or other.

The palaces are built on much the same model, and their gates are often guarded by gigantic figures carved in stone. At the door of the Hall of Audience at Bangkok are two figures made of granite. They are sixty feet in height, and represent men with the tails of fish projecting from the spine. In fact, they are almost exact reproductions of the Assyrian Dagon, as it is represented on the Nineveh soulptures. The funeral pile on (or rather in) which

is burned the body of a king or any of the royal family, is built on the same principle as the temples, and is in fact a temple, though made of combustible materials. There is before me a photograph of the funeral pile. which was made for the body of the First which was made for the body of the First King's son, and another of a pile erected for the purpose of consuming the body of his wife. They are very similar in appearance, being temples made of wood and canvas, covered with gilt paper. They are about a hundred and twenty feet in height, and on the photograph, where the nature of the the photograph, where the nature of the material is not shown, look like magnificent specimens of Siamese architecture.

The central spire, terminated with its royal emblem, rises in the centre, and round it are clustered gables, roofs, pinnacles, and pillars, in bewildering profusion.

The door is guarded by two gigantic statues, and the body lies in the centre of the building, hidden by curtains. On account of the flimsiness of the materials, to all the pinnacles are attached slight ropes, which are fastened firmly to the ground, so that they act like the "stays" of a ship's mast Inflammable as are the wood, paper, and canvas of which the edifice is made, they are rendered still more so by being saturated with oil, tar, and similarly combustible substances. Vast, therefore, as is the building a very short time suffices to consume it, and the intense heat reduces the corpse to a mere heap of ashes, which are gathered together and solemnly placed in the temple dedicated DISCOV

MANY

remar show at one same h Guine on the of thos land w rivers water. fell far closed had on tations of the

Thes bauten name most in piles b were b of tho weapor their c been t bwied

The betwee waters are stil hemisp the lea which several tions w

The was co i. e. a Were n unknov attitudes, and there is which is undecorated ailt on much the same

s are often guarded by ved in stone. At the Audience at Bangkok de of granite. They tht, and represent men h projecting from the are almost exact repro-syrian Dagon, as it is lineveh sculptures. n (or rather in) which of a king or any of the on the same principle in fact a temple, though the materials. There is raph of the funeral pile the body of the First ther of a pile erected for suming the body of his y similar in appearance, e of wood and canvas, aper. They are about a ty feet in height, and on here the nature of the wn, look like magnificent se architecture.

re, terminated with its es in the centre, and ared gables, roofs, pinnan bewildering profusion.
led by two gigantic statlies in the centre of the
y curtains. On account
'the materials, to all the
ched slight ropes, which
y to the ground, so that
stays" of a ship's mast,
re the wood, paper, and re the wood, paper, and e edifice is made, they are re so by being saturated imilarly combustible subrefore, as is the building duces the corpse to a mere ich are gathered together ed in the temple dedicated

CHAPTER CLIX.

ANCIENT EUROPE.

THE SWISS LAKE-DWELLERS.

DISCOVERY OF THE DWELLINGS AND RELICS - MODE OF BUILDING THE HOUSES - POPULATION OF THE LAKES - GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE RELICS.

MANY of my readers may be aware of the remarkable discovery that was made in 1853-4, showing that even in Europe there lived, at one time, a race of men having exactly the same habits as the swamp-dwellers of New Guinea, or the lake-dwellers of Marachibo on the Amazon. During the winter months of those two years, the weather in Switzerland was very dry and very cold, so that the rivers did not receive their usual supplies of water. Consequently, the water in the lakes fell far below its usual level, and this disclosed the remarkable fact that in those lakes had once been assemblages of human habitations, built upon piles driven into the bed of the lake.

These houses, appropriately called "Pfahlbauten," or Pile-buildings, were, as their name implies, built upon piles; and it is a most interesting fact, that not only have the piles been discovered, on which the houses were built, but also fragments of the walls of those houses; many specimens of the weapons and implements of the inhabitants, their ornaments, and even their food, have been brought to light, after having been bwied for centuries beneath the water.

The resemblance, not to say the identity, between many articles found under the waters of the Swiss lakes and those which are still used by savage tribes of the Western hemisphere is absolutely startling; and not the least remarkable point about the relics which have just been discovered is, that several of them are identical with inven-

of stone weapons and implements which have been found in the lakes. That various improvements have been made in the architecture is also shown by the difference in details of construction.

From the relics that have been discovered, it is easy to see what these lake-dwellings must have been. They were built on a scaffolding made of piles driven into the bed of the lake, and connected with cross-beams, so as to make the foundation for a platform. Upon this platform the huts themselves were built. They were mostly circular, and the walls were made of wattle, rendered weathertight by the clay which could be obtained in any quantity from the bed of the lake

The reason for building these edifices is analogous to the feeling which induces military engineers to surround their forts with moats filled with water. In those primitive times, man waged an unequal war against the wild animals, such as the bear, the wolf, and the boar, and in consequence, these lacustrine habitations proved to be strongholds which such enemies could not assault. It is natural, also, that persons thus threatened should congregate together, and in consequence we find that in one lake alone, that of Neufchâtel, a population of

some five thousand had congregated.

A vast number of relics of this bygone age have been recovered from the lakes, and are of absorbing interest to the anthropologist. In the first place, the original piles have been discovered, still standing, tions which we fondly deem to be modern.

The chief part of these lake-dwellings was constructed during the Stone period, i.e. a period when axes, spear-heads, etc., were made of stone, the use of fire being unknown. This is proved by the quantity

of pottery have also been found, the crescent being a favorite ornament, and several utensils of a crescentic shape having been discovered. As may be supposed, the bread in question was of the coarsest possible upon their earlier works, and took to metal instead of stone, as examples of which may be mentioned the wonderful series of metallic cakes. Even fruits have been found ready out and prepared for consumption, the apple be mentioned the wonderful series of metallic objects that have been found in the lakes. Cakes. Even fruits have been found ready objects that have been found in the lakes. There are axes, spears and arrow-heads, necklaces, bracelets, and hair-pins, and—most remarkable—there is the very article that was patented some years since as the "Safety Pin" for nurseries.

As to the food which these people ate, we have abundant evidence in the way of bones

Abyssir Accaws Adoptio 279. AGRICU

Bader Bouk Guian 972. 138, 1 Ovam Wasas Ahitas, Ahts, V. Ajitas, I Alapu-ci Alfoers, Alfouras Amahari Amakos Amapon Amaswa Amaton Amazon Amazon Amazuli Amulets Amusem Ahts, Arauce Bechus mis, 68 Camma Damar Dyaks, 1349. I Gallas, Guiana tots, 23 1285 - 12

1280 - 12 479. Jaj firs, 14 Madi, 43 mutes, 1 quesans Ovambo 1108. S Islande Tasman Tongani ricks, Wanyor 390-393

nimals, and — stran-of bread have been supposed, the bread ne coarsest possible corn being roasted, then pressed into courtesy be termed nsumption, the apple iful of these fruits.

s, such as the plum,
he blackberry, have
with the shells of howing that all these used for food in the g passed away.

INDEX.

Abyssinia, 641. Accawalos, 8c. America, 1222. Admiralty Islanders, 970. Adoption of Parents, Namaquas

Adoption of Parents, Namaquas, 779.

AOHOULTURE among the Badema, 367. Bakalal, 492.
Batoka, 360. Bayeye, 338.
Bouka, 971. Dinka, 470. Djour, 448. Fuegians, 1168. Ganl, 430.
Guianans, 1246. Hebrides, New, 972. Hottenots, 231. Kaffirs, 140. Of India, 1416-1421.
138, 139 - 144. Manganjas, 353. Aproms of Kaffirs, Africa, 484.
138, 139 - 144. Manganjas, 353. Aproms of Kaffirs, Africa, 484.
Nasagrara, 407. Watusi, 409.
Ahitas, Philippine Islands, 920.
Ahita, Vancouver's Island, 1354.
Ajitas, Philippine Islands, 920.
Alapu-ches, Uhil, S. A., 1190.
Aliforra, New Guinea, 905.
Aliforra, New Guinea, 905.
Aliforras, New Guinea, 905.
Almasons, Africa, 12.
Amasons, Africa, 12.
Amazons, Africa, 12.
Amultas of Australia, 701. Guiana, 1223.
Arica, 1360. Of Africa, 1360. Of Africa, 1360. Of Africa, 1360.
Arica, 1360. Of Africa, 484.
Aros, Africa, 48

Ancient Europe, 1473.
Andamaners, 883.
Andamaners, 883.
Anecdote of Koriennas, 207.
Anecdotes of Bosjesmans, 207.
Ancieum, New Hebrides, 976.
Angolese, Africa, 380.
Animals of
Anstralia 701 Guiana, 19

Ashangos, Africa, 480. Ashanti, Africa, 554. Ashira, Africa, 496. Assagais, Kaffir, Africa, 94, 100. Aurora, description of, 1352. Australia, Polynesia, 694. Ayhuttisuhts, Vancouver's Island, 1354.

Badema, Africa, 867. Baenda-pezi, or Go-Nakeds, Ba-toka, 349. Ahitas, Philippine Islands, 290.
Ahts, Vancouver's Esland, 1324.
Ajitas, Philippine Islands, 290.
Alapa-ches, Chill, S. A., 1190.
Alapa-ches, Chill, S. A., 1190.
Alforras, New Guinea, 903.
Amaharas, Africa, 12.
Amasona, Africa, 12.
Amasonda, Africa, 12.
Amasonda, Africa, 12.
Amazonda, Bahurotsi, Africa, 280. Bakulai, Africa, 491. Bakoba, Africa, 337.

BUBIAL OF THE DRAD—continued.
Dory, 917. Dyaks, 1160. Esquimaux, 1361. Fauti, 550. Fijians, 965–967. Of Fijian chief, 965. Hottentots, 241. Indians, N. A., 1330. Kaffr, 200–205. Karague, 405. anders, 1043. Latookas, 495. Makololo, 336. Mangania, 340. Marqueans Latookas, 459. Makololo, 336, Manganias, 360. Marquesans, 1051. Mincopies, 895. Mpon-gwé, 527. Nicobarians, 897. Niuans, 1056. Obongos, 483. Patagonians, 1189. Felew Isl-anders, 1109. Samoledes, 1382. Siamas 4479. Slowy 1220. Siamese, 1472. Sioux, 1330 Society Islanders, 1076. Sow Saimese, 1422. Slowers, 1076. Sow-rahs, 1389. Tongans, 1004. Waganda, 421. Wanyamuezi, 396. Wanyoro, 428. Wazara-mo, 406. Zealand, New, 869–874. Bushman, Africa, 242. Button, Chinese, 1429.

Caledonians, New, 383. Camanchees, N. A., 1289. Camma, Africa, 504. CANNIBALISM among

ANNIBALISM ainong
Ahts, 1372. Andamaners, 891.
Australians, 747. In Britain,
New, 970. Bonny, 602. Caledonia,
New, 885. Among Caribs, 1240.
Fans, 530-535. Fijians, 942-946.
Fuegians, 1167. In Ireland,
New, 970. Among Isle of Pines
Men, 887. Kingsmill Islanders,
1040. Maories, 834-837. Marque-1040. Maories, 834-837. Marquesans, 1051. Niuans, 1056. Papuans, 900. Samoans, 1022-1023. Sandwich Islanders, 1091. Society Islanders, 1073. Solomon Islanders, 968. Tanna, 972. Tundical 1073. gusi, 1379.

CANORS, making and skill in man-agement of, among Admiralty Islanders, 971. Ahts. Admiralty Islanders, 971. Ahts, lass, 1159. Sickness, Tongans, 1332. Australians, 701.-717. Batoka, 349. Bayeye, 338. Bouka, 971. Brumer Islanders, 908-91. Caledonians, New, 292. Dysks, 1136. Esquimaux, 1344. Fanti, 549. Fijians, 932. Fuegians, 1168. Islanders, New, 913. Among Indians, N. A., 1325. Krumen, 544. Makoba, 340. Makololo, 327. Maories, 825. Marquesans, 1051. 1158. Fans, 539. Indians, N. A., 1313. Kaffir, 181-183. Mincopies, 890. Nicobarians, 897. Niuans, 1056. Outanatas, 902. Papuans, 900. Pelew Islanders, 1107. Samoans, 1020. In San Christoval, 970. Among Society Charming serpents, India, 1416. Islanders, 1074, Solomon Island-Cherokees, No. America, 1331.

Caste, among Damaras, 312. Karague, 399. Khonds, 1393. Sowrahs, 1385.

Zealanders, New, 792. Cathin's portrait of Indian dandy, 1279.

CATTLE of the Balonda, 376. Bosjesmans, 254 Damaras, 310. Hottentots, 233. Kaffirs, 66-71. Kytoh, 439. La-tookas, 454. Malagasy, 690. tookas, 454. M Namaquas, 277. Watusi, 409.

314. Battle, before and after, Christic's sketch, Besjesman, 266.
New Zealand, 851. BecomLingmen, Australians, 761-764.
Birth, Abyssinians, 608. Fijians, 904, New Zealanders,
16. Burial of King, Fijians, 967. Cementing friendship,
also, 967. Cementing friendship,
Bolondos, 378. Cooking war
dish, Ashangos, 480. Coronation, Congoese, 616, Mpontusi. 409. tion, Congoese, 616, Mpongwe, 527. Customs, Dahomans, 573. Death of King Towns, gwe, 527. Customs, Dahomans, 573. Death of King, Tongans, 993-994. Death and Mourning, Camma, 520. Drinking kava, Tongans, 985-990. Entering boyhood, Kaffirs, 18. Fallen in war, Caledonians, New, 886. Feast of First Fruits, Tongans, 990-993. Funeral of Finow. Feast of First Flam, 1990-993. Funeral of Finow, 1900-993. Going to War, Bechuanas, 292. Head-worship, Dahomans, 587. Homage to Manono, Samoans, 1022. Initiation of Cannibal, Malemutes, 1372. Kangaroo, Australians, 762. King, appearing before, Dahomans, 574. Making orotherhood, Australians, 767. Araucanians, 1205. Marriage, 1981. Dahomans, erhood, Australians, 10...
erhood, Australians, 10...
examians, 1205. Marriage,
Kaffirs, 86, Samoans, 1031,
Sowrahs, 1386. M'pazs, or
twin, Ishogos, 479. Moon, full,
Camma, 510, Fans, 530,
Moon, New, Karagne, 401,
Mourning,
S95. Mourning, twin, 18h0gos, 479. Short, 141; Camma, 510, Fans, 539. Moon, New, Karagne, 401, Mincopies, 895. Mourning, Australians, 772. Ox of the Girl, Kaffirs, 86. Ox of the Surplus, Kaffirs, 86. Receiving Guests, Waganda, 419. Recep-tion into 'Mides,' N. A. Indi-ans, 1310. Religious, Abyssinians, 658, Esquimaux, 1350.
"Rupack," Pelew Islanders,
1104. Sacrificial, Kaffirs, 172, Society Islanders, 1075. Set-ting apart "pial" men, Guiana, 1263. Shedding of blood, Dyaks, 1159. Sickness, Tongans,

A., 1313. Kaffir, 181–183. Karague, 402. Namaquas, 277. Wanyoro, 428. harming serren

ers, 969. Waraus, 1222, 1262. Chickasaws, No. America, 1310. Caribs, Guiana, S. A., 1222. Caroline Islands, 1100. Chickasaws, No. America, 1310. Chickasaws, No. America, 1310. Children, treatment of among Andamaners. 892. Arguet Andamaners, 892. Arawaks, 1247. Australians, 757, 758. Bak-alai, 492. Co-yukon, 1375. Esquimaux, 1349. Fijians, 954. Flat-heads, 1319, 1320. Indians, Grap Chap. 1914. Fudians, N.

Flat-heads, 1319, 1329. Indians, R-Gran Chaco, 1214. Indians, N.-A., 1319. Ingeletes, 1375. Ishogo, 479. Kafir, 16-18. Madi, 433. Mapuches, 1192. Outanatas, 901. Patagonians, 1186. Samoans, 1009. Wanyamuezi, 393. Zealanders, New, 816, 817.

Namaquas, 202. Malagasy, 620. 393. Zealanders, New, 816, 8 Namaquas, 277. Shooas, 629. Chinese, China, 1426. Chinnooks, No. America, 1319. Cremontes, connected with Accession of son, Damaras, Chopsticks, Chinese, 1431.

Abyssinians, 667. Bakalai, 492, 493. Esquimaux, 1333. Fuegi-ans, 1168. Kaffirs, 45. Madi, 430. Manganjas, 359. Ostiaks, 1384. Wanyoro, DANG wa kuı

753 COL 297 Bor Dy: hea

Far

955.

Ho

N. l gar' 1323

1323

Kaf

270. Mac Man war Isla ding man Wa

Dank

Delaw Dinga

Dinga Dinka Diibba

Djour, Dog es Dôr, A

Dory, DRESS Aby. waio

> ers. man

> no, anti.

tralia

Balo

toka anas

603 621. Brite Islan donia

1222.616

mans

kas, Dory 1118.

1334 ians,

Galla ans, 1

972. F tento dians

dians 1276.

gos, 887. 1449 -

chang fir, 51

mill 1

Latoo Mako

Mala

Mang

1190-Mpon

270.

Commi, Africa, 504.

OMPLEXION of
Alyssinians, 642. Ahitas, 290,
Ahts, 1355. Angolese, 380.
Apingi, 488. Australians, 694.
Bakalai, 492. Baloudo, 370.
Batoka, 348. Begharmis, 636.
Bosjesmans, 243. Bouka, 971.
Caledonians, New, 883. Camma, 505. Djibbas, 464. Dyaks, 1111. Egbas, 590. Esquimaux, 1133. Fans, 629. Fanti, 549.
Fijians, 922. Fuegians, 1162.
Gallas, 671. Hebrides, New, 972. Hervey Islanders, 1032.
Hottentots, 217. Hovas, 690. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1211. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1211. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1211. Indians, R. Am. 1273. Isle of Pines Men, 887. COMPLEXION of ans, N. Am. 1215. Islands, 1449. Men, 897 Japanese, 1449. Karague, 399. Kingsmill Islanders, 1038. Krumen, 545. Makololo, 327. Marquesaus, 1047. Mundurucús, 1215. 1047. Mundurucús, 1218. Neam-Nam, 442. Nioobarians, 896. Nubians, 673. Obongos, 482. Outanatas, 900. Papuans, 898. Patagonians, 1172. Pelew 898. Patagonians, 1172. Peiew Islanders, 1104. Samoans, 1008. Sandwich Islanders, 1081. She-kiani, 522. Siamese, 1468. Solo-mon Islanders, 968. Tahitans, 1058. Tanna Islanders, 972. Tongans, 977. Vaté Islanders, 972. Waraus, 1222. Zealanders, New, 792. New, 792.

New, 792.
Congoese, Africa, d14.
Cooking, see Food.
Cook's Islanders, Poiynesia, 1032.
Co-yukons, Alaska, 1375.
Cree tribe, North America, 1313.
Creeks, North America, 1313.
"Crow tribe, North America, 130."
"Crowing" of Damaras, 310.
Candidyon, Chinese, 1430. Crucifixion, Chinese, 1439. Japanese, 1461.

CHUELTY to aged among Fijians, 954. India Fijians, 954. Indians, 1320.
Namaquas, 278. To prisoners,
Fijians, 954.
Customs, Dahome, 573.
Customs, ourious of

Customs, Dahome, 573.
Customs, ourious, of
Alfoöre, 996. Araucanians, 1205.
Ashanti, Yam and Adai, 559.
Caledonians, New, 887. Dyaks,
1136. Fijians, Loloku of the
sail, 967. Guianans, 1247. Her
vey Islanders, 1034. Kanem
boos, 627. Kingsmill Islanders
1040. Marouesans, 1049. Obon 1040. Marquesans, 1049. Obon gos, domestic, 482. Ovambos, a meals, 322. Tahitans, 1061 Tchuktchi, 1378. Tongans, 982

Dacotahs, North America, 1307 Dahomans, Africa, 561. Damaras, Africa, 304. Dancing, see Amusements. DANCES of

Ahts, doctor's nook, 1366, roo 1366. Apono, giant, 487. Ar

sketch, Bosjesman, 266. Africa, 280. Mess amoug nians, 667. Bakalai, 492, squimaux, 1333. Fuegi-sk, Kaffirs, 45. Madi, 430. njas, 339. Ostiaks, 1384. muezi, 393. Wanyoro, Waraus, 1258. Wa-

Africa, 504. Kitch, 302.

KION of mians, 642. Ahitas, 200. 1355. Angolese, 380. 1, 488. Australians, 604. 148. Balondo, 370. 149. Espas, 569. Esquimaux, Fans, 529. Fanti, 549. 1, 671. Hebrides, New, Hervey Islanders, 102. 149. Herodo, 217. Hovas, 690. In-Gran Chaco, 1211. Indi-Am. 1273. Isle of Pines 887. Japanese, 1449. 887 Japanese, 1449. rue, 399. Kingsmill Isl-s, 1038. Krumen, 545. rue, 399. Nubians, 673. Marquesans, Mundurucús, 1215.
Nam, 442. Nicobarians, Nubians, 673. Obongos, Outanatas, 900. Papuans, Patagonians, 1172. Pelew 327. Marquesans, Patagonians, 1172. Pelew ders, 1104. Samoans, 1008. wich Islanders, 1081. Shebase, 1282. Siamese, 1468. Solo-Islanders, 968. Tahitans, Tanna Islanders, 972. Waraus, 1222. Zealanders, 792.

792. se, Africa, 614. g, see Food.
Islanders, Polynesia, 1032.
cons, Alaska, 1375.
ibe, North America, 1313. nne, North America, 1305, North America, 1331. cribe, North America, 1273. lying" of Damaras, 310. lying, Chinese, 1439. Japanese, 1461.

Japanese, 1461.
LTY to aged among ans, 964. Indians, 1320. anaquas, 278. To prisoners, ans, 954. ms, Dahome, 573. ms, Dahome, 573. ms, Dohome, 573. ms, Dohome, 573. ms, Dohome, 574. ms, Dohome, 575. ms, Dohome, 576. ms, Dohome, 576. ms, Dohome, 576. ms, 5

tahs, North America, 1307 omans, North America, comans, Africa, 561. aras, Africa, 304. sing, see Amusements.

ats, doctor's nook, 1366, roo 6. Apono, giant, 487. Ar

DANCES of -- continued.

DANCES of —continued.

wake, puris, 1253. Australians, kuri, 748, patit, 762, kangaroo, 762, pedeku, 751, frog, 751, corrobboree, 752. Bechuanas, 297. Bosjesmans, 262. Camma, gorilla, 509. Damaras, 313. Dyakes, sword, 1143, war, 1143, head, 1143. Esquimaux, 1349. Fans, full moon, 539. Fijians, 935. Guianans, maquarri, 1255. Hottentots, melon, 235. Indians, N. A., scalp, 1286, buffalo, 1297, ball-play, 1320, pipe, 1320, begrar's bear, 1320, dog, 1320, eagle, 1323, braves, 1323, green corn, 1323, snow-shoe, 1323, slave, 1323. Kaffir, wedding, 55. Korannas, 270. Latookus, funeral, 459. Madi, 433. Malemutes, 1374. Marquesans, 1049. New Guinea, war, 917. New Zealand, war, 845. Niuans, war, 1055. Pelew Islanders, 1108. Samoans, wedding, 1031. Shooas, 668. Tasmannan, 753. Tungusi, 1380. Wanyamuezi, 390. Watusi, 409, balware, 1374. Margues, 108. Samoans, wedding, 1031. Shooas, 668. Tasmannan, 753. Tungusi, 1380. Wanyamuezi, 390. Watusi, 409, balwares, North America, 1331.

Dankallis, Africa, 671.
Delawares, North America, 1331.
Dingan, Kaffir chief, visit to, 91. Dingan at home, 207. Dinkas, Africa, 469. Dilbba, Africa, 464. Dibba, Africa, 464.
Diour, Africa, 448.
Dog eater, initiation of, Ahts, 1371.
Dog Africa, 444.
Dyaks, Land, Borneo, 1110.
Dyaks, Sea, 1110.

Dôr, Africa, 444. Dory, Africa, 914.

DRESS among Ashras, 642 – 647. Accabe Eastern Islands, 1100.
Waios, 1222. Admiraty Islanders, 970. Ahts, 1365. Andamaners, 890. Apingi, 480. Apono, 494. Ashango, 480. Ashanti, 554. Ashira, 496. AusElephant catching, Bayeye, 338.
noi, 493. Ashira, 496. AusElendurance, see Strenge, 1471.
Endurance, 1471.
E Baionda, 379. Bart, 483, 484. Ba-Esquimaux, N. America, 1333. Etoka, 349. Baqvey, 339. Bechnanas, 284. Bedouins, 681. Bonny, 603. Bornabi, 1103. Bornuese, 621. Bosjesmans, 286. Bonka, 871. Britain, New, 969. Brumer's Islanders, 907. Bubes, 610. Caledonians, New, 833. Caribs, 1222. Chinese, 1429. Congoese, 616. Co-yukons, 1375. Dahomans, 569, 585. Fijians, 940, 941. Japanese, 1459. Kaffir, 87, 148, 169. Fuerials, see Burial. Dory, 914. Dyaks, 1112–1116–1118. Egotas, 591. Esquimaux, 1261. Waganda, 410. Wayasmuerials, see Burial. 1060. Waganda, 410. Wayasmus, 1261. Waganda, 410. Wayasmus, 1261. Gallas, 671. Ganl, 499. Guianaus, 1266–1258. Hobrides, New, 972. Hervey Islanders, 1038. North America, 1275. Fans, Chinese, 1490. fanis, North America, 1275. Fans, Chinese, 1490. fox, 479. Isle of Pines Men, 687. Japanese, kami-samo, 1490–1453. Kaffirs, 28–51, 53. change of on betrothal, Kaffir, 51. Kanemboos, 627. Karague, 405. Khonda, 1389. Kingsmill Islanders, 1038. Korannas, 270. Krumen, 545. Kytch, 436. Latookas, 453. Mak, 430. 339. Makololo, 327. Malagasy, 690. Malemutes, 1374. Manganja, 386. Mapuches, 1190–1191. Marquesans, 1044. Mpongwé, 524. Musguese, 639. Fijians, Australia, 922.

Britquette among Abyssinians, 488. Araucanians, 1286. Ashantia, 490. Warus, 1230. Balonda, 377. Batokas, 350. Bonny, 605. Balonda, 378. Batokas, 350. Bonny, 605. Endonans, 569, 585. Fijians, 940, 411. Japanese, 1459. Kaffir, 87, 148, 169. Marches, 128. Furntrure, Furntrure, Furntrure, G. Marches, 1240. Furntrure, G. Marches, 1240. Kaffir, 206. See Architecture.

Gallas, 671. Ganl, 490. Guianaus, 1261. Gallas, Africa, 671. Ga

Namaquas, 276. Neam-Nam, 442. Nicobarians, 896. Niu-ans, 1055. Nubians, 673. Nuehr, 488. Obbo, 434. Obon-gos, 482. Outanatas, 900. Ovam-bos, 316. Papuans, 900. Pata-gonians, 1173. Pelew Islanders, 1104. Romanzoff Islanders, 1100. Ruenr, 468. Obbo, 434. Obongos, 482. Outanatas, 900. Ovambos, 316. Papuans, 900. Patagonians, 1173. Pelew Islanders, 1104. Romanzoff Islanders, 1100. Samoans, 1009, 1013, 1014. Samoans, 1009, 1015, 1016. Samoans, 1009, 1016. Samoans, 1016. Guinea, New, 1018. Hervey Islanders, 1037. Kanemboos, 627. Malemutes, 1018. Samoans, 1020. Samoans, 1020. Samoans, 1020. Samowick, 1031. Ostisks, 1384. Ovambo, 1016. Ostisks, 1384. Ovambo, 1016. Ostisks, 1384. Ovambo, 1016. Samoans, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samoans, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samoans, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samoans, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samowick, 1020. Samoans, 1020

Zealanders, New, of DRINKS, intoxicating, of Abvasinia, 667. Apingi, 490. Drinks, intoxicating, of
Abyssinis, 657. Apingi, 490.
Apono, 494. Ashira, 498. Araucanians, 1203. Balonda, 377.
Chinese, 1429. Congoese, 616.
Dyaks, 1145. Fans, 539. Guianaus, 1251. Kaffit, 162. Karague, 400, 401. Krumen, 546.
Manganja, 359. Warayamuezi
393, 394. Waraus, 1269.
Dust signals of Outanatas, 902.
Dutalu. adventures of, 69.

275. Neam-Nam, FIRE-MAKING among barians, 896. Niu-Australians, 786. Dyaks, 1151. Fuegians, 1168. Kaffir, 100.

Obon-Fishing among
Ovam-Ahts, 1356-1361. Australians,

among Abyssinians, 655. Ahts, 1364. Andamaners, 891. Angolese, manioc, 381. Araucanians, 1200. Ashira, 497. Australians, turtle and snakes, 702-714. Bakalai. 492. Balonda, manioc, 376. Behuanas, 296 Bedouins, 664. Bosjesmans, 252 Caledonians, New, 885. Chinese, bird-nests, 1432. Damaras, 313. Dyaks, 1118-1144. Esquimaux, 1336, special dainties, 1337. Fans, 534. Fijians, 941, 942. Fuegians, 1168. Guianans, 1248, 1249. Hervey Islanders, 1037. Hottentots, 232, 233. Kafiir, 131, 132, 147-151, 157. Kytch, 439. Makololo, 226. Mandingoes, 608. Maories, 827-834. Mpongwé, 524. Mundurucás, 120. Neam-Nam, 442. Ovambo, 322. Patagonians, 1031. Sandwich Islanders, 1086. Swiss. Sandwich Islanders, 1086. Shirtribe, 462. Shoas, 668. Swiss. among Abyssinians, 655. Shir tribe, 462. Shoas, 668. Swiss Lake-dwellers, 1474. Tungusi. Shir tribe, 402. Shioas, onc. Owies Lake-dwellers, 1474. Tungusi, 1380. Wanyamuezi, 394. Wan-yor, 426. Waraus, 1289. Fox tribe, N. America, 1323. Form of women. Hottentots, 218.

Gonaquas, Africa, 274. Goura, musical instrument, Bos-

Goura, musicar instraints, jesmans, 264.
Government, mode of among Abyssinians, 649. Ajitas, 920. Alfoërs, 905. Angolese, 380. Balonda, 389. Banyai, 361. Bechuanas, 389. Banyai, 361. Camma, 504. da, 369. Banyal, 361. Bechuanas, 286. Bornuese, 621. Canuna, 504-506. Dory, 914. Fijians, 934. Fuegians, 1171. Indians, N. A., 1275. Kingsmill Islanders, 1040. Krumen, 546. Makololo, 331. Manganja, 355. Mapuchés, 1194. Mpongwé, 524. Ovambo, 321. Shekiani, 521. Shillooks, 473. Tasmanians, 754. Tongans, 981. Wanyoro, 422. 310. Goza's

Goza's
Portrait, 35. Young Warriors,
35. And his Wives, 75.
Grapple plant, 214.
Griquas, Africa, 274.
Guiana, So. America, 1221.
Guinea, New, Africa, 898.

H.

HAIR-DRESSING, mode of among
Abyssinians, 642-648. Ahts, 1355.
Australians, 705. Balonda, 370.
Batoka, 348. Bornuese, 620.
Brumer's Islanders, 907. Chinese
1426. Egbas, 590. Esquimaux,
1335. Fanti, 549. Fijians, 922,
925. Fuegians, 1162. Gallas,
671. Gani, queue, 430. Hovas,
690. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1212.
Indians, N. A., 1273, 1274. Ishogos, 475. Japanese, 1450-1453.
Khonds, 1389. Krumen, 545.
Mandans, 1274, 1275. Mapuchés,
1191. Musguese, 639. Niuuns, 1035. Nubians, 674. Papuans, 598. Samoans, 1014. Sandwich Islanders, 1085. Siamese,
1468. Soumaulis, 672. Sowrahs,
1386. Tahitans, 1059. Zealanders, New, 814.
Hamoa, Navigator's Island, 1008.
Hamran Arabs, Africa, 675. Haman Arabs, Africa, 675. Haraforas, New Guinea, 905. Hara-kiri, Japan, 1461. Harem of Kaffir, 76. Hassaniyehs, Africa, 686. Hassanyens, Artics, 000. Hrad-Drrsses of Ahts, 1365. Fijians, waterproof, 926. Guianans, feather, 1255. Indians, N. A., 1276. Ishogos, 475. Kaffir, 41. Mapuchés, 1191. Marquesans, 1048. Samoans, 1013.

moans, 1013.
Head hunting, Dyaks, 1135.
Hebrides, New, Polynesia, 971.
Hervey Islands, Polynesia, 1032.
Hindo's, India, 1395.
HONESTY of the

ONESTY OF THE Apono, 484. Ashira, 497. Au-stralians, 695, 696. Barea, 668. Bayeye, 337. Bechuanas, 284. stralians, 699, 599, Barea, 608, Bayeye, 337. Bechuanas, 284, 285. Caledonians, New, 886, Lapanese, Japan, 1449, 1399, 1400. Krumen, 546. La-Jakuts, Siberia, Asia, 1379, tookas, 459. Mak-ololo, 326. Outanatas, 992. Ovambos, 315. Samoans, 1008. Shillooks, 473. Society Islanders, 1065. Tuaricks, 634. KAFFIR, AFRICA, 11. (Chyalry of, 42. Pictures) Hopo, the elephant trap, 895.

Horses of Indians, N. A., 1296, 1297. Horsemanship of Araucanians, 1196. Camanchees,

1289, 1290. Crows, 1274. Ham-ran Aras, 676. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1212. Indians, North America, 1325. Japanese, 1464, 1455. Patagonians, 1174.

HOSPITALITY of Abyssinians, 655. Ajitas, 920. Apingi, 490. Batoka, 353. Esquimaux, 1351. Fuegians, 1171. Gani, 429. Ishogos, 490. Jakuts, 1379. Kaffir, 16. Makololo, 326. Manganjis, 355. Maories, 827. Samoans, 1008. Shoas, 667. Shooss, 629. Tahitans, 1060. Tchuktchi, 1378. Wazaramo, 406. Zealand, New, 826. Hottentots, Africa, 217. Hovas, 607. Shooss, 629. Tahitans, 1060. Tchuktchi, 1378. Wazaramo, 406. Zealand, New, 826. Kaveaks, Siberia, 1375. Kugamill Islanders, Polynesia, 1038. Knob kerry of Kaffir, 106. HOSPITALITY of

Hotentots, Africa, 217.
Hovas,
Hovas, tots, 231. Indians; North America, buffalo, 1293-1205. Indians, 18.
Asia, *elephant, deer, 1418. Kaffir, antelope, giraffe, elephant, rhinoceros, Ilon, buffalo, Lasso, Araucanians, 1197. 126-138. Kanemboos, 627. Makoba, 341. Neam-Nam, elephant, Lasso, North Am. Indians, 1296. koba, 341. Neam-Nam, elephant, Latookas, Africa, 453. 443. Ostiaks, 1384. Patago-Laws, code of among Abyssinians, 177-1182. Samoans, 1029. Samolada 1382. Shoags, buf-Samoledes, 1383. Shooas, buffalo, elephant, 628. Tasmanians, 753. Tungusi, 1379.

Illinoans, Borneo, 1112. India, Asia, 1395. Indians, Gran Chaco, 1211. Indians, North American, 1273.

Indians, North American, 1275.

KNUSTRY of
Bubes, 610. Congoese, 616.
Dyaks, 1118. Fanti, 548. Guianans, 1222. Manganja, 355.
Ostiaks, 1384. Ovambo, 319.
Watusi, 409. Zealanders, New, 226

826. Ingeletes, Alaska, N. A., 1374. Ireland, New, Australasia, 969. Ishogos, Africa, 475. Isi-baya, of Kaffir, 66. Isle of Pines Men, 887. Issikoko, or head ring, Kaffir, 41.

KAFFIR, AFRICA, 11.
Chivalry of, 42. Picturesque Makololo, Africa, 339.
Aspect of, 42. Perfume of, 42. Malogay, Africa, 324.
Aspect of, 42. Perfume of, 42. Malogay, Africa, 690.
Gallantry, 55. Ostentation, 69. Malays, Malaisia, 620.
Harem, inmates, etc., 62. Dread Malemutes, Alaska, N. A., 1374.
of death, 76. Law of inheri-Malicolo, New Hebrides, 975.

tance, 78. Courtship, 79. Names, mode of choosing, 88, 89.

Boaster, fate of, 89. Love of

Justice, 149. Love of honey,

154. Fondness for tobacco, 166. Torture for bewitching, 185. Sleeping accommodations, 206. Kanemboos, Africa, 627.

ANGUAGE of Hospiesmans, 21. Hospiesmans, 221. Fijians, court, 939. Fuegians, 1171. Hottentots, "clicks," 234. Ingeletes, 1375. Kaveaks, 1375. Malemutes, 1375. Mandingoes, 607. New Zealand, sacred, 857.

Aws, code of among
Abyssinians, 653. Alfoërs, 906.
Australians, 747. In Britain,
New, 969. Fiji, 935. Ireland,
New, 969. Karague, 405.
Among Makololo, 331. Niuans,
1056. Samoans, 1016 - 1024.
Siamese, 1471. Waganda, 410.
Zealanders, New, 798.
EGENDS of

EGENDS of EGENDS of Apono, 488. Areois, 1080. Balonds, 379. Bubes, 610. Chinese, 1429. Fanti, 549. Fijians, 934. Guianans, 1264-1207. Indians, N. A., 1313. Kaffirs, 141, 169. Mandans, 1301. Maories, 863. Namaquas, 276. New Zealanders, 829. Niuans, 1052. Secietz, Estudiers, 1055. landers, 829. Niuan Society Islanders, 1065.

Here, human, value of, among Bechuanas, 285. Dahomans, 567, 579. Fans, 539. Tenacity of among Hottentots, 240. Waganda, 413.
LLOYD's account of Australians,

789.

Macoushies, Guiana, S. A., 1221. Madagascar, Africa, 690. Madi, Africa, 430. Mah-to-toh-pa, exploits of, 1286, 1287. Makoba, Africa, 339.

Man Man Man 370 Man Man Man MAN Ah car 123 yai 283

115 532

Ne 103 firs 212 122 528 Swi Maor Mapu Mara Mark Marg MARI Alf 892. 489. 1247 362 mar hom Dor Esq Fiji 956. ing yeh, dian 1375

rahs gand New Marsh Mbond Mbicho Mbous Medici: Medici: MEDICI Ahts 1309. Menda Mexico Minata Mincop

prov Amo 546,

kolo

Nam

Pata 1031.

688. Mirror Mnande Moheen Mongol Monkey MOURN Abys: 772. 777.

Mincop

Mirage

Courtship, 79. Names, choosing, 88, 89. fate of, 89. Love of 49. Love of honey, dness for tobacco, 166. for bewitching, 185. accommodations, 206. Africa, 627.

Obbo, 434. His family, s character, 435. His 435. Treatment of 35. ne Balonda Chief, 376.

iberia, 1375. Islanders, Polynesia,

y of Kaffir, 106. ness and its results, 185. ness and its r ca, 269. Africa, 269. Africa, 269. (affir, 54. Africa, 544. rica, 436.

of 921. Bosiesmans. 242. Fijians, court, 242. Filians, court, legians, 1171. Hotten-icks," 234. Ingeletes, Kaveaks, 1375. Male-375. Mandingoes, 607. Lealand, sacred, 857. 1471. Chinese, 1430.

aucanians, 1197. rth Am. Indians, 1296. Africa, 453. e of among

e of among ians, 653. Alfaërs, 906. ians, 747. In Britain, 9. Fiji, 935. Ireland, 69. Karngue, 405. Makololo, 331. Niuans, Samoans, 1016–1024. 1471. Waganda, 410. ers, New, 798.

of 488. Areois, 1080. Ba-479. Bubes, 610. Chi-29. Fanti, 549. Fijians, uianans, 1264-1267. Ind. A., 1313. Kaffirs, 141, andans, 1301. Maories, amaquas, 276. New Zea-829. Niuans, 1052. Lelanders 1665. Islanders, 1065.

nan, value of, among nas, 285. Dahomans, Fans, 539. Tenacity g Hottentots, 240. Waaccount of Australians,

es, Guiana, S. A., 1221. ar, Africa, 690. ica, 430.

h-pa, exploits of, 1286, Africa, 339.

Africa, 3324. , Africa, 690. Ialaisia, 920. es, Alaska, N. A., 1374. New Hebrides, 975.

Mandans, N. America, 1301. Mandingoes, Africa, 607. Manenko in command, Balondo,

Manenko In command, Balondo, 375.

Manganjas, Africa, 335.

Manganjas, Africa, 326.

Mantates, Africa, 236.

Mantathu Tartars, Tartary, 1422.

MANUFACTURES, skill in among Alts, 1355. Apingi, 489. Araucanians, 1205. Arawaks, 1233-1235. Australians, 726. Banyai, 366, 367. Bechuanas, 280-283. Djour, 451. Dyaks, 1151-1156. Esquimaux, 1349. Fans, 532. Fijians, 929-931. Guinea, New, 914. Hervey Islanders, 1033. Hottentots, 226, 228. Kaffirs, 45-47, 35-49, 148-154, 206-212. Latookas, 455. Macoushies, 1221. Maories, 880. Mpongwé, 528. Samoans, 1015. Shir, 462. Swiss Lake-dwellers, 1474. Tongans, 977.

Swiss Lake-uwellers, 1474. T gans, 977. Maories, New Zealand, 824. Mapu-chés, So. America, 1190. Mara-chés, So. America, 1190. Marksmen of Arawaks, 1235. Marquesas Islands, 1044.

Marksmen of Arawaks, 1235.
Marquesas Islands, 1044.
Marbards among
Abyssinians, 638. Ajitas, 921.
Alfoers, 906. Andamaners, 888, 892. Apingi, 439. Araucanians, abduction of bride, 1199, 1200. Arawas, 1247. Australians, 755. Banyai, 362. Bornuese, 626. Bosjesmans, 244. Bubés, 613. Dahomans, 586. Damaras, 313. Dory, 917. Dyaks, 1137–1141. Esquimaux, 1349. Fans, 536. Fljians, 935. The Fijian bride, 1394. Hassaniyeh, 686. Hottentots, 233. Indians, N. A., 1316. Ingeletes, 1375. Kaffirs, bridegroom on approval, 77–87. In Karague, 402. Among Krumen, earning wives, 1376. Kaffirs, bridegroom on approval, 77–87. In Karague, 402. Among Krumen, earning wives, 1366. See, 1375. Sandands, 1383. Oxambos, 322. Patagonians, 1183. Samoans, 1384. Zealanders, 1885. Nicobarians, Nicobar Islands, 902. Ovanbos, 322. Patagonians, 1183. Samoans, 1183. Samoans, 1183. Samoans, 1183. Sumoans, 1184. Obongos, Africa, 468. Medicine, see Treatment of Sick. Obbo, Africa, 482. Medicine, see Treatment of Sick. Obbo, Africa, 482. Medicine bag, N. A. Indians, 1308. Cerlams, Africa, 274. And 142. Sublanders, 1000. Sandwich Islanders, 1005. Sandwich Islanders, 1005. Sandwich Islanders, 1005. Sandwich Islanders, 1006. Sandwich Islanders, 1006. Sandwich Islanders, 1006. Sandwich Islanders, 1006. Sandwich Islanders, 1007. Sandwich Islanders, 1008. Markana, 263. Dovambos, 264. Sandwich Islanders, 1008. Markana, 264. Maganda, 442. Sublanders, 1008. Sandwich Islanders

Mbondemo, Arrica, 221.
Mbonsha, " 521.
Mbonsha, " 521.
Medicine, see Treatment of Sick.
Medicine bag, N. A. Indians, 1308.
MEDICINE Men, of
Ahts, 1371. N. A. Indians, 1307.
1309. Kaffirs, 17.
Mendana Islands, 1044.
Mexico, North America, 1271.
Mexi

Camma, 520. Damaras, 314. Dyaks, 1160. Esquimaux, 1351. Fijians, 967. Flat heads, mourning cradle, 1320. Indians, N. A., 1329. Mpongwé, 524. New Zesland, tangl, 869. Mpongwé, Africa, 524. Muchiahts, Vancouver's Island, 1374.

1354. Mumbo Jumbo, of Bonny, 603, Mundurucus, S. America, 1215, Musguese, Africa, 639, Music of

Balonda, 375. Bosjesman, 263-265. Chinese, 1446. Damaras, 313. Kaffirs, 208. Korannas, 273. MUSICAL Instruments of

MUSICAL Instruments of Abyssinians, 660. Balonda, 375. Batoka, 353. Bechuanas, 297. Bosjesmans, goura, guitar, drum, 264-265. Camma, 509. Chinese, 1445. Dor, 448. Dory, 917. Esquimaux, 1351. Fans. 540. Guianans, 1264. Indians, N. A., 1330. Kafirs, 55, 208-211. In Karague, 405. Among Latook-as, 459-460. Madi, 433. Malaga-sy, 693. Shillooks, 474. Tahit-ans, 1062. Zealanders, New, 822.

Mendana Islands, 1044.
Mexico, North America, 1271.
Minatarees, North America, 1274.
Mincopie girls, 895.
Mincopie girls, 895.
Mirage, notions of Hassaniyeh, 689.
Mirror Ink of Hassaniyeh, 689.
Mirror Ink of Hassaniyeh, 689.
Mongolians, Asia, 1422.
Monkenda, Africa, 399.
Mongolians, Asia, 1422.
Monkey Men, New Guinea, 900.
Mounning among
Abyssinians, 639.
Australians, Widow's cap, 772.
Australians, widow's cap, 777.
Bakalai, "keen," 495.

Omens, see Superstitions.
Omens, see Superstitions.
Oneals of the
Angolese, 382.
Ashira, the ring
Sechuanas, 164.
Angolese, 382.
Ashira, the ring
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Peluen-chés, So. Americe, 1190,
Pelele, or lip ring, Mangaujas, 359.
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Penden-chés, So. America, 1172.
Paragonians, life among, 1184.
Pehuen-chés, So. America, 1172.
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Peluen-chés, So. America, 1172.
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Peluen-chés, So. America, 1172.
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Peluen-chés, So. America, 1170.
Pelew Islands, 1104.
Peluen-chés, Tone Pelue Islands, 1104.
Pelue

ty. Islanders, 970. Ahts, lip 1355. Araucanians, 1197. Ashango, 481. Ashanti, 555. Australians, dibbi-dibbi nose-bone, turtle soar, 703, 704. Balonda, 373. Bayeve, 339. Bechuanas, 284. Bedouins, 683. Bornabi, 1103. Boajesmans, 249. Caledonians, New, 883. Co-yukons, nose, 1375. Damaras, 306. Dinkas, 470. Djibba, scalp-lock, 467. Djour, 451. Dorn, lip, 447. Dyaks, earrings, etc., 111, -1,17. Egbas, 501. Fanti, 549. Fijians, 926. Fuegians, 1165. Gani, 430. Ghoorkas, 1399. Hebrides, New, 972. Hervey Islanders, 1033. Hottentots, 225. Indians, N. A., wampum, 1280, 1329. Isle of Pines Men, 887. Japanese, hair-pins, 1453. Kaffirs, 33-55, 198. Kanemboos, 627. Kaveak, 1374. Khonds, 1389. Latookas, lips, 453, 454. Madi, 433. Makololo, 327. Malen.utes, totook, 1374. Manganjas, 356. Manquesans, 1048. Mpongwé, 524. Musguese, lip, 639. Namaquas, 275. Neam-Nam, 442. Nubians, 674. Nuchr, 468. Obbo, 434. Outanatas, 901. Ovambos, 316. Pelew Islanders, bone bracelet, 1104. Romanzoff Islanders, 1082. Shillooks, 472. Shir, 462. Solomon Islanders, 969. Sowrahs, neck-

PAIN, indifference to of the Bosjesmans, 250. Damaras, 306, Guianans, 1254. Panda, sovg in honor of, 89. Papuans, New Guinea, 898. Pasuen, Africa, 529. Patagonians, South America, 1172. Patagonians, life among, 1184. Pehuen-chés, So. America, 1190.

Tchuktchi, 1378.

Ponda, Africa, 12. Porcelain, Japanese, 1465. Pritchard's adventure with wild boar, 1029. Prophetess, Kaffir, 189.

PROPHETS, among
Kaffirs, 175-180, 186-189, 195.
Preparation of, 176. Consultation of, 180. Curing sickness, Bechuanas, 292. False, 190.

| Shoas, Africa, 667. |
| Shoas, Africa, 628. |
| Araucanians, 201. |
| Shoas, Africa, 628. |
| Araucanians, 202. |
| Angolese, 381. |
| Araucanians, 202. |
| Makoba, 336. |
| Marchos, 320. |
| Mandoba, 329. |
| Shoas, Africa, 628. |
| Shoas, Africa, 628. |
| Araucanians, 202. |
| Mandoba, 379. |
| Baladers, 1079. |
| Makoba, 347. |
| Ma RELIGION of

Society Islanders, 1064 - 1071.
Tongans, 1094. Tungusi, 1380.
Wagands, 420. Wayamuezi,
238. Wanyoro, 427. Wazaramo,
406. Wanyoro, 427. Wazaramo,
406. Wanyoro, 427. Wazaramo,
406. Rob Roy, a Kaffirs, 69.
Ricarees, N. America, 1319.
Rob Roy, a Kaffir, 69.
Romanzoff Island, 1100.

Sake Worsh, 1129. Patagonians, 1292.
Sake Worsh, 1294. Wayamuezi,
239. Mundurueds,
1294. Lans, Dyaks, 1129, worall,
1298. Wourali, 1228.
OLITENESS of Batokas, 350. Bedouins, 683.
In Karague, 399. Of Toluktchi,
1378. Watusi, 499.
LUGAMY among
Australians, 755. Bornuese,
826. Egbas, 593. Fijians, 935.
Guiannans, 1294, 1247. Hotten2058. Salinans, 1294. Samoledes,
1382. Society Islanders, 1471.
Tongans, 1094. Tungusi, 1380.
Wanyamuezi, 1380.
Wanyamuezi, 1390.
Karague, 390.
Ashanti, in1376. Dahomans, 578-582. In
1376. Dahomans, 578-582. In
1376. Dahomans, 578-582. In
1376. Salilans, 755. Bornuese,
1386. Egbas, 593. Fijians, 935.
Guiannans, 12946, 1247. Hotten2058. Salilans, 755. Bornuese,
1382. Society Islanders
1471.
Tongans, 1094. Tungusi, 1380.
Wanyamuezi,
290. Wanyamuezi,
290. Wanyamuezi,
290. Kaffirs, 163-166.
Smarke Worshir, 164-1071.
Tongans, 1094. Tungusi, 1380.
Wanyamuezi,
290. Wanyamuezi,
290. Wanyamuezi,
290. Kaffirs, 163-166.
Smarke Worshir, 163-168.
Smarke Worshir, 164-1670.
Smake eoking and eating, Australians, 717.
Snake charming, Indians, 717.
Snake charming, Indians, 717.
Snake charming, Indians, 718.
Snake charming, Indians, 718.
Society Islanders

1421. Dor, "bark quids," 452. Djour, "bar, 1431.
Smoking horses," Indians, 1430.
Snake Worshir, 163-168.
Snake Worshir, 163-168.
Snake charming, Indians, 718.
Snake Worshir, 163-168.
Snake charming, 1290.
Snake Worshir, 163-168.
Snake Worshir, 163-168

Sacs, N. America, 1323.
SALUTATION, mode of, among
Ashira, 498. Balonda, 373. Brumer's Islanders, 907. Egbas, 591.
Esquimaux, 1349. Gani, 429.
Hassaniyeh, 636. In Karague,
399. Among Makololo, 326.
Manganjas, 356. Nuchr, 469.
Ovambo, 322. Wanyamuezi, 389.
Watusi, 409. Zealanders, New,
823.
Samoans Polymer's Among Alyssinia, 671.
Syrranginia, 1366. Waraus, 1346.
Suression, law of, among
Angolese, 330. Arawaks, 1247.
Ashant, 556. Fijians, 935. Indians, N. A., 1275. In Karague,
400. Among Ovambos, 322. WasSamoans Polymer's Among Alyssinia, 671.
Syrranginia, 1385.
Strength of
Dyaks, 1115. Esquimaux, 1344.
Ashanti, 566. Fijians, 935. Indians, N. A., 1275. In Karague,
400. Among Ovambos, 322. WasSamoans Polymer's Among Alyssinia, 671.

Bechuanas, 292. False, 190.

R. Samoans, Polynesia, 1008. Samoitedes, Siberia, 1381. San Christoval, Solomon Islands, upon decay and extinction of Sandai wood, Anciteum, 975. Australians, 790, 791. Esqui-Saqua, Africa, 251. Mew Zealanders, Savage Island, 1052. 880. N. Am Indians, 1331. 1332. Scalaine, mode of 1987, 1286. Rainrs, 120, 192-192. Annea quas, 277.
Rangitani, New Zealand, 796.
RANK, distinction of among
Bosjesmans, 244. Japanese, Shillocks, Africa, 521.
Tahitans, 1061.
Tahitans, 1061. Shooas, Africa, 628. Ahts, Siam, Asia, 1467.

ICK, treatment of among Angolese, 381. Araucanians, 1205. Ashira, 501. Australians, 769-771. Damaras, 205. Hottentots, 233-240. Kaffirs, 183, 184, 190. Korannas, 274. Makoba, 347. Makololo, 336. Maories, 862. Mundurueds, 1219. Namaguas, 277. Patagonians, 1184. Superans 207. Thesisks 634. Superans 207. Superan

UPERSTITION among
Ahts, 1372. Angolese, 382.
Apingi, 490. Arabs, 687-689.
Araucanians, 1205. Ashangos,
481. Ashira, 602. Australians, 745, 778-783. Bakalai, 493.
Banyai, 366, Bedouins, 685.
Bonny, 604. Camma, 510-515.
Caribs, 1241. Damaras, 314.
Dyaks, 1131, 1157-1159. Egbas,
594. Esquimaux, 1350. Fans,
594. Esquimaux, 1350. Fans,
594. Esquimaux, 1350. Fans,
589. Fanti, 550. Fjiians, 960605. Guianans, 1264. Kaffirs,
88, 172, 190, 191. Makoba, 346.
Malagray, 693. Mandingoes,
609. Maories, 856-858, 864. Pe-88, 172, 190, 191. Makoba, 340. Malagasy, 693. Mandingoes, 609. Maories, 856-858, 864. Pelew Islanders, 1108. Samotedes, 1383. Shekiani, 523. Society Islanders, 1079, 1080. Tahitans, 1058. Tongans, 1007. Waganda, 419. Wanyamuezi, 395. Wanyoro, 427. Wazaramo, 406.

Swiss Lake-dwellers, 1473.

Taboo of Banyai, 367. Taboo, see Tapu.
Taboi, see Tapu.
Tahitans, Society Islands, 1058.
Tanna Island, New Hebrides, 972.
Taranakis, New Zealand, 850.
Tapu of Maories, 863–868.
Tattars, Mantchu, Asia, 1422.
Tasmanians, Van Dieman's Land,

Apingi, 489. Australians,

Dys Esq Fiji 911. Kin ganj Mui Pole zoff 1010 1085 1039 409. Tchak moth Tchak Tchak

704. 1103 Tala

Tchuk Tea of Tea ho Te Ohi Theatr Thieve Thugs Tibboo. Tigre, Tikis, I TOBACC Kaffi rucús Zeala Tools, s Tongan Toquah 1354. TORTUE Chine A. In Antel falcon TRANSM

TREES grapp ropes. wood. Borne Borne 1268. Tierra Tuaricks Tungusi

Sheki TRAVEL 1455 -

Uzaramo Uzinto,

Vancouv Vaté, Ne Crees, calumet, 1818, hemp or dugha, 163, rk quids," 452. Djours, lans, N. A., 1818. Ja-462. Kaffirs, 163-166, 336. Mundurucús, 163-166, 1163. Tchutkchi, 1977. Luczi, 393. horses," Indians, 1290. RISHIP, Dahomans, 565, cing and eating, Aus-717.

717. rming, India, 1416. s of N. A. Indians,

s, Kaffir, 161. ng, Kaffir, 159. lands, 1057. slands, 968.

aux, amna-aya, 1349. yar, 90, 147, 208. Makan-hering, 197. New Zea-noe, 853. New Zealand, 02. See Amusements. o2. See Amuse. s, Abyssinia, 671. India, 1385.

of 1115. Esquimaux, 1334. 1166. Waraus, 1261. 1115. Esquimaux, 1334.
18s, 1166. Waraus, 1261.
10s, law of, among
18e, 380. Arawaks, 1247.
1, 556. Fijians, 935. In18. A., 1275. In Karague,
196. A., 1275. In Karague,
197. A., 127

416.

TION among 1372. Angolese, 382. 490. Arabs, 687-689. nians, 1205. Ashangos, Ashira, 502. Australimians, 1200. Australi-5, 778-785. Bakalai, 493. 366. Bedouins, 685. 604. Camma, 510-516. 1241. Damaras, 314. 1131, 1167-1159. Egbas, cautimaux, 1350. Fans, anti, 550. Fijians, 960-quinnans, 1264. Kaffirs, 190, 191. Makoba, 346. 189, 603. Mandingoes, Inories, 856-853, 864. Pe-anders, 1108. Samotedes, Shekiani, 523. Society ers, 1079, 1080. Tahitans, longans, 1007. Waganda, Vanyamuezi, 395. Wan-27. Wazaramo, 406. frica, 12.

frica, 12. frica, 12.
43 among
8, 911. Bosjesmans, 255.
8, North America, 1330.
esans, 1051. Sandwich
ers, 1086, 1087, 1092. Ton1006.

ke-dwellers, 1473.

T.

Banyai, 367. ee Tapu.

s, Society Islands, 1058.
sland, New Hebrides, 972.
is, New Zealand, 850. Maories, 863–868. Mantchu, Asia, 1422. ians, Van Dieman's Land,

inians, 648. aks, 1222. Apingi, 489. Australians,

Tuaricks, Africa, 634. Tungusi, Siberia, Asia, 1379.

Uzaramo, Africa, 406. Uzinto, adventures of, 80.

Vancouver's Island, N. A., 1354. Vaté, New Hebrides, 972.

704. Bedouins, 683. Bornabi, 1103. Bornuese, 620. Brumer's Islanders, 907. Dahomans, 588. Dyaks, 1111, 1117. Egbas, 591. Esquimaux, 1334. Fans, 530. Fijians, 923. In Guinea, New, Wolf. Among Japanese, 1430. Kingsmill Islanders, 1038. New, Wolf. Among Japanese, 1430. Kingsmill Islanders, 1034. New, Wolf. Among Japanese, 1430. Wanganja, 339. Marquesans, 1044. Mundurueds, 1215. Niuans, 1005. Wanyambo, Africa, 396. Wanyambo, Africa, 396. Wanyambo, 1010-1013. Sandwich Islanders, 1035. Soumanilis, 672. Tahitas, 1039. Wanyamuezi, 339. Watusi, 409. Zealanders, New, 800, 667. Chaka, suspected of death of mother, 124. Tchaka's vision, Kaffir chief, 170. Tchaka at funeral of mother, 202. Tchuktchi, Siberia, 1377. Tea of Chinese, 1437. Trea of Japanese, 1464. Te Ohie, a native priest, 857. Theatres of Japanese, 1463. Thieves of Gapanese, 1463. Thieves of Ghoorkas, 1399, 1400. Thibboo, Africa, 630. Tilkis, New Zealand, 861. Tonacco among Kaffirs, 159-162, 166. Munduruods, snuff, paricu, 1220. New Zealanders, 830. Tongans, Polynesia, 976. Tonyans, 976.

MEAPONS of Abyssinians, 646-647. Ahts, 1355. Ajitas, 920. Andamaners, 889. Apono, 487. Araucanians, bolas, 1197. Ashangos, 480. Ashanti, 556. Australians, throwstick, kangaroo rat, boomerang, 719-724, 723-743. Balonda, 378. Banyai, axe, 366. Bari, 464. Bechnanas, 289. Bedouins, 681. Begharmis, 635. Bornuese, 623. Bosjesmans, 277, 261. Bouka, 971. Britain, New, 970. Caledonians, New, 884. Chinese, jingall, cross-bow, 1433-1436. Silvons, 630. Tahitans, 1058. Tongans, 983. Waganda, 416, 571. Damaras, 312. Dinkas, 469. Dijibbas, 464. Dor, 444. Dyaks, sumpitan, or blowgun, parangihang, kris, 1119-1131. Esquiminang, kris, 1119-1131. Zequiminang, kris, 1119-1131. Z

Fijians, 948-952. Fuegians, 1165. Ghoorkas, kookery, 1395. Guianans, 1223-1236. Guinea, New, 913. Hamran Arabs, 675. Hebrides, New, 972. Hervey Islanders, 1034. Hottentots, 232. Illimoans, 1112. Indians, East, 1400-1406. Indians, Gran Chaeo, armor, 1212. Indians, N. A., tomahawk, 1282. Ireland, New, 970. 18thogos, 476. Japanese, sword, 1459. Kaffirs, 93, 94, 100-113. Karague, 399. Khonds, axe, 1392. Kingsmill Islanders, 1039. Latookas, 453. Madi, 433. Mantchu Tartars, bows, 1423. Maories, 838-844. Marquesans, 1050. Mincopies, bow, 890. Musguese, 639. Neam-Nam, 443. Nicobarians, 896. Niuans, 1055. Nubians, peculiar sword, 673. Outanatas, 901. Ovambos, 319. Papuans, 900. Patagonians, bolas, 1174-1178. Pelew Islanders, 1107. Samoans, 109. Sandwich Islands, 1088. Shekiani, 521. Fijians, 948-952. Fuegians, 1165. 188, 1774-1176. Pelew Islanders,
 1107. Samoans, 1019. Sandwich
 Islands, 1088. Shekiani, 621.
 Shir, 461. Society Islanders,
 1073. Soumaulis, 671. Sowrahs,
 1386. Swiss Lake-dwellers, 1474.
 Tibboos, 633. Vaté, 972. Waraus,
 1050.

Wedding, see Dances, Marriage. Weezees, Africa, 386. Western Islands, 1100. WITCHCRAFT among

VITCHCRAFT among Araucanians, 1206. Ashanti, 560. Bakalai, 493. Camma, 515-520. Cavibs, 1241. Esquimaux, 1350. Fans, 539. Kaflirs, 184, 188. Maories, 861. Shekiani, 522. Wagauda, 410. Wanyamuezi, 395.

uezi, 395. Women, condition of among Ashira, 496. uezi, 395.

Women, condition of among
Angolese, 381. Ashira, 496.
Australians, 695, 756. Banyai,
362. Bonny, 603. Brumer's Islanders, 908. Congoses, 616.
Dahomans, 589. Damaras, singular caps of married, 313.
Dyaks, 1118. Fijians, 956. Gani,
430. Guianans, 1246. Indians,
Gran Chaco, 1214. Indians,
Gran Chaco, 1214. Indians,
Worth America, 1319. Isle of
Pines Men, 887. Kaffirs, 24-27,
90. In Karague, 402. Among
Latookas, 455. Makololo, 327.
Musguese, 639. Ostiaks, 1385.
Patagonians, 1186. Samoans,
1014. Samoledes, 1383. Sandwich Islanders, 1082 – 1086.
Shooas, 630. Tahitans, 1058.
Tongans, 983. Waganda, 413.
Wanyoro, 426.